Margaret Carnegie
Library

MILLS COLLEGE
PRO CHRISTO ET MUNDO
A.S. 1865 : C. 1885
CALIFORNIA

Accession No. 31409
R
Class 920.042 Book D554
v.51

DICTIONARY

OF

NATIONAL BIOGRAPHY

SCOFFIN——SHEARES

DICTIONARY

OF

NATIONAL BIOGRAPHY

EDITED BY

SIDNEY LEE

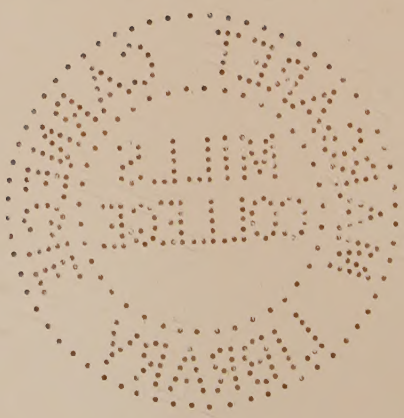
VOL. LI.

SCOFFIN——SHEARES

Mills College Library
WITHDRAWN

LONDON
SMITH, ELDER, & CO., 15 WATERLOO PLACE
1897

[*All rights reserved*]



R
920.042
D 554
v.51

31409

LIST OF WRITERS

IN THE FIFTY-FIRST VOLUME.

G. A. A. . . G. A. Aitken.
J. G. A. . . J. G. Alger.
J. A–N. . . . The Rev. John Anderson.
W. A. J. A. . W. A. J. Archbold.
J. B. B. . . The late J. B. Bailey.
H. F. B. . . H. F. Baker.
G. F. R. B. . G. F. Russell Barker.
M. B. . . . . Miss Bateson.
R. B. . . . . The Rev. Ronald Bayne.
T. B. . . . . Thomas Bayne.
D. J. B. . . D. J. Belgrave.
E. M. B. . . E. M. Beloe, F.S.A.
H. L. B. . . The Rev. Canon Leigh Bennett.
G. C. B. . . G. C. Boase.
T. G. B. . . The Rev. Professor Bonney, F.R.S.
G. S. B. . . G. S. Boulger.
E. I. C. . . . E. Irving Carlyle.
W. C–R. . . William Carr.
J. L. C. . . . J. L. Caw.
W. S. C. . . W. S. Church, D.M.
E. C–E. . . . Ernest Clarke, F.S.A.
A. M. C–E. . Miss A. M. Cooke.
J. C. . . . . The Rev. James Cooper.
T. C. . . . . Thompson Cooper, F.S.A.
W. P. C. . . W. P. Courtney.
H. C. . . . . Henry Craik, C.B.
J. C–N. . . . James Cranstoun, LL.D.
L. C. . . . . Lionel Cust, F.S.A.
J. A. D. . . J. A. Doyle.
E. G. D. . . E. Gordon Duff.
R. D. . . . . Robert Dunlop.
C. L. F. . . C. Litton Falkiner.
C. H. F. . . C. H. Firth.
E. F–Y. . . . The Right Hon. Sir Edward Fry, D.C.L., LL.D., F.R.S.
J. G. . . . . James Gairdner, LL.D.
R. G. . . . . Richard Garnett, LL.D., C.B.
G. G. . . . . Gordon Goodwin.
A. G. . . . . The Rev. Alexander Gordon.
R. E. G. . . R. E. Graves.
J. C. H. . . J. Cuthbert Hadden.
J. A. H. . . J. A. Hamilton.
C. A. H. . . C. Alexander Harris.
T. F. H. . . T. F. Henderson.
W. H. . . . The Rev. William Hunt.
C. L. K. . . C. L. Kingsford.
J. K. . . . . Joseph Knight, F.S.A.
A. L. . . . . Andrew Lang.
J. K. L. . . Professor J. K. Laughton.
T. G. L. . . T. G. Law.
G. S. L. . . G. S. Layard.
E. L. . . . . Miss Elizabeth Lee.
S. L. . . . . Sidney Lee.
R. H. L. . . R. H. Legge.
E. M. L. . . Colonel E. M. Lloyd, R.E.

J. E. L. . . John Edward Lloyd.
J. H. L. . . The Rev. J. H. Lupton, D.D.
H. T. L. . . H. Thomson Lyon.
J. R. M. . . J. R. Macdonald.
Æ. M. . . . Sheriff Mackay.
E. C. M. . . E. C. Marchant.
D. S. M. . . Professor Margoliouth.
A. H. M. . . A. H. Millar.
C. M. . . . . Cosmo Monkhouse.
N. M. . . . . Norman Moore, M.D.
S. J. N. . . S. J. Nicholl.
G. Le G. N. . G. Le Grys Norgate.
D. J. O'D. . D. J. O'Donoghue.
F. M. O'D. . F. M. O'Donoghue.
T. O. . . . . The Rev. Thomas Olden.
J. H. O. . . The Rev. Canon Overton.
H. P. . . . . Henry Paton.
A. F. P. . . A. F. Pollard.
R. L. P. . . R. L. Poole.
B. P. . . . . Miss Bertha Porter.
D'A. P. . . . D'Arcy Power, F.R.C.S.
G. W. P. . . Professor G. W. Prothero.
F. R. . . . . Fraser Rae.
W. E. R. . . W. E. Rhodes.
J. M. R. . . J. M. Rigg.
F. S. . . . . The Rev. Francis Sanders.
T. S. . . . . Thomas Seccombe.
W. A. S. . . W. A. Shaw.
C. F. S. . . Miss C. Fell Smith.
L. S. . . . . Leslie Stephen.
G. S–H. . . . George Stronach.
C. W. S. . . C. W. Sutton.
J. T–T. . . . James Tait.
D. Ll. T. . . D. Lleufer Thomas.
T. F. T. . . Professor T. F. Tout.
R. H. V. . . Colonel R. H. Vetch, R.E., C.B.
A. W. W. . Principal A. W. Ward, LL.D.
P. W. . . . . Paul Waterhouse.
W. W. W. . Surgeon-Captain W. W. Webb.
C. W–H. . . Charles Welch, F.S.A.
J. M. W. . . J. M. Wheeler.
S. W. . . . . S. E. Wheeler.
B. B. W. . . B. B. Woodward.

DICTIONARY

OF

NATIONAL BIOGRAPHY

SCOFFIN, WILLIAM (1655?–1732), nonconformist minister, born about 1655, was a self-taught man and a good mathematician. He was probably a schoolmaster, who obtained orders. John Rastrick [q. v.] appointed him curate of Brothertoft, a chapelry in the parish of Kirton, Lincolnshire. This curacy he resigned in August 1686, thus preceding Rastrick in nonconformity. Soon after the passing of the Toleration Act (1689) he became the minister of a nonconformist congregation at Sleaford, Lincolnshire, where for over forty years he preached with acceptance, and, though very poor, was noted for his charities. He died in November 1732, aged 77, and was buried on 12 Nov. He was married.

He published: 1. 'Two Funeral Sermons on . . . Katherine Disney,' &c., 1692, 12mo (preached at Kirkstead and Swinderby on 18 and 20 May 1690). 2. 'A Help to True Spelling and Reading; with . . . Principles of Religion in Easy Metre; a Scriptural Catechism' (PALMER). 3. 'A Help to the Singing Psalm-tunes . . . with Directions for making an Instrument with one String . . . and a Collection of Tunes in 2 Parts' (*ib.*)

[Rastrick's Account of his Nonconformity, 1705; Calamy's Account, 1713, p. 461; Palmer's Nonconformist's Memorial, 1802, ii. 438 sq.; Dickenson's Nonconformist Register, ed. Turner, 1881, p. 312.] A. G.

SCOGAN or **SCOGGIN, HENRY** (1361?–1407), poet, born about 1361, belonged to a Norfolk family which owned much land in the county. Henry was probably educated at Oxford. In 1391 he succeeded his brother John as lord of Haviles (BLOMEFIELD, *Norfolk*, vii. 141), but apparently frequented the court in London, and there made the acquaintance of Chaucer, whose disciple he became. The latter addressed to Scogan about 1393 a short poem (in seven stanzas) entitled 'Lenvoy a Scogan.' Chaucer speaks of Scogan in terms of affection. Of the genuineness of the poem there is no question (CHAUCER, *Works*, ed. Skeat, i. 85, 396–7). 'Henricus Scogan armiger' was granted in 1399 letters of protection to attend Richard II on his expedition to Ireland (CHAUCER, *Works*, ed. Tyrwhitt, vol. v. p. xv). Subsequently he became tutor to the four sons of Henry IV. In Caxton's and all later editions of Chaucer's 'Works' (until the appearance of Professor Skeat's edition in 1894) there figures 'a moral balade of Henry Scogan squyer' which was composed by Scogan 'for my lord the prince [Henry], my lord of Clarence, lord of Bedford, and my lord of Glocestre, the king's sonnes, at a supper of feorthe [i.e. worthy] marchants in the Vintry at London, in the house of Lowys Johan,' a merchant (cf. *Ashmole MS.* 59, No. 9). According to John Shirley [q. v.], the fifteenth-century copyist, Scogan interpolated in this poem three stanzas by Chaucer (Nos. 15–17). Shirley's suggestion has been generally accepted, and the three stanzas are printed among Chaucer's genuine poems in Professor Skeat's edition as a separate poem, under the title of 'Gentilesse.' Scogan, in his own verses, laments a misspent youth, and apostrophises his master, Chaucer,

That in his language was so curyous.

Among the manuscripts at Corpus Christi College, Oxford, there is a brief collection of proverbs, in metre, headed 'Proverbium Scogani' (MS. 203, f. 22); the first line runs

Flee from the pres and dwell wyth sothfastness.

This is ascribed to Chaucer in Urry's edition of that poet's works, but is certainly by

Henry Scogan. The latter died in 1407. His possessions included the Norfolk manors of Raynham, Helhoughton, Toft, Oxwick, and Besterton. He was succeeded as lord of Haviles by his son Robert.

Shakespeare in '2 Henry IV' (iii. 2) relates how Falstaff, in Henry IV's time, broke 'Skogan's head at the court gate, when a crack not thus high.' In 1600 Hathway and William Rankins prepared a book of dramatic entertainment, in which 'Scoggin' and Skelton were leading characters (Henslowe, *Diary*, p. 175). Ben Jonson, in his masque of the 'Fortunate Isles' (performed 9 Jan. 1624–5), introduces two characters, named respectively Scogan and Skelton, and describes the former as

> A fine gentleman and a master of arts
> Of Henry the fourth's times that made disguises
> For the king's sons, and writ in ballad royal
> Daintily well.'

Inigo Jones made a fanciful sketch of Scogan for the use of the actor who took that part (cf. Cunningham's *Life of Inigo Jones*).

Shakespeare and Jonson doubtless embodied hazy traditions of Scogan, the friend of Chaucer. But his reputation as a serious-minded poet was obscured by the fact that half a century after he had disappeared another of his surname, John Scogan (*fl.* 1480), is said to have acquired much wider fame in a very different capacity—that of fool at the court of Edward IV. No strictly contemporary reference to John Scogan is discoverable, although the christian name was borne at an earlier date by various members of the Norfolk family to which the poet belonged (cf. Blomefield, iii. 315, vii. 141). All that is known of the fool is derived from a volume purporting to collect his 'Jests,' which was compiled in the sixteenth century by, it is said, Dr. Andrew Boorde [q. v.], a witty physician, who died in 1549. The anonymous editor of the volume states, in a prefatory note, that he had 'heard say that Scoggin did come of an honest stock, no kindred, and that his friends did set him to schoole at Oxford, where he did continue till he was made master of art.' Warton, on no known authority, assigned him to Oriel College. The 'Jests' themselves include many that are familiar in 'The merie tales of Skeltoun' and similar collections of earlier date. The pretension that they were edited by Andrew Boorde was doubtless the fraudulent device of an enterprising bookseller, and it is not unreasonable to suspect that the whole was a work of fiction, and that Scogan is a fictitious hero. The tales supply a rough biography of Scogan, which is clearly to a large extent apocryphal. According to them, he was educated at Oxford and graduated in arts. He prepared for the priesthood the son of a husbandman of the neighbourhood, and when the plague raged in Oxford—apparently in 1471—withdrew with other tutors to the hospital of St. Bartholomew in the suburbs. Subsequently he dwelt in London, whence he removed for a time to Bury. At length he obtained the post of fool in the household of one Sir William Neville, whom it is difficult to identify. Neville brought him to court, and his wit delighted the king and queen. The former gave him a house in Cheapside. He went on progress with the court, and received rich gifts from the courtiers. Subsequently, by his freedom of speech, he offended the king and retired to Paris. He was well received by the French king, but was ultimately banished from France. Returning to England, he found himself still out of favour at the English court, and paid a visit to a friend named Everid, who resided at Jesus College, Cambridge. After travelling with Everid to Newcastle, he obtained pardon of the king and queen. Soon afterwards he died of a 'perillous cough, and was buried on the east side of Westminster Abbey. The site of his grave was subsequently occupied by Henry VII's chapel. He married young, and had at least one son. Holinshed enumerates among the great men of Edward IV's time 'Skogan, a learned gentleman, and student for a time at Oxforde, of a pleasaunte witte, and bente to mery devises, in respect whereof he was called into the courte, where, giving himself to his naturall inclination of mirthe and pleasant pastime, he plaied many sporting parts, althoughe not in suche uncivill maner as hath bene of hym reported.' Holinshed evidently derived his information from the book of 'Jests' traditionally associated with Scogan's name.

No early edition of Scogan's 'Jests' is extant. In 1565–6 Thomas Colwell obtained a license for printing 'the geystes of Skoggon gathered together in this volume.' The wording of the entry suggests that some of the 'geystes' had already been published separately. The only argument adduced in favour of Boorde's responsibility for the publication lies in the fact that Colwell, the first publisher, had succeeded to the business of Robert Wyer, who was Boorde's regular publisher. The work was repeatedly reissued; an edition dated 1613 was in the Harleian collection. The earliest now known is dated 1626, and the title runs, 'The First and Best Part of Scoggins Jests. Full of Witty Mirth and Pleasant Shifts, done by him in France and other places: being a

Preservative against Melancholy. Gathered by Andrew Boord, Doctor of physicke, London. Printed by Francis Williams, 1626,' 12mo (black letter). An abridgment in chapbook form was issued about 1680, and again by Caulfield in 1796. Mr. W. C. Hazlitt reprinted the full text in his 'Old English Jest-books' (1864, ii. 37–161).

Numerous references to 'Scoggin's Jests' in sixteenth and seventeenth century literature attest their popularity. In 1575 the tract was in the library of Captain Cox. 'Scoggin's Jests' was coupled with 'The Hundred Merry Tales' as popular manuals of witticisms in the epilogue of 'Wily Beguil'd,' 1606 (written earlier). In 1607 there appeared a like collection of jests, under the title of 'Dobson's Drie Bobbes, son and heire to Scoggin.' 'Scoggin's Jests' is numbered among popular tracts of the day by John Taylor, the water-poet, in his 'Motto' (1622), and in 'Harry White his Humour' (1640?), as well as in the comedy called 'London Chaunticleers' (1659). As late as 1680, at the trial of Elizabeth Cellier, one of the judges, Baron Weston, indicated his sense of the absurdity of the evidence of a witness who confusedly related his clumsy search after a suspected person by remarking, 'Why, Scoggin look'd for his knife on the housetop.' The words refer to Scogan's account of his search for a hare on the housetop (*State Trials*, vii. 1043).

The frequent association of Scogan's name with Skelton's in popular literature is attributable to a double confusion, in that both Skelton and the elder Scogan were poets, and that on both Skelton and the alleged younger Scogan were fathered collections of jests. Drayton, in the preface to his 'Eclogues,' mentions that 'the Colin Clout of Scogan under Henry VII is pretty'—a manifest misreading for Skelton. Gabriel Harvey describes 'Sir Skelton and Master Scoggin' as 'innocents [when compared] to Signor Capricio,' i.e. Harvey's foe, Thomas Nash (1567–1601) [q. v.]

[Doran's History of Court Fools, pp. 123–30; Hazlitt's Old English Jest-books, ii. 37 seq.; Shakespeare, ed. Malone and Boswell, 1891, xvii. 117–19; Chaucer's Works, ed. Tyrwhit; Ritson's Bibliographia Poetica; Warton's Hist. of English Poetry.] S. L.

SCOLES, JOSEPH JOHN (1798–1863), architect, born in London on 27 June 1798, was son of Matthew Scoles, a joiner, and Elizabeth Sparling. His parents were Roman catholics. Educated at the Roman catholic school at Baddesley Green, Joseph was apprenticed in 1812 for seven years to his kinsman, Joseph Ireland, an architect largely employed by Dr. John Milner (1752–1826) [q. v.], the Roman catholic bishop. During his apprenticeship, John Carter (1748–1817) [q. v.], through Milner's influence, revised his detailed drawings, and he thus had his attention directed at an early period to mediæval ecclesiastical art. Ireland, as was customary at that period, frequently acted as contractor as well as designer, and Scoles from 1816 to 1819 was resident at Hassop Hall, Bakewell, and in Leicester, superintending works for Ireland.

In 1822 Scoles left England in company with Joseph Bonomi the younger [q. v.] for further study, and devoted himself to archæological and architectural research in Rome, Greece, Egypt, and Syria. Henry Parke [q. v.] and T. Catherwood were often his companions. He published in 1829 an engraved 'Map of Nubia, comprising the country between the first and second cataracts of the Nile,' from a survey made in 1824 jointly by him and Parke, and a map of the city of Jerusalem; his plan of the church of the Holy Sepulchre, Jerusalem, with his drawings of the Jewish tombs in the valley of Jehoshaphat, was published by Professor Robert Willis [q.v.] in 1849. The plan of the temple of Cadacchio, contributed by Scoles to the supplementary volume of Stuart and Revett, was published without acknowledgment. Two sheets of classic detail, drawn by F. Arundale from sketches by Parke and Scoles in 1823, were published by Augustus W. N. Pugin [q. v.] in 1828. The illustrations to the article 'Catacomb' in the 'Dictionary of the Architectural Publication Society' comprise plans of a catacomb in Alexandria drawn in 1823 by Scoles, Parke, and Catherwood.

Meanwhile in 1826 he returned home and resumed his practice. In 1828 he planned and carried out the building of Gloucester Terrace, Regent's Park, for which John Nash [q. v.] supplied the general elevation. He showed his ingenuity by varying the internal arrangements behind Nash's elevation, and his artistic feeling by changing the proportions of Nash's details while preserving the contours of the mouldings. Nash passed the work with the observation that the parts looked larger than he expected. Gloucester Villa at the entrance to the park was solely due to Scoles; and about the same period he erected a suspension bridge over the river Bure at Great Yarmouth, which in 1845 gave way with fatal results, owing to concealed defects of workmanship in two of the suspending rods.

Scoles designed St. Mary's Chapel, South Town, Yarmouth (1830), St. Peter's Church,

Great Yarmouth (1831), and St. George's Church, Edgbaston, for Lord Calthorpe. These, with some small additions and restorations to Burgh Castle and Blundestone churches, Suffolk, comprised all his work for the established church of England. His works for the Roman catholic church included Our Lady's Church, St. John's Wood (1832), St. Peter's Collegiate Church, Stonyhurst, Lancashire (1832), St. Ignatius, Preston, Lancashire (1835), St. James's, Colchester (1837), St. Mary's, Newport, Monmouthshire (1840), St. David's, Cardiff (1842), St. John's, Islington (1843), the Immaculate Conception, Farm Street, London (1844), St. Francis Xavier's, Liverpool (1844), the Immaculate Conception, Chelmsford (1847), the church and presbytery of Great Yarmouth (1848–50), the chapel of Ince Hall, Lancashire (1859), and the Holy Cross, St. Helen's, Lancashire (1860).

Scoles's design of the church of St. John, Islington, was censured by Pugin in a self-laudatory article on 'Ecclesiastical Architectures' in the 'Dublin Review' for 1843; but the plan given by Pugin was shown to be in error in an editorial article in the 'Builder' of 1 April 1843. Among others of Scoles's works was the London Oratory, Brompton, with its library, the little oratory, and the temporary church, as well as a convent in Sidney Street, Brompton. The chapel of Prior Park College, Bath, designed by Scoles, was erected after his death by his son.

Scoles was elected a fellow of the Royal Institute of British Architects in 1835, was honorary secretary from May 1846 to May 1856, and vice-president in 1857–8. To the society's proceedings he contributed papers principally on the monuments of Egypt and the Holy Land, the outcome of his early travels.

He died on 29 Dec. 1863, at his residence, Crofton Lodge, Hammersmith.

Scoles married, in 1831, Harriott, daughter of Robert Cory of Great Yarmouth. Four sons and eight daughters survived him. There is in the possession of his son, Mr. Augustus Cory Scoles, a watercolour drawing by John Hollins, A.R.A. [q. v.], representing Scoles in the native costume he had adopted when in Syria.

[Family papers and personal knowledge; Builder, 16 Jan. 1864.] S. J. N.

SCOLOKER, ANTHONY (*fl.* 1548), printer and translator, is believed to have been an exile from England on account of his evangelical views during the later years of Henry VIII's reign. He appears to have lived in Germany, learning the German, Dutch, and French languages. On the accession of Edward VI he returned to England, and established a printing press in 'Savoy Rents without Temple Bar.' For some time William Seres [q. v.] was his partner, and together they issued in 1548 Bale's 'Briefe Chronycle of Sir John Oldecastell.' Among other books published by Scoloker were editions of Skelton's poems and Piers Plowman's 'Exhortation;' his books are rarely dated, but they seem all to have been published in 1547 or 1548. In the latter year he removed to Ipswich, where he lived in St. Nicholas parish, and set up a printing press. No book of his is known to have been published after 1548, and no mention of him is made in the registers of the Stationers' Company.

Scoloker was also a translator; the most interesting of his translations is 'A goodly Dysputacion betwene a Christen Shomaker and a Popyshe Parson . . . translated out of ye German [of Hans Sachs] by A. Scoloker,' 1548, 8vo (Brit. Mus.) The translation is not very accurate, but 'is racy, and even sparkling with humour' (Grosart, *Introduction to Daiphantus*; cf. Herford, *Lit. Rel. of England and Germany*, pp. 53–4). His other works are: 1. 'The iust reckenyng, or accompt of the whole number of the yeares from the beginyng of the worlde unto this presente yere of 1547. A certaine and sure declaracion that the worlde is at an ende. Translated out of the Germaine tongue by Anthony Scoloker, 6 July 1547' (Hazlitt, *Coll.* iii. 309). 2. 'A Notable Collection of divers and sōdry places of the Sacred Scriptures which make to the declaracyon of the Lordes Prayer, gathered by P. Viret, and translated out of the Frenche by A. Scoloker,' London, 1648, 8vo (Brit. Mus.) 3. 'A Briefe Summe of the whole Bible. A Christian instruction for all persones younge and old, to which is annexed the ordinary for all degrees. Translated out of Doutch into Englysshe by Anthony Scoloker,' London, 1568, 8vo (Hazlitt, *Coll.* i. 37). 4. 'Simplicitie and Knowledge, a Dialogue,' of which no copy is known to be extant (Herford, p. 64).

Another Anthony Scoloker (*fl.* 1604), doubtless a relative of the above, was author of 'Daiphantus, or the Passions of Loue,' 1604. A copy, believed to be unique, is in the Douce Collection in the Bodleian Library. It was reprinted for the Roxburghe Club in 1818, and again in 1880, with an introduction by Dr. A. B. Grosart. At the end was printed for the first time Ralegh's 'Passionate Man's Pilgrimage,' which was probably written in 1603; but the chief interest in the poem consists in its references to Shake-

speare. In the epistle to the reader he is referred to as 'friendly Shakespeare,' which may imply that Shakespeare and Scoloker were acquainted. There are also various references to Hamlet, which seem to prove that Shakespeare intended Hamlet's madness to be real, and not merely feigned (GROSART, *Introduction to Daiphantus*).

[Authorities quoted: Works in Brit. Mus. Libr.; Cat. Douce Libr.; Hazlitt's Handbook and Collections, passim; Hunter's MS. Chorus Vatum; Ames's Typogr. Antiq. ed. Herbert, 1791, p. 748, ed. Dibdin, iv. 306–9; Ritson's Bibl. Anglo-Poetica; Tanner's Bibliotheca Brit.-Hibernica; Corser's Collectanea, iii. 202; Acad. 1884, i. 386; Strype's Eccl. Mem. II. i. 226; Shakespeare's Centurie of Prayse (New Shakspere Soc.), p. 64.] A. F. P.

SCORBURGH, SIR ROBERT DE (*d.* 1340), baron of the exchequer, derived his name from Scorbrough in the East Riding of Yorkshire. He is no doubt the Robert de Scorburgh of Beverley to whom there are some references in 1320 to 1322 (*Cal. Close Rolls*, Edward II, iii. 241, 385, 547), and who in 1324 had license to assign a lay fee in Beverley and Etton, for at his death he is described as possessing the manor of Scorby, together with property in Stamford Bridge and Etton (*Abbrev. Rot. Origin.* i. 274, ii. 136). In August 1322 there is reference to an inquisition held by him (*Cal. Close Rolls*, Edward II, iii. 591), and he also served on other commissions in Yorkshire in 1325 and 1326. His name appears in numerous commissions of oyer and terminer in Yorkshire between 13 Feb. 1327 and 4 March 1333 (*Cal. Pat. Rolls*, Edward III, i. and ii. passim). On 27 March 1328 he was on a commission to survey the common ferry over the water of Hull; in December 1329 he was a justice of eyre in Nottinghamshire, and in May 1330 in Derbyshire (*ib.* i. 290, 465, 521). On 12 Feb. 1332 he was named on the commission of peace for the East Riding, and on 3 Nov. 1332 to assess the fifteenth in the city of London (*ib.* ii. 287, 358). On 2 Nov. of the same year he was appointed one of the barons of the exchequer, and in October 1333 was appointed a justice of eyre in the liberty of Durham during the vacancy of the see (*ib.* ii. 362, 475). He was knighted in 1332, and on 7 Jan. 1334 was one of the proctors to carry out the agreement with the Count of Flanders (*ib.* ii. 479; *Fœdera*, ii. 875). On 16 July 1334 he was appointed chief baron of the exchequer at Dublin, at the same time as Robert de Scardeburgh [q. v.] was appointed chief justice of the king's bench in Ireland (*Cal. Pat. Rolls*, Edward III, ii. 568). On 4 Oct. 1334 he was appointed to treat with the men of the boroughs and ancient demesne lands of the North Riding concerning the payment of the tenth and fifteenth. On 26 Aug. 1335 he was on a commission of inquiry concerning alleged extortions, and on 16 Oct. 1336 was a commissioner for the arrest of suspected persons in Yorkshire (*ib.* iii. 39, 211, 367). On 28 July 1337 he was appointed a justice of the bench in Dublin, Robert de Scardeburgh being appointed chief justice the same day (*ib.* iii. 477). He died in 1340, when his property was committed to the custody of Wolfand de Clistere, because his son Thomas was an idiot.

[Parl. Writs, vol. ii. pt. ii. 1406; Rot. Parl. i. 420, ii. 28; Foss's Judges of England; authorities cited. In the indices to the Cal. of Patent Rolls Scorburgh is often confused with Robert de Scardeburgh [q. v.], but it is quite clear that they were distinct persons, though, by a strange coincidence, they became judges in the same year, and both held office at the same time in Ireland. In the notices of their judicial appointments in the patent rolls Scorburgh and Scardeburgh are correctly distinguished. It is not so easy to distinguish the references to Scord, Scorb, and Scharde as advocates in the year-books of Edward II and Edward III.] C. L. K.

SCORESBY, WILLIAM (1760–1829), arctic navigator, the son of a small farmer at Cropton, twenty miles from Whitby, was born on 3 May 1760. After attending the village school he was employed about the farm from the age of nine, and occasionally worked for neighbouring farmers. In his twentieth year he bound himself for three years as an apprentice to the captain of a ship called the Jane, trading from Whitby to the Baltic. He joined her in March 1780. He had already studied navigation, his knowledge and practice of which enabled him, in the second year of his service at sea, to detect an error in the reckoning which would otherwise have caused the loss of the ship. The only reward he got was the ill-will of the mate, whose blunder he had exposed. This caused him to leave the ship at London in October 1781, and enter on board an ordnance ship, the Speedwell, carrying out stores to Gibraltar. At the entrance of the Straits the Speedwell fell in with the Spanish fleet and was captured. Her men were taken to Cadiz, and thence sent inland to San Lucar de Mayor, from which, being carelessly guarded, Scoresby and one of his companions managed to escape. After various adventures they succeeded in reaching Cadiz, where they got on board an English cartel and were taken to England.

On his return home Scoresby engaged once more in farm work during 1783 and 1784. Meantime he married the daughter of a neighbouring farmer, and, with the prospect of a family, his old ambition returned. In the spring of 1785 he engaged himself on board the ship Henrietta, employed in the Greenland whale fishery, and for the next six years continued in her, going to Greenland each summer, and in the winter taking casual employment on board coasting vessels. After the voyage of 1790 the captain of the Henrietta retired on his savings, and recommended Scoresby as his successor. The owner appointed Scoresby to the command. After commanding the Henrietta for seven seasons, Scoresby's reputation in the trade stood high, and in the beginning of 1798 he accepted the more advantageous offers of a London firm to command their ship, the Dundee of London. The Dundee was as successful as the Henrietta. In 1802 he joined a small company at Whitby, thus becoming owner of one-eighth of a new ship, the Resolution, of 291 tons, which he was to command on the same terms as had been given him by the London firm. From 1803 to 1810 inclusive he sailed each season in her, and each season returned with a good cargo, the profits to the company being at the average rate of 25 per cent. per annum on the capital invested.

At the end of the voyage of 1810 he resigned the command of the Resolution in favour of his son, and himself took command of the John, belonging to the Greenock whale-fishing company, consisting of four partners, of whom he was one. After the season of 1814 he resigned the John in favour of his daughter's husband, and remained on shore in 1815. In the following year he was at sea again in command of the Mars of Whitby, belonging to one of his partners in the Resolution. In the autumn of 1817 he bought, entirely on his own account, a teak-built ship, the Fame, brought into England as a prize from the French. He had hopes that she might be taken up by the government for a voyage of arctic discovery under the command of his son, and only at the last moment, when the government resolved otherwise, made up his mind to send her to the fishery. In 1819 and the three following years he took command of her himself. She sailed for another voyage in 1823, but was accidentally burnt at the Orkneys. Scoresby, having now acquired a 'handsome competence,' returned to Whitby, where he lived till his death in 1829.

The net profits of Scoresby's thirty voyages as a captain were estimated at 90,000*l.*, or an average of upwards of 30 per cent. per annum on the capital employed. He is described as of about six feet in height, and of extraordinary muscular power, a first-rate seaman and navigator, and of a judgment which, cultivated by experience and reflection, became almost instinctive. It was this that, in May 1806 for instance, led him to force the Resolution through the pack into open water beyond the 80th parallel, when he attained the latitude of 81° 30′, long the highest reached by a ship, and completed his cargo in thirty-two days with 'twenty-four whales, two seals, two walruses, two bears, and a narwhal.' Exploration was not his business, but he did much to render arctic navigation more certain, and more feasible, by the introduction of new methods, and by inventions, such as the ice-drill, or improvements of fittings, such as the crow's nest, the shelter for the look-out at the masthead, in which he was accustomed to spend hours, or even days. He married, in 1783, Lady Mary Smith (Lady Mary being her christian name, given her in commemoration of her having been born on Lady-day), daughter of John Smith of Cropton, and had issue. His son William is separately noticed.

[Memorials of the Sea; My Father (1851), by William Scoresby the younger.] J. K. L.

SCORESBY, WILLIAM (1789–1857), master-mariner, author, and divine, son of William Scoresby (1760–1829) [q. v.], was born at Cropton, near Whitby, on 5 Oct. 1789. In the spring of 1800 he accompanied his father to the whale fishing, but on his return was again sent to school, and stayed there till 1803, when he was entered on board the Resolution whaler, as his father's apprentice. Year after year he made the Greenland voyage with his father; in 1806, as chief officer of the Resolution, when she was pushed as far north as 81° 30′. In the autumn of 1806 he entered the university of Edinburgh, where he studied chemistry and natural philosophy, and attracted the notice of Professor John Playfair [q. v.], who showed him some kindness. In the course of the voyage of 1807 he made a survey of Balta Sound in the Shetland Isles, and constructed an original chart of it. On his return in September he volunteered for service with the fleet at Copenhagen, to assist in bringing the Danish ships to England, was sent out with other volunteers, and, after assisting in getting the ships ready, was put in command of a gunboat. He and others similarly appointed represented to the admiral that these gunboats, built for light draught in smooth water, were

not seaworthy. The remonstrance was unavailing; but scarcely had the vessel reached the open sea before she was found to be making water so fast that she had to be abandoned, Scoresby and his crew happily succeeding in getting on board the 74-gun ship Alfred. At Yarmouth he was put on board one of the prizes. At Portsmouth, on 21 Dec., he was discharged. He had had letters of introduction, but did not present them, wishing to get some experience of a seaman's life in the navy. He describes it as excessively hard; but in the Alfred, the only man-of-war he was in, he was not uncomfortable or ill-used; the squalor, discomfort, and hardship were on board the receiving ship, in the first instance, and the prize afterwards, where a small party of seamen—presumably men of indifferent character—had to be kept in order by a foul-tongued and hard-flogging lieutenant. His experiences were scarcely typical, though his account of them is interesting.

On his way home from Portsmouth he made the acquaintance of Sir Joseph Banks [q. v.], who introduced him to some of the leading men of the day. The acquaintance led to a correspondence which was continued till Banks's death. Probably at the suggestion of Banks, Scoresby began to make observations of natural phenomena and to study the natural history of the polar regions. He made a series of drawings of the forms of snowflakes as seen through a microscope, and collected many specimens of plants till then unknown. In November 1809 he renewed his studies at Edinburgh, and made the acquaintance of Professor Robert Jameson [q.v.], who was attracted by his familiar knowledge of life in the polar seas, and laid parts of his journals before the Wernerian Society, of which Scoresby became a member. On 5 Oct. 1810, the day on which he attained his majority, his father resigned to him the command of the Resolution, and his first voyage as captain, in the summer of 1811, proved most successful. In September he married Miss Lockwood, the daughter of a shipbroker of Whitby. After another prosperous voyage in the Resolution he changed into the Esk, a new and larger ship, in which he made the voyage of 1813, busying himself with scientific observations. He invented an apparatus, which he called a 'marine diver,' for obtaining deep-sea temperatures, and by it established for the first time that in the arctic seas the bottom temperatures are higher than the surface.

In the voyage of 1816, after making a promising start in the fishing, the Esk was nipped between two floes, and, as she got free, struck on a projecting tongue of ice, which left a large hole in her bottom. She was in imminent danger of sinking, but by the exertions of Scoresby, assisted by his brother-in-law Thomas Jackson, who commanded the John, which was fortunately in company, the leak was so far stopped that the ship was brought safely to Whitby; the owners gave Scoresby a gratuity of 50*l.*, to which the underwriters added a handsome piece of plate. The voyage of 1817 proved unsuccessful, and, as the owners seemed dissatisfied, he resigned the command of the Esk, and was appointed by his father to the Fame, a teak-built ship of his own.

During the winter of 1817–18 he had a long correspondence with Sir Joseph Banks on the advisability of a voyage of discovery in the polar seas, and believed, with some reason, that his representations largely influenced the Royal Society and the government in their resolve to send out the expeditions of 1818. He had hoped that the Fame might be taken up for the purpose and himself appointed to the command; but learning from Mr. (afterwards Sir John) Barrow [q. v.] that the commander would certainly be an officer of the navy, he made his usual voyage to the Greenland fishing in the summer of 1818. During these years he was continually occupied with the problems of arctic geography, meteorology, and magnetism, and contributed numerous papers to the 'Proceedings' of the Wernerian Society. In January 1819 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh, and in February he communicated to the Royal Society of London a paper on the variations of the magnetic needle.

In May 1819 he moved with his family to Liverpool, where he was occupied during the year in superintending the building of the Baffin, specially fitted for the Greenland trade, at a cost of 9,500*l.* She was launched on 15 Feb. 1820, sailed on 18 March, and returned on 23 Aug. with the largest cargo that had ever been brought in from Greenland. During his absence there was published 'Account of the Arctic Regions and Northern Whale Fishery' (2 vols. 8vo, 1820), a work on which he had been engaged for the last four years. It was at once recognised as the standard work on the subject, and may be considered as the foundation-stone of arctic science. In 1821 and again in 1822 he made the accustomed voyage.

On his return to Liverpool in 1822 he was met by the news of the death of his wife, to whom he was tenderly attached. From his youth he had had strong religious convictions, which had been intensified by the fervent piety of his wife. On his return from the voyage of 1823 he resolved to prepare

himself for the ministry, and in this view was entered at Queens' College, Cambridge, intending to take a degree as a 'ten years' man;' at the same time he studied Latin and Greek, his only relaxation being the writing of scientific papers. In June 1824 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society. By July 1825 he was able to pass his examination at Cambridge with honour, and on 10 July he was ordained by the archbishop of York to the curacy of Bessingby, near Bridlington Quay, with the modest stipend of 40*l.* a year. His former career had brought him an average income of 800*l.*

In January 1827 he was elected a corresponding member of the Institute of France, and in May became chaplain of the mariners' church at Liverpool. He married again in 1828, and in April 1832 was elected to the incumbency of Bedford chapel at Exeter. In 1834 he obtained the degree of B.D. as 'a ten-years' man,' and in 1839 proceeded to that of D.D. About the same time he accepted, from the Simeon trustees, the presentation to the vicarage of Bradford, a parish of a hundred thousand souls, where the work, both spiritual and temporal, was severe and the emoluments small.

After five years at Bradford his health gave way; six months' leave of absence, which he spent in a voyage to the United States, failed to effect a permanent cure, and in January 1847 he resigned the living. He went for a second tour in Canada and the United States, and during his absence, in January 1848, received news of his second wife's death. He returned to England in the following March, and, having married for a third time, in September 1849, he lived for the most part at Torquay, near his wife's family. He took voluntary clerical work, and occupied himself with science and literature. In 1850 he published 'The Franklin Expedition,' 8vo; and in 1851, 'My Father, being Records of the Adventurous Life of the late W. Scoresby,' 8vo.

During these later years he was working specially on the subject of magnetism, and in February 1856 he made a voyage to Australia and home, in order to carry out a series of systematic observations. The Liverpool and Australia Steam Navigation Company gave him a free passage, with every facility for observing. Scoresby was back in Liverpool by 13 Aug. While preparing his journals and observations he completely broke down, and, after six weeks of suffering, he died at Torquay on 21 March 1857. On the 28th he was buried at Upton church, where there is a monument to his memory, erected by subscription. By his first wife he had two sons, both of whom predeceased him.

Scoresby was a voluminous writer, the larger part of his work consisting of contributions to scientific journals or of sermons. His nephew has enumerated ninety-one publications, as well as 'a variety of articles, lectures, essays, addresses, tracts, &c., in different theological, scientific, and literary journals.' His more important works, besides those already named, are: 1. 'Journal of a Voyage to the Northern Whale Fishery and Discoveries on the East Coast of Greenland,' 8vo, 1823. 2. 'Memorials of the Sea,' 12mo, 1833. 3. 'Magnetical Investigations,' 2 vols. 8vo, 1839–52. 4. 'Zoistic Magnetism,' 8vo, 1850. 5. 'Journal of a Voyage to Australia for Magnetical Research,' edited by Archibald Smith [q. v.], 8vo, 1859.

[Life by his nephew, R. E. Scoresby-Jackson, with a portrait after a photograph; his works, especially the Account of the Arctic Regions; Journal of the Royal Geographical Society, vol. xxxviii. p. cxxxviii.] J. K. L.

SCORESBY-JACKSON, ROBERT EDMUND (1835–1867), biographer. [See JACKSON.]

SCORY, JOHN (*d.* 1585), bishop of Chichester and Hereford, was a Norfolk man, who became a friar in the Dominicans' house at Cambridge about 1530, signing the surrender on its suppression in 1538. He proceeded B.D. in 1539. In 1541 he was one of the six preachers whom Cranmer appointed at Canterbury (cf. STRYPE, *Cranmer*, p. 134). He was also one of Cranmer's chaplains. He was accused for a sermon preached on Ascension day 1541, but nothing seems to have resulted (*ib.* pp. 151, 152). King Edward notes that when Joan Bocher [q. v.] was executed (2 May 1550) for heresy, Scory preached, and the poor woman reviled him, saying that he lied like a rogue and ought to read the Bible (STRYPE, *Memorials*, II. i. 335). He was about this time made examining chaplain to Ridley, bishop of London. In Lent 1551 he called attention to the want of ecclesiastical discipline, and to the covetousness of the rich, particularly in the matter of enclosures (*ib.* p. 496). He was appointed to the bishopric of Rochester on 26 April 1551, and, in thanking the king for his preferment, insisted again on these two evils (*ib.* II. ii. 481). He was a commissioner appointed to revise the ecclesiastical laws (February 1551–2). On 23 May 1552 he was translated to Chichester.

On Mary's accession Scory was deprived, but submitted himself to Bonner, renounced his wife, did penance for being married, and,

having recanted and been absolved, was allowed to officiate in the London diocese (Strype, *Memorials*, III. i. 241, *Cranmer*, pp. 519, 1053). He is also supposed to have circulated Cranmer's 'Declaration concerning the Mass.' He soon, however, left England and went to Emden in Friesland, where he became superintendent of the English congregation, and where, at a safe distance, he wrote, in 1555, his 'Comfortable Epistle unto all the Faithful that be in Prison,' &c. He was also at Wesel, but fixed his residence in 1556 at Geneva, where he was also chaplain to the exiles.

At Elizabeth's accession he returned to England. He had a bad record, but he formed a link with the past too valuable to be lost. So he was marked out for preferment. He preached before the queen in Lent 1559, took part in the disputation with the catholics on 31 March 1559, and on 15 July 1559 became bishop of Hereford, being one of the first bishops nominated by Elizabeth. When Henry III of France died, Scory preached at the solemn service held at St. Paul's on 8 Sept. 1559 (Strype, *Grindal*, p. 38). He also assisted at Parker's consecration, and preached the sermon on 17 Dec. 1559 (Strype, *Parker*, p. 113). At Hereford he was much harassed. He wrote to Parker (*ib.* p. 190) describing the condition of his diocese, which contained many chapels either unserved or served with a reader only; some of the parish churches were in danger, owing to an interpretation of the statute for the suppression of colleges (Strype, *Annals*, II. i. 503). He also was troubled by the proceedings of the council for the marches of Wales, and had difficulties with the cathedral clergy; but he obtained new statutes for the cathedral in 1582. He was accused of being a moneylender. In dogma he was sound enough, and signed the articles of 1562, and the canons of 1571. He died at Whitbourne on 26 June 1585. His wife Elizabeth survived till 8 March 1592. A son, Sylvanus (Strype, *Annals*, III. ii. 453), was prebendary of Hereford 1565–9, fought in the Low Countries, was M.P. for Newton, Hampshire, in 1597, and, dying in 1617, was buried in St. Leonard's, Shoreditch, and left one son, Sylvanus, who died a prisoner in Wood Street counter in 1641, and another son, Edmund, knighted on 4 July 1618.

Scory died rich, and left 600*l.* to charitable uses. He published, besides a few sermons and the letter referred to: 1. 'Certein Works of the blessed Cipriane the Martyr,' London, 1556. 2. 'Two Books of the noble doctor and B. S. Augustine,' translated into English, 8vo, between 1550 and 1560. A curious survey of the lands belonging to the see of Hereford was made in 1557–8 by Swithun Butterfield under Scory's direction, and has been preserved.

[Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. i. 511; Dixon's Hist. Church of Engl. iv. 42; Notes and Queries, 5th ser. i. 466, 7th ser. viii. 1; Narratives of the Reformation (Camd. Soc.), pp. 218, 227, 228; Strype's Works, passim; Parker Soc. Publications; Greyfriars' Chron. (Camden Soc.), p. 83.]

W. A. J. A.

SCOT. [See also Scott.]

SCOT, DAVID (1770?–1834), orientalist and miscellaneous writer, born about 1770 at Penicuik, near Edinburgh, was son of William Scot, a small farmer, who is said to have sold his cow to pay the expense of printing a theological pamphlet. Young Scot was educated at the parish school and Edinburgh University. He was licensed as a preacher by the presbytery of Edinburgh on 25 Nov. 1795. Supporting himself by private teaching, he studied medicine, and graduated M.D. on 25 June 1812. He formed a close intimacy with Alexander Murray (1775–1813) [q. v.] and Dr. John Leyden [q. v.], and under their guidance he made himself master of many Asiatic tongues, at the same time acting as tutor to candidates for the Indian service. In 1812 Scot was an unsuccessful candidate for the Hebrew chair in Edinburgh University; but, through the influence of Sir John Marjoribanks of Lees, he obtained the parish living of Corstorphine, near Edinburgh, to which he was presented on 22 Aug. and ordained on 17 Nov. 1814. After a ministry of nineteen years he was appointed in 1833 professor of Hebrew in St. Mary's College, St. Andrews. When on a visit to Edinburgh to attend the meeting of the British Association, he was seized with a dropsical complaint, and died on 18 Sept. 1834. His wife survived him.

Besides editing Dr. Murray's posthumous 'History of the European Languages,' Scot was author of: 1. 'Essays on various Subjects of Belles Lettres . . .,' Edinburgh, 1824, 12mo. 2. 'Discourses on some important subjects of Natural and Revealed Religion,' Edinburgh, 1825, 8vo. 3. 'Key to the Hebrew Pentateuch,' London, 1826, 8vo. 4. 'Key to the Psalms, Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, and Song of Solomon,' London, 1828, 8vo. He also wrote a Hebrew grammar (published 1834) for the use of his class; it is said that he dictated it extempore to the printers.

[Scott's Fasti, i. 138; Murray's Biogr. Annals of the Parish of Colinton; Thomson's Dict. of Eminent Scotsmen.]

G. S–H.

SCOTLAND, HENRY OF (1114?–1152). [See HENRY.]

SCOTSTARVET, SIR JOHN OF (1586–1670), Scottish judge. [See SCOTT, SIR JOHN.]

SCOTT. [See also SCOT.]

SCOTT, ALEXANDER (1525?–1584?), poet, born about 1525, is supposed to have been the son of Alexander Scott, prebendary of the Chapel Royal, of Stirling, whose two sons, John and Alexander, were legitimated 21 Nov. 1549 (*Privy Council Register*, xxiii. 50). There is no evidence of his having followed any profession, but allusions in his poems establish the fact that much of his time was spent in or near Edinburgh. In a sonnet by Alexander Montgomerie (1556?–1610?) [q. v.], written apparently about 1584, he is spoken of as 'Old Scot,' and as then living; he probably died in that year or soon after. He was married, but his wife eloped with a 'wantoun man.'

Scott's extant work consists of thirty-six short pieces, the longest numbering a little over two hundred lines. They are preserved only in the Bannatyne manuscript compiled in 1568 (now in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh). The earliest poem by Scott to which a date can be assigned is 'The Lament of the Maister of Erskyn,' written in 1547. The two most important poems are 'A New Yeir Gift to Quene Mary,' which throws much light on the social life and lamentable condition of the people in 1562; and 'The Justing at the Drum,' a clever imitation of 'Chrystis Kirk on the Grene,' in which the practice of the tournament is ridiculed. The rest of the poems, written in a great variety of measures, are for the most part amatory. A few, in a satirical vein, are very coarse. All are marked by felicity of diction and directness of expression. Scott is called by Pinkerton 'the Anacreon of old Scotish poetry.' But among the ancient minor poets of Scotland his place should be below Montgomerie. Allan Ramsay first printed seven of Scott's poems in 'The Evergreen' (1724). An equal number was printed by Lord Hailes in 'Ancient Scottish Poems: published from the Manuscript of George Bannatyne' (1770). Fifteen of the poems were included by Sibbald in 'A Chronicle of Scottish Poetry,' 1802, 4 vols. 8vo. The first complete edition of the poems was issued by David Laing, Edinburgh, 1821. All the pieces are printed in the transcript of the Bannatyne manuscript made for the Hunterian Club, Glasgow, 1874–81. A small edition was printed at Glasgow in 1882 for private circulation. A modernised and expurgated edition was issued by William Mackean, Paisley, 1887. The latest edition is that of the Scottish Text Society, with notes and memoir by the writer of this article (Edinburgh, 1895).

[The printed editions of Scott's poems.]

J. C–N.

SCOTT, ALEXANDER JOHN (1768–1840), chaplain in the navy, son of Robert Scott, a retired lieutenant in the navy, and nephew of Commander, afterwards Rear-admiral, Alexander Scott, was born at Rotherhithe on 23 July 1768. In 1770 his father died, leaving his family in straitened circumstances, and in 1772 his uncle, going out to the West Indies in command of the Lynx, took the boy with him. For the next four years he lived principally with Lady Payne, wife of Sir Ralph Payne (afterwards Lord Lavington) [q. v.], governor of the Leeward Islands, who used to call him 'Little Toby.' In 1776 his uncle, Captain Scott, was posted to the Experiment on the coast of North America, where, in the attack on Sullivan's Island on 28 June, he lost his left arm, besides receiving other severe wounds, which compelled him to return to England and retire from active service. 'Little Toby' returned to England about the same time, and was sent to school. In 1777 Sir Ralph Payne procured for him a nomination to a foundation scholarship at the Charterhouse (admitted 5 Aug.), whence he obtained a sizarship at St. John's College, Cambridge, in 1786. He was of a convivial disposition, and ran into debt. A good classic, he abhorred mathematics, but he duly graduated B.A. in 1791. In the following November he was ordained deacon to a small curacy in Sussex, and in November 1792 was ordained priest. But his college debts were pressing on him; his uncle refused assistance, and in February 1793 he accepted the offer of a warrant as chaplain of the Berwick with Captain Sir John Collins, an old friend of his father.

The Berwick was one of the fleet that went out to the Mediterranean with Lord Hood, and by the time she arrived on the station Scott, who had devoted himself to the study of Italian and Spanish, had acquired a competent knowledge of both these languages. French he had previously mastered, so that he quickly became of special use to his captain in his intercourse with the Italians and Spaniards. In March 1795 the Berwick was captured, but Scott happened to be on leave at Leghorn, and shortly afterwards was appointed by Sir Hyde

Parker (1739–1807) [q. v.] to be chaplain of his flagship, the St. George. Parker conceived a warm friendship for him, and employed him as a foreign secretary.

Subsequently Scott accompanied Parker to the West Indies in the Queen. At Jamaica, by Parker's interest with the governor, he was appointed to a living in the island, of the value of 500*l.* a year, tenable with his chaplaincy. In 1800 Parker returned to England, and Scott went with him on leave of absence, joining him in the London when he hoisted his flag as commander-in-chief of the fleet going to the Baltic. With his remarkable aptitude for languages, Scott, who already had a good knowledge of German, quickly picked up Danish, and was at work on Russian. After the battle of Copenhagen he was employed as secretary to the conferences on shore, Nelson, who had known him in the Mediterranean, making a special request to Parker for his assistance. Afterwards, when Parker was recalled, he refused Nelson's invitation to come to the St. George, saying that 'he could not bear to leave the old admiral at the very time when he stood most in need of his company.' Nelson made him promise that he would come to him when he could leave Sir Hyde.

In the last days of 1801 he learned that his living in Jamaica would be declared vacant if he did not return at once. He accordingly went out in the Téméraire, and arrived at Port Royal on 5 April 1802, when he was appointed by Sir John Thomas Duckworth [q. v.] to be chaplain of the flagship, the Leviathan, and despatched on a secret message to Cape Français, to try and ascertain the intention of the French in sending an army of twenty thousand men to St. Domingo after peace had been concluded. He failed to solve that puzzle, but found that sickness had so disorganised the French ranks that nothing was to be apprehended from them. While returning to the admiral in the frigate Topaze the ship was struck by lightning, and he was seriously injured. To physical trouble was added the worry of finding, on arrival at Kingston, that his living had been given away by the governor. Meantime, however, the governors of the Charterhouse had presented him to the vicarage of Southminster in Essex, which he visited early in 1803, after his passage home. Nelson, who visited him while both were stopping in London, persuaded Scott to go out with him when appointed to the Mediterranean command in May 1803. He sailed in the Amphion, from which he was transferred, off Toulon, to the Victory. As private secretary and interpreter, he was able to render Nelson efficient assistance in a private capacity. Officially, he was chaplain of the Victory, and nothing else. The arrangement by which Nelson paid him 100*l.* a year was entirely a private one. He was frequently sent, as though on leave, to Leghorn, Naples, Barcelona, or other places; and the readiness with which he gained admission to fashionable society enabled him to bring back important intelligence, or occasionally to obtain concessions which would certainly not have been granted on formal application. He continued with Nelson on this footing for the whole time in the Mediterranean, during the chase to the West Indies, and till he landed at Portsmouth on 20 Aug. 1805. Before the end of the month he again joined Nelson at Merton, and on 15 Sept. sailed with him once more in the Victory. On 21 Oct. he attended during the dying admiral's last hours, receiving his last wishes. On the return of the Victory to England he attended the coffin as it lay in state at Greenwich, and till it was finally laid in the crypt of St. Paul's.

The only public recognition Scott received for his services was the degree of D.D. conferred on him by Cambridge on the royal mandate. The admiralty refused to acknowledge his unofficial services, and even stopped his time and pay as chaplain for the many weeks he had been absent from his ship on leave. This was strictly in conformity with established usage, though the stoppage was eventually withdrawn.

Scott settled down as vicar of Southminster on a narrow income, scantily extended by a small half pay. In 1816 Lord Liverpool presented him to the crown living of Catterick in Yorkshire, and at the same time he was appointed chaplain to the prince regent, which gave him the right of holding two livings. From this time he lived principally at Catterick, engaged in the duties of his profession and accumulating a large library, mostly of foreign books. Among them were represented forty different languages, of many of which, however, his knowledge was very limited. He died at Catterick on 24 July 1840, and was buried in the churchyard of Ecclesfield, near Sheffield, on the 31st. In July 1807 he married Mary Frances, daughter of Thomas Ryder, registrar of the Charterhouse. She died in September 1811, leaving two daughters, the younger of whom, Margaret, wife of Dr. Alfred Gatty, vicar of Ecclesfield, is separately noticed [see Gatty].

[Recollections of the Life of the Rev. A. J. Scott (by his daughter and son-in-law, Mrs. and Dr. Gatty), mainly made up of Scott's letters

and diaries, quoted or paraphrased, and recollections of many friends of his active life. The memoir may be considered trustworthy so long as it speaks of matters that came under Scott's observation, and on which he was competent to form an opinion, but is somewhat discredited by the introduction of positive opinions on points of which he could know nothing, *e.g.* the formation of the enemy's fleet at Trafalgar (p. 183) —he being below in the cockpit—in direct contradiction of the account given by Collingwood; information from Canon W. Haig Brown.]

J. K. L.

SCOTT, ALEXANDER JOHN (1805–1866), first principal of Owens College, son of Dr. John Scott (*d.* 1836), minister of the Middle Church, Greenock, by his wife Susanna, daughter of Alexander Fisher of Dychmount (HEW SCOTT, *Fasti*, ii. 240), was born at that town on 26 March 1805. He was educated at the local grammar school and at the university of Glasgow, which he entered at the age of fourteen and remained there until he was twenty-one. Having graduated M.A. in 1827, he was about the same time licensed by the presbytery of Paisley to preach in the church of Scotland. He had previously obtained a tutorship in Edinburgh, where he attended medical classes at the university. His first sermon after he was licensed was preached for the Rev. John McLeod Campbell [q. v.], who heard him 'with very peculiar delight.' In the following year (1828) he made the acquaintance of Thomas Erskine [q. v.] of Linlathen, afterwards one of his closest friends, and of Edward Irving [q. v.], who invited him to be his assistant in London. He accepted the invitation, without binding himself to Irving's doctrinal views. Soon after his settlement in London his sympathies were excited by the wretchedness and ignorance of the poorer population, and he spent the winter months in preaching and teaching among the poor of Westminster. Towards the close of 1829 he went to preach for McLeod Campbell at Row, and also at Port Glasgow, where his sermons on the *Charismata* or 'spiritual gifts' of 1 Corinthians xii. led to an extraordinary exhibition of 'speaking with tongues' and 'prophesying in the church.' The movement and the so-called manifestations accompanying it had great influence on Irving, much more than on Scott himself, who never felt the 'utterances' to be convincing proofs of any genuine inspiration. The intimate connection between the two divines was shortly afterwards severed, though their friendship continued to the end. In the summer of 1830 Scott received an invitation to the pastorate of the Scottish church at Woolwich. The necessary ordination involved subscription to the Westminster confession of faith. This he could not give, and he thought it his duty to embody his objections in a letter to the moderator of the London presbytery, in which he stated his inability to assent to the doctrine that 'none are redeemed by Christ but the elect only,' as well as his conviction that the 'Sabbath and the Lord's day were not, as stated in the catechism, one ordinance, but two, perfectly distinct, the one Jewish and the other Christian.' He also avowed his doubts as to the validity of the presbytery's powers in ordination. On 27 May 1831 he was charged with heresy before the presbytery of Paisley, and deprived of his license to preach, a sentence which was confirmed by the general assembly. Notwithstanding, Scott remained at Woolwich until 1846, as minister of a small congregation.

Scott had always been an omnivorous reader and enthusiastic student of literature. In November 1848 he obtained the chair of English language and literature in University College, London, and in 1851 was appointed principal of Owens College, Manchester, then recently established. With this post he held the professorship of logic and mental philosophy, of comparative grammar, and of English language and literature. Soon after his appointment he took part with the Rev. William Gaskell [q. v.] and others in starting the Manchester Working Men's College, an admirable institution, which was afterwards merged in the evening classes at Owens College. The high standard at which the college curriculum was maintained during the institution's early days was due to the influence of Scott and his fellow professors. He resigned the principalship in May 1857, but continued to act as professor until his death.

As a lecturer he was engaging and inspiring, though too philosophic and profound to captivate a popular audience. Dr. W. B. Carpenter 'never heard any public speaker who could be compared with him in masterly arrangement of materials, lucid method of exposition, freedom from all redundancy, force and vigour of expression, beauty and aptness of illustration.' His addresses were unwritten, and a few only survive in poor reports. In September and October 1847 he lectured on Dante and other topics at the Manchester Athenæum, and a little later at the Manchester Royal Institution on 'European Literature from 1450 to 1603.' Between 1850 and 1860 he delivered thirty-two lectures on historical and literary subjects at the Edinburgh Philosophical Institution.

When the Manchester Free Library was opened in 1852 he suggested that a series of popular literary lectures should be given in connection with that institution. The suggestion was adopted, and he delivered one of the courses himself, his subject being 'Poetry and Fiction.' Subsequently he gave a series of lectures at Owens College, extending over several years, on the 'Relation of Religion to the Life of the Scholar.' In all these addresses he made skilful use of his deep learning and knowledge of the languages and literature of many nations. Of those printed in separate form the chief were: 1. 'Lectures Expository and Practical on the Epistle to the Romans,' 1838. 2. 'On the Academical Study of a Vernacular Language,' 1848. 3. 'Suggestions on Female Education,' 1849. 4. 'Notes of Four Lectures on the Literature and Philosophy of the Middle Ages;' printed for private circulation (by Thomas Erskine of Linlathen), Edinburgh, 1857. 5. 'Discourses,' 1866; this posthumous volume contains early addresses on 'Social Systems of the Present Day compared with Christianity,' 'Schism,' and 'The First Principle of Church Government.'

Scott's strong personal influence on all who were familiar with him is testified by Carlyle, Hare, Dunn, Bunsen, Fanny Kemble, and many others. Erskine in 1838 wrote: 'Scott is in point of intellect one of the first, if not the first man I have known;' and in 1860: 'No man whom I have known has impressed me more than Scott.' Maurice dedicated his 'Mediæval Philosophy' to him; J. Baldwin Brown dedicated to him his 'Divine Life in Jesus,' 1859; and George Macdonald, besides inscribing his novel of 'Robert Falconer' to him, wrote two poems 'to A. J. Scott,' which are included in his 'Poetical Works' (1893, i. 271, 280).

His health, always delicate, grew weaker in his later years. With the hope of gaining strength he went to Switzerland in the autumn of 1865, but died at Veytaux on 12 Jan. 1866, and was buried in the cemetery at Clarens.

He married Ann Ker at Greenock in December 1830, and had an only son, John Alexander Scott, B.A., barrister-at-law, who died on 9 Jan. 1894, aged 48; and a daughter, who is still living. Mrs. Scott died in December 1888.

A marble bust of Scott, by H. S. Leifchild, was presented to Owens College in 1860 by his students and those who attended his voluntary lectures. This is engraved in Shaw's 'Manchester Old and New,' ii. 93. Two chalk portraits, one by Samuel Laurence (about 1848) and the other by F. J. Shields, (1865), are in the possession of his daughter.

[Letters of Thomas Erskine of Linlathen, ed. Hanna, 1878; Memorials of John McLeod Campbell, 1877; Mem. of Rev. Robert Story, 1862; Thompson's Owens College, 1886; articles by John Finlayson in Owens College Magazine, vols. xiii. and xxii.; Life of F. D. Maurice, 1884, i. 199, ii. 403; Kemble's Records of a Later Life, ii. 283, 290; Journals of Caroline Fox; Hughes's Mem. of Daniel Macmillan, 1882; papers on Irving by Dr. David Brown in the Expositor, 1887; Recollections of A. J. Scott, Greenock, 1878; Sunday at Home, 1881, p. 664; Manchester Examiner, 8 July 1880; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Mrs. Oliphant's notices of Scott in her Life of Irving (1st edit. ii. 103 seq.), although she acknowledges his 'power of impressing other minds around him, not only with his own marvellous powers of understanding, but with his profound spirituality and perception of divine things,' are unjust and misleading. A vindication of Scott appeared in the National Review, October 1862. Some information has been supplied by Miss Susan F. Scott and Mr. John Finlayson.]

C. W. S.

SCOTT, ANDREW (1757–1839), Scottish poet, son of John Scott, day labourer, and Rachel Briggs, was born at Bowden, Roxburghshire, on 19 April 1757. Scantily educated, he was for some time a cowherd, and then a farm-servant. At the age of nineteen he enlisted, and served with his regiment in the American war of independence. After the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown, 19 Oct. 1781, he was for some time a prisoner of war in Long Island, returning to Scotland subsequently to the peace of 4 Jan. 1784. Being discharged, Scott settled at Bowden as a farm labourer, acting also as church officer for several years before his death, which occurred on 22 May 1839. He was married and had five children. His portrait was painted by George Watson (1767–1837) [q. v.] of Edinburgh.

Stimulated in boyhood by the 'Gentle Shepherd,' Scott was all through his military career a persistent versifier, and entertained his comrades with original songs. Sir Walter Scott, Lockhart, and others befriended and encouraged him. A manuscript volume of his lyrics was lost by his commanding officer, to whom the author had entrusted it; but, although he could reproduce only two numbers of the collection, his resources were not exhausted. Continuing to versify, he at length acted on the recommendation of the Bowden parish minister, and published a volume of lyrics in 1805 (2nd edit. 1808). In 1811 he issued 'Poems, chiefly in the Scottish Dialect,' and two further volumes of a similar character

in 1821 and 1826 respectively. If somewhat defective in form, Scott's lyrics display observation, descriptive facility, and quick appreciation of the picturesque features of Scottish rural life and character.

[Autobiographical Sketch prefixed to 1808 volume; Rogers's Modern Scottish Minstrel; Goodfellow's Border Biography.] T. B.

SCOTT, BENJAMIN (1814–1892), chamberlain of London, son of Benjamin Whinnell Scott, chief clerk to the chamberlain of London, was born in 1814, and entered the chamberlain's office as a junior clerk. In 1841, on the death of his father, he succeeded him as chief clerk, and remained in the service of the corporation in that capacity during the chamberlainship of Sir James Shaw, Sir William Heygate, and Anthony Brown. On the death of Brown early in 1853, Scott received a requisition, as a liveryman of the Wheelwrights' Company, to stand for chamberlain, the office being in the gift of the liverymen of the various companies. For nearly a century the post had been filled from the ranks of aldermen who had passed the mayoralty chair. Scott had for his opponent Alderman Sir John Key [q. v.], who had been twice lord mayor (in 1830 and 1831). After a four days' poll, in which the expenses of the candidates together exceeded 10,000*l.*, Key was elected by the small majority of 224 votes. At the end of 1853, owing to the continued friction produced by the contest, Scott resigned his appointments under the corporation, and a year later became secretary of the new bank of London, which he had taken part in establishing. In July 1858, on the death of Sir John Key, he again became a candidate for the office of chamberlain, and was elected without opposition.

His knowledge of finance made him especially useful to the corporation. On Black Friday 1866, through his judgment in investments, the corporation lost not a penny, although they had at the time 700,000*l.* out on loan. In 1888 the common council acknowledged his financial services by a eulogistic resolution and the gift of 5,000*l.* The presentation addresses which he delivered when honorary freedoms were bestowed by the corporation were marked by dignity and eloquence. In 1884 he published for the corporation 'London's Roll of Fame,' a collection of such addresses with the replies during the previous 127 years.

For many years he devoted much spare time to lecturing to the working classes, and in December 1851 was the chief promoter of the Working Men's Educational Union, which was formed to organise lectures for workmen. For this society he wrote and published three 'Lectures on the Christian Catacombs at Rome,' two 'Lectures on Artificial Locomotion in Great Britain,' and a 'Manual on Popular Lecturing.' He was a F.R.A.S., and much interested in the study of astronomy and statistics. In 1867 he published a 'Statistical Vindication of the City of London.'

He was a staunch nonconformist, temperance advocate, and social reformer; and exerted himself strongly for the abolition of church rates, the promotion of ragged schools, state education, and preservation of open spaces. Towards the endowment of the nonconformist church in Southwark in memory of the Pilgrim Fathers he contributed 2,000*l.* He worked hard to promote the passing of the Criminal Law Amendment Act of 1885, and published an account of his efforts in a pamphlet, 'Six Years of Labour and Sorrow.' He died on 17 Jan. 1892, and was buried in Weybridge cemetery with his wife, who predeceased him by three days. He continued the exercise of his official duties till within a short time of his death. He married, in 1842, Kate, daughter of Captain Glegg of the dragoon guards. Four children survived him.

His other publications were: 1. 'The Pilgrim Fathers neither Puritans nor Persecutors,' 1866; 2nd edit. 1869. 2. 'Suggestions for a Chamber of Commerce for the City of London,' 1867. 3. 'Municipal Government of London,' 1882.

[Scott's Memorials of the Family of Scott, 1876; information supplied by J. B. Scott, esq.; Review of Reviews, v. 139; City Press, 12 Dec. 1891 p. 3, 30 Dec. 1891 p. 3, and 20 Jan. 1892 p. 3; Guildhall Library Catalogue.]

C. W–H.

SCOTT, CAROLINE LUCY, Lady Scott (1784–1857), novelist, second daughter of Archibald, first baron Douglas (1748–1827), by Frances, sister of Henry, third duke of Buccleuch, was born on 16 Feb. 1784. She married, on 27 Oct. 1810, Admiral Sir George Scott, K.C.B., who died on 21 Dec. 1841. Lady Scott died at Petersham, Surrey, on 19 April 1857. She must be distinguished from the contemporary novelist Harriet Anne Scott, Lady Scott [q. v.]

Her first novel, 'A Marriage in High Life,' 1828, 2 vols., was edited by the author of 'Flirtation,' i.e. her relative, Lady Charlotte Susan Maria Bury [q. v.] The plot is based on fact. The style is diffuse, but the interest is well sustained. Another edition appeared in 1857. Two other novels followed, likewise anonymously: 'Trevelyan,'

1837 (Standard Novels, No. 58), reprinted in the Railway Library 1860; and 'The Old Grey Church' in 1856. Lady Scott's succeeding works have her name in the title-pages. They are: 1. 'Exposition of the Types and Antitypes of the Old and New Testament,' 1856. 2. 'Incentives to Bible Study; Scripture Acrostics; a Sabbath Pastime for young People,' 1860. 3. 'Acrostics, Historical, Geographical, and Biographical,' 1863.

[Works in Brit. Mus. Libr.; Lodge's Peerage, 1856, p. 189; Dod's Peerage, 1855, p. 482.]

G. C. B.

SCOTT or **SCOT, CUTHBERT** (*d.* 1565), bishop of Chester, probably a member of a family long settled near Wigan (*Notes and Queries*, 8th ser. viii. 218), graduated B.A. at Cambridge in 1534–5 as a member of Christ's College. He was elected fellow there in 1537. He graduated M.A. in 1538, B.D. in 1544, and D.D. in 1547.

About 1544 Scot preached a remarkable sermon at St. Paul's Cross, condemning the license of the times. In 1545 he complained to Gardiner, the chancellor of the university, of the performance at Christ's College of an interlude, called 'Pammachius,' which reflected on Lent fastings and the ceremonies of the church. He held a prebend in the Sepulchre Chapel in York Minster, and received an annual pension when that chapel was dissolved in 1547. He was rector of Etton in Yorkshire in 1547, and of Beeford in the same county in 1549. He appears to have assented to the religious changes of Edward VI's reign.

Soon after Queen Mary's accession Scot was chosen master of Christ's College, 8 Dec. 1553, and thenceforth took a prominent part in furthering the religious reaction. He was one of the Cambridge divines sent to Oxford to dispute with Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer on the doctrine of the mass, and was incorporated D.D. there, 14 April 1554. In the same month Bonner made him a prebendary of St. Paul's, and towards the close of the year he became vice-chancellor of Cambridge. He held that office again in 1555–6. In the latter year he was nominated by Paul IV to the see of Chester.

Resigning the mastership of Christ's, Scot threw himself energetically into the work of his diocese, where his zeal provoked the admiration of his friends and the animosity of his enemies. In January 1556–7 Cardinal Pole placed him at the head of a commission to visit the university of Cambridge with the view of more completely re-establishing the Roman catholic faith. Scot incurred great obloquy by exhuming and burning the bodies of Martin Bucer and Paul Fagius, and reconsecrating the churches in which they had been buried.

Scot was a stout opponent of the early ecclesiastical changes of Elizabeth, and spoke strongly against the royal supremacy and the new prayer-book. 'He was one of those appointed by the government to dispute on the controverted points between the Romanists and reformers at Westminster, 31 March 1559. He and his fellows, refusing to proceed with the disputation, were pronounced contumacious. On 4 April he was bound in 1,000*l.* to appear before the lords of the council as often as they sat, and not without license to depart from London, Westminster, and the suburbs, also to pay such fine as might be assessed upon him' (Strype). Unable or unwilling to pay this fine, fixed at two hundred marks, he was committed to the Fleet, and on 21 June the commissioners for administering the oath of supremacy deprived him of his bishopric. After four years' confinement in the Fleet, Scot was released on his bond that he would remain within twenty miles' distance from Finchingfield in Essex, and make his personal appearance before the ecclesiastical commissioners when summoned. Considering this a penal obligation and not a *parole d'honneur*, he found means to escape to Belgium, and took up his residence at Louvain. After assisting his exiled fellow-countrymen in their controversial labours with the English reformers, he died at Louvain some time in 1565.

Scot was characterised as 'rigid' and 'froward,' but he possessed much learning and eloquence, and held uncompromisingly by his beliefs. He published the sermon which he preached at Paul's Cross in 1544, and some of his speeches are preserved in Foxe and Strype.

[Lansdowne MS. 980, ff. 241–2; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. i. 233; Bridgett and Knox's Catholic Hierarchy; Machyn's Diary (Camden Soc.); Lamb's Cambr. Doc.; Le Neve's Fasti; Foxe's Actes and Mon.; Strype's Works, index; Foster's Alumni Oxon.]

F. S.

SCOTT, DANIEL, LL.D. (1694–1759), theological writer and lexicographer, born on 21 March 1693–4, was son, by the second wife, of Daniel Scott, a London merchant. The family was probably a branch of the Scotts of Stapleford Tawney, Essex [for his half-brother, Thomas, see under Scott, Joseph Nicol]. Daniel was admitted to Merchant Taylors' School on 10 March 1704, but left to be educated for the ministry under Samuel Jones (1680?–1719) [q.v.] at Glou-

cester (where in 1711 he was the 'bedfellow' of Thomas Secker [q.v.], afterwards archbishop of Canterbury), and at Tewkesbury, where in 1712 Joseph Butler [q.v.] became his fellow-student. Secker speaks highly of his religious character. From Jones's academy Scott proceeded to the university of Leyden, which he entered on 13 Aug. 1714, aged 20, as a student in theology. He appears again as a student of medicine on 20 June 1718, aged 25. He graduated LL.D. at Leyden on 16 May 1719. He is said to have graduated LL.D. at Utrecht, but his name is not in the Utrecht 'Album Studiosorum,' 1886. While at Utrecht he became a baptist, and joined the Mennonite communion. He appears for some time to have exercised the ministry at Colchester, and afterwards in London, but there is no record of his ministry. His main occupations were those of the scholar and the critic. His anonymous 'Essay' (1725) on the doctrine of the Trinity, elaborate and undoubtedly able, attempted the impossible task of a middle way between Clarke and Waterland, and satisfied nobody except Job Orton [q.v.] The first edition of the 'Essay' is said to have been bought up and suppressed by Edmund Gibson [q.v.], bishop of London. The notes to his version (1741) of St. Matthew show good scholarship; he makes a point of proving that the Hebraisms of the New Testament have their parallels in classic Greek, and improves Mill's collection of various readings, especially by a more accurate citation of oriental versions [see Mill, John, 1645–1707]; Doddridge, his personal friend, in his 'Family Expositor,' refers to Scott's notes as learned, ingenious, candid, and accurate. His labours as a lexicographer were encouraged by Secker and Butler, to whom he severally dedicated the two noble volumes of his appendix to Stephanus's 'Thesaurus,' a work of great merit, which cost him several hundred pounds and injured his health. The letter A, which fills more than half the first volume, is the only part printed as originally drawn up, the remainder being condensed.

Scott died unmarried at Cheshunt on 29 March 1759, and was buried in the churchyard on 3 April. His will, dated 21 April 1755, was proved on 12 April 1759 (P. C. C. 147 Arran; cf. *Notes and Queries*, 7th ser. x. 57). He published: 1. 'Disputatio . . . de Patria Potestate Romana,' &c., Leyden, 1719, 4to. 2. 'An Essay towards a Demonstration of the Scripture-Trinity. By Philanthropus Londinensis,' &c., 1725, 8vo; 2nd edit., enlarged, 1738, 8vo; 3rd edit. Sherborne [1778?], 12mo (abridged by Robert Goadby [q.v.], with prefixed account of the author, probably by Orton); this edition is dated 1770 in the British Museum catalogue, but the postscript refers to a book published in 1772. 3. 'A New Version of St. Matthew's Gospel: with Select Notes . . . added, a Review of Dr. Mill's Notes,' &c., 1741, 4to (the version is divided into thirty-four sections). 4. 'Appendix ad Thesaurum Græcæ Linguæ ab Hen. Stephano constructum, et ad Lexica Constantini & Scapulæ,' &c., 1745–6, fol. 2 vols. This appendix, reviewed in 'Nova Acta Eruditorum' (Leipzig, May 1749, p. 241), is incorporated in the edition of Stephanus (1816–28) by Edmund Henry Barker [q.v.], and is employed in the edition of Scapula (1820) by Bailey and Major.

The British Museum catalogue erroneously assigns to Scott a tract against Clarke, 'The True Scripture Doctrine of the . . . Trinity, continued,' 1715, 8vo. This is the sequel to 'The Scripture Doctrine of the . . . Trinity vindicated' (written before May 1713, with a recommendatory letter by Robert Nelson [q.v.]), and erroneously assigned to James Knight, D.D.

[Some Account, prefixed to Sherborne edition of Scott's Essay; Gibbon's Memoirs of Watts, 1780, pp. 386 sq.; Protestant Dissenter's Magazine, 1795, p. 186; Orton's Letters to Dissenting Ministers, 1806, ii. 136, 247 (needs correction); Album Studiosorum Academiæ Lugduno-Batavæ, 1875, pp. 837, 858; Browne's Hist. Congr. Norf. and Suff. 1877, p. 268; Notes and Queries, 8th ser. iv. 37; information kindly furnished by Hardinge F. Giffard, esq., and by Dr. W. N. du Rieu, Leyden.] A. G.

SCOTT, DAVID (1806–1849), painter, brother of William Bell Scott [q.v.] and the fifth son of Robert Scott [q.v.], the engraver, was born in the Parliament Stairs, High Street, Edinburgh, on 10 or 12 Oct. 1806. His father was a stern Calvinist, and the loss of his four elder sons by an epidemic when David was only a year old increased the gloom of a household where 'merriment was but another name for folly' (cf. Scott's *Memoir of David Scott*). His melancholy temperament and morbid habit of self-anatomy were cultivated by the influences of his home, which, some time after the birth of two brothers and a sister, was moved to St. Leonards, near Edinburgh. He was sent to school, but was chiefly instructed by his father, and learnt Latin and a little Greek. The chief amusement of the family was drawing, and among the stimulants to David's active imagination were William Blake's illustrations to Blair's 'Grave.' At this time he wrote many verses on such

themes as time, death, and eternity. When about nineteen his father's health broke down, and for a short time he had to turn to engraving as a means of support for the family; but his heart was fixed upon imaginative design, and in a sketch, inscribed 'Character of David Scott, 1826,' he has represented himself seated at the engraving-table with clenched hands and an expression of despair. He was soon allowed to have his way, and was one of the founders of the Edinburgh Life Academy Association in 1827. He set to work on a huge picture of 'Lot and his Daughters fleeing from the Cities of the Plain,' not finished till 1829. In 1828 he exhibited at the Scottish Academy 'The Hopes of Early Genius dispelled by Death.' To these pictures he added 'Fingal, or the Spirit of Lodi,' 'The Death of Sappho,' and 'Wallace defending Scotland' (a small work), before he was elected an associate of the Scottish Academy in 1830. In 1831 he published six Blake-like designs in outline, under the title of 'Monograms of Man,' and in the same year he commenced twenty-five outline illustrations to Coleridge's 'Ancient Mariner.' These designs, which are of extraordinary power and in close sympathy with the weird imagination of the poet, were published by Mr. A. Hill of Edinburgh, and by Ackermann in London in 1837, but did not meet with the recognition they deserved. In 1832 he contributed five small plates to 'The Casquet of Literary Gems,' and exhibited at the Scottish Academy 'Sarpedon carried by Death and Sleep,' 'Nimrod,' 'Pan,' 'Aurora,' and a sketch of 'Burying the Dead.' In the same year his picture of 'Lot' was rejected at the British Institution on account of its size. In the autumn of 1832 he went to Italy, where fresh disappointment awaited him. He was satisfied with none of the great masters. The frescoes of the Sistine Chapel appeared to him 'powerfully executed but full of defects.' His industry in Italy was prodigious, but his health was very weak. Early in 1833 he executed a series of very careful anatomical drawings from subjects in the hospital of the Incurabile, but the principal result of his visit abroad was an immense picture of 'Discord,' which was meant to typify by the rebellion of son against father the overthrow of the old order by the new. It was exhibited at the Scottish Academy in 1840 together with 'Philoctetes left in the Isle of Lemnos,' 'Cupid sharpening his Arrows,' and 'The Crucifixion.' In the same year he sent to the exhibition of the Royal Academy the first of several pictures which he now painted from subjects in national history. This was 'Queen Elizabeth at the Globe Theatre viewing the Performance of "The Merry Wives of Windsor."' It was hung high and passed unnoticed, a circumstance which, coupled with the rejection, two years before, of his 'Achilles addressing the Manes of Patroclus,' prevented him from ever sending another work to the London exhibitions, with the exception of 'Pan' in 1845. Soon after his return to Scotland he set up a large studio at Easter Dalry House, near Edinburgh, where he painted 'Peter the Hermit preaching the Crusades,' 'The Alchemist lecturing on the Elixir Vitæ,' an altar-piece of 'The Descent from the Cross' for the catholic chapel in Edinburgh, and a number of other historical and poetical pictures. One of the latter, a small picture of 'The Duke of Gloucester taken into the Water Gate of Calais,' was lent by Mr. R. Carfrae, who bought a great many of his works, to the winter exhibition of the Royal Academy in 1875. In Edinburgh his remarkable powers attracted a considerable circle of enthusiastic admirers and friends, among whom were the Rev. George Gilfillan, Dr. John Brown, author of 'Rab and his Friends,' whose portrait he painted; Mrs. Catherine Crowe ('Night Side of Nature'), and Professor John Pringle Nichol [q. v.] He also received visits from Margaret Fuller and Emerson, whose portrait he painted. This is now in the Public Library at Concord, Massachusetts, U.S.A.

In 1839 and 1840 he contributed to 'Blackwood's Magazine' a series of articles, mainly occupied with the spirit and motives of art. The first was called 'The Peculiarities of Thought and Style,' and the others were upon Raphael, Titian, Leonardo, the Caracci, and Caravaggio. A fragment of another upon 'Rubens, his Contemporaries, and Modern Painters,' was published, together with a 'Memoir' (1850), by his brother, W. B. Scott.

In 1841 he commenced a great picture, now in the Trinity House at Leith, called 'Vasco de Gama, the discoverer of India, encountering the Spirit of the Storm as he passes the Cape of Good Hope.' It was exhibited by the artist, but the venture resulted in a loss of 70*l*. In 1842 he sent two cartoons to the competition for the paintings in the new Houses of Parliament—'Drake witnessing the Destruction of the Armada' and 'Wallace defending Scotland'—but neither these nor the two frescoes he sent in two years later attracted any notice. He also published a pamphlet entitled 'British, French, and German Painting, being a reference to the points which render the pro-

posed painting of the new Houses of Parliament important as a public measure.' In 1845 he sent to the Scottish Academy an extraordinary picture of 'The Dead rising after the Crucifixion,' with figures larger than life, 'a work,' according to his brother, 'to be looked upon once, with awe and wonder, not to be imitated, not to be spoken lightly of.' In 1847 he produced, in violent contrast to this terrible work, a picture called 'The Triumph of Love,' in which he indulged in a riot of colour. Besides many powerful separate drawings of such subjects as 'The Sirens' and 'Self-accusation, or Man and his Conscience,' he executed sets of drawings of 'The Anchorite,' 'Unhappy Love,' and 'Scenes in the Life and Thoughts of a Student Painter.' Among his last works were forty illustrations to 'The Pilgrim's Progress,' and a very beautiful series of eighteen imaginative designs to the ninth edition (1851) of Professor Nichol's 'Architecture of the Heavens.' Both series were engraved and published after his death. His last picture was 'Hope passing over the Sky of Adversity.' Since his residence in Italy Scott's health had always been feeble, and he died at Easter Dalry House on 5 March 1849. On his deathbed, at the early age of forty-three, he said: 'If I could but have time yet, I think I could meet the public in their own way more and yet do what I think good.' An etching of his head, drawn two days before his death by his brother William, is reproduced in the latter's 'Autobiography' (i. 261).

Scott was a man of undoubted genius and spiritual imagination, perpetually setting himself tasks beyond his grasp. Unfortunately, even when he reached a high measure of success, as in his illustrations to 'The Ancient Mariner' and 'The Architecture of the Heavens,' he failed to reap the appreciation which his soul desired. In many respects like Benjamin Haydon, though of finer fibre and less robust physique, he was the victim of his own temperament, and his life was a series of disappointments, the result of restless and ill-judged ambition. For some time before his death his perpetual sufferings were augmented by a nervous disease which chiefly affected the muscles of his neck. He kept a diary which painfully reflects the sufferings of a highly sensitive mind tortured by disappointment, self-distrust, religious doubt, hopeless love, and, latterly, ill health. He wrote too a great many poems, chiefly during his last years. One of these, called 'Trafalgar, or British Deed,' he offered in vain for publication. His face and figure were of uncommon beauty, and in his portrait of himself at the age of twenty-five he appears the very type of gloomy poetic genius. Most of his works are in private collections in Scotland, but 'The Vintager' and 'Ariel and Caliban' are in the National Gallery at Edinburgh, and 'Achilles addressing the Manes of Patroclus' in the Art Gallery at Sunderland. An exhibition of his works was held at 29 Castle Street, Edinburgh, in 1849. A reproduction of the fine portrait bust by Sir John Steell, R.S.A., in the National Gallery of Scotland, is prefixed to John M. Gray's 'David Scott and his Works,' 1884.

[Scott's Memoir of David Scott, R.S.A.; Autobiographical Notes of William Bell Scott, ed. Minto; Emerson's English Traits; Cunningham's British Painters, ed. Heaton; Life of B. R. Haydon; North British Review, No. xxi.; Hogg's Instructor, vol. iii.; Art Journal, ii. 120; Blackwood, cxxx. 589; Gilchrist's Life of Blake.] C. M.

SCOTT or SCOT, GEORGE (*d.* 1685), of Pitlochie, Fifeshire, writer on America, was the only son of Sir John Scott or Scot [q. v.] of Scotstarvet, by his second wife, Margaret, daughter of Sir James Melville of Hallhill. In 1685 he published at Edinburgh 'The Model of the Government of the Province of East New Jersey, in America; and Encouragement for such as design to be concerned there.' It was, says the author, the outcome of a visit to London in 1679, when he enjoyed 'the opportunity of frequent converse with several substantial and judicious gentlemen concerned in the American plantations.' Among these were James Drummond, fourth earl of Perth [q. v.], to whom the book is dedicated, and probably William Penn. The most valuable part of the work is a series of letters from the early settlers in New Jersey. 'The Model' was plagiarised by Samuel Smith in his 'History of New Jersey,' 1721, and is quoted by Bancroft; but James Grahame, author of the 'Rise and Progress of the United States,' first attached due importance to it. It was reprinted for the New Jersey Historical Society in 1846, in W. A. Whitehead's 'East Jersey under the Proprietory Government' (2nd edition 1875). Copies of the original, which are very rare, are in the British Museum, the Edinburgh Advocates' Library, at Göttingen, in Harvard College library, and in the library of the New Jersey Historical Society, and two others are in private hands in America. In some copies a passage (p. 37) recommending religious freedom as an inducement to emigration is modified. In recognition of his services in writing the book, Scot received from the proprietors of East New

Jersey a grant, dated 28 July 1685, of five hundred acres of land in the province. On 1 Aug. he embarked in the Henry and Francis with nearly two hundred persons, including his wife and family; but he and his wife died on the voyage. The wife is said to have been well connected. A son and a daughter survived. The latter, named Eupham or Euphemia, married in 1686, John Johnstone, an Edinburgh druggist, who had been one of her fellow-passengers on the disastrous voyage to New Jersey. To him the proprietors issued, on 13 Jan. 1686–7, a confirmation of the grant made to Scot, and their descendants occupied a good position in the colony. Most of their descendants left America as loyalists at the revolution, but some of them are still living in New Jersey.

[Anderson's Scottish Nation, iii. 413; Preface to Whitehead's reprint in Appendix, 2nd edit. 1875, founded on East Jersey records, and his Early History of Amboy; Allibone's Dict. Engl. Lit. ii. 1955; Catalogues of British Museum and Edinburgh Advocates' Library.] G. Le G. N.

SCOTT, Sir GEORGE GILBERT (1811–1878), architect, born in 1811 at Gawcott, Buckinghamshire, was the son of Thomas Scott, perpetual curate of that place, and grandson of Thomas Scott [q. v.] the commentator. Scott's mother was daughter of Dr. Lynch of Antigua, and was descended maternally from the Gilberts, a family of West Indian proprietors. The members of the large household at Gawcott parsonage, including Miss Gilbert (Scott's great-aunt), who had been kissed by John Wesley, were bound by many traditions to the evangelical party, and their pronounced religious opinions raised a social barrier between them and their neighbours. Scott was first educated at home, but his father, who was an amateur in building operations, soon recognised in his son's love of sketching churches a predilection for architecture. After spending a year (1826–7) in preparatory schooling with his uncle, the Rev. Samuel King, at Latimers, near Chesham, he was accordingly articled in 1827 to James Edmeston, who is said to have been 'better known as a poet than an architect.' His evangelical views doubtless recommended him to Scott's father.

At Edmeston's office Scott got little encouragement in the style which afterwards made him famous. His master, who had experimented with 'Gothic' in a chapel at Leytonstone, condemned it as expensive, and warned Scott's father that his pupil wasted his time in sketching mediæval buildings.

After the conclusion of his pupilage in 1831 Scott spent two months in sketching near Gawcott, and, returning to London, took lodgings with his brother John in Warwick Court, Holborn. In order to gain practical experience he attached himself for a time to the firm of Grissell & Peto [see Peto, Sir Samuel Morton], who appointed him superintendent of their works in progress at Hungerford Market.

In 1832 he began an engagement lasting two years in the office of Henry Roberts, trained under Sir Robert Smirke [q. v.], and assisted him in the working-drawings, execution, and 'measuring up' of the Fishmongers' Hall. Scott looked back to this as a barren period; he did little sketching; 'Smirkism and practical work' were, he considered, chilling his natural tastes, and even in his two opportunities of private design (a rectory for his father's new living at Wappenham, and a private house at Chesham) he was disheartened by a sense of deficient originality.

The death of his father in 1834 threw upon Scott the necessity of immediate bread-winning. He was engaged at the time in assisting Kempthorne (an architect with whom he occupied rooms in Carlton Chambers, Regent Street) in preparing model plans for the workhouses to be erected under the new poor law. Scott resolved to turn this special experience to account, and, besides issuing a printed appeal to his father's friends for general architectural patronage, went down to Wappenham and conducted a vigorous canvass among the guardians of the district. This aggressive action, though an infringement of more recent ideas of professional etiquette, produced immediate fruit. He became architect to four poor-law unions, and engaged as clerk of the works (subsequently as collaborator) W. B. Moffat, a builder's son, whose acquaintance he had made when both were pupils of Edmeston.

Their combined exertions (for Moffat surpassed Scott in the campaign of self-recommendation) produced a brisk and, at first, inartistic practice, which was supplemented by success in many competitions. Scott eventually took his companion into formal partnership, which terminated in 1845, after the erection of some fifty buildings of the workhouse class, the most successful of which were the union buildings at Dunmow, Belper, Windsor, Amersham, and Macclesfield, and the orphan asylum at Wanstead—all in quasi-Elizabethan style.

During his partnership with Moffat, Scott was not without ecclesiastical commissions. His first seven churches (at Birmingham, Lincoln, Shaftesbury, Hanwell, Turnham,

Bridlington Quay, and Norbiton) were, in Scott's own opinion, ignoble. Though not actually uniform in design, they suffered from the wholesale method of his workhouse practice. Their lack of chancels, their galleries, their stucco mouldings, and general disregard of the requirements of ritual are to be explained and excused as the logical result of a training which, under his parents and his masters, had intentionally excluded the picturesque aspects of church worship and church architecture.

Though Scott was not at the outset in sympathy with the high church ecclesiological party, it was to an interview with Benjamin Webb [q. v.], the secretary of the Cambridge Camden Society (a high-church organisation), as well as to the writings of Augustus Welby Northmore Pugin [q. v.], and to a meeting with the latter, brought about through Myers (Pugin's builder), that he owed his first insight into the principles of Gothic art. He strengthened his knowledge of these principles by careful study in the competition for the Martyr's Memorial at Oxford, for which he was selected as architect (1840). His first Gothic building of any size or artistic value was the church of St. Giles at Camberwell, during the progress of which his faith in Gothic architecture was assured.

Scott's first restoration was that of Chesterfield church, followed shortly afterwards by works at St. Mary's, Stafford, and by a successful competition for the restoration of St. Mary's Chapel on Wakefield bridge. There he made the mistake, which he always regretted, of permitting the builder, who had got a good offer for the re-erection of the old front in a private park, to substitute new work in Caen stone for old work which should have been left.

In 1844 Scott achieved European reputation by winning the open competition for the church of St. Nicholas at Hamburg, the preparation for which made the occasion of his first continental journey. He was attacked in the 'Ecclesiologist' (vol. i. new ser. No. 4, p. 184) for designing a Lutheran place of worship, and considered himself bound in self-defence to defend the Lutheran position in a paper, which was refused publication. The style adopted in the design of this building was German Gothic of the fourteenth century. The work was the outcome of a special and careful study of German ecclesiastical architecture. Scott did not then know, what he afterwards realised, that France, not Germany, was the real cradle of Gothic church-building.

In 1847 the chapter of Ely gave him his first appointment as restoring architect to a cathedral. The enthusiasm of George Peacock [q. v.], dean of Ely, for Amiens Cathedral led him to pay his first visit to the great French churches, which was followed up in later life by many continental journeys.

The years between 1845 and 1862 were full of commissions and appointments involving designs of new buildings, restorations, and reports. Among the minor work of this period were Bradfield church, Berkshire, rebuilt for the Rev. Thomas Stevens (founder of Bradfield College, in the building of which Scott had an influential though indirect share); Worsley church, begun in partnership with Moffat; St. Mary's, Nottingham, finished by Moffat; St. Peter's Church, Croydon; the restoration or rebuilding of churches at Aylesbury, Newark, Nantwich, and Ellesmere; new churches at West Derby, Holbeck, London (St. Matthew, City Road), Hayley Hill, near Halifax, and Ranmore Common, near Dorking. Domestic and secular work was meanwhile represented by Pippbrook House, near Dorking; Kelham Hall, near Newark; Hafodunos, near Llanrwst; Walton Hall, near Warwick; a row of houses in Broad Sanctuary, Westminster; the town-hall at Preston; and Brighton College. In spite of Scott's Gothic tendencies, he carried out during the same period a few classic or semi-classic works, such as the chapel at Hawkstone and that at King's College, London, Partis College, and the remodelling of St. Michael's Church, Cornhill.

About this time a design was prepared for the cathedral of St. John, Newfoundland, and Scott's appointment as restorer at Ely Cathedral led to similar engagements at Hereford, Lichfield, Salisbury, and Ripon.

The additions at Exeter College, Oxford, including the chapel, a characteristic work on a French model, were the first of his collegiate undertakings.

In 1849 came the important appointment of architect to the dean and chapter of Westminster Abbey, which gave Scott the opportunity for much careful and creditable work (especially in the restoration of the chapter-house and the monuments), and provided the materials for his 'Gleanings from Westminster Abbey' (published in 1862). The restored front of the north transept, sometimes attributed to Scott, was mainly designed by Mr. J. L. Pearson, R.A., the triple portals alone being of Scott's restoration. Scott indurated the monuments and other internal work with a composition of shellac dissolved in spirits of wine, a process which proved a failure when applied to the roof of the cloisters.

In 1854 Scott began, under the instructions of Mr. E. B. Denison (now Lord Grimthorpe), the reconstruction of Doncaster church, which had been destroyed by fire, and in the same year was again successful in an open competition at Hamburg (this time for the Rathhaus), but his design was not carried out.

The next year (1855) he was elected to the associateship of the Royal Academy, and he became a full member in 1861.

The competition for the rebuilding of the war and foreign offices in the autumn of 1856 was signalised by a stormy conflict between the Gothic and classic schools of architecture, waged even in the House of Commons. Scott's first design submitted in the competition was a sincere attempt to adapt the elements of French and Italian Gothic to the purposes of a modern English institution. Scott's name did not appear among the five premiated designs for the war office, but he was placed third for the foreign office, and it was subsequently discovered that the architectural assessors engaged to advise the judges had placed Scott's design second for both buildings. In November 1858 he was appointed architect, and set to work on certain necessary revisions of his design. The war office portion of the scheme was abandoned, but it was arranged that Scott should be associated in a design for the India office with (Sir) Matthew Digby Wyatt [q. v.], the official architect to that department. At this point the classical opposition gathered strength, and its cause was taken up in ignorant warmth by Lord Palmerston. After prolonged debates and controversy Scott was induced, by the threat of the appointment of a classical coadjutor, to prepare a fresh elevation. Parliament gave orders for an Italian design to be submitted in comparison with the Gothic drawings. Scott sought a compromise in the 'Byzantine of the early Venetian palaces,' only to be told (on 8 Sept. 1860) by Lord Palmerston that it 'was neither one thing nor t'other; a regular mongrel affair,' and that 'he would have nothing to do with it.' Scott was thus forced either to abandon his appointment or to strike his colours as the Gothic champion. He chose the latter course, accepted Wyatt's collaboration as before arranged for the India office, and, after the purchase of 'some costly works on Italian architecture,' and a visit to Paris, produced a design which satisfied Lord Palmerston. As might be expected, it encountered stout opposition from Scott's old friends of the Gothic party, but finally passed the House of Commons in 1861, nearly five years after the competition was initiated. Nine years later he was commissioned to complete the block of buildings by the erection of the home and colonial offices. Scott's Gothic design is to be seen in the diploma gallery at the Royal Academy.

In 1864 Scott was engaged in carrying out the Albert memorial. He entered, by royal invitation, a limited competition for this work [see COCKERELL, FREDERICK PEPYS], and submitted, besides his design for the monument, several schemes for the Albert Hall, which were not accepted. The successful project for the memorial was, in its author's intention, to be a 'kind of ciborium to protect the statue of the prince;' in fact an attempt to realise the class of building of which a shrine is the supposed imitation in miniature. Another royal commission was the rearrangement of Wolsey's chapel at Windsor to form a memorial to Prince Albert. To Scott was due the substitution of stone and mosaic for the timber and plaster of which the vaulting was formerly composed, but he had no responsibility for the marble inlay by Baron Triqueti, of which he disapproved.

In 1865 Scott designed one of his finest works, the station and hotel at St. Pancras. He regarded it as the fullest realisation of his own special treatment of Gothic for modern purposes, and classed it in this respect with his work on the town-hall at Preston, Kelham Hall in Nottinghamshire, and the old bank at Leeds. The idea of working the iron roof trusses of the station into the form of a pointed arch was due, not to Scott himself, but to the engineer of the company. The buildings of the Glasgow University, undertaken at about the same time, were designed in a manner which Scott had already adopted in the Albert Institute at Dundee, a 'thirteenth or fourteenth century secular style with the addition of certain Scottish features.'

In 1866 Scott was one of the six architects (afterwards increased to twelve) invited to compete for the royal courts of justice. The officially appointed judges decided in favour of two architects, George Edmund Street [q. v.] and Edward Middleton Barry [q. v.], and the government, after much confusion, eventually displaced the latter. The competitors believed they had been unjustly treated. Scott, who acted as chairman at the meetings of the competitors, keenly felt his own failure (cf. *Reminiscences*, p. 274).

In 1870 the Royal Institute of British Architects, which had awarded Scott its royal gold medal in 1859, invited him to accept nomination as president, an honour which he then declined. He, however, held

the office from 1873 to 1876. From 1868 he was professor of architecture at the Royal Academy, a post which he filled with great distinction. His lectures were published in 1879 as 'Mediæval Architecture,' 2 vols. An enterprise with which Scott was actively associated was the establishment of the Architectural Museum, now located in Tufton Street, Westminster.

In 1872 he received knighthood in consideration of his works for the royal family.

On 19 March 1878 his health began to give way, and he died from a heart attack on the 27th of the same month. He was buried on 6 April in Westminster Abbey.

The principal works still in progress at the time of his death were the refitting of the choir at Canterbury, the restoration of Tewkesbury Abbey, the great hall of Glasgow University, the cathedral of Edinburgh, the church of St. Mary Abbotts, Kensington, the restoration of St. Alban's Abbey (since continued, though on different lines, by Lord Grimthorpe), works at Beverley Minster, the Hook memorial church at Leeds, and the restoration of the cathedrals of Salisbury, St. Davids, Lichfield, and St. Margaret's Church, Westminster.

Scott married, on 5 June 1838, a second cousin, Caroline Oldrid (her sister married his brother, the Rev. Thomas Scott). By her he had five sons, two of whom, George Gilbert Scott, F.S.A., and John Oldrid Scott, followed the profession of architecture, and carried out some of the works left unfinished at his death.

In 1838, shortly after his marriage, Scott established himself at 20 (now 31) Spring Gardens, where he continued to conduct his work till the end of his life. He changed his residence in 1844 to St. John's Wood, afterwards to Hampstead, and in 1864 to Ham. In 1879 he left Ham for Rook's-nest, near Godstone. In 1877, after a short return to Ham, he removed to Courtfield House, South Kensington, where he died.

The 'Builder' (1878, p. 360) contains an incomplete list, dating from 1847, of 732 buildings or projects with which Scott was connected as architect or restorer or as the author of a report. Among these are 29 cathedrals, British or colonial, 10 minsters, 476 churches, 25 schools, 23 parsonages, 58 monumental works, 25 colleges or college chapels, 26 public buildings, 43 mansions, and various small ecclesiastical accessories. Besides the buildings already mentioned, special allusion may be made to the chapel of St. John's College, Cambridge, the additions to New College, Oxford, the Leeds infirmary, the column to commemorate the Westminster scholars who fell in the Crimea, the horseshoe cloisters, Windsor, and the restoration of St. Cuthbert's Church, Darlington.

The principal works of cathedral restoration not already mentioned were those at Chester, Worcester, Chichester, Gloucester, Rochester, and Exeter. The work at Chichester consisted chiefly of the rebuilding of the tower and spire which had collapsed in 1861. At Chester very extensive external renovation was thought necessary, owing to the extent to which the old stonework had become decayed. The restoration at Exeter led to litigation over the 'reredos,' in which the propriety of the use of sculpture was discussed (Phillpotts *v.* Boyd, L. R. 6 P. C. 435). Minor works were carried out at Winchester, Durham, Peterborough, Bangor, and St. Asaph.

Of Scott's style as an original artist it may be said that, starting (in his maturer practice) with a marked prejudice against the fourteenth-century characteristics of English architecture, he subsequently changed his views, adopting in domestic and secular work a modification of Gothic, and inclining in church work to that importation of French models of the thirteenth century which prevailed among his contemporaries. In a design submitted (1875) in conjunction with his son, John Oldrid Scott, for the parliament house at Berlin, he attempted to realise a development at which German Gothic might have arrived had it not been for the submission to French influence. In restoration he showed an unrivalled power of searching for evidences, and a remarkable fertility in following up a clue or conjecturing an original design from a few remaining fragments.

That Scott, as the greatest of architectural restorers, should have been the object of severe attack was natural. Certainly he sometimes remodelled rather than restored, and more than once his critics were successful in convicting him of an excessive energy in renovation. In the last year of Scott's life the growing opposition to the prevalent practice of architectural restoration with which his name was identified took definite form, and the Society for the Protection of Ancient Buildings was inaugurated.

Scott was an enthusiastic though not an accomplished writer. He published, besides various pamphlets, 1. 'A Plea for the Faithful Restoration of Ancient Churches,' 1850. 2. 'Remarks on Secular and Domestic Architecture,' 1850. 3. 'Gleanings from Westminster Abbey,' 1862.

Many architects were trained in his office,

among them George Edmund Street, R.A. [q. v.], and Mr. G. F. Bodley, A.R.A.

There are two portraits of Scott, both by George Richmond, R.A.—one in the council-room of the Royal Academy, the other at the Royal Institute of British Architects. The steel engraving given in the 'Reminiscences' is also after a drawing by Richmond.

[Personal and Professional Recollections, by Sir George Gilbert Scott, R.A., London, 1879; Builder, 1878, xxxvi, 339, 343, 360, 391, 440; Building News, 1878, xxiv. 309, 339, 385; Dict. of Architecture.] P. W.

SCOTT, GEORGE LEWIS (1708–1780), mathematician, born at Hanover in May 1708, was the eldest son of George Scott of Bristo in Scotland, who married Marion Stewart, daughter of Sir James Stewart, bart., of Coltness, lord advocate of Scotland. The father held diplomatic offices at various German courts, and was envoy-extraordinary to Augustus I, king of Poland, in 1712 (*Caldwell Papers*, Maitland Club, i. 206–52). He was an especial friend of the elector (afterwards George I), whose names were given to the boy at baptism, and the Princess Sophia was his godmother. At the close of 1726, after his father's death, his mother moved to Leyden for the education of her children. George Lewis was called to the bar at the Middle Temple, became F.S.A. on 3 June 1736, and F.R.S. on 5 May 1737, and was a member in 1736 of the Society for Encouragement of Learning. At this date Thomson the poet was one of his friends. In November 1750 Scott was made sub-preceptor to Prince George (afterwards George III) and his younger brothers, on the recommendation of Lord Bolingbroke through Lord Bathurst. Horace Walpole writes, 'You may add that recommendation to the chapter of our wonderful politics' (*Letters*, ii. 232); and as Scott was considered to be a Jacobite, his appointment caused considerable stir through the belief that he would inculcate in his pupils the doctrine of the divine right of kings. By July 1752 the tutors were divided into factions, and the quarrel lasted all the year (*ib.* ii. 293, 316–317). In February 1758 Scott was made a commissioner of excise, and he held that post until his death.

Scott, who was a pupil of De Moivre, was celebrated for his knowledge of mathematics. On 7 May 1762 he sent a long letter to Gibbon on the books which he should study in that science; and Gibbon, on 19 Oct. 1767, asked him to supply a paper 'on the present state of the physical and mathematical sciences' in England, for insertion in the 'Mémoires Littéraires de la Grande-Bretagne' of Deyverdun and himself. In December 1775 Gibbon sent for his perusal a part of the 'Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire' (*Misc. Works*, i. 147, ii. 44–51, 68–71). Two letters from Scott to Robert Simson [q. v.], the Scottish mathematician, with those which he received in reply, are given in Trail's 'Life of Simson' (pp. 113–128). He was described by Lord Brougham as 'perhaps the most accomplished of all amateur mathematicians who never gave their works to the world' (*Philosophers temp. George III*, 1855 ed. pp. 135–6). Dr. Burney speaks of him as an excellent musician, and as performing on the harpsichord. He was an intimate friend of Dr. Pepusch, whom he assisted in drawing up a paper for the Royal Society on the genera and systems of the ancient Greek music (Dr. Burney, in Rees's *Cyclop.* 1819, vol. xxxii.) Miss Burney, who met Scott in 1769, described him as 'very sociable and facetious. He entertained me extremely with droll anecdotes and stories among the Great and about the Court.' George Rose knew him 'long and very intimately,' and praised him as 'amiable, honorable, temperate, and one of the sweetest dispositions I ever knew.' He was tall and big. Dr. Johnson was one day giving way to tears, when Scott, who was present, clapped him on the back and said, 'What's all this, my dear sir? Why, you and I and Hercules, you know, were all troubled with melancholy.' The doctor was 'so delighted at his odd sally that he suddenly embraced him' (Mrs. Piozzi, *Anecdotes of Johnson*, pp. 50–1).

Scott died on 7 Dec. 1780. His wife, who was separated from him, forms the subject of another article [see Scott, Sarah]. Her friends condemned him for his bad treatment of her, and the rumour spread that he had tried to poison her; but there was no foundation for either charge. The materials which Ephraim Chambers [q. v.] left for a supplement to his dictionary of arts and sciences were committed to Scott's care for selection, revision, and expansion. The two volumes appeared in 1753, and he is said to have received 1,500*l.* for his services.

[Gent. Mag. 1780 p. 590, 1805 ii. 811–12; Miss Burney's Early Diary, i. 48–9, 155–6; George Rose's Diary, ii. 188; Nichols's Lit. Anecdotes, ii. 93; Caldwell Papers, i. 28, 206, ii. pt. ii. p. 161.] W. P. C.

SCOTT or **SCOT, GREGORY** (*d.* 1576), divine, of northern (possibly Yorkshire) descent, was educated at Eton, and was elected thence scholar of King's College, Cambridge, in 1550. He graduated B.A. 1553–4 and M.A. 1557. He was presented by the queen to

the rectory of Thimbleby, Lincolnshire, on 11 March 1560 (Rymer, *Fœdera*, xv. 587), and became chaplain to the bishop of Lincoln. On 2 May 1564 he was collated canon of the third stall in Carlisle Cathedral (Le Neve, *Fasti*). Five years later he became chancellor of Carlisle, and in 1570 vicar-general. As prebendary he took strong action in suing for a remedy against leases of the lands of the cathedral made contrary to the statutes (September 1567 and June 1568) (*State Papers*, Dom. Eliz. xliv. xlviii. 4 and 5, and Addenda xiv. 13; Strype, *Annals*, I. ii, 255–6). He was collated to the vicarage of St. Michael, Appleby, in 1569. Scot died in possession of his prebend some time before November 1576. He wrote: 'A Briefe Treatise agaynst certayne Errors of the Romish Church very plainly, notably, and pleasantly confuting the same by Scripture and Auncient Writers' (in verse), b. l., London, 1574, 8vo.

[Corser's Coll. Angl.-Poet. v. 222; Ritson's Bibl. Poet. p. 326; Ames's Typogr. Antiq. ed. Dibdin, iv. 569; Brydges's Restituta, iii. 490; Harwood's Alumni Eton. p. 106; Strype's Grindal, p. 125; Select Poetry, Parker Soc. liii; Grindal's Remains (Parker Soc.), p. 285; Cooper's Athenæ Cant.] W. A. S.

SCOTT, HARRIET ANNE, Lady Scott (1819–1894), novelist, only daughter of Henry Shank of Castlerig and Gleniston, Fifeshire, was born in Bombay in 1819. On 28 Nov. 1844 she married Sir James Sibbald David Scott (1814–1885), third baronet [q. v.] She died at 18 Cornwall Gardens, Queen's Gate, London, on 8 April 1894.

Lady Scott, a highly accomplished woman, who should be distinguished from the contemporary novelist, Caroline Lucy, Lady Scott (1784–1857) [q. v.], wrote eight novels; the first four were issued anonymously. Her books, though deficient in plot, display genuine powers of characterisation, and at times remind the reader of the style of Miss Susan Ferrier. The titles of the novels are:—1. 'The M.P.'s Wife and the Lady Geraldine,' 1838, 2 vols. 2. 'The Henpecked Husband,' 1847, 3 vols.; other editions 1853 and 1865. 3. 'Percy, or the Old Love and the New,' 1848, 3 vols. 4. 'Hylton House and its Inmates,' 1850, 3 vols. 5. 'The Only Child: a Tale,' 1852, 2 vols.; another edition 1865, in 'Select Library of Fiction.' 6. 'The Pride of Life,' 1854, 2 vols. 7. 'The Skeleton in the Cupboard,' 1860, 2nd edit. 1861. 8. 'The Dream of a Life,' 1862, 3 vols. She also contributed to the 'Queen' newspaper, and to various magazines, and published a small book entitled 'Cottagers' Comforts, and other Recipes in Knitting and Crochet. By Grandmother,' 1887.

[Notes and Queries, 8th ser. ix. 448, x. 186; Foster's Baronetage, 1883, p. 565; information from Miss Henrietta Caroline Sibbald Scott, The Firs, Newbury, Berks.] G. C. B.

SCOTT, HELENUS, M.D. (1760–1821), physician, was born at Dundee, and studied medicine at Edinburgh from 1777 to 1779. He entered the medical service of the East India Company, and served chiefly in the Bombay presidency. On 24 July 1797 he was created M.D. by the university of Aberdeen. After thirty years in India he returned to England, and began practice at Bath. On 22 Dec. 1815 he was admitted a licentiate of the College of Physicians, and in 1817 began to practise as a physician in Russell Square, London. In the same year he contributed an interesting paper to the 'Transactions' of the Medico-Chirurgical Society on the use of nitromuriatic acid in medicine. He used it in a wider range of disease than is now customary, but its frequent employment in the treatment of enteric fever and other maladies at the present day originates in his advocacy of its merits. He attained to considerable practice, and died on 16 Nov. 1821.

[Works; Munk's Coll. of Phys. iii. 142.] N. M.

SCOTT, HENRY, Earl of Deloraine (1676–1730), third but second surviving son of James Scott, duke of Monmouth [q. v.], and Anne, duchess of Buccleuch, was born in 1676. On 29 March 1706 he was created by Queen Anne Earl of Deloraine, Viscount Hermitage, and Baron Scott of Goldielands, the main title being derived from the lands of Deloraine in Kirkhope parish, Selkirkshire. He took his oath and seat in the last parliament in Scotland in October 1706, and voted in favour of the treaty of union. At the general election of 1715 he was chosen one of the Scottish representative peers, and he was rechosen in 1722 and 1727. In 1725 he was vested with the order of the Bath, and appointed gentleman of the bedchamber to George I. From the time of his accession to the peerage he also served in the army, being appointed in 1707 to the command of a regiment of foot, and promoted on 1 June 1715 to be colonel of the 2nd troop of horse-grenadier guards, on 7 April 1724 to be colonel of the 16th regiment, and on 9 July 1730 to be colonel of the 3rd regiment of horse, with the rank of major-general in the army. His reputation for courtesy and politeness—derived from his royal ancestors—is referred to in Young's 'Night Thoughts:'

Stanhope in wit, in breeding Delorain.

His mother, however, upon her death in 1723, reproached him with gracelessness and

extravagance, and left him but 5*l*. He died suddenly on Christmas day 1730, and was buried at Lidwell in Sandford St. Martin, Oxfordshire. By his first wife, Anne (*d*. 1720), daughter and heiress of William Duncombe of Battlesden, Bedfordshire, he had two sons —Francis, second earl; and Henry, third earl—and a daughter Anne, unmarried. By his second wife, Mary, daughter of Charles Howard, grandson of Thomas, first earl of Berkshire, he had two daughters: Georgina Caroline, married to Sir James Peachey, master of the robes; and Henrietta. His widow remarried, in April 1734, William Wyndham of Ersham, Norfolk, died on 12 Nov. 1744, and was buried at Windsor. She had been governess to the young princesses Mary and Louisa, daughters of George II.

[Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), i. 409–410; Fraser's Scotts of Buccleuch, ii. 324; Burke's Peerage.] T. F. H.

SCOTT, HENRY, third DUKE OF BUCCLEUCH and fifth DUKE OF QUEENSBERRY (1746–1812), born on 13 Sept. 1746, was second but eldest surviving son of Francis, earl of Dalkeith, who died in the lifetime of his father, and Lady Caroline Campbell, eldest daughter of John, second duke of Argyll and Greenwich. While still a child he became Duke of Buccleuch in succession to his grandfather, Francis, second duke (grandson of James Scott, duke of Monmouth [q. v.]), who died on 22 April 1751. He was educated at Eton, and afterwards had as his tutor and companion on his travels abroad Dr. Adam Smith, author of the 'Wealth of Nations,' who for this purpose resigned his university chair, and accepted a life annuity of 300*l*. After spending about two years in France and Switzerland, both the duke and his younger brother, who travelled with him, were seized by fever at Paris, and, the latter dying, the duke returned home. He had contemplated a political life, but events altered his determination, and he settled in his ancestral home at Dalkeith. During the French war in 1778 he raised a regiment of fencibles, which, under his personal command, were of conspicuous service in the 'no popery riots' in Edinburgh in the following year. To gratify his literary tastes he became a member of the Poker Club, formed in Edinburgh in 1762, and was the first president of the Royal Society of Edinburgh, which was instituted in 1783.

On 23 Dec. 1767 he was invested with the order of the Thistle, and in 1794 he was admitted knight of the Garter. In 1810, on the death of William Douglas, fourth duke of Queensberry [q. v.], the notorious 'old Q.,' he succeeded to the title, and also to the estates and other honours of the Douglases of Drumlanrig in virtue of an entail executed in 1706 by James Douglas, second duke of Queensberry [q. v.], whose second daughter Jane married Buccleuch's grandfather. The suavity and generosity of 'Duke Henry' rendered him highly popular, and his chosen friend, Sir Walter Scott, declared that 'his name was never mentioned without praises by the rich and benedictions by the poor.' He is said to have imitated James V of Scotland in paying visits in disguise to the cots of his humbler dependents, who always profited thereby. He died at Dalkeith on 11 Jan. 1812, and was buried there.

He married, on 2 May 1767, Lady Elizabeth Montagu (*d*. 1827), only daughter of George Brudenell Montagu, duke of Montagu [q. v.] By her he obtained large estates in England, together with personalty and jewels valued at 150,000*l*.; and he also succeeded on his mother's death to her property of Caroline Park, near Granton on the Firth of Forth. They had three sons and four daughters. The eldest son dying in infancy, Charles William Henry, the second, succeeded as fourth duke of Buccleuch and sixth duke of Queensberry, and, dying at Lisbon on 20 April 1819, was succeeded by his second but eldest surviving son by his wife, the Hon. Harriet Katherine Townshend, fourth daughter of Thomas, first viscount Sydney.

WALTER FRANCIS SCOTT, fifth DUKE OF BUCCLEUCH and seventh DUKE OF QUEENSBERRY (1806–1884), born at Dalkeith on 25 Nov. 1806, became duke in his thirteenth year, and when only sixteen entertained George IV for a fortnight at Dalkeith House. He was educated at St. John's College, Cambridge, graduating M.A. in 1827, and, as captain-general of the royal bodyguard of archers, carried the gold stick at the coronations of William IV and Queen Victoria. He entertained the queen and prince consort at Dalkeith in 1842, when he was created a privy councillor. Being a staunch conservative, he was made lord privy seal in Peel's ministry, from February 1842 to June 1846, when he held for six months the office of lord president of council. Having made a special study of agriculture, the duke was in 1831 made president of the Highland Agricultural Society. Between 1835 and 1842, at his sole cost (over half a million) he built the pier and breakwater forming a harbour at Granton, and developing it as a port on the Firth of Forth. His interest in art, science, and literature was recognised in his election to the

presidency of the Society of Antiquaries in 1862, and to that of the British Association in 1867. The university of Oxford honoured him with the degree of D.C.L. in 1834, and that of LL.D. was added by Cambridge in 1842 and Edinburgh in 1874, while Glasgow University elected him its chancellor in 1877. He also held the offices of high steward of Westminster and lord lieutenant and sheriff of the counties of Midlothian and Roxburgh. He died at Bowhill, Selkirkshire, on 16 April 1884, and was buried on the 23rd in St. Mary's Chapel, Dalkeith, being at the time of his death the senior knight of the Garter (cr. 23 Feb. 1835). His personalty amounted to above 910,000*l.* By his duchess, Lady Charlotte Anne Thynne, youngest daughter of Thomas, second marquis of Bath, he had, with other issue, the present Duke of Buccleuch and Queensberry.

[The Scotts of Buccleuch, by Sir William Fraser, i. 489–515 (with portraits of the third and fifth dukes and their respective duchesses); Lockhart's Life of Scott, passim; G. E. C.'s Peerage, s. v. 'Buccleuch.'] H. P.

SCOTT, HENRY YOUNG DARRACOTT (1822–1883), major-general royal engineers, fourth son of Edward Scott of Plymouth, Devonshire, was born there on 2 Jan. 1822. Educated privately and at the royal military academy at Woolwich, he obtained a commission as second lieutenant in the royal engineers on 18 Dec. 1840. After going through the usual course of professional instruction at Chatham he was stationed at Woolwich and Plymouth in succession. Promoted to be first lieutenant on 19 Dec. 1843, he went to Gibraltar in January 1844, where he was acting adjutant of his corps. While at Gibraltar he accompanied Arthur Penrhyn Stanley [q. v.], afterwards dean of Westminster, and his two sisters on a tour in Spain. In 1848 he returned to England, and was appointed assistant instructor in field works at the Royal Military Academy at Woolwich. He was promoted to be second captain on 11 Nov. 1851, in which year he married. He was in the same year appointed senior instructor in field works at the Royal Military Academy.

On 1 April 1855 Scott was promoted to be first captain, and was appointed instructor in surveying at the royal engineer establishment at Brompton, Chatham, where he was the trusted adviser of the commandant, Colonel (afterwards General Sir) Henry Drury Harness [q. v.], in the reorganisation of this important army school. At Chatham he had charge of the chemical laboratory, and his experiments enabled him to perfect the selenitic lime which goes by his name. His system of representing ground by horizontal hachures and a scale of shade was perfected at Chatham, and adopted for the army as the basis of military sketching. During his residence at Brompton, Kent, a drought occurred, and he rendered invaluable assistance in establishing the present waterworks in the Luton valley.

On 19 May 1863 Scott was promoted to be brevet major, and on 5 Dec. of the same year to be regimental lieutenant-colonel. On 14 Dec. 1865 he was seconded in his corps, and employed under the commission of the Great Exhibition of 1851 at South Kensington, in the place of Captain Francis Fowke [q. v.] He gained the complete confidence of the commissioners, and on the retirement of Sir Henry Cole was appointed secretary to the commission.

The chief work by which Scott will be remembered was the construction of the Royal Albert Hall at Kensington, with the design and execution of which he was entrusted in 1866. The design of the roof was unique, and there were many predictions that it would fail. Scott, however, had spent much labour in working out all the details, and never hesitated. When the time arrived, in 1870, for removing the scaffolding which supported the roof, Scott sent every one out of the building, and himself knocked away the final support. The acoustic properties were a source of anxiety. At first there was a decided echo with wind instruments, but the introduction of a 'velarium' below the true roof cured the defect. On 20 May 1871 Scott was made a companion of the Bath (civil division).

On 7 June 1871 Scott was promoted to be brevet colonel, and on 19 Aug. of the same year he retired from the army as an honorary major-general, but continued in his civil appointment at South Kensington. On 3 Feb. 1874 he became an associate of the Institution of Civil Engineers; on 3 June 1875 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society, and the same year a member of a select Russian scientific society, on which occasion the czar presented him with a snuff-box set with diamonds.

Scott was for some years examiner in military topography under the military education department. He was awarded medals for service rendered to the Great Exhibition of London in 1862, the Prussian Exhibition of 1865, the Paris Universal Exhibition of 1867, the annual London International Exhibition of fine arts, industries, and inventions, the Dutch Exhibition of 1877, and the Paris International Exhibition of 1878. He received

in 1880 a silver medal from the Society of Arts for a paper entitled 'Suggestions for dealing with the Sewerage of London,' and the Telford premium for a paper he contributed in the same year, in conjunction with Mr. G. R. Redgrave, to the Institution of Civil Engineers, on the 'Manufacture and Testing of Portland Cement.' He had prepared the plans for the completion of the South Kensington Museum, when, in 1882, the treasury, in a fit of economy, abolished his appointment as secretary of the Great Exhibition commissioners. This abrupt termination of his connection with the museum and anxiety for the future of his numerous family helped to break down his health. He designed the buildings for the Fisheries Exhibition, but was too ill to attend the opening. He died at his residence, Silverdale, Sydenham, on 16 April 1883, and was buried at Highgate. Scott's life was devoted to the public service and the advancement of scientific knowledge, but he failed to secure for himself any benefit from his inventions.

Scott married, on 19 June, 1851, at Woolwich, Ellen Selina, youngest daughter of Major-general Bowes of the East India Company's service. She survived him with fifteen children.

Scott contributed to the 'Transactions of the Royal Institute of British Architects' (1857 and 1872) and to the 'Professional Papers of the Corps of Royal Engineers' (new ser. vols. vi, vii, x, xi, xii, xvii, xx) papers chiefly dealing with his discovery of his new cement and the construction of the Albert Hall.

[War Office Records; Royal Engineers' Records; memoir by Canon Daniel Cooke in the Royal Engineers' Journal, 1883; Sir Henry Coles's Fifty Years of Public Work, 2 vols. 1884.] R. H. V.

SCOTT, HEW (1791–1872), annalist of the Scottish church, son of Robert Scott, excise officer, was born at Haddington on 5 Feb. 1791. He attended Edinburgh University, but graduated M.A. at Aberdeen. For a time he found employment in collating the old ecclesiastical manuscripts in the Register House, Edinburgh, where he was known as 'the peripatetic index.' Licensed to preach by the Haddington presbytery, he was ordained to a Canadian mission in 1829; but David Laing the antiquary persuaded him to remain in Scotland. He became assistant minister successively at Garvald, Ladykirk, Cockpen, and Temple; and in 1839 was preferred to the charge of West Anstruther, Fifeshire, where he died on 12 July 1872. He received the degree of D.D. from St. Andrews University.

The labour of Scott's life was the 'Fasti Ecclesiæ Scoticanæ,' 6 vols., Edinburgh, 1866–71. This work gives a notice, more or less complete, of every minister who has held office in the church of Scotland from 1560 to 1839. On the score of exhaustiveness and accuracy it is unique in ecclesiastical biography. Scott personally visited nearly eight hundred parishes in search of material. He wrote the whole of the 'Fasti' on letter-backs, and used turned envelopes for his correspondence. With a stipend of less than 200*l.* a year he left about 9,000*l.*, and bore part of the costs of publishing the 'Fasti.' He was an eccentric character, and curious stories are recorded of his miserly habits.

[Gourlay's Anstruther, 1888; Conolly's Eminent Men of Fife, 1866; local information.] J. C. H.

SCOTT, Sir JAMES (*fl.* 1579–1606), politician, was the grandson of Sir William Scott or Scot (*d.* 1532) [q. v.], and eldest son of Sir William Scott of Balwearie and Strathmiglo, by his wife Janet, daughter of Lindsay of Dowhill; he was served heir to his father in 1579. In December 1583 his name appears at a band of caution for the self-banishment of William Douglas of Lochleven (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* iii. 615). On 4 March 1587–8 he was called to answer before the privy council, along with the turbulent Francis, earl of Bothwell, and others, for permitting certain border pledges to whom they had become bound to escape (*ib.* iv. 258). At the coronation of the queen on 17 May 1590 he was dubbed a knight, but his enjoyment of the royal favour was of short duration. A catholic by conviction, and fond of fighting and adventure, he gave active and unconcealed assistance both to the Earl of Bothwell and to the catholic earls of Angus, Erroll, and Huntly. He seconded Bothwell in his attempt to seize the king at Falkland Palace on 28 June 1592 (Moysie, *Memoirs*, p. 95), and having, for failing to answer concerning the 'late treasonable fact,' been, on 6 June, denounced a rebel (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* iv. 765), he on 10 Nov. obtained caution to answer when required, and not to repair within ten miles of the king's residence without license (*ib.* v. 21). At the convention of estates held at Linlithgow on 31 Oct. 1593 he was appointed one of the sham commission for the trial of the catholic earls (*ib.* p. 103), and, as was to be expected, favoured the act of abolition passed in their favour. It was probably through him that Bothwell arranged his interview with the three catholic earls at the kirk of Menmuir in Angus in 1594, when a band was subscribed

between them which was given into Scott's keeping (Moysie, p. 121); but by the accidental capture of Bothwell's servant the plot was discovered, and Scott was immediately apprehended and lodged in the castle of Edinburgh. On 23 Jan. 1595 he was brought to the Tolbooth gaol, and kept there all night. On being interrogated he delivered up the band, and, according to Calderwood, made a confession to the effect that 'the king should have been taken, committed to perpetual prison, the prince crowned king, Huntly, Erroll, and Angus chosen regents.' Notwithstanding this extraordinary revelation, 'he was,' says Calderwood, 'permitted to keep his own chamber upon the 29th of January, and was fined in twenty thousand pounds, which the hungry courtiers gaped for, but got not' (*History*, v. 359). Calderwood also publishes the heads of the band (*ib.* p. 360), and Scott's confession is fully noticed in the record of the meeting of the privy council of 11 Feb. (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* v. 205). Nevertheless the matter does not appear to have been taken very seriously by the council, it being only too manifest that if the earls had the will, they had not the power to effect any such revolution. On 25 Jan. Scott obtained a remission under the great seal, much to the chagrin of the ministers of Edinburgh, who desired the task of excommunicating him (cf. Calderwood, v. 365). On 29 Aug. 1599 he was required to give caution that he would keep the peace (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* v. 748). If during the remainder of his life he eschewed entangling himself in politics, there is evidence that he remained, as heretofore, restless and unruly. Having on 5 Nov. 1601 been denounced for failing to answer a charge of destroying the growing corn of Patrick Pitcairne of Pitlour (*ib.* p. 301), he on 16 Oct. 1602 found caution in three thousand merks not to harm him (*ib.* p. 702). On account of his repeated fines, Scott was compelled to sell various portions of his estates, until in 1600 all that remained in his possession was the tower and fortalice of Strathmiglo, with the village and the lands adjoining. On 13 Dec. 1606 a decree was passed against him lying at the horn for debt (*ib.* vii. 251), and various other decrees at the instance of different complainers were passed on subsequent occasions (*ib.* passim). Before his death the remaining portions were disposed of, and he left no heritage to his successor. The downfall of the family affected the popular imagination, and gave birth to traditions more or less apocryphal. According to one of these, although his inveterate quarrelsomeness made him lose his all, he was very mean and miserly; and on one occasion, while looking over his window directing his servants, who were throwing old and mouldy oatmeal into the moat, he was accosted by a beggar man, who desired to be allowed to fill his wallet with it. This the harsh baron of Balwearie refused, whereupon the beggar pronounced his curse upon him, and declared that he himself should yet be glad to get what he then refused. The date of his death is not recorded. By his wife Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Andrew Wardlaw of Torrie, he had two sons, William and James, and a daughter Janet, married to Sir John Boswell of Balmuto.

[Reg. P. C. Scotl. vols. vi–viii.; Calderwood's Hist. of Scotland; Moysie's Memoirs (Bannatyne Club); Leighton's Hist. of Fife; Douglas's Baronage of Scotland, p. 305.] T. F. H.

SCOTT, JAMES (known as Fitzroy and as Crofts), Duke of Monmouth and Buccleuch (1649–1685), born at Rotterdam on 9 April 1649, was the natural son of Charles II, by Lucy, daughter of Richard Walter or Walters of Haverfordwest, Pembrokeshire. Charles seems to have met Lucy Walters at The Hague, while she was still under the protection of Robert Sidney (third son of Robert Sidney, second earl of Leicester [q.v.]), whom Monmouth was said to closely resemble (see Clarke, *Life of James II*, i. 491–2). Evelyn, who met her in Paris in August 1649, when she went by the name of Barlow, describes her as a 'browne, beautifull, bold, but insipid creature.' After a narrow escape from being kidnapped as an infant (*Heroick Life*, pp. 9–12), James was taken to Paris in 1650, and in January 1656 brought by his mother to England. Courted by the cavaliers, 'Mrs. Barlo' was placed in the Tower with her boy, whom she declared to be the son of King Charles. On her discharge on 12 July there was found on her a grant signed 'Charles R.' of an annuity of five thousand livres (Whitelocke, p. 649). Expelled from England, Lucy repaired at once with her child to Paris; but before long she became completely estranged from Charles, relapsed into evil courses, and died, wrote James II, 'of the disease incident to that profession' (for pedigree see Dwnn, *Heraldic Visitations of Wales*, i. 228; *Notes and Queries*, 2nd ser. ii. 374–5, but cf. *Miscellanea Genealog. et Herald.* 2nd ser. iv. 265).

After her death, the youth was entrusted to the charge of Lord Crofts, as whose kinsman he now passed, and by whose name he was known. His tutors were first an English oratorian named Stephen Goffe or Gough [q.v.], and then Thomas Ross (*d.* 1675) [q.v.]

According to James II (*Life*, i. 490) this last appointment was not made nor the boy's instruction in the protestant religion begun till Charles II had resolved to send for him to England. In July 1662 'James Crofts,' after being presented to the king at Hampton Court, accompanied him to Whitehall, where he was assigned apartments in the privy gallery. Grammont describes the furore created by his reception, but contrasts his deficiency in mental accomplishments with 'the astonishing beauty of his outward form.' As early as 31 Dec. 1662 Pepys mentions rumours of an intention to recognise him as the king's lawful son in the event of the marriage with the queen remaining childless. Scandal asserted (Grammont, p. 295) that the Duchess of Cleveland for the sake of her children made love to him, and that this gave rise to the plan of marrying him without delay. According to Clarendon (*Life*, ii. 253–6), Lauderdale, in order to baulk Albemarle's wish to secure this prize for his own son, suggested the choice of Anne Scott, by her father's death Countess of Buccleuch in her own right. She had 10,000*l.* a year, besides expectations. Disregarding Clarendon's advice, Charles II resolved to follow French precedent, and own his natural son. Accordingly on 14 Feb. 1663 'Mr. Crofts' was created Baron Tyndale, Earl of Doncaster, and Duke of Monmouth (the title of Duke of Orkney having been abandoned); he received precedence over all dukes not of the blood royal (Pepys, 7 Feb.), and on 28 March was elected a K.G. (Collins). On 20 April of the same year 'the little Duke of Monmouth' (Pepys) was married to the Countess of Buccleuch 'in the king's chamber,' and on the same day (Collins) they were created Duke and Duchess of Buccleuch, and he took the surname of Scott. Already on 8 April 1663 he had been empowered to assume arms resembling the royal; on 22 April 1667 the royal arms themselves with the usual bar were granted to him 'as the king's dear son' (*ib.*) Honours military, civil, and academical were heaped upon him during the first decade of his dukedom. The fact that the king continued to 'doat' on his son (Pepys, 20 Jan., 8 and 22 Feb. 1664), even so far as to bestow a place at court upon the youth's maternal uncle (*ib.*), sufficiently accounts for the repeated revival of the rumour as to his intended legitimisation (*ib.* 15 May and 19 Nov. 1663, 11 Sept. and 7 Nov. 1667), and for the early suspicion that this fondness produced unkindness between the king and his brother (*ib.* 4 May 1663). Meanwhile Monmouth was 'always in action, vaulting and leaping and clambering' (*ib.* 26 July 1665), dancing in court masques (*ib.* 3 Feb. 1665), acting with his duchess in the 'Indian Emperor' (*ib.* 14 Jan. 1668), and accompanying the king to Newmarket for racing, to Bagshot for hunting, and on divers royal progresses (*Historick Life*, pp. 19–31). In 1665 he followed the fashion in volunteering under the Duke of York, and was present on 3 June at the battle in Solebay (*Life of James II*, i. 493). In the following year he obtained a troop of horse, preparatory to his being in 1668 named captain of the king's 'life guard of horse' (*Historick Life*, p. 20; cf. Pepys, s.d. 16 Sept. 1668). He was made a privy councillor in 1670, an ugly year for his reputation. He may be freely acquitted of the indirect share attributed to him in the death of the Duchess of Orleans, at whose interview at Dover with her brother he had assisted (Reresby, p. 82); but neither filial affection nor the brutality of the times can excuse his share in the assault upon Sir John Coventry [q. v.] for his reflection upon the king's intimacy with 'female actors' (*ib.*; cf. Burnet, i. 496). Dryden in his 'Absalom and Achitophel,' pt. i. l. 39, reproaches Monmouth under the character of Absalom with Amnon's (i.e. Coventry's) murder (cf. Scott and Saintsbury *ad loc.*). Coventry escaped with his life; not so an unfortunate beadle whom Monmouth and the young Duke of Albemarle killed as a sequel to beating the watch on 28 Feb. 1670 (see 'On Three Dukes killing the Beadle,' ap. *Poems on Affairs of State*).

When in January 1670 Monmouth succeeded Albemarle (Monck) as captain-general of all the king's forces, notwithstanding the opposition of the Duke of York, his first serious difference with the latter seems to have taken place (*Life of James II*, i. 494–5; cf. Dartmouth's note to Burnet, ii. 239). In 1672 he commanded the English auxiliary force against the Dutch under the eyes of Turenne and of Louis XIV himself, and on his return, in the company of the Earl of Feversham, to the seat of war in 1673, he took an active part in the siege of Maestricht, which capitulated on 2 July. 'Much considered' on account of his services (Burnet, ii. 19), he was fêted, pensioned, and, on letters commendatory from the king, elected chancellor of the university of Cambridge (15 July 1674). In 1674 or 1675 the chancellor danced in Crowne's 'Calisto' at court, when Lady Wentworth, afterwards his mistress, acted Jupiter (Crowne, *Works*, i. 248–9); before this he had been involved in an intrigue with Eleanor, daughter of Sir Robert Needham (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 305; cf. Horace Walpole, *Letters*, ed. Cunningham, i. 381 and note). In February

1678 he was sent at the head of a small force to protect Ostend against the French (Reresby, p. 128; Burnet, ii. 127), and to raise the siege of Mons on the eve of the conclusion of the peace of Nimeguen. He was now the ally of the Prince of Orange, to whose English marriage in the previous year he was said to have objected from motives of both interest and pique (Ossory ap. Burnet, ii. 61 *n.*) On his return to England in August he found the popish plot agitation just astir, and Charles II now began his policy of balancing the rights of his brother by the popularity of his bastard son (Burnet, ii. 172). Monmouth more and more identified himself with the protestant movement; detailed (24 Oct. 1678) to the House of Lords his measures for dealing with papists in the army and providing for the safety of the king (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 11th Rep. App. pt. ii. p. 88, cf. 7th Rep. App. p. 471), and was himself proved on the testimony of Bedloe to be in danger of assassination. He lost no opportunity of heightening his popularity (cf. *Autobiography of Roger North*, ed. Jessopp, p. 38), and the report of his being the king's legitimate son was revived so vigorously that Charles II on two successive occasions thought it worth his while to declare solemnly (6 Jan.) and attest (3 March 1679) before the privy council that the story of his marriage with Lucy Walters was a fiction, and that he had never been married to any woman but the queen (Ellis, *Original Letters*, 1st ser. iii. 344–5). Already in April 1679 Reresby (p. 167) wrote of him as 'the man in power.' It was with the distinct object of preventing Monmouth from being put at the head of an aggressive protestant administration that Sir William Temple devised his scheme of a large privy council in which Monmouth, Shaftesbury, and their associates should be included, but would not be omnipotent. For to Monmouth, in conjunction with the Duchess of Portsmouth and Lord Essex, Temple attributed the overthrow of Danby, imputing to him the design of bringing Shaftesbury, with whom he was now intimate, into power, and tampering with the succession ('Memoirs of Sir W. Temple,' pt. iii., *Works* (fol. 1750), i. 333). On the other hand, at court Monmouth was thought to have favoured Temple's scheme, using it as the occasion on which he 'began to set up for himself' (Reresby, p. 167). He was named a member of the committee of intelligence in matters both foreign and domestic, which was formed early in the year (Sidney, *Diary and Correspondence*, i. 5 *n.*)

After the Exclusion Bill had passed its second reading in the new House of Commons, parliament was prorogued, and a schism manifested itself among the opposition leaders. At the head of the party of action, along with Shaftesbury, stood 'exercituum nostrorum generalis,' as Monmouth was designated in his writ of summons to the House of Lords (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 11th Rep. App. pt. ii. p. 90); nor was his popularity diminished when he was chosen to quell the insurrection which ensued in Scotland on the murder of Archbishop Sharp (*Examen*, p. 81). Monmouth arrived in Edinburgh on 18 June 1679, and his easy victory at Bothwell Bridge on 22 June virtually put an end to the rebellion. The clemency shown by him to many of the numerous prisoners taken in the battle (cf. Scott, *Old Mortality*) was disapproved by the Duke of York, and even by the king (Burnet, ii. 236 *n.*), but in conjunction with his military success insured him an enthusiastic reception on his return to London (Temple, u. s., p. 340). The king had again dissolved parliament, but James was still in exile, and on the king's falling seriously ill in August Monmouth ventured to request that the duke might be prohibited from returning. Charles II, however, gave the desired permission, and the warm reception of the Duke of York by the king was, on the recovery of the latter (15 Sept.), followed by Monmouth's being deprived of his commission as general, and ordered to absent himself for some time from the kingdom (Luttrell, i. 21). He was loth to go, and began to despair of his father (Sidney, *Diary*, i. 127, 151 *n.*), so that during the latter part of September there were various rumours in London as to his movements and intentions (cf. *Verney MSS.* in *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 475). Ultimately he left for Holland at the close of the month, after an interview in Arlington Gardens with the king, who insisted on his departure, but told him it should not be for long (*ib.*) His submission to the royal wish had been advised by his whig friends (Burnet, ii. 238). At the Hague he seemed in a melancholy mood, went twice to church on one day, and was feasted by the fanatics at dinner (Sidney, i. 154, 166). During this visit the first personal approximation between Monmouth and the Prince of Orange seems to have taken place (*ib.* i. 190, 194).

At midnight on 27 Nov., the Duke of York being now in Scotland, Monmouth, though he had in vain sought to obtain the royal permission for his return, reappeared in London, where he was received with much popular rejoicing (Reresby, p. 181; Evelyn, ii. 359; Luttrell, i. 29). The king immediately issued orders for Monmouth's chief military and civil offices to be taken from him, and

for Monmouth to be formally sent out of the kingdom by order in council (*Life of James II*, i. 579; but see LUTTRELL, i. 26, 27). He refused to see the letter which Monmouth wrote in reply, or to be moved by Nell Gwyn's description of the wan, pale looks of his unhappy son (1 Dec. 1679; *Verney MSS.* u. s. 478). Monmouth in his turn courageously held his own, quitting Whitehall for his house in Hedge Lane, and declaring that he would live on his wife's fortune (*Life of James II*, u. s.) In the meantime he made the most of his opportunities, worshipping in St. Martin's Church so as to provoke a demonstration of sympathy (*Verney MSS.*), and paying his court to Nell Gwyn (SIDNEY, i. 207) and others of his father's mistresses (*ib.* p. 298). About the same time (30 Jan. 1680) he was said to be involved in two guilty intrigues, one with Lady Grey, the other with Lady Wentworth (*ib.* i. 263–4).

Faction now raged among 'Addressers' and 'Abhorrers,' and in February 1680 the Duke of York returned from Scotland. London playhouse audiences clamoured against him, and vowed to be 'for his highness the Duke of Monmouth against the world' (*ib.* i. 237), and in 'An Appeal from the Country to the City,' attributed to Robert Ferguson [q. v.] (*Ferguson the Plotter*, p. 42), which one Harris was unsuccessfully prosecuted for publishing, the succession of Monmouth was advocated on the ground that 'he who has the worst title makes the best king,' and that 'God and my People' would in his case make a good substitute for 'God and my Right' (*Life of Lord William Russell*, i. 173). A design in which the Duchess of Portsmouth co-operated was talked of, to empower the king to name his successor (BURNET, ii. 260–1; cf. SIDNEY, i. 15). But bolder projects were discussed in the secret meetings by the chief leaders of the opposition (RERESBY, p. 182), and it was determined to place the claims of Monmouth on a legal basis.

Not a tittle of real evidence exists in favour of the supposed marriage between Charles II and Lucy Walters. Monmouth is said by Sir Patrick Hume (*Marchmont Papers*, vol. iii.) to have informed him, when about to start on the expedition of 1685, that he possessed proofs of his mother's marriage, and Sir Patrick Hume may have told the truth. Nor can any significance be attached to the fact that in 1655, writing to her brother about Lucy Walters, the Princess of Orange twice referred to her as his wife (see HALLAM'S note to *Const. History*, c. xii.) A story which obtained wide acceptance was to the effect that the contract of marriage between Charles and Lucy Walters was contained in a black box entrusted by Cosin, afterwards bishop of Durham, to his son-in-law, Sir Gilbert Gerard. No proof of the existence of the box was given. The king remembered a report that Ross, Monmouth's tutor, had actually, though in vain, sought to induce Cosin, whose 'penitent' Lucy Walters pretended to be at Paris, to sign a certificate of the marriage (*Life of James II*, i. 491). Sir Gilbert Gerard was on 26 April summoned before the privy council, where he denied any knowledge of box or marriage contract (LUTTRELL, i. 42). Monmouth's partisans issued a pamphlet called 'The Perplexed Prince,' and under the fashionable disguise of a romantic narrative which asserted the facts of the marriage Ferguson maintained the truth of the marriage story in able pamphlets [see FERGUSON, ROBERT, *d.* 1714]. Monmouth is said to have given Ferguson an annuity of fifty guineas. Ferguson's first pamphlet produced a new declaration from Charles embodying the preceding two.

In August of the same year Monmouth started on an expedition among his friends in Wiltshire, Somersetshire, and Devonshire. Besides several smaller towns, Ilchester, Ilminster, Chard, &c., he visited Exeter, where he was greeted by about one thousand 'stout young men.' Once in the course of this journey he touched for the evil. Dryden (*Absalom and Achitophel*, pt. i. l. 741) cannot be wrong in supposing Shaftesbury to have suggested this quasi-royal progress, on which Monmouth was received with the utmost enthusiasm. In October he was back in London, where he still abstained from attending court (LUTTRELL, i. 56); on lord mayor's day he was received with loud acclamations in the city (*Verney MSS.* u. s. p. 479); in December he was present at Lord Stafford's trial (*Heroick Life*, p. 105).

The Exclusion Bill had now passed the commons, but had been rejected by the lords. Just before the prorogation (10 Jan. 1681) the former house, among a series of defiant resolutions, voted one demanding the restoration to Monmouth of his offices, of which he had been deprived through the influence of the Duke of York (*Life of Lord Russell*, i. 253). When a new parliament was summoned to Oxford, Monmouth's name headed the petition against its being held anywhere but at Westminster. At Oxford he appeared with a numerous following, and, like the other whig chiefs, kept open table, and did his best to secure the goodwill of the commons (LORD GREY, *Secret History*, p. 10). Shaftesbury's attempt to make the Exclusion Bill unnecessary, by inducing the king to name Monmouth his successor, having failed

(North, *Examen*, p. 100), the Oxford parliament was dissolved, and the reaction promptly set in. The protestant joiner, who in his dying speech represented himself as a kind of detective commissioned by Monmouth, was sacrificed, and Shaftesbury was put on trial for his life. Monmouth, like others, visited him on the night of his arrest (Luttrell, i. 106); but the tories still hoped to separate Absalom and Achitophel, as is shown by the mitigations introduced by Dryden into the second (December) edition of his great satire (published November 1681, and itself tender towards Monmouth). Part of this year was spent by Monmouth at Tunbridge Wells (*ib.* i. 111, 118); in October he threw up his Scottish offices, rather than submit to a parliamentary test; in November, returning from a visit to Gloucestershire, he became one of Shaftesbury's bail (*ib.* pp. 143, 147), whereby he incurred the renewed displeasure of the king, who appointed the Dukes of Richmond and Grafton to vacant appointments formerly held by their half-brother (Reresby, p. 225; Luttrell, i. 150). Monmouth continued to maintain his attitude of resistance, thereby causing great uneasiness to his father, who for a time even feared that the murder of Monmouth's intimate friend, Thomas Thynne, would be popularly construed as a design upon the duke's own life (Reresby, pp. 225, 228). On the other hand, the university of Cambridge obeyed the royal injunction to deprive Monmouth of the chancellorship (April 1682), and burnt his portrait in the schools. His tenure of office had been chiefly signalised by his letter to the university, in reproof of the secular apparel which the clergy and scholars were beginning to wear (Plumptre, *Life of Ken*, i. 48 note). Monmouth himself seems in May to have been willing to submit; but he contrived to insult Halifax as having thwarted him in council, and was consequently severely reprimanded, and excluded from association with the king's servants (Reresby, pp. 250–1; cf. Luttrell, i. 189, and *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 352). Yet in August it was once more rumoured that the king intended to take him back into favour (Luttrell, i. 215).

But Monmouth was not his own master. According to Lord Grey (*Secret History*, p. 15 seqq.) an insurrection had been mooted between Shaftesbury and Monmouth early in 1681, when the king was again ill at Windsor; in 1682, immediately after the election of tory sheriffs in July, Shaftesbury strongly urged the necessity of a rising, and it was with this view that a number of meetings were held in the autumn (at one of which Monmouth and Russell agreed in rejecting the 'detestable' and 'popish' proposal to massacre the guards in cold blood; *Life of Lord Russell*, ii. 117), and that in September Monmouth went on a second progress in the west. On his return the insurrection was to be finally arranged, Sir John Trenchard [q. v.] having been engaged by him to raise at least fifteen hundred men in and about Taunton (Grey, p. 18). Monmouth was met by multitudes at Daventry and Coventry (*ib.* i. 219), and he passed by way of Trentham to Nantwich and Chester, where enthusiasm reached its height, and he presented the plate won by him at Wallasey races to the mayor's daughter, his god-child, 'Heneretta' (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 533). The progress ended by his arrest by the king's order in the county town of Staffordshire, of which he was lord-lieutenant. He arrived in London in the company of the serjeant-at-arms (23 Sept.), and, though he bore himself high under examination by the secretary of state, he was after some delay (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 359), bailed out by his political friends (Luttrell, i. 222; see 'The Duke of Monmouth's Case,' in *Somers Tracts*, viii. 403–5).

Shaftesbury bitterly inveighed against Monmouth's irresolution, and urged him on his release to return to Cheshire and begin the rebellion. He declined, but took part in the 'cabals' of Russell, Essex, and Sidney, who were hatching the plot for the murder of the king and the Duke of York. According to the most probable version of these obscure transactions, Monmouth knew of the design to take the king's life on his return from Newmarket in October. But he protested against it (cf. *Life of Lord Russell*, ii. 51), and fell in with Ferguson's device of preventing it by keeping up preparations for a general insurrection, and by diverting money from the murder scheme. Monmouth appeared in the city on the night of the king's return, having at the same time prepared everything for escape should it prove necessary (*Ferguson the Plotter*, p. 77 seqq.) After the breakdown of the first Rye House scheme Shaftesbury, who was in hiding, continued to press for a rising, while Monmouth continued to maintain a consenting but dilatory attitude. At the end of October or beginning of November were held the two fatal meetings at Shephard's house in Abchurch Lane, at both of which Ferguson and Rumsey were present, as well as Monmouth and his friends [see Russell, William, Lord Russell]. At the earlier of these meetings the night of Sunday, 19 Nov., was fixed for the rising in London, and Monmouth's house was appointed as one of the meeting-

places of the insurgents (for further details see GREY, p. 28 seqq.; *Ferguson the Plotter*, p. 86 seqq.) At the second meeting at Shephard's it was announced that the preparations were incomplete, and the rising was again postponed. Hereupon Shaftesbury fled the country. His flight (28 Nov.), succeeded by his death (21 Jan. 1683), deprived the whigs of the only chief who could command the support of London; it also snapped the link between the 'council of six' (Monmouth, Essex, Howard, Russell, Hampden, and Sidney) and the assassination plotters. The two factions still carried on their designs separately, and Monmouth in February 1683 paid a visit to Chichester, where he was preached at in the cathedral on the subject of rebellion. But about this time Ferguson returned to London. The 'council' or 'cabal,' to which Grey, according to his own account (p. 43), was now admitted, resolved upon the simultaneous outbreak of three risings in England (London, Cheshire, and the south-west) and a fourth in Scotland. Monmouth and Russell insisted upon the issue of a declaration in conformity with their views rather than with the republican sympathies of Sidney and Essex, and it was agreed that on the outbreak of the insurrection in London Monmouth should at once start for Taunton to assume the command there. Lord Grey adds (pp. 61–2) that Monmouth privately assured him of his belief that the insurrection would lead to little bloodshed, and speedily end in an accommodation between king and parliament, and of his detestation of a proposal to murder the Duke of York. Monmouth knew of the assassination plot, and kept up relations with the plotters, but it cannot be known how far his conduct was the result of impotence or of a formed design to frustrate the scheme of assassination.

The king's unexpectedly early departure from Newmarket ruined the plot before it was ripe (March), and 1 June its 'discovery' began. A proclamation appeared 28 or 29 June offering a reward of 500*l.* for the apprehension of Monmouth, Grey, Armstrong, and Ferguson (LUTTRELL, i. 263). A true bill for high treason was found against Monmouth 12 July (*ib.* p. 267), and a proclamation against the fugitives was issued in Scotland (*ib.* p. 270). Monmouth's actual proceedings are obscure. Report (*ib.* p. 279) asserted him to be at Cleves, where Grey was officiously negotiating for his entry into the service of the elector of Brandenburg (GREY, pp. 69–70); his biographer, Roberts, who cites no authority, states that he retired to Lady Wentworth's seat at Toddington in Bedfordshire, and was then reported to have escaped to the continent from near Portsmouth (i. 148). He is said to have chivalrously offered to give himself up if he could thereby benefit Russell, who in the same spirit refused the offer (*Life of Russell*, ii. 25). Burnet (ii. 411) says that he was on the point of going beyond sea and engaging in the Spanish service when, 13 Oct., Halifax discovered his retreat, brought him a kindly message from the king, and with some difficulty persuaded him to write in return, craving the king's and the Duke of York's pardon, but protesting that all he had done had been to save his father. On 25 Oct. Charles II met Monmouth at Major Long's house in the city, and left him not unhopeful of mercy; at another interview on 4 Nov. he instructed Monmouth what to say to the Duke of York. Another letter, drafted like the former by Halifax, and couched in a tone of great humility towards the duke as well as the king, was accordingly signed by Monmouth on 15 Nov., and in a final interview at Secretary Jenkins's office on 24 Nov. Monmouth, in the presence of the Duke of York, revealed to the king all he knew concerning the conspiracy, naming those engaged in it, but denying all knowledge of the assassination project. He was then promised his pardon: 'The king acted his part well, and I too; the Duke of York seemed not ill-pleased' (ROBERTS, i. 152–62; COLLINS, iii. 376–8; WELWOOD, *Memoirs of Transactions before 1688*, 1700; *Life of James II*, i. 742–743; cf. *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 368; REREsby, pp. 286–7; LUTTRELL, i. 292). On the next day Monmouth was brought before the council and discharged from custody; his first visit was to the Duke of York, who took him to the king and queen (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* Rep. p. 101). The former sent him a present of 6,000*l.* (LUTTRELL, i. 293).

The king, however, ignored his promise to Monmouth (or what BURNET, ii. 411, states to have been such), announced his confession at the council, and even ordered the fact of it to be published in the 'Gazette.' To his great chagrin, Monmouth, whose pardon had now passed the great seal, was thus exposed to the imputation of having confirmed the evidence given at the trials of Russell and Sidney. The Duke of York still continuing urgent, the king, at Ormonde's advice, called upon Monmouth to write a letter acknowledging his 'confession of the plot' (BURNET, i. 413); he complied, but was so perturbed by what he had done, that on the following day he prevailed upon the king to return him his letter. At the same time the king banished him from the court ([SPRAT's] *True Account*, &c., 1685; cf. *Hist. MSS.*

Comm. 7th Rep. App. p. 368; cf. Reresby, p. 288).

After lodging for a time in Holborn and then at his country seat, Moor Park, near Rickmansworth, Monmouth, though subpœnaed on Hampden's trial, crossed from Greenwich to Zealand, where he arrived about January 1684 (Luttrell, i. 294–5, 298). It is at least open to question whether he was not acting under advice from court; he refused to go to Hungary into the emperor's service, because it 'would draw him too far off' (*Life of James II*, i. 744). In March, April, and May he was reported to be living in great splendour in Flanders and at Brussels, provided with a command, an income, the title of royal highness, and his plate from England (Luttrell, i. 303, 306; *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 499). In October he was living luxuriously as the guest of the Prince of Orange at Leyden and The Hague, and treated by him with marked respect (Luttrell, i. 318; cf. Macaulay and *Life of James II*, i. 744–5). Shortly before the death of Charles II, Monmouth paid a secret visit to England, apparently about the end of November 1684 (cf. *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. pp. 378–9); and it was believed that had the king lived a little longer he would have taken Monmouth back into favour. But Charles II died on 6 Feb. 1685, without recommending Monmouth with the rest of his natural children to his brother (Evelyn, ii. 444). Monmouth received the news with genuine grief.

He was immediately banished from the Spanish Netherlands, whither he had withdrawn (Luttrell, i. 333), having been dismissed by the Prince of Orange, so as to avoid a summons to give him up. According to Macaulay's authorities he pledged his word to the Prince and Princess of Orange to attempt nothing against the government of England, and was advised by the former to serve the emperor against the Turks. Burnet asserts (iii. 14–15) that he was prevented by those around him from adopting so inoffensive a course. He was accompanied to Brussels by Lady Wentworth, who now lived with him as his wife.

Monmouth had not engaged himself with the English and Scottish exiles before the death of Charles II. After the accession of James II he consented to see Sir Patrick Hume at Rotterdam, and discussed a concerted plan of action between the other exiles and Argyll. Monmouth was soon ready to co-operate, and to conciliate republican feeling by promising not to claim the crown except by the common consent of those concerned. Ferguson was once more busy, and an interview between Argyll and Monmouth ended in an agreement for simultaneous action in Scotland and England under their respective leadership (*Marchmont Papers*, iii. 7–15; Grey, p. 93). Meanwhile Monmouth had been carrying on a correspondence with England (Grey, pp. 94–5). According to Lord Grey, Monmouth and he determined to make the west the scene of the English rising, and to land at Lyme Regis about the beginning of May, while other risings were to follow in London and Cheshire (*ib.* pp. 99, 104–5). Though at the request of the English government the States-General consented to banish Argyll, Monmouth, and Ferguson, the preparations were carried on with the connivance of the Amsterdam authorities. The money for Monmouth's expedition was provided by pawning the jewels of the duke and his mistress, and by subscriptions from private friends, of whom Locke was one; none came from England or from public sources. On 2 May Argyll sailed, leaving behind Ferguson and Fletcher of Saltoun to share Monmouth's fortunes. Thus the Scottish enterprise forced the hand of the English. Monmouth embarked at Santfort unmolested on 24 May, and six days later joined his petty armada in the Texel. It consisted of a man-of-war, the Helderenbergh, and two tenders; on board were Lord Grey, Fletcher of Saltoun, Ferguson, a Brandenburg officer of the name of Buyse, with a few other gentlemen and men, including Monmouth, eighty-three in all (Macaulay; cf. Ferguson ap. Echard, iii. 756–7, and in *Ferguson the Plotter*, pp. 209–12; Burnet, iii. 26 *n.*) Bad weather kept Monmouth nineteen days at sea. As he passed the Dorsetshire coast, he sent Thomas Dare, who possessed great influence at Taunton, to announce his coming. On 11 June the expedition itself was off Lyme Regis, and in the evening Monmouth went ashore (Roberts, i. 220 seqq.) His declaration, composed by Ferguson, which was read in the market-place, claimed for him, as 'the now head and captain-general of the protestant forces of this kingdom,' a 'legitimate and legal' right to the crown, but distinctly promised to leave the determination of that right to a free parliament (Roberts, i. 235–50; cf. Echard, iii. 758–760). The declaration reached London on 13 June, and three days later a bill of attainder against him received the royal assent, while a price of 5,000*l.* was placed upon his head (Reresby, p. 332).

Four days were spent at Lyme, where Monmouth sojourned at the George Inn. Men came in fast, but though arms were landed for five thousand, they proved mostly

unsuitable (ECHARD, iii. 787). A brawl in which 'old Dare' was shot down by Fletcher obliged Monmouth to dismiss the latter, his best officer (*ib.* p. 762). His worst was Lord Grey, who on Sunday, 14 June, being detached to Bridport against a body of Dorsetshire militia, contrived to spoil what might have proved an effective success (*ib.* p. 763; cf. Fox, *History of James II*, 1808, pp. 239–240). On 15 June, having learnt that the Devonshire militia under Albemarle and the Somersetshire under Somerset were marching on Lyme, Monmouth set forth at the head of from two to three thousand men, and all but crossed Albemarle on his march. He did not venture an attack (cf. DALRYMPLE, 4th edit. i. 134, in censure), but encamped between Axminster and Chard. On 18 June he entered Taunton (cf. TOULMIN, *History of Taunton*, ed. Savage, p. 429). His reception here, including the presentation of colours by the 'maids of Taunton' (ROBERTS, i. 304), marks the climax of his undertaking. The number of his followers under arms had now increased to seven thousand men, and at his first council of war it was decided to continue the advance. On 20 June he was proclaimed king of England at Taunton market-cross, after which he assumed the royal style, both in a warrant for the impressing of scythes and in a letter to his 'cousin' Albemarle (ELLIS, *Original Letters*, 1st ser. iii. 340; cf. DALRYMPLE, i. 175), was prayed for, and touched for the evil. To avoid confusion, his followers called him 'King Monmouth,' an odd designation which long survived among the people (MACAULAY). A price was put upon the head of James II as a traitor, and the parliament at Westminster was declared a traitorous convention.

On Sunday, 21 June, leaving Taunton open to Albemarle, Monmouth moved on to Bridgwater, where he met with an enthusiastic reception, and was proclaimed king by the mayor. Thence he proceeded by Glastonbury to Shepton Mallet, where (23 June) he first communicated to his officers the project of an attack upon Bristol, where the Duke of Beaufort was about to assume the command of a garrison of four thousand men. The Avon was successfully crossed at Keynsham, but bad weather made a retrograde movement necessary, and after a slight skirmish with some king's horse, Monmouth, whether or not moved by Beaufort's threat to fire Bristol, decided to forego the attack upon that city, though it had been the object of his movements since leaving Lyme. He likewise rejected a scheme of marching by way of Gloucester into Shropshire and Cheshire, electing, in the hope of reinforcements, to make for Bath instead. But Bath refused to surrender (26 June); the promised Wiltshire regiments failed to appear, and Monmouth sent his chaplain, Hook, to London to hasten the rising of his friends (FERGUSON, p. 233). But he was losing heart, and appears to have been at times in a state of nervous prostration (WADE ap. ROBERTS, ii. 16–17). The engagement fought by his force at Philip's Norton against the advanced guard of the royal troops under his half-brother, the Duke of Grafton, was on the whole successful (27 June); but at Frome next day he received the news of Argyll's defeat, and relapsed into despondency (Fox, p. 256). Many of his followers deserted, and a suggestion (according to Wade Monmouth's own) was momentarily entertained that the duke and his original following should escape by sea to Holland (ECHARD, iii. 766). It was now reported that a large body of peasantry had risen in Monmouth's favour and flocked to Bridgwater. Hither accordingly his army marched from Frome. Bridgwater was reached 3 July, but the number of rustics assembled there was insignificant. Two days later the king's army under Feversham and Churchill, consisting of some two thousand regulars and fifteen hundred Wiltshire militia, encamped on Sedgemoor, about three miles off. From Bridgwater church tower Monmouth recognised the Dumbarton regiment, formerly commanded by himself; but the want of discipline in the royal army was thought encouraging. At 11 P.M. on Sunday, 5 July, Monmouth led his army without beat of drum by a circuitous route of nearly six miles to the North Moor, where about 1 A.M. they crossed two of the 'rhines' separating them from the royal army. A third, which had not been mentioned to Monmouth, stopped his progress immediately in face of the royal troops, and the battle began. About two thousand of Monmouth's troops, largely Taunton men, took part in it; the infantry led by himself behaved gallantly, but his horse under Lord Grey was easily dispersed. Whether or not urged by Grey, Monmouth rode off the field before the fighting was over, and left his soldiery to their fate. Half of them were cut to pieces (MACAULAY's note in ch. v.; *Hardwicke State Papers*, ii. 305–14; ECHARD, iii. 768–70, and *Ferguson the Plotter*, pp. 234–8).

Monmouth, Grey, and Buyse, with a party of about thirty horse, rode hard from the field of battle in the direction of the Bristol Channel, it is said to within twelve miles of Bristol. Rejecting the advice of Dr. Oliver, one of the party, to cross into Wales, Monmouth, Grey, and Buyse then turned south.

They slept in Mr. Strode's house at Downside, near Shepton Mallet, and then went on in the direction of the New Forest and Lymington. On Cranbourne Chase their horses failed, and disguising themselves as rustics they pursued their journey on foot, Grey soon separating from the others. Next day one of the search parties under Richard, lord Lumley, afterwards first earl of Scarborough [q. v.], and Sir William Portman (1641?–1690) [q. v.] came on Grey, and the day after (8 July) on Buyse, and not long afterwards, at 7 A.M., on Monmouth, hidden in a ditch. From Ringwood, whither he was taken with the other prisoners, Monmouth was carried under the guard of Colonel Legge, who had orders to stab him in case of disturbance, by Farnham and Guildford to Vauxhall, whence a barge conveyed him to the Tower. Hither his children had preceded him, voluntarily followed by their mother.

Monmouth, whose courage had collapsed at the actual time of his capture (DALRYMPLE, i. 141, and *n.*), before leaving Ringwood addressed to the king a letter (published at the time, and repr. in *Life of James II*, pp. 32–3; ECHARD, iii. 771, &c.), in which, with many servile protestations of remorse, he entreated an interview in order to give to the king information of the utmost importance. This possibly reckless assertion has been variously interpreted to have referred to the Prince of Orange (cf. DALRYMPLE, u.s.) and to Sunderland (cf. MACPHERSON, *Original Papers*, i. 146; *Life of James II*, ii. 34–6; FOX, p. 269). Monmouth also wrote from Ringwood to the queen dowager and to Rochester (ELLIS, *Original Letters*, 1st ser. iii. 343; *Clarendon Correspondence*, ed. Singer, i. 143). James II granted the interview demanded, and it took place on the afternoon of the day of the prisoner's arrival, at Chiffinch's lodgings (*Lives of the Norths*, ii. 6 *n.*) Monmouth seems to have striven to exaggerate the humiliation of his position. The king's account of the interview (*Life*, ii. 36 seqq.), though devoid of generosity, bears the aspect of truth; it seems to imply, in accordance with the statement of Burnet (iii. 53), that already on this occasion Monmouth offered to become a catholic. He was reminded by Dartmouth that his having declared himself king left him no hope of pardon, and the act of attainder previously passed against him made any trial unnecessary. His execution was fixed for the next day but one after his committal to the Tower. His appeal to the king for a short respite, even of a day, was refused (ELLIS, *Original Letters*, 1st ser. iii. 346; *Clarendon Correspondence*, i. 144–5). It was dated 12 July, and advised the king to send troops into Cheshire (see *Original Letters of the Duke of Monmouth*, in the Bodleian Library, edited by Sir George Duckett for the Camden Society, 1879). To the bishops, Turner and Ken, who visited him, while seeking to avoid discussion of his political conduct, he spoke with sorrow of the bloodshed it had occasioned (BURNET, iii. 53–5); and, probably for his children's sake, declared in writing that Charles II had often in private denied to him the truth of the report as to the marriage with his mother, as well as that the title of king had been forced upon himself. On the other hand he refused to avow regret for his connection with Lady Wentworth, which he maintained to be morally blameless. Under these circumstances the bishops felt unable to administer the sacrament to him (EVELYN, ii. 471). He was more yielding towards Tenison, then vicar of St. Martin's, who at his request attended him early on the day of his death, but he too withheld the sacrament. On the same morning (Wednesday, 15 July) Monmouth took leave of his children and their mother (ROBERTS, ii. 132–134; DALRYMPLE, i. 144; *Sidney Correspondence*, i. 4 *n.*, 26 and *n.*; BURNET, i. 479; *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. pp. 264, 265, 268, 285). On the scaffold he avowed himself a member of the church of England, but declined specifically to profess the doctrine of non-resistance or to utter a 'public and particular' condemnation of his rebellion. He attempted once more to vindicate his relation with Lady Wentworth; after some hesitation responded by an 'Amen' to a repeated invitation to join in a prayer for the king; refused to make a dying speech, and died with perfect dignity, though the executioner (John Ketch) bungled his work. According to a trustworthy eye-witness, he struck the duke five blows and 'severed not his head from his body till he cut it off with his knife' (*Verney MSS.*) His remains were buried under the communion-table of St. Peter's Church in the Tower (MACAULAY; *Somers Tracts*, i. 216; cf. TOULMIN, pp. 493, 500; PLUMPTRE, *Life of Ken*, i. 217 seqq.) The abstract of his speech on the scaffold published by his partisans seems fiction.

The duke had by his wife four sons and two daughters. One of the latter died in the Tower in August 1685. Of the sons, James, earl of Dalkeith, and Henry, created earl of Deloraine in 1706, survived their father. The latter is noticed separately. James, the elder son (1674–1705), married in 1693 Henrietta, daughter of Laurence Hyde, first earl of Rochester [q. v.]; he was buried in Westminster Abbey in March 1705,

leaving a son Francis (*d.* 1751), who succeeded his grandmother (Monmouth's widow) as second duke of Buccleuch, and was grandfather of Henry Scott, third duke of Buccleuch [q. v.] Monmouth's widow became on 6 May 1688 the wife of Charles, third lord Cornwallis (Collins); she was much beloved by Queen Caroline when Princess of Wales (see Lady Cowper, *Diary*, 1716, p. 125), and died, aged 81, on 6 Feb. 1731–2. In the spring of 1686 Lady Wentworth died at Toddington Manor, in an old plan of which two adjoining rooms are stated to be called 'the Duke of Monmouth's parlour' and 'my lady's parlour' (Lysons, *Magna Britannia*, i. 143).

Macaulay has collected proofs of the attachment of the west-country people to Monmouth's name, and of the credulity with which it was intermixed (see also Ellis, *Correspondence* (1829), i. 87–8, 177). The popular instinct rightly recognised the significance of the cause which he so imperfectly represented; but he had in him many popular qualities and some genuine generosity of spirit. His personal beauty and graces, his fondness for popular sports, especially racing, which he loved as a true son of his father, and his bravery in war, were his chief recommendations to general goodwill; his intellect seems to have been feeble. But he was brought to ruin by his moral defects, reckless 'ambition and want of principle' (Evelyn, ii. 471).

The National Portrait Gallery contains two portraits of him, one by Sir Peter Lely, the other by his pupil, W. Wissing, who drew Monmouth several times. His house in Soho Square, which suggested the watchword 'Soho' on the night of the march to Sedgemoor, was pulled down in 1773, his name surviving, not very creditably, in that of the neighbouring Monmouth Street (Walford, *Old and New London*, iii. 186–7).

[G. Roberts's Life, Progresses, and Rebellion of James, Duke of Monmouth (2 vols., 1844), is a biography of rare industry and completeness, though occasionally deficient in vigour of judgment. There is also a life of Monmouth in Collins's Peerage of England (5th ed.), iii. 365–387. The Historical Account of the Heroick Life and Magnanimous Actions of the Duke of Monmouth, &c., is a partisan panegyric, published in 1683. The other authorities are cited above.] A. W. W.

SCOTT, JAMES, D.D. (1733–1814), political writer, son of James Scott, incumbent of Trinity Church, Leeds, and vicar of Bardsey, Yorkshire, by Annabella, daughter of Henry, fifth son of Tobias Wickham, dean of York, was born at Leeds in 1733. He was educated at Bradford grammar school, St. Catharine Hall and Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1757, proceeded M.A. in 1760, B.D. in 1768, and D.D. in 1775. He was thrice successful in the competition for the Seatonian prize, was elected fellow of Trinity College in 1758, and was a frequent and admired preacher at St. Mary's between 1760 and 1764. He was lecturer at St. John's, Leeds, between 1758 and 1769, and curate of Edmonton between 1760 and 1761. In 1765, under the inspiration of Lord Sandwich and the pseudonym of 'Anti-Sejanus,' he contributed to the 'Public Advertiser' a series of animated diatribes against Lord Bute, which were reprinted in 1767 in 'A Collection of Interesting Letters.' He was also the author of the pieces signed 'Philanglia' which appear in the same collection, and of others published with the signature of 'Old Slyboots' in 1769, and collected in 'Fugitive Political Essays,' London, 1770, 8vo. In 1771, through Lord Sandwich's interest, he was presented to the rectory of Simonburn, Northumberland, where he spent twenty years and 10,000*l.* in endeavouring to get in his tithes. Worsted at law, some of his parishioners at length made a determined attempt on his life, upon which he removed to London, where he died on 10 Dec. 1814. By his wife Anne, daughter of Henry Scott, who survived him, he left no issue.

Besides his political *jeux d'esprit* and his Seatonian poems, 'Heaven,' 'Purity of Heart: a Moral Epistle,' and 'An Hymn to Repentance' (Cambridge, 1760–3, 4to), Scott was author of: 1. 'Odes on Several Subjects,' London, 1761, 4to. 2. 'The Redemption: a Monody,' Cambridge, 1763–4. 3. 'Every Man the Architect of his own Fortune, or the Art of Rising in the Church,' a satire, London, 1763, 4to; and 4. 'Sermons on Interesting Subjects' (posthumously with his 'Life' by Samuel Clapham), London, 1816, 8vo.

[Thoresby's Ducat. Leod. ed. Whitaker, i. 68; James's Bradford, pp. 245, 435; Grad. Cant.; Gent. Mag. 1814 ii. 601, 1816 ii. 527; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. ix. 125, 724; Illustr. Lit. vii. 450; Walpole's Mem. Geo. III, ed. Russell Barker, ii. 191.] J. M. R.

SCOTT, Sir JAMES (1790?–1872), admiral, son of Thomas Scott of Glenluce in Wigtownshire, and of Ham Common in Middlesex, a cadet of the Scotts of Raeburn, was born in London on 18 June, probably in 1790. He entered the navy in August 1803 on board the Phaeton, with Captain, afterwards Sir George Cockburn (1772–1853) [q. v.], and served in her for two years on the East India station. In February 1806

he joined the Blanche with Captain Lavie, and was present at the capture of the French frigate Guerrière near the Färoe Islands on 19 July. In September 1806 he was entered on board the Captain, again with Cockburn; and in July 1807 in the Achille, with Sir Richard King. In April 1808 he rejoined Cockburn in the Pompée, and in her went out to the West Indies, where, in February 1809, he took part in the reduction of Martinique. He came home with Cockburn in the Belle-Isle, and under him commanded a gunboat in the reduction of Flushing in July and August. On 16 Nov. 1809 he was promoted to be lieutenant of La Flèche, in the North Sea, and was in her when she was wrecked off the mouth of the Elbe on 24 May 1810. In July he was appointed to the Barfleur on the Lisbon station, and in October was moved into the Myrtle, in which he served at the siege of Cadiz, and afterwards on the west coast of Africa till April 1812. He was then appointed to the Grampus, again with Cockburn, whom in August he followed to the Marlborough. In November that ship went out to the coast of North America, where Cockburn, with his flag in the Marlborough, and afterwards in the Sceptre and Albion, had command of the operations in the Chesapeake. Scott, closely following the admiral, was constantly employed in landing parties and cutting-out expeditions; and acted as the admiral's aide-de-camp at Bladensburg, Washington, and Baltimore. In consequence of Cockburn's very strong recommendation, Scott was promoted to be commander on 19 Oct. 1814.

In May 1824 he commanded the Meteor bomb in the demonstration against Algiers [see Neale, Sir Harry Burrard], and in the following November was appointed to the Harlequin in the West Indies. He was promoted to be captain on 8 Jan. 1828. From 1834 to 1836 he commanded the President in the West Indies, as flag-captain to Cockburn; and from 1837 to 1840 the President again, in the Pacific, as flag-captain to Rear-admiral Ross. In 1840–1 he commanded the Samarang on the China station, and had an active and important share in the several operations in the Canton river, leading up to the capitulation of Canton. He was nominated a C.B. on 29 June 1841. He had no further service, but was promoted in due course to be rear-admiral on 26 Dec. 1854, vice-admiral on 4 June 1861, and admiral on 10 Feb. 1865. On 10 Nov. 1862 he was nominated a K.C.B. In accordance with the terms of the orders in council of 24 March 1866, as he had never hoisted his flag, he was put on the retired list. Against this and the retrospective action of the order he protested in vain. He died at Cheltenham on 2 March 1872. He married in 1819 Caroline Anne, only child of Richard Donovan of Tibberton Court, Gloucestershire, and had issue one son.

[O'Byrne's Nav. Biogr. Dict.; Memorandum of Services, drawn up in 1846, and printed, with remarks, in 1866, in the intention (afterwards postponed indefinitely) of bringing his case before the House of Commons; Times, 9 March 1872; information from the family; cf. art. Nias, Sir Joseph.] J. K. L.

SCOTT, JAMES ROBERT HOPE- (1812–1873), parliamentary barrister. [See Hope-Scott.]

SCOTT, Sir JAMES SIBBALD DAVID (1814–1885), bart., of Dunninald, Forfarshire, antiquary, born on 14 June 1814, was eldest son of Sir David Scott of Egham, nephew and successor of Sir James Sibbald of the East India Company's service, who was created a baronet in 1806. The mother of Sir Sibbald Scott was Caroline, daughter of Benjamin Grindall, a descendant of Elizabeth's archbishop.

He graduated B.A. in 1835 from Christ Church, Oxford, was a captain in the royal Sussex militia artillery from 21 April 1846 to 22 Jan. 1856, succeeded to the baronetcy in 1851, was J.P. and D.L. for Sussex and Middlesex. He was a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries, and an active member of the Royal Archæological Institute. Various contributions from him are to be found in volumes xxx–xxxiii. and xxxix. of its journal.

His chief work was 'The British Army: its Origin, Progress, and Equipment,' a storehouse of information on military matters, copiously illustrated. The first two volumes were published in 1868, and a third volume in 1880, bringing down the record from the restoration to the revolution of 1688.

In the summer of 1874 he paid a short visit to Jamaica, and his diary was published in 1876 under the title 'To Jamaica and Back.' It contains a sketch of the military and naval history of the island, and describes in some detail the outbreak of 1865.

He died on 28 June 1885 at Upper Norwood. His wife, whom he married on 28 Nov. 1844, is noticed separately [see Scott, Harriet Anne]. By her he had three sons and four daughters.

[Burke's Baronetage; Times Obituary, 30 June 1885.] E. M. L.

SCOTT or SCOT, JOHN (*fl.* 1530), printer in London, may, as Herbert suggests, have been an apprentice of Wynkyn de

Worde. His first book, 'The Body of Policie,' was issued in May 1521, when he was living 'in St. Pulker's parisshe without Newgate.' It is clear that about this time, besides printing books in his own name, he printed some for Wynkyn de Worde. In 1528 he was printing in St. Paul's Churchyard, and eight books are known bearing this address, though only two are dated. In 1537 he had removed to 'Fauster' Lane in St. Leonard's parish, where he printed six books, among them being the ballad of the battle of Agincourt and the still more celebrated ballad of the 'Nutbrowne Maid.' He also was for a time living 'at George Alley gate' in St. Botolph's parish, but the only book known printed at at this place is undated. At the present time twenty-five books are known to have been issued by this printer, all of them being of extreme rarity. His disappearance in 1537 and the appearance of another printer of the same name at Edinburgh in 1539 have led to their being often mistaken for the same man, but the characteristics of their work show that the two printers are distinct [see SCOTT or SCOT, JOHN, *fl.* 1550].

[Herbert's Typogr. Antiq. i. 317–18.]
E. G. D.

SCOTT or SCOT, JOHN (*fl.* 1550), printer in Scotland, has been considered by many writers as identical with the John Scott or Scot (*fl.* 1530) [q.v.] who printed in London. Though one or two coincidences lend a certain appearance of probability to this theory, there is now little doubt that the two men are distinct. The Scottish printer appeared in Edinburgh in 1539, when he obtained a grant of some rooms in the Cowgate, but for some time after we hear nothing of him as a printer. In 1547 he was in Dundee, for letters were issued in that year to John Scrymgeour, constable of Dundee, ordering his arrest, though for what offence is not stated. In 1552 Scot's first dated book was issued, the catechism of Archbishop Hamilton. This was printed at St. Andrews, doubtless in order that the work might be done under the personal superintendence of the archbishop. For a few years Scot worked on steadily at St. Andrews and Edinburgh; but in 1562, while printing the 'Last Blast of the Trumpet' by Ninian Winzet [q. v.], the Roman catholic schoolmaster of Linlithgow, a raid was made upon his office by the magistrates of Edinburgh, the book seized, and the printer dragged off to prison. His printing materials seem also to have been impounded and given two years afterwards to Thomas Bassandyne, another printer. By some means they seem to have found their way again into Scot's hands, for in 1568 he printed an edition of the works of Sir David Lindsay of the Mount, at the expense of Henry Charteris, an Edinburgh merchant. This was followed by another edition of the same work in 1571, the last dated book printed by Scot. Altogether twelve books are known by this printer, but there is no doubt that he produced many more which have disappeared. Their ephemeral nature and strong controversial tendency favoured their destruction.

[Edmond and Dickson's Annals of Scottish Printing, pp. 150–97.] E. G. D.

SCOTT or SCOT, SIR JOHN (1585–1670), of Scotstarvet, or more properly Scotstarver, Scottish lawyer and statesman, was the only son of Robert Scot the younger of Knights-Spottie in Perthshire, representative in the male line of the Scots of Buccleuch. Robert Scot succeeded to the office of director of chancery on the resignation of his father, Robert Scot the elder of Knights-Spottie, but, falling into bad health, resigned the office in 1582 in favour of his father, its former holder. Robert Scot the elder in 1592 again resigned the office to a kinsman, William Scot of Ardross, on condition that his grandson, John Scot, the subject of this article, should succeed to it on attaining majority, which he did in 1606. The directorship of chancery, which had been long in the Scot family, was an office of importance and emolument; for though the Scottish chancery did not become, as in England, a separate court, it framed and issued crown charters, brieves, and other crown writs. The possession, loss, and efforts to regain this office played a large part in the career of Sir John. He was educated at St. Leonard's College, St. Andrews, which he appears to have entered in 1600, for he describes himself in the register of 1603 as in his third year. After leaving St. Andrews he went abroad to study, and on his return was called to the bar in 1606. In 1611 he acquired Tarvet and other lands in Fife, to which he gave the name of Scotstarvet, and six years later he was knighted and made a privy councillor by James VI, in whose honour he published a Latin poem, 'Hodœporicon in serenissimi et invictissimi Principis Jacobi Sexti ex Scotiâ suâ discessum.'

In 1619 he had a license to go for a year to Flanders and other parts (*P. C. Reg.* xii. 787). In 1620 he endowed the professorship of humanity or Latin in the university of St. Andrews, in spite of the opposition of the regents of St. Salvator, the first of many acts of liberality to learning. He did

not practise much, if at all, at the bar, but recommended himself to Charles I by a suggestion for increasing the revenue by altering the law of feudal tenure. He became in 1629 an extraordinary, and in 1632 an ordinary, lord of session under the title of Scotstarvet. He was one of many Scottish lawyers and lairds who accepted the covenant, which he subscribed at his parish kirk of Ceres on 30 April 1638, and in the following November he declined to sign the king's confession. In 1640 he served on the committee of the estates for the defence of the country. In 1641 he was, with consent of the estates, reappointed judge by a new commission. During the war between England and Scotland he served on the war committee in 1648 and 1649. During the Commonwealth he lost the office both of judge and director of chancery. He made many appeals to be restored to the latter as an administrative, and not a judicial, office; but, although he obtained an opinion in his favour by the commissioners of the great seal, Cromwell gave it in 1652 to Jeffrey the quaker, who held it till the Restoration. Scot, through Monck, again appealed to Cromwell for the reversion of the office if Jeffrey died. Cromwell fined him 1,500*l.* in 1654 for his part in the war. But his later correspondence with Cromwell did not improve his character with the royalists, and on the Restoration he was fined 500*l.*, and was not restored to the office of judge or that of director of chancery, which was conferred on Sir William Ker, who, he indignantly said, 'danced him out of it, being a dextrous dancer.' Sir James Balfour well describes Scot's public character in a few words: 'He was a busy man in troubled times.' But in spite of his misfortunes, Scot did not cease to be busy when peace came. He returned to Scotstarvet, where he engaged in literary work and correspondence. There he died in 1670.

Scot was thrice married: first, to Anne, sister of William Drummond [q. v.] of Hawthornden, the poet, by whom he had two sons and seven daughters; secondly, to Margaret, daughter of Sir James Melville of Hallhill; and thirdly, to Margaret Monpenny of Pitmilly, widow of Rigg of Aitherny, by each of whom he had one son. The son by his second wife, George Scott (*d.* 1685), is separately noticed. Sir John's male descendants became extinct in the person of Major-general John Scot, M.P. for Fife, his great-great-grandson, who, at his death on 24 Jan. 1776, was reputed the richest commoner in Scotland. The general's fortune passed chiefly to his eldest daughter, who married the Duke of Portland, but the estate of Scotstarvet was sold to Wemyss of Wemyss Hall. Its tower, which Sir John built, still stands, and the inscription, with his initials and those of his first wife, Anne Drummond, as the builders, and its date (1627) are carved on a stone over the door.

Scot consoled himself for his disappointment in losing office by composing 'The Staggering State of Scottish Statesman between 1550 and 1650.' In it he endeavoured to show the mean arts and hapless fate of all those who secured offices, but it was not published until a hundred years after his death (Edinburgh, 1754, 8vo), so can only have been a private solace to himself and a few friends for whom manuscript copies were made. A more honourable resource was the public spirit which led him to devote the most of his time and a large part of his fortune to the advancement of learning and the credit of his country in the republic of letters. The tower of Scotstarvet became a kind of college, where he attracted round him the learned Scotsmen of the time, and corresponded with the scholars of Holland, Caspar Barlæus, Isaac Gruterus, and others. In it his brother-in-law Drummond composed his 'History of the Jameses' and the macaronic comic poem 'Polemo-Middinia,' which had its occasion in a dispute of long standing as to a right of way between the tenants of Scotstarvet and of Barns, the estate of Sir Alexander Cunningham, whose sister was Drummond's betrothed. His intimacy with John Bleau of Amsterdam led to the inclusion of a Scottish volume in the series of 'Delitiæ Poetarum' then being issued by that enterprising publisher. The Scottish volume, edited by Arthur Johnston [q. v.], and printed at the sole cost of Sir John Scot in two closely printed duodecimo volumes, has preserved the last fruits of Scottish latinity. A more important work was the publication of detailed maps of Scotland in the great atlas of Bleau. Scot had continued at his own expense the survey of Scotland begun in 1608 by Timothy Pont [q. v.], purchased his drawings after his death in 1630, and after getting them revised by Sir Robert Gordon of Straloch and his son, James Gordon, parson of Rothiemay, went himself in 1645 to Amsterdam to superintend their publication, dictating from memory, to the astonishment of the publisher, the description of several districts. It was not finally issued till 1654, when it appeared as 'Geographiæ Bleauaniæ volumen sextum,' with dedicatory epistles to Scot as its real author both by Bleau and Gordon of Straloch. Other examples of Scot's liberal and judicious public

spirit were the establishment of the St. Andrews professorship of Latin and his endowment of a charity for apprenticing poor boys from Glasgow at the estate of Peskie, a farm of 104 acres, near St. Andrews.

[The Staggering State of Scots Statesman; Sir John Scot's Manuscript Letters in Advocates' Library; Register of Privy Council of Scotland, vol. xii. pp. cx, 716–18; Preface to Delitiæ Poetarum Scotorum, and Bleau's Atlas of Scotland; Balfour's Annals; Baillie's Letters; Brunton and Haig's Senators of College of Justice; Memoir of Sir John Scot by Rev. C. Rogers; Preface to reprint of The Staggering State, Edinburgh, 1872.] Æ. M.

SCOTT, JOHN (1639–1695), divine, born in 1639, was son of Thomas Scott, a grazier of Chippenham, Wiltshire, and served as a boy a three years' apprenticeship in London. Then altering his course of life, he matriculated at New Inn Hall, Oxford, 13 Dec. 1658. He took no degree at the time, but later in life proceeded B.D. and D.D. (9 July 1685). He became successively minister of St. Thomas's, Southwark, perpetual curate of Trinity in the Minories (before November 1678, Newcourt, *Repertorium*, i. 920), rector of St. Peter-le-Poor, 1 Feb. 1678 (resigned before August 1691; *ib.* i. 529), and rector of St. Giles-in-the-Fields, being presented to the last benefice by the king, 7 Aug. 1691 (Newcourt, *Repertorium*, i. 613). He was buried in the rector's vault in St. Giles's Church in 1695. He held a canonry of St. Paul's from 1685 till his death, but was never canon of Windsor, as stated by Wood. An engraved portrait of Scott by Vandergucht is prefixed to 'Certain Cases of Conscience,' 1718, and another, by R. White, to his 'Discourses,' 1701.

Besides twelve sermons published separately and preached on public occasions (all in the British Museum; cf. Wood, *Athenæ Oxon.* iv. 415), Scott wrote: 1. 'The Christian Life from its beginning to its Consummation in Glory . . . with directions for private devotion and forms of prayer fitted to the several states of Christians,' pts. i. and ii., London, 1681, 8vo; 2nd ed. 1683–1686, 8vo; 6th ed. London, 1704, 8vo; 9th ed. 1712, 8vo; 9th ed. [*sic*] 1729–30, fol.; in French, Amsterdam, 1699, 12mo, 2 parts; in Welsh, London, 1752, 8vo. 2. 'Certain Cases of Conscience concerning the Lawfulness of Joyning with Forms of Prayer in Publick Worship,' 1683, 4to; 1685, 4to (as 'A Collection of Cases and other Discourses'), 2 vols. 1694, fol.; 1718, 2 vols. In reply to this appeared 'An Answer to Dr. Scot's Case against Dissenters concerning Forms of Prayer and the Fallacy of the Story of Common plainly discovered,' 1700, 4to, 3. 'The Eighth Note of the Church Examined, viz. Sanctity of Doctrine' (in 'The Notes of the Church as laid down by Cardinal Bellarmin Examined and Confuted'), London, 1688, 4to; 1839, 8vo; and in Gibson's 'Preservative against Popery,' 1738, vol. i., 1848, vol. iii. 4. 'The texts examined which papists cite out of the Bible for the proof of their doctrine and for prayers in an unknown tongue,' 1688, 4to; and in Gibson's 'Preservative against Popery,' 1738, fol.; 1848, 8vo, vol. vii. 5. 'Practical Discourses upon Several Subjects,' 2 vols. London, 1697–8, 8vo (vol. ii. with a separate title-page and with dedication signed by Humphrey Zouch).

Scott wrote a preface for the second edition of J. March's sermons, 1699, 8vo, and his 'Works,' with the funeral sermon preached at his death by Zacheus Isham [q. v.], were collected in 1718 (London, fol. 2 vols.; Oxford, 1826, 8vo, 6 vols.) In the 'Devout Christian's Companion,' 1708, 12mo; 1722, 12mo, are 'private devotions by J. S[cott],' and some quotations from his book are given in P. Limborch's 'Book of Divinity' and other devotional works.

[Le Neve's Fasti; Newcourt's Repertorium; Wood's Athenæ Oxon.; Abr. Hill's Letters, p. 135; Isham's Funeral Sermon, 1695; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Hist. MSS. Comm. 12th Rep. v. 140; the bibliography of most of Scott's works is difficult.] W. A. S.

SCOTT, JOHN (*fl.* 1654–1696), adventurer, first appeared on Long Island, New Netherlands, in 1654, when he was arrested by the Dutch authorities for treasonable practice with the neighbouring English. He represented himself as a disreputable boy who had got into trouble by annoying the parliamentary soldiers, and who had been transported to the plantations. In 1663 he was acting in England in conjunction with a number of respectable and influential New-Englanders, and with them petitioning the government to confirm a purchase of land made by them from the Narragansett Indians and disputed by the inhabitants of Rhode Island. Soon after he writes from Hartford, New England, denouncing the Dutch as intruders on Long Island. After the conquest of New Netherlands, he persuaded some of the English settlers on Long Island to form a provisional government pending a settlement by the Duke of York, with Scott himself for president, and he made some ineffectual attempts to exercise authority over the Dutch settlements on Long Island. In 1664 he was imprisoned by the government of Connecticut, and in the next year he en-

gaged in a dispute with them as to the proprietary rights over certain lands on Long Island. Soon after Richard Nicolls, governor of New York, denounced Scott as 'born to work mischief,' and as having brought about the dismemberment of New York through the grant to Berkeley and Carteret of the lands on the Delaware. In 1667 he told Williamson, Arlington's secretary, a string of lies about New England. According to him, the antinomian disturbances in Massachusetts were caused by Sir Henry Vane and his two mistresses, Mrs. Hutchinson and Mrs. Dyer.

About this time Scott succeeded in imposing on an unhappy widow, Dorothea Gotherson, a landholder on Long Island. Her maiden name was Scott, and John Scott seems to have persuaded her that they were akin, and to have swindled her out of a large sum. He then returned to London. In 1677 he made common cause with Titus Oates, and charged Pepys and his colleague, Sir Anthony Deane, with betraying the secrets of the admiralty to the French, a charge which was no doubt intended to strike at Pepys's superior, the Duke of York. Pepys and Deane were committed for trial. Fortunately an inquiry into Scott's character disclosed so many iniquities—not only the frauds connected with land already mentioned, but also kidnapping and theft of jewels—that the prosecution was abandoned. Among Scott's other crimes, he is said to have swindled the Dutch government out of 7,000*l.*, and to have been hanged in effigy at the Hague, an honour which he also enjoyed at the hands of his regiment, whose cashbox he carried off. He likewise offered the French court information which should enable them to destroy our fleet. In this case, however, it is said that he played the part of a double traitor, since the information was worthless. In 1681 he killed a hackney coachman and fled the kingdom, but was seen again in a seaman's disguise and reported to Pepys in 1696. After this we hear no more of him.

[State Papers (Col. Ser.), ed. Sainsbury; Brodhead's History of New York; Scott's Dorothea Scott; Pepys's Diary.] J. A. D.

SCOTT, JOHN (1730–1783), quaker poet, youngest son of Samuel Scott, a quaker linendraper, by his wife, Martha Wilkins, was born in the Grange Walk, Bermondsey, on 9 Jan. 1730. At seven he commenced Latin under John Clarke, a Scottish schoolmaster of Bermondsey; but his father's removal to Amwell, Hertfordshire, in 1740 interrupted his education. He developed a taste for poetry, and wrote verses in the 'Gentleman's Magazine' between 1753 and 1758. After 1760 he paid occasional visits to London, and made the acquaintance of John Hoole [q. v.], who introduced him to Dr. Johnson. In November 1770 he took a house at Amwell, frequented Mrs. Montagu's parties, and made many literary friends. Among them was Dr. Beattie, in whose defence Scott afterwards wrote letters to the 'Gentleman's Magazine' (March 1778). Dr. Johnson, who visited Scott at Amwell, wrote that he 'loved' Scott. Scott published in 1776 his descriptive poem, 'Amwell' (2nd edit. 1776, 4to; reprinted Dublin, 1776). His 'Poetical Works' (London, 1782, 8vo; reprinted 1786 and 1795) were attacked by the 'Critical Review' (July 1782, p. 47), and Scott ill-advisedly defended himself in 'A Letter to the Critical Reviewers,' London, 1782, 8vo. He next collected his 'Critical Essays;' but before they were published he died at his house at Ratcliff, 12 Dec. 1783, and was buried at the Friends' burial-ground there. In 1767 he married Sarah Frogley, the daughter of a self-educated bricklayer, to whom he owed his first introduction to the poets. She died a year later with her infant, and Scott wrote an 'Elegie' (London, 1769, 4to; 2nd edit. 1769). By his second wife, Mary, daughter of Abraham de Horne, Scott left one daughter, Maria de Horne Scott, aged six at his death.

Johnson consented to write a sketch of Scott's life to accompany the 'Essays;' but, his death intervening, it was undertaken by Hoole, and published in 1785. A portrait by Townsend, engraved by J. Hall, which is prefixed, is said to be inexact.

Scott's verses were appreciated by his contemporaries. Besides the works mentioned he wrote: 1. 'Four Elegies, descriptive and moral,' 4to, 1760. 2. 'Observations on the State of the Parochial and Vagrant Poor,' 1773, 8vo. 3. 'Remarks on the Patriot' [by Dr. Johnson], 1775, 8vo. 4. 'Digests of the General Highway and Turnpike Laws,' &c., London, 1778, 8vo. 5. 'Four Moral Eclogues,' London, 1778, 4to; reprinted in the 'Cabinet of Poetry,' 1808. His collected poetical works and life, the latter based upon Hoole's, are included in the series of 'British Poets' by Anderson, Chalmers, Campbell, Davenport Park, and Sanford.

SAMUEL SCOTT (1719–1788), elder brother of the above, born in Gracechurch Street, London, on 21 May 1719, settled at Hertford and became a quaker minister. Of sober temperament, inclined to melancholy, he was deeply read in the writings of William Law [q. v.], Francis Okely [q. v.], and other mystics. He published a 'Memoir of the

Last Illness' of his brother (n.d.), and died on 20 Nov. 1788. His 'Diary,' edited by Richard Phillips, was published, London, 1809, 12mo (2nd edit. 1811; reprinted in Philadelphia, and in vol. ix. of Evans's 'Friends' Library,' Philadelphia, 1845). One of his sermons is in 'Sermons or Declarations,' York, 1824.

[Memoir by Hoole in Critical Essays, 1785; Mem. of the last illness, &c., by his brother, Samuel Scott; European Mag. September 1782, pp. 193–7; Gent. Mag. December 1783, p. 1066; Boswell's Johnson, ed. Hill, ii. 338, 351; Monthly Review, July 1787, p. 25; Chalmers's Biogr. Dict.; Cussans's Hist. of Hertfordshire, vol. ii. 'Hundred of Hertford,' p. 119; Clutterbuck's Hist. of Hertfordshire, ii. 20, 76; Nichols's Lit. Illustr. vol. v., 'Letters of Joseph Cockfield,' passim; Pratt's Cabinet of Poetry, vol. vi. pp. 11–100; Forbes's Life of Beattie, ii. 107–12, 122–6; Friends' Biogr. Cat. pp. 587–96.] C. F. S.

SCOTT, JOHN, Earl of Clonmell (1739–1798), chief justice of the king's bench in Ireland, born on 8 June 1739, was the son of Thomas Scott of Urlings, co. Kilkenny, afterwards of Modeshill and Mohubber, co. Tipperary, and Rachel, eldest daughter of Mark Prim of Johnswell, co. Kilkenny. Another account makes Thomas of Mohubber his elder brother, and gives as his father Michael Scott, and his mother a daughter of Michael Purcell, titular baron of Loughmore (cf. Burke, *Peerage*; Fitzpatrick, *Ireland before the Union*, p. 206). Both accounts, however, agree that his grandfather, the founder of the family, was a captain in King William's army and was killed during the wars in Ireland. After receiving an elementary education, probably at Clonmel school, where he contracted a friendship with Hugh Carleton, afterwards Viscount Carleton and chief justice of the common pleas, Scott was enabled through the generosity of Carleton's father, known from his opulence as 'King of Cork,' to enter Trinity College, Dublin, on 26 April 1756, and subsequently to pursue his studies at the Middle Temple. He never forgot the kindness thus shown to him, and afterwards, when Carleton's bankruptcy threatened to impair his son's prospects, he repaid his obligations in as generous a fashion as his position allowed. Still it was noticeable that even at this time his unblushing effrontery, coupled with his somewhat bronzed visage, gained for him the sobriquet, which stuck to him through life, of 'Copper-faced Jack.' He was called to the Irish bar in 1765, and his diligence and aptitude for business soon procured him a considerable practice. In 1767 he married the widow of Philip Roe, a daughter of Thomas Mathew of Thomastown, who, in addition to her personal attractions, possessed an annual income of 300*l*.

At this time the dominant star in the Irish political firmament was that of Dr. Charles Lucas [q. v.], and among Lucas's professed followers there was none more devoted than Scott. He is said to have taken a very active part on the popular side at one of the early college elections, and in 1769 he was himself elected M.P. for the borough of Mullingar. His ability and determination to rise attracted the attention of the lord chancellor, Lord Lifford, and, at his suggestion, Lord Townshend threw out to him the bait of office. The bait was swallowed with the cynical remark, 'My lord, you have spoiled a good patriot.' In the following year he obtained his silk gown, and in 1772 was appointed to the lucrative post of counsel to the revenue board. So far as government was concerned the bargain was not a bad one. Night after night, with a courage and versatility which none could gainsay, he withstood the attacks on administration of Flood and the 'patriots' at a time when those attacks were most violent and pertinacious. His services did not pass unrewarded. In December 1774 he succeeded Godfrey Lill as solicitor-general, and on the death of Philip Tisdall [q. v.] he became attorney-general on 1 Nov. 1777, and a privy councillor. Shortly after his promotion, it is said that, encountering Flood in front of the House of Commons at the beginning of the session, he addressed him, 'Well, Flood, I suppose you will be abusing me this session, as usual?' 'When I began to abuse you,' replied Flood, 'you were a briefless barrister; by abuse I made you counsel to the revenue; by abuse I got you a silk gown; by abuse I made you solicitor-general; by abuse I made you attorney-general, by abuse I may make you chief-justice. No, Scott, I'll praise you.' Scott, however, had his revenge during the debate on the perpetual mutiny bill in November 1781, and the inimitable way in which he related his parable of 'Harry Plantagenet' (*Parl. Register*, i. 123), while it convulsed the house with laughter, must have wounded Flood deeply. 'The character,' wrote William Eden, describing the scene to Lord Loughborough, 'painted in great detail and mixed with many humorous but coarse and awkward allusions, was that of a malevolent outcast from all social intercourse of life, driven to madness by spleen and vanity, forlorn in reputation, and sunk in abilities' (*Auckland Corresp.* i. 322).

Still, it would be unfair to suppose that Scott's acceptance of office blinded him, any

more than it did Flood, to the higher claims of country. At any rate, he was shrewd enough to recognise that without some extension of trade privileges the country was doomed to bankruptcy and discontent (cf. *Beresford Corresp.* i. 39, 64). His attitude was naturally misinterpreted by the public, and during the trade riots in November 1779 he narrowly escaped being murdered. As it was, every pane of glass in his house in Harcourt Street was smashed by the mob. He obtained compensation from parliament; though some remarks of Yelverton, tending to exonerate the mob, so inflamed him that the house was obliged to interfere to prevent a duel. But his personal feelings did not influence his political opinions, and to his colleague in London he wrote: 'Send us two men, or one man of ability and spirit; send him with the promise of extension of commerce in his mouth as he enters the harbour, unconnected with this contemptible tail of English opposition, meaning well to the king, to his servants, and to the country, and he will rule us with ease; but if you procrastinate and send us a timid and popular trickster, this kingdom will cost you more than America; it will cost you your existence and ours' (*ib.* i. 81). The appointment of Lord Buckinghamshire was little to his taste, and he inveighed strongly against the way in which he and his secretary, Sir Richard Heron, 'bungled' the business of government. His sentiments in regard to the claims of the Roman catholics were liberal, and on 17 July 1781 he remonstrated at length on the practice of appointing none but Englishmen to the chancellorship (*Addit. MS.* 34417, f. 394). He refused to be badgered into any premature expression of opinion as to the right of England to bind Ireland by acts of parliament, but astounded the house on 4 May 1782 by announcing 'in the most unqualified, unlimited, and explicit manner . . . as a lawyer, a faithful servant to the crown, a well-wisher to both countries, and an honest Irishman,' that Great Britain possessed no such right, and that if the parliament of that kingdom was determined to be the lords of Ireland, 'he for his part was determined not to be their villain in contributing to it' (*Parl. Register*, i. 351).

The declaration came perhaps a little too late to save his reputation for sincerity, but it was early enough to enrage the government against him; and, without receiving one word of explanation, he was at once dismissed from office by the Duke of Portland. The blow was wholly unexpected, and, in the general opinion, wholly unjustifiable. Overcome with mortification and prostrated by rheumatic fever and other family misfortunes, he deserved the pity accorded to him. In a letter to Fitzpatrick, written with a good deal of dignity, he remonstrated against the injustice done him (*Auckland MS.* 34419, f. 96). But fortunately the administration of the Duke of Portland was short-lived, and on 31 Dec. 1783 he was created, though not without a word of warning on the part of Fox (Grattan, *Life of Grattan*, iii. 112), prime serjeant by Lord Northington. He made a fast friend of Northington's successor, the Duke of Rutland, who recommended him for the post of chief justice of the king's bench whenever it should become vacant (*Rutland MSS.* iii. 77, 80), which it presently did by the death of John Gore, lord Annaly [q. v.] He was promoted on 10 May 1784, and at the same time raised to the peerage by the title of Baron Earlsfort of Lisson Earl. Only one thing was wanting, Beresford jocosely remarked, to complete his happiness—'the satisfaction of sitting in judgment on his grace of Portland' (*Beresford Corresp.* i. 256). And in thanking Eden for his assistance, Scott poured out the vials of his wrath on the duke and his 'Dutch system,' promising to 'see whether it may not be possible to stop the torrent of favouritism and brutal oppression which has covered this country with dirt since we have been overflowed by the politics of republicans and Low Country folks' (*Auckland MSS.* 34419, f. 207). He was specially consulted in November 1784 by the lord lieutenant on the subject of a parliamentary reform, and his opinion, which is merely recorded to have contained 'sentiments very freely stated,' was transmitted to Pitt, and seems to have carried great weight with government (*Rutland MSS.* iii. 148). On the question of the amended commercial propositions of 1785 he was strongly opposed to any attempt to force them through parliament, and predicted their rejection (*ib.* iii. 231). And hearing him speak on the subject of holdings of leases of low value in August that year, Woodfall, the reporter, declared that though it might be true that he had been lucky, yet he had 'abilities enough to countenance good fortune' (*Auckland Corresp.* i. 83). His severe illness in the spring of the ensuing year caused Rutland much anxiety, partly on his account, but chiefly because it threatened to deprive him of Fitzgibbon's services in the lower house (*Rutland MSS.* iii. 300, 302). Fortunately he recovered, and it was largely due to his 'very able conduct' that the magistracy bill of 1787 was carried through parliament; but in the following year he found it necessary for his health to

go to Tunbridge Wells. His annual income at this time appears to have amounted to 15,000*l.*, and on 18 Aug. 1789 he was created Viscount Clonmell.

Early, however, in this year he committed the one great blunder of his official career. John Magee [q.v.], the spirited proprietor and editor of the 'Dublin Evening Post,' had been sued for libel by Francis Higgins (1746–1802) [q. v.], called the 'Sham Squire,' a friend of Scott's in his convivial hours. The chief justice, influenced by personal and political motives, caused a *capias ad respondendum* marked 4,000*l.* to issue against Magee. It was a tyrannical act, but in the state of the law perfectly legal, and would, as Scott intended it should, have utterly ruined Magee had not the matter been brought before parliament by George Ponsonby [q. v.] in March 1790. A motion censuring such practices was adroitly got rid of by government, and a similar motion in the following year met a like fate. But in consequence of the severe comments made on his conduct in parliament and by the press (cf. Scott to Auckland, *Auckland MS.* 34429, f. 451), an act was passed, directed specially against him, regulating the law of fiats. The discussion greatly damaged his judicial character, and Magee, during his temporary release in September 1789, revenged himself by hiring a plot of land which he appropriately called Fiat Hill, adjoining Temple Hill, the residence of the lord justice, and inviting the rabble of Dublin to partake of some amusements, terminating with a 'grand Olympic pig-hunt.' Much damage was done to Scott's grounds. The 'detested administration,' as Scott with reason called it, of Lord Westmorland came to an end on 5 May 1791, and his successor, sympathising with his sufferings, advanced him to the dignity of Earl of Clonmell on 20 Dec. 1793. If subserviency ever merited reward, Scott certainly deserved his. But his arrogant manner on the bench was sometimes resented by the bar, and, in consequence of his gross rudeness to a barrister of the name of Hackett, it was resolved 'that until the chief justice publicly apologised no barrister would hold a brief, appear in the king's bench, or sign any pleadings in court.' He was compelled to submit, and published a very ample apology in the newspapers, which, with much tact, he antedated as though it had been written voluntarily and without the censure of the bar. Nevertheless Scott was not deficient in ability, and could, when he liked, behave with great dignity on the bench. His summing up in Archibald Hamilton Rowan's case was as admirable as his behaviour to the publisher of the trial, Byrne, was the reverse. Although his tendency was to make his position subservient to government and his own advancement, he 'never indulged in attacks on his country,' and never sought 'to raise himself by depressing her.' His reluctance to support the arbitrary measures that marked the course of Earl Camden's administration caused him to lose favour at the castle, and as time went on his opinion was less consulted and considered. 'I think,' he wrote, in his diary on 13 Feb. 1798, 'my best game is to play the invalid and be silent; the government hate me, and are driving things to extremities; the country is disaffected and savage, the parliament corrupt and despised.'

He died on the very day the rebellion broke out, 23 May 1798. He left no surviving issue by his first wife, Catherine Anne Maria Mathew, the sister of Francis, first earl of Llandaff, who died in 1771; but by his second wife, Margaret, daughter and heiress of Patrick Lawless of Dublin, whom he married on 23 June 1779, he had a son Thomas (1783–1858), who succeeded him, and a daughter Charlotte, who married, in 1814, John Reginald, earl of Beauchamp. Scott has been treated with scant justice by his biographers. His diary (published by Fitzpatrick in his 'Ireland before the Union'), which ought to have been destroyed with his other papers, and was surely not intended for public or indiscriminate inspection, has been treated too seriously, and used mainly to emphasise his weaknesses and indiscretions. It is true that he was unscrupulous, passionate, and greedy, that his language was vulgar and his manner overbearing; but his chief offence in the eyes of whig aristocrats like Charlemont and the Ponsonbys was that he was a *novus homo* or upstart. His letters, on the other hand, reveal him as a man of considerable education and independent views, which he supported with no little ability.

[Burke's Peerage; Gent. Mag. 1798, i. 538, ii. 622, 651; Fitzpatrick's Ireland before the Union; Grattan's Life of Henry Grattan, ii. 141–7, iii. 112, iv. 349; Wills's Irish Nation, iii. 669–79; Official Returns of Members of Parliament; Flood's Memoirs of Henry Flood, p. 135; Auckland Corresp.; Beresford Corresp.; M'Dougall's Sketches of Political Characters, p. 13; Phillips's Curran and his Contemporaries, pp. 35–9; Barrington's Personal Recollections, i. 171, 222; O'Regan's Memoirs of the Life of Curran, pp. 57–9; Hardy's Life of Charlemont, i. 268–71; Seward's Collectanea Politica; Parl. Register, i. 243, 344, 351, ii. 14, 15, 207, 208; Sheil's Sketches, Legal and Political; Rutland MSS. iii. passim; Charlemont MSS. ii. 178; Hist. MSS.

Comm. 9th Rep. (Stopford Sackville's MSS.), p. 60; Pelham Papers in Addit. MS. 33101, f. 87; Auckland Papers in Addit. MS. 34417, ff. 394, 408; *ib.* 34418 ff. 211, 284, 34419 ff. 96, 117, 207, 395, 34420 f. 257, 34425 f. 219, 34429 f. 451, 34461 f. 106.] R. D.

SCOTT, afterwards SCOTT-WARING, JOHN (1747–1819), agent of Warren Hastings, born at Shrewsbury in 1747, was the grandson of John Scott, whose third wife was Dorothy, daughter of Adam Waring of the Hayes, Shropshire. His father was Jonathan Scott of Shrewsbury (*d.* August 1778), who married Mary, second daughter of Humphrey Sandford of the Isle of Rossall, Shropshire. The second son, Richard, rose to the rank of lieutenant-colonel, and served with distinction under Sir Eyre Coote against Hyder Ali Khan and under the Marquis of Cornwallis in the war against Sippoo Saltaun. The third son, Jonathan Scott the orientalist, is noticed separately. The fourth son, Henry, became commissioner of police at Bombay.

John, the eldest son, entered the service of the East India Company about 1766, and became a major in the Bengal division of its forces. He had been in India for twelve years before he knew Warren Hastings, 'except by dining at his table in company with other officers' of the same standing, but their intimacy after that time became close, and he was one of the intermediaries who, in November 1779, patched up a temporary reconciliation between Hastings and Francis (PARKES and MERIVALE, *Sir P. Francis*, ii. 175–6). In May 1780 he was appointed to command a battalion of sepoys stationed in Chanar.

Scott was sent by Hastings to England as his political agent, and he arrived in London on 17 Dec. 1781. This selection has been described as 'the great mistake of the life' of Hastings (*ib.* ii. 236–7), and the choice was without doubt disastrous. Scott was indefatigable in his labours for his chief, but he lacked judgment. The printing-press groaned with his lucubrations. Macaulay asserts that 'his services were rewarded with oriental munificence;' but though Scott was profuse in his expenditure for his patron, he himself did not participate in the prodigality. 'When he left India Mr. Hastings was his debtor, and continued so for many years' (*Life of Charles Reade*, i. 8). In 1782 Scott published, in the interests of Hastings, his 'Short Review of Transactions in Bengal during the last Ten Years,' and, two years later, his 'Conduct of his Majesty's late Ministers considered,' 1784. In a note to p. 6 of this pamphlet he dealt with the payments which he had made to the newspapers for the insertion of letters in defence of Hastings. Innumerable letters, paragraphs, puffs, and squibs were attributed to him, and a curious bill for such to the amount of several hundred pounds was published in 1787 by the editor of the 'Morning Herald' (*Lit. Memoirs of Living Authors*, 1798, ii. 242).

From 1784 to 1790 Scott sat in parliament as member for the Cornish borough of West Looe, and in 1790 he was returned for Stockbridge in Hampshire. A petition was presented against him, and on 22 Feb. 1793 a prosecution for bribery seemed imminent, but the matter fell through. Hastings wrote to his wife on 13 Aug. 1784, 'I am not pleased with Scott's going into parliament, and less with his annexing to it the plan of securing his seat for myself.' While in the House of Commons he 'was always on his legs, he was very tedious, and he had only one topic—the merits and wrongs of Hastings.'

The charges against Warren Hastings might have been allowed to drop, but Scott made the mistake of reminding Burke on the first day of the session of 1786 of the notice which he had given before the preceding recess of bringing them before parliament. Scott desired Burke to name the first day that was practicable. The challenge was accepted, and Burke opened the subject on 17 Feb.

During the course of the impeachment (1788–1795) a host of ineffectual letters, speeches, and pamphlets emanated from Scott. His demeanour at the trial is depicted by Miss Burney (*Diary*, ed. 1842, iv. 74–5). He might be seen 'skipping backwards and forwards like a grasshopper.' 'What pity,' she exclaimed, 'that Mr. Hastings should have trusted his cause to so frivolous an agent!' 'It was the general belief,' she adds, that 'to his officious and injudicious zeal the present prosecution is wholly owing.'

In 1798, by the death of his cousin, Richard Hill Waring, Scott came into the Waring estates in Cheshire, which he sold in 1800 to Peel and Yates [see PEEL, SIR ROBERT, 1750–1830] for 80,000*l.* He consequently assumed the name and arms of Waring. A year or two later he bought Peterborough House at Parson's Green, Fulham, and gathered around him a varied company of royal princes, politicians, wits, and actresses (M. KELLY, *Reminiscences*, ii. 253). He died at Half Moon Street, Piccadilly, London, on 5 May 1819. Scott was thrice married. His first wife was Maria, daughter and heiress of Jacob Hughes of Cashel. The second, who brought him a fortune of 20,000*l.*, was Elizabeth, daughter of Alexander Blackrie of Bromley in Kent, sometime surgeon-general on the Indian establishment. She was born on 19 April

1746, and died 26 Oct. 1796, being buried in Bromley churchyard, under a marble monument, with a long and peculiar epitaph (Wilson, *Hist. of Bromley*, pp. 40–2). She was the mother of two sons—Edward, a distinguished civil servant in Bengal; and Charles, who died young—and of two daughters, the elder of whom, Anna Maria, married John Reade of Ipsden House, Oxfordshire, was mother of Charles Reade the novelist, and died 9 Aug. 1863, aged 90; the younger, Eliza Sophia, married the Rev. George Stanley Faber [q. v.] A portrait of Waring's second wife and two of her children was painted by J. Russell, R.A., and engraved by C. Turner, being published on 2 Jan. 1804. Waring's third wife was Mrs. Esten, a widowed actress notorious for her irregularities; on this union there was circulated an epigram concluding with the words:

> Though well known for ages past,
> She's not the worse for Waring.

His portrait, by John James Masquerier [q.v.], was engraved by C. Turner, and published on 27 Feb. 1802. It is inscribed to Warren Hastings.

Besides the pieces already mentioned, Scott wrote: 1. 'Observations on Sheridan's pamphlet, contrasting the two bills for the better government of India,' 1788; 3rd ed. 1789. 2. 'Observations on Belsham's "Memoirs of the reign of George III,"' 1796. 3. 'Seven Letters to the People of Great Britain by a Whig,' 1789. In this he discussed the questions arising out of the king's illness. On the subject of Christian missions in India he published: 4. 'Observations on the present State of the East India Company' [anon.], 1807 (four editions); and 5. 'A Vindication of the Hindoos from the expressions of Dr. Claudius Buchanan, in two parts, by a Bengal Officer,' 1808. A memoir of Hastings by Scott is inserted in Seward's 'Biographiana,' ii. 610–28.

[Burke's Landed Gentry, 6th ed. p. 1425; Gent. Mag. 1819, i. 492; Busteed's Calcutta, p. 315; Trial of Hastings, ed. Bond, i. p. xxxv, ii. pp. xxxvi–xxxvii; Cornwallis's Corresp. i. 364; Ormerod's Cheshire, ii. 12–13; Gleig's Hastings, ii. 354 et seq.; Macaulay's Essay on Hastings; Life of Charles Reade, i. 1–10; Faulkner's Fulham, p. 301; Walpole's Letters, viii. 557; Overton's English Church, 1800–33, pp. 268–71.] W. P. C.

SCOTT, JOHN (1783–1821), editor of the 'London Magazine,' born at Aberdeen in 1783, and educated at the Marischal College, Aberdeen, was probably the John Scott, 'filius Alexandri Mercatoris,' who matriculated from that institution in 1797. His father is elsewhere described as an upholsterer. Byron was his schoolfellow, and on meeting at Venice in 1819 they compared notes on their schooldays. At a very early date in life he went to London and was employed in the war office; but the love of politics and literature soon led him into journalism.

Scott at first started a weekly paper called 'The Censor.' He then became the editor of the 'Statesman,' an evening paper, and not long afterwards was engaged by John Drakard [q. v.] as editor of the 'Stamford News.' Under his editorial care there appeared, on 10 Jan. 1813, the first number of 'Drakard's Newspaper,' a folio sheet of political and general news. With the new year its name was changed to 'The Champion,' and under the altered title the first number came out on Sunday, 2 Jan. 1814, it still remaining under Scott's editorship. A letter written to him by Charles Lamb in 1814 on some articles for its columns is reproduced in Dr. G. B. Hill's 'Talks on Autographs' (pp. 24–25). According to Horace Smith, this paper was sold in 1816 to J. Clayton Jennings, an ex-official at Demerara, who had a quarrel with Downing Street, and it belonged afterwards to John Thelwall. Between 1814 and 1819 Scott passed much time on the continent and published in 1815 'A Visit to Paris in 1814,' London (4th edit. 1816), and in 1816 'Paris revisited in 1815 by way of Brussels, including a walk over the Field of Battle at Waterloo' (3rd edit. 1816). On Scott and these volumes Bishop Heber wrote in 1816: 'Who is Scott? What is his breeding and history? He is so decidedly the ablest of the weekly journalists, and has so much excelled his illustrious namesake as a French tourist, that I feel considerable curiosity about him' (*Life*, i. 432). Thackeray described these books as 'famous good reading' (*The Newcomes*, ch. xxii.) Wordsworth wrote of the second of them, 'Every one of your words tells.'

Scott made further collections for books of travel on the commission of the publishing firm of Longman, but returned to London to edit the newly established 'London Magazine,' the first number of which appeared in January 1820. An account of the magazine and of its contributors is given in Talfourd's 'Final Memorials of Charles Lamb' (ii. 1–9). Talfourd styles the editor 'a critic of remarkable candour, eloquence, and discrimination,' who acted with the authority which the position demanded. Many illustrious writers contributed to its columns, the most famous of the articles during Scott's lifetime being the

early 'Essays of Elia.' A long letter from Scott to the publishers of the magazine on Hazlitt's contributions is printed in Mr. W. C. Hazlitt's 'Four Generations of a Literary Family' (i. 135–8).

In May 1820 the editor, in an article on 'Newspapers and the Magazines,' sharply attacked the criticisms of 'Z.' that had appeared in 'Blackwood's Magazine,' and he followed up the attack by more elaborate articles in later numbers (i.e. in November 1820, pp. 509–21, 'Blackwood's Magazine;' December 1820, pp. 666–85, 'The Mohock Magazine;' January 1821, pp. 76–7, 'The Mohocks'). Lockhart, the chief object of Scott's assault, was provoked into communicating with Scott with the intention of extracting from him an apology or a hostile meeting. Some fruitless negotiations followed, and the matter went off for the time with Lockhart's statement that he considered Scott 'a liar and a scoundrel.' But embittered statements continued to emanate from both parties and their friends, and a communication from Jonathan Henry Christie, an eminent conveyancer and an intimate friend of Lockhart, led to a duel between Christie and Scott. They met by moonlight at nine o'clock at Chalk Farm, near London, on 16 Feb. 1821, James Traill acting as Christie's second, and Peter George Patmore [q. v.] assisting Scott. Christie did not fire on the first occasion; but the second time he fired in self-defence, and the ball struck Scott 'just above the hip on the right side, and, passing through the intestines, lodged in the left side.' It seemed for some time that the wounded man would live; but he died, on 27 Feb. 1821, in his rooms in York Street, Covent Garden, and was buried in the vaults of the church of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, London. At the inquest a verdict of wilful murder was brought in by the jury. Christie and Traill were tried at the Old Bailey on 13 April 1821, and were found not guilty. Patmore did not appear at the trial. Christie survived till 15 April 1876, aged 84.

Byron wrote: 'Scott died like a brave man, and he lived an able one. A man of very considerable talents and of great acquirements, he had made his way as a literary character with high success and in a few years.' The testimony of Horace Smith ran: 'He was invariably pleasing. In manner, appearance, deportment, mind, he was a perfect gentleman. He abounded in solid information, which he communicated with an easy, lucid, and unpremeditated eloquence.'

Scott married Caroline, daughter of the printseller, Paul Colnaghi [q. v.] She was a beauty and a woman of superior talents. Their eldest boy, Paul Scott, died at Paris on 8 Nov. 1816, aged eight years and a half, as his parents were travelling to Italy. He was buried at Père-Lachaise, where a pillar with an inscription was erected to his memory, and Scott wrote a pathetic poem on his loss, entitled 'The House of Mourning,' which was published in 1817. Two infant children survived at the time of his death, and the family was left penniless. A subscription was raised for their benefit, and Sir James Mackintosh, Chantrey, Horace Smith, and John Murray were on the committee (*London Mag.* April 1821, p. 359). Murray wrote to Byron, asking if he would give 10*l.* The response was a contribution of 30*l.* as from 'N. N.'

Besides the works mentioned, Scott was author of: 1. 'Picturesque Views of Paris and its Environs. Drawings by Frederick Nash. Letterpress by John Scott and M. P. B. de la Brossière,' 1820–23; English and French; and 2. 'Sketches of Manners, Scenery in the French Provinces, Switzerland, and Italy,' 1821 (posthumous).

[Gent. Mag. 1821, i. 271–2, 369–70; New Monthly Mag. 1847, lxxxi. 415–18, by Horace Smith; Byron's Second Letter on Bowles, Works, vi. 394–5; Patmore's My Friends and Acquaintance, ii. 283–7; Knight's Life of Wordsworth, ii. 261–72, iii. 234; Sharp's Joseph Severn, pp. 74, 88, 98; Sir W. Scott's Letters, ii. 109–16; Lamb's Letters, ed. Ainger, i. 279, ii. 200; Moore's Byron, ii. 207, iii. 81, v. 143; Smiles's J. Murray, i. 389, 420; Wainewright's Works, ed. Hazlitt; Blackwood's Mag. xix. preface, pp. xvi–xviii; Lang's Life of Lockhart, i. 250–282; Drakard's Stamford, p. 431; information from Mr. J. M. Bulloch.] W. P. C.

SCOTT, JOHN (1774–1827), engraver, was born on 12 March 1774 at Newcastle-on-Tyne, where his father, John Scott, worked in a brewery. At the age of twelve he was apprenticed to a tallow-chandler, but devoted all his spare time to the study of drawing and engraving, and at the expiration of his articles came to London, where his fellow-townsman, Robert Pollard [q. v.], gave him two years' instruction, at the same time paying him for his work. On leaving Pollard he obtained employment from Wheble, the proprietor of the 'Sporting Magazine,' and for many years the portraits of racehorses published in that periodical were executed by him. The next work upon which Scott was engaged was W. B. Daniel's well-known 'British Rural Sports,' 1801, many of the plates in which were both designed and engraved by him. He became

the ablest of English animal engravers, and his 'Sportsman's Cabinet, a correct delineation of the Canine Race,' 1804; 'History and Delineation of the Horse,' 1809; and 'Sportsman's Repository, comprising a series of engravings representing the horse and the dog in all their varieties, from paintings by Marshall, Reinagle, Gilpin, Stubbs, and Cooper,' 1820, earned for him great celebrity. A pair of large plates, 'Breaking Cover,' after Reinagle, and 'Death of the Fox,' after Gilpin, issued in 1811, are regarded as his masterpieces. Scott also did much work for publications of a different kind, such as Tresham and Ottley's 'British Gallery,' Ottley's 'Stafford Gallery,' Britton's 'Fine Arts of the English School,' Hakewill's 'Tour in Italy,' and Coxe's 'Social Day.' He laboured unceasingly at his profession until 1821, when a stroke of paralysis practically terminated his career; during the last years of his life he was assisted by the Artists' Benevolent Fund, of which he had been one of the originators. Scott died at his residence in Chelsea on 24 Dec. 1827, leaving a widow, several daughters, and one son, John R. Scott, who also became an engraver, and executed a few plates for the 'Sporting Magazine.'

A portrait of Scott, drawn by J. Jackson, R.A., in 1823, was engraved by W. T. Fry and published in 1826. A crayon portrait by his son is in the print-room of the British Museum.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Gent. Mag. 1828, i. 376; Sporting Mag. lvii. 290; manuscript notes in print-room of British Museum.]

F. M. O'D.

SCOTT, JOHN (1777–1834), divine. [See under Scott, Thomas, 1747–1821.]

SCOTT, JOHN, first Earl of Eldon (1751–1838), lord chancellor, third son of William Scott of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, by his second wife, was born in Love Lane, Newcastle-upon-Tyne, on 4 June 1751. Heraldic conjecture has sought to connect his family with the noble house of Scott of Balwearie, Fifeshire [see Scott, Sir William, *d.* 1532]; but, beyond the name, there is nothing but vague tradition to indicate a Scottish origin. The pedigree cannot be authentically traced further back than William Scott's father, also William Scott, who is described as yeoman of Sandgate, Newcastle-upon-Tyne.

The future chancellor's father, William Scott, born about 1696, was apprenticed on 1 Sept. 1716 to Thomas Brummel, 'hoastman'—i.e. coal-factor, or, in the local dialect, 'coal-fitter'—of Newcastle-upon-Tyne; received the freedom of the town on 25 Aug. 1724, and was admitted to the full privilege of the ancient guild of hoastmen on 7 Sept. following. He prospered in business, became the owner of several 'keels'—i.e. barges—and a public-house, and died on 6 Nov. 1776, having been twice married. His first wife, Isabella Noble (*m.* 11 May 1730), died in January 1734, leaving issue. By his second wife, Jane, daughter of Henry Atkinson of Newcastle-upon-Tyne (*m.* 18 Aug. 1740, *d.* 16 July 1800), he had issue thirteen children, of whom six reached mature age. Of these three were sons, viz. (1) William (afterwards Lord Stowell) [q. v.]; (2) Henry (baptised 2 Nov. 1748, *d.* 8 Dec. 1799); and (3) John, the subject of the present article.

A dominie named Warden taught the boys their letters by the Scottish method of 'muffling' the consonants, i.e. placing the vowel before instead of after them; and they were then grounded in the church catechism and the classics by Hugh Moises [q. v.] at the Newcastle free grammar school, where they sat on the same form with Cuthbert (afterwards Lord) Collingwood [q. v.] For Moises, John Scott retained so much regard that, as lord chancellor, he made him one of his chaplains. Though a fair scholar, John was at first intended for business; but at the suggestion of his elder brother, William, he was allowed to join the latter at Oxford in 1766. During the journey the Latin adage 'Sat cito si sat bene,' which the coach bore painted on its panel, made so deep an impression on his mind that in after life he was never weary of quoting it as an apology for his inordinate procrastination. He matriculated on 15 May 1766 from University College, where on 11 July in the following year he obtained a fellowship, for which his Northumbrian birth made him eligible. He graduated B.A. on 20 Feb. 1770, proceeded M.A. on 13 Feb. 1773, was appointed high steward of the university on 18 Sept. 1801, and received the degree of D.C.L. by diploma on 15 Oct. following.

In 1771 Scott gained the English-essay prize by a stilted Johnsonian dissertation on 'The Advantages and Disadvantages of Travelling into Foreign Countries' (see *Oxford English Prize Essays*, Oxford, 1836, vol. i.) At this time he had thoughts of taking holy orders, but abandoned the idea on gaining the hand of Elizabeth, the beautiful daughter of Aubone Surtees, a wealthy banker of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. The lady's heart had been his for some time, and, her parents refusing their consent to the match, she eloped with him by an upper story window and a ladder on the night of 18 Nov. 1772. Next day, at Blackshiels, near Edin-

burgh, the pair were married, according to the rite of the church of England, by John Buchanan, a clergyman of the episcopal church of Scotland, who had a cure of souls at Haddington. They at once recrossed the border, and were soon forgiven by their parents, who joined in settling 3,000*l.* upon them. The marriage was re-solemnised in St. Nicholas's Church, Newcastle-upon-Tyne, on 19 Jan. 1773. On the 28th of the same month Scott was admitted a member of the Middle Temple, where he was called to the bar on 9 Feb. 1776, elected a bencher on 20 June 1783, and treasurer in 1797. While eating his dinners he lived at New Inn Hall, Oxford, where as deputy to the Vinerian professor, Sir Robert Chambers, he made 60*l.* a year by lecturing on law, while ignorant of the rudiments of the science. He removed to London in 1775, and, after a brief residence in Cursitor Street, Chancery Lane, took a little house in Carey Street, which he soon exchanged for a residence in Powis Place. Later on he removed to Bedford Square, and finally to Hamilton Place.

Scott's maxim was that a lawyer should live like a hermit and work like a horse. He therefore withdrew from general society, and devoted his days and nights to professional study with such assiduity as for a time seriously to impair his health. The eminent conveyancer Matthew Duane [q. v.] received him as a pupil without fee, and to the perfect mastery of the technicalities of real-property law which he thus acquired he added a profound study of common law and equity. His means were improved on his father's death by a legacy of 1,000*l.*, and in 1781 by another 1,000*l.* added to the settlement moneys by his father-in-law, through whose interest he obtained the general retainer of the corporation of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, of which on 13 Oct. 1774 he had received the freedom as a hoastman's son. He supported the candidature of his friend Andrew Robinson Bowes [see Bowes, Mary Eleanor, Countess of Strathmore] for the representation of the borough in February 1777, and represented him before the House of Commons on the petitions read on 25 April following and 18 Feb. 1782. The interest of another friend, Lloyd (afterwards Lord) Kenyon [q. v.], procured him a brief on the Clitheroe election petition, read on 13 March 1781. At Westminster he at first attended the court of king's bench, but, thinking Lord Mansfield had a preference for Christ Church men, he soon crossed over to the other side of the hall. Before Thurlow he argued, on 6 Feb. 1779, a point of some difficulty on the construction of a will (Brown, p. 31), and on 4 March 1780 established the reputation of a sound equity lawyer by his successful argument in Ackroyd *v.* Smithson (*ib.* p. 503) on appeal from the rolls court. On 31 May 1781 he appeared, with Kenyon, before the House of Lords in support of the Duke of Northumberland's claim to the office of lord great chamberlain.

On 9 May 1782 he appeared before the House of Commons for Peter Perring, of the Madras council, on the commitment of the bill to restrain him and Sir Thomas Rumbold [q. v.] from leaving the country. On 4 June 1783 he took silk, having first, with characteristic independence, vindicated his right to precedence before Erskine and Arthur Pigot, whose patents had been made out before his. Thurlow now procured his return to parliament (16 June), as an independent king's friend, for Lord Weymouth's borough of Weobley, Herefordshire, which he represented until the general election of May 1796, when he was returned for Boroughbridge, Yorkshire. His maiden speech, on the first reading of Fox's India Bill on 20 Nov. 1783, was laboured and ineffective, and a later effort on the third reading (8 Dec.), in which he attempted brilliance and achieved pomposity, excited the amazement of the house and the cruel mockery of Sheridan. A beginning could hardly have been less promising, but his able, independent speech in condemnation of the Westminster scrutiny was heard with respect on 9 March 1785; and, having thus shown Pitt the value of his support, he atoned for his temporary revolt by his defence of the commercial treaty with France on 21 Feb. 1787. He had long been high in favour with Thurlow, from whose brother Thomas, the bishop [q. v.], he obtained in this year (1 March) the post of chancellor of the county palatine of Durham.

During the discussion of the charges against Sir Elijah Impey [q. v.], 7–11 Feb. 1788, Scott exerted himself to secure Impey a fair trial according to form of law. On 5 March following he made an ingenious defence of the government measure charging the East India Company with the cost of the transport of troops to the East. On 27 June 1788 he was made solicitor-general, and, somewhat it would seem against his will, knighted. In the following winter he ably defended the government scheme for providing for the regency by means of a bill passed by fictitious commission under the great seal—a solution of an unprecedented constitutional problem ridiculed by Burke and the wits of the 'Rolliad' as legal metaphysics, but which was probably the best that could be devised. He also drafted the bill introduced in the fol-

lowing spring, but abandoned on the recovery of the king [see GEORGE IV].

On the meeting of the new parliament Scott incurred some unmerited suspicion of corruption by maintaining (23 Dec. 1790) the then not unconstitutional doctrine that the impeachment of Warren Hastings had abated by the recent dissolution. Holding Lord Mansfield's view of the respective functions of judge and jury in cases of libel, he so amended the measure introduced by Fox in 1791 as materially to modify its effect (31 May). In the debates on the government measures for the partial relief of Irish and Scottish catholics, passed in 1791 and 1793, he took no part. On Thurlow's dismissal, on 15 June 1792, he tendered Pitt his resignation, but eventually withdrew it at Thurlow's instance, and on 13 Feb. 1793 succeeded Sir Archibald Macdonald as attorney-general. Being thus identified with the vigorous and rigorous policy pursued by the government during the next few years, he became for the time the best hated man in England. The Traitorous Correspondence Act of 1793 (which virtually suspended mercantile relations with France), the Habeas Corpus Suspension Act of the following year, the Treasonable Practices and Seditious Meetings Acts of 1795, and the Newspaper Proprietors' Registration Act of 1798 were his handiwork. At the same time he made liberal use of the procedure by ex-officio information for libel, and strained the law of constructive treason to the breaking-point. In the actual conduct of the prosecutions, even so severe a critic as Lord Campbell finds nothing to censure [see FROST, JOHN, 1750–1842; HARDY, THOMAS, 1752–1832; TOOKE, JOHN HORNE; ERSKINE, THOMAS, LORD].

On 19 July 1799 Scott succeeded Sir James Eyre (1734–1799) [q. v.] as lord chief justice of the common pleas, having during the three preceding days been sworn serjeant-at-law and of the privy council and board of trade, and created Baron Eldon of Eldon, in the county of Durham, where in 1792 he had bought a fine estate. On 24 Sept. following he took his seat, and on 27 Feb. 1800 he made his first reported speech in the House of Lords, in support of a bill to continue the suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act. He also supported (4 April) Lord Auckland's bill prohibiting the marriage of a divorced adulteress with her paramour, which passed the House of Lords, but was thrown out in the commons. In the debates on the union with Ireland he was conspicuous by his silence. The measure itself he probably disapproved, and to the emancipation of the catholic population he was as adverse as the king, though he was too sound a lawyer to countenance the king's strange delusion as to the effect of the coronation oath (KENYON, *Life of Lord Kenyon*, p. 320). On Pitt's retirement he consented, not without demur, to succeed Lord Loughborough on the woolsack, and, if his notebook may be trusted, only in pursuance of a prior pledge to the king, and on the understanding that he was to be the king's chancellor, not the minister's. He believed that Addington had purposely kept him in ignorance of the true state of the king's health, and, though he received the great seal from the king in council on 14 April 1801, he regarded his tenure of it as conditional upon his recovery, and retained the chief-justiceship until 21 May, when he was succeeded by Lord Alvanley [ARDEN, RICHARD PEPPER]. On three occasions during this interval, viz. on 18 April, 30 April, and 21 May, he procured the king's signature to a commission for passing bills. On the first and last of these occasions the king was unquestionably lucid; whether he was strictly competent to transact business on 30 April admits of some doubt (COLCHESTER, *Diary*, i. 264–8; ROSE, *Diaries*, i. 344–52).

In the common pleas Eldon gave proof, not only of a thorough mastery of law, but of a capacity for prompt decision which contrasts curiously with the habitual dilatoriness which he afterwards displayed in chancery. On the other hand he was too apt to confound the jury by the extreme subtlety with which he summed up. His judgments are reported by Bosanquet and Puller. As chancellor he made his first appearance in debate in support of a bill, also favoured by Thurlow, for granting divorce to a wife whose husband had committed adultery with her sister (20 May 1801). He also supported the measure introduced to exclude Horne Tooke, by which clergymen were disqualified for sitting in the House of Commons (15 June 1801); the convention with Russia which dissolved the armed neutrality (13 Nov. 1801); and, though by no means warmly, the peace of Amiens (3 Nov. 1801 and 13 May 1802). In the spring of 1804 the administration was hampered, while its existence, then almost at the mercy of Pitt, was prolonged by the lunacy of the king, which lasted, with hardly a day's intermission, from 12 Feb. to 23 April. On 1 March, in answer to a question in the House of Lords, Eldon stated that there was 'no suspension of the royal functions.' On 4 March and the next day he saw the king, and obtained his verbal consent to the Duke of York's estate bill. On 9 March, and again on 23 March, he affixed the great seal to a commission which

purported to give the royal assent to certain bills. On 24 March, of his own motion, without consulting Addington, he had a *tête-à-tête* with Pitt. On 18 or 19 April the king, by Addington's advice, authorised him to open the negotiations which terminated in Addington's retirement and Pitt's return to power. As what passed between him and Pitt on 24 March has not transpired, the imputation of disloyalty to Addington cast upon him by Brougham, Pellew, and Lord Campbell rests on no substantial basis [see ADDINGTON, HENRY, first VISCOUNT SIDMOUTH] (STANHOPE, *Life of Pitt*, ed. 1879, iii. 196, 211 et seq.)

To the king his loyalty was above suspicion, and it was requited with confidence and affection. To his diplomacy was entrusted, in the summer of 1804, the delicate task of composing the feuds which distracted the royal family. By urbanity, tact, and dignity, he prevailed with the prince to see his father and converse with him for a short while on indifferent topics (12 Nov. 1804), and eventually (January 1805) to concede to him the exclusive charge of the Princess Charlotte. In the House of Lords his energies were absorbed in defeating such proposals as the abolition of the slave trade and the emancipation of the debtor and the catholic (3, 24 July 1804, 25 March, 10, 13 May 1805). On the collapse of the administration which followed Pitt's death, he somewhat tardily (7 Feb. 1806) surrendered the seals. The king parted with him with profound regret. 'Lay them down on the sofa,' he said, pointing to the seals, 'for I cannot and will not take them from you. Yet I admit you cannot stay when all the rest have run away.' His retiring pension, by previous arrangement, was fixed at 4,000*l.*

Except to question the propriety of the acceptance by Lord Ellenborough of a seat in the cabinet while retaining the chief-justiceship—for which the only precedent was furnished by Lord Mansfield—to fight again the battle for the creditors' and sugar-planters' supposed vested interests in human flesh, and to record his vote for Lord Melville's acquittal (3 March, 14, 16 May, 12 June 1806), Eldon took little part in public affairs during the shortlived administration of All the Talents. Much of his leisure was occupied with the affairs of the Princess of Wales (Caroline Amelia Elizabeth), as whose adviser he acted during the scrutiny into her conduct; and solicitude to prevent the publication of 'the book' brought him to Windsor during the contest between the king and his advisers on the catholic question in March 1807. The coincidence raised a suspicion that he was privy to, if not the prompter of, the king's unconstitutional attempt to foreclose that question; nor did he in unequivocal terms deny the imputation, which is likely enough to be well founded. Lord Campbell's statement that he was concerned in the composition of 'the book,' the publication of which he afterwards (1808) restrained by injunction, is improbable in itself and unsupported by authority.

On the formation of the Portland administration in 1807 Eldon resumed the great seal, which he retained for rather more than twenty years. During great part of this period the strength of his convictions, the dexterity and decision with which he encountered emergencies, and a veritable genius for managing men, gave him paramount influence in the cabinet. Few English statesmen have been less trammelled by the maxims of the comity of nations or constitutional precedents and forms. Though naturally pacific, the subjugation of Napoleon was to him an end which sanctified all means. The seizure of the Danish fleet in 1807 he justified by the plea of necessity, while acknowledging that it was without colour of right; the orders in council by which the entire seaboard under the dominion or control of France was declared under blockade, to the infinite damage of neutral commerce, and also the practice of searching neutral ships for British seamen, he defended on grounds which have since been generally repudiated by publicists; and his plea for the detention of Bonaparte in 1815, that he had neither king nor country, but had constituted himself an independent belligerent, and was thus at the mercy of his captors, was perhaps more subtle than sound. Napoleon disposed of, his foreign policy was simply non-intervention. An orator he never became, but the dignity of his person and the melody of his voice triumphed over the clumsy and circumlocutory character of his style. His power of personal fascination was extraordinary. Secure in his ascendency over the king, he regarded without anxiety but not without resentment the intrigues of Canning to oust him from office during the protracted crisis of September–October 1809; and in the end it was Canning that retired, while the Duke of Portland was replaced by Eldon's old associate and intimate friend, Spencer Perceval. In 1811, when the lunacy of the king became chronic, Eldon was still on the worst of terms with the prince, whom he further embittered by adhering to the view of the procedure to constitute the regency which

he had advocated in 1788. The prince's friends accordingly sought to exclude him from the council which was to be associated with the prince during the first year of the regency; and to this end the expedients by which a semblance of the royal assent had been given to bills while the king was presumably unfit to transact business in 1801 and 1804 were magnified into acts of usurpation, the responsibility for which it was sought to fix upon Eldon individually. Instead of relying on his true defence—the extreme gravity of the emergencies in which he had acted—Eldon took refuge in evasive circumlocutions and appeals to his conscience. He triumphed, however: the motion was negatived by a large majority; nor had the year of restricted regency expired before the prince had flouted his 'early friends,' and the administration had received a new lease of life. Eldon meanwhile had renounced the princess, and devoted himself to his 'young master,' who invited him to his supper parties, gave him the endearing nickname of Old Bags, and trusted him implicitly in all matters public and private. His influence was paramount during the crisis which followed the assassination of Perceval, when with the skill of an old parliamentary hand he secured the failure of the overtures, which for the sake of appearances were made first to Lord Wellesley and Canning, and then to Lords Grey and Grenville; and eventually formed Lord Liverpool's durable administration (8 June 1812). He advised the prince and supported his parental authority during the first treaty for the marriage of the Princess Charlotte, and arranged her eventual marriage with Prince Leopold of Saxe-Coburg.

Eldon concurred in conferring on Scotland in 1815 the somewhat questionable boon of trial by jury in civil causes (55 Geo. III, c. 42); and in 1819 in the abolition of trial by battle, and appeals of treason and felony (59 Geo. III, c. 46). A few other modifications of legal procedure are traceable to his suggestion. But his normal attitude towards innovations of all kinds continued to be one of determined hostility. He resisted the reforms of Sir Samuel Romilly [q. v.] as stubbornly as catholic emancipation; and, though he took no part in carrying the corn laws, he could conceive for the consequent disaffection no remedy but repression, and gave in 1817 his unqualified approval to Lord Sidmouth's circular instructing magistrates to hold to bail before indictment for libel, to the suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act, to the revival without limit of duration of the expired Treason Act of 1796, and to the new and stringent Seditious Meetings Act (57 Geo. III, cc. 3, 6, 18). After the Peterloo affair (1819), the Six Acts, which placed public meetings at the mercy of magistrates, authorised domiciliary visits for the seizure of arms, provided a more summary procedure in cases of seditious libel, and subjected pamphlets to the same duty as newspapers, seemed to him the only means of preserving the constitution (60 Geo. III and 1 Geo. IV, cc. 1, 2, 4, 6, 8, 9).

On the accession of George IV the unpopularity of the administration evinced by the Cato Street conspiracy was aggravated by their treatment of the queen, the odium of which attached in an especial degree to Eldon. But though he supported the reference of the report of the Milan commission to a secret committee (7 June 1820), he had had no hand in its initiation [see Leach, Sir John]; and in refusing the queen permission (27 June) to attend the subsequent debates on her case, he merely enforced the rule excluding ladies from the house; nor is he fairly censurable for declining to present her petition, or deviate from the long-established parliamentary procedure by granting her discovery of the evidence against her. On moving (2 Nov.) the second reading of the bill of pains and penalties, he summed up the case for and against her with the strictest impartiality; and it was as much in her interest as in that of the king and the administration that he deprecated the abandonment of the bill after the third reading. He was now in as ill odour with the populace as in 1794; but as the coryphæus of the gallant 'thirty-nine who saved the thirty-nine'—i.e. who defeated (17 April 1821) Plunket's statesmanlike measure of catholic emancipation—he was enthusiastically toasted by loyal church and state men.

In anticipation of his coronation George IV, by patent dated 7 July 1821, conferred on Eldon the titles of Viscount Encombe and Earl of Eldon. The patent was sealed on 9 July, and on the same day the new earl took his seat as such in the House of Lords. But while he thus reached the summit of his honour, his ascendency was already passing from him. The king was now swayed by Lady Conyngham, who had espoused the catholic cause. The death of the queen opened the way for Canning's return to place. The administration was in need of new blood; and on his return from Ireland, where he had treated Plunket with marked distinction, the king consented (January

1822) to a coalition with the Grenville party, whereby catholic emancipation entered the sphere of practical politics. Eldon's chagrin at this arrangement—he had a hatred of coalitions—was mitigated by the exclusion of Canning from office. He was further consoled by the defeat of Canning's adroit attempt to initiate the process of emancipation with the catholic peer (21 June 1822). His failure to defeat the retrospective clauses of the Clandestine Marriage Act of this year (3 Geo. IV, c. 75), by which marriages contracted by minors without consent of their parents or guardians were validated, further evinced the decline of his influence; and when Canning succeeded Lord Londonderry at the foreign office, his consternation was extreme. He adhered, however, tenaciously to the woolsack, and for the additional mortification caused by Huskisson's accession to the cabinet found some compensation in the defeat of the Unitarian Marriage Bill of 1824 and of the Catholic Relief Bills of that and the following year. When Canning succeeded Lord Liverpool, Eldon deserted with the rest of the tories (12 April 1827), and was succeeded in the following month by Lord Lyndhurst.

Mortification at his exclusion from the Duke of Wellington's administration intensified the obstinacy with which in the debates on the repeal of the Test and Corporation Acts (1828), and in the final struggle on catholic emancipation (1829), Eldon maintained what he knew to be a hopeless struggle. His resistance to the latter measure he carried to the point of seriously urging the king to withhold his assent in two prolonged private audiences, one on 28 March, and the other in the following month. On the accession of William IV he supported Lord Grey's amendment to the answer to the royal message (30 June 1830) with the view of postponing the dissolution. Unmanned for a time by the death of Lady Eldon (28 June 1831), he mastered himself sufficiently to lead the irreconcilable section of the opposition in the struggle on the parliamentary Reform Bill. After fiercely contesting the measure at every stage, he denounced (21 May 1832) the proposed creation of new peers as unconstitutional, and only withdrew his opposition when its futility was made apparent. Tithe commutation, the several reforms founded on the reports of the real property and common law commissioners and the Irish Church Temporalities Bill, also found in him a sturdy opponent (1831–1834). His great age and staunchness made him the idol of his party. Churchmen showed their gratitude by founding in 1829 the Eldon law scholarship, for which only churchmen and Oxford graduates were to be eligible; and Oxford honoured her high steward hardly less than her chancellor, though the latter was the hero of Waterloo, at the commemoration of 1834.

He survived to take the oaths to Queen Victoria (21 June 1837), and died of old age at Hamilton Place on 13 Jan. 1838, leaving personalty sworn under 700,000*l*. His remains were interred by those of his wife in the graveyard of Kingston Chapel, near Encombe in the Isle of Purbeck, where in 1807 he had purchased a seat. The chapel, which he had rebuilt, contains his monument with an effigy by Chantrey.

Eldon had issue two sons—viz. (1) John (*b.* 8 March 1774), who died thirty-two years before his father, on 24 Dec. 1805, leaving issue by his wife (*m.* 22 Aug. 1804), Henrietta Elizabeth, only daughter of Sir Matthew White Ridley, bart., an only son, John (*b.* 10 Dec. 1805; *d.* 13 Sept. 1854), who from 1821 bore the title Viscount Encombe, and on his grandfather's death succeeded to the earldom and estates; (2) William Henry (*b.* 25 Feb. 1795, *d.* 6 July 1832)—and two daughters, viz. (1) Elizabeth (*m.* 27 Nov. 1817, George Manley Repton, youngest son of Humphry Repton [q. v.], *d.* 16 April 1862), and (2) Frances Jane (*m.* 6 April 1820 Rev. Edward Bankes, rector of Corfe Castle).

Of middle height, well knit and active, with regular features, keen, sparkling eyes, and luxuriant hair, Eldon in the prime of life was almost the ideal of manly beauty. To please Lady Eldon he wore his hair rather long; and at her instance, on his appointment to the lord chief-justiceship, asked leave of George III to dispense with his wig out of court, but was met with the curt response, 'No, no! I will have no innovations in my time.' The liberty denied to the chief justice was, however, conceded to or usurped by the chancellor. As he advanced in years thought and care added refinement and dignity to his physiognomy without impairing the geniality of his smile or the urbanity of his manners. His constitution was as robust as his political principles; yet he wept with facility, even in public, sometimes, as on Romilly's death, from genuine feeling, sometimes, apparently, for effect. His political courage was undoubted; but he had little physical prowess. A single fall induced him to forswear riding in early manhood; and though he was never happier than when among the birds at Encombe, he was so bad a shot that Lord Stowell rallied him with killing nothing but

time. Singularly careless of outward show, no chancellor more easily maintained the dignity of his office, none more readily threw off the cares of state, not even Sir Christopher Hatton led the brawls more gaily than he. Intellectual society he shunned, and not unwisely; for he was ill-read, untravelled, and without either knowledge of or taste for the fine arts. Though in his own house he tolerated no politics but his own, he never allowed party spirit to mar the ease and intimacy of his social relations; and an inexhaustible fund of entertaining anecdote made him a most engaging companion. In later life his capacity for port wine was prodigious, and his seasoned brain was rarely in any appreciable degree affected by his potations. He was a most devoted husband, restricting his hospitality, and even discontinuing the levées which his predecessors had held, out of regard to Lady Eldon's wishes; and was an affectionate father and grandfather if somewhat exacting—he hardly forgave his daughter, Lady Elizabeth, for marrying without his consent, and was not satisfied until Lord Encombe had given him a life interest in the Stowell estates. He was also a good landlord, and unostentatiously charitable. 'Not to make the church political, but to make the state religious,' he defined as the object of church establishments; he was himself so neglectful of public worship that, with almost equal humour and truth, he was described as a buttress of the church; and though a trick of sermonising, in season and out of season, clave to him throughout life, he turned a deaf ear on the verge of the grave to the spiritual admonitions of Bishop Henry Phillpotts [q. v.]

Except in the disposal of the higher offices, his distribution of patronage was on the whole injudicious, being chiefly determined by the caprice of the royal family or any other influence which might be powerful enough to overcome his habitual indolence; and he was singularly chary of giving the coveted silk gown to members of the bar. Yet he won the affection of all who pleaded before him, from the grave and reverend seniors on the front bench to the young stuff-gownsman opening his first case, by the urbanity with which he treated them. Except by occasional sallies of wit, which, though rarely of a high order, served to vary the monotony of the proceedings, he seldom intervened during argument, but appeared to be wholly absorbed in attention, his inscrutable features giving no indication of the effect produced upon him. At the close of the case he usually reserved judgment, though no one was by nature or training better qualified to arrive at a speedy decision. The material facts of the case he grasped with a celerity almost intuitive, while a memory well stored with precedents, and an understanding of metaphysical acumen and subtlety, readily furnished him with the principles applicable to it. His indecision was due to an extreme scrupulosity, which caused him to review the case in all conceivable aspects long after he had in fact exhausted it, a propensity perhaps aggravated by a sense of his own instinctive precipitancy. Hence his decrees, like his opinions, were overlaid by a multiplicity of fine distinctions, among which the *ratio decidendi* was not always easy to grasp. They were, however, seldom appealed from, hardly ever reversed; nor, save so far as they have been rendered obsolete by legislative changes, has lapse of time materially impaired their authority. His gravest error, perhaps, was the extent to which he pushed the principle that the court will not protect by injunction works of an immoral, seditious, or irreligious tendency [see Byron, George Gordon, sixth Lord; Lawrence, Sir William; Southey, Robert; and Wolcot, John]. But, on the whole, the jurisdiction by injunction was most judiciously amplified by him; and if he overstrained the law against forestalling and regrating, and took a pedantically narrow view of the curriculum proper for grammar schools, he construed charitable bequests with exemplary liberality, and gave refinement and precision to the rules which govern the administration of estates in chancery and bankruptcy, the equities of mortgagors and mortgagees, and the remedy by specific performance.

The arrears with which he was incessantly reproached, and which occasioned the creation in 1813 of the office of vice-chancellor, the appointment in 1824 of a deputy-speaker of the House of Lords [Gifford, Robert, first Baron Gifford], and the ridiculous chancery commission of the same year, over which Eldon himself presided, were by no means wholly imputable to his dilatoriness. Chancery procedure had never been distinguished by despatch; and in Eldon's time a rapid and sustained increase of litigation combined with the unusually onerous nature of his political duties to render his position one of exceptional difficulty. Never were the judicial duties of the House of Lords more efficiently discharged than while he occupied the woolsack, though sometimes, as in the case of the Queenberry leases (1819), they involved the decision of the most intricate questions of Scottish real-property law. Nor does it fall to every chancellor to sway

cabinet councils, to investigate a Berkeley or Roxburghe peerage claim, or preside at the trial of a queen. Moreover, the relief afforded by the creation of the vice-chancellor's court fell far short of what was anticipated. Not a few of the hasty decisions of Sir John Leach were overruled by Eldon on appeal or rehearing, and some on fresh evidence. This practice of admitting fresh evidence on appeal or rehearing, however conducive to the interests of justice, was certainly calculated to impair the authority of the court below, and was severely criticised by James Abercromby (afterwards Lord Dunfermline) [q. v.] in the House of Commons on 24 Feb. 1824. Misled by an inaccurate report of his speech, Eldon publicly denounced the charge as an 'utter falsehood,' for which breach of privilege he narrowly escaped the censure of parliament, and tendered an apology. With all his hesitancy, no judge knew better how to make up for lost time; and, when so minded, he would fairly weary out his counsel by his energy and assiduity. That, after all, the quantity of business of which he disposed during his tenure of the great seal was not disproportionate to its duration is attested by the space occupied by his decisions, even when allowance is made for their prolixity, in the 'Reports' of Vesey, jun., and his contemporaries and successors, Rose, Beames, Cooper, Merivale, Buck, Swanston, Jacob and Walker, Jacob, Wilson, Turner and Russell, Glyn and Jameson, Dow and Bligh.

Eldon was F.R.S., F.S.A., a governor of the Charterhouse, and a trustee of the British Museum. He was painted by Thomas (afterwards Sir Thomas) Lawrence while he was attorney-general. His portrait by William Owen, painted in 1812, is in the Guildhall, Newcastle-upon-Tyne. The National Portrait Gallery has a replica of another portrait by Sir Thomas Lawrence—the original, done in 1824, is at Windsor Castle—and his bust by Tatham, done in 1831. Another portrait, by Pickersgill, is at Merchant Taylors' Hall, London. His visit to Oxford in 1834 is commemorated by one of Briggs's compositions, representing him seated, while Lord Encombe, in academical costume, bows to kiss his hand. The new library at University College, Oxford, contains a colossal statue of him in Carrara marble, on the same base with that of Lord Stowell, both by George Nelson from models by Musgrave Lewthwaite. Engravings of his bust by Sievier, done in 1824, are at the British Museum.

[Twiss's Life of Lord-chancellor Eldon (1844); Townsend's Lives of Twelve Eminent Judges (1846); Surtees's Sketch of the Lives of Lords Stowell and Eldon (1846); Lord Campbell's Lives of the Chancellors (1847); Law Review, i. 249, ii. 276, iii. 44; Legal Observer, i. 193, 209, xv. 208, 311; Law Mag. xxxiii. 347; Brougham's Memoirs, ii. 413, and Historical Sketches of Statesmen (1839), ii. 54; Bennet's Biogr. Sketches (1867), p. 57; Gent. Mag. 1817 ii. 554, 1831 i. 648, 1832 ii. 186, 1838 i. 313; Observations on the Judges of the Court of Chancery, and the Practice and Delays complained of in that Court (1823); Edinburgh Rev. xxxix. 246, lxxxi. 131; Quarterly Rev. lxxiv. 71; Westminster Rev. xlii. 456; North British Rev. ii. 212; Blackwood's Edinb. Mag. xiv. 627, xviii. 212, lxi. 245; Brown's Cases in Parliament, ii. 146; Cases in the House of Lords (1781); Parl. Hist. xxiv–xxxvi, and Hansard's Parl. Deb.; Howell's State Trials, xxiv.–xxv.; Commons' Journals, xxxvi. 437, xxxviii. 285; Lords' Journals, xxxvi. 279; Wraxall's Mem. ed. Wheatley; Romilly's Mem.; Buckingham's Memoirs of the Courts and Cabinets of George III, the Regency, and George IV; Phipps's Memoirs of Robert Plumer Ward, i. 371, ii. 69; Diaries of James Harris, first Earl of Malmesbury (1844), iv. 31, 223; Pellew's Life of Sidmouth, ii. 277–9; Russell's Life of Fox, iii. 325; Stapleton's Life of Canning, p. 207; Yonge's Life of Lord Liverpool; Lord Auckland's Correspondence; Plunket's Life of Lord Plunket; Scarlett's Life of Lord Abinger, p. 89; Peel's Memoirs, ed. Stanhope and Cardwell, i. 275; Greville's Memoirs of George IV and William IV; R. I. and S. Wilberforce's Life of William Wilberforce; Arnould's Life of Lord Denman, i. 233; Martin's Life of Lord Lyndhurst, pp. 262–9; Butler's Reminiscences, 4th edit. p. 135; Brand's Newcastle-upon-Tyne; Mackenzie's Newcastle-upon-Tyne, i. 217.]

J. M. R.

SCOTT, JOHN (1798–1846), surgeon, born in 1798, was only son of James Scott, a general practitioner of medicine, living at Bromley in Kent. His father acquired a large practice, and was particularly successful in the treatment of chronic ulcers and of diseased joints. John Scott was educated first at a private school in Sevenoaks, and afterwards at the Charterhouse. He was then apprenticed to Sir William Blizard [q. v.], the senior surgeon to the London Hospital in Whitechapel. He was admitted a licentiate of the Society of Apothecaries on 29 April 1819, and a member of the Royal College of Surgeons of England on 2 June 1820.

He practised with his father at Bromley for a short time, but after marrying he came to London, and was living in New Broad Street in 1824. On 24 Nov. 1826 he was elected surgeon to the Ophthalmic Hospital in Moorfields in succession to [Sir] William Lawrence. Scott was elected assistant sur-

geon to the London Hospital on 18 July 1827. He was appointed full surgeon on 28 March 1831, resigning on 3 Dec. 1845. He died at Brighton, after a prolonged illness, on 11 April 1846.

Scott revolutionised one department of surgery by introducing the passive treatment of diseased joints. His method, however, was distasteful to his contemporaries owing to the unnecessary complications with which he surrounded it; but stripped of these, his principle remains a potent factor in surgery. He treated chronic ulcers by the method his father had taught him of strapping the leg from the toes upwards, and he was thus opposed to Baynton's method, which consisted in applying the strapping for only a short distance above the ulcer. Scott's dressing and Scott's ointment are still known to every student of surgery, though they are now rarely used. His dressing had, as its base, a camphorated mercurial compound. Constant practice is said to have rendered him the most skilful bandager in London, at a time when bandaging in the London hospitals was almost a fine art.

Scott was distinguished as a surgeon by the rapidity and by the general accuracy of his diagnosis. He displayed great decision and energy in the treatment of his patients. He was a bold, but not particularly brilliant operator, and he is said to have been the first surgeon in England to remove the upper jaw. He was of an uncertain and irritable temper, which disease sometimes rendered overbearing.

His works are: 1. 'Surgical Observations on . . . Chronic Inflammations . . . particularly in Diseases of the Joints,' 8vo, London, 1828; a new edit. by W. H. Smith, London, 8vo, 1857: a most valuable work, for it lays down very clearly the necessity for putting at rest diseased joints. 2. 'Cases of Tic-douloureux and other Forms of Neuralgia,' 8vo, London, 1834. 3. 'Cataract and its Treatment,' 8vo, London, 1843: the object of this work was to introduce a sickle-shaped knife, but the instrument never came into general use.

[Medical Times and Gazette, xiv. 136; additional facts contributed to the writer by Walter Rivington, esq., F.R.C.S. Engl., consulting surgeon to the London Hospital, and by R. J. Newstead, esq., secretary of the Royal London Ophthalmic Hospital.] D'A. P.

SCOTT, JOHN (1794–1871), horse-trainer, was born at Chippenham, near Newmarket, on 8 Nov. 1794. His father was a jockey and a trainer, who became landlord of the Ship inn at Oxford, and died at Brighton in 1848, aged 97. At an early period John entered his father's stables, and at the age of thirteen won a fifty-pound plate at Blandford. As a light-weight jockey he rode for Sir Watkin Wynne, Mr. Saddler of Alsworth, Sir Sitwell Sitwell, and Mr. Stevens of Bourton-on-the-Hill, Gloucestershire. In 1815 James Croft, the trainer of Middleham, put into his charge Sir William Maxwell's Filho da Puta, which ran at Newmarket against Sir Joshua. Shortly after this he was engaged as private trainer to Mr. Houldsworth of Rockhill in Sherwood Forest. The next eight years of his life were spent at Rockhill; he then trained for two years for the Hon. E. Petre at Mansfield, Nottinghamshire, and brought out Theodore, the winner of the St. Leger in 1822 (Black, *Jockey Club*, p. 280). In 1825 he purchased Whitewall House, Malton, with training stables, which accommodated a hundred horses, and he resided there for the remainder of his life. For many years he had the best horses in England under his charge, and handled them with unrivalled skill. Among his principal employers were the Duke of Westminster, the Marquis of Exeter, Lord Derby, Lord Chesterfield, the Hon. E. Petre, Mr. John Bowes, General Anson, Lord Falmouth, and Major Yarburgh. The first victory of note which he gained from Whitewall was the St. Leger of 1827, won by the Hon. E. Petre's Matilda. Many more triumphs at Doncaster followed. Before 1862 he trained in all sixteen winners of the St. Leger.

St. Giles in 1832 was the first of six Derby winners which he trained, the others being Mundig in 1835, Attila in 1842, Cotherstone in 1843 (who also won the Two Thousand Guineas), Daniel O'Rourke (who unexpectedly beat Stockwell in 1852), and West Australian in 1853, the first horse that ever won the three great events—the Two Thousand Guineas, the Derby, and the St. Leger. He also trained eight winners of the Oaks. With Meteor he won the Two Thousand Guineas for Mr. Bowes in 1842, and with Impérieuse he beat Blink Bonny for the One Thousand Guineas in 1837. Among other horses trained at Whitewall were Velocipede, one of the best horses of his generation, Lord Derby's Toxophilite and Canezou, and Mr. Bowes's Hetman Platoff and Epirus. The Whitewall horses would have gained more victories in the south of England had the facilities for travelling been what they have become.

John Scott was much esteemed by all his employers, and among his most intimate friends was Baron Martin, who, with Rudston Read, was an executor of his will. At

Whitewall Scott accumulated many curiosities and numerous sporting pictures by Herring and Hall. He died at Whitewall House on 4 Oct. 1871, and was buried on 9 Oct. in Malton cemetery, where a monument was erected to his memory. A tablet in Norton church was similarly erected by public subscription. He married, first, Miss Baker, the daughter of an innkeeper at Mansfield; and, secondly, a lady who died at Whitewall Cottage in March 1891, aged 90. His daughter by his first wife became the wife of Mr. Farrar the trainer, and by his second wife he left a son.

[Times, 12 March 1891, p. 10; Sporting Review, September 1855, pp. 153–5, with portrait; Baily's Mag. April 1862, pp. 249–53, with portrait; Scott and Sebright, by the Druid, 1862 pp. 47–56; Illustrated Sporting and Dramatic News, 26 Dec. 1874, pp. 308, 315, with portrait; Illustrated London News, 21 Oct. 1871, pp. 375, 377, with portrait; F. Ross's Celebrities of Yorkshire Wolds, 1878, p. 145; Rice's History of the British Turf, 1879, ii. 225–30; Bell's Life in London, 7 Oct. 1871, p. 6, 14 Oct. p. 6; Black's Jockey Club, passim; Taunton's Portraits of Race Horses, 1888, ii. 127 et seq., with portraits of the horses mentioned in this article.]

G. C. B.

SCOTT, JONATHAN, LL.D. (1754–1829), orientalist, born at Shrewsbury in 1754, was the third son of Jonathan Scott of Shrewsbury by Mary, daughter of Humphrey Sandford of the Isle near that town. John Scott, afterwards Scott-Waring [q. v.], was his eldest brother. Jonathan received his first education in the Royal Free Grammar School at Shrewsbury, but left in his thirteenth year to proceed to India with his two elder brothers, John and Richard. Jonathan was gazetted to a cadetcy in 1770, and two years later to an ensigncy in the 29th native infantry of the Carnatic. He became a lieutenant in 1777, and finally captain in 1778. His abilities gained him the patronage of Warren Hastings, then governor-general of Bengal, who appointed him his Persian secretary. Scott's official duties left him little time for literary work, but in 1784 he took part in founding the Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal, of which body he remained a member until 1799. Hastings left India in February 1785, and as Scott resigned his commission in January of that year, it may be presumed that he returned to England about the same time.

In 1786 he published his first work, 'A Translation of the Memoirs of Eradut Khan; being anecdotes by a Hindoo Noble, of the Emperor Alumgeer Aurungzebe, and his successors Shaw Alum and Jehaundar Shaw.' This was followed in 1794 by a 'Translation of Ferishita's History of the Dekkan from the first Mahummedan Conquests, with a continuation from other native writers, to the reduction of its last Monarchs by the Emperor Alumgeer Arungzebe. Also with a History of Bengal from the accession of Ali Verdee Khan to the year 1780,' 2 vols. 4to. These works were followed by the 'Bahar Danush, or Garden of Knowledge; an Oriental Romance translated from the Persic of Einaiut Oollah,' 1799, 3 vols. 8vo, and by 'Tales, Anecdotes, and Letters from the Arabic and Persian,' 1809, 8vo. The last includes a number of tales translated from a fragment of a manuscript of the Thousand and One Nights, procured in Bengal by James Anderson.

In 1811 Scott published the work by which he is chiefly known, his edition of the 'Arabian Nights Entertainments,' in 6 vols., 12mo. Edward Wortley Montagu [q. v.] had brought back from Turkey an approximately complete manuscript of the work (now in the Bodleian) written in 1764. Scott proposed to make a fresh translation from this manuscript, and printed a description of it, together with a table of contents, in Ouseley's 'Oriental Collection.' He abandoned the idea later on, and contented himself with revising Galland's French version (1704–1717), saying that he found it so correct that it would be useless to go over the original afresh. But he prefixed a copious introduction, interspersed with valuable notes illustrative of the manners and customs of the Mohammedans, and added some additional tales from other sources. The work, the earliest effort to render the 'Arabian Nights' into literary English, at once became popular, and was republished in London in 1882, 4 vols. 8vo, and again in 1890, 4 vols. 8vo.

In 1802 Scott was appointed professor of oriental languages at the Royal Military College, but resigned that post in 1805. He held, about the same time, a similar position at the East India College at Haileybury. In both cases he seems to have been dissatisfied not only with the pay, but also with the status accorded him, holding that the professor of oriental languages ought to rank as one of the principal officers. In 1805 the honorary degree of D.C.L. was conferred upon him by the university of Oxford in recognition of his attainments in oriental literature. Scott was generous towards rising talent, and his townsman, Samuel Lee [q. v.], the orientalist, owed much to his instruction. He died on 11 Feb. 1829 at his residence in St. John's Row, Shrewsbury, and was buried near his parents in the bishop's

chancel of old St. Chad's Church in the same city. He married his cousin Anne, daughter of Daniel Austin, M.A., rector of Berrington, Shropshire, who survived him. By her he had issue a son who died young, and a daughter, Anna Dorothea, who married her cousin, R. W. Stokes of London.

[Gent. Mag. 1829, i. 470; India Army List; Bengal Calendar, 1788.] H. T. L.

SCOTT, JOSEPH NICOLL, M.D. (1703?–1769), dissenting minister and physician, eldest son of Thomas Scott, independent minister, was born at Hitchin, Hertfordshire, about 1703. His father, the son of Daniel Scott, a London merchant, by his first wife, and half-brother of Daniel Scott LL.D. [q.v.], was minister at Back Street Chapel, Hitchin (1700–9), and succeeded John Stackhouse as minister of a secession from the Old Meeting, Norwich, on 13 Oct. 1709. This secession had a meeting-place in the Blackfriars; but about 1717 differences were healed, and the elder Scott became minister of the Old Meeting.

Joseph Nicoll became his father's assistant about 1725. A change of his views in the Arian direction was followed by his dismissal in 1737 or 1738. To his father this was a terrible blow; his nervous system became permanently unhinged; he died on 15 Nov. 1746, aged 66. Doddridge speaks of him as 'one of the holiest and most benevolent men upon the earth.' He published two funeral sermons and an 'Attempt to prove the Godhead of Christ,' 1726, 8vo (sermon, John xx. 28; cf. his letters in Humphreys's *Correspondence of Doddridge*, iii. 424 sq.)

Dismissed from the Old Meeting, Scott was established by his friends in a Sunday lectureship at the French church, St. Mary-the-Less. At first he drew considerable audiences, and was patronised by members of the church of England. Two volumes of his discourses (1743) contain many striking sermons; one is on 'the Mahometan Revelation considered;' others affirm the ultimate annihilation of the wicked, anticipating the position of Samuel Bourn (1714–1796) [q.v.] of Norwich. His lecture was discontinued before the publication of the sermons. He studied medicine at Edinburgh, and graduated M.D. in 1744. For some years he practised in Norwich. A Mr. Reynolds, a casual acquaintance and admirer, left him an estate at Felsted, Essex; here he ended his days, dying on 23 Dec. 1769. A monument to his memory is in the Old Meeting, Norwich. 'The Gracious Warning,' a monody on his death, by George Wright, was published in 1774, 8vo. His widow (maiden name, Bell) died at Aylsham, Norfolk, in 1799, aged 87 (*Gent. Mag.* 1799, lxix. 352).

He published: 1. 'Sermons . . . in defence of all Religion . . . Natural or Revealed,' &c., 1743, 8vo, 2 vols. 2. 'An Essay towards a Translation of Homer's Works in Blank Verse, with Notes,' &c., 1755, 4to (a spirited version of thirteen selected passages from the 'Iliad'). He also revised the etymologies from classic and oriental languages for an issue (1772, fol.) of the 'English Dictionary,' by Nathan Bailey [q.v.]

[Norfolk Tour, 1829, ii. 1248; Nomina eorum qui Gradum M.D. in Academia . . . Edinburgi . . . adepti sunt, 1846, p. 3; Browne's Hist. Congr. Norf. and Suff. 1877, pp. 267 sq.; Urwick's Nonconformity in Herts, 1884, p. 650; information kindly furnished by Hardinge F. Giffard, esq., F.S.A.] A. G.

SCOTT or SCOT, MICHAEL (1175?–1234?), mathematician, physician, and scholar, possibly belonged to the family of the Scots of Balwearie, near Kirkcaldy in Fife, whose ruined castle has been identified with Castle Wearie in the weird ballad of Lammikin. Sir Walter Scott erred in identifying him with Sir Michael Scot of Balwearie, who, with Sir David Wemyss of Wemyss, was sent to fetch the Maid of Norway to Scotland in 1290. The scholar died before 1235. More probably he belonged to the border country whence all the families of Scot originally came, and where the traditions of his magic power are common. He was probably born before 1180. After he had studied successively at Oxford and at Paris (where he acquired the title of 'mathematicus'), he passed to Bologna, and thence to Palermo, where he entered the service of Don Philip, the clerk register of the court of Frederick II, in Sicily. Subsequently he continued his studies at Toledo. It has been conjectured by an anonymous commentator on Dante that Michael became the young king's tutor in Sicily, and that at Toledo he gained a knowledge of Arabic sufficient to enable him to translate 'the writings of Aristotle on Natural History and Mathematics.' At Toledo he wrote his 'Abbreviatio Avicennæ,' of which the colophon in the Vatican manuscript runs 'Explicit anno domini MCCX.' That he gained a knowledge of Arabic at Toledo is corroborated not only by the evidence of this and other works attributed to him, but by the contemporary authority of Roger Bacon (*Opus Majus*, London, ed. 1735, p. 36). In another place ('Compendium Studii,' *Opera minora*, ed. Brewer, p. 472), Bacon observes, with a touch of the jealousy of a rival scholar, 'Michael Scot, like Herman,' a German bishop and scholar of the same period,

'ascribed to himself many translations. But it is certain that Andrew, a Jew, laboured more in them. On which account Herman reported that Michael knew neither sciences nor languages.' After completing his studies at Toledo, Michael Scot became again attached to the court of Frederick II, with whom his name and writings, chiefly written at the request of Frederick, must always be intimately associated. He appears to have held the office or received the name of astrologer at the court of that emperor, and he is so designated in the Bodleian manuscript of his work on astronomy (see below). An earlier work, the 'Liber Introductorius,' professedly treats of astrology and prognostics.

Dean Milman discovered, or at least first pointed out, that Michael Scot, though his studies and works were chiefly secular, had taken holy orders and was patronised by the pope as well as by the emperor. On 16 Jan. 1223–4 Honorius III wrote to Stephen Langton urging him to find some benefice in his diocese for Master Michael Scot, who was distinguished for his eminence in science; and on 31 May 1224 the same pope granted him a dispensation to hold benefices apparently in Italy, notwithstanding his election to the Irish archbishopric of Cashel. This had been by the direct nomination of the pope, contrary to the election of the canons, who had chosen the bishop of Cork. But Michael declined the office on the ground of his ignorance of Irish (Theiner, *Monumenta Hiberniæ et Scotiæ*, p. 23; Bliss, *Cal. Papal Letters*, i. 94, 96, 98). Three years later, in 1227, Gregory IX, the successor of Honorius, renewed the request that a benefice in the diocese of Canterbury might be given to Michael Scot, but he never received any preferment in England or Ireland, though from the reference to 'benefices' which he was to be allowed to retain, it seems that he held more than one, probably in Italy (transcripts of papal letters in *Addit. MS.* Brit. Mus. 15352, ff. 214, 246; Bliss, *Cal. Papal Letters*, i. 117).

In 1230, according to Roger Bacon, 'Michael Scot appeared [at Oxford], bringing with him the works of Aristotle on natural history and mathematics, with wise expositors, so that the philosophy of Aristotle was magnified among those who spoke Latin' (apud Latinos). It is highly probable that this refers to a mission to the universities of Europe on which Frederick II sent Scot to communicate to them the versions of Aristotle which Michael himself and other learned scholars in the emperor's service had made from the Arabic. He doubtless visited Paris and Oxford, where he possibly met Bacon. He may even have revisited his native Scotland, on whose borders there were various later traditions of his death and burial—at Melrose, Glenluce, Holmcultram and Burgh under Bowness. Walter Scott of Satchells (1614?–1694?) [q. v.], the historian of the clan, was shown what was alleged to be his tomb at the last-named place in 1629, but this date is too late for a trustworthy tradition. It appears more probable that Michael returned to Italy, where the Italian traditions evidently place his death, though without naming any particular site. He must have died prior to 1235, for in a poem of Vincent of Beauvais, written in that year, 'veridicus vates Michael' is referred to as dead, 'Sic accusator fatorum fata subivit.'

His great fame and varied learning soon led to an accretion of legends round his name, which hid his real merits and transformed the man of science into a magician. A few of the legends relating to him, despite the fact that their unhistorical character has been proved by recent research, deserve to be noticed, as they have given a theme for literary treatment to many of the masters of European literature, from Dante to Sir Walter Scott.

Dante, in the 'Inferno,' c. xx., describes

> That other there, whose ribs fill scanty space,
> Was Michael Scott, who truly full well knew
> Of magical deceits the illusive grace.

Villani records two of his prophecies which were fulfilled, that 'the Dog of Verona (Can Grande) would become the Lord of Padua' (lib. x. c. 139), and that 'Foolish Florence of flowers will not long stand, but will fall into the dirt and live by dissimulation' (xii. c. 18).

Boccaccio uses as a well-known name to introduce one of his novels, 'a great master in necromancy called Michael Scot, because he was from Scotland, who received much honour from many gentlemen, of whom some still live, and when he wished to leave laid this charge on two of his scholars, that they should be always ready to serve the pleasure of the gentlemen who had honoured him (8th day, 9th novel).'

Scot is one of the great men accused of magic whom Gabriel Naudé defends. He is said to have predicted the place of the death of Frederick, 'that he should die in Firenze (Florence).' The emperor, to avoid the prophecy, would not enter that town, or even, fearing an equivocation, Faenze, but met his fate at Firenzuola (Little Florence). Scot himself, according to the Italian legend, came to his own death in the vain attempt to baffle destiny. He had invented a form of iron helmet, called cere-

brerium, to protect his head from the blow of a stone, of not more than two ounces, which was to be, as he believed, the cause of his death, and having taken it off at the elevation of the host a stone of that weight fell from the roof of the church, which killed him. One version of the story charges him with lifting his helmet in mockery or hypocrisy, as he, like the emperor, was accused of infidelity. The Scottish tradition, on the other hand, which has gained circulation from its adoption by Scott in the 'Lay of the Last Minstrel,' brought him back to his native country, where, especially in the south, 'any work of great labour or antiquity is ascribed either to Auld Michael, Sir William Wallace, or the Devil,' and, though tradition varied between Holmcultram and Melrose Abbey, 'it was agreed that his Books of Magic were interred in his grave, or preserved in the convent where he died' (*Lay*, canto ii. and notes). His death was attributed to his supping the broth of a 'breme' sow (i.e. a sow in heat), and not to the fall of a stone, as in the Italian legend. The wonders worked by him through diabolic agency, which he invoked by drawing a circle with his magic wand, and sometimes accomplished by invisible rides through the air on a demon horse, or through the sea on a demon ship, grew with time and the invention of story-tellers. Perhaps one of these tales of his ride on a jet-black horse as envoy to the king of France from Scotland, when the first stamp of his steed rang the bells of Notre-Dame, the second threw down the palace towers, and, to avoid the third, the king granted all he asked, may have contributed to his erroneous identification with Sir Michael Scott, the ambassador to Norway in 1290.

A novel called 'Sir Michael Scot' was published by Allan Cunningham in 1828, and Coleridge projected a drama on his life which he deemed a better theme than Faust.

Of those works attributed to Michael Scot which appear to be genuine, the following have been printed: 1. 'Liber Physiognomiæ Magistri Michaelis Scoti,' 1477, of which there are, it is said, eighteen editions in all, Latin, German, and Italian. It is sometimes entitled 'Liber de Secretis Naturæ,' and bound up with a work attributed to Albertus Magnus, 'De Secretis Mulierum,' which accounts, as well as Scot's character as a magician, for the opinion that he dealt with forbidden subjects, or at least subjects better left to medical science. Scot's work contains a treatise on generation, as well as one on physiognomy. The former is worthless; the latter is a curious anticipation of the line of inquiry since pursued by Lavater and others, and, like Lavater, it differs from phrenology in treating not the head only, but all parts of the body as significant of character. 2. A translation into Latin of Aristotle's work on natural history, 'De Animalibus,' of which Scot probably made two versions, one entitled 'De Animalibus ad Cæsarem' and the other 'Tractatus Avicennæ de Animalibus.' It is included in the edition of Aristotle's works published at Venice in 1496, with the title 'Aristotelis Opera Latinè versa, partim è Greco partim ex Arabico, per viros lectos, et in utriusque Linguæ prolatione peritos, jussu Imperatoris Frederici II.' There seems to have been a separate print of this in 1493, and there are eight manuscripts of it in the Royal Library, Paris, and one in the Vatican, the colophon of which has been already mentioned. 3. 'Quæstio Curiosa de Natura Solis et Lunæ,' printed in 'Theatrum Chemicum,' vol. v., Strasburg, 1622: a work on alchemy and the philosopher's stone. 4. 'Mensa Philosophica, seu Enchiridion in quo de quæstionibus memorabilibus et variis ac jucundis hominum congressibus agitur,' Frankfurt, 1602, 12mo; Leipzig, 1603, and frequently reprinted and published in English, under the title of 'The Philosopher's Banquet, 1614; but this work is attributed by others to Theobald Anguilbert, an Irish physician, under whose name it was published in Paris in 1500.

Whether the treatise on the 'Sphere of Sacrobosco' [see Holywood, John] is by Michael Scot is not certain, but his authorship is assumed by Kästner in his 'History of Mathematics,' where it is noted under the title 'Eximii atque excellentissimi Physicorum Motuum Cursusque Syderii investigatoris Mich. Scotti super Auctorem Sphæræ, cum quæstionibus diligenter emendatis incipit Expositio perfecta, Illustrissimi Imperatoris D.D. Frederici precibus,' Bologna, 1495. This work is also attributed to Michael Scot in Sir Robert Sibbald's manuscript 'Historia Literaria Gentis Scotorum,' Advocates' Library, Edinburgh.

The following works are still in manuscript:—

I. Astronomy.—1. 'Astronomia' or 'Liber Particularis,' Bibl. Bodl. MSS. Canon Misc. 555, attributed in the colophon to 'Michael Scot, Astrologer to the Lord Frederick, Emperor of Rome.' 2. 'Liber Introductorius,' Bodl. MS. 266, has the colophon, 'Expliciunt judicia secundum scientiam Michaelis Scoti grandis astrologi quondam Imperatoris Frederici de terrâ Teutonicâ,' and the preface says it was the second book composed by

Michael Scot for the Emperor Frederick. 3. 'Liber Magistri Michaelis Scoti in quo continetur Magisterium Speciale,' MS. Bodl. No. 44 (see CARINI, *Sulle Scienze Occulte nel Medio Evo*, Palermo, 1872).

II. ALCHEMY.—4. 'Liber Luminis Luminum,' MS. Riciardi Florence L. iii. 13, 119. 5. 'De Alchemia,' Corpus Christi, Oxford, MS. cxxv. pp. 88 et seq. This work contains receipts by Scot, and among them one for the transmutation of lead into gold. 6. 'De Sphæra,' a translation of the Arabic work of Alpetrongi, made in 1217; MSS. Paris, Ancien Fonds, 7399, and Fonds de Sorbonne, 1820 (JOURDAIN, *Recherches*, p. 133).

III. TRANSLATIONS.—7. 'Translation of the Commentary of Averroes,' on the pseudo-Aristotelian work 'De Cœlo et Mundo,' dedicated by Michael Scot to Stephen de Provins; MSS. Paris, Fonds de Sorbonne, 924, 950; Venice St. Mark, vi. 54; Rome, Fondo Vaticano, 2089, 2184. 8. 'Translation of the Commentary of Averroes on the De Animâ of Aristotle,' MSS. Paris Sorbonne, 932, 943, Ancien Fonds 6504, Venice St. Mark, MSS. vi. 54. 9. 'Translation of the Nova Ethica' of Aristotle from the Greek into Latin was attributed to Michael Scot in a thirteenth-century manuscript in the library of St. Omer, but the work, if by Scot, is not extant. 10. 'Certain Medical Receipts,' especially on the urine, by Michael Scot, are given as taken from 'the' book of Master Michael Scot, physician to the Emperor Frederick, and from the works of other doctors in an Italian work on medicine; MS. Vatican, Fondo della Regina di Svezia, 1159. Other prescriptions of Michael Scot have been handed down.

[Wood's Historia Univ. Oxon. p. 121; Life of Michael Scot in Tytler's Scottish Worthies; Life by James Bruce, Edinburgh, 1846; Histoire Littéraire de la France, xx. 43, contains a life by Daunou; Biographie Universelle, 1825, tome xli.; Sir W. Scott's Lay of the Last Minstrel, and notes; Kington's Life of the Emperor Frederick II; Milman's Michael Scot almost an Archbishop, published by the Philobiblon Society, 1854. The earlier lives are all superseded by the Life and Legend of Michael Scot (1175–1232), by the Rev. J. Wood Brown, M.A., 1897, which collects and supplements the results of Jourdain, Renan, and other French and Italian scholars, gives a full list of Scottish authorities and all references of importance to him in modern continental literature. The writer is greatly indebted to Mr. Brown for the perusal of the proofs.] Æ. M.

SCOTT, MICHAEL (1789–1835), author of 'Tom Cringle's Log,' born at Cowlairs on the outskirts of Glasgow 30 Oct. 1789, was fifth and youngest son of Allan Scott, a Glasgow merchant and owner of a small estate at Cowlairs. Scott was educated at the high school, Glasgow, and between 1801 and 1805 attended the university. In 1806 he went to Jamaica to manage some estates, and there he met a Mr. Hamilton, who figures in 'Tom Cringle's Log' as Aaron Bang. In 1810 he entered business in Kingstown. This compelled him to travel frequently, both by sea and road, and the experiences of this time form the basis of the 'Log.' In 1817 he came to Scotland on a prolonged visit, and in 1818 he married Margaret, daughter of Robert Bogle of Gilmorehill, merchant in Glasgow. He returned to Jamaica immediately afterwards, but left the island finally in 1822 and settled in Glasgow. There he entered business on his own account, and became a partner in his father-in-law's firm, Bogle, Harris, & Co. of Glasgow, and Bogle, Douglas, & Co. of Maracaybo. He was engaged in business until his death, which took place in Glasgow, 7 Nov. 1835. He left a large family.

'Tom Cringle's Log' appeared in 'Blackwood's Magazine,' beginning with the September number of 1829; the final chapters appeared in August 1833. The instalments were intermittent at first, and each had its own title. Blackwood advised that the papers should be connected so as to make a continuous narrative, and in the June issue of 1831 'Tom Cringle's Log' was first used as a title, but then only as the title of a single paper. As the story appeared it received a warm welcome. Coleridge pronounced it to be 'most excellent,' but Captain Marryat thought it melodramatic. There is some doubt as to where the chapters were written, and Anthony Trollope in 'The West Indies and the Spanish Main' refers to a tradition that the work was written at Raymond Lodge, the house which Scott occupied in Jamaica. It was probably written in Glasgow in the intervals of business. It first appeared in book form at Paris in 1836, after Scott's death. Scott so successfully concealed his identity that he was dead before his authorship of 'Tom Cringle' was known.

Scott's second story, 'The Cruise of the Midge,' also appeared serially in 'Blackwood's Magazine' between March 1834 and June 1835. Like 'Tom Cringle's Log,' it was first printed anonymously in book form at Paris in 1836. The effect is marred by a laboured jocosity, though the narrative is full of spirit and of observation at first hand. Both works have run through numerous editions.

[Allibone's Dict.; 'Tom Cringle's Log,' with introduction by Mowbray Morris.] J. R. M.

SCOTT or **SCOT, PATRICK** (*fl.* 1620), author, followed James I from Scotland into England on his accession. In June 1618 he was engaged in the work of raising voluntary gifts for the supply of the king's exchequer by threatening divers persons with prosecutions for usury (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1618, p. 538). Six years later (August 1624) James I wrote a letter of recommendation on his behalf (*ib.* clxxi. 37). He would appear, from the general tone of his works, to have occasionally acted as tutor to Prince Charles. In 1623 and 1625 he appears to have been in Amsterdam, and to have observed closely the life of the separatist churches there (Hanbury, *Memorials*, i. 473). Scot's writings are remarkable for liberality of sentiment. They are: 1. 'Omnibus et singulis affording matter profitable for all men, necessarie for every man, alluding to a father's advice or last will to his sonne,' London, 1619; (dedicated to King James and Prince Charles). At the end are some verses, 'ad serenissimam Magnæ Britanniæ Annam reginam defunctam.' The work was rearranged and revised as 'A Father's Advice or Last Will to his Son,' London, 1620. 2. 'Calderwood's Recantation, or a Tripartite Discourse directed to such of the Ministrie and others in Scotland that refuse Conformitie to the Ordinances of the Church,' &c., London, 1622 (epistle to the reader dated from Amsterdam, 29 Nov. 1622). 3. 'The Tillage of Light, or a True Discoverie of the Philosophical Elixir commonly called the philosopher's stone,' London, 1623 (dedicated to John, marquis of Hamilton, 'your devoted servant'). 4. 'Vox Vera, or observations from Amsterdam examining the late insolencies of some pseudo-puritans separatists from the church of Great Britaine,' London, 1625.

[Authorities as in text; Scot's Works.]

W. A. S.

SCOTT or **SCOT, REGINALD** or **REYNOLD** (1538?–1599), writer against the belief in witches, was son of Richard Scot, second son of Sir John Scot (*d.* 1533) of Scots Hall in Smeeth, Kent [see under Scott, Sir William, *d.* 1350]. His mother was Mary, daughter of George Whetenall, sheriff of Kent in 1527. The father died before 1544, and his widow remarried Fulk Onslow, clerk of the parliament; dying on 8 Oct. 1582, she was buried in the church of Hatfield, Hertfordshire. Reginald or Reynold (as he signed his name in accordance with contemporary practice) was born about 1538. On 16 Dec. 1554 his uncle, Sir Reginald Scot, died and included him in the entail of his family estate in default of his own issue, but this disposition was without practical result. Next year, when about seventeen, he entered Hart Hall, Oxford, but left the university without a degree. His writings attest some knowledge of law, but he is not known to have joined any inn of court. Marrying in 1568, he seems to have spent the rest of his life in his native county. His time was mainly passed as an active country gentleman, managing property which he inherited from his kinsfolk about Smeeth and Brabourne, or directing the business affairs of his first cousin, Sir Thomas Scot, who proved a generous patron, and in whose house of Scots Hall he often stayed [see Scott, Sir William, *d.* 1350, ad fin.] He was collector of subsidies for the lathe of Shepway in 1586 and 1587, and he was doubtless the Reginald Scot who acted in 1588 as a captain of untrained foot-soldiers at the county muster. He was returned to the parliament of 1588–9 as member for New Romney, and he was probably a justice of the peace. He describes himself as 'esquire' in the title-page of his 'Discoverie,' and is elsewhere designated 'armiger.' He witnessed the will of his cousin Sir Thomas on 27 Dec. 1594, and made his own will (drawing it with his own hand) on 15 Sept. 1599. He died at Smeeth on 9 Oct. following, and was doubtless buried in the church there. He married at Brabourne, on 11 Oct. 1568, Jane Cobbe of Cobbes Place, in the parish of Aldington. By her he had a daughter Elizabeth, who married Sackville Turnor of Tablehurt, Sussex. Subsequently Scot married a second wife, a widow named Alice Collyar, who had a daughter Mary by her former husband. His small properties about Brabourne, Aldington, and Romney Marsh he left to his widow. The last words of his will run: 'Great is the trouble my poor wife hath had with me, and small is the comfort she hath received at my hands, whom if I had not matched withal I had not died worth one groat.'

Scot wrote two books, each in its own department of high practical value, and indicating in the author exceptional enlightenment. In 1574 he published his 'Perfect Platform of a Hop-garden, and necessary instructions for the making and maintainance thereof, with Notes and Rules for Reformation of all Abuses.' The work, which is dedicated to Serjeant William Lovelace of Bethersden, is the first practical treatise on hop culture in England; the processes are illustrated by woodcuts. Scot, according to a statement of the printer, was out of London while the work was going through the press. A second edition, 'now newly

corrected and augmented,' appeared in 1576, and a third in 1578.

More noticeable and no less useful was Scot's 'The Discouerie of Witchcraft, wherein the Lewde dealing of Witches and Witchmongers is notablie detected, in sixteen books ... whereunto is added a Treatise upon the Nature and Substance of Spirits and Devils,' 1584. At the end of the volume the printer gives his name as William Brome.

There are four dedications—one to Sir Roger Manwood, chief baron of the exchequer, another to Scot's cousin, Sir Thomas Scot, a third jointly to John Coldwell [q. v.], dean of Rochester (afterwards bishop of Salisbury), and William Redman [q. v.], archdeacon of Canterbury (afterwards bishop of Norwich), and a fourth 'to the readers.' Scott enumerates no less than 212 authors whose works in Latin he had consulted, and twenty-three authors who wrote in English. The names in the first list include many Greek and Arabic writers; among those in the second are Bale, Fox, Sir Thomas More, John Record, Barnabe Googe, Abraham Fleming, and William Lambarde. But Scot's information was not only derived from books. He had studied the superstitions respecting witchcraft in courts of law in country districts, where the prosecution of witches was unceasing, and in village life, where the belief in witchcraft flourished in an endless number of fantastic forms. With remarkable boldness and an insight that was far in advance of his age, he set himself to prove that the belief in witchcraft and magic was rejected alike by reason and religion, and that spiritualistic manifestations were wilful impostures or illusions due to mental disturbance in the observers. He wrote with the philanthropic aim of staying the cruel persecution which habitually pursued poor, aged, and simple persons, who were popularly credited with being witches. The maintenance of the superstition he laid to a large extent at the door of the Roman catholic church, and he assailed with much venom credulous writers like Jean Bodin (1530–1596), author of 'Démonomie des Sorciers' (Paris, 1580), and Jacobus Sprenger, joint-author of 'Malleus Maleficarum' (Nuremberg, 1494). Of Cornelius Agrippa (1486–1535) and John Wier (1515–1588), author of 'De Præstigiis Demonum' (Basle, 1566), whose liberal views he adopted, he invariably spoke with respect. Scot performed his task so thoroughly that his volume became an exhaustive encyclopædia of contemporary beliefs about witchcraft, spirits, alchemy, magic, and legerdemain. Scot only fell a victim to contemporary superstition in his references to medicine and astrology. He believed in the medicinal value of the unicorn's horn, and thought that precious stones owed their origin to the influence of the heavenly bodies.

Scot's enlightened work attracted widespread attention. It did for a time 'make great impressions on the magistracy and clergy' (Ady). Gabriel Harvey in his 'Pierce's Supererogation,' 1593 (ed. Grosart, ii. 291), wrote: 'Scotte's discoovery of Witchcraft dismasketh sundry egregious impostures, and in certaine principall chapters, and speciall passages, hitteth the nayle on the head with a witnesse; howsoever I could have wished he had either dealt somewhat more curteously with Monsieur Bondine [i.e. Bodin], or confuted him somewhat more effectually.' The ancient belief was not easily uprooted, and many writers came to its rescue. After George Gifford (*d.* 1620) [q. v.], in two works published respectively in 1587 and 1593, and William Perkins (1558–1602) [q. v.] had sought to confute Scot, James VI of Scotland repeated the attempt in his 'Dæmonologie' (1597), where he described the opinions of Wier and Scot as 'damnable.' On his accession to the English throne James went a step further, and ordered all copies of Scot's 'Discoverie' to be burnt (cf. Gisbert Voet, *Selectarum Disputationum Theologicarum* Pars Tertia, Utrecht, 1659, p. 564). John Rainolds [q.v.] in 'Censura Librorum Apocryphorum' (1611), Richard Bernard in 'Guide to Grand Jurymen' (1627), Joseph Glanvill [q.v.] in 'Philosophical Considerations touching Witches and Witchcraft' (1666), and Meric Casaubon in 'Credulity and Uncredulity' (1668) continued the attack on Scot's position, which was defended by Thomas Ady in 'A Treatise concerning the Nature of Witches and Witchcraft' (1656), and by John Webster in 'The Displaying of Supposed Witchcraft' (1677). More interesting is it to know that Shakespeare drew from his study of Scot's book hints for his picture of the witches in 'Macbeth,' and that Middleton in his play of the 'Witch' was equally indebted to the same source.

Abroad the book met with a good reception. A translation into Dutch, edited by Thomas Basson, an English stationer living at Leyden, appeared there in 1609. It was undertaken on the recommendation of the professors, and was dedicated to the university curators and the burgomaster of Leyden. A second edition, published by G. Basson, the first editor's son, was printed at Leyden in 1637.

In 1651 the book was twice reissued in

London in quarto by Richard Cotes; the two issues slightly differ from each other in the imprint on title-page. Another reissue was dated 1654. A third edition in folio, dated 1665, included nine new chapters, and added a second book to 'The Discourse on Devils and Spirits.' In 1886 Dr. Brinsley Nicholson [q. v.] edited a good reprint of the first edition of 1584, with the additions of that of 1665.

[Dr. Brinsley Nicholson's Introduction to his reprint of the Discoverie of Witchcraft (1886); Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ed. Bliss, i. 679; Scott's Memorials of the Scot family of Scots Hall, 188–90; Retrospective Review, v. 87–136; information kindly given by Edmund Ward Oliver, esq.] S. L.

SCOTT, ROBERT (1777–1841), engraver, son of Robert and Grizell Scott, was born on 13 Nov. 1777 at Lanark, where his father was a skinner. He attended the grammar school at Musselburgh, and at the age of ten was articled to Andrew Robertson, an engraver at Edinburgh; there he also worked in the Trustees Academy. Scott first became known by some plates in Dr. James Anderson's 'The Bee' for 1793 and 1794, and a set of 'Views of Seats and Scenery chiefly in the Environs of Edinburgh,' from drawings by A. Carse and A. Wilson, published in 1795 and 1796. Though possessed of very limited abilities, he was esteemed in his day for his small book illustrations, of which he carried on an extensive manufactory in Parliament Stairs, Edinburgh, employing many assistants. Scott's best work was in landscape, which he rendered with much truth of detail. He engraved all the illustrations to Barry's 'History of the Orkney Islands,' 1805, and to 'Scenery of Allan Ramsay's Gentle Shepherd,' 1808; he also for many years contributed plates to the 'Scots Magazine,' and put in the landscape backgrounds of some of those for Bell's 'British Poets,' which were sent to him from London for the purpose. He was employed by Henry Mozley, a publisher at Gainsborough (father of Thomas Mozley [q. v.] and James Bowling Mozley [q. v.]), for whose edition of Thomson's 'Seasons,' 1804, he engraved four plates after John Burnet. Scott's latest work was a set of twenty views of 'Scenery of Edinburgh and Midlothian,' 1838, from drawings by his son, W. B. Scott. He died early in 1841. By his wife Ross Bell, to whom he was married in 1800, he had two sons, David Scott and William Bell Scott, who are separately noticed. Among his pupils were John Burnet [q. v.], John Horsburgh [q. v.], and James Stewart (1791–1863) [q. v.]

[Bryan's Dict. of Painters and Engravers, ed. Armstrong; W. B. Scott's Memoir of David Scott; Autobiography of W. B. Scott, 1892.] F. M. O'D.

SCOTT, ROBERT (1811–1887), lexicographer and dean of Rochester, born on 26 Jan. 1811 at Bondleigh, Devonshire, was son of Alexander Scott, then rector there. His father moved to Egremont Rectory, Cumberland, and Robert attended St. Bees, and afterwards Shrewsbury School, then under Dr. Samuel Butler [q. v.], afterwards bishop of Lichfield. He entered Christ Church, Oxford (of which he was elected a student along with H. G. Liddell), in January 1830. He was Craven scholar in 1830, Ireland scholar in 1833, and in the same year graduated B.A. with first class in the final classical school. In 1834 he gained the Latin essay, and became fellow of Balliol in 1835, acting as tutor in that college (with Archibald Campbell Tait, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury) until 1840. He was ordained in 1835, and held the college living of Duloe, Cornwall, from 1845 to 1850. He was prebendary of Exeter from 1845 to 1866, and held the rectory of South Luffenham, Rutland, from 1850 to 1854, being select preacher at Oxford in 1853–4. In 1854 he was elected master of Balliol College, in succession to Dr. Richard Jenkyns [q. v.], and in opposition to Benjamin Jowett, whose orthodoxy was questioned. Scott held the mastership until 1870, being also Dean Ireland's professor of exegesis from 1861 to 1870. He was dean of Rochester from 1870 to his death, being again select preacher at Oxford in 1874–5. During his tenure of office Balliol College, which had already made marked progress under Dr. Jenkyns, became one of the most prominent colleges, if not the leading college, in the university. Dr. Scott joined to a most zealous and successful performance of his duties first as tutor, afterwards as parish priest, and subsequently as master of Balliol and as dean of Rochester, a zealous devotion to scholarship. This he displayed most conspicuously in the great Greek-English lexicon which he compiled with Dr. H. G. Liddell, dean of Christ Church, and which opened a new epoch in Greek scholarship in England. The work was begun, on the basis of Passow's lexicon, in 1836. After seven years of labour the first edition was brought out by the Clarendon Press in 1843. Its revision continued for forty years to be the constant occupation of its joint authors, the seventh and enlarged edition being published in 1883. It remains the most complete and authoritative book of the kind. Dr. Scott was also the

author of 'Twelve Sermons' (1851) and of 'University Sermons' (1860). He contributed to the 'Speaker's Commentary' a commentary on the Epistle of St. James, and was member of the revision committee for the New Testament and the Apocrypha.

Scott died at the deanery, Rochester, on 2 Dec. 1887. He married, first, on 1 Dec. 1840, Mary Harriet, daughter of Rear-admiral Thomas Folliott Bough, who died on 5 Dec. 1845; and, secondly, on 7 June 1849, Mary Jane Ann, daughter of Major Hugh Scott, who died on 6 Jan. 1885.

[Guardian, 14 Dec. 1887 (art. by Archdeacon Palmer); Campbell and Abbott's Life of Jowett, 1897; personal knowledge.] H. C.

SCOTT, ROBERT BISSET (1774–1841), military writer, born in 1774, is chiefly noteworthy in connection with military law. He was commissioned as lieutenant in the Tower Hamlets militia on 9 Nov. 1807. In 1810 he published anonymously his first work, 'The Military Law of England (with all the principal authorities) adapted to the general use of the Army in its various Duties and Relations, and the Practice of Courts-martial.' He was himself brought to a court-martial by his colonel on 19 Dec. 1811 for neglect of orders and for breaking his arrest; but the court practically acquitted him, and even the private admonition which they adjudged was remitted. They considered that the facts brought forward in support of the charges were of a vexatious nature.

Two years afterwards his colonel, Mark Beaufoy [q. v.], was tried by court-martial, Scott being the prosecutor. The trial lasted from 26 Oct. to 24 Nov. 1813. The court acquitted Beaufoy of most of the numerous charges, but found him guilty of some irregularities in the enlistment of recruits, and of culpable neglect in not preventing illegal deductions from the men's pay. They sentenced him to be removed from the command of his regiment, which he had held since it was first raised in 1797, but they stated that, in the conduct of the prosecution, Scott had not been 'actuated by that regard for the service which alone ought to influence an officer upon such an occasion.' The result was that, while the sentence was confirmed, Scott was informed that his further services would be dispensed with (22 Jan. 1814).

He then started a weekly paper, 'The Military Register,' and published in 1816 'The Stratagems of War,' a translation of Frontinus. In 1830 he went to Portugal to serve against Dom Miguel, and is said to have liberated Sir John Milley Doyle [q. v.] from prison; but this must be a mistake, for Doyle was liberated two years before at the instance of Sir Frederick Lamb. In 1836, on the recommendation of Sir Herbert Taylor, William IV made him a pensioner of the Charterhouse, where he died on 22 Oct. 1841. He was twice married.

Besides the works mentioned, he published 'The Excellence of the British Military Code . . . exemplified,' London, 1811, 8vo.

[Gent. Mag. 1841, ii. 657; Hodder's History of the 7th Battalion Rifle Brigade (formerly Tower Hamlets Militia); Military Extracts in the library of the R.U.S. Institution which contain a full report of the two trials (vi. 408).] E. M. L.

SCOTT, ROBERT EDEN (1770–1811), philosopher, born at Old Aberdeen in 1770, graduated M.A. at the University and King's College, Aberdeen, on 30 March 1785, was appointed regent on 8 May 1788, and, after holding in co-professoriate the chair of natural philosophy interchangeably with those of Greek, mathematics, and moral philosophy, held the last exclusively from 1800 until his death, which occurred at Edinburgh on 21 Jan. 1811. His portrait is in the possession of the University of Aberdeen. Scott married at Old Aberdeen, on 19 Feb. 1797, Rachel Forbes of Thainstown. He was author of: 1. 'Elements of Rhetoric,' 1802. 2. 'Elements of Intellectual Philosophy, or an Analysis of the Powers of the Human Understanding,' Edinburgh, 1805, 8vo. 3. 'Inquiry into the Limits and Peculiar Objects of Physical and Metaphysical Science,' Edinburgh, 1810, 8vo. He belonged to the Scottish, or common-sense, school of philosophy.

[Scots Mag. 1797 p. 143, 1811 p. 159; Officers and Graduates of Univ. and King's Coll. Aberdeen (New Spalding Club), 1893, pp. 64, 259, 320; Blakey's Hist. Ment. Phil. iv. 23.] J. M. R.

SCOTT, SAMUEL (1710?–1772), marine painter, was born in London about 1710. From 27 to 31 May 1732 he made a celebrated 'Five days' Peregrination' in the Isle of Sheppey in company with William Hogarth [q. v.] and other friends. The journal of the 'Five Days' was written by Ebenezer Forrest [q. v.] and published in 1782, illustrated with drawings by Hogarth and Scott, aquatinted by R. Livesay. The manuscript is in the King's Library at the British Museum. It was reprinted with the illustrations by Hotten in 1872. Between 1761 and 1771 Scott exhibited three works at the Society of Artists, one at the Free Society, and one,

'A View of the Tower of London,' at the Royal Academy in 1771. He was one of the early draughtsmen in watercolours, and has been called the father of English watercolour, but his chief works are in oil. He earned a considerable and well-deserved reputation by his shore and river scenes, which were well drawn and painted, and enlivened with figures, some of which were supplied by Hogarth. Horace Walpole (who had a large collection of his works) says that they 'will charm in every age,' and that 'if he was second to Vandeveldt in seapieces, he excelled him in variety.' His views of London Bridge, the Custom-house Quay, and other pictures of the Thames earned him the name of the English Canaletto. He lived at Twickenham, but retired to Bath, where he died in Walcot Street, of gout, 12 Oct. 1772, leaving an only daughter. His collection of drawings, prints, &c., was sold by Langford in January 1773. There is a good portrait of Scott by Hudson in the National Gallery and four of his pictures of London. He was the master of William Marlow [q. v.]

[Walpole's Anecdotes, ed. Wornum; Redgrave's Dict.; Bryan's Dict.; Graves's (Algernon) Dict.; Hogarth's Frolic (Hotten); Cat. of National Gallery.] C. M.

SCOTT, SARAH (*d.* 1795), historian and novelist, was the younger daughter of Matthew Robinson (*d.* 1778) of West Layton in the parish of Hutton Magna, Yorkshire, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Drake, recorder of Cambridge. She was the younger sister of Matthew Robinson, second lord Rokeby, and of Mrs. Elizabeth Montagu [q. v.], and as the two sisters were said to be 'as like as two peas,' she was nicknamed 'The Pea.' About 1751 she married George Lewis Scott [q. v.], and on 30 April 1752 Mrs. Delany writes on the 'foolish choice' which Mrs. Scott has made for herself, adding that her husband was 'a very bad man' (*Life and Correspondence*, iii. 115). There were no doubt faults on both sides; for they parted 'through disagreement of tempers.'

After the separation Mrs. Scott went to live with Lady Barbara (or Bab) Montagu, sister of George Montagu Dunk, second earl of Halifax [q. v.], and the two ladies united their income. They dwelt together until the death of Lady Bab in 1765, when Mrs. Scott, whose 'restlessness was one of her foibles,' continually changed her place of abode. She died in obscurity at Catton, near Norwich, on 30 Nov. 1795. By her last injunctions, all her letters and papers were burnt. Mrs. Scott was an industrious if dull writer. In her own day she was described as an 'excellent historian, of great acquirements, extraordinary memory and strong sense.'

All of her works were published without her name. They comprised: 1. 'History of Cornelia,' a novel (anon.), 1750. 2. 'Journey through Every Stage of Life' (anon.), 1754, 2 vols., a history of several fictitious characters, mostly lovers. 3. 'Agreeable Ugliness, or the Trial of the Graces' (anon.), 1754. 4. 'History of Gustavus Ericson, King of Sweden, by Henry Augustus Raymond,' 1761, a scarce volume. 5. 'History of Mecklenburgh' (anon.), 1762; 2nd edit. 1762. It was suggested by the marriage of George III. 6. 'Description of Millennium Hall, by a Gentleman on his Travels,' 1762; 2nd edit. 1764; 4th edit. 1778. An account of a country house and of the several ladies inhabiting it. A note by Horace Walpole on a copy of the second edition at the British Museum states that it was written by Lady Barbara Montagu and Mrs. Scott. 7. 'Man of Real Sensibility, or the History of Sir George Ellison' (anon.), 1765 (?), forty pages. This was afterwards expanded into 'The History of Sir George Ellison,' 1766, 2 vols. 8. 'Test of Filial Duty, in a series of Letters between Emilia Leonard and Charlotte Arlington,' 1772, 2 vols.: excellent morality, but dull reading. 9. 'Life of Theodore Agrippa d'Aubigné' (anon.), 1772, an account of the most 'remarkable occurrences during the civil wars of France.' This work acquired much reputation.

[Gent. Mag. 1795 ii. 1056, 1798 ii. 826; Brydges's Censura Literaria, i. 293–5; Notes and Queries, 7th ser. viii. 116; Gent. Mag. 1805, i. 218–21, ii. 811–12; Doran's A Lady of the Last Century: Mrs. Montagu, 1873, and Letters of Mrs. Elizabeth Montagu.] W. P. C.

SCOTT or SCOT, THOMAS (1423–1500), archbishop of York. [See ROTHERHAM.]

SCOTT or SCOT, THOMAS (1480?–1539), Scottish judge, was the second son of Sir William Scott of Balwearie [q. v.] and Janet, daughter of Thomas Lundy. Thomas obtained a charter under the great seal of the lands and house of Petgormo on 2 Jan. 1526 (DOUGLAS, *Baronage*, p. 304). On 19 Nov. 1532 he was appointed an ordinary judge in place of his father, with the title of Lord Petgormo. He was a great favourite with James V, by whom he was appointed justice clerk in 1535. He died in 1539. According to the legend related by Knox in his 'History of the Reformation,' Scot visited the king at Linlithgow on the night of his own death 'with a company of devils,' announcing

that he (Scot) was 'adjudged to endless torment' (Knox, *History*, ed. 1644, p. 25).

[Brunton and Haig's Senators of the College of Justice.] G. S–h.

SCOTT, THOMAS (1580?–1626), political writer, born about 1580, occurs as one of the chaplains to James I in 1616, being then B.D. He was incorporated in that degree at Cambridge in 1620 as a member of Peterhouse, but the university records do not state where he originally graduated. He was rector of St. Saviour's, Norwich, and when Count Gondomar arrived in England to settle preliminaries for the marriage of Prince Charles with the infanta of Spain, he had the temerity to publish in 1620 a tract against the projected match. It was entitled 'Vox Populi,' and purported to give an account of Gondomar's reception by the council of state upon his return to Madrid in 1618. The ambassador is there made to explain his schemes for bringing England into subjection to Spain, to describe with evident satisfaction the crowds which went to assist at mass in his chapel in London, and to recount how he had won over the leading courtiers by his bribes. The whole story was an impudent fabrication, but at the time it was widely received as a piece of genuine history (Gardiner, *Hist. of England*, iii. 392, 393; cf. D'Ewes, *Autobiogr.* i. 158). John Chamberlain on 3 Feb. 1620–1 informed Sir Dudley Carleton that 'the author of "Vox Populi" is discovered to be one Scot, a minister, bewrayed by the printer, who thereby hath saved himself, and got his pardon, though the book were printed beyond sea' (Birch, *Court and Times of James I*, ii. 226). Again, the Rev. Joseph Mead, writing on 10 Feb. 1620–1, tells Sir Martin Stuteville that 'Scot of Norwich, who is said to be the author of "Vox Populi," they say is now fled, having, as it seems, fore-notice of the pursuivant' (*ib.* ii. 226). In 'Vox Regis' (1624) Scott gave in somewhat obscure biblical language an account of the motives which induced him to write 'Vox Populi,' and the consequences of that publication to himself. 'Vox Populi' was suppressed by royal authority. Dr. Samuel Harsnett, bishop of Norwich, was commanded to institute proceedings against him (*State Papers*, Dom. James I, vol. cxxiv. *nn.* 20, 75). Scott's absence from England was brief. He preached an assize sermon at Bury St. Edmund's on 20 March 1622, being then 'minister of the word' at St. Clement's, Ipswich, and chaplain to William, earl of Pembroke. But it is probable that Scott quitted England for the Netherlands towards the close of 1623, when he became preacher to the English garrison at Utrecht. There he continued writing pamphlets against the Roman catholics, many of which were published in England after Scott's departure. He was assassinated by an English soldier named John Lambert on 18 June 1626, as he was coming out of church, accompanied by his brother William Scott and his nephew Thomas Scott. The assassin was put to the torture, but persisted in asserting that he was 'never hyred or induced by the perswasions of any priest, Jesuit, or other person to attempt that bloudy act.' Although the man was evidently mad, and subject to strange hallucinations, he was condemned to death and executed, his right hand being first cut off (Birch, i. 123; cf. *A briefe and trve Relation of the Mvrther of Mr. Thomas Scott*, London, 1628, 4to).

There is a portrait of Scott, 'ætatis suæ 45, anno 1624,' drawn and engraved by Crispin de Pass. His portrait has also been engraved by Marshall.

Subjoined is a list of his writings, which made a deep impression on the public mind at the time of their appearance: 1. 'Christs Politician and Salomons Puritan,' London, 1616, 4to. 2. 'Vox Populi, or Newes from Spayne, translated according to the Spanish coppie: which may serve to forwarn both England, and the Vnited Provinces, how farre to trust to Spanish Pretences. Impr. in the Year 1620,' sine loco, 4to. Reprinted in 1659 and 1679 under the title of 'A choice Narrative of Count Gondomar's Transactions during his Embassy in England: By Sir Robert Cotton, Knight and Baronet.' It is also printed in the 'Somers Collection of Tracts.' A minutely written contemporary copy, possibly in the author's autograph, was among Dawson Turner's manuscripts, sold in 1859. 3. 'A Speech made in the Lower House of Parliament, Anno 1621. By Sir Edward Cicill, Colonell,' 1621, 4to; again in 1624 (a forgery by Scott, cf. Gardiner, *Hist.* iv. 28). 4. 'A Relation of some speciall points concerning the State of Holland. Or the Provident Counsellours Companion. By many reasons shewing, why for the good and security of the Netherland vnited Prouinces Warre is much better then peace' (anon.), The Hague, 1621, 4to. 5. 'The Interpreter, wherin three principall termes of State much mistaken by the vulgar [viz. Puritan, Protestant, Papist] are clearely unfolded,' in verse. Sine loco 1622, 8vo. The authorship has been ascribed to Scott (Addit. MS. 24942, p. 374). 6. 'The Belgicke Pismire: stinging the slothfull Sleeper, and awaking the Diligent, to fast, watch, pray, and worke out their own temporall and eternall Salvation,

with Fear and Trembling,' London (two editions), 1622, 4to. A popular tract in favour of the Low Countries, written to prejudice the English against the match which Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, was then negotiating.—'The Second Edition, to which is added, The Projector. Teaching a direct, sure, and ready way to restore the decayes of Church and State, delivered in a Sermon before the Judges in Norwich, 1620,' London, 1623, 8vo. 7. 'Newes from Pernassus. The Politicall Touchstone, Taken from Mount Pernassus: Whereon the Gouernments of the greatest Monarchies of the World are touched. Printed at Helicon, 1622' (anon.), 4to. 8. 'The High-waies of God and the King. Wherein all Men ought to walke in Holinesse here, to Happinesse hereafter,' London, 1623, 4to. 9. 'A Tongue Combat lately happening betweene two English Souldiers in the Tilt-Boat of Gravesend,' London, 1623, 4to. In this tract are many phrases current among the common people at the time. 10. 'Exod. 8, 19. Digitus Dei,' being a sermon on Luke xiii. 1–5 [London, 1623], 4to. 11. 'An experimentall Discoverie of Spanish Practices: or the Councell of a well-wishing Soulder for the Good of his Prince and State,' two parts, 1623–4, 4to. 12. 'Vox Dei,' an assize sermon preached at St. Edmunds Bury on 20 March 1622, London [1624], 4to. With a frontispiece containing thirteen portraits, viz. King James, Prince Charles, the king and queen of Bohemia and their children, the Duke of Buckingham, and the Earl of Holderness. 13. 'A Briefe Information of the Affaires of the Palatinate,' [anon.] 1624, 4to. 14. 'Boanerges, or the Humble Supplication of the Ministers of Scotland to the High Court of Parliament in England,' Edinburgh, 1624, 4to. 15. 'Vox Regis' [1624], 4to. With a frontispiece of King James sitting in parliament, Prince Charles and the king and queen of Bohemia kneeling before him, the bishops on his right and peers on his left. 14. 'Votiuæ Angliæ: or the Desires and Wishes of England. Contayned in a Patheticall Discourse, presented to the King, on New-yeares Day last. Wherein are unfolded and represented manie strong Reasons . . . . to perswade his Majestie to drawe his Royall Sword, for the restoring of the Pallatynat and Electorat, to his Sonne in Lawe, Prince Fredericke . . . . Written by S. R. N. I.,' Utrecht (two editions), 1624, 4to. 17. 'Certaine Reasons and Arguments of Policie, why the King of England should hereafter give over all further Treatie, and enter into warre with the Spaniard' (anon.), sine loco 1624, 4to. 18. 'The second Part of Vox Populi: or Gondomar appearing in the Likeness of a Matchiavell in a Spanish Parliament . . .' Printed at Goricom by Ashuerus Janss, 1624,' 4to. With an engraved title, including a whole-length portrait of Gondomar and two vignettes, 'The Spanish Parliament' and 'The Council of English Jesuits.' The work is reprinted in Morgan's 'Phœnix Britannicus' (p. 341). 19. 'Vox Cœli, or Newes from Heaven, of a Consultation there held by King Henry 8, King Edward 6, Prince Henry, Queen Mary, Queen Elizabeth, and Queen Anne. Whereunto is annexed two Letters, written by Queen Mary from Heaven; the one to Count Gondomar, the Ambassador of Spain, the other to all the Roman Catholics of England. Printed in Elisium, 1624,' 4to. Reprinted in vol. ii. of the 'Somers Collection of Tracts.' 20. 'Symmachia: or, a Trve-Loves Knot. Tyed, betwixt Great Britaine and the Vnited Prouinces, by the wisedome of King Iames, and the States Generall; the Kings of France, Denmarke, and Sweden, the Duke of Sauoy, with the States of Venice being Witnesses and Assistants. For the Weale and Peace of Christendom' (anon.) [Utrecht? 1624?], 4to. 21. 'Aphorismes of State, or certaine secret Articles for the Re-edefying of the Romish Church, agreed upon and approved in Councell by the Colledge of Cardinalls in Rome, shewed and delivered unto Pope Gregory the 15th, a little before his Death. Whereunto is annexed a Censure upon the chieffe Points of that which the Cardinalls had concluded,' Utrecht, 1624, 4to. Reprinted in vol. v. of the 'Harleian Miscellany.' 22. 'The Belgick-Sovldier: dedicated to the Parliament. Or, Warre was a Blessing' (anon.), Dort, 1624, 4to. 23. 'The Spaniard's perpetuall Designes to an universall Monarchie,' 1624, 4to. 24. 'Englands Joy for suppressing the Papists, and banishing the Priests and Jesuites,' 1624, 4to. 25. 'Roberte Earle of Essex his Ghost, sent from Elizian: To the Nobility, Gentry, and Communaltie of England. Printed in Paradise 1624' (anon.), 2 parts, 4to; this tract, written against the marriage of Prince Charles with the Infanta of Spain, is reprinted in No. 5 of Morgan's 'Phœnix Britannicus,' in vol. v. of the 'Harleian Miscellany' and in vol. ii. of the 'Somers Collection of Tracts.' 26. 'Sir Walter Rawleighs Ghost, or Englands Forewarner. Discouering a secret Consultation, newly holden in the Court of Spaine. Together, with his tormenting of Count de Gondomar; and his strange affrightment, Confession, and publique recantation: laying open many treacheries intended for the subuersion of England'

(anon.), Utrecht, 1626, 4to. This tract, relating to Gondomar's transactions in England, is reprinted in vol. v. of the 'Harleian Miscellany.'

There is in the Britwell Library a collection of twenty-four of the above tracts, including the speech to Sir Edward Cecil, to which has been prefixed the following general title: 'The Workes of the most famous and reuerend Diuine, Mr. Thomas Scot, Batcheler in Diuinitie, sometimes Preacher in Norwich. Printed at Vtrick, 1624,' 4to. No other copy of this title-page is known.

It is uncertain whether the political writer is identical with Thomas Scot or Scott (*fl.* 1605), poet, who described himself as a gentleman, and who wrote several poetical works. It appears from a letter addressed by Locke to Sir Dudley Carleton on 2 Feb. 1620–1 that the minister of Norwich, then suspected of being the author of 'Vox Populi,' had, in Somerset's time, been questioned about a 'book of birds' (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1619–23). The poetical writer published the following pieces: 1. 'Four Paradoxes of Arte, of Lawe, of Warre, of Service [a poem]. By T. S.,' London, 1602, 8vo. 2. 'Philomythie or Philomythologie, wherein outlandish Birds, Beasts, and Fishes are taught to speak true English,' London, 1610, 8vo; 2nd edit. 'much inlarged,' London, 1616, 8vo. Some copies of the second edition are dated 1622; others 1640. On sig. Ii of the second edition is the following title: 'Certaine Pieces of this Age paraboliz'd, viz. Duellum Britannicum, Regalis Justitia Iacobi. Aquignispicium. Antidotum Cecillianum.' This portion is sometimes found separately. A transcript of it, entitled 'The Deade March,' was in 1859 in the library of Dawson Turner, and the compiler of the catalogue of his manuscripts states that the author of the poems was supposed to be a native of Lynn Regis. To 'Philomythie' there is a curious frontispiece engraved by Elstracke in which are figures of birds and beasts; and at the top there are two half-lengths, one being of Æsop, while the other is believed by collectors to be a portrait of Scott. Of this book Collier says 'the author seems to have been so fearful lest his satire should be considered personal and individual, that ambiguity often renders him incomprehensible.' The most remarkable poem is entitled 'Regalis Justitia Jacobi,' in which Scott celebrates the impartial justice of King James in refusing to pardon Lord Sanquhar or Sanquier, for the deliberate murder of Turner, the celebrated fencer, in 1612. 3. 'The Second Part of Philomythie or Philomythologie. Containing certaine Tales of True Libertie. False Friendship. Power Vnited. Faction and Ambition,' London, 1616 and 1625, 8vo.

[Addit. MSS. 5880 f. 94, 24488 f. 138; Ashmolean MS. 1153, art. 2; Baker MS. 32, p. 525; Bandinel's Cat. of Books, lots 1078–80, 1144, and Cat. of Tracts, lots 750, 752; Bibl. Anglo-Poetica, pp. 341, 342; Brydges's Censura Lit. (1807), iii. 381, iv. 32; Cat. of MSS. in Cambridge Univ. Library, iii. 153; Collier's Bibl. Account of the Rarest Books, ii. 326; Collier's Bridgwater Catalogue, p. 278; European Mag. xv. 8 (January 1789); Granger's Biogr. Hist. of England, 5th edit. ii. 69; Lowndes's Bibl. Man. (Bohn) iv. 2222; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. v. 179, 3rd ser. x. 433, 5th ser. iii. 289, 320; Diary of John Rous (Camden Soc.), p. 6; Cal. of State Papers (Dom. 1619–23), pp. 208, 218, 219, 224, 462, 468; Cat. of D. Turner's MSS. pp. 183, 184; Wood's Fasti Oxon. (Bliss) i. 412.] T. C.

SCOTT or SCOT, THOMAS (*d.* 1660), regicide, is said by Noble to have been the son of a brewer in London (*Lives of the Regicides*, ii. 169). Another authority describes him as probably descended from Thomas Scot, a Yorkshireman, who married Margaret, widow of Benedict Lee of Burston, and daughter of Robert Pakington (Lipscomb, *Buckinghamshire*, ii. 11). Scot was educated at Westminster school and at Cambridge (Ludlow, *Memoirs*, ed. 1894; Wood, *Athenæ*, iii. 578). On 27 June 1644 his name appears in the list of the parliamentary committee for Buckinghamshire (Husband, *Ordinances of* 1646, folio, p. 511). In 1645 he was returned to the Long parliament, in place of Sir Ralph Verney, for Aylesbury (*Return of Members of Parliament*, i. 485; *Memoirs of the Verney Family*, ii. 218). He was one of those members of the commons who joined the army and signed the engagement of 4 Aug. 1647 (Rushworth, vii. 755). In January 1649 Scot was appointed one of the commissioners for the trial of Charles I, signed the king's death-warrant, and was only absent twice during the trial (Nalson, *Trial of Charles I*). He was elected a member of each of the five councils of state elected during the Commonwealth, and in the election to the fifth was seventh on the list, obtaining 93 votes out of 114 (*Commons' Journals*, vii. 220).

On 1 July 1649 the council of state appointed Scot to 'manage the intelligence both at home and abroad for the state,' and granted him 800*l.* a year for that object (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1649–50, p, 221). This involved the employment of spies and secret agents, both at foreign courts and among the exiled royalists, and gave Scot an im-

portant influence both in foreign and domestic policy. His papers have mostly perished, but in 1660 he drew up an account of his proceedings as an intelligencer which throws some light on the history of the Commonwealth (printed in the *English Historical Review*, January 1897). Scot was a vehement supporter of the republic, opposed Cromwell's dissolution of the Long parliament in 1653, and remained hostile to him throughout the protectorate. In the Protector's first parliament he represented Wycombe (though his election was disputed), and was, according to Ludlow, 'very instrumental in opening the eyes of many young members' on the question of the legality of the new constitution (*Mercurius Politicus*, 6–13 July 1654; Ludlow, *Memoirs*, ii. 391). In consequence he was one of those members excluded from the house for refusing to sign the engagement of 12 Sept. 1654, accepting the government as settled in a single person and parliament. In 1656 Scot was returned to Cromwell's second parliament as member for Aylesbury, but failed in the attempt to be also chosen at Wycombe (*Thurloe Papers*, v. 316). The council of state, however, kept out Scot and about ninety more republicans whose protestation is printed in Whitelocke's 'Memorials' (ed. 1853, iv. 274). All those thus excluded were admitted in January 1658 at the opening of the second session. Scot at once proceeded to attack the House of Lords, which had been established in accordance with the 'Humble Petition and Advice.' On 29 Jan. he made a long oration, reviewing the whole history of the civil war, justifying the execution of the king and the abolition of the lords, and denouncing the attempt to put fetters upon the people of England by reviving a second chamber. 'Shall I,' he said, 'that sat in a parliament that brought a king to the bar, and to the block, not speak my mind freely here?' (Burton, *Parliamentary Diary*, ii. 382).

In Richard Cromwell's parliament, Scot, who again sat for Wycombe, was equally prominent among the opposition. He pronounced a panegyric on the Long parliament, attacked Cromwell's foreign policy, opposed the admission of the members for Scotland, and spoke against the recognition of Richard Cromwell and the powers given the Protector by the constitution (*ib.* iii. 28, 107, 219, 275, 473, iv. 34, 92, 228, 316, 453, 478; Ludlow, ii. 50). On the fall of Richard Cromwell and the restoration of the Long parliament, Scot became a person of great influence in the new government. He was appointed a member of the council of state on 14 May 1659, and again on 31 Dec. of the same year (*Commons' Journals*, vii. 654, 800). He was also one of the six members of the intelligence committee (24 May 1659), and was finally given the sole charge of the intelligence department (10 Jan. 1660) (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1659–60, pp. 355, 374). When Lambert interrupted the sittings of the Long parliament (October 1659), Scot entered into correspondence with Monck, and took an active part in opposing the army (Ludlow, ii. 145, 159, 176, 209). In conjunction with Ashley Cooper, he made an unsuccessful attempt to seize the Tower (Christie, *Life of Shaftesbury*, vol. i. p. lxxiv). When the parliament was once more restored he was made secretary of state (17 Jan. 1660), and sent to meet Monck on his march from Scotland and congratulate him on his success (*Commons' Journals*, vii. 813, 816). Monck found Scot's company very irksome, regarding him as a spy sent by parliament, but treated him with great civility and professed to be guided by his advice (Gumble, *Life of Monck*, pp. 224, 226; Price, *Mystery of His Majesty's Happy Restoration*, ed. Maseres, pp. 754–61). After Monck's march into the city and his threatening letter to the parliament (11 Feb. 1660), Scot was again sent as parliamentary commissioner to him, and his reception opened his eyes to the fact that he had been deluded (*ib.* pp. 248, 252; Price, p. 768; Ludlow, ii. 222). The readmission of the members of the commons excluded in 1648 put an end to his secretaryship and his power, but before the dissolution of the Long parliament he took opportunity to affirm the justice of the king's execution, saying that he desired no better epitaph than 'Here lies one who had a hand and a heart in the execution of Charles Stuart' (*ib.* ii. 250; *Trial of the Regicides*, p. 87). Ludlow and some of the late council of state hoped to raise money and troops for a last effort to prevent the restoration of Charles II, but Scot, who had promised his assistance, finding the scheme had no prospect of success, and that his arrest was imminent, resolved to retire to the country (Ludlow, ii. 252). In April 1660, finding himself, as he said, in danger of assassination, he took ship for Flanders. In spite of his disguise he was recognised at Brussels in June 1660, and attempts were made to seize him. In the end he was persuaded to surrender himself to Sir Henry de Vic, the king's resident at Brussels, in the hope of saving his life by thus obeying the royal proclamation for the surrender of the regicides. The credit of capturing him or persuading him to surrender was much disputed (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1670, p. 649; *A True Narrative in a Letter written*

to Col. B. R. of the Apprehension of the Grand Traitor Thomas Scot, 1660, 4to; *Mr. Ignatius White his Vindication from all Imputations concerning Mr. Scot, &c.*, 1660, 4to). Scot was brought to England, and at once sent to the Tower (July 12). The House of Commons had excepted him from pardon on 6 June, and the exception was maintained in the act of indemnity. Some promise of life appears to have been made to him if he would discover the agents from whom he had obtained information of the plans of Charles II during the time he was intelligencer. He drew up accordingly 'A Confession and Discovery of his Transactions,' to which he appended a petition for his life, apologising for his 'rash and over-lavish' words in parliament, and pleading his constant opposition to Cromwell (*English Historical Review*, January 1897), but his revelations were not held sufficiently valuable; he was tried with the other regicides on 12 Oct. 1660. Scot pleaded not guilty, argued that the authority of parliament justified his actions; and, when his words about the king's death were urged against him, claimed that they were covered by the privilege of parliament. He was condemned to death, and executed on 17 Oct. 1660 (*Trial of the Regicides*, pp. 82–85, 89). He behaved with great courage, and died protesting that he had engaged in 'a cause not to be repented of' (Ludlow, ii. 315; *Speeches and Prayers of some of the late King's Judges*, 4to, 1660, pp. 65–73).

Scot had property at Little Marlow in Buckinghamshire, and was also for a time recorder of Aylesbury. During the Commonwealth he bought an estate from Sir John Pakington at Heydon Hill, and was one of the purchasers of Lambeth House. He also made some small purchase of church lands, though he asserts that his official gains were small (Lipscomb, ii. 11, iii. 601; Thurloe, v. 711). Scot is charged with throwing down the monument of Archbishop Parker at Lambeth, and causing his bones to be disinterred (Wood, *Athenæ*, ii. 783; Strype, *Life of Parker*, pp. 494, 498; *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. p. 149).

The name of the regicide's wife is not known. His son William was made a fellow of All Souls' by the parliamentary visitors of Oxford, and graduated B.C.L. on 4 Aug. 1648 (Wood, *Fasti*, ii. 62; Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses*, i. 1326). In April 1666 William, who was then an exile in Holland, was summoned by proclamation to return to England. He preferred to remain in Holland as a spy for the English government, who secured him by means of his mistress Afra Behn [q. v.] (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1665–6 p. 342, 1666–7 pp. 44, 82, 135, 142, 145). Another son, Colonel Thomas Scot, was arrested in Ireland in 1663 for a plot, turned king's evidence, and was expelled from the Irish parliament (Carte, *Ormonde*, iv. 138; Pepys, *Diary*, 1 June 1663). Alice Scot, daughter of the regicide, married William Rowe, who was scoutmaster-general in 1650 (Thurloe, v. 711; *Biographia Britannica*, p. 3528).

Scot the regicide, who never served in the parliamentary army, is often confused with Major or Colonel Thomas Scot (or Scott) who was elected member for Aldborough in 1645, and was concerned in the mutiny at Ware in November 1647 (Rushworth, vii. 876; *Commons' Journals*, v. 362; *Clarke Papers*, i. 231). He died in January 1648 (*Cal. Clarendon Papers*, i. 408), and his wife Grace, daughter of Sir Thomas Mauleverer, who was buried in Westminster Abbey on 26 Feb. 1646, has been mistakenly described as the wife of the regicide (Noble, *Lives of the Regicides*, ii. 197; Chester, *Westminster Registers*, p. 140).

[The only life of Scot is that in Noble's Lives of the Regicides, ii. 169–99, which is full of errors; see authorities cited.] C. H. F.

SCOTT, THOMAS (1705–1775), hymn-writer, younger son of Thomas Scott, independent minister of Hitchin, Hertfordshire, afterwards of Norwich, brother of Joseph Nicol Scott, M.D. [q. v.], and nephew of Dr. Daniel Scott [q. v.], was born at Hitchin in 1705. He was probably educated by his father. As a very young man he took charge of a small boarding-school at Wortwell, in the parish of Redenhall, Norfolk, and once a month preached to the independent congregation at Harleston in the same parish. In 1733 he became minister of the dissenting congregation at Lowestoft, Suffolk. He is said to have retained this office till 1738, but in 1734 he succeeded Samuel Say [q. v.] as colleague to Samuel Baxter at St. Nicholas Street Chapel, Ipswich; henceforth he probably divided his time between the two places till Baxter was disabled. On Baxter's death on 13 July 1740 he became sole pastor, and remained so till 1761, when Peter Emans became his colleague, followed by Robert Lewin (1762–1770), and William Wood, F.L.S. (1770–1773). Except during the three years of Wood's able ministry, the congregation languished. On 26 April 1774, being in broken health, Scott was elected minister by the trustees of an endowed chapel at Hapton, Norfolk. He died at Hapton in 1775, and was buried in the

parish churchyard. He was married and left issue.

Scott met with some success as a hymn-writer. Some of his hymns (e.g. 'Absurd and vain attempt,' 'Imposture shrinks from light') are odes to independence of thought; but his 'Hasten, sinner, to be wise,' has great power, and his 'Happy the meek' has great beauty. Eleven of his hymns were first contributed to 'Hymns for Public Worship,' &c., Warrington, 1772, 12mo, edited by William Enfield [q. v.] Most of his hymns are contained in his 'Lyric Poems' (1773); others are in the 'Collection,' &c., 1795, 12mo, by Andrew Kippis [q. v.], Abraham Rees [q. v.], and others. He published four single sermons (1740–59), including a funeral sermon for Samuel Baxter; also: 1. 'A Father's Instructions to his Son,' &c., 1748, 4to (verse). 2. 'The Table of Cebes . . . in English verse, with Notes,' &c., 1754, 4to. 3. 'The Book of Job, in English verse . . . from the original . . . with Remarks,' &c., 1771, 8vo; 2nd edit. 1773, 8vo; a poor rendering; the notes are better than the text. 4. 'Lyric Poems, Devotional and Moral,' &c., 1773, 8vo.

Elizabeth Scott (1708?–1776), hymn-writer, sister of the above, was born at Hitchin about 1708. Her father writes of her (1 March 1740) as 'one who devotes herself to doing good, as a protestant nun.' Her letter to Doddridge, 10 May 1745, shows that she was suffering from religious depression, not unconnected with family troubles (Humphreys, *Correspondence of Doddridge*, iii. 424, iv. 408 sq.) She married (1), at Norwich, in January 1751–2, Elisha Williams, formerly rector of Yale College, with whom in March 1772 she removed to Connecticut; (2) Hon. William Smith of New York, whom she survived, dying at Wethersfield, Connecticut, on 13 June 1776, aged 68. Prior to 1750 she had written many hymns; three manuscript collections are known, the largest containing ninety hymns. The first publication of her hymns was in 'The Christian's Magazine' (edited by William Dodd [q. v.]), 1763 pp. 565 sq., 1764, pp. 42, 90, 182 sq.; the communicator of some of these signs 'CL–T,' and was probably the grandfather of Thomas Russell or Cloutt [q. v.] Nineteen of her hymns were given in Ash and Evans's baptist 'Collection,' Bristol, 1769, and twenty in Dobell's 'New Selection,' 1806. Of these about fifteen are in use; one of the best is 'All hail, Incarnate God.'

[Browne's Hist. Congr. Norf. and Suff. 1877, pp. 268, 288, 348, 391, 530; Historic Notes in Fellowship, October 1893, March 1894; Wellbeloved's Memoirs of W. Wood, 1809, p. 13; Miller's Our Hymns, 1866, pp. 146, 148; Julian's Dict. of Hymnology, 1892, pp. 1019 sq.; manuscript records of Hapton trustees; information kindly furnished by Hardinge F. Giffard, esq., F.S.A.] A. G.

SCOTT, THOMAS (1747–1821), commentator on the Bible, son of John Scott (*d.* 1777), grazier, was born at Braytoft, Lincolnshire, on 4 Feb. 1747. He was the tenth of thirteen children. After seven years' schooling, latterly at Scorton, Yorkshire, he was apprenticed in September 1762 to a surgeon and apothecary at Alford, Lincolnshire, but was dismissed in two months for some misconduct. His father then set him to the 'dirty parts' of a grazier's work, and his health permanently suffered from exposure to weather. Having passed some nine years in menial employment, he learned that the land on which he laboured was bequeathed to one of his brothers. He turned again to his 'few torn Latin books,' and at length, in 1772, left home in anger at his father's harshness. He applied to a clergyman at Boston on the subject of taking orders. The archdeacon of Lincoln (Gordon) gave him some encouragement, and he went up to London as a candidate for ordination, but was sent back for want of his father's consent and sufficient testimonials. He returned to a herdsman's duties; but having at length fulfilled the required conditions, he was ordained deacon at Buckden on 20 Sept. 1772, and priest in London on 13 March 1773, by John Green [q. v.], bishop of Lincoln. Appointed to the curacies of Stoke Goldington, and Weston Underwood, Buckinghamshire, at 50*l.* a year, he taught himself Hebrew, and became a diligent student of the scriptures in the original tongues. He exchanged the Stoke curacy for that of Ravenstone in 1775. At a visitation in May 1775 he had made the acquaintance of John Newton (1725–1807) [q. v.], whom in 1781 he succeeded as curate of Olney, Buckinghamshire.

He had published on 26 Feb. 1779 a narrative of his religious development, under the title of 'The Force of Truth.' Cowper the poet revised the book 'as to style and externals, but not otherwise.' A more impressive piece of spiritual autobiography has rarely been written. With attractive candour it details the process by which a mind of singular earnestness, though of somewhat restricted compass, made its way from a bald rationalistic unitarianism to the highest type of Calvinistic fervour. Little by little Scott came, reluctantly enough at the outset, to share his friend Newton's absorbing religious-

ness, and with it the scheme of belief which was penetrated by so powerful a flame of piety.

At Christmas 1785 he removed to London to become joint-chaplain at the Lock Hospital, along with Charles Edward de Coetlogon [q. v.] at a salary of 80*l.*; he held a lectureship at St. Mildred's, Bread Street, which added 30*l.*; and every other Sunday, at six in the morning, he preached in St. Margaret's, Lothbury, at '7*s.* 6*d.* a time.' His preaching was not to the taste of his hearers, who thought his insistence on practical points had an Arminian savour; and the intensity of his conscientiousness made him angular.

On the proposal of Bellamy, the publisher, he agreed to write a commentary on the Bible, in a hundred weekly numbers, for which he was to receive a guinea a number. Scott began his task on 2 Jan. 1788; the first number was published on 22 March following. After the fifteenth number he was told that the continuance of the work must depend on his finding money to carry it on. This he endeavoured to do, with the result that, the commentary having been finished (2 June 1792) in 174 numbers, Bellamy became bankrupt, while Scott lost all he had, and was saddled with a debt of 500*l.* The printer who took over the work rendered no account of profits till compelled by a chancery suit. The sale of the second edition barely set Scott straight. He then sold the copyright, only to become involved in a second chancery suit, directed unsuccessfully against the arrangements for publishing the third edition (1810). Apparently he had discharged his liabilities and realised something under 1,000*l.* His calculations were deceived; in 1813 he had to meet a claim of 1,200*l.* For the first time he sought the aid of friends in the disposal of his stock. Charles Simeon [q. v.] and others came generously forward; in a few months his dues were paid, and he was master of some 2,000*l.*

Apart from pecuniary anxieties, the state of his health and the methods of his work made the preparation of his commentary a perpetual struggle with difficulties, painfully overcome by indomitable tenacity of purpose. According to his theory of exegesis, the sense of scripture is to be learned only from scripture itself; hence the enormous labour which he devoted to the examination and collation of passages. His workmanship is often clumsy, and sometimes hurried, but always bears the marks of an impressive sincerity of aim. The limitations of his achievement are obvious, yet Sir James Stephen does not hesitate to speak of it as 'the greatest theological performance of our age and country.'

In 1801 his health compelled Scott to discontinue his services at St. Margaret's, Lothbury. On 22 July of that year he was instituted to the rectory of Aston Sandford, Buckinghamshire, a living which, deducting the outlay required for a new parsonage, yielded less than 100*l.* a year. He was promoted on 25 March 1802 to be sole chaplain at the Lock; but in the spring of 1803 he removed finally to Aston Sandford. Here in 1807, at the instance of the Church Missionary Society, he undertook the training of missionaries, mastering for this purpose the Susoo and Arabic languages, and continuing this labour till 1814, when his health gave way. In 1807 he had received a diploma of D.D., forwarded from the 'Dickensonian College, Carlisle, Pennsylvania, by persons whose names I never before heard.'

In a well-known passage of his 'Apologia' (1864, pp. 60–1), Newman has recorded that while an undergraduate he thought of visiting Aston Sandford to see a man 'to whom (humanly speaking) I almost owe my soul.' Scott's 'Essays' had 'first planted deep' in Newman's mind 'that fundamental truth of religion,' the doctrine of the Trinity. He signalises Scott's 'bold unworldliness and vigorous independence of mind' which, combined with 'the minutely practical character of his writings,' prove him 'a true Englishman;' he sums the spirit of his life in the maxims 'Holiness before peace' and 'Growth is the evidence of life.'

Scott died at Aston Sandford on 16 April 1821, and was buried there on 23 April. His funeral sermon was preached by Daniel Wilson (1778–1858) [q. v.], afterwards bishop of Calcutta, at Haddenham (the next parish) church, that of Aston being too small for the occasion. Scott married, first (5 Dec. 1774), Jane Kell (*d.* 8 Sept. 1790), by whom he had issue John (see below), Thomas (see below), Benjamin (see below), and other children. He married, secondly (March 1791), a lady named Egerton, who survived him.

He published, besides single sermons and tracts: 1. 'The Force of Truth: an authentic Narrative,' &c., 1779, 12mo (many subsequent editions; the received text is that of 1798, 12mo). 2. 'The Holy Bible, with . . . Notes,' &c., 1788–92, 4to, 4 vols. (plates); the first volume is dated 1788, the remaining three 1792; of the first volume only there is a 'second edition,' dated 1792; 2nd edit. (not so called), 1809, 4to, 4 vols. (no plates); 3rd edit. 1810, 4to, 5 vols. (no plates); 4th edit. (not so called), 1812, 4to, 6 vols. (no plates); many subsequent re-

prints, and translations in Welsh and Swedish; a selection from Scott's commentary, and from the 'Exposition' of Matthew Henry [q.v.], was edited by G. Stokes, 1831–5, 8vo, 6 vols., and is known as Henry and Scott's Bible. 3. 'Essays on the most important Subjects in Religion,' &c., 1793, 12mo. 4. 'Sermons on Select Subjects,' &c., 1797, 8vo. 5. 'Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress, with Notes, and ... Life,' &c., 1801, 8vo. 6. 'Four Sermons on Repentance,' &c. 1802, 8vo. 7. 'Chronological Tables to the Bible,' &c., 1811, 4to. 8. 'Remarks on the Bishop of Lincoln's [George Pretyman Tomline] Refutation of Calvinism,' &c., 1812, 8vo, 2 vols. 9. 'The Articles of the Synod of Dort ... translated,' &c., 1818, 8vo. Posthumous was 10. 'Village Discourses, composed from Notes,' &c., 1825, 12mo.

His 'Theological Works' were collected, Buckingham, 1805–8, 8vo, 5 vols.; also 1823–5, 8vo, 10 vols., edited by his son and biographer, editor also of his 'Letters and Papers,' 1824, 8vo. His 'Tracts' were edited, Glasgow, 1826, 8vo, with a prefixed essay by Thomas Chalmers, D.D. [q. v.]; a selection from his works was published, Edinburgh, 1830, 8vo (portrait).

John Scott (1777–1834), eldest son of the above, born April 1777, was educated at Magdalene College, Cambridge, graduating B.A. 1799, M.A. 1803. His preferments were: curate of St. John's, Hull (1799), master of Hull grammar school (1800), vicar of North Ferriby, Yorkshire (1801), also vicar of St. Mary's, Hull (1816). He died on 18 Oct. 1834, leaving a widow and family. He published 'Five Sermons on Baptism,' &c., 1809, 12mo, and some other religious pieces, but is best known as the author of the 'Life,' 1822, 8vo, of his father, an ill-constructed book, incorporating an autobiographical narrative of the highest interest.

Thomas Scott (1780–1835), younger son of the commentator, born on 9 Nov. 1780, was educated at Queens' College, Cambridge, graduating B.A. 1805, M.A. 1808. His preferments were: curate of Emberton, Buckinghamshire (1805), first perpetual curate of Gawcott Chapel, near Buckingham (1806), rector of Wappenham, Northamptonshire (1833). He died on 24 Feb. 1835. He married (1806) Euphemia, only daughter of Dr. Lynch of Antigua, and had thirteen children, of whom nine survived him. Thomas, his eldest son, succeeded him as rector of Wappenham. He published some sermons and other pieces. A posthumous volume of his 'Sermons,' 1837, 8vo, was edited, with a brief 'Memoir,' by Samuel King.

Benjamin Scott (1788–1830), the youngest son, born 29 April 1788, was educated at Queens' College, Cambridge, graduating B.A. 1810, M.A. 1813. He began life as curate to Edward Burn [q. v.], and in 1828 became vicar of Bidford and of Priors Salford, Warwickshire. He died on 30 Aug. 1830, at Llandegley, Radnorshire, and was buried in the churchyard there. A posthumous volume of his 'Sermons,' 1831, 8vo, was edited by his brother Thomas.

[Life ... including a narrative drawn up by himself, seventh edit., 1825 (with engraved portrait); Scott's Works; Stephen's Essays in Ecclesiastical Biogr. 1860, pp. 413 sq.; Funeral Sermon for Anne Scott, 1829; Funeral Sermon for Benjamin Scott, 1830; Memoir of Benjamin Scott, 1831; Gent. Mag. 1835, i. 103 sq., ii. 669; King's Memoir of Thomas Scott, 1837; Luard's Graduati Cantabr. 1873.] A. G.

SCOTT, THOMAS (1745–1842), general, born on 25 Dec. 1745, was the second son of John Scott of Malleny in Midlothian, by his wife Susan, daughter of Lord William Hay of Newhall, third son of John, second marquis of Tweeddale. The Scotts of Malleny were descended from John, eldest son of Sir William Scott of Clerkington, appointed senator of the court of justice in 1642, by his second wife, Barbara, daughter of Sir John Dalmahoy of that ilk.

Thomas Scott obtained an ensigncy in the 24th regiment of foot on 20 May 1761. In the following year he served in Hesse under Ferdinand, duke of Brunswick, and carried the regimental colours at the battle of Wilhelmsthal. In 1763, returning home, he was stationed in Ireland, and obtained his lieutenancy on 7 June 1765. In 1776 he went to America with his regiment, and served two campaigns under General Burgoyne with a company of marksmen attached to a large body of Indians. He acquitted himself so well that he was twice mentioned in the despatches, and received his company on 14 July 1777. On 17 Oct. he succeeded in penetrating the enemy's lines and carrying to Sir Henry Clinton the tidings of Burgoyne's critical position at Saratoga. In 1788 he returned to Europe, and in 1791 served for six months with a detachment of the 53rd foot on board his majesty's ship Hannibal. In 1793 he served in the Netherlands under Sir Ralph Abercromby, and took part in the sieges of Valenciennes and Dunkirk. He received the rank of major for his exertions in the defence of Nieuport. On 27 Oct. 1794 he was appointed lieutenant-colonel of one of the battalions of the 94th; in 1795 he accompanied his regiment to Gibraltar, and in 1796 to the Cape of Good Hope. In 1799 he took part in the campaign against

Tipu Sultan, and was present at the capture of Seringapatam. In the following year ill health compelled him to leave India, but the Indiaman in which he took his passage was captured by a French privateer in the English Channel, and it was some weeks before he was exchanged. In 1801 he was appointed colonel by brevet, in 1802 inspecting officer of the Edinburgh recruiting district, in 1803 deputy inspector-general of the recruiting service in North Britain, and in 1804 brigadier-general. He attained the rank of major-general on 25 April 1808, and was nominated lieutenant-general on 4 June 1813. Until he retired at the close of fifty-two years' service he was never unemployed or on half-pay. He received the rank of general on 22 July 1830. After his retirement he resided chiefly at Malleny, and was a deputy-lieutenant for Midlothian. There he died, unmarried, on 29 April 1842, and was succeeded by his nephew, Carteret George Scott.

[Irving's Dictionary of Eminent Scotsmen, p. 463; Burke's Commoners of Great Britain, iii. 170; Douglas's Baronage of Scotland, i. 218; Army Lists of the period.] E. I. C.

SCOTT, THOMAS (1808–1878), freethinker, was born on 28 April 1808. He was brought up in France as a Roman catholic, and became a page at the court of Charles X. Having an independent fortune, he travelled widely, and spent some time among North American Indians. About 1856 he grew dissatisfied with Christianity, and in 1862 he started issuing tracts advocating 'free enquiry and the free expression of opinion.' These were printed at his own expense, and given away mostly to the clergy and cultured classes. Between 1862 and 1877 he issued, first from Ramsgate, afterwards from Norwood, upwards of two hundred separate pamphlets and books, which were ultimately collected in sixteen volumes. Among the writers who contributed to the series were F. W. Newman, William Rathbone Greg [q. v.], Dr. Willis, Bishop Hinds, Rev. Charles Voysey, M. D. Conway, Sir Richard Davies Hanson [q. v.], Marcus Kalisch [q. v.], John Muir [q. v.], John Addington Symonds [q. v.], Thomas Lumisden Strange [q. v.], Edward Maitland, Edward Vansittart Neale [q. v.], Charles Bray, Dr. George Gustavus Zerffi [q. v.], and R. Suffield. Scott also reprinted such works as Bentham's 'Church of England Catechism Examined' and Hume's 'Dialogues on Natural Religion.' His own contributions to the series were slight, but he suggested subjects, revised them, discussed all points raised, and made his house a salon for freethinkers. He was a competent Hebrew scholar, and saw through the press Bishop Colenso's work on the Pentateuch and Book of Joshua in the absence of the bishop from England. He also revised the work on 'Ancient Faiths embodied in Ancient Names,' by Thomas Inman [q. v.] Scott put his name on 'The English Life of Jesus,' 1872, a work designed to do for English readers what Strauss and Renan had done for Frenchmen and Germans; but the work is said to have been written in part by the Rev. Sir George W. Cox. Scott also wrote 'An Address to the Friends of Free Enquiry and Expression,' 1865; 'Questions, to which Answers are respectfully asked from the Orthodox,' 1866; 'A Letter to H. Alford, Dean of Canterbury,' 1869; 'A Challenge to the Members of the Christian Evidence Society,' 1871; 'The Tactics and Defeat of the Christian Evidence Society,' 1871; 'The Dean of Ripon on the Physical Resurrection,' 1872; and 'A Farewell Address,' 1877, in which he stated his persuasion that 'the only true orthodoxy is loyalty to reason, and the only infidelity which merits censure is disloyalty to reason.' He died at Norwood on 30 Dec. 1878. He was married, and his widow survived him. A portrait is given in 'Annie Besant, an Autobiography' (p. 112).

[National Reformer, 5 Jan. 1879; Times, 15 Jan. 1879; Liberal, March 1879; Freethinker, 24 March 1895; Wheeler's Dict. of Freethinkers; Brit. Museum Cat.] J. M. W.

SCOTT, SIR WALTER (1490?–1552), of Buccleuch and Branxholm, Scottish chieftain, born about 1490, was eldest son of Sir Walter Scott of Buccleuch (*d.* 1504). He was fourth in lineal descent from Sir Walter Scott (1426–1469), who first took the territorial designation of Buccleuch, and was the first to acquire the whole barony of Branxholm, with the castle, which remained the residence of the family for several generations. His mother, Elizabeth Ker of the Cessford family, was attacked in her residence of Catslack in Yarrow by an English force under Lord Grey de Wilton in 1548, and, with other inmates of the tower, was burnt to death.

Walter Scott was under age when he succeeded his father in 1504, and his earliest appearance in history was at the battle of Flodden, 9 Sept. 1513; on the eve of the engagement he was made a knight. In 1515 he joined the party of John Stewart, duke of Albany [q. v.], then appointed regent of Scotland, and he opposed himself to Margaret, the queen dowager; but on Albany's return

to France in 1524, Scott was imprisoned in the castle of Edinburgh under the pretext that he fomented disorder and misrule on the borders. He soon escaped from ward and joined the Earls of Angus and Lennox in continued opposition to Queen Margaret and her government. In 1526, in obedience to a letter from James V, then a boy, requesting his aid against the power of Angus and the Douglases, Scott assembled his kin and men, but was completely defeated by Angus, who had the king in custody, in a skirmish near Melrose on 25 July 1526. He was obliged to take refuge in France; but after the overthrow of the Douglases in 1528 he was openly received into the royal favour.

In 1530 various attempts were made to reconcile the feud which had fallen out between the Scotts and the kinsfolk of Ker of Cessford who had been slain in the skirmish at Melrose. Formal agreements were entered into with a view to a pacification, but the result was not permanent (*Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border*, vol. i. p. clvi, ed. 1812). Owing to the influence of the Douglases, who had taken refuge in England, the borders between England and Scotland were at the time more than usually disturbed. Scott's lands suffered severely from the attacks of the English wardens and others, and he retaliated with great effect (*State Papers Henry VIII*, iv. 625). In 1535 James V, with a view to peace, committed Sir Walter and other border chieftains to ward.

On the death of King James in 1542 Scott joined the party which opposed the marriage of the infant Queen Mary to an English prince, and, though constant overtures were made to him by the English wardens, and he was at one time credited with an intention of delivering the young queen into the hands of King Henry (*Hamilton Papers*, i. 447), he scornfully refused all offers of amity with the English (*ib.* p. 467), and at the battle of Ancrum, 27 Feb. 1545, he took a prominent part in defeating the English forces. Scott fought, too, at the battle of Pinkie on 10 Sept. 1547, where the Scots suffered a severe overthrow. As a result his lands lay at the mercy of the invaders, and during the next two or three years he suffered severely at the hands of the English wardens. In 1551 he was directed to aid in repressing the violence which prevailed on the borders, but in 1552 he begged an exemption from some of his official duties on the ground of advancing years. The old feud with the Kers of Cessford still continued, and on the night of 4 Oct. 1552 he was attacked and killed by partisans of that house.

Sir Walter Scott was thrice married: first, to Elizabeth Carmichael (of Carmichael), with issue two sons; secondly, to Janet Ker (of Fernihierst), from whom he was apparently divorced; and, thirdly, to Janet Betoun or Beaton, whose name is well known as the heroine of the 'Lay of the Last Minstrel,' and by whom he had two sons and three daughters. She was given to Sir Walter 'in mariag by the Cardinall [Beaton], his other wif being yet on lif' (*Hamilton Papers*, i. 740). Sir Walter Scott's eldest son died unmarried, while his second son, Sir William Scott, predeceased him, leaving a son Walter, afterwards Sir Walter (*d.* 1574), who was father of Walter Scott, first Lord Scott of Buccleuch [q. v.]

[William Fraser's The Scotts of Buccleuch, 2 vols. 1878; Captain Walter Scott's A True History of several Honourable Families of the Right Honourable Name of Scott, &c. ed. 1786; Letters and Papers Henry VIII, Foreign and Dom., vols. i. ii.] J. A–N.

SCOTT, WALTER, first Lord Scott of Buccleuch (1565–1611), born in 1565, was the only son of Sir Walter Scott of Buccleuch (*d.* 1574), by his wife, Lady Margaret Douglas, eldest daughter of David, seventh earl of Angus, who afterwards married Francis Stewart Hepburn, fifth earl of Bothwell. The father, who latterly became a devoted adherent of Mary Queen of Scots, was privy to the design for the assassination of the regent Moray, and, counting on its occurrence, set out the day before with Ker of Ferniehirst on a devastating raid into England. In revenge his lands were laid waste by the Earl of Sussex and Lord Scrope, and his castle of Branxholm blown up with gunpowder. He was a principal leader of the raid to Stirling on 4 Sept. 1571, when an attempt was made to seize the regent Lennox, who was slain by one of the Hamiltons during the *mêlée*. Buccleuch, who had interposed to save the regent Morton, his kinsman, whom the Hamiltons intended also to have slain, was during the retreat taken prisoner by Morton (*Diurnal of Occurrents*, p. 248), and was for some time confined in the castle of Doune in Menteith (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* ii. 156).

The son succeeded his father on 17 April 1574, and on 21 June was infeft in the baronies of Branxholm as heir to David Scott, his grandfather's brother. Being a minor, the Earl of Morton—failing whom, the Earl of Angus—was appointed his guardian. On account of a feud between Scott and Lord Hay, both were on 19 Aug. 1586 ordered to find caution of 10,000*l.* each for their good behaviour (*ib.* iv. 98). On 2 June

1587 he and other border chiefs were summoned to appear before the privy council on 9 June to answer 'touching good rule and quietness to be observed on the borders hereafter, under pain of treason' (*ib.* p. 183); and on the 9th Robert Scott gave caution for him in five thousand merks that he would appear on the 21st (*ib.* p. 189). Towards the close of the year he and the laird of Cessford were, however, committed to ward for making incursions in England (CALDERWOOD, *History*, iv. 641); but on 13 Dec. he found caution in 10,000*l.* that on being liberated from the castle of Edinburgh he would by 10 Jan. find surety for the relief of the king and his wardens of 'all attempts against the peace of England bygone and to come' (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* iv. 234).

On the occasion of the queen's coronation, 17 May 1590, Buccleuch was dubbed a knight (CALDERWOOD, *History*, v. 95). When his stepfather, Bothwell, was put to the horn in the following year, he was appointed keeper of Liddesdale, and on 6 July, with the border chiefs, he gave his oath to concur without 'shrinking, shift, or excuse in Bothwell's pursuit' (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* iv. 649), a band to this effect being also subscribed by him at Edinburgh on 6 Aug. (*ib.* p. 667). Hardly had it been subscribed when the pursuit of Bothwell was declared to be unnecessary; but doubts of Buccleuch's fidelity being nevertheless entertained, he next day gave caution in 10,000*l.* that he would go abroad within a month, and not return within the next three years (*ib.* p. 668); and on 29 Aug. he was relieved of the keepership of Liddesdale (*ib.* p. 674). He, however, obtained letters permitting his return to Scotland on 12 Nov. 1592 (FRASER, *Scotts of Buccleuch*, ii. 250). On 22 May 1594 he was named one of a commission for the pursuit of Bothwell (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* v. 137), and at 'the king's earnest desire' he was in October following reappointed to the office of keeper of Liddesdale 'heritably in time to come' (*ib.* p. 178). On the division of Bothwell's lands after his flight to France in 1595, Buccleuch obtained the lordship of Crichton and Liddesdale (CALDERWOOD, v. 363). As a follower of the Hamiltons he in the same year joined them in the league with the chancellor Maitland against Mar. The queen proposed that he should succeed Mar in the guardianship of the young prince, and when the king declined to accede to this arrangement, Buccleuch, with the bold recklessness of the borderer, proposed that both king and prince should be seized, and that, this being done, Mar should be arraigned for high treason; but the proposal was too much for the prudent chancellor. In the following year Buccleuch won lasting renown by his brilliant exploit in delivering Kinmont Willie [see ARMSTRONG, WILLIAM, *fl.* 1596] from Carlisle Castle. Not only was the achievement noteworthy for its clever daring; it indicated the faculty of swift decision, and the high moral courage of a strong personality. Persuaded that he had justice on his side, Buccleuch never hesitated to defy all consequences. His simple, and to himself unanswerable, plea was that Armstrong, having been captured during a truce, was not legally a prisoner. It was scarcely to be expected, however, that Elizabeth would homologate this novel method of rectifying her representative's mistake, or that she would regard the deed as aught else than an illegal outrage committed by the king of Scotland's representative, and thus virtually in his name. In accordance with Elizabeth's instructions, Bowes, her representative, made formal complaint against it before the Scottish parliament, and concluded a long speech by declaring that peace could no longer exist between the two realms unless Buccleuch were delivered into England to be punished at the queen's pleasure. Although Buccleuch asserted that the illegality was chargeable only against the English warden (Armstrong not being in any proper sense a prisoner), he declared his readiness to submit his case to a joint English and Scottish commission. But the sympathy of the Scots being strongly with him, it was only after repeated and urgent demands by Elizabeth that arrangements were entered into for its appointment, and before it met Buccleuch still further exasperated Elizabeth by a raid into England, in which he apprehended six Tyndale rievers, whom he put to death. Consequently the commission which met at Berwick decided that he should enter into bond in England until pledges were given for the future maintenance of peace. He therefore surrendered himself to Sir William Selby, master of the ordnance at Berwick, on 7 Oct. 1597. On 12 May 1599 he received from Elizabeth a safe-conduct to pass abroad for the recovery of his health, and in 1600 he was in Paris, when he gave evidence before the *Cour des Aides* in regard to the genealogy of one Andrew Scott, Sieur de Savigne (FRASER, *Scotts of Buccleuch*, i. 172–3).

After the accession of James VI to the throne of England, Buccleuch in 1604 raised a regiment of the borderers, in command of whom he distinguished himself under Maurice, prince of Orange, in the war against the Spaniards in the Netherlands. On 4 March 1606 he was raised to the peerage by the

title of Lord Scott of Buccleuch. He died in December 1611. By his wife Mary, daughter of Sir William Ker of Cessford, sister of Robert, first earl of Roxburghe, he had one son—Walter, who succeeded him as second Lord Scott of Buccleuch—and two daughters: Margaret, married, first, to James, lord Ross, and, secondly, to Alexander Montgomery, sixth earl of Eglinton; and Elizabeth, married to John Master of Cranstoun, and afterwards second Lord Cranstoun.

[Register Privy Council of Scotland, vols. i.–viii.; Cal. State Papers, Scot. Ser. and For. Ser. during the reign of Elizabeth; Histories of Knox and Calderwood; Sir William Fraser's Scotts of Buccleuch (privately printed); Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), i. 251.] T. F. H.

SCOTT, WALTER (1550?–1629?), of Harden, freebooter, born about 1550, was descended from a branch of the Scotts of Buccleuch, known as the Scotts of Sinton. His father, William Scott, was first described as 'in Todrig,' a place near Sinton in Selkirkshire, but afterwards as 'in Harden,' an estate which he acquired about 1550, or later, from Alexander, lord Home (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 12th Rep. App. viii. p. 144; cf. *Registrum Magni Sigilli*, vol. vii. No. 2114). Walter succeeded his father in 1563. In 1580 his lands at Hoscote were raided by the Elliots, a rival border clan then allied with England. In June 1592 he assisted Francis Stewart, earl of Bothwell, in his attack upon Falkland Palace [see Hepburn, Francis Stewart, fifth Earl of Bothwell]; and, with his brother William and other Scotts, helped Bothwell in the winter of 1592-3 to plunder the lands of Drummelzier and Dreva on Tweedside; they carried off four thousand sheep, two hundred cattle, forty horses, and goods to the value of 2,000*l.* He also, with five hundred men, Scotts and Armstrongs, joined Sir Walter, first lord Scott of Buccleuch, in his famous rescue of William Armstrong of Kinmont [q.v.], 'Kinmont Willie,' from Carlisle Castle in 1596 (*Calendar of Border Papers*, ii. 120–2), and complaints of freebooting were made against him about the same time by the English wardens. In October 1602 he joined with other border leaders in a bond to keep good rule. In December 1605 he was threatened with outlawry for hunting and riding in Cheviot and Redesdale, spoiling the king's game and woods; while in 1611 he and his sons, Walter, Francis, and Hew, were bound in large sums to keep the peace with some of his neighbours.

'Wat of Harden' is said to have died in 1629; he was alive in April of that year (*The Scotts of Buccleuch*, i. 256). His residence is now one of the seats of his descendant, Lord Polwarth (Carre, *Border Memories*).

He married, first, about 21 March 1576, Mary, daughter of John Scott of Dryhope in Yarrow. The original contract is preserved in Lord Polwarth's charter chest (*The Scotts of Buccleuch*, vol. i. p. lxx); an incorrect account of it is given by Sir Walter Scott in his 'Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border' (i. 157, ed. 1812). By his first wife Walter had, with five daughters, four sons: Sir William, who succeeded to Harden; Walter; Francis, ancestor of the Scotts of Sinton; and Hew, ancestor of the Scotts of Gala. He married, secondly, in 1598, Margaret Edgar of Wedderlie, and had issue one daughter. Sir William Scott the younger, of Harden, who married Agnes Murray of Elibank, is the hero of the apocryphal traditional story of 'Muckle-mouthed Meg.' The second son, Walter, was fatally wounded in October 1616 in a quarrel about rights of fishing in the river Ettrick. A tradition connected with the incident, graphically told by Sir Walter Scott in his notes to the 'Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border,' is proved false by authentic record (*Register of the Privy Council of Scotland*, x. 667, xi. 20, 98–101).

[Many traditions of Walter Scott appear in a connected form in Border Memories, by Walter Riddell Carre, 1876, pp. 73–9; Register of the Privy Council of Scotland, vols. i.–xii.]

J. A–n.

SCOTT, WALTER, Earl of Tarras (1644–1693), born on 23 Dec. 1644, was eldest son of Sir Gideon Scott of Highchester, who was the second son of William Scott of Harden, and thus grandson of Walter Scott (1550?–1629?) [q.v.] When in his fifteenth year he was married by special dispensation from the presbytery of Kirkcaldy, on 9 Feb. 1659, to Lady Mary Scott, countess of Buccleuch in her own right; she was then only in her twelfth year, and his father was one of the curators. The youthful couple were separated by the civil authorities until the countess had completed her twelfth year, and she then ratified what had been done. The husband was not allowed to assume the wife's title, but the dignities of Earl of Tarras and Lord Almoor and Campcastill were on 4 Sept. 1660 conferred upon him for life. The countess soon died, and after protracted legal proceedings their marriage contract was reduced, and he was disappointed of the provision set apart for him therein out of his wife's property.

From 1667 to 1671 he travelled in France, Italy, and the Netherlands, and, returning

by the English court, he endeavoured in vain to move Charles II to grant him a provision out of the Buccleuch estates. Towards the end of Charles's reign he took part in the plots concocted for the exclusion of the Duke of York from the throne, and being arrested was, on his own confession, found guilty of treason and condemned to death on 5 Jan. 1685. Owing, however, to his confession he obtained a remission, and was reinstated in his honours and lands by letters of rehabilitation on 28 June 1687. He died in April 1693. He married as his second wife, on 31 Dec. 1677, Helen, daughter of Thomas Hepburn of Humbie in East Lothian, and left by her five sons and five daughters.

[The Scotts of Buccleuch, by Sir William Fraser, i. 320–400 (with portraits of Tarras and his first wife).] H. P.

SCOTT, WALTER, of Satchells (1614?–1694?), captain and genealogist, born about 1614, was son of Robert Scott of Satchells, who was a grandson of Walter Scott of Sinton, by his second marriage with Margaret, daughter of James Riddell of that ilk. The captain's mother was Jean, daughter of Sir Robert Scott of Thirlestane. He spent his youth in herding cattle, but, running away in his sixteenth year, joined the regiment which his chief, Walter, first earl of Buccleuch, raised and transported to Holland in 1629. From that time he was, according to his own account, in active military service at home and abroad for fifty-seven years. He is said to have married and had a daughter, whom he named Gustava in honour of the famous king of Sweden. But what is more certain is that at the advanced age of seventy-five he began his rude metrical 'True History of several honourable families of the right honourable name of Scot, in the shires of Roxburgh, Selkirk, and others adjacent, gathered out of ancient chronicles, histories, and traditions of our fathers.' He describes himself on the title-page as

> An old souldier and no scholler,
> And one that could write nane,
> But just the letters of his name.

He hired schoolboys to write to his dictation. His work was originally printed in 1688, and later editions appeared in 1776, 1786, 1892, and 1894.

[Preface to the 1894 edition of the 'True History,' by John G. Winning.] H. P.

SCOTT, Sir WALTER (1771–1832), author of the 'Waverley Novels,' son of Walter Scott by his wife Anne Rutherford, was born on 15 Aug. 1771 in a house in the College Wynd at Edinburgh, since demolished. The 'True History of several honourable Families of the Right Honourable Name of Scot' (1688), by Walter Scott of Satchells [q. v.], was a favourite of the later Walter from his earliest years. He learnt from it the history of many of the heroes of his writings. Among them were John Scott of Harden, called 'the Lamiter,' a younger son of a duke of Buccleuch in the fourteenth century; and John's son, William the 'Boltfoot,' a famous border knight. A later Scott called 'Auld Wat,' the Harden of the 'Lay of the Last Minstrel,' married Mary Scott, the 'Flower of Yarrow,' in 1567, and was the hero of many legends [see Scott, Walter, 1550?–1629?]. His son, William Scott of Harden, was made prisoner by Gideon Murray of Elibank, and preferred a marriage with Murray's ugliest daughter to the gallows. William's third son, Walter, laird of Raeburn, became a quaker, and suffered persecutions described in a note to the 'Heart of Midlothian.' Raeburn's second son, also Walter, became a Jacobite, and was known as 'Beardie,' because he gave up shaving in token of mourning for the Stuarts. He died in 1729. 'Beardie' and his son Robert are described in the introductory 'Epistles' to 'Marmion.' Robert quarrelled with his father, became a whig, and set up as a farmer at Sandy Knowe. He was a keen sportsman and a 'general referee in all matters of dispute in the neighbourhood.' In 1728 he married Barbara, daughter of Thomas Haliburton of New Mains, by whom he had a numerous family. One of them, Thomas, died on 27 Jan. 1823, in his ninetieth year. Another, Robert, was in the navy, and, after retiring, settled at Rosebank, near Kelso. Walter Scott, the eldest son of Robert of Sandy Knowe, born 1729, was the first of the family to adopt a town life. He acquired a fair practice as writer to the signet. His son says (*Autobiographical Fragment*) that he delighted in the antiquarian part of his profession, but had too much simplicity to make money, and often rather lost than profited by his zeal for his clients. He was a strict Calvinist; his favourite study was church history; and he was rather formal in manners and staunch to old Scottish prejudices. He is the original of the elder Fairford in 'Redgauntlet.' In April 1758 he married Anne, eldest daughter of John Rutherford, professor of medicine in the university of Edinburgh [q. v.] Her mother was a daughter of Sir John Swinton [q. v.], a descendant of many famous warriors, and through her her son traced a descent

from Sir William Alexander, earl of Stirling [q. v.], the friend of Ben Jonson. Mrs. Scott was short, and 'by no means comely.' She was well educated for the time, though with old-fashioned stiffness; was fond of poetry, and was of light and happy temper of mind. Though devout, she was less austere than her husband. Her son Walter had no likeness, it is said, to her or to his father, but strongly resembled his great-grandfather 'Beardie,' and especially his grandfather Robert.

Walter Scott, the writer to the signet, had a family of twelve, the first six of whom died in infancy. The survivors were Robert, who served in the navy under Rodney, wrote verses, and was afterwards in the East India Company's service. John, the second, became a major in the army, retired, and died in 1816. The only daughter, Anne, suffered through life from an early accident, and died in 1801. Thomas, who showed much talent, entered his father's profession, failed in speculations, was made paymaster of the 70th regiment in 1811, accompanied it to Canada in 1813, and died there in April 1823. Daniel, the youngest, who was bred to trade, ruined himself by dissipation, and emigrated to Jamaica. There he showed want of spirit in a disturbance, and returned a dishonoured man, to die soon afterwards (1806). His brother Walter refused to see him, and afterwards felt bitter regret for the harshness.

Walter Scott, the fourth surviving child, was a very healthy infant, but at the age of eighteen months had a fever when teething, and lost the use of his right leg (on this illness see a medical note by Dr. Creighton to the article on Scott in the 'Encyclopædia Britannica,' 9th ed.) After various remedies had failed he was sent to Sandy Knowe, where his grandfather was living with his second son, Thomas. Scott's earliest recollections were of his lying on the floor in this house, wrapped in the skin of a sheep just killed, and being enticed by his grandfather to crawl. Sheepskins and other remedies failed to cure the mischief, which resulted in a permanent deformity; but he recovered his general health, became a sturdy child, caught from his elders a 'personal antipathy' to Washington, and imbibed Jacobite prejudices, due partly to the fall of some of his relations at Culloden. He learnt from his grandmother many songs and legends of the old moss-troopers and his border ancestry. In his fourth year he was sent with his aunt, Miss Janet Scott, to try the waters at Bath. He was taken to London shows on his way; and at Bath was petted by John Home, the author of 'Douglas,' and by his uncle, Captain Robert Scott. He learnt a little reading at a dame school, and saw 'As you like it' at the theatre. He returned after a year to Edinburgh and Sandy Knowe, where he learnt to ride. Mrs. (Alison) Cockburn [q. v.] describes him in a letter of December 1777 as the 'most extraordinary genius of a boy' she ever saw. In his eighth year he was sent for sea-bathing to Prestonpans, where a veteran named Dalgetty told him stories of the German wars, and where he first made acquaintance with George Constable, the original of Jonathan Oldbuck.

In 1778 he returned to his father's house in George's Square, Edinburgh, and after a little preparation was sent, in October 1778, to the high school. A sturdy presbyterian, James Mitchell, also acted as private tutor to him and his brother. Scott had many 'amicable disputes' with the tutor about cavaliers and roundheads, and acquired some knowledge of the church history of Scotland. Mitchell testifies to his sweetness and intelligence. He did not, however, distinguish himself at school, where he was for three years under Luke Fraser, and afterwards under Alexander Adam [q. v.], the rector. He was an 'incorrigibly idle imp,' though 'never a dunce.' He was better at the 'yards' (or playground) than in the class, and famous, in spite of his infirmity, for climbing the 'kittle nine stanes' on the castle rock and taking part in pugilistic 'bickers' with the town boys. Under Adam, however, he became a fair latinist, and won praise for poetical versions of Horace and Virgil. His mother encouraged him to read Shakespeare, and his father allowed the children to act plays occasionally after lessons. His rapid growth having weakened him, he was sent for a half-year to his aunt at Kelso, where he attended school and made the acquaintance of James Ballantyne. Ballantyne reports that he was already an incomparable story-teller. An acquaintance with Thomas Blacklock [q. v.], the blind poet, had led to his reading Ossian and especially the 'Faerie Queen,' of which he could repeat 'marvellous' quantities. He also read Hoole's Tasso, and was, above all, fascinated by Percy's 'Reliques.' He was already beginning to collect ballads. He says that he had bound up 'several volumes' of them before he was ten (Lockhart, ch. iv.), and a collection at Abbotsford dates from about 1783. To the Kelso time he also refers his first love of romantic scenery.

In November 1783 Scott began to attend classes at the college. He admired Dugald

Stewart, and attended a few lectures on law and history. Finding that his fellows were before him in Greek, he forswore the language and gave up the Latin classics as well. He remained ignorant of even the Greek alphabet, though in later years he was fond of some Latin poetry. He was, however, eagerly pursuing his favourite studies. With John Irving (afterwards a writer to the signet) he used to ramble over Arthur's Seat, each composing romantic legends for the other's amusement. He learnt Italian enough to read Tasso and Ariosto in the original, acquired some Spanish, and read French, though he never became a good linguist. A severe illness, caused by the 'bursting of a blood-vessel in the lower bowels,' interrupted his serious studies; and he solaced himself, with Irving, in reading romantic literature. His recovery was completed at Rosebank, where his uncle Robert had recently settled, and which became a second home to him. He studied fortification on Uncle Toby's method, and read Vertot's 'Knights of Malta' and Orme's 'Hindostan.' Gradually he recovered, became tall and muscular, and delighted in rides and, in spite of lameness, walks of twenty or thirty miles a day. His rambles made him familiar with many places of historical interest, and he tried, without success, to acquire the art of landscape-painting. His failure in music was even more decided.

He did not resume his attendance at college in 1785, and on 15 May 1786 he was apprenticed to his father as writer to the signet. Soon after this he had his only sight of Burns. As an apprentice Scott acquired regular business habits. He made a little pocket-money by copying legal documents, and says that he once wrote 120 folio pages at a sitting. His handwriting, as Lockhart observes, shows the marks of his steady practice as a clerk. He began to file his letters regularly, and was inured to the methodical industry to be afterwards conspicuously displayed in literature. The drudgery, however, was distasteful at the time. In 1788 he began to attend civil-law classes, which then formed part of the education of both branches of the legal profession. He here made the acquaintance of young men intended for the bar, and aspired to become an advocate himself. His father kindly approved of the change, but offered to take him into partnership. Both, however, preferred that the younger son, Thomas, should take this position; and Walter accordingly attended the course of study necessary for an advocate, along with his particular chum, William Clerk. They 'coached' each other industriously, and were impressed by the lectures of David Hume, the historian's nephew. Both were called to the bar on 11 July 1792, Scott having defended a thesis 'on the disposal of the dead bodies of criminals,' which was a 'very pretty piece of latinity,' and was dedicated to Lord Braxfield [see MACQUEEN, ROBERT].

Scott was already a charming companion and was a member of various clubs; the 'Teviotdale Club,' to which Ballantyne belonged; 'The Club' (of Edinburgh), where he met William Clerk and other young advocates, and was known as 'Colonel Grogg;' and the 'Literary Society,' where discussions were held in which, although Scott was not distinguished as an orator, he aired his antiquarian knowledge, and gained the nickname 'Duns Scotus.' Scott's companions were given to the conviviality of the period; and, though strictly temperate in later life, he occasionally put the strength of his head to severe tests at this time. When the hero of 'Rob Roy' is persuaded that he had sung a song during a carouse, he is repeating the author's experience. It seems, too, that such frolics occasionally led to breaches of the peace, when Scott was complimented as being the 'first to begin a row and the last to end it.' He fell, however, into no discreditable excesses, and was reading widely and storing his mind, by long rambles in the country, with antiquarian knowledge. As an apprentice he had to accompany an expedition for the execution of a writ, which first took him into the Loch Katrine region. He made acquaintance with a client of his father's, Alexander Stewart of Invernahyle, who had been out in 1715 and 1745, and had met Rob Roy in a duel. Scott visited him in the highlands, and listened eagerly to his stories. At a rather later period he visited the Cheviots, and made a careful study of Flodden Field.

The 'Literary Society' encouraged him to take a higher place among his friends. He had 'already dabbled,' says Lockhart, 'in Anglo-Saxon and the Norse sagas.' In 1789 he read before the society an essay intended to show that the feudal system was the natural product of certain social conditions, instead of being the invention of a particular period. In the winter of 1790–91 he attracted the attention of Dugald Stewart, whose class he was again attending, by an essay 'on the Manners and Customs of the Northern Nations.' On 4 Jan. 1791 he was elected a member of the Speculative Society. He took great interest in its proceedings, was soon chosen librarian and secretary, and kept the minutes with businesslike regu-

larity. An essay upon ballads which he read upon the night of Jeffrey's admission led to an acquaintance between the two, and Jeffrey found him already collecting the nucleus of a museum of curiosities.

By this time he had also become qualified for ladies' society. He had grown to be tall and strong; his figure was both powerful and graceful; his chest and arms were those of a Hercules. Though his features were not handsome, their expression was singularly varied and pleasing; his eye was bright and his complexion brilliant. It was a proud day, he said, when he found that a pretty young woman would sit out and talk to him for hours in a ballroom, where his lameness prevented him from dancing. This pretty young lady was probably Williamina, daughter of Sir John and Lady Jane Belsches, afterwards Stuart, of Fettercairn, near Montrose, born October 1776. She ultimately married, on 19 Jan. 1797, Sir William Forbes, bart., of Pitsligo, was mother of James David Forbes [q. v.], and died 5 Dec. 1810. Scott appears to have felt for her the strongest passion of his life. Scott's father, says Lockhart, thought it right to give notice to the lady's father of the attachment. This interference, however, produced no effect upon the relations between the young people. Scott, he adds, hoped for success for 'several long years.' Whatever the true story of the failure, there can be no doubt that Scott was profoundly moved, and the memory of the lady inspired him when describing Matilda in 'Rokeby' (*Letters*, ii. 18), and probably other heroines. He refers to the passion more than once in his last journal, and he had affecting interviews with her mother in 1827 (*Journal*, 1890, i. 86, 96, 404, ii. 55, 62, 321). According to Lockhart, Scott's friends thought that this secret attachment had helped to keep him free from youthful errors, and had nerved him to diligence during his legal studies. As, however, she was only sixteen when he was called to the bar, Lockhart's language seems to imply rether too early a date for the beginning of the affair (see BAIN'S *James Mill* for an account of the Stuart family; James Mill was for a time Miss Stuart's tutor).

Scott, on joining the bar, received some employment from his father and a few others, but had plenty of leisure to become famous as a story-teller among his comrades. Among his dearest friends of this and later times was William Erskine (afterwards Lord Kinneder) [q. v.] At the end of 1792 he made his first excursion to Liddesdale, with Robert Shortreed, the sheriff-substitute of Roxburghshire. He repeated these 'raids' for seven successive years, exploring every corner of the country, collecting ballads and occasionally an old border war-horn, and enjoying the rough hospitalities of the Dandie Dinmonts. A Willie Elliot of Millburnholme is said to have been the original of this great creation, though a Jamie Davidson, who kept mustard-and-pepper terriers, passed by the name afterwards; and Lockhart thinks that the portrait was filled up from Scott's friend, William Laidlaw [q. v.] Scott was everywhere welcome, overflowing with fun, and always a gentleman, even when 'fou,' which, however, was a rare occurrence. Other rambles took him to Perthshire, Stirlingshire, and Forfarshire. He became familiar with the scenery of Loch Katrine. At Craighall in Perthshire he found one original of the Tully-Veolan of 'Waverley,' and at Meigle in Forfarshire he met Robert Paterson [q. v.], the real 'Old Mortality.' In 1796 he visited Montrose, and tried to collect stories of witches and fairies from his old tutor, Mitchell. The neighbourhood of the Stuarts at Fettercairn was probably a stronger inducement, but his suit was now finally rejected. His friends were alarmed at the possible consequences to his romantic temper, but he appears to have regained his self-command during a solitary ramble in the highlands.

Another line of study was now attracting his attention. In 1788 a paper read by Henry Mackenzie to the Royal Society of Edinburgh had roused an interest in German literature. Scott and some of his friends formed a class about 1792 to study German, engaging as teacher Dr. Willich (afterwards a translator of Kant), and gained a knowledge of the language, which was then a 'new discovery.' Scott disdained the grammar, but forced his way to reading by his knowledge of Anglo-Saxon and Scottish dialects. William Erskine shared his zeal, and restrained his taste for the extravagances of the German dramatists. He became Scott's most trusted literary adviser. Three or four years later James Skene of Rubislaw [q. v.] returned from Germany with a thorough knowledge of the language and a good collection of books. Their literary sympathies led to the formation of another of Scott's warmest friendships.

The French revolution affected Scott chiefly by way of repulsion and by stimulating his patriotism. In 1794 some Irish students of the opposite persuasion made a riot in the theatre. Scott joined with such effect as to break the heads of three democrats, and was bound over to keep the peace. He was keenly interested in the raising of

a volunteer regiment in Edinburgh, from which he was excluded by his lameness. He joined, however, in a scheme for raising a body of volunteer cavalry. It was not organised till February 1797, when Scott was made quartermaster, 'that he might be spared the rough usage of the ranks.' He attended drills at five in the morning before visiting the parliament house, dined with the mess, and became a most popular member of the corps. His military enthusiasm, which excited some amusement among his legal friends, was lasting. When, in 1805, there was a false alarm of an invasion, he rode a hundred miles in one day, from Cumberland to Dalkeith, an incident turned to account in the 'Antiquary' (Lockhart, ch. xiv.)

Scott's income at the bar had risen from 24*l.* in his first year to 144*l.* in 1797. Lockhart gives some specimens of his arguments, which apparently did not rise above the average. In the autumn of 1797 he was persuaded by a friend to visit the English lakes, and thence they went to the little watering-place of Gilsland, near the 'waste of Cumberland' described in 'Guy Mannering.' Here he saw a beautiful girl riding, and, finding that she was also at Gilsland, obtained an introduction, and immediately fell in love with her. She was Charlotte Mary Carpenter, daughter of a French refugee, Jean Charpentier. Upon his death, early in the revolution, his wife, with her children, had gone to England. They found a friend in the Marquis of Downshire, on whose property Charpentier held a mortgage. The son obtained a place in the East India Company's service, and changed his name to Carpenter. The daughter is said by Lockhart to have been very attractive in appearance, though not of regular beauty, with dark-brown eyes, masses of black hair, and a fairy-like figure. She spoke with a slight French accent. Scott, at any rate, was soon 'raving' about her. She was just of age. Lord Downshire approved. Her brother had settled an annuity of 500*l.* upon her; and, though this was partly dependent upon his circumstances, Scott thought that the income, with his own professional earnings, would be sufficient. They were therefore married at St. Mary's Church, Carlisle, on 24 Dec. 1797.

The Scotts settled at a lodging in George Street, Edinburgh; then at 10 Castle Street; and in 1802 at 39 Castle Street, a house which Scott bought, and where he lived till 1826. The bride's lively tastes were apparently not quite suited to the habits of Scott's parents; but she was warmly welcomed by his friends at the bar and among the volunteers. They were both fond of the theatre, and heartily enjoyed the simple social amusements of the time. Scott's father was failing before the marriage, and died in April 1799.

Although still courting professional success, Scott now began to incline to literature. He had apparently written and burnt a boyish poem on the 'Conquest of Granada' about 1786 (Lockhart, p. 37), but afterwards confined himself to an occasional 'sonnet to his mistress's eyebrow.' In 1796 he heard of the version of Bürger's 'Lenore' by William Taylor of Norwich [q. v.], one of the first students of German literature. He was stimulated to attempt a rival translation, which he began after supper and finished that night in a state of excitement which spoilt his sleep. He published this in October with a companion ballad, 'The Wild Huntsman;' the publisher being one of his German class. The ballads were praised by Dugald Stewart, George Chalmers, and others; and his rival, Taylor, sent him a friendly letter. He had, however, many other rivals; and most of the edition went to the trunkmaker. In 1797 William Erskine showed the ballads to Matthew Gregory Lewis [q. v.] of the 'Monk,' who was then collecting the miscellany called 'Tales of Wonder' (1801). He begged for contributions from Scott, whom he met on a visit to Scotland. Scott, though amused by Lewis's foibles, was flattered by the attentions of a well-known author and edified by his criticisms. Lewis was also interested by Scott's version of Goethe's 'Goetz von Berlichingen.' He induced a publisher to give 25*l.* for it, with a promise of an equal sum for a second edition. It appeared in February 1799, but failed to obtain republication. Another dramatic performance of the time was the 'House of Aspen,' an adaptation from 'Der heilige Vehme' of G. Wächter; it was offered to Kemble by Lewis, and, it is said, put in rehearsal. It was not performed, however, and remained unpublished. Meanwhile Scott had been writing ballads for Lewis, some of which he showed to his friend, James Ballantyne [q. v.], who was then publishing a newspaper at Kelso. Ballantyne agreed to print twelve copies of these ballads, which, with a few poems by other authors, appeared as 'Apology for Tales of Terror' in 1799. Scott had suggested that they would serve as advertisements of Ballantyne's press to his friends at Edinburgh. He was pleased with the result, and now began to think of publishing his collection of 'Border Ballads,' to be printed by Ballantyne.

The office of sheriff-depute of Selkirkshire was at this time vacant, and Scott had the support of the Duke of Buccleuch in an application for the office. Scott's volunteering had also brought him into close connection with Robert Dundas, eldest son of Lord Melville, then the great distributor of Scottish patronage. Melville's nephews were also interested, and on 16 Dec. 1799 Scott was appointed sheriff-depute. It brought him 300*l.* a year for light work and a closer connection with his favourite district. Scott now set about his ballad collection energetically. On 22 April 1800 he wrote to Ballantyne, whom he proposed to entrust with the printing, and suggested, at the same time, that Ballantyne would find a good opening for a printing establishment in Edinburgh. Scott's ballad-hunting brought him many new acquaintances, who, as usual, became warm friends. Among them were Richard Heber [q. v.], the great book-collector, and, through Heber, George Ellis [q. v.], then preparing his 'Specimens of Early English Romances.' They kept up an intimate correspondence until Ellis's death. Scott managed also to form a friendly alliance with the touchy antiquary, Joseph Ritson [q. v.] He took up John Leyden [q. v.], whose enthusiastic co-operation he repaid by many good services. He made the acquaintance of William Laidlaw, ever afterwards an attached friend; and, through Laidlaw, of James Hogg (1770–1835) [q. v.], to whom also he was a steady patron. The first two volumes of the 'Border Minstrelsy,' printed by Ballantyne, were published early in 1802 by Cadell & Davies, and welcomed by many critics of the time, including Miss Seward. Scott received 78*l.* 10*s.* for a half-share of the profits, and then sold the copyright to the Longmans for 500*l.* This price apparently included a third volume, which appeared in 1803. Other editions followed when Scott had become famous. The collection included various introductory essays, and showed, as Lockhart remarks, that his mind was already stored with most of the incidents and images afterwards turned to account. The 'Minstrelsy' had been intended to include the romance of 'Sir Tristram,' which he and Leyden had persuaded themselves to be the work of Thomas of Ercildoune [q. v.] A small edition of this was published separately by Constable in May 1804.

The 'Minstrelsy' included some imitations of the ancient ballad by Scott, Leyden, and others. 'Glenfinlas,' written for Lewis in 1799, was, he says, his 'first serious attempt in verse.' Another poem, intended for the 'Minstrelsy,' led to more important results (*Letters*, i. 22). The Countess of Dalkeith (afterwards Duchess of Buccleuch) suggested to him as a fit subject for a ballad the legend of Gilpin Horner. Soon afterwards (Sir) John Stoddart [q. v.], on a visit to Scotland, repeated to him the then unpublished 'Christabel.' Scott thought the metre adapted to such an 'extravaganza' as he intended. A verse or two from 'Christabel' was actually introduced in Scott's poems; and Coleridge seems afterwards to have been a little annoyed by the popularity due in part to this appropriation and denied to the more poetical original. Scott in his preface of 1830 fully acknowledges the debt, and in his novels makes frequent references to Coleridge's poems. The framework of the 'Last Minstrel' was introduced on a hint from W. Erskine or George Cranstoun [q. v.], to whom he had read some stanzas; and its form was suggested by the neighbourhood of Newark Castle to Bowhill, where he had met the Countess of Dalkeith. He read the beginning to Ellis early in 1803. The 'Lay of the Last Minstrel' was published at the beginning of 1805 by the Longmans and Constable on half profits. The Longmans bought the copyright on a second edition for 500*l.*, Scott thus receiving 769*l.* 6*s.* on the whole. It succeeded at once so brilliantly as to determine Scott's future career.

Scott's literary occupations had naturally told against his success at the bar. His professional income had increased slowly, and in 1802–3 amounted to 228*l.* 18*s.* In 1804 his father's business had dwindled in the hands of his brother Thomas, and his own prospects suffered. In 1804 the lord lieutenant of Selkirkshire complained that Scott's military zeal had interfered with the discharge of his duties as sheriff, and that he was legally bound to reside four months in the year within his own jurisdiction. Scott had, upon his marriage, taken a cottage at Lasswade, six miles from Edinburgh, where he spent his summers. He now had to look out for a house in a more appropriate situation, and took a lease of Ashestiel on the Tweed, near Selkirk. On 10 June 1804 his uncle, Robert Scott, died, leaving him the house at Rosebank. He sold this for 5,000*l.*, and, with the sheriff-depute-ship and his wife's settlement, had now about 1,000*l.* a year independently of his practice (Lockhart, ch. xiii.) Ashestiel was in a rustic district, seven miles from the nearest town, and in the midst of the Buccleuch estates. He had plenty of sporting and a small sheep farm. He thought of making Hogg his bailiff, but took a fancy to Thomas Purdie, who had been charged with poaching, and had touched Scott's heart by his

apology. Purdie became his shepherd, then his bailiff, and remained till death an attached friend.

Scott now resolved, as he says (Introd. to the *Lay*), that literature should be his 'staff, but not his crutch.' He desired to be independent of his pen, though giving up hopes of the highest legal preferments. He applied, therefore, through Lord Dalkeith (2 Feb. 1805), to Lord Melville for an appointment, which he succeeded in obtaining in the following year. Lockhart thinks (*ib.* ch. xv. p. 36) that, besides the Buccleuch interest, a hint of Pitt's, who had expressed admiration of the 'Lay,' may have been serviceable. George Home, one of the 'principal clerks of the quarter session,' was becoming infirm; and, as there was no system of retiring pensions, Scott was associated in the office, on the terms of doing the duty for nothing during Home's life and succeeding to the position on his death. Some formal error having been made in the appointment, Scott went to London to obtain its rectification, and was afraid that upon the change of government advantage might be taken of the mistake. His fears were set at rest by Lord Spencer, then at the home office, and the appointment was gazetted on 8 March 1806. Scott was for the first time received in London as a literary lion, and made the acquaintance of Joanna Baillie, ever afterwards a warm friend. The duties of his clerkship occupied him from four to six hours daily for four days a week during six months of the year, and, though partly mechanical, required care and businesslike habits and the study of law papers at home. It brought him into close connection with his colleagues, the children of the several families all calling the other fathers 'uncle.' Soon afterwards he wrote a song, which James Ballantyne sang at a public dinner (27 June 1806), to commemorate the failure of Melville's impeachment. He desired, as Lockhart thinks (*ib.* ch. xv.), to show that his appointment had not interfered with his political independence. The words 'Tally-ho to the Fox!' used at a time when Fox's health was beginning to collapse, gave deep offence; and some friends, according to Cockburn (*Memorials*, p. 217), were permanently alienated. The particular phrase was of course used without ungenerous intention, and Scott paid a compliment to Fox's memory in 'Marmion' soon afterwards. But he was now becoming a keen partisan. Lockhart observes that during the whig ministry his tory feelings were 'in a very excited state,' and that he began to take an active part as a local manager of political affairs. When Jeffrey playfully complimented him on a speech before the faculty of advocates, Scott burst into tears, and declared that the whigs would leave nothing of all that made Scotland Scotland.

Ballantyne had removed to Edinburgh at the end of 1802, and set up a press in the precincts of Holyrood House (Lockhart, ch. xi.) It was called the Border Press, and gained a reputation for beauty and correctness. Soon after the publication of the 'Lay,' Ballantyne, who had already received a loan from Scott, found that more capital was needed; Scott (*ib.* ch. xiv.) thought it imprudent to make a further advance, but agreed at the beginning of 1805 to become a partner in the business. The connection was a secret; and Scott, whose writings were now eagerly sought by publishers, attracted many customers. He arranged that all his own books should be printed by Ballantyne, while as a printer he became more or less interested in the publishing speculations. Scott's sanguine disposition and his generous trust in other authors led him also to suggest a number of literary enterprises, some very costly, and frequently ending in failure. Money had to be raised; and Scott, who seems to have first taken up Ballantyne somewhat in the spirit of a border-chief helping one of his clan, soon caught the spirit of commercial speculation. The first scheme which he proposed was for a collection of British poets, to be published by Constable. A similar scheme, in which Thomas Campbell was to be the editor, was in the contemplation of some London publishers. After some attempts at an alliance, Scott's scheme was given up; but he took up with great energy a complete edition of Dryden. In 1805 he was also writing for the 'Edinburgh Review,' and had made a beginning of 'Waverley' (*ib.* ch. xiv.) The name was probably suggested by Waverley Abbey, near Farnham, which was within a ride of Ellis's house where he had been recently staying. The first few chapters were shown to William Erskine (*ib.* ch. xxii. p. 202), and upon his disapproval the task was dropped for the time. Scott now adopted the habits which enabled him to carry out his labours. He gave up his previous plan of sitting up late, rose at five, dressed carefully, was at his desk by six, and before the family breakfast had 'broken the neck of the day's work.' A couple of hours afterwards he finished the writing, and was his 'own man' by noon. At Ashestiel he rode out, coursed with his greyhounds or joined in 'burning the water,' as described in 'Guy Mannering.' He answered every letter the same day, and thus got through a surprising

amount of work. Lockhart describes (*ib.* ch. xxvii. p. 256) how in 1814 a youthful friend of his own was irritated by the vision of a hand which he could see, while drinking his claret, through the window of a neighbouring house, unweariedly adding to a heap of manuscripts. It was afterwards identified as Scott's hand, then employed upon 'Waverley;' and the anecdote shows that he sometimes, at least, wrote into the evening.

During 1806–7 Scott was hard at work upon 'Dryden,' and in the spring of 1807 visited London to make researches in the British Museum. He was also appointed secretary to the parliamentary commission upon Scottish jurisprudence (*ib.* ch. xvi.), and took much pains in qualifying himself for the duty. An essay upon the changes proposed by the commission was afterwards contributed by him to the 'Edinburgh Annual Register' for 1808 (published 1810), and shows his suspicion of the reforms which were being urged by Bentham among others (see BENTHAM, *Works*, vol. v.) At the same time he was writing 'Marmion,' upon which he says (Introduction of 1830) that he thought it desirable to bestow more care than his previous compositions had received. Some of it, especially the battle, was composed while he was galloping his charger along Portobello Sands during his volunteer exercises (LOCKHART, ch. xvi.) The introductory epistles, which most of his critics thought a disagreeable interruption, were carefully laboured, and at one time advertised for separate publication (*ib.* ch. xvi. p. 154). They are of great biographical interest. Constable offered a thousand guineas for the poem before seeing it, and Scott at once accepted the offer. He had a special need of money in consequence of the failure, at the end of 1806, of his brother Thomas. 'Marmion' was published on 23 Feb. 1808, and was as successful as the 'Lay.' The general applause was interrupted by some sharp criticism from Jeffrey in the 'Edinburgh Review.' Jeffrey, besides a general dislike to the romanticism of the new school, strangely accused Scott of neglecting 'Scottish feelings and Scottish characters.' He sent the review, with a note, to Scott, with whom he was engaged to dine. Scott received him with unchanged cordiality, but Mrs. Scott sarcastically hoped that he had been well paid by Constable for his 'abuse' of his host. Scott himself ceased to be a contributor to the 'Edinburgh,' although his personal relations with Jeffrey were always friendly (see *Letters*, i. 436–40, ii. 32). Other reasons sufficiently explain his secession. In November 1807 he had proposed to Southey to become one of Jeffrey's contributors, in spite of certain attacks upon 'Madoc' and 'Thalaba.' Southey declined, as generally disapproving of Jeffrey's politics, and Scott was soon annoyed by what he thought the unpatriotic tone of the review, especially the 'Cevallos' article of October 1808. He at once took up eagerly the scheme for the 'Quarterly Review,' which was now being started by Murray, who visited him in October 1808 (see SMILES's *Murray*, i. 96 seq.) Canning approved the scheme, and Scott wrote to all his friends to get recruits. Lockhart says that he could 'fill half a volume with the correspondence upon this subject' (see, too, Gifford's letters in *Letters*, vol. ii. appendix). The quarrel with Jeffrey involved a quarrel with Constable, the publisher at this time of the 'Edinburgh.' Other serious difficulties had arisen. The edition of 'Dryden' in eighteen volumes, with Scott's admirable life, had appeared in the last week of April 1808. He had worked hard as an editor, and received 756*l.*, or forty guineas a volume. He had by October 1808 prepared an edition of the 'Sadler Papers' (published in 1809), and was at work upon a new edition of the 'Somers Tracts,' and now, besides some other trifles, had undertaken the edition of Swift, for which Constable offered him 1,500*l.* A partner of Constable's, named Hunter, an intelligent and honourable man, but strongly opposed to Scott in politics, was dissatisfied with the Swift bargain. Scott was bitterly offended at some of Hunter's language, and on 12 Jan. 1809 wrote an indignant letter breaking off all connection with the firm. He had previously engaged John (1774–1821) [q. v.], the younger brother of James Ballantyne, who had failed in business, to act as clerk under the brother. It was now decided to start a publishing firm (John Ballantyne & Co.) in opposition to Constable. Scott was to supply half the capital, and the other half was to be divided equally between James and John. According to Lockhart, Scott had also to provide for James's quarter, while John had to borrow his quarter either from Scott or some one else (LOCKHART, ch. xviii. p. 174). The new firm undertook various enterprises, especially the 'Edinburgh Annual Register,' to which Southey was a contributor; and Scott now hoped, with the alliance of John Murray, to compete successfully with Constable.

In the spring of 1809 he visited London and saw much of his new acquaintance, John Bacon Sawrey Morritt [q. v.], with whom he stayed at Rokeby Park on his return. In London he saw much of Canning, Ellis, and

Croker. The first number of the 'Quarterly Review,' to which he contributed three articles, appeared during his stay, and he had frequent conferences with John Murray concerning the new alliance with Ballantyne. This was soon cooled in consequence of John Ballantyne's modes of doing business (SMILES, *John Murray*, i. 175). Scott added to his other distractions a keen interest in theatrical matters. He became intimate with J. P. Kemble and Mrs. Siddons. In the summer he took a share in the theatre at Edinburgh, and induced Henry Siddons [q. v.], the nephew of Mrs. Siddons, to undertake the management and to produce as his first play the 'Family Legend' of his friend Joanna Baillie. This led to a friendship with Daniel Terry [q. v.], an actor in the Edinburgh company, who shared Scott's taste for curiosities, dramatised his novels, and admired him so much as to catch a trick of personal likeness.

In 1810 an act was passed to put in force some of the recommendations of the judicature commission. Compensation was made to the holders of some offices abolished. Scott had recently appointed a deserving old clerk to a vacant place and given the 'extractorship' thus vacated to his brother Thomas. Thomas was now pensioned off with 130*l.* a year. The transaction was attacked as a job in the House of Lords by Lord Holland. Thomas had been forced by his difficulties to retreat to the Isle of Man, and did his duty at Edinburgh by deputy. The appointment was apparently not out of the usual course of things at that period. Scott bitterly resented the attack, and 'cut' Lord Holland soon afterwards at Edinburgh. The quarrel, however, was made up in later years. Meanwhile Scott was finishing his third poem, 'The Lady of the Lake.' He received nominally 2,000*l.* for the copyright, but 'Ballantyne & Co.' retained three-fourths of the property. He had taken special care to be accurate in details, and repeated the king's ride from Loch Vennachar to Stirling, in order to assure himself that it could be done in the time. The poem was published in May 1810, and equalled the success of its predecessors. There was a rush of visitors to Loch Katrine, and the post-horse duty in Scotland rose regularly from that date (LOCKHART, ch. xx. p. 192). From Lockhart's statement, it appears that twenty thousand copies were sold in the year, the quarto edition of 2,050 copies being sold for two guineas. This success was even more rapid than that of the 'Lay' or 'Marmion,' though the sale of each of the poems down to 1825 was about the same, being in each case something over thirty thousand. 'The Lady of the Lake' was praised by Jeffrey in the 'Edinburgh,' while Ellis (who reviewed it in the 'Quarterly') and Canning entreated him to try next time to adopt Dryden's metre. The extraordinary success of these 'novels in verse' was in proportion less to their purely poetical merits than to the romantic spirit afterwards more appropriately embodied in the novels. A poem of which it can be said that the essence could be better given in prose is clearly not of the highest class, though the lays include many touches of most genuine poetry. Scott himself never formed an exalted estimate of his own verses. Johnson's poems, he said, gave him more pleasure than any others. His daughter, on being asked what she thought of the 'Lay,' said that she had not read it; 'papa says there's nothing so bad for young people as reading bad poetry.' His son had never heard of it, and conjectured as the reason of his father's celebrity that 'it's commonly him that sees the hare sitting' (LOCKHART, ch. xx. p. 196). The compliment to the 'Lady' which probably pleased its author most was from his friend, Adam Ferguson, who was serving in Portugal, and had read the poem to his comrades, while lying under fire at the lines of Torres Vedras (*ib.* ch. xxii. p. 206). Ferguson afterwards read to similar audiences the 'Vision of Don Roderick,' in Spenserian stanzas, published for the benefit of the distressed Portuguese in 1811. This, with an imitation of Crabbe and one or two trifles of the same period, seems to have resulted from his desire to try his friend's advice of attempting a different style in poetry. After finishing the 'Lay,' Scott had again taken up 'Waverley,' and again laid it aside upon a discouraging opinion from Ballantyne, who, it seems, wanted more 'Lays.' Scott's regular employment was the edition of Swift. Meanwhile the publishing business was going badly, partly owing to Scott's characteristic patronage of other authors. Anna Seward [q. v.] had begun a correspondence with him on the publication of the 'Minstrelsy.' She was not sparing of comically pedantic compliments, which Scott repaid with praises which, if insincere, brought a fit punishment. She died in 1809, and left him her poems with an injunction to publish them. He obeyed, and the firm suffered by the three volumes, which appeared in the autumn of 1810. Another unlucky venture was the edition of Beaumont and Fletcher by Henry William Weber [q. v.] Scott had taken him for an amanuensis in 1804 when he was a half-starved bookseller's hack. Though Weber was a Jacobin in principles,

and given occasionally to drink, Scott helped him frequently, till in 1814 he went mad; and afterwards supported him till his death in 1818. Unluckily, Scott also put too much faith in his client's literary capacity, and lost heavily by publishing his work. Somewhat similar motives prompted him to publish the 'History of the Culdees,' by his old friend John Jamieson [q. v.], and another heavy loss was caused by the 'Tixall' poetry. The 'Edinburgh Annual Register,' in which he was glad to employ Southey, caused a loss of never less than 1,000*l.* a year. Scott's professional income, however, was now improved. The reconstitution of the court of session enabled Home to retire from the clerkship on a pension, and from January 1812 Scott received the salary, as well as performed the duties, of his office. The salary was fixed at 1,300*l.*, which was a clear addition to his previous income. As his lease of Ashestiel was ending, he resolved to buy a place of his own. He paid 4,000*l.* for an estate about five miles further down the Tweed, to which he gave the name of Abbotsford. It included a meadow on the Tweed, one hundred acres of rough land, and a small farmhouse (a facsimile plan of Abbotsford in 1811 is given at the end of *Letters*, vol. i.) The neighbourhood of Melrose Abbey, to which the lands had formerly belonged, was an additional attraction. Scott at once set about planting and building, with the constant advice of his friend Terry. He moved into the house from Ashestiel in May 1812. He wrote here, amid the noise of masons, in the only habitable room, of which part had been screened off for him by an old curtain. He engaged as a tutor for the children George Thomson [q. v.], son of the minister of Melrose, who lived with him many years, and was the original of Dominie Sampson. While amusing himself with his planting and his children, he was now writing 'Rokeby' and 'The Bridal of Triermain.' He visited Morritt at Rokeby in the autumn, to refresh his impressions, and the book was published at Christmas 1812, and was followed in two months by 'Triermain.' Although an edition of three thousand two-guinea copies of 'Rokeby' was sold at once, and ten thousand copies went off in a few months, its success was very inferior to that of its predecessors. Scott attributes this to various causes (Preface of 1830), such as the unpoetical character of the Roundheads. A 'far deeper' cause, as he says, was that his style had lost its novelty by his own repetitions and those of his many imitators. He was writing with less vivacity; and Moore, in the 'Two-penny Postbag,' hit a blot by saying that Scott had left the border, and meant 'to do all the gentlemen's seats on the way' to London. Another cause assigned by Scott was that he had been eclipsed by Byron, whose poems he cordially admired. Murray brought Scott into communication with Byron on the publication of 'Childe Harold' in 1812. Byron reported compliments from the prince regent to Scott, and apologised for the sneer at 'Marmion' in 'English Bards and Scotch Reviewers.' They afterwards meet on very friendly terms. Scott wrote a generous review of Byron, at his final departure from England, by which Byron was much gratified (*Quarterly*, vol. xiv.), and Lady Byron, though complaining of certain misunderstandings, acknowledged Scott's good intentions, and was cordially received by him soon afterwards at Abbotsford. 'The Bridal of Triermain,' which was composed as a relief to 'Rokeby,' was published anonymously, and Scott endeavoured to spread the impression that William Erskine, who had suggested the poem and consented to humour the jest, was its author.

The affairs of Ballantyne & Co. had now reached a serious crisis. Scott had made up his personal quarrel with Constable in 1810, and had some friendly communications with him (*ib.* ch. xx. p. 192). The edition of Swift had remained on Constable's hands. In May 1813 Scott consented, though reluctantly, to apply to Constable for help in Ballantyne's affairs, engaging that the publishing business should be wound up if proper terms could be obtained. The printing concern was bringing in about 1,800*l.* a year. Constable examined the books in August, and reported that the liabilities were about 15,000*l.*, and that the assets, if they could be realised, would about balance them (*Archibald Constable*, iii. 31). It was, however, a period of financial difficulty, and it was impossible to dispose of the stock and copyrights in time. An advance was necessary to meet the immediate difficulties. Scott hereupon applied to his friend, the Duke of Buccleuch, who had, as he observed, the 'true spirit of a border chief' (*ib.* iii. 23), and who at once agreed to guarantee an advance of 4,000*l.* by a London banker. Constable had already in May agreed to take part of the stock of the Ballantynes for 2,000*l.*, which was ultimately resold to the trade at a great loss. Much more was still left on hand. John Ballantyne set up as an auctioneer, though he continued to act as Scott's agent for the 'Waverley Novels.' In January 1816 a new arrangement was made, under which James Ballantyne became simply

Scott's agent, receiving a salary of 400*l.* a year for managing the printing business. The affairs of this and the publishing business had become indistinguishable. John Ballantyne said that the publishing business was wound up with a clear balance of 1,000*l.* in consequence of Scott's energy. The new firm took over, according to Lockhart (p. 451), liabilities to the amount of 10,000*l.* Scott complained much in 1813 of having been kept in ignorance by his partners of the real state of affairs; and it seems that the printing, as well as the publishing, office had been in difficulties from an early period. The printing business, however, was substantially a good one, and, now that the publishing was abandoned, might be expected to thrive.

For two or three years after the arrangement with Constable the affairs of the firm were in a very critical state, and Scott was put to many straits for raising money. He cordially admitted his obligations to Constable's sagacity and help, while he begged John Ballantyne to treat him 'as a man, and not as a milch-cow' (Lockhart, ch. xxvi. p. 246). Scott, however, was sanguine by nature, and had sufficiently good prospects. His income, he says (24 Aug. 1813), was over 2,000*l.* a year, and he was owner of Abbotsford and the house in Castle Street. He was clear that no one could ultimately be a loser by him. Just at this time the regent offered him the poet-laureateship, which he erroneously supposed to be worth 400*l.* a year. It had fallen into such discredit that he feared to be ridiculed for taking it, and declined on the ground that he could not write the regular odes then imperative, and that his legal offices were a sufficient provision. In the midst of his difficulties he was sending 50*l.* to Maturin, then in distress, and was generous to other struggling authors while pressed to pay his family expenses.

Unfortunately, Scott had been seized with a passion for adding to his landed property. A property was for sale which would extend his estate from the Tweed to the Cauldshiels Loch; and to raise the money he offered, in June 1813, to sell an unwritten poem (afterwards 'The Lord of the Isles') to Constable for 5,000*l.* Though the literary negotiation failed, he bought the land, and was at the same time buying 'a splendid lot of ancient armour' for his museum.

On 1 July 1814 appeared Scott's edition of Swift in nineteen volumes, which was reviewed by Jeffrey in the 'Edinburgh' at Constable's request. Jeffrey praised Scott, but his hostile estimate of Swift was thought by Constable to have injured the sale of the works. In the midst of his troubles Scott had accidentally found his old manuscript of 'Waverley' in looking for some fishing-tackle. He thought that his critics, Erskine and Ballantyne, had been too severe; and in the last three weeks of June 1814 wrote the two concluding volumes. The book appeared on 7 July 1814. The first edition of one thousand copies was sold in five weeks, and a sixth had appeared before the end of a year. Constable had offered 700*l.* for the copyright, which Scott said was too little if it succeeded, and too much if it failed. It was therefore published upon half-profits. On 29 July Scott sailed upon a cruise with the lighthouse commissioners, in which he was accompanied by his friend William Erskine and others. They visited the Orkney and Shetland islands, and returned by the Hebrides, reaching Greenock on 8 Sept. The delightful journal published in Lockhart's 'Life' gives a graphic picture of Scott's charm as a travelling companion, and of his keen delight in the scenery, the antiquities, and the social condition of the people. He turned his experience to account in 'The Pirate' and 'The Lord of the Isles.' On returning he received the news of the death of his old friend the Duchess of Buccleuch, who, as Countess of Dalkeith, had suggested 'The Lay of the Last Minstrel.' He found also that 'Waverley' was making a startling success. For the time he had other pieces of work in hand. Besides writing articles on chivalry and the drama for Constable's 'Supplement' to the 'Encyclopædia Britannica,' and other minor pieces of work, he had finally agreed, while passing through Edinburgh, for 'The Lord of the Isles.' Constable gave 1,500*l.* for half the copyright. It was rapidly finished, and published on 18 Jan. 1815. Though it was about as popular as 'Rokeby,' Scott became aware that the poetical vein was being exhausted. When Ballantyne told him of the comparative failure, he received the news after a moment with 'perfect cheerfulness,' and returned to work upon the conclusion of his second novel, 'Guy Mannering,' which, as Lockhart calculates, was written in six weeks, about Christmas 1814. The success of his novels encouraged him to make new purchases. 'Money,' he writes to Morritt in November 1814, 'has been tumbling in upon me very fast;' his pinches from 'long-dated bills' are over, and he is therefore buying land (*Letters*, i. 351).

For the next ten years Scott was pouring out the series of novels, displaying an energy and fertility of mind which make the feat one

of the most remarkable recorded in literary history. The main interruption was in 1815. All his patriotic feelings had been stirred to the uttermost by the concluding scenes of the war; and he went to France in August, visited Waterloo, saw the allies in Paris, met the Duke of Wellington and Lord Castlereagh, was courteously received by Blücher, and kissed by the hetman Platoff. For Wellington he had the highest admiration, and wondered that the hero should care for the author of a 'few bits of novels.' Scott's impressions on this tour were described by him in 'Paul's Letters to his Kinsfolk' (1816), and in a poem on the 'Field of Waterloo,' published in October 1815 for the benefit of soldiers' widows, and an admitted failure. His last poem of any length, 'Harold the Dauntless,' was published in January 1817, as by the author of 'Triermain,' and had, says Lockhart, 'considerable success,' but not such as to encourage him to further attempts in the same line.

The 'Waverley Novels,' on the contrary, had at once become the delight of all readers, even of those who, like Hazlitt, detested Scott from a political point of view. Scott had determined to be anonymous, and the secret was at first confided only to his publishers and to his friends Morritt and Erskine. In his preface of 1830, and in some letters of the time, Scott gives reasons for this decision which are scarcely convincing. The most intelligible is his dislike to be accepted as an author, and forced to talk about his own books in society. This fell in with his low estimate of literary reputation in general. He considered his writings chiefly as the means of supporting his position as a gentleman, and would rather be received as Scott of Abbotsford than the author of the 'Waverley Novels.' When writing his earlier books, as Lockhart shows, he had frankly consulted his friends; but as he became more of a professional author, he was less disposed to wear the character publicly. It is probable that his connection with the Ballantynes had an effect in this change. He began to take a publisher's point of view, and was afraid of making his name too cheap. Whatever his motives, he adhered to his anonymity, and in agreements with Constable introduced a clause that the publisher should be liable to a penalty of 2,000*l.* if the name of the author were revealed (*ib.* ch. xliii. and liv. pp. 388, 469). He says, in his preface, that he considered himself to be entitled to deny the authorship flatly if the question were put to him directly. It was reported that he had solemnly disavowed 'Waverley' to the prince regent, who entertained him at dinner in the spring of 1815. Scott, however, told Ballantyne that the question had not been put to him, though he evaded the acknowledgment when the regent proposed his health as the 'author of Waverley' (For a similar story see Smiles's *John Murray*, i. 474). From the first, the most competent readers guessed the truth. It was sufficiently intimated by Jeffrey in his review of 'Waverley,' and the constant use in the novels of his own experiences gave unmistakable evidence to all his familiars. Less intimate friends, such as Southey and Sydney Smith, speak without doubt of his authorship. The letters on the authorship of 'Waverley' by John Leycester Adolphus [q. v.] in 1821 gave a superfluous, though ingenious, demonstration of the fact. Scott countenanced a few rumours attributing the novels to others, especially to his brother, Thomas Scott, now in Canada. Thomas, he suggested, need not officiously reject the credit of the authorship. Murray believed this report in 1817; and a discovery of the same statement in a Canadian paper led a Mr. W. J. Fitzgerald to write a pamphlet in 1855 attributing the authorship (partly at least) to Thomas (see *Notes and Queries*, 1st ser. vols. i. and ii.)

Scott said that his first suggestion of novels intended to portray Scottish character came from Miss Edgeworth's Irish stories. He sent her a copy of 'Waverley' and warm compliments from the anonymous author. Scott's sympathetic reproduction of the national characteristics was of course combined with the power, which distinguished his novels from all previous works, of giving life to history and to the picturesque and vanishing forms of society. His 'feudalism' and toryism were other aspects of his intense interest in the old order broken down by the revolution. He was also pouring out the stores of anecdote and legend and the vivid impressions of the scenery which he had been imbibing from his early childhood while rambling through the country in close and friendly intercourse with all classes. Scott's personal charm, his combination of masculine sense with wide and generous sympathy, enabled him to attract an unprecedentedly numerous circle of readers to these almost impromptu utterances of a teeming imagination.

The first nine novels, in which these qualities are most conspicuous, appeared in five years; the last on 10 June 1819. 'Waverley' was followed on 24 Feb. 1815 by 'Guy Mannering,' the hero of which was at once

recognised by Hogg as a portrait of the author himself. 'The Antiquary,' which, as he told Basil Hall (*Fragments*, iii. 325; and see Archdeacon SINCLAIR, *Old Times and Distant Places*), was his own favourite, appeared in May 1815. The 'Black Dwarf' and 'Old Mortality' appeared together, as the first series of the 'Tales of my Landlord,' on 1 Dec. 1816. The 'author of "Waverley"' was not mentioned on the title-page, but the identity was instantly recognised. Scott himself reviewed this in the 'Quarterly,' inserting, however, as Lockhart says, a general estimate of the novels written by W. Erskine. The main purpose of the article is to give facts in justification of some of his Scottish portraits, especially his account of the covenanters in 'Old Mortality,' which had been attacked by Thomas McCrie (1772–1835) [q. v.] (the article is in his 'Miscellaneous Works'). 'Rob Roy' appeared on 31 Dec. 1817, and the 'Heart of Midlothian' in June 1818. This representation of the nobler side of the covenanting temper gave the best answer to McCrie's criticism, and the story caused, says Lockhart, an unequalled burst of enthusiasm throughout Scotland. The third series of 'Tales of my Landlord,' including the 'Bride of Lammermoor' and the 'Legend of Montrose,' appeared on 10 June 1819.

The arrangements for publishing these novels were unfortunately carried on by Scott through the Ballantynes, of whom other publishers, such as Cadell and Blackwood, seem to have felt thorough distrust (see CONSTABLE, iii. 108, &c.; SMILES, *Murray*, i. 462). John Ballantyne tried to work upon the eagerness of various competitors for the works of the popular author. The books were printed by James Ballantyne. Scott retained the permanent copyright, but sold the early editions for such a sum as would give half the profits to the publisher. 'Guy Mannering' was thus sold to the Longmans for 1,500*l.* on condition of taking 500*l.* of John Ballantyne's stock. Constable was vexed on being passed over, and the 'Antiquary' was given to him on the usual terms; but the first 'Tales of my Landlord' were sold to Murray and Blackwood, who again took some of Ballantyne's stock (CONSTABLE, iii. 35). Constable, it seems, resented some of John Ballantyne's proposals, and was unwilling to be connected with the firm. On the appearance of 'Rob Roy,' however, John Ballantyne again agreed with Constable, who gave 1,700*l.* for the copies, besides taking more stock, and Ballantyne himself gained 1,200*l.* by the bargain. On the next occasion Ballantyne worked so successfully upon Constable's jealousy of Murray that the publisher, besides taking the second series of the 'Tales of my Landlord,' 'cleared the Augean stable' by taking the remainder of Ballantyne's stock for 5,270*l.*—two thirds of which was ultimately a dead loss. [This transaction, according to Constable (iii. 96), took place later.] Scott thus got rid of the last remains of the publishing business, and now supposed himself to be emerging from his difficulties. He was able, in consequence of some arrangement with Constable, to return the Duke of Buccleuch's bond discharged (7 Jan. 1818). Finally, in December 1818, Scott, who required money for land-purchases, building, and the expense of obtaining a commission for his son, made a bargain by which Constable bought the copyrights of all his works published up to that date for 12,000*l.* This included all the novels above mentioned and the poetry, with the exception of a fourth share of 'Marmion' belonging to Murray. The Constables signed bonds for this amount on 2 Feb. 1819, but failed to pay them off before their insolvency. Scott therefore retained some interest in the copyrights. Longman published the 'Monastery,' and joined Constable in publishing the 'Abbot.' But Constable published all Scott's other works, and came into exceedingly intricate relations with Scott and the Ballantynes.

'Ivanhoe,' which appeared at the end of 1819, marked a new departure. Scott was now drawing upon his reading instead of his personal experience, and the book has not the old merit of serious portraiture of real life. But its splendid audacity, its vivid presentation of mediæval life, and the dramatic vigour of the narrative, may atone for palpable anachronisms and melodramatic impossibilities. The story at once achieved the popularity which it has always enjoyed, and was more successful in England than any of the so-called 'Scottish novels.' It was Scott's culminating success in a bookselling sense, and marked the highest point both of his literary and his social prosperity.

The year was indeed a sad one for Scott. He had been deeply grieved by the death of the (fourth) Duke of Buccleuch on 20 April 1819. He lost his mother, between whom and himself there had been a cordial affection, on 24 Dec. Her brother, Dr. Rutherford, and her sister had died on the 20th and 22nd of the same month. His own health was in so serious a state at the publication of the 'Tales' in June that the general impression was that he would write no more. He had been suddenly attacked, in March 1817, by violent cramps

of the stomach. Similar attacks were repeated during the next two years, and the change in his appearance shocked his acquaintances. In April 1819 Scott himself took a solemn leave of his children, in expectation of immediate death. The Earl of Buchan had already designed a splendid funeral, and tried to force his way into the patient's room to comfort him by explaining the details. The attacks caused intense agony, which he bore with unflinching courage. When unable to write he dictated to Ballantyne and Laidlaw in the midst of his suffering. The greatest part of the 'Bride of Lammermoor,' the 'Legend of Montrose,' and 'Ivanhoe,' was written under these conditions (Ballantyne's full account is printed in *Journal*, i. 408). James Ballantyne testified to the remarkable fact that Scott, while remembering the story upon which the 'Bride of Lammermoor' was founded, had absolutely forgotten his own novel, and read it upon its appearance as entirely new to him. The attacks were repeated in 1820, but became less violent under a new treatment.

Scott's growing fame had made him the centre of a wide and varied social circle. In Edinburgh he was much occupied by his legal as well as literary duties, and kept early hours, which limited his social engagements. In the evenings he enjoyed drives in the lovely scenery and rambles in the old town. Every Sunday he entertained his old cronies, who were chiefly of the tory persuasion. The bitterness of political divisions in Scotland divided society into two sections, though Scott occasionally met Jeffrey and other whigs; and Cockburn testifies (*Memorials*, p. 267) that the only question among them at an early period used to be whether his poetry or his talk was the more delightful. The 'Edinburgh Reviewers' talked Adam Smith and Dugald Stewart, and aimed at epigrammatic smartness, while Scott simply poured out the raw material of the 'Waverley Novels;' and one may easily believe that his easy humour was more charming than their brilliance. He took part also in the jovial dinners, where he was the idol of his courtiers, the Ballantynes, and where the dignified Constable occasionally appeared. Scott himself was temperate, ate little after a hearty breakfast, and was as indifferent to cookery as to music. He kept up the ponderous ceremonial of the 'toasts' and 'sentiments' of the old-fashioned dinners (Cockburn, *Memorials*, p. 40), at which the Ballantynes would read specimens of the forthcoming novel. It was at Abbotsford that Scott was in his glory. He had from the first been eager to extend his property. In 1816, according to Lockhart, the estate had grown from one hundred and fifty to nearly one thousand acres by purchases from small holders, who took advantage of his eagerness to exact extravagant prices. In 1817 he settled his old friend William Laidlaw on one of his farms at Kaeside. In 1817 he also bought the house and land of Huntly Burn for 10,000*l.*, upon which next spring he settled Adam Ferguson, now retired on half-pay. In 1819 he was contemplating a purchase of Faldonside for 30,000*l.* This was not carried out, though he was still hankering after it in 1825 (*Letters*, ii. 260, 347); but in 1821, according to Lockhart, he had spent 29,000*l.* on land (*Ballantyne Humbug*, p. 93). He had set about building as soon as he came into possession, and a house-warming, to celebrate the completion of his new house, took place in November 1818. Beginning with a plan for an 'ornamental cottage,' he gradually came to an imitation of a Scottish baronial castle.

At Abbotsford Scott was visited by innumerable admirers of all ranks. American tourists, including Washington Irving and George Ticknor, English travellers of rank, or of literary and scientific fame, such as Sir Humphry Davy, Miss Edgeworth, Wordsworth, Moore, and many others, stayed with him at different periods, and have left many accounts of their experience. His businesslike habits enabled him during his most energetic labours to spend most of his mornings out of doors, and to give his evenings to society. His guests unanimously celebrate his perfect simplicity and dignity, as well as the charms of his conversation and his skill in putting all his guests at their ease. The busiest writer of the day appeared to be entirely absorbed in entertaining his friends. He was on intimate terms with all his neighbours, from the Duke of Buccleuch to Tom Purdie, and as skilful in chatting to the labourers, in whose planting he often took an active share, as in soothing the jealousies of fine ladies. He had annually two grand celebrations, devoted to salmon-fishing and coursing, which brought the whole country-side together, and gave a 'kirn,' or harvest-home, to his peasantry. Scott was always surrounded by his dogs, of whom the bulldog Camp and the deerhound Maida are the most famous. On Camp's death in 1809 he gave up an engagement for the loss 'of a dear old friend.' Maida died in 1824, and was celebrated by an epitaph, translated into Latin by Lockhart. Even a pig took a 'sentimental attachment' to him.

Probably few men have charmed so many fellow-creatures of all classes.

His family was now growing up. Scott had made companions of his children, and never minded their interruptions. He cared little for the regular educational systems, but tried to interest them in poetry and history by his talk, and taught them to ride and speak the truth. The boys were sent to the high school from their home. In 1819 the eldest, Walter, joined the 18th hussars, in spite of his father's preference for the bar. Scott's letters to him are full of admirable good sense and paternal confidence. The eldest daughter, Sophia, married John Gibson Lockhart [q. v.] in April 1820. The Lockharts took the cottage of Chiefswood upon the Abbotsford estate, where they became valuable elements of Scott's circle.

At the end of 1818 Lord Sidmouth informed Scott of the prince regent's desire to confer a baronetcy upon him. Scott's hesitation was overcome by the prospect of an inheritance from his brother-in-law, Charles Carpenter, who had left a reversion of his property to his sister's children. It was estimated at 40,000*l.* or 50,000*l.*, though it turned out to be only half that amount. The actual appointment was delayed by his illness till 30 March 1820, when he went to London, and kissed the new king's hands. George IV at the same time directed Lawrence to paint a portrait of Scott, as the beginning of a series for the great gallery at Windsor. Both Oxford and Cambridge offered him an honorary degree in 1820; but he was unable to present himself for the purpose. In the same year he was induced to accept the rather incongruous position of president of the Royal Society of Scotland. If he knew little of science, he succeeded in making friends of scientific men and giving charm to their meetings. Scott was informed in 1823 that the 'author of "Waverley"' was elected member of the Roxburghe Club, and consented to act as *locum tenens* of the 'great unknown.' He founded the Bannatyne Club the same year, and took a very active part in it for the rest of his life. He was also about 1823 elected to 'The Club.'

In 1821 Scott attended the coronation of George IV, and wrote a description for Ballantyne's 'Edinburgh Weekly Journal' (given in Lockhart, p. 454, &c.) In 1822 he took a leading part in the reception of George IV at Edinburgh. He arranged the details: coaxed highland chiefs and lowland baillies into good humour, wrote appropriate ballads, and showed an enthusiasm scarcely justified by the personal character of the monarch. He begged a glass out of which the king had drunk his health to be kept as a relic, and sat down upon it, fortunately injuring only the glass (Lockhart, ch. lvi.) He was amused by the visit at this time of the poet Crabbe, with whom he had previously corresponded, and profoundly saddened by the melancholy death of his old, and it seems his dearest, friend, William Erskine. Scott had to snatch opportunities in the midst of the confusion to visit the dying man. During this period Scott's toryism and patriotic feelings were keenly excited. In January 1819 he had taken extraordinary interest in the discovery of the Scottish regalia, which had been locked up at the time of the union and were reported to have been sent to England. On the king's visit, he applied for the restoration to Edinburgh of 'Mons Meg,' then in the Tower of London, which was ultimately returned in 1829. He petitioned at the same time also for the restoration of the Scottish peerages forfeited in 1715 and 1745. He had some connection with more important political affairs. The popular discontent in 1819 had induced Scott and some of his neighbours to raise a volunteer force in the loyal districts, to be prepared against a supposed combination of Glasgow artisans and Northumberland colliers. The force was to be called the 'Buccleuch legion,' and Scott was ready to take the command. The political bitterness roused by this and the queen's trial led to the starting of the notorious 'Beacon' in 1821. Scott was induced to be one of the subscribers to a bond for raising the necessary funds. He was considered to be partly responsible for the virulent abuse which the paper directed against the whigs, and which led to the duel in which Sir Alexander Boswell [q. v.] was killed in March 1822. Sir James Gibson Craig [q. v.] intended, according to Cockburn (*Memorials*, p. 382), to send a challenge to Scott, but refrained on receiving an assurance that Scott was not personally concerned. The paper was suppressed, and Scott was as much disgusted by the cowardice as by the previous imprudence. Cockburn complains that the young tories who indulged in this warfare were encouraged by his 'chuckling' over their libels instead of checking them. He was, as Cockburn says, flattered by their admiration into condoning offences, though there 'could not be a better natured or a better hearted man.' It must be added that, as Mr. Lang has shown (*Life of Lockhart*, i. 194, &c.), Scott seriously disapproved of the personalities, and remonstrated effectually with Lockhart. Scott in 1821 adopted plans

for the 'completion of Abbotsford' (Lockhart, ch. liv.) The masonry was finished and the roof being placed in October 1822 (*ib.* ch. lvii.–lviii.) He amused himself by introducing gas, then a novelty, the glare from which was, as Lockhart thinks, bad for his health, and a bell-ringing device, which was a failure. During 1824 he was occupied in personally superintending the decorations. Most of the furniture was made on the spot by local carpenters and tailors, to whom Scott showed his usual kindness. 'He speaks to every man,' said one of them, 'as if he were a blood relation.' The painting was carried out by a young man whom Scott had judiciously exhorted to stick to his trade instead of trying to rival Wilkie, and who prospered in consequence. At the end of 1824 the house was at last finished, and a large party assembled at Christmas. On 7 Jan. 1825 there was a ball in honour of Miss Jobson of Lochore, a young lady with 60,000*l.* who, on 3 Feb. following, was married to Scott's son Walter. Scott had bought a captaincy for his son for 3,500*l.* He now settled the estate of Abbotsford upon the married pair, in accordance with the demands of her guardian.

The whole expenditure upon Abbotsford is estimated by Sir J. Gibson Craig at 76,000*l.* (Letter to Miss Edgeworth). In the summer Scott made a tour in Ireland, visited his son, then quartered at Dublin, and Miss Edgeworth, who accompanied him to Killarney. He was everywhere received with an enthusiasm which made the journey, as he said, 'an ovation.' He visited the 'ladies of Llangollen' on his way home, and met Canning at the English lakes. A grand regatta, with a procession of fifty barges, was arranged upon Windermere, in which Wilson acted as 'admiral' and Wordsworth joined the party. Scott reached Abbotsford on 1 Sept., and soon heard the first news of approaching calamity.

Scott's mode of life involved a large expenditure, but he was also making apparently a very large income. The production of novels had been going on more rapidly than ever; though after 'Ivanhoe' there was a decline, of which he was not fully aware, in their circulation. He had begun the 'Monastery' before concluding 'Ivanhoe.' It was published in March 1820, and the 'Abbot' followed in September. He agreed with the public that the first was 'not very interesting,' and admitted that his supernatural machinery was a blunder. The 'Abbot' was suggested by his visits to Blair Adam, the seat of Chief Commissioner William Adam [q. v.], in sight of Lochleven Castle. The Blair Adam Club, consisting of a few of Adam's friends, met at his house to make antiquarian excursions, and Scott attended the meetings regularly from 1816 to 1831. 'Kenilworth,' which had much success, appeared in January, and the 'Pirate' in December 1821. During the autumn he composed a series of imaginary 'private letters' supposed to be written in the time of James I. On the suggestion of Ballantyne and Lockhart that he was throwing away a good novel, he changed his plan, and wrote the 'Fortunes of Nigel,' which appeared in May 1822. 'Peveril of the Peak' appeared in January, 'Quentin Durward' in June, and 'St. Ronan's Well' in December 1823. 'Quentin Durward' was coldly received in England, though its extraordinary power was recognised after it had been received in France with an enthusiasm comparable to that which had greeted 'Ivanhoe' in England. In talking over the French excitement, Laidlaw told Scott that he was always best on his native heath. This, as Lockhart thinks, suggested 'St. Ronan's Well,' published December 1823, his only attempt at a novel of society. The experiment has been generally regarded as in this respect a failure, and James Ballantyne injured the story by inducing Scott to yield to his notions of propriety. The English sale showed a falling off, but in Scotland it was well received. The people of Innerleithen judiciously identified their well with that of St. Ronan's, attracted sightseers, and set up the St. Ronan's border games, where Hogg presided with the support of Scott. In June 1824 appeared 'Redgauntlet,' which was 'somewhat coldly received.' The magnificent tale of Wandering Willie, which probably gives the best impression of Scott's power of story-telling, and the autobiographical interest of the portraits of his father, himself, and his friend, W. Clerk ('Darsie Latimer'), give it a peculiar interest. The 'Tales of the Crusaders' appeared in June 1825, and though 'The Betrothed' is an admitted failure, its companion, 'The Talisman,' showed enough of the old spirit to secure for the two 'an enthusiastic reception.'

This series of novels was produced under circumstances which had serious consequences for Scott's future. 'Kenilworth' was the last novel in which John Ballantyne had a share of the profits. The later novels were all published by Constable on terms which greatly affected Scott's position. Constable had printed at once ten thousand copies of 'Rob Roy,' whereas the first edition of its predecessor had been only two thousand, and a second impression of three thousand copies had been required in a fortnight. A

copy of John Ballantyne's agreement for 'Kenilworth' (in journal communicated by Mr. A. Constable) gives the terms of sale for it, which were little varied in other cases. Constable undertook to print twelve thousand copies; he was to raise immediately 1,600*l.* and each of the Ballantynes 400*l.* for expenses of publishing, and the profits to be divided proportionally. Scott was to be paid 4,500*l.* The retail price of the copies was 10*s.* a volume, or 1*l.* 10*s.*, and they were apparently sold to the trade for about 1*l.* Scott thus enabled the Ballantynes to have a share in the profits, which Lockhart calls a 'bonus.' He of course retained the copyright.

Besides allowing John Ballantyne this 'bonus,' Scott had offered in 1819 to write biographical prefaces for a 'Novelist's Library,' to be published for his sole benefit. Scott fulfilled this promise by several lives profixed to an edition of the 'Novelist's,' the first volume of which appeared in February 1821. Ten volumes were published, but the scheme dropped after Ballantyne's death in June 1821. Ballantyne left 2,000*l.* to his benefactor, but had unfortunately only debts to bequeath. In the following November Constable agreed to pay five thousand guineas for the copyright of the four novels ('Kenilworth' being the last) published since those bought in 1819. In June 1823 Constable bought the copyright of the next four published (including 'Quentin Durward,' then just appearing) for an equal sum. Besides this, he had advanced 11,000*l.* on still unfinished works. Constable also gave 1,000*l.* for the dramatic sketch called 'Halidon Hill' (published in June 1822), which Scott wrote in two rainy mornings at Abbotsford. This 'wild bargain,' as Lockhart calls it, was made by Constable's partner, Cadell, 'in five minutes,' to the satisfaction of both partners (Lockhart, ch. lv., and Constable, iii. 216). Constable suggested that Scott might turn out such a work every three months. Both writer and publisher seem to have regarded Scott's genius as a perpetual and inexhaustible spring. Scott held that his best writing was that which came most easily, and was ready to undertake any amount of work suggested. In March 1822 he says that Constable has 'saddled him with fortune,' and made twelve volumes grow where there might only have been one. He admits that he is building 'a little expensively,' but he has provided for his family, and no one could be indifferent to the solid comfort of 8,000*l.* a year, especially if he 'buys land, builds, and improves' (Constable, iii. 207). In 1818 Lockhart says that Scott's income from his novels had been for several years not less than 10,000*l.* His expenses required steady supplies, and, as the advances involved an extension of credit, the publishers were naturally eager for new work which would bring in ready money. In 1823 the liabilities incurred began to be serious, and the novels were selling less freely. Constable and his partner, Cadell, were afraid of damping Scott, and yet began to see that the supply was outrunning the demand, and even exhausting Scott's powers. Cadell reports in June 1823 that Scott was alarmed by the comparative failure of 'Quentin Durward,' while Ballantyne had to meet engagements in July (Constable, iii. 271). Cadell told Scott that he 'must not be beaten or appear to be beaten.' He must go on with the novel in hand, but interpolate other work, such as a proposed volume on 'Popular Superstitions.' Constable meanwhile had fresh projects. He proposed a collection of English poets. He would give Scott 6,000*l.* for editing it and writing prefaces 'as an occasional relief from more important labours.' He then (February 1822) proposed an edition of Shakespeare (by Scott and Lockhart), of which, it is said, three volumes were actually printed, but sold as waste paper after the crash of 1826 (see Constable, iii. 241, and Lang's *Lockhart*, i. 308, 396. In 'Notes and Queries,' 5th ser. i. 343, it is said that some sheets are in existence in America). In 1823 Constable had become alarmed at the transactions between his house and Ballantyne's, and proposed to Scott measures for reducing the 'floating balance' (Constable, iii. 275–86). Scott fully agreed, and said that he looked forward to such an arrangement 'without the least doubt or shadow of anxiety.' Constable's son David states that by his desire an accountant was called in to make a plain statement of the accounts, but that his investigations were stopped by Scott. Scott, it is plain, was not seriously alarmed, and Constable was still sanguine, and before long was contemplating another great undertaking enthusiastically. In May 1825 he expounded to Scott his scheme for the 'Miscellany.' This series, intended to create a popular demand for standard literature, was to start with a reprint of 'Waverley' (Constable, iii. 307, 314), which was to be followed by a 'life' of Napoleon, to be written by Scott. Scott took up the 'life' at once, which speedily expanded under his hands until it became too large for publication in the 'Miscellany.' Lockhart was painfully impressed by the obvious effort which the drudgery of consulting authorities imposed upon Scott.

Scott was at this time helping the widow and children of his brother Thomas (*d.* 1824). The son Walter went to India as an engineer, became a general, and died in 1873 (*Letters*, ii. 363, &c.)

Meanwhile the speculative fever, which culminated in the crisis of 1825–6, was reaching its height. Constable and Cadell found themselves in difficulties in the autumn. Hurst, Robinson, & Co., their London agents, with whom they had many transactions, were hard pressed, having, it is said, indulged, among other things, in a large speculation upon hops. In November Lockhart heard a report that Constable's London banker had 'thrown up his book.' He told Scott, who was incredulous, but drove at once to Constable by night, and came back with the news that the business was 'as firm as Benlomond.' Scott's alarm gave the first hint to his family of the closeness of the connection with Ballantyne. His subsequent history is fully told in the 'Journal' which he began to keep at this time. Though freely used by Lockhart, its publication in full in 1890 first revealed the full interest of this most pathetic piece of autobiography. In December Scott was seriously alarmed, and at the end of the year borrowed 10,000*l.* which his son's settlement empowered him to raise upon Abbotsford. This, he thought, would make Ballantyne secure, but he was anxious about Constable. A severe attack of illness at Christmas was aggravated by anxiety. In January Constable, after a delay from illness, went to London, and found that matters were almost desperate. Among other schemes for borrowing, he proposed that Scott should raise 20,000*l.* Scott, with Cadell's advice, absolutely refused, saying that he had advanced enough for other people's debts, and must now pay his own. This led to Scott's later alliance with Cadell, who had fallen out with his old partner. On 16 Jan. Scott received decisive news of the stoppage of payment by Hurst & Robinson, which involved the fall of Constable and of Ballantyne. He dined that day with Skene, apparently in his usual spirits. Next morning, before going to the court, he told Skene that he was a beggar, and that his ruin must be made public. He felt 'rather sneaking' when he showed himself in court. Cockburn (*Memorials*, p. 431) says that there was no feeling but sympathy. When some of his friends talked of raising money, he replied, 'No, this right hand shall work it all off.' In spite of business, he wrote a chapter of 'Woodstock' every day that week, finishing 'twenty printed pages' on the 19th.

The liabilities of Constable, according to Lockhart, amounted to 256,000*l.*, those of Hurst, Robinson, & Co. to near 300,000*l.*, and those of Ballantyne & Co. to 117,000*l.* The first two firms became bankrupt and paid 2*s.* 6*d.* and 1*s.* 3*d.* in the pound respectively. Much controversy followed, with little definite results, as to the apportionment of responsibility for this catastrophe. The immediate cause was the system of accommodation between the firms of Constable and Ballantyne. Sir J. Gibson Craig, who was thoroughly acquainted with the facts, throws the chief blame on Scott. Craig was in Constable's confidence from the first difficulties of 1813. Though a strong whig, he behaved generously as one of Scott's chief creditors. Constable's loss, according to him, originated 'in a desire to benefit Scott, which Sir Walter had always the manliness to acknowledge.' Constable had supported the Ballantynes, but had found it necessary to take bills from them in order to protect himself. When affairs became serious, he took all these bills to Scott, offering to exchange them for those granted to Scott. Scott being unable to do this, Constable was forced to discount the bills, and upon his insolvency Scott became responsible for both sets of bills, thus incurring a loss of about 40,000*l.* A similar statement is made by Lockhart, and no doubt represents the facts, though Lockhart's version is disputed by Ballantyne's trustees (Craig's letter of 1848 in Constable, iii. 456–7, and a fuller letter to Miss Edgeworth of 1832 communicated by Mr. A. Constable).

Constable was a shrewd man of business, and engaged in speculations sound in themselves and ultimately profitable. It is, however, abundantly clear that, from want of sufficient capital, he was from the first obliged to raise credit on terms which, as his partner Cadell said, 'ran away with all their gains.' Cadell was anxious in 1822 to retire in consequence of his anxieties (Smiles, *Murray*, i. 185, &c.; Constable, iii. 236). Though Constable's regard for Scott was undoubtedly genuine, his advances meant that he was anxious to monopolise the most popular author of the day, and the profit on the 'Waverley Novels' was a main support of his business. He was therefore both ready to supply Scott with credit and anxious not to alarm him by making difficulties. Scott was completely taken by surprise when Constable failed. 'No man,' he says (*Journal*, 29 Jan. 1826), 'thought (Constable's) house worth less than 150,000*l.*' Had Constable stood, Scott would have stood too. The problem remains why Scott should not have been independent of Constable.

From 1816 to 1822 James Ballantyne had been simply Scott's paid manager. In 1822 Scott had again taken him into partnership, carefully defining the terms in a 'missive letter' (printed in the 'Ballantyne Humbug'). He spoke of the business as 'now so flourishing.' Profits were to be equally divided; but Scott undertook to be personally responsible for bills then due by the firm to the amount of about 30,000*l.* This sum had been increased before the bankruptcy to about 46,000*l.* The substantial question in the controversy between Lockhart and Ballantyne's trustees was whether Scott or Ballantyne was mainly responsible for this accumulation of indebtedness. That Scott's extravagant expenditure contributed to the catastrophe is of course clear. Had he not wasted money at Abbotsford, he would have been able to put his business in a sound position. It is, however, disputed how far the accumulation of bills was caused by Ballantyne's shiftlessness or by Scott's direct drafts upon the business.

The Ballantyne connection had undoubtedly been a misfortune. James was inefficient and John reckless. They had apparently been in debt from the first, and had initiated Scott in the system of bill-discounting. Scott was in a thoroughly false position when he concealed himself behind his little court of flatterers rather than counsellors. He became involved in petty intrigues and reckless dealing in money. The failure of the publishing house, indeed, was due in great part to Scott's injudicious speculations. A debt apparently remained when the publishing was finally abandoned, in spite of Scott's ultimate disposal of the stock. The printing business, however, was sound, and made good profits even after the crash, under James Ballantyne's management (cf. *Ballantyne Humbug*, p. 109, and *Reply*, p. 118). Why, then, should the debt have continued to grow when, after 1816, the publishing had ceased? The new firm—that is, Scott—had taken over, according to Lockhart, some 10,000*l.* of the old liabilities, and this, if not paid off, would of course accumulate (Lockhart, ch. lii. p. 451*n.*) Ballantyne's trustees, however, argue that Scott's assumption of the debt in 1822 proves his consciousness that it had been created for his private purposes. They show conclusively that Scott was fully cognisant of all the bill transactions, and directing Ballantyne at every step in making provision for bills as they came due. When Scott had become aware of the entanglements of 1813, he had remonstrated energetically and done his best to clear them off. Could he have submitted to a repetition of the same process on behalf of the 'flourishing (printing) business' had he not been aware that the debt was being incurred for his own requirements? Lockhart wonders that Scott, who could have told what he had spent on turnpikes for thirty years, should never have looked into his own affairs. Scott was not so ignorant as Lockhart implies. He had apparently become accustomed to the bill-discounting, while he fully believed that he was investing the proceeds safely. Lockhart denies (*Ballantyne Humbug*, p. 94) that Scott drew sums from the business in behalf of his own private needs. But the accounts published by the trustees show that large sums had been advanced during the partnership (1822-1826) for Scott's building and other expenses. He had thus drawn out 15,000*l.* more than he had paid in. Scott, of course, was personally responsible for these sums; but he injured the firm by saddling it with a bad debt. Whatever, therefore, may have been Ballantyne's inefficiency, and the automatic accumulation of debt by renewing bills, it is hardly to be doubted that Scott encumbered the business by using it as his instrument in raising money for his own purposes. It belonged to him exclusively at the time when his outlay on Abbotsford was greatest, and he had been the real creator of the business. He seems to have spoken the simple truth when he told Lockhart on 20 Jan. 1826 that he had not suffered by Ballantyne: 'I owe it to him to say that his difficulties, as well as his advantages, are owing to me.'

The Ballantynes also complain that the settlement of Abbotsford in January 1825 put the bulk of his property beyond the reach of his creditors, without, as they state, due notice to Ballantyne. Scott, as Lockhart urges, clearly imagined himself at this time to be perfectly solvent, and certainly did not in any way conceal the transaction, of which Constable at least was quite aware. Up to the last he seems to have felt not a trace of misgiving.

Whatever blame Scott may deserve, his action was henceforth heroic. He resolved not to become a bankrupt, but to carry on the business for the benefit of his creditors. 'I will,' he says (24 Jan. 1826), 'be their vassal for life, and dig in the mine of my imagination to find diamonds . . . to make good my engagements, not to enrich myself.' The creditors, with few exceptions, behaved generously throughout. On 26 Jan. he heard that they had unanimously agreed to the proposed private trust. An attack upon the settlement of Abbotsford was afterwards contemplated by some of them; and, accord-

ing to Sir J. G. Craig, it might certainly have been upset. Scott would then, he says, have felt it necessary to become a bankrupt (*Journal*, 16 Feb.) This would have been against the creditors' interests. The general feeling seems to have been that his bankruptcy would have been a national calamity, and that he should be treated with all gentleness in his attempt to atone for his errors. His son Walter made offers to help him which he declined; and 'poor Mr. Pole, the harper,' who had taught his daughters music, offered to contribute all his own savings, amounting to five or six hundred pounds. Scott was deeply touched by this, and by the great kindness of Sir William Forbes, his old friend and successful rival in his first love affair. In the following year, when a creditor threatened Scott with arrest, Forbes paid the demand of 2,000*l.* from his own pocket, ranking as an ordinary creditor for the amount, and carefully keeping the transaction secret till after Scott's death (Lockhart, ch. lxxiv.) Scott's servants accepted the change with equal loyalty. His old coachman, Peter Matheson, became 'ploughman in ordinary;' the butler doubled his work and took half the wages; and though Laidlaw had to leave Kaeside, which was let by the trustees, he came every week for a ramble with his patron. The house in Castle Street was sold, and Scott had to take lodgings during the legal session. The rest of the time was spent at Abbotsford, where he had made all possible reductions.

Scott's attention, even at this time, was diverted to a patriotic object. The proposal of government to suppress the circulation of small bank-notes was supposed to be injurious to Scottish banks; and Scott attacked the measure in three letters of vehement patriotism, signed 'Malachi Malagrowther,' in the Edinburgh 'Evening Journal' of March. A sensation was produced comparable to that caused by Swift's 'Drapier's Letters;' and the government, though much annoyed at Scott's action, consented in May to drop the application of the measure to Scotland. Scott's pleasure at this success was dashed by a new calamity. Lady Scott's health had shown ominous symptoms. The news of her condition, he says (19 March), 'is overwhelming. . . . Really these misfortunes come too close upon each other!' She became gradually worse, and died on 15 May. Lady Scott is not a very conspicuous figure in his life, and she apparently rather encouraged than checked his weaknesses; nor did he feel for her so romantic a passion as for his early love. He was, however, an affectionate and generous husband; and many entries in the journal show that this catastrophe severely tried his stoicism. The younger son, Charles, was now at Oxford; and his younger daughter, Anne, also in weak health, was the only permanent member of his household. Another anxiety which weighed heavily upon his spirits was the fatal diseases of his 'darling grandson,' John Hugh Lockhart. 'The best I can wish for him,' he says (18 March), 'is early death.' Though there were occasional hopes, the fear of the coming loss overshadowed Scott's remaining years. Scott hid his gloomy feelings as well as he could, and his family learnt their existence only from his journal. He was at his desk again soon after his wife's funeral. He had been encouraged (3 April) by news that 'Woodstock,' written in three months, had been sold for 8,228*l.*, 'all ready money.' His chief employment was now the 'Life of Napoleon,' but he resolved to fill up necessary intervals by a new story, the 'Chronicles of the Canongate.' 'Woodstock,' according to Lockhart, was a good bargain for the purchasers. Scott drudged steadily at 'Napoleon' till, in the autumn, he found it desirable to examine materials offered to him in London and Paris. He left Abbotsford on 12 Oct., and returned by the end of November. He was cordially received by his old friends in England, from the king downwards, and in Paris he declares (5 Nov.) that the French were 'outrageous in their civilities.' In the following winter he suffered severely from rheumatism, but stuck to his work, grudging every moment that was not spent at his desk. He was depressed by the sense of 'bodily helplessness,' and his writing became 'cramped and confused.' At the beginning of 1827 he was living quietly with his daughter, occasionally dining with old friends, and still heartily enjoying their society. On 23 Feb. he took the chair at a meeting to promote a fund for decayed actors. He allowed Lord Meadowbank to propose his health as author of the 'Waverley Novels,' and in his reply made the first public acknowledgment that he was the sole writer.

Scott still found time to write various articles, including one for the benefit of R. P. Gillies, to whom it brought 100*l.* Another gift of a year later was a couple of sermons written to help G. H. Gordon when a candidate for ordination. Gordon was one of the countless young men whom he had helped; after employing him as an amanuensis, he had obtained a place for him in a public office, and now allowed him to clear off debt by selling the sermons for 250*l.* The 'Life of Napoleon' was published

in nine volumes in June 1827. Lockhart calculates that it contains as much as five of the 'Waverley Novels,' and that the actual writing, after making allowance for absences and other works, had occupied twelve months. Though Scott had collected many books and consulted such authorities as he could, a work done at such speed, with powers already overstrained and amid pressing anxieties, could not have serious historical value. It was, however, sold for 18,000*l.*, and warmly received at the time. Goethe, who had just addressed a complimentary letter to Scott (dated 12 Jan. 1827) acknowledging his lively interest in his 'wonderful pictures of human life,' speaks favourably ('Kunst und Alterthun') of the 'Napoleon.' The book also led to a controversy with General Gourgaud, about whom Scott had published certain documents. There was some talk of a duel, which 'pleasurably stimulated' Scott's feelings; but the affair blew over without a challenge.

Scott, having finished 'Napoleon,' began, without a day's intermission (*Journal*, 10 June 1827), a history of Scotland for children. The Lockharts were near him in the summer, and Scott told the story to the child before putting it on paper. The first series of the 'Chronicles of Canongate' appeared in the early winter. He was discouraged by the reception of the novel, and only at Cadell's entreaty consented to make another start in fiction. The history published as 'Tales of a Grandfather' appeared in December, and was more 'rapturously' received than any of his books since 'Ivanhoe.' A second and third series appeared in 1828 and 1829. Questions as to the copyrights of 'Woodstock' and 'Napoleon' had now been settled in Scott's favour. Affairs being simplified, Constable's creditors sold the copyrights of the 'Waverley Novels' and most of the poems. They were put up to auction and bought, half for Scott's trustees and half for Cadell, for 8,500*l.* The purchase enabled Scott to carry out a plan which appears to have been suggested by Constable in 1823 (Constable, iii. 255). This was an edition of the works with autobiographical prefaces, which was carried out with singular success, and chiefly contributed to the reduction of the debt. Scott refers to it as the *magnum opus*. A dividend of six shillings in the pound was paid at Christmas 1827, near 40,000*l.* having been raised in the two years by Scott's exertions.

His labours continued monotonously through the next two years. The 'Fair Maid of Perth,' the last novel which shows unmistakable marks of the old vigour, appeared in the spring of 1828, and the character of the chief whose cowardice is made pardonable reflected his sorrow for his harsh judgment upon his brother Daniel. In the summer he was much troubled by the bankruptcy of his friend Terry, whom he endeavoured to help. 'Anne of Geierstein,' the next novel, was warmly praised by his friends at Christmas, to his great encouragement. It was disliked by Ballantyne, but, though the printer's judgment anticipated that of later readers, succeeded fairly on its publication in May 1829. His spirits were raised by the success of the *magnum opus*, which was now coming out in monthly volumes, and by the end of the year reached a sale of thirty-five thousand. He was greatly shocked by the death of his favourite, Tom Purdie, on 29 Oct. (see Lang's *Lockhart*, ii. 56).

In the winter Scott wrote the 'Ayrshire Tragedy,' the least unsuccessful of his dramatic attempts. Soon afterwards, however, on 15 Feb. 1830, a paralytic or apoplectic attack showed that his toils were at last telling. He submitted to a severe regimen, and an apparent improvement encouraged him to struggle on. His family could see a painful change. Writing was obviously injurious, and Cadell hoped that the success of the *magnum opus* would induce him to confine himself to writing the prefaces. Cadell tried also to divert his attention to a catalogue of the Abbotsford Museum. Scott was taken by the scheme, but after beginning it insisted upon starting a new story. He could still speak effectively at an election dinner, and he made a successful appeal through the papers to the people of Edinburgh to receive Charles X on his exile with dignified decorum. He retired at the end of the summer season from his clerkship on an allowance of 800*l.* a year. He declined an offer from the ministry to make up the deficiency of his income by a pension, after consulting his creditors, who generously agreed that he should obey his sense of delicacy. He also declined the rank of privy councillor, as unsuitable to his position. He passed the winter at Abbotsford, toiling at his new story, 'Count Robert of Paris.' Cadell and Ballantyne became alarmed at its obvious indication of declining powers, and Ballantyne at last wrote a frank opinion of its future. Another seizure had shaken him in November. He summoned his advisers to consider the novel. On 17 Dec. 1830 a meeting of Scott's creditors took place, when a further dividend of three shillings in the pound was paid.

They unanimously agreed to Gibson Craig's motion that he should be presented with his library and other furniture in recognition of his 'unparalleled exertions.' Cadell and Ballantyne found him on the same evening soothed by this recognition of his sacrifices. Next day they discussed the novel. Scott had meanwhile written a third 'Malagrowther' letter, denouncing parliamentary reform. Both his friends protested against the publication of this ill-timed performance, when his success depended upon popularity. Scott was greatly moved, and, in Cadell's opinion, never recovered the blow. Alarmed by his agitation, his friends begged him to go on with 'Count Robert.' To have condemned it would have been a 'death-warrant.' He burnt the pamphlet but toiled on with the story, dictating to Laidlaw, who happily thought it his best work (7 March 1831). He wrote as many pages in 1830, says Lockhart, as in 1829, in spite of his decay. The 'Letters on Demonology,' in execution of an old scheme, was the chief result.

In January 1831 Scott made his will, being enabled by his creditors' liberality to make some provision for the younger children. He had an attack more serious than any which had yet occurred in April 1831. He was afterwards distressed by an unfavourable opinion of 'Count Robert' from his publishers. On 18 May he persisted, in spite of remonstrance, in attending an election at Jedburgh, to protest for the last time against parliamentary reform. A mob of weavers from Hawick filled the town and grossly insulted him. He was taken away at last amid a shower of stones and cries of 'Burke Sir Walter!' At Selkirk, a few days later, he seized a rioter with his own hands.

Scott after this took up his last novel, 'Castle Dangerous,' in July, confiding in no one but Lockhart, with whom he was able to make a short tour in order to verify the descriptions of scenery. Lockhart's account of this last conscious return to the old haunts is especially touching. He afterwards finished both this and 'Count Robert,' which appeared together in November. His friends had now decided that a tour to a milder climate would offer the only chance of prolonging his life. Captain Basil Hall [q.v.] suggested to Sir James Graham, then first lord of the admiralty, that a frigate might be placed at his disposal. The government at once adopted the proposal, to Scott's great pleasure; and his eldest son obtained leave to sail with his father. Wordsworth happened to reach Abbotsford on the day before Scott's departure, and wrote a fine sonnet on the occasion. Scott travelled to London by Rokeby, still writing notes for the *opus magnum*. He saw a few friends, but was distressed by the Reform Bill demonstrations. He sailed from Portsmouth on 29 Oct. in the Barham frigate, every possible attention being paid to him. He insisted on landing upon the curious island just formed by a submarine volcano, and wrote a description of it to Skene. He reached Malta on 22 Nov., sailed for Naples in the Barham on 14 Dec., and there a month later heard of his grandson's death. He made a last attempt at two novels, founded on stories told to him at Naples, but became anxious to return to his home. On 16 April 1832 he left for Rome, where he insisted upon visiting St. Peter's to see the tomb of the last of the Stuarts. Italian scenery suggested to him snatches of old Scottish ballads. He was still able to see a little society, and could at times talk like himself. On 11 May he left Rome, passed through the Tyrol, and down the Rhine. On 9 June at Nimeguen he was prostrated by an attack of apoplexy and paralysis. He was brought to London on 13 June in a half-conscious state; the longing for home, whenever he could express himself, induced his physicians to permit his removal. He left London on 7 July, and proceeded by steamboat to Newhaven, near Edinburgh. Thence he was taken by carriage to Abbotsford, and roused to great excitement by the sight of the familiar scenes. He recognised Laidlaw, and for a short time was better, and able to listen to passages from the Bible and his favourite Crabbe. Once he made a pathetic effort to resume his pen; but his mind seemed to be with Tom Purdie and his old amusements. He repeated the 'Burke Sir Walter' and often the 'Stabat Mater.' A bill was passed, on Jeffrey's proposal, to provide for his duties as sheriff, as he was incapable of resigning. On 17 Sept. he spoke his last words to Lockhart: 'My dear, be a good man,' and refused to let his daughter be disturbed. His eldest son had come to him, and on 21 Sept. 1832 he died quietly in presence of all his children. 'It was so quiet a day,' says Lockhart, 'that the sound he best loved, the gentle ripple of the Tweed over its pebbles, was distinctly audible as we knelt round the bed and his eldest son kissed and closed his eyes.'

Scott's children were: (1) Charlotte Sophia, born 24 Oct. 1799 (afterwards Mrs. Lockhart), who died 17 May 1837; her daughter, Charlotte, married James Robert Hope-Scott [q.v.], and died in 1858. (2) Walter, born 28 Oct. 1801 and died 1817, leaving no issue. (3) Anne, born 2 Feb. 1803, and died unmar-

ried 25 June 1833. (4) Charles, born 24 Dec. 1805, died at Teheran, where he was *attaché* to the British embassy, in 1841.

Scott has now no descendants except the Hon. Mary Monica Maxwell Scott, daughter of Hope-Scott, and her children.

Upon Scott's death the principal of the debt amounted to about 54,000*l.*, against which there was a life insurance of 22,000*l.* Cadell advanced the balance of about 30,000*l.* upon the security of the copyrights. A settlement was then made (2 Feb. 1833) with the creditors. The debt to Cadell appears to have been finally discharged in 1847, when Cadell accepted the remaining copyright of the works and of Lockhart's 'Life,' fortunately prolonged by the Act of 1842. Abbotsford was thus freed from the debts of the founder (Lang, *Lockhart*, ii. 297).

Scott will be severely judged by critics who hold, with Carlyle, that an author should be a prophet. Scott was neither a Wordsworth nor a Goethe, but an 'auld Wat' come again, and forced by circumstances to substitute publishing for cattle-lifting. The sword was still intrinsically superior in his eyes to the pen. His strong commonsense and business training kept him from practical anachronisms, and gave that tinge of 'worldliness' to his character which Lockhart candidly admits, but his life was an embodiment of the genial and masculine virtues of the older type so fondly celebrated in his writings. A passionate patriotism in public and cordial loyalty to his friends mark his whole career. A chief (in one of his favourite quotations) should be 'a hedge about his friends, a heckle to his foes.' He was too magnanimous to have personal foes, and no petty jealousy entangled him in a literary squabble. His history is a long record of hearty friendships. His old chums, Clerk, Erskine, and Skene; his literary acquaintances, George Ellis and Morritt; his great rivals, Moore and Byron on one side, and Wordsworth, Southey, and Coleridge on the other; political antagonists such as Jeffrey and Cockburn; publishers who ascribed their misfortunes to him, Constable and Ballantyne; the feminine authors, Miss Seward, Joanna Baillie, Miss Edgeworth, and Miss Austen (whose merits, though she was personally unknown to him, he was among the first to recognise); and a whole host of obscurer authors, Leyden, Hogg, Maturin, Gillies, and others, are all names which recall a generous friendliness on Scott's part, which was in almost every case returned by good feeling, and in very many by the warmest affection. In his own circle at Abbotsford and Edinburgh, including his family, his servants, and his numerous dependents and associates, he was idolised, and was at once a warm and judicious friend. The same qualities make all appreciative readers love him, even when the secret of the charm is not observed. No doubt these qualities are compatible with the characteristic which, in its unfavourable aspects, is called pride. We may be induced to forgive him if, in the active discharge of his duties as friend and patron, he took a rather low estimate of the functions of preacher or artist, and was blind to the equivocal practices into which he was first seduced as the protector of an old friend. The pride, in any case, displayed itself as a noble self-respect and sense of honour when he was roused by calamity to a sense of his errors and made his last heroic struggle.

Lockhart gives a list of portraits of Scott, most of which were shown at the centenary exhibition of 1871. The catalogue then published gives some interesting notices and photographic reproductions. A miniature taken at Bath about 1775 belonged in 1871 to D. Laing; an early copy is at Abbotsford. A miniature of 1797, sent to Charlotte Carpenter, is also at Abbotsford. A portrait by James Saxon, 1805, is engraved for the 'Lady of the Lake.' Raeburn painted a full-length portrait in 1808 for Constable, with Hermitage Castle in the distance, and 'Camp.' A replica of 1809, with a greyhound added, is at Abbotsford. Raeburn painted other portraits, including a head for Lord Montagu in 1822, and another, about the same time, for Chantrey. William Nicholson (1781–1844) [q. v.] painted a watercolour in 1815, and an etching from it in 1817 for a series of eminent Scotsmen. He painted three others, one of which, and portraits of Scott's daughters, are at Abbotsford. Andrew Geddes [q. v.] made a sketch for his picture of the discovery of the regalia in 1818. Another sketch was made by Joseph Slater, from which a portrait was painted in 1821 for Sir R. H. Inglis. Thomas Phillips (1770–1845) [q. v.] painted a head in 1819 for John Murray, the publisher. John Watson Gordon [q. v.], painted a portrait, with an Irish terrier, for the Marchioness of Abercorn in 1820; and one in 1829, frequently engraved. The original sketch is in the National Portrait Gallery, Scotland, and there were many repetitions. Gordon also painted Scott in his study at Castle Street, and painted a portrait for Cadell in March 1830, seated with his greyhound 'Bran.' Sir Thomas Lawrence (see above) painted in 1822 a portrait for George IV, finished in 1826, now at Wind-

sor Castle. Wilkie in 1822 made a study of Scott for his picture of 'George IV at Holyrood' (now at Windsor), and finished the separate portrait for Sir W. Knighton. Gilbert Stuart Newton [q. v.] painted a three-quarter portrait for Mrs. Lockhart in 1824, now at Abbotsford, said by Lockhart to be 'the best domestic portrait ever done.' Charles Robert Leslie [q. v.] painted a half-length for Mr. Ticknor in 1824, now in America. In 1825 Daniel Maclise [q. v.] made a sketch of Scott during his Irish tour, which was lithographed and largely sold. Another is in the 'Maclise Portrait Gallery' (ed. Bates). John Prescott Knight [q. v.] painted in 1826 a portrait, 'ill-drawn and feeble in expression,' engraved for Lodge's 'Portraits.' James Northcote [q. v.] painted, in May 1828, a portrait for Sir William Knighton, in which the artist is introduced. Colvin Smith painted a portrait in 1828, of which he made as many as twenty copies for various people. John Graham-Gilbert [q. v.] painted a portrait in 1829 for the Royal Society of Edinburgh. A portrait by the same is in the National Portrait Gallery, which has also a portrait of Scott in his study, painted by Sir William Allan [q. v.] in 1831, and a sketch by Sir Edwin Landseer. Sir Francis Grant [q. v.] painted a portrait in 1831; and Sir Edwin Landseer, who had known Scott, painted him, after his death, in the 'Rhymer's Glen.' R. T. Lauder painted him as 'Peter' Paterson. Wilkie painted a picture of the Abbotsford family in 1817, and Thomas Faed a picture of Scott and his friends at Abbotsford.

Chantrey made two busts of Scott, one in 1820, presented to Scott, and copied in marble for the Duke of Wellington, and one in 1828, bought by Sir Robert Peel. The latter is now in the National Portrait Gallery, London. A replica of the former, executed by Mr. John Hutchison, R.S.A., at the expense of some of Scott's admirers, was placed in May 1897 in Westminster Abbey. There are also busts by Samuel Joseph [q. v.] of 1822, and one by Lawrence Macdonald in 1830. A statue made by John Greenshields at the end of Scott's life is now in the Advocates' Library at Edinburgh. Two casts of the head, one taken during life and the other after death, are at Abbotsford.

The Scott monument designed by George Kemp, with a statue of the novelist by Sir John Steell, was erected in Princes Street, Edinburgh, and was inaugurated 17 Aug. 1846.

Scott's works are: 1. 'Disputatio Juridica,' &c., 1792 (exercise on being called to the bar). 2. 'The Chase and William and Helen . . . from the German of Bürger,' 1796 (anon.) 3. 'Goetz of Berlichingen,' with the 'Iron Hand,' a tragedy, 1799, translated from the German of Goethe, author of the 'Sorrows of Werter,' by Walter Scott, Advocate. Some copies have 'William' (afterwards cancelled) instead of 'Walter.' 4. 'Apology for Tales of Terror,' 1799 (twelve copies privately printed, includes some of his own ballads. For contents see Catalogue of Centenary Exhibition, where a copy from Abbotsford was shown). 5. 'The Eve of St. John: a Border Ballad,' 1800. 6. 'Ballads in Lewis's 'Tales of Wonder,' 1801. 7. 'Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border' (anon.), vols. i. and ii. 1802, vol. iii. 1803. 8. 'Lay of the Last Minstrel,' 1805. 9. 'Ballads and Lyrical Pieces,' 1806 (from 'Border Minstrelsy' and the 'Tales of Wonder'). 10. 'Marmion: a Tale of Flodden Field,' 1808. 11. 'Life of Dryden,' prefixed to Works (fifty copies separately printed). 12. 'The Lady of the Lake,' 1810. 13. 'Vision of Don Roderick,' 1811 (some poems collected in second edition of this). 14. 'Rokeby,' 1813. 15. 'The Bridal of Triermain, or Vale of St. John' (anon.), 1813. 16. 'Abstract of Eyrbiggia Saga' in Jamieson's 'Northern Antiquities,' 1814. 17. 'Waverley, or 'Tis Sixty Years Since,' 1814. The later novels, except the 'Tales of my Landlord' (four series), are 'by the author of Waverley.' 18. 'Life of Swift,' prefixed to Works (1814). 19. 'Chivalry' and the 'Drama' in Supplement to 'Encyclopædia Britannica,' 1814. 20. Introduction to 'Border Antiquities,' 1814–17. 21. 'The Lord of the Isles,' 1815. 22. 'Guy Mannering,' 1815. 23. 'The Field of Waterloo,' 1815. 24. 'Paul's Letters to his Kinsfolk,' 1815. 25. 'The Antiquary,' 1816, 3 vols. 12mo. 26. 'Tales of my Landlord, collected and arranged by Jedediah Cleishbotham: the Black Dwarf, Old Mortality,' 1817 (really 1816). 27. 'Harold the Dauntless, by the author of the Bridal of Triermain,' 1817. 28. 'The Search after Happiness; or the Quest of Sultan Solimaun,' and Kemble's address on the 'Sale room,' 1817. 29. 'Rob Roy,' 1818, 3 vols. 12mo. 30. 'Tales of my Landlord, 2nd ser. Heart of Midlothian,' 1818, 4 vols. 12mo. 31. Articles in 'Provincial Antiquities of Scotland,' issued in two parts, 1819–26 (2 vols. 4to, 1826). 32. 'Tales of my Landlord, 3rd ser. The Bride of Lammermoor: a Legend of Montrose,' 1819, 4 vols. 12mo. 33. 'Description of the Regalia of Scotland,' 1819, 16mo (anon.) 34. 'The Visionary, by Somnambulus' (a political satire in three letters, republished from the 'Edinburgh Weekly Journal'), 1849. 35. 'Ivanhoe,' 1820, 3 vols. 12mo. 36. 'The Monastery,' 1820, 3 vols. 8vo. 37. 'The Abbot,' 1820, 3 vols.

8vo. 38. 'Kenilworth,' 1821, 3 vols. 8vo. 39. Biographies in Ballantyne's 'Novelists,' 1821. 40. 'Account of George III's Coronation,' 1821. 41. 'The Pirate,' 1822, 3 vols. 8vo. 42. 'Halidon Hill,' 1822. 43. 'Macduff's Cross' in Joanna Baillie's 'Poetical Miscellanies,' 1822. 44. 'The Fortunes of Nigel,' 1822, 3 vols. 8vo. 45. 'Peveril of the Peak,' 1822 (January 1823), 3 vols. 8vo. 46. 'Quentin Durward,' 1823, 3 vols. 8vo. 47. 'St. Ronan's Well,' 1824, 3 vols. 8vo. 48. 'Redgauntlet,' 1824, 3 vols. 8vo. 49. 'Tales of the Crusaders: The Betrothed; The Talisman,' 1825, 4 vols. 50. 'Thoughts on the proposed Change of Currency . . . three Letters by Malachi Malagrowther,' 1826 (from the 'Edinburgh Weekly Journal' of March). 51. 'Woodstock, or the Cavalier: a Tale of 1651,' 3 vols. 8vo. 52. 'Life of Napoleon Buonaparte, Emperor of the French, with a preliminary view of the French Revolution, by the Author of Waverley,' 9 vols. 1827. 53. 'Chronicles of the Canongate: the Two Drovers; the Highland Widow; the Surgeon's Daughter; by the author of Waverley' (with introduction signed Walter Scott), 1827. 54. 'Tales of a Grandfather,' 1st ser. 1828; 2nd ser. 1829; 3rd ser. 1830 (Scotland); 4th ser. (France), 1830. 55. 'Chronicles of the Canongate (2nd ser.): St. Valentine's Day, or the Fair Maid of Perth,' 1828. 56. 'My Aunt Margaret's Mirror;' 'The Tapestried Chamber,' and 'The Laird's Jock,' in the 'Keepsake' for 1828. 57. 'Religious Discourses, by a Layman,' 1828. 58. 'Anne of Geierstein,' 1829, 3 vols. 8vo. 59. 'History of Scotland' (Lardner's 'Cabinet Cyclopædia'), 2 vols. 1830. 60. 'Letters on Demonology and Witchcraft' (Murray's 'Family Library'), 1830. 61. 'House of Aspen,' in the 'Keepsake,' 1830. 64. 'Doom of Devorgoil: Auchindrane, or the Ayrshire Tragedy,' 1830. 63. 'Essays on Ballad Poetry,' 1830 (attached to octavo edition of 'Poetical Works'). 64. 'Tales of my Landlord (fourth series): Count Robert of Paris; Castle Dangerous,' 1832.

Scott edited the following: 1. 'Sir Tristram, an historical romance, edited from the Auchinleck MS.,' 1804. 2. 'Original Memoirs of Sir Henry Slingsby' (with memoirs of Captain Hodgson), 1806. 3. 'Dryden's Works,' 1808, 18 vols.; reprinted 1821. 4. 'Memoirs of Captain George Carleton' (*fl.* 1728) [q. v.], 1808. 5. 'Memoirs of Patrick Cary' [q. v.], 1808. 6. 'Queenhoo Hall,' by Joseph Strutt [q. v.], 1808. 7. 'Sadler Papers' [see under Clifford, Arthur, and Sadler, Sir Ralph], 1809–10, 2 vols. 4to. 8. 'Somers Tracts' (2nd edit.), 1809–15, 13 vols. 9. 'Poems of Anna Seward' [q. v.], 1810. 10. 'Secret History of the Court of James I,' 1811, 2 vols. 11. 'Memoirs of Sir Philip Warwick,' 1813. 12. 'Swift's Works,' 1814 and (revised) 1824, 19 vols. 13. 'The letting of Humor's Blood in the Head Vaine,' by Samuel Rowlands [q. v.], 1814. 14. 'Memorie of the Somervilles,' 1815. 15. 'Burt's Letters from Scotland' (with Robert Jamieson, 1780?–1844 [q. v.]), 1818. 16. 'Northern Memoirs,' by Richard Franck [q. v.], 1821. 17. 'Chronological Notes of Scottish Affairs,' &c., by Sir John Lauder, lord Fountainhall [q. v.], 1822. 18. 'Memoirs of Mme. de la Rochejaquelin' (vol. v. of 'Constable's Miscellany'), 1827. Scott edited the 'Bannatyne Miscellany' in 1827, and contributed a memoir to the 'Bannatyne Memorial' in 1829. He wrote the 'Bannatyne Garland, quhairin the President speaketh for thir first dinner;' and printed for the club 'Lays of the Lindsays,' 1824 (suppressed; a copy at the Centenary exhibition), 'Auld Robin Gray,' 1824, and a report of the trial of Duncan Terig, 1831. He presented to the Roxburghe Club the 'Court-martial on John, Master of Sinclair,' 1828.

Scott contributed many articles to the 'Edinburgh' and 'Quarterly' reviews, of which lists are given in Lockhart and in Allibone's 'Dictionary.' He wrote historical sketches of 1813 and 1814 for the 'Edinburgh Annual Register,' in which he also published a memoir of Leyden and some poems.

Scott's poems were collected in 1820 in 12 vols. 12mo; in 10 vols. 8vo in 1821, to which was added an eleventh volume in 1830; in 10 vols. 12mo in 1823; and in 11 vols. 8vo in 1830 (with author's prefaces). An octavo volume of 'Miscellaneous Poems' in 1820 includes 'Triermain,' 'Harold,' and various poems, first collected in the 12mo edition of that year. The poetry from the 'Waverley Novels' was published in 1822. An edition in 12 vols. 8vo, edited by Lockhart, appeared in 1834, and was republished in 1 vol. in 1848.

The 'Waverley Novels' were issued collectively by Constable, as he bought the copyright, as 'Novels and Tales' (12 vols. 1820), 'Historical Romances' (7 vols. 1822), and 'Novels and Romances' (7 vols. 1824). 'Tales and Romances' were published by Cadell in continuation, and two volumes of introductions (1827, 1833). The Collected edition, with the author's notes, appeared in 48 vols. from 1829 to 1833. Cadell also published the Cabinet edition (25 vols. fcap. 8vo, 1841–3), the People's edition (5 vols.

royal 8vo, 1844–8), and the Abbotsford edition (12 vols. impl. 8vo, 1842–7). The copyright of Scott's works was bought in 1851 by Messrs. Black for about 27,000*l.* after Cadell's death. They published a Library edition of the 'Waverley Novels' in 25 vols. 8vo in 1852–4, Roxburghe edition (48 vols. 8vo, 1859–61), a Railway edition (1854-60), a Shilling edition (1862–4), and a Sixpenny edition (1866–8), each in 25 vols., and a Centenary edition in 25 vols. 8vo in 1870–1. Many other editions have appeared, and it is stated that about three million volumes of one of the cheaper issues were sold between 1851 and 1890 (*Scott's Journal*, ii. 108). Among the latest are the Dryburgh edition, 1892-4, in 25 vols. 8vo, and the Border edition in 48 vols. 4to, 1892–4, edited by Mr. Andrew Lang.

Scott's miscellaneous prose works were first collected in 1827 in 6 vols. 8vo, in 28 vols. 8vo, 1834–6; and in 3 vols. royal 8vo in 1841. They include the 'Lives of the Novelists,' the 'Life of Leyden' (from the 'Edinburgh Annual Register'), 'Paul's Letters,' the articles in the 'Encyclopædia,' and the 'Border and Provincial Antiquities,' some reviews from the 'Edinburgh' and 'Quarterly,' the 'Life of Napoleon,' and the 'Tales of a Grandfather.'

[The main authority for Scott is Lockhart's admirable life. It appeared originally in seven volumes, 1837. Pages cited above refer to the one-volume edition of 1841. Scott's last Journals (1890) and his Familiar Letters (1894), published by David Douglas from the Abbotsford collections, are an important supplement. The first includes some extracts from Skene's unpublished reminiscences. Other lives had been published by W. Weir, 1832, and by George Allan in 1834. References to Scott are to be found in nearly every biographical work of the period, especially in Southey's Life and Correspondence, where Southey's replies to Scott's letters in Lockhart are published, and the 'selections' from his letters, and Cockburn's Memorials (pp. 40, 211, 217, 267, 280, 317, 382, 401, 430). Of books more especially devoted to Scott may be mentioned the 'Refutation' of misstatements in Lockhart by Ballantyne's trustees (1838), Lockhart's Ballantyne Humbug Handled, and the Reply to this by the trustees, 1839. Archibald Constable and his Literary Correspondents (1873), vol. iii., and Smiles's Memoir of John Murray (1891), also throw some light upon the publishing transactions. The present Mr. Archibald Constable has kindly contributed some unpublished papers. Mr. Andrew Lang's Life of J. G. Lockhart (1897) discusses some of these points and gives other valuable information. Other books are: Domestic Life and Manners of Sir Walter Scott, by James Hogg (1834), which Lockhart resented, but which has some interest; Recollections of Sir Walter Scott [by R. P. Gillies], 1837, 'valuable and written in an admirable spirit,' says Mr. Lang; Letters from and to C. K. Sharpe (1838), with many letters of Scott's; Journal of a Tour to Waterloo . . . with Sir W. Scott in 1815, by the late John Scott of Harden (1842); Reminiscences of Scott, by John Gibson (one of Scott's trustees), 1871; Basil Hall's Fragments, iii. 280–328 (last voyage); Washington Irving's Abbotsford and Newstead Abbey (London, 1850); G. Ticknor's Life and Letters (1870), i. 280–4, 430, ii. 360, &c. (see also letters from Ticknor and Edward Everett in Allibone's Dictionary); R. Chambers's Life of Scott with Abbotsford Notanda (chiefly referring to W. Laidlaw), by R. Carruthers (1874); Centenary Memorial of Sir W. Scott, by C. S. M. Lockhart (1871), Catalogue of Library at Abbotsford, by J. G. Cochrane (Maitland Club, 1838); Abbotsford, the personal relics and antiquarian treasures of Sir W. Scott, described by the Hon. Mary Monica Maxwell Scott, with illustrations by W. Gibb (1893).] L. S.

SCOTT, Sir WILLIAM (*d.* 1350), judge, and reputed founder of the Kentish family of Scot's Hall, is said to have been son of John Scott who resided at Brabourne, Kent, apparently as seneschal of the manor. But the pedigree of the Scot's Hall family has not been traced with certainty before the fifteenth century. The judge, according to a wholly untrustworthy tradition, was descended from a younger brother of John de Baliol [q. v.], king of Scotland, and also of Alexander de Baliol [q. v.], lord of Chilham, Kent. William Scott makes his first appearance as a pleader in the year-book for 1330 (Michaelmas term). He was made serjeant-at-law in 1334–5, and on 18 March 1336–7 justice of the common pleas, having been knighted the day before, when the Black Prince was created Duke of Cornwall. In December 1340, with Chief-justice Sir Robert Parning [q. v.] and other judges, he sat at Westminster to try their delinquent colleague, Sir Richard de Willoughby [q. v.] He has been doubtfully identified with William Scott, who was knight marshal of England, and is said, according to an epitaph recorded by Weever, to have been buried in Brabourne church in 1350. But there was a William Scott who purchased land at Brabourne between 1352 and 1396, and was assessed to the sixteenth from 1349 to 1372. There is no proof, as is commonly stated, that the judge was father of Michael Scott, who in 1346–7 was assessed to the sixteenth in Bircholt.

Obscurity in the history of the family of Scott of Scot's Hall ceases with the settlement by Peter de Coumbe in 1402 of the manor of Combe or Coumbe in Brabourne on William

Scott (*d.* 1434), who was escheator for Kent in 1425, sheriff in 1428, and M.P. in 1430. Before 1409 he married his first wife, Joan, daughter of Sir John de Orlestone (*d.* 1397), and by purchase or inheritance he acquired the manor and church of Orlestone, which had belonged to her family. He presented to the church in 1426, 1430, and 1433. He is believed to have built on the manor of Hall the mansion-house afterwards known as Scot's Hall. To him also was probably due the reconstruction in the Perpendicular style of the chapel of the Holy Trinity to the south of the chancel in Brabourne church, at the entrance of which he directed that he should be buried (cf. WEEVER). He died on 5 Feb. 1433–4. His second wife was Isabella, youngest daughter of Vincent Herbert, alias Finch, of Netherfield, Sussex (ancestor of the earls of Winchilsea); she survived him, and remarried Sir Gervase Clifton, treasurer of the household to Henry VI, who resided at Brabourne. By his second wife William Scott had, with other issue, an heir, John, and William (*d.* 1491). The latter was lord of the manor of Woolstan, and founder of the family of Scott of Chigwell, Essex.

The heir, SIR JOHN SCOTT (*d.* 1485) of Scot's Hall, a consistent Yorkist, was appointed sheriff of Kent in 1460, and, on the accession of Edward IV next year, was knighted and made comptroller of the household. Edward IV, on the attainder in 1461 of Thomas, baron de Roos, and James Butler, earl of Wiltshire, gave him the castle and manor of Wilderton and Molash in Kent and the manor of Old Swinford and Snodsbury in Worcestershire, with a life interest in the castle and manor of Chilham. He was one of the negotiators of the treaty of commerce with Burgundy, concluded at Brussels on 24 Nov. 1467, and of the marriage treaty [see MARGARET, DUCHESS OF BURGUNDY], and one of the commission for the delimitation of the Pale of Picardy, appointed on 18 June 1472. He was returned to parliament for Kent in 1467, and was engaged in the following years on diplomatic negotiations with the Hanse Towns. In 1471 he succeeded Richard Neville, earl Warwick, whom he was sent to arrest in France after the battle of Stamford (May 1470), as lieutenant of Dover Castle, warden of the Cinque ports, and marshal of Calais, and continued in active diplomatic employment. He died on 17 Oct. 1485, and was buried in the north wall of the chancel of Brabourne church. His arms are in the north window of 'the martyrdom' at Canterbury Cathedral. His account-book (1463–6) was printed in 'Archæologia Cant.' vol. x. By his wife Agnes (*d.* 1487), daughter of William de Beaufitz of the Grange, Gillingham, Kent, he had, with two daughters, an heir, William. The statement that Thomas Rotherham [q. v.] was a younger son is without foundation.

SIR WILLIAM SCOTT (1459–1524) of Brabourne was concerned in the siege of Bodiam Castle in 1483–4, for which and other delinquencies he received a pardon on the accession of Henry VII. Rising in favour with that monarch, he was sworn of the privy council, appointed comptroller of the household, and created C.B. with Prince Arthur on 29 Nov. 1489. He was also lieutenant of Dover Castle, warden of the Cinque ports, and marshal of Calais in 1490–1, sheriff of Kent the same year, in 1501 and 1516. In 1495 he succeeded to the manor of Brabourne on the death, without issue, of Joan, widow of Sir John Lewknor (killed at Tewkesbury 1471). The property came to her from her father Richard, son of John Halsham, and, by a settlement of 1464, was limited to John Scott and his heirs, failing Joan Lewknor's issue. John Scott's relationship to the Halshams and Lewknors is not established. In 1519 Sir William attended Henry VIII at the Field of the Cloth of Gold, and figured among the grandees deputed with Wolsey to receive the Emperor Charles V on his landing at Dover on 28 May 1522. Scot's Hall he rebuilt in a style of such splendour as to make it long the rival of the greatest of the houses of Kent. He died on 24 Aug. 1524, and was buried in the chancel of Brabourne church. By his wife Sybil (*d.* 1527) he left issue. A younger son, Edward (*d.* 1535), married Alice, daughter of Thomas Fogge, serjeant porter of Calais, and founded the family of Scott of the Mote, Iden, Sussex.

His heir, SIR JOHN SCOTT (1484?–1533), was knighted by the young Prince Charles (afterwards the Emperor Charles V) for gallantry displayed in the campaign of 1511 in the Low Countries against the Duke of Guelders [see POYNINGS, SIR EDWARD]. He entered the retinue of George Neville, lord Abergavenny, constable of Dover Castle, and had charge of the transport service on the landing of Charles V at Dover on 28 May 1522. He was sheriff of Kent in 1527, and died 7 Oct. 1533. By marriage with Anne, daughter of Reginald Pympe (said to be descended from John Gower, the poet), his successors acquired the manor of Nettlestead, Kent. Their issue was, besides several daughters, three sons, William (*d.* 1536 s.p.), Reginald, and Richard, who was father of Reginald (*d.* 1599) [q. v.], author of 'The Discovery of Witchcraft.'

Sir John Scott's second son, Sir Reginald

Scott (1512–1554), sheriff of Kent in 1541 and surveyor of works at Sandgate, died on 15 Dec. 1554, and was buried at Brabourne, having married, first, Emeline, daughter of Sir William Kempe; and, secondly, Mary, daughter of Sir Brian Tuke [q. v.] He had issue six sons and four daughters.

Sir Reginald Scott's eldest son by his first wife, Sir Thomas Scott (1535–1594), was soon prominent in public affairs in Kent. He was knighted in 1571, and was deputy lieutenant of the county. In 1575 he succeeded as heir to the manor of Nettlestead. In 1576 he served as high sheriff, and was knight of the shire in the parliaments of 1571 and 1586. He was a commissioner to report on the advisability of improving the breed of horses in this country, a subject on which he is said to have written a book; was commissioner for draining and improving Romney Marsh, and became superintendent of the improvements of Dover harbour. At the time of the Spanish Armada he was appointed chief of the Kentish force which assembled at Northbourne Down. He equipped four thousand men himself within a day of receiving his orders from the privy council. Renowned for his hospitality and public spirit, he died on 30 Dec. 1594, and was buried at Brabourne. The offer of the parish of Ashford to bury him in the parish church free of expense was declined. A long biographical elegy, which has been attributed to his cousin Reginald, is extant (Peck, *Collection of Curious Pieces*, vol. iii.; Scott, *Memorials of the Scot Family*; Reginald Scot, *Discovery*, ed. Nicholson, pp. xv–xvii). He married three times. By his first wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Baker of Sissinghurst, he had six sons and three daughters; this lady's sister married Thomas Sackville, lord Buckhurst [q.v.] In 1583 Scott married, secondly, Elizabeth, daughter of Ralph Heyman of Somerfield; she died in 1595 without issue. His third wife was Dorothy, daughter of John Bere of Horsman's Place, Dartford. Scot was this lady's fourth husband; he had no issue by her (Scott, *Memorials of the Family of Scot of Scot's Hall*, 1876, pp. 194–206, with portrait and will).

Sir Thomas Scott's second son, Sir John Scott (1570–1616), was knighted in the Low Countries by Lord Willoughby, under whom he served as captain of a band of lancers (1588). He commanded a ship in the expedition of 1597 to the Azores; in 1601 he was implicated, but not fatally, in the Essex rising. From 1604 till 1611 he was M.P. for Kent, and in 1614 he sat for Maidstone. On 9 March 1607 he became a member of the council for Virginia, and on 23 May 1609 a councillor of the Virginia Company of London; to the former he subscribed 75*l.* He died on 24 Sept. 1616, and was buried in Brabourne church, Kent. He was twice married: first, to Elizabeth Stafford, a descendant of the Duke of Buckingham (beheaded in 1521); and, secondly, to Catherine, daughter of Thomas Smith, the customer, and widow of Sir Rowland Hayward. Dekker in 1609 dedicated his 'Phœnix' to her and her father.

The last Scott who occupied Scot's Hall was Francis Talbot Scott (1745–1787), apparently fifth in descent from Sir Edward Scott (*d.* 1644), fifth son of Sir Thomas (1535–1594). On Francis Talbot Scott's death the estate was sold to Sir John Honywood of Evington. The old mansion was pulled down in 1808. There are many living representatives of the various branches of the family. The estates of Orlestone and Nettlestead were alienated in 1700.

[Scott's Memorials of the Family of Scott of Scot's Hall (which is at many points inaccurate); Weever's Funeral Mon. 1631, p. 269; Douglas's Peerage of Scotland, 'Athol;' Hasted's Kent, ed. 1790, iii. 292; Foss's Lives of the Judges; Dugdale's Chron. Ser. pp. 42, 43; Abbrev. Rot. Orig. ii. 99, 179; Paston Letters, ed. Gairdner; Metcalfe's Book of Knights; Cal. Rot. Pat. p. 134; Lyon's Dover Castle, ii. 244, 245; Letters and Papers, Henry VIII; Rymer's Fœdera, 1st edit. xi. 590–1, 599, 737–59, 778, xiv. 407–8; The French Chronicle of London (Camden Soc.), p. 87; Rutland Papers (Camden Soc.), pp. 72, 73; Chronicle of Calais (Camden Soc.), pp. 8, 15; Three Fifteenth-Century Chronicles (Camden Soc.), p. 157; Hist. MSS. Comm. 9th Rep. App. p. 138; Brown's Genesis of United States, esp. pp. 996–7; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1599–1616; and information from C. R. Beazley, esq. Valuable notes have been supplied by Edmund Ward Oliver, esq.] J. M. R.

SCOTT or SCOT, Sir WILLIAM (*d.* 1532), of Balwearie, Scottish judge, was elder son of Sir William Scott of Balwearie, by Isobel, daughter of Sir John Moncrieff of Moncrieff. He accompanied James IV in his expedition into England in 1513, and, being taken prisoner at the battle of Flodden, was obliged to sell a portion of his lands of Strathmiglo to purchase his ransom. In February 1524 he was chosen a commissioner to parliament, when he was appointed one of the lords of the articles for the barons, an honour frequently afterwards conferred on him, although obtained by no one else under the rank of a peer. On 24 Nov. he was styled a justice, in the absence of the justice-general, in a commission appointed to do justice on the 'malt makers of Leith for

common oppression through the exorbitant dearth raised by them, and of their causing through the whole realm' (*Acta Parl. Scot.* ii. 315; *Extracts from the Records of the Burgh of Edinburgh*, 1403–1528, p. 229). On the institution of the college of justice on 13 May 1532, he was nominated the first justice on the temporal side, but died before 19 Nov. of the same year. By his wife, Janet Lundy, daughter of Thomas Lundy of Lundy, he had two sons, Sir William, father of Sir James Scott (*fl.* 1579–1606) [q. v.], and Thomas (1480?–1539) [q. v.]

[Douglas's Scottish Baronage, p. 304; Brunton and Haig's Senators of the College of Justice, pp. 19, 20.] T. F. H.

SCOTT, Sir WILLIAM (*d.* 1656), of Clerkington, was the eldest son of Laurence Scott of Harprig, advocate, clerk to the privy council, and one of the clerks of the court of session. In November 1641 he was knighted by Charles I. Like his father, he was one of the clerks of session, and after the enactment of the act of classes rendering it impossible for those who took part in the engagement on behalf of Charles I to hold office, he was in June 1649 appointed an ordinary lord of session with the title of Lord Clerkington. In 1645 he had been chosen to represent the county of Haddington in parliament, and in 1650 was chosen a commissioner for the county of Edinburgh. He was also one of the committee of estates, and took a prominent part in affairs at the period of Charles II's recall to Scotland in June 1650. He died on 23 Dec. 1656. By his first wife, a daughter of Morrison of Prestongrange, he had one son, Laurence; and by his second wife, Barbara, daughter of Sir John Dalmahoy of Dalmahoy, bart., he had three sons and three daughters. The sons were: John, who succeeded his brother Laurence, obtained from his father in patrimony the lands and barony of Malleny, and was the ancestor of the Scotts of Malleny; James of Scotsloch; and Robert, dean of Hamilton.

[Sir James Balfour's Annals; Bishop Guthry's Memoirs; Anderson's Scottish Nation; Brunton and Haig's Senators of the College of Justice.] T. F. H.

SCOTT, Sir WILLIAM (1674?–1725), of Thirlestane, Latin lyrist, eldest son of Francis Scott, bart., of Thirlestane, Selkirkshire, and Lady Henrietta, daughter of William Kerr, third earl of Lothian [q. v.], was born after 1673, in which year his parents were married (Frazer, *Book of Buccleuch*). He was admitted a member of the faculty of advocates on 25 Feb. 1702. On 20 May 1719 he executed a deed of entail of his lands of Thirlestane. He died on 8 Oct. 1725. Scott married, in 1699, Elizabeth, only surviving child of Margaret, baroness Napier, and her husband, John Brisbane, son of an Edinburgh writer. After her decease he married Jean, daughter of Sir John Nisbet of Dirleton, East Lothian, and widow of Sir William Scott of Harden. Francis Scott, son of the first marriage, became the fifth baron Napier (ancestor of Lord Napier and Ettrick) on the death of his grandmother, who was predeceased by his mother.

Scott contributed to Dr. Archibald Pitcairne's 'Selecta Poemata,' 1726, proving himself a scholarly writer of sentimental and humorous lyrics, and an adept at macaronic verse. In the preface to the volume his literary merits are highly extolled by several contemporaries. A direct family tradition, starting from his son, assigns to him the somewhat broad but decidedly appreciative and diverting Scottish ballad, the 'Blythsome Wedding,' which is also claimed for Francis Sempill [q. v.] Scott's powers no doubt were equal to the achievement; and, though there exists nothing else of like character that is undoubtedly his, the tradition compels attention.

[Douglas's Peerage; Frazer's Book of Buccleuch; Anderson's Scottish Nation; Mark Napier's History of the Partition of the Lennox; Johnson's Musical Museum, ed. Laing; Allan Cunningham's Songs of Scotland.] T. B.

SCOTT, WILLIAM Lord Stowell (1745–1836), fourth child and eldest son of William Scott of Newcastle-on-Tyne, who was at various times a 'hoastman' and 'coal-fitter' or coal-shipper, and a small publican, by his second wife, Jane, daughter of Henry Atkinson, a local tradesman, was born 17 Oct. 1745 (O.S.) The public alarm at the Jacobite rebellion and General Cope's defeat at Prestonpans caused his mother to remove for her confinement to her father's country house at Heworth, a place about three miles from Newcastle, and on the Durham side of the Tyne; it is said that, as the town gates were shut and egress forbidden, she was lowered from the walls into a boat. At any rate, but for the lucky accident of his birth in the county of Durham, neither he nor his brother John, afterwards Lord Eldon [q. v.], was likely to have gone to Oxford. For some years William Scott was educated at the Newcastle grammar school, under the Rev. Hugh Moises [q. v.], fellow of Peterhouse, Cambridge, and, on his advice, he stood for and obtained a scholarship at Corpus Christi College, Ox-

ford, open to persons born in Durham. Seven days after his election he matriculated, on 3 March 1761. On 20 November 1764 he took his B.A. degree, and on 14 Dec. was elected on probation to a Durham fellowship at University College, and was admitted actual fellow on 14 June 1765. He was at once appointed one of the two college tutors, and in this capacity earned the reputation of being 'a very useful, ingenious man' (G. Birkbeck Hill, *Letters of S. Johnson*, i. 311, 420); eventually he became senior tutor. He appears, however, from a letter to his father in 1772, to have found the work an excessive strain on his health. On 17 June 1767 he took his M.A. degree, proceeded B.C.L. on 30 May 1772, and in 1773, on the death of John Warneford, he was, after a contest, elected by convocation Camden reader in ancient history. He never published his lectures, and forbade his executors to do so; but they were very popular and almost as much esteemed as Blackstone's Vinerian lectures. Gibbon speaks of them with approbation from hearsay, and singles Scott out as a shining example amid the general incapacity of university teachers of the time; Dr. Parr, who seems to have heard them, praises them highly (see *Quart. Rev.* lxxv. 33); and Milman, who saw the notes of them after his death, confirms Gibbon's statement (Milman, *Life of Gibbon*, 1839, p. 83).

Scott's intimate friendship with Dr. Johnson began at Oxford, and continued till Johnson's death. Robert Chambers [q. v.], his companion at school and college, brought them together when Johnson was visiting him at University College. He accompanied Johnson from Newcastle to Edinburgh in August 1773, was elected a member of The Club in December 1778, and lived to be its senior member, and with Hawkins and Reynolds was an executor of Johnson's will. Boswell records (Boswell, *Life of Johnson*, edit. 1835, vii. 97–108) a long conversation at a dinner at Scott's rooms in the Middle Temple on 10 April 1778, and Scott was a member of, though not an attendant at, the club formed in 1784 by a number of Johnson's most intimate friends, to meet monthly at the Essex Head in Essex Street, Strand, near Johnson's house (Nichols, *Literary Anecdotes*, ii. 553). Croker obtained from Lord Stowell, in 1829, a considerable number of written reminiscences of Johnson, as well as much personal information. The latter he used freely in his edition of Boswell, but the former were sent by post to Sir Walter Scott, and, the mail being robbed, disappeared; owing to Lord Stowell's advanced age they never were rewritten (*Croker Papers*, ii. 27–35).

Scott's wish had long been to go to the bar, and as early as 24 June 1762 he entered himself as a student at the Middle Temple, but his own caution and his father's reticence about his own means led him to put off his removal to London. In the autumn of 1776 his father died, leaving him an estate in Durham named Usworth, the family house in Love Lane, Newcastle, and other property, worth altogether, according to Lord Eldon, 24,000*l.* In winding up his father's estate, he for some time continued his shipping business, and thus gained a practical experience, which was afterwards of professional value to him. Accordingly he resigned his tutorship, and early in 1777 took chambers at 3 King's Bench Walk, Temple; but, retaining his Camden readership till 1785, he continued to reside occasionally in Oxford. He particularly interested himself in increasing the collections in the Bodleian Library, and assisted in raising the fund for the purchase of rare works at the Pinelli and Crevenna sales.

He elected to practise in the admiralty and ecclesiastical courts, and for that purpose took the degree of D.C.L. on 23 June 1779, and was admitted a member of the faculty of advocates at Doctors' Commons on 3 Nov. in the same year. He was also called to the bar on 11 Feb. 1780. At first he was so unready a speaker that, although he had once spoken for his friend, Andrew Robinson Stoney or Bowes, at the Newcastle election in 1777, he wrote out his arguments, and for several months read them in court from manuscript; but his talents, coupled with his singular combination of wide reading in history and civil law, and practical experience of both college and shipping business, soon began to tell in the special courts in which he sought to practise. Briefs and preferments alike were heaped upon him. 'His success is wonderful,' writes John Scott in 1783, 'and he has been fortunate beyond example.' On 21 May 1782 he received the crown appointment of advocate-general for the office of lord high admiral, the emoluments of which in times of war were considerable; in 1783 the archbishop of Canterbury appointed him to the sinecure office, worth 400*l.* a year, of registrar of the court of faculties. On 30 Aug. 1788 the bishop of London constituted him judge of the consistory court of London. On 3 Sept. 1788 he was knighted, and from the same day ran his appointment as king's advocate-general, in succession to Sir William Wynne, promoted to be dean of arches, though the

patent was dated 28 Oct. On 24 Sept. 1788 the archbishop of Canterbury appointed him vicar-general for the province of Canterbury; and he was also commissary of the city and diocese of Canterbury, and chancellor of the diocese of London. On the death of Halifax, bishop of St. Asaph, he became master of the faculties on 3 April 1790, and was elected a bencher of his inn on 5 July 1794, serving as treasurer in 1807, and finally, on 26 Oct. 1798, he was appointed judge of the high court of admiralty, and was sworn of the privy council.

Scott had not been long at the bar before he sought to enter parliament. As early as 1779 he wrote to his brother that he wanted to find a seat. When Sir Roger Newdigate retired from the representation of the university of Oxford in 1780, Scott and Sir William Jones both came forward, but, as their friends saw, with little chance of success (Johnson to Mrs. Thrale, 9 May and 6 June 1780). Sir William Dolben was returned. In 1784 Scott was elected for the close borough of Downton, but was unseated on petition; he stood again in 1790 and won and kept the seat. At last, on Sir William Dolben's death in March 1801, he was elected for Oxford University, and continued to represent it till his elevation to the House of Lords. During his first six years in the House of Commons he spoke only once, on 2 June 1795, when, having been mentioned by Dundas as the legal adviser of ministers with regard to the instructions sent to Sir Charles Grey and Sir John Jervis in the West Indies, he was compelled to rise and take part in the debate. Afterwards he made occasional speeches and brought in bills on ecclesiastical and legal questions. He proposed Abbot, his fellow university member, upon his re-election as speaker on 16 Nov. 1802. 'Nothing could be more appropriate than his language,' writes Wilberforce (*Life*, iii. 73). In 1803 he brought in the Curates Bill, which was thrown out in the House of Lords at the end of the session (Colchester, *Diary*, i. 575). With his Clergy Residence Bill he was more successful. Under the sanction of the government he introduced it on 6 April, and it received the royal assent on 7 July (Pellew, *Life of Lord Sidmouth*, ii. 189). In 1804 he reintroduced the Curates Bill, but too late to pass it, and in 1805 feared to bring it in again, as he thought his university hostile to it. Subsequently it passed as an 'Act to amend the 21 Henry VIII as to Pluralities of Livings,' and was the basis of the broader act passed by Lord Harrowby. But in the main Scott was a steady opponent of reform. On 25 May 1810 he declared himself opposed to any concession to the claims of the Roman catholics (*Hansard*, xvii. 183). On 23 Jan. 1812 there was a long debate on excommunications by process from the ecclesiastical court, in which his speech in their favour was so strenuously and successfully replied to by Romilly and others that he was obliged to promise to bring in a bill for their abolition, a promise which he fulfilled in July 1813, but 'very reluctantly, for he had little taste for reform' (Romilly, *Memoirs*, iii. 6); the bill passed as 53 George III, c. 127. Martin's bill for regulating the office of registrar in admiralty was so altered by his amendments that its supporters would have preferred that it should not pass at all. He opposed the Chapel Exemptions Bill in 1815 as being a relief of dissenters, and in 1817 and 1818 resisted Curwen's Tithes Bill. 'Scott,' writes Romilly (*Memoirs*, iii. 330), 'who, as member for the university of Oxford, conceives himself bound to watch with great jealousy every innovation with respect to ecclesiastical property, expressed great doubt about the bill.' His last prominent appearance in the House of Commons was at the opening of the session of 1820, when he moved the speaker, Manners-Sutton, into the chair. Though his friends had long expected a peerage for him, it was not till 1821 that he received it; when, on the occasion of the coronation of George IV, and by patent dated 17 July 1821, he was created a baron with the title of Stowell of Stowell Park, an estate which he had bought in Gloucestershire. He took his seat on 5 Feb. 1822. His appearances in the House of Lords after his elevation to the peerage were rare, though on ecclesiastical questions his opinion was much deferred to. In 1823 he moved for a committee to inquire into the state of the marriage laws, but hardly appears otherwise to have taken part in debate.

On 14 Aug. 1820 he resigned his office in the consistorial court. His last decision in that court was Ruding *v.* Smith (2 Haggard, *Consistory Reports*, 371); but he clung tenaciously to his judgeship in the admiralty court, though he had been tempted to resign it in 1808, when, on Sir William Wynne's retirement, he received, and, on Eldon's advice, refused, the offer of the more dignified but less lucrative office of dean of the arches. His faculties had begun to fail, more perhaps outwardly than in reality. Loss of sight and weakness of voice obliged him to employ Sir C. Robinson, and afterwards Dr. Dodson, to read his judgments for him. One of his judgments was given in the celebrated case of the slave Grace, 26 Sept. 1827

(Moore, *Memoirs*, vi. 156). At length, on 22 Feb. 1828, old age compelled him to resign. Sir Walter Scott writes, 24 May 1828: 'Met my old and much-esteemed friend, Lord Stowell, looking very frail and even comatose. *Quantum mutatus!* He was one of the pleasantest men I ever knew' (Lockhart, *Life of Scott*, vii. 135). For the rest of his life he lived principally at Earley Court, Berkshire, which he occupied in right of his first wife. Lord and Lady Sidmouth, his son-in-law and daughter, resided there with him during great part of the year, and Lord Eldon was a constant visitor. Down to April 1833 he was in communication with Lord Eldon about public affairs, but after that his mind gave way. He was never made aware of the death of his son in November 1835, and though his will, which he made himself on 30 April 1830, made no provision for the event of his surviving his son, his daughter felt it to be useless to endeavour to bring him to make arrangements adapted to the altered circumstances. He died at Earley Court in the afternoon of 28 Jan. 1836, and was buried at Sonning, near Reading. His personalty was sworn under 230,000*l.*, and he left besides landed estates producing 12,000*l.* per annum.

Scott married, on 7 April 1781, Anna Maria, eldest daughter of John Bagnall of Earley Court, Berkshire, by whom he had four children; only two grew up: William, who was M.P. for Gatton from 1826 to 1830, and died of intemperance on 26 Nov. 1835 (*Gent. Mag.* 1836, i. 99); and Mary Anne, who married first, in 1809, Colonel Thomas Townsend of Honington, Warwickshire, and secondly, in 1823, the first Viscount Sidmouth. His first wife died on 4 Sept. 1809, during his absence on a visit to the Duke of Atholl in Scotland. He became acquainted with his second wife, Louisa Catherine, a daughter of Admiral Earl Howe, widow of John, first marquis of Sligo, whom he married 10 April 1813, through having to pass sentence on 16 Dec. 1812, as presiding judge of the admiralty sessions at the Old Bailey, upon her son, the second marquis, for enticing two seamen to desert from a man-of-war at Malta and join the crew of his yacht. The story that Lady Sligo made the first advances for a marriage in the 'New Monthly Magazine' for January 1846 is ill-founded, but the acquaintance of Sir William Scott and Lady Sligo certainly arose from this trial. The match was discountenanced by Lord Eldon, and was ill-assorted from the first. Scott was parsimonious and convivial, Lady Sligo domestic and open-handed. They lived unhappily, first at her house in Grafton Street, which was settled on Scott for life, and to which he removed from 5 College Square, Doctors' Commons, where he had lived over thirty years, and afterwards in Cleveland Row, but they soon informally separated, and on 26 Aug. 1817 she died, having borne him no children.

In person Scott was below the middle height, fair-haired, corpulent in his later years, of a benign expression of face, and, though slovenly in dress, very courteous and polished in manner. There is a portrait of him, painted in 1812 for the Newcastle guildhall, and engraved in Twiss's 'Life of Eldon,' vol. ii. His constitution was feeble in his early years; he was always a great eater and drinker, a 'two-bottle man' (Boswell's *Johnson*, ed. 1835, viii. 67), and a *bon vivant*. His brother said of him 'he will drink any given quantity of port.' Despite his excesses his bodily health remained good till he was nearly ninety. All his life he was a saving man; the phrase 'the elegant simplicity of the three per cents' is his, and many stories were told of his niggardliness. Yet all his life, as 'Dr. Scott of the Commons' and as a judge, he was welcome in the best society of his time; he was a wit and a scholar, and, as a speaker, master of a cold, polished eloquence.

As a judge he stands in the front rank with Hale and Mansfield, and his services to maritime and international law are unsurpassed. His decisions are reported in the reports of Christopher Robinson (1798–1808), Edwards (1808–12), Dodson (1815–1822), and Haggard (1789–1821). Before Scott's time no reports of the decisions of the admiralty court had been published. He was thus little fettered by the judgments of his predecessors, and was free to be guided by the writers on Roman, canon, and international law, and by the historical material with which his own reading had made him familiar. At the same time the circumstances of the French wars poured into his court for decision the fullest and most varied series of cases in maritime law that has ever occurred. He thus enjoyed the greatest opportunity of giving unity and consistency to a whole department of English law, and for a generation he was rather a lawgiver than a judge in the ordinary sense of the term. Upon many maritime points his judgments are still the only law; and, little popular as they were at the moment among the Americans, who often suffered by them, they have been accepted by the United States courts also as authoritative (see *Life of Judge Story*, i. 554). 'There has seldom,'

says Lord Brougham ('Statesmen of the Time of George III,' *Works*, ed. 1872, iv. 67), 'if ever, appeared in the profession of the law any one so peculiarly endowed with all the learning and capacity which can accomplish, as well as all the graces which can embellish, the judicial character. . . . His judgment was of the highest cast; calm, firm, enlarged, penetrating, profound. His powers of reasoning were in proportion great, and still more refined than extensive. . . . If ever the praise of being luminous could be bestowed upon human composition, it was upon his judgments, and it was the approbation constantly, and as it were peculiarly, appropriated to those wonderful exhibitions of judicial capacity.'

The British Museum Catalogue wrongly attributes to him 'The Essence of Algernon Sydney's work on Government, by a Student of the Inner Temple,' 1795, but he is said to have written 'Observations by Civis,' 1811, and 'Letters on the Bullion Committee,' (anon.) 1812.

[In addition to authorities given above, see Dr. W. E. Surtees's Lives of Lords Stowell and Eldon, 1846, reprinted with corrections from Colburne's New Monthly Magazine, vols. lxxiv., lxxv. lxxvi.; Twiss's Life of Eldon; Townsend's Life of Lord Stowell in Lives of Twelve Irish Eminent Judges, reprinted from Law Magazine, xvi. 23; Gent. Mag. 1836, i. 427; Quarterly Review, xxv. 46 (probably by Talfourd). Scott's most important admiralty judgments—the Maria 1799, and the Gratitudine, 1801—are to be found in Robinson's Reports; a separate report of his greatest matrimonial case (Dalrymple *v.* Dalrymple) was published by Dr. J. Dodson in 1811; in 1857 a collection of these judgments was published by Clark of Edinburgh. His judgment in the case of 'The mongrel woman Grace' is given in the New State Trials, ii. 273, and was published separately from his notes by Dr. Haggard in 1827. He kept a diary 'of considerable interest' (Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. iv. 292), which has not been printed.] J. A. H.

SCOTT, WILLIAM (1797–1848), jockey, brother of John Scott (1794–1871) [q. v.], the trainer, was born at Chippenham in 1797, and first employed in the stables of his father, who kept the Ship Inn, Ship Street, Oxford. In 1815 he received further instruction under James Croft, the well-known trainer at Middleham, and was then in the service of Mr. Thomas Houldsworth until 1823. As a partner with his brother in the Whitewall training stables from 1825, he obtained the opportunity of riding many good horses, and very soon became one of the best known and most successful jockeys of his day. Strength, judgment, and grace were the distinguishing points of his horsemanship. His successes extended over a period of rather more than twenty years, and included four victories in the race for the Derby—in 1832 for Mr. Robert Ridsdale on St. Giles, in 1835 for Mr. John Bowes on Mundig, in 1842 for Colonel Anson on Attila, and in 1843 for Mr. Bowes on Cotherstone; three victories in the Oaks—in 1836 for himself and his brother on Cyprian, in 1838 for Lord Chesterfield on Industry, and in 1841 for Lord Westminster on Ghuznee; nine victories in the race for the St. Leger—in 1821 for Mr. T. O. Powlett on Jack Spigott, in 1825 for Mr. Richard Watt on Memnon, in 1828 for the Hon. E. Petre on The Colonel, in 1829 for Mr. Petre on Rowton, in 1838 for Lord Chesterfield on Don John, in 1839 for Major Yarburgh on Charles XII, in 1840 for Lord Westminster on Launcelot, in 1841 for Lord Westminster on Satirist, and in 1846 on Sir Tatton Sykes for himself.

Sir Tatton Sykes, originally called Tibthorpe, was bred by Scott in 1843. Ridden by his owner, he in 1846 started six times and won three times. At the Newmarket spring meeting he won the Two Thousand Guineas, at Epsom he ran second for the Derby, at Newcastle-on-Tyne he ran for the North Derby, at York he won the Knaveshire Stakes, at Doncaster (as already stated) he won the St. Leger, and at Newmarket First October meeting he ran second for the Grand Duke Michael Stakes. After quarrelling with his brother, Scott set up training stables of his own; but he was not successful, and, falling into dissipated habits, he soon lost the greater part of his money. His last mount was on Christopher in the Derby of 1847. He died at Highfield House, near Malton, on 26 Sept. 1848, and was buried at Meaux, near Malton, on 2 Oct. He married a daughter of Mr. Richardson, draper at Beverley, by whom he left a son and a daughter.

[Scott and Sebright, by the Druid, 1862, p. 47; Sporting Review, October 1842 p. 249 (with portrait), November 1846 pp. 298–301 (with engraving of Sir Tatton Sykes) December 1848 pp. 407–10; Black's Jockey Club, pp. 361, &c.; Taunton's Portraits of Race Horses, 1888, ii. 305 (with portrait); Bell's Life in London, 1 Oct. 1848, p. 3; see also 'The Doncaster St. Leger' in Sir F. H. Doyle's The Return of the Guards and other Poems, 1883, pp. 11–19.] G. C. B.

SCOTT, WILLIAM (1813–1872), divine, born in London on 2 May 1813, was the second son of Thomas Scott, merchant, of Clement's Lane and Newington, Surrey. In October 1827 he was entered at Merchant

Taylors' School, and on 14 June 1831 he matriculated at Queen's College, Oxford, as Michel exhibitioner. He was Michel scholar in 1834–8, and graduated B.A. in 1835 and M.A. in 1839. Ordained deacon in 1836 and priest in 1837, he held three curacies, the last of which was under William Dodsworth [q. v.] at Christ Church, Albany Street, London. In 1839 he was made perpetual curate of Christ Church, Hoxton, where he remained till 1860, and was widely known as 'Scott of Hoxton.' In 1860 he was appointed by Lord-chancellor Campbell vicar of St. Olave's, Jewry, with St. Martin Pomeroy.

Scott was an active member of the high-church party. When in 1841 its organ, the 'Christian Remembrancer,' was set on foot, he was made co-editor with Francis Garden. In 1844, when it became a quarterly, James Bowling Mozley [q. v.] for a short time succeeded Garden, but during a large part of the career of the paper, which ended in 1868, Scott was sole editor. He felt deeply the secession of Newman, who regarded Scott with respect (see a letter to Keble, 29 April 1842, J. H. Newman's *Letters*, ed. Mozley, ii. 396). Though personally unacquainted with him, Scott wrote of Newman to J. B. Mozley that he had 'lived upon him, made him my better and other nature.' Scott took a leading part in the agitation following the Gorham judgment. His 'Letter to the Rev. Daniel Wilson,' 1850, a reply to Wilson's bitter attack on the Tractarians, passed through four editions. In 1846 he joined Pusey and his associates in their efforts to prevent the ordination at St. Paul's of Samuel Gobat, the Lutheran bishop-elect of Jerusalem. Ten years later he was, with Pusey, Keble, and others, one of the eighteen clergy who signed the protest against Archbishop Sumner's condemnation of Archdeacon Denison. Scott's advice was much sought by Henry Phillpotts [q. v.], bishop of Exeter, and by Walter Kerr Hamilton [q.v.], bishop of Salisbury. Dean Church was his intimate friend. He was among the founders of the 'Saturday Review,' to which he constantly contributed, and was long a zealous member of Mr. Gladstone's election committees at Oxford, voting for him at his last candidature in 1868.

In London Scott's influence was especially great. He was one of the prime movers in the formation in 1848 of the London Union on Church Matters, and from 1859 onwards was chairman of the committee of the Ecclesiological Society. He was one of the chief advisers of Milman and Mansel in the work of restoration at St. Paul's Cathedral, acting for some time as honorary secretary of the restoration committee. In 1858 Scott was elected president of Sion College, then in process of reform, and next year published a continuation of the 'Account' of that foundation by John Russell (1787–1863).

Scott died on 11 Jan. 1872 of spinal disease, and was buried in Highgate cemetery. He married Margaret Beloe, granddaughter of William Beloe [q. v.], and had three sons and two daughters.

In 1841 he edited, with additions and illustrations, Laurence's 'Lay Baptism invalid;' and in 1847, for the Library of Anglo-Catholic Theology, the works of Archbishop Laud in seven volumes. Several of his sermons are in A. Watson's 'Collection.' His 'Plain Words for Plain People,' 1844, censured the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge for garbling theological works.

[C. J. Robinson's Register of Merchant Taylors' School; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1715–1886; Crockford's Clerical Directory; Guardian, 17 Jan. 1872, reproduced in Church Times, 19 Jan.; Times, 15 Jan. 1872; J. B. Mozley's Letters, ed. Anne Mozley, 1885, pp. 155, 168, 169, 321, 322; Church's Oxford Movement, p. 352, and Life and Letters, p. 145; Liddon's Life of Pusey, iii. 77, 442; Works in Brit. Mus. Libr.; Men of the Reign and Notes and Queries, 4th ser. ix. 66, give wrong date of birth.] G. Le G. N.

SCOTT, WILLIAM BELL (1811–1890), poet, painter, and miscellaneous writer, born on 12 Sept. 1811 at St. Leonard's, Edinburgh, was the seventh child of Robert Scott (1777–1841) [q. v.], the engraver, by his wife Ross Bell, a niece of the sculptor Gowan. David Scott [q. v.], the painter, was an elder brother. The death in infancy of the four elder children of the family saddened the household for many years, and the parents joined the baptist body. William was educated at Edinburgh high school, and received his first art teaching from his father. He afterwards attended classes at the Trustees' Academy, and in 1831 was for some months in London drawing from the antique in the British Museum. Subsequently for some years he assisted his father, now an invalid, in his business as an engraver, which he carried on in Parliament House, Edinburgh. He began to write poetry, and sought out Christopher North and other literary celebrities for advice and encouragement. Some of his poems appeared in 'Tait's Magazine' and in the 'Edinburgh University Souvenir' for 1834. In 1837 he removed to London, where he supported himself precariously by etching, engraving, and painting. His first picture, 'The Old English Ballad Singer,' was exhibited in 1838 at the British Institution. In 1840 'The Jester'

appeared in the Norfolk Street Gallery, and in 1842 he exhibited at the academy. Down to his last appearance at the academy in 1869 he exhibited in all twenty pictures in London. In 1843 he sent a cartoon to the competition of designs for the decoration of the Houses of Parliament. The cartoon was unsuccessful, but procured him from the board of trade the offer of a mastership in the government schools of design at Newcastle-on-Tyne. He had already married Miss Letitia Margery Norquoy, and, desirous of a fixed income, he accepted this offer, which gave him for twenty years a chief part in the organising of art schools in the north under the department of science and art. When in 1864 he returned once more to London, he continued his connection with the department at South Kensington as artist employed in decoration, and as examiner in art schools, till 1885.

During Scott's stay in the north his literary and artistic activity was very great. About 1855 he executed for Sir Walter Trevelyan at Wallington Hall a series of eight large pictures, with numerous life-size figures, in illustration of the history of Northumberland and the border. The scheme of decoration was completed in 1863–4 by the addition of eighteen oil pictures in the spandrils of the arches of the hall, on the subject of the ballad of Chevy Chase. In 1859 Scott began his lifelong friendship with Miss Boyd of Penkill Castle, Perthshire, where in 1868 he painted a series of designs illustrating the 'King's Quhair' in encaustic on the walls of a circular staircase. In 1870 he bought Bellevue House in Chelsea, and divided his time for the rest of his days between London and Perthshire. In London he had a large circle of friends, and was for fifty years in close contact with the chief literary and artistic coteries of the metropolis. His relations with Rossetti were especially intimate, and he was acquainted with Mr. Swinburne. The later years of his life were devoted to writing his reminiscences. These appeared after his death in 1892 in two volumes—'Autobiographical Notes of the Life of William Bell Scott; and Notices of his Artistic and Poetic Circle of Friends, 1830 to 1882; edited by W. Minto' (with two portraits, from etchings by himself). The frankness, and even surliness, of his tone and occasional inaccuracy caused general irritation; but the work is a valuable contribution to the history of literary and artistic society. Scott died, after several years of suffering, from angina pectoris, on 22 Nov. 1890 at Penkill Castle. Mr. Swinburne wrote memorial verses on his death (*Athenæum*, 28 Feb. 1891).

It is probably upon his poetry that Scott's reputation will ultimately rest. Blake and Shelley were his chief models, and Rossetti's friendship was a continual stimulus to him. But he lacked Rossetti's intensity and artistic genius. Fundamentally he was Scotch, and, in spite of the breadth of his sympathies, his best poetry is mystical and metaphysical rather than romantic. He is an artist of the German schools, never of the Italian.

His chief published designs are: 1. 'Chorea Sancti Viti; or Steps in the Journey of Prince Legion: twelve Designs by W. B. Scott,' London, 1851, 4to. 2. 'William Blake: Etchings from his Works by W. B. Scott, with descriptive text,' London, 1878, fol.

His very numerous writings may be classified under: I. Poetry.—1. 'Hades; or the Transit: and the Progress of the Mind. Two Poems by W. B. Scott,' London,' 12mo, 1838, with two illustrations. 2. 'The Year of the World: a Philosophical Poem on Redemption from the Fall, by William B. Scott,' Edinburgh, London, 18mo, 1846: this is Scott's only long poem; the preface explains that the five parts were written at different periods. 3. 'Poems by William Bell Scott, with three Illustrations,' London and Newcastle, 8vo, 1854. 4. 'Poems by William Bell Scott; Ballads, Studies from Nature, Sonnets, &c., illustrated by seventeen Etchings by the Author and L. Alma Tadema,' London, 8vo, 1875: this volume marks Scott's highest point of achievement in poetry; many of the sonnets have gained a place in anthologies. 5. 'A Poet's Harvest Home: being one hundred short Poems, by William Bell Scott,' London, 16mo, 1882; another edition, 'with an aftermath of twenty short poems,' London, 8vo, 1893.

II. Art.—1. 'Memoir of [his brother] David Scott, containing his Journal in Italy, Notes on Art, and other Papers,' Edinburgh, 1850, 8vo. 2. 'Antiquarian Gleanings in the North of England: being Examples of Antique Furniture, Plate, Church Decorations, &c. . . . drawn and etched' (with descriptions), London, 1851, 4to. 3. 'Half-hour Lectures on the History and Practice of the Fine and Ornamental Arts . . . with fifty Illustrations by the Author, engraved by W. J. Linton,' London, 1861, 8vo; these lectures were given to Scott's students at Newcastle; they were revised in 1867 and in 1874. 4. 'Albert Dürer: his Life and Works; including Autobiographical Papers and Complete Catalogues . . . with six Etchings by the Author and other Illustrations,' London,

1869, 8vo; a copy of this, with copious manuscript notes by the author, is in the British Museum Library. 5. 'Gems of French Art: a Series of Carbon-photographs from the Pictures of Eminent Modern Artists, with Remarks on the Works selected and an Essay on the French School,' London, 1871, 4to. 6–7. Similar works on modern Belgian and modern German art followed in 1872 and 1873. 8. 'The British School of Sculpture, illustrated by twenty Engravings from the Finest Works of Deceased Masters of the Art, and fifty Woodcuts: with a preliminary Essay and Notices of the Artists,' London, 1872, 8vo. 9. 'Our British Landscape Painters, from Samuel Scott to David Cox . . . with a Preliminary Essay and Biographical Notices,' London, 1872, 4to. 10. 'Murillo and the Spanish School of Painting: fifteen Engravings in Steel and nineteen on Wood; with an Account of the School and its Great Masters,' London, 1873. 11. 'The Little Masters (Albrecht Altdorfer, Hans Sebald Beham, &c.),' London, 1879, 8vo; this appeared in the 'Series of Illustrated Biographies of the Great Artists;' it was republished in 1880. 12. 'A Descriptive Catalogue of Engravings, brought together with a view to illustrate the Art of Engraving on Copper and Wood from the Florentine Niello Workers in the Fifteenth Century to that of William Blake,' privately printed, London, 1880, 4to.

Scott also edited a series of editions of the works of English poets, with more or less elaborate memoirs. The more important are: Keats's 'Poetical Works,' 1873, 8vo, four editions; L. E. Landon's 'Poetical Works,' 1873, 8vo, 2 edits.; Byron's 'Poetical Works,' 1874, 8vo, 4 edits.; Coleridge's 'Poetical Works' (illustrated), 1874, 8vo, 4 edits.; Shelley's 'Poetical Works,' 1874, 8vo, 2 edits.; Shakespeare's 'Works,' 1875, 8vo; Scott's 'Poetical Works,' 1877, 8vo, 4 edits.

[Memoir of David Scott and Autobiographical Notes, mentioned above; Obituary notices in the Academy, xxxviii. 529; Athenæum, 1890, p. 745; Times, 27 Nov. 1890; article by H. Buxton Forman in Celebrities of the Century, 1890; Miles's Poets and the Poetry of the Century (Frederick Tennyson to Clough), 1891.] R. B.

SCOTTOW, JOSHUA (1618–1693), colonist, seems to have come of a Suffolk family, and to have been born in England in 1618. He went out to Massachusetts with his widowed mother, Thomasina Scottow, about 1634. He was admitted a member of the 'old church' at Boston on 19 March 1639, and allotted building land at Muddy River, or Brookline, the same year; he also owned property at Scarborough (in Maine). He became a shipowner and merchant of repute in Boston. His name (usually with 'captain' prefixed) frequently occurs in connection with municipal matters. In 1665 he was summoned, along with the governor and company of Massachusetts, in respect of some injury done to the ship Oleron. He was a pillar of his church, and prominent in its meetings for prayer. Sewall records 'a brave shower of rain while Captain Scottow was praying after much drought.' He died on 20 Jan. 1693 (Sewall, *Diary*).

Scottow married about 1643, and apparently his wife and four children survived him. One of his daughters married Thomas Savage, from whom descended James Savage (1767–1845) [q. v.], the antiquary.

Scottow was the author of some rare pamphlets: 1. 'Old Men's Tears for their own Declensions mixed with fears of their and posterities further falling off from New England's Primitive Constitution. Published by some of Boston's old Planters and some other,' Boston, 1691; in this he directly attributes the losses of New England by disease and Indian raids to visitation for the sins of the public. 2. 'A Narrative of the Planting of the Massachusetts Colony, anno 1628, with the Lord's signal presence the first thirty years,' Boston, 1694; reprinted in 'Massachusetts Historical Records' (4th ser. iv. 279 sq.)

[Collections of Massachusetts Historical Society, especially 2nd ser. iv. 100, 4th ser. viii. 631, and note.] C. A. H.

SCOTUS or ERIGENA, JOHN (*fl.* 850), philosopher, was, as his first surname shows, of Irish origin; and the fact is expressly stated by Prudentius, bishop of Troyes ('De Prædestinatione contra Ioannem Scotum,' xiv., in Migne's *Patrol. Lat.* cxv. 1194 A). The supposition that he was a native of Scotland is altogether contrary to the usage of the word 'Scotus' at the time. To contemporaries he was always known as Joannes Scotus or 'Scotigena.' His alternative surname was used only as a literary pseudonym in the titles of his versions of Dionysius the Areopagite; and this, as it is found in the oldest manuscripts, was not Erigena, but Eriugena or Ierugena. That John formed it on the model of Grajugena has been inferred from the lines in which he celebrates his favourite author, St. Maximus:

Quisquis amat formam pulchrae laudare sophiae
Te legat assiduus, Maxime Grajugena.
(*Opp.* p. 1236.)

The first element in the name is doubtless derived from Érin (accus. *Érinn*): the alternative form suggests *ἱερός*, since Ireland was

ἡ ἱερὸς νῆσος or νῆσος τῶν ἱερῶν, and the omission of the aspirate occurs also in the translations of Dionysius (see Floss, procem., pp. xix, xx, and L. Traube, *Abhandl. der phil. Cl. der kgl. Bayer. Akad.* xix. 360, 1891). William of Malmesbury (*Epist. ad Petrum*) read the word as Heruligena, and traced John to Pannonia; while in modern times Bale made him a Briton born at St. David's, Dempster (*Hist. Eccles. Gent. Scot.* i. 42, ed. 1829) derived him from Ayr, and Thomas Gale ('Testimonia' prefixed to his edition of the books *de Divisione Naturæ*) from 'Eriuven' in the marches of Hereford. The combination of 'Ioannes Scotus Erigena' is perhaps not older than Ussher (*Veterum Epistolarum Hibernicarum Sylloge*, p. 57) and Gale; and Gale, who prints 'Joanne Erigena Scoto' at the head of the version of St. Maximus, is careful to avoid either combination in his text; nor is it found in Bale, Tanner, or Cave. At an earlier time, indeed, many writers believed John Scotus and John Erigena to be different persons, the former of whom, according to Trittheim ('De Script. Eccles.' in *Opp. Hist.* i. 252, ed. 1601), lived under Charles the Great, the latter under his grandson; while Dempster in 1627 made Erigena the earlier.

Of John's earlier life nothing historical is recorded. There is indeed a fable in Bale which tells how he travelled to Athens and studied Greek, Chaldee, and Arabic for many years, returning thence at last to Italy and Gaul; but Bale gives the clue by which to discover the real basis of his story, since he describes John as 'ex patricio genitore natus.' Now John, the son of Patricius, a Spaniard (see Fabricius, *Biblioth. Græc.* iii. 284, ed. Harles), was the translator of the 'Secreta Secretorum' currently attributed in the middle ages to Aristotle, and the facts above stated are a mere adaptation of the account which John the translator gives of his own wanderings. Anthony Wood (*Hist. and Antiq. of the Univ. of Oxford*, i. 39) carries back the identification of the two Johns to the authority of Roger Bacon, but simply because he used a copy of the 'Secreta Secretorum' which contained glosses by Bacon (MS. Corpus Christi Coll. Oxon. No. cxlix); the translator's narrative, however, naturally occurs not in Bacon's glosses, but in his own preface (see on the whole question Poole, *Illustr.* app. i.) The identification, with all that follows from it, is a modern invention.

Not less apocryphal is the story which makes John Scotus a disciple of Bede, and invited to Gaul by Charles the Great. Even Bale (ii. 24, p. 124) noticed the anachronism, though in another place (xiv. 32, pt. ii. pp. 202 seq.) he fell a victim to the confusion, attributing to the first John Scotus, whose existence is doubtful, works by the second, and referring to the former a statement which Simeon of Durham ('Hist. Reg.' § 9, in *Opp.* ii. 116, ed. Arnold) makes of the latter. The confusion reappears in many other writers (e.g. Possevinus, *Apparatus Sacer*, i. 939). A grosser variant of it, which made John Scotus one of the founders of the university of Paris, is older than Vincent of Beauvais, who cites it in his 'Speculum Historiale,' xxiii. 173, f. 308 (ed. Cologne, 1494). The story is, in fact, an enlargement of the legendary account which the monk of St. Gall ('Gesta Karoli Magni,' i. 1, in Pertz, *Mon. Germ. Hist.* ii. 731) gives of the 'merchants of wisdom' who came from Ireland, and were welcomed at the Frankish king's court, assisted by an interpolation in a rescript of Nicolas I (as given by Bulæus, *Hist. Univ. Paris.* i. 184), designed for the glorification of the antiquity of the university of Paris (Poole, p. 56 *n.* 3; Rashdall, *Universities of Europe in the Middle Ages*, i. 273 *n.* 2).

John Scotus, who was born, no doubt, in the first quarter of the ninth century, went abroad before 847, since Prudentius, who by that year was already bishop of Troyes (*Hist. lit. de la France*, v. 241), speaks (*De Prædest.* ch. i. p. 1012) of their former intimate friendship, which was clearly formed when both were attached to the palace of king Charles the Bald, afterwards emperor. That John was employed there as a teacher, though possibly not even a clergyman ('nullis ecclesiasticæ dignitatis gradibus insignitum,' says Prudentius, *ib.* ch. ii. p. 1043), appears from the tract written in the name of the church of Lyons, and attributed to Florus the deacon, 'adversus Joannis Scoti erroneas definitiones' (Migne, cxix. 103 A); John is here referred to as 'quasi scholasticus et eruditus' (compare the rhetorical preface to John's book 'De Prædestinatione,' Migne, cxxii. 355 A, and the 'Liber de tribus Epistolis,' xxxix, in Migne, cxxi. 1052 A, commonly ascribed to Remigius of Lyons, but more probably written by Ebo of Grenoble; see H. Schrörs, *Hinkmar Erzbischof von Rheims*, p. 128, *n.* 11, Freiburg, 1884).

It was as a man of learning that John was requested by Hincmar, archbishop of Rheims, and Pardulus, bishop of Laon—not, as Neander says (*Hist. of Christian Religion*, vi. 196, transl. Torrey 1852), by the king—to write a reply to the monk Gottschalk, whose exaggerated statement of the Augustinian doctrine of predestination had led to his

condemnation by the second synod of Mentz in 848, and again by the synod of Quierzy, a year later. John produced his tract 'De Prædestinatione' early in 851 (see SCHRÖRS, p. 115, *n.* 24, cf. p. 117, *n.* 30). Opening with the announcement that true philosophy and true religion are identical, he urged against Gottschalk's assertion of predestination to evil that such a doctrine was incompatible with the unity of God, since unity of essence implies unity of will, and that, as evil is merely the negation of good, it lies outside God's knowledge; otherwise he would be the cause of it, since what he knows he causes. Predestination can therefore only be spoken of in the sense that God permits his creatures to act according to their free will; the only limit to the possibility of evil-doing is set by the order of the world, within which the creature moves and which he cannot overpass. John's reasoning was not well adapted to its purpose. His friends were startled by the unusual nature of his exposition; and his contribution to the controversy only brought upon him indignant and contemptuous reproofs. His views were condemned by the synod of Valence in 855, where his arguments were described (can. vi., MANSI, *Concil. Collect. ampliss.* xv. 6) as 'ineptas quæstiunculas et aniles pene fabulas Scotorumque pultes' ('Scots' porridge'); and the condemnation was repeated at the synod of Langres in 859 (can. iii. MANSI, xv. 537 seq.) Whether before or after the composition of his tract on predestination, it is probable that John also engaged in the controversy touching the Holy Communion which agitated the Frankish domain in the second quarter of the ninth century. In 844 Paschasius Radbertus, the advocate of what became the accepted catholic doctrine, presented a revised edition of his book, 'De Sacramento Corporis et Sanguinis Christi,' to King Charles; and in the course of the following years the question which he raised was eagerly discussed. That John did contribute to the controversy has been argued from the fact that a treatise on the subject bearing his name was condemned by the council of Vercelli in 1050 (LANFRANC, *de Corpore et Sanguine Domini*, iv., MIGNE, cl. 413 seq.); but this treatise is generally believed to be the work of Ratramnus of Corbie. Still, the fact that a work very likely not John's was attributed to him is an indication that he was known to have taken part in the controversy against Paschasius; and the reference made to his teaching on the subject (HINCMAR, *de Prædest.* xxxi, MIGNE, cxxv. 296), as well as the title of Adrevald's book 'de Corpore et Sanguine Christi contra ineptias Joannis Scoti,' points in the same direction (cf. MABILLON, *Acta Sanctorum O.S.B.*, sec. iv. 2, præf. pp. xliv–xlviii, lxiv–lxvii; and C. VON NOORDEN, *Hinkmar Erzbischof von Rheims*, p. 103 *n.* 2, Bonn, 1863).

A further trace of John's activity at the court of Charles the Bald is furnished by his translations from the Greek. The growing fame of the abbey of St. Denys had added a new interest to the name of Dionysius the Areopagite; and when the writings falsely ascribed to him were presented by Michael the Stammerer to Lewis the Pious in 827 (HILDUIN, *Rescript. ad Imper. Ludov.*, iv.; MIGNE, cvi. 16), there was a natural desire to have the means of reading them. At length, by the command of Charles the Bald, John Scotus made a translation (under the name of Ioannes Ierugena) of the books 'De Cælesti Ierarchia,' 'de Ecclesiastica Ierarchia,' 'de Divinis Nominibus,' 'de Mystica Theologia,' and 'Epistolæ.' To the whole he subjoined a set of verses in which he extolled the glories of Greece by comparison with those of Rome (*Opp.* p. 1194). Whether owing to these verses, in the presence of an angry dispute between the pope and the patriarch of Constantinople, or to the Neo-Platonic complexion of the work itself, the orthodoxy of the book was doubted, and Nicolas I ordered that it should be sent to him for approval. The date of this letter, which is only preserved as a fragment in the 'Decretum' of Ivo of Chartres, iv. 104 (MIGNE, clxi. 289 seq.), is quite uncertain (JAFFÉ, *Registr. Pontif. Roman.* No. 2833, ed. 2), and it has been placed variously in 859 (CHRISTLIEB, p. 27), 861–2 (FLOSS, p. 1026), and 867 (MIGNE, cxix. 1119).

These are almost the only facts known to us on contemporary authority concerning John's life. The inference from a letter to Charles the Bald, written by Anastasius 'the librarian' (MIGNE, cxxix. 739 seq.), that he was already dead in 875, is not justified by its language (cf. CHRISTLIEB, pp. 52 seq.); indeed, some verses by the Scot enable us to guess that he was still in Francia in 877, the year of his protector's death (*Opp.* pp. 1235 seqq.; cf. HUBER, p. 120). It is not until the twelfth century that we obtain from the writings of William of Malmesbury a fuller notice of him. William describes in the 'Gesta Pontificum,' v. 240 (pp. 392 seq., ed. N. E. S. A. Hamilton), the honour in which the sage—a man little in person and of a merry wit—was held by Charles the Bald, and the intimacy with which they were associated, both in serious studies and in the familiar intercourse of daily life. In this

connection two stories of John's lighter mood are told. One is the famous answer to the king's 'Quid distat inter sottum et Scottum?'—'Mensa tantum,' in regard to which it is to be observed that the play upon 'Scot' and 'sot' was not, even in John's day, much less in William's, a new one. After this William gives an account of his works and his later life, which he repeats almost word for word in his letter to Peter (printed by GALE in *Testimonia*, ubi supra, and with a collation of a second manuscript by POOLE, pp. 317–20) and, more briefly, in his 'Gesta Regum,' ii. 122 (i. 131 seq., ed. Stubbs). This narrative has, however, been often suspected because it relates how John was invited by King Alfred to England, and what befel him there; and it has been generally believed that this account has arisen from a confusion with another John, spoken of by Asser, bishop of Sherborne, in his 'Life of Alfred.' Asser, in fact, makes two separate statements. In one he says that Alfred sent to Gaul to obtain teachers, and called over two men, Grimbald (who has been mixed up, to the discredit of this notice, with a very late story bringing in the schools at Oxford, which was interpolated by Archbishop Parker in his edition of Asser) and John, 'Johannem quoque æque presbyterum et monachum, acerrimi ingenii virum, et in omnibus disciplinis literatoriæ artis eruditissimum, et in multis aliis artibus artificiosum' ('De Rebus gestis Ælfridi' in *Monum. Hist. Britann.* i. 487 B). In the second passage Asser states that Alfred set over his newly founded monastery of Athelney 'Johannem presbyterum monachum, scilicet Ealdsaxonem genere' (p. 493 C), i.e. a continental Saxon by descent. The specification has the appearance of intending a distinction from the other John; and mediæval writers uniformly agreed, as is not at all unlikely, that the latter, the companion of Grimbald, was the same with John Scotus. Asser relates that John the Old Saxon was attacked in church by the servants of two Gaulish monks of his house, who wounded but did not slay him.

William of Malmesbury's account of John Scotus has some points of resemblance to this, but more of difference. He says that John quitted Francia because of the charge of erroneous doctrine brought against him. He came to King Alfred, by whom he was welcomed and established as a teacher at Malmesbury, but after some years he was assailed by the boys, whom he taught, with their styles, and so died. It never occurred to any one to identify the Old Saxon abbat of Athelney with the Irish teacher of Malmesbury—with the name John as the single point in common—until the late forger, who passed off his work as that of Ingulf, who was abbat of Croyland towards the end of the eleventh century ('Descr. Comp.' in *Rer. Angl. Script. post Bedam*, p. 870, Frankfurt, 1601); and the confusion has survived the exposure of the fraud. It is permissible to hold that William has handed down a genuine tradition of his monastery, though it would be extreme to accept all the details of what happened more than two centuries before his birth as strictly historical (see an examination of the whole question in POOLE, app. ii.) William adds that the body of the 'Sanctus sophista Johannes' lay for a time unburied in the church of St. Lawrence, but was afterwards translated to the greater church, where it was placed at the left hand of the altar, with an inscription which he records (*Gesta Pontif., Ep. ad Petr. Gest. Reg.* ll. cc.) Towards the end of the eleventh century, however, the tomb was removed by Abbot Warin, who destroyed also the monuments of previous abbats, and stowed away in a corner of St. Michael's Church (*Gest. Pontif.* v. 265, p. 421).

The verses upon the tomb declared John to be a martyr, and he has accordingly been identified with the Joannes Scotus who was commemorated on 14 Nov. But this Joannes Scotus was bishop of Mecklenberg, and suffered martydom on 10 Nov. (ADAM OF BREMEN, *Gesta Hammaburg. Eccl. Pontif.* iii. 50; cf. MABILLON, *Acta SS. O. S. B.*, sec. IV. ii. 513). After 1586, in consequence no doubt of this confusion, the name was omitted from the martyrologies (see POOLE, p. 327 and *n.* 48).

John Scotus's principal work, the five books 'περὶ φύσεων μερισμοῦ, i.e. de Divisione Naturæ,' written in the form of a dialogue, is of uncertain date, but plainly later than the tract 'de Prædestinatione' (851) and the translations from the pseudo-Dionysius. It presents the author's developed system, a system which has been taken for pantheism, but which is really a Neo-Platonic mysticism. John's leading principle is that of the unity of nature, proceeding from (1) God, the first and only real being; through (2) the creative ideas to (3) the sensible universe, which ultimately is resolved into (4) its first Cause. Within this circle the four 'divisions of nature' are comprehended. The supreme Nature is expounded by alternate affirmation and negation, 'the two principal parts of theology' (καταφατική and ἀποφατική); for that which may be asserted of God may also be denied of him, because he transcends human conceptions. By this means John

attempts to reconcile contradictions. The ideas are the primordial causes of things, the effects of which are manifested in time and place in a series of 'theophanies;' but the effects cannot be separated from the causes, and, in them, are eternal, though not eternal in the sense in which God is eternal, because the causes are derived from him: they are, however, cöeternal with the Word, though here again not absolutely cöeternal. Matter has no existence except as dependent on thought, and our thought (here the Scot anticipates, more plainly than St. Augustine, the famous argument of Descartes) is itself the proof of our being. The ideal world is wholly good, but as the creature passes from it into the world of matter, that which was one becomes manifold, and evil arises. But evil, being thus a mere accident of the material existence, will cease when man, losing again the distinction of sex, returns to the primal unity. Not less remarkable is John's statement of the relation of reason to authority. Reason is a theophany, the revelation of God to man; authority is one species of this revelation; it stands below reason, and needs it as its interpreter, for the Bible has many senses. If Scotus may here seem to anticipate the later dispute which accompanied the beginnings of the scholastic movement, still more evidently does this appear in his treatment of the scope and functions of logic. The universals, he maintained, were words; and although, in his view, there was a necessary correlation between words and thoughts, and therefore between words and things, still it was open to his successors to neglect this association, and to lay a stress on the primary connection between logic and grammar (see Prantl, ii. 24–37). Besides, the strict syllogistic method which John employed, and against which his opponents murmured, may well have had its influence upon later method. Yet it is hazardous to see in John Scotus the John who is mentioned in a chronicle known only from Bulæus's citation (*Hist. Univ. Paris.* ii. 443) as the founder of nominalism (cf. S. M. Deutsch, *Peter Abälard*, p. 100, *n.* 3, Leipzig, 1883). In some respects he may be accounted the herald of the movement of the eleventh century, but in more he is the last prophet of a philosophy belonging to earlier ages. When, in the first years of the thirteenth century, his books 'de Divisione Naturæ' won a passing popularity through the teaching of Amalric of Bène, their pantheistic tendency was at once detected, and the work suppressed by Honorius III in 1225 (see his mandate printed by Denifle, *Chartul. Univ. Paris.* i. 106 seq., Paris, 1889). It was not John's original writings, but his translations which exercised a notable influence on mediæval theology.

Besides the works already enumerated, John wrote a series of commentaries on Dionysius: 'Expositiones super ierarchiam cælestem,' 'Expositiones super ierarchiam ecclesiasticam' (a fragment), and 'Expositiones seu Glossæ in mysticam Theologiam;' 'Homilia in prologum S. Evangelii secundum Ioannem' and a commentary on the Gospel itself, of which only four fragments are preserved; 'Liber de egressu et regressu animæ ad Deum,' of which only a dozen sentences remain; and a number of poems, some only fragmentary, which are remarkable for their macaronic combination of Greek and Latin. These have been edited by L. Traube in the 'Poetæ Latini Ævi Carolini' (*Monum. Germ. hist.*) iii. 518–556 (1896) with a valuable introduction. John also translated the 'Ambigua' of St. Maximus, with a dedication to Charles the Bald. This was edited, together with the 'De Divisione Naturæ,' by T. Gale, Oxford, 1681. All John's known works and translations were collected by H. J. Floss in Migne's 'Patrologia Latina,' cxxii. (1853), whose edition represents the only attempt hitherto made (except for the poems) to construct a critical text. The editor's notes, however, on the 'Liber de Prædestinatione' serve rather for the edification of the Roman catholic reader than for the scientific elucidation of John's opinions (cf. Noorden, *Hinkmar*, p. 103, *n.* 2). Since Floss's book was published two more works claiming John's authorship have come to light. One is the brief life of Boethius, printed as 'Vita III' in R. Peiper's edition (Boetii *Philos. Consol.*, Leipzig, 1871), which is contained in a Laurentian manuscript, written in an Irish hand, of *c.* 1100 (described, with a facsimile, by G. Vitelli and C. Paoli, *Collezione Fiorentina di Facsimili paleografici*, plate 4, Florence, 1884), and is there expressly described as 'Verba Iohannis Scoti.' The other is a set of glosses on Martianus Capella, discovered by the late M. Hauréau (*Notices et Extraits des Manuscrits*, xx. pt. ii. 5–20, Paris, 1862).

[Bale's Script. Brit. Cat. ii. 24, p. 124; Ussher's Veterum Epistolarum Hibernicarum Sylloge (Dublin, 1632); Oudin's Comment. de Script. Eccl. Antiq. ii. 234–47 (Leipzig, 1722); Hist. Lit. de la France, v. 416–29 (Paris, 1740); Cave's Script. Eccles. Hist. Lit. ii. 45 seq. (1743); Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. pp. 263 seq. (1748); biographies of John Scotus by F. A. Staudenmaier (Frankfurt, 1834), T. Christlieb (Gotha, 1860), and J. Huber (Munich, 1861); and an anonymous 'Comment. de Vita et Præceptis

Joannis Scoti Erigenæ,' prefixed to Floss's edition and understood to be his composition; C. von Prantl's Gesch. der Logik im Abendlande, vol. ii. (Leipzig, 1861); Ebert's Allgemeine Geschichte der Literatur des Mittelalters im Abendlande, ii. 257–67 (Leipzig), 1880; Poole's Illustr. of the History of Mediæval Thought, ch. ii. and append. i. and ii. (1884); G. Buchwald's Der Logosbegriff des Johannes Scotus Erigena (Leipzig, 1884); Webb on the De Divisione Naturæ in Proc. of the Aristotelian Society, vol. ii. (1892).] R. L. P.

SCOTUS, MARIANUS (1028–1082?), Irish monk. [See MARIANUS.]

SCOTUS, MACARIUS (*d.* 1153), abbot of Würzburg. [See MACARIUS.]

SCOTUS, DUNS (1265?–1308), schoolman. [See DUNS, JOANNES SCOTUS.]

SCOUGAL, HENRY (1650–1678), Scottish divine, son of Patrick Scougal [q. v.], bishop of Aberdeen, was born, probably at Leuchars, Fifeshire, in June 1650, and was educated at King's College, Aberdeen, where he graduated M.A. in 1668. He was a distinguished student, and, after a precedent set in the case of George Gordon, first earl of Aberdeen [q.v.], being 'thought worthy to be a master where he had lately been a scholar,' he was immediately promoted to be 'regent' or professor. The discipline of his class seems to have suffered, but Scougal has the credit of being probably the first professor in Scotland to teach the Baconian philosophy. On the other hand, he carefully guarded his pupils against 'the debauched sentiments' of the 'Leviathan' of Hobbes. Ordained in 1672, Scougal was appointed minister of the parish of Auchterless, Aberdeenshire, and as such held the position of precentor in the cathedral of Aberdeen. In his country cure he showed no less independence than in his chair at Aberdeen. In a year's time he was recalled from his pastoral duties to Aberdeen, having been elected by the bishop and synod professor of divinity at King's College. Scougal belonged to the school of Archbishop Robert Leighton [q. v.], and made it his aim to impress his students with a sense of the holiness of the function to which they were destined, as well as to instruct them in theology. Like Leighton, he employed his summers in visiting the continent, and while passing through London on one such visit he was induced by Gilbert (afterwards bishop) Burnet [q. v.], then preacher at the rolls, to publish the only one of his works which was issued in his lifetime, 'The Life of God in the Soul of Man.' Scougal died of consumption at Aberdeen on 13 June 1678, aged 28, and was buried in the university chapel at King's College. He was unmarried.

Scougal is reckoned one of the saints of the Scottish church, and his 'Life of God in the Soul of Man' is one of the few productions of its clergy which have attained the rank of a religious classic. The first edition (London, 1677) was published with the author's consent, but without his name, by Gilbert Burnet, who supplied the preface, and probably also (though it is not enumerated in the list of Burnet's writings given by his son) a tract entitled 'An Account of the Beginnings and Advances of a Spiritual Life,' which was bound up with it. Six impressions of this edition appeared between 1677 and 1773, the fifth being under the auspices of the Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge. In 1726, a handsome edition, discarding Burnet's tract and preface, was issued by Patrick Cockburn [q. v.], a son of the author's cousin; in 1727 a French translation appeared at The Hague. In 1742 an edition was printed at Newcastle 'from plates made by William Ged [q. v.], goldsmith, in Edinburgh,' the inventor of stereotype printing. A cheap edition published at Edinburgh by Thomas and Walter Ruddiman, 'price 6*d.*, or 5*s.* a dozen for giving away,' has a warm commendatory preface, dated 1739, by Principal William Wishart of Edinburgh University. A beautiful edition was published at Glasgow by R. and A. Foulis in 1770. The latest edition appeared at Aberdeen in 1892.

In Scotland the work was held in high esteem, and although some of the more rigid presbyterians spoke of it bitterly as 'Arminian,' it has been as much valued by many presbyterians as by the episcopalians. Perhaps the most remarkable testimony to its influence is the fact that Whitefield (LECKY, *Hist. of England in the Eighteenth Century*, ii. 553) 'ascribed to it his first conviction of that doctrine of free salvation which he afterwards made it the great object of his life to teach.' Charles Wesley gave the book to Whitefield. Southey and Alexander Knox were among its special admirers, and Bishop John Jebb (1775–1833) [q. v.] included it in his 'Piety without Asceticism' (1831). In 1830 it was reissued in a series of 'Select Christian Authors,' published at Glasgow under the auspices of Dr. Thomas Chalmers [q. v.]

Besides some sermons (Glasgow, 1751), nine of which were prefixed to Cockburn's edition of the 'Life of God' (1726), Scougal's 'Reflections and Meditations' and 'Essays, Moral and Divine,' written while he was a student, were published at Aberdeen in 1740,

and reissued in collected editions of his works, 1765, 1773, and 1830. William Orem [q. v.], in his 'Old Aberdeen' (1791), has preserved the 'Morning and Evening Service' which Scougal prepared for use in Aberdeen Cathedral; the prayers are printed in Nichols's 'Bibliotheca Typographica,' in Peter Hall's 'Fragmenta Liturgica' (Bath, 1848), and in the Aberdeen edition of the 'Life of God,' 1892. Patrick Cockburn states that Scougal left behind him three tracts in Latin, 'A Short System of Ethics,' 'A Preservative against the Artifices of the Romish Missionaries,' and the beginning of a work on 'The Pastoral Care;' but these do not seem to have been printed, and the manuscripts are lost.

There is a fine portrait of Scougal in the senatus room at King's College, Aberdeen; a photogravure is prefixed to the latest edition (Aberdeen, 1892) of his 'Life of God.'

[Epitaph; Funeral Sermon by George Garden, D.D.; Life and Writings of the Author, prefixed to Aberdeen edition, 1892; Grub's Eccl. Hist. of Scotland; Hew Scott's Fasti, iii. 650].

J. C.

SCOUGAL or SCOUGALL, JOHN (1645?–1730?), portrait-painter, is supposed to have been born in Leith about the middle of the seventeenth century, and to have been cousin of Patrick Scougal [q. v.], bishop of Aberdeen. The signature 'Dd. Scougal' appears upon a portrait dated 1654 at Newbattle Abbey, but this artist's relationship to John Scougall is undetermined. In 1670 Scougall painted a portrait of Sir Archibald Primrose, lord Carrington [q. v.], lord justice clerk, which now belongs to the Earl of Rosebery; and at Penicuik House there are two portraits which, from an entry in an old 'Book of Accompts' preserved in the Charter-room there, were paid for in November 1675. The entry is 'To John Scougall for 2 pictures, 36*l.*' Scougall lived at Advocates' Close, Edinburgh, in a house one of the floors of which he fitted up as a picture gallery. In 1698 he made the copy of George Heriot's portrait which hangs in the hospital from an original by Van Somer, now lost, and in 1708 a minute of the Glasgow town council confirmed the provost's purchase of full-length portraits of William III and Queen Mary from 'Mr. Scowgall, Limner in Edinburgh.' Four years later another minute 'ordaines William Gow, the treasurer, to pay to John Scougall, elder, painter, fifteen pounds sterling money as the pryce of the picture of her majesty Queen Anne painted and furnished be him.' Sir Daniel Wilson states that Scougall died at Prestonpans about 1730, aged 85 (*Memorials of Old Edinburgh*).

The two bust portraits at Penicuik are perhaps the finest of the authenticated portraits by Scougall, and show the influence of Vandyck in handling and colour. A portrait of John Scougall by himself is in the Scottish National Gallery.

Many inferior examples, influenced in style by Lely, are attributed to Scougall, and it is usually thought that there were two painters of the name. All the information we possess about the second, usually spoken of as the 'younger Scougall,' seems to be derived from one source, an article (said to be by the painter, Sir George Chalmers [q. v.]) which appeared in the 'Weekly Magazine' on 16 Jan. 1772. The writer says 'the elder Scougal had a son George, whom he bred a painter. For some time after the revolution painters were few. The younger Scougal was the only one whose great run of business brought him into an incorrect stiff manner, void of expression. His carelessness occasioned many complaints by his employers; but he gave for answer that they might seek others, well knowing that there was none to be found at that time in Scotland.' Portraits at Riccarton House and elsewhere attributed to the younger Scougall are certainly inferior to those at Penicuik, but beyond this and the article referred to there is nothing to go by.

[Weekly Magazine, Edinburgh, 1772; Smith's Iconographia Scotica, 1798; Wilson's Memorials of Old Edinburgh; Gray's Notes on Newbattle and Penicuik; Redgrave's and Bryan's Dictionaries; Catalogues: Scottish National Gallery, Glasgow Corporation Gallery, R.S.A. Loan Exhibition, 1863, Scottish National Portraits, 1884.]

J. L. C.

SCOUGAL or SCOUGALL, PATRICK (1607?–1682), bishop of Aberdeen, son of Sir John Scougal of that ilk, in the county of Haddington, was born about 1607. He was educated at the university of Edinburgh, where he graduated in 1624. Ordained in 1636 by Archbishop Spotiswood [q. v.], he was presented by him to the parish of Dairsie in Fifeshire; the church there had been built by the primate as a model for imitation in Scotland. Scougal so far complied with the dominant covenanters that in 1641 he was appointed by parliament one of the commission for visiting the colleges of St. Andrews. He was presented by Charles I in 1644 to Leuchars in the same county. In 1648 he removed as superstitious the 'crosier staffes and glorious partition wall, dividing the bodie' or nave of the grand Norman church of that parish, 'fra the queir,' with 'divers

crosses about and beside them.' But if he accepted presbyterianism, he never ceased to be a royalist; and when Charles II came to Scotland as king in 1650, Scougal contributed 100*l.* towards levying a regiment of horse for his majesty's service. This may have helped, after the defeat at Dunbar, to hinder his settlement at Cupar, to which he was unanimously called; but in 1658 he was translated to Salton in Haddingtonshire. There, in his native county, he was surrounded by eminent men, who were much of his own way of thinking—Robert Leighton [q. v.] (afterwards archbishop) was at Newbattle; Lawrence Charteris [q. v.] at Yester; while Robert Douglas [q. v.] was minister of Pencaitland in the same presbytery. In 1661 Scougal was one of the commissioners appointed by the Scots parliament for 'trying the witches in Samuelston.' In October 1662 he signified his compliance with the restored episcopacy by accepting a presentation from Charles II to the parish which he held; in 1664 he was promoted to the bishopric of Aberdeen, and on 11 April was consecrated at St. Andrews by Archbishop Sharp and others. 'In him,' says Bishop Burnet (Preface to the *Life of Bishop Bedell*, 1685), 'the see of Aberdeen was as happy in this age as it was in his worthy predecessor, Forbes' [see FORBES, PATRICK, 1564–1635]. 'With a rare humility, tolerance, and contempt of the world, there was combined in him a wonderful strength of judgment, a dexterity in the conduct of affairs which he employed chiefly in the making up of differences,' 'and a discretion in his whole deportment.' The dissenters themselves seemed to esteem him no less than the conformists; he could, however, be severe enough on the quakers, who more than the covenanters opposed him in his diocese, and his treatment of Gordon, the parson of Banchory, was harsh. In both instances, and indeed throughout his episcopate, he was blamed for being too much under the influence of the primate, Sharp. One signal service, however, the church of Scotland owed him: his courageous opposition to the Test Act (1681). He thought of resigning his see on account of it; and to him chiefly it was due that the privy council allowed it to be taken in a mitigated form. He died on 16 Feb. 1682, in the seventy-fifth year of his age, and was buried in the south aisle of the nave of his cathedral, where his monument, bearing his effigy, is still preserved. Bishop Scougal married, on 6 Jan. 1660, Ann Congaltoun, who died in 1696; and had three sons—John, commissary of Aberdeen; James (afterwards elevated to the Scottish bench by the title of Lord Whitehill); and Henry [q. v.]—and two daughters: Catherina, who married Bishop Scrogie of Argyle; and Jane, the wife of Patrick Sibbald, one of the ministers of Aberdeen.

Portraits of the bishop are in the university of Aberdeen.

[Epitaph; Burnet; Keith's Cat. of Scottish Bishops; Grub's Eccles. Hist. of Scotland; Hew Scott's Fasti Eccl. iii. 886.] J. C.

SCOULER, JOHN (1804–1871), naturalist, the son of a calico-printer, was born in Glasgow on 31 Dec. 1804. He received the rudiments of his education at Kilbarchan, but was sent very early to the university of Glasgow. When his medical course there was completed, he went to Paris and studied at the Jardin des Plantes. On his return Dr. (afterwards Sir William Jackson) Hooker [q. v.] secured for him an appointment as surgeon and naturalist on board the Hudson's Bay Company's ship William and Mary. The vessel sailed from London on 25 July 1824 for the Columbia river, touching at Madeira, Rio, and the Galapagos. His companion on the voyage out and in many excursions at the several ports was the botanist, David Douglas [q. v.] His stay at the Columbia river appears to have lasted from April to September 1825 (*Edinb. Journ. Sci.* vols. v. vi.) Soon after his return to England Scouler shipped as surgeon on the Clyde, a merchant vessel that went to Calcutta, touching by the way at the Cape and Madras. On his return to Glasgow he settled down to practice (graduating M.D. in 1827), till he was appointed, 18 June 1829, 'professor of geology and natural history and mineralogy' in the Andersonian University (now part of the Glasgow and West of Scotland Technical College). In 1834 he was appointed professor of mineralogy, and subsequently of geology, zoology, and botany, to the royal Dublin Society, a post he held till his retirement on a pension in 1854, when he returned to Glasgow.

The state of his health in 1853 and 1854 induced him to visit Portugal; he also made a tour in Holland, and in later years visited Scandinavia. After his retirement he occasionally lectured, and he superintended the Andersonian Museum. He had been elected a fellow of the Linnean Society in 1829, and made LL.D. of Glasgow in 1850. He died at Glasgow on 13 Nov. 1871. He was buried at Kilbarchan.

Scouler was author of upwards of twenty papers on various natural history subjects and meteorology published between 1826 and 1852. He established, with two medical

colleagues, the 'Glasgow Medical Journal,' and in 1831 was one of the editors of Cheek's 'Edinburgh Journal of Natural and Geographical Science.' He contributed notes and an appendix to the fourth edition of Dr. King's 'Principles of Geology explained,' 8vo, Edinburgh, 1853. Scouleria, a genus of plants, and Scoulerite, a mineral, were named in his honour.

He bequeathed his books, which included many of great rarity, to Stirling's Library, Glasgow.

[Trans. Geol. Soc. Glasgow, iv. 194; information kindly supplied by Mr. J. Young, secretary Glasgow and West Scotland Technical College, by W. I. Addison of the Glasgow University, by A. H. Foord, assistant secretary Royal Dublin Society, and by the librarian, Stirling's Library; Roy. Soc. Cat.; Brit. Mus. Cat.]

B. B. W.

SCOVELL, Sir GEORGE (1774–1861), general, was born 21 March 1774. He was commissioned as cornet and adjutant in the 4th queen's own dragoons on 5 April 1798, became lieutenant on 4 May 1800, and captain on 10 March 1804. He exchanged to the 57th foot on 12 March 1807. He went to the Peninsula in the following year, and was employed in the quartermaster-general's department throughout the war. He was present at Coruña, the passage of the Douro, Talavera, Busaco, Fuentes d'Onoro, Ciudad Rodrigo, Badajoz, Salamanca, Burgos, Vittoria, the Pyrenees, Nivelle, Nive, the passage of the Adour, and Toulouse. He commanded the corps of guides and had charge of the postal service and the communications of the army till 1813, when he was appointed (on 15 June) to the command of the staff corps of cavalry. He had been made brevet-major on 30 May 1811, and lieutenant-colonel on 17 Aug. 1812, having been mentioned in Wellington's Salamanca despatch. At the end of the war he received the cross with one clasp, and on 2 Jan. 1815 was made K.C.B.

He was again employed in the Waterloo campaign as assistant quartermaster-general, and in command of the staff corps of cavalry; and during the subsequent occupation of France he was charged on different occasions with the duty of preventing collisions between the troops and the people. He received the medal for Waterloo and the Russian order of St. Wladimir (fourth class). On 25 Dec. 1818 he was placed on half pay, and on 23 March 1820 he was appointed to the command of the royal wagon train. He became colonel in the army on 27 May 1825, major-general on 10 Jan. 1837, lieutenant-general on 9 Nov. 1846, and general on 20 June 1854. He was lieutenant-governor of the Royal Military College, Sandhurst, from 25 April 1829 to 2 Feb. 1837, and governor from the latter date to 31 March 1856. He was given the colonelcy of his old regiment, the 4th dragoons, on 18 Dec. 1847, and received the G.C.B. on 18 May 1860. He died at Henley Park, Guildford, Surrey, on 17 Jan. 1861. There is a marble tablet to his memory in the church of the Royal Military College, and a portrait, painted in 1837, in the officers' room there.

[Gent. Mag. 1861, i. 349; R. M. Calendar, iv. 430; Wellington Despatches, Suppl. vols. vii.–xiv.]

E. M. L.

SCRATCHLEY, Sir PETER HENRY (1835–1885), major-general royal engineers, special high commissioner in New Guinea, youngest of thirteen children of Dr. James Scratchley of the royal artillery, and of his wife Maria, daughter of Colonel Roberts, commanding the troops in Ceylon, was born in Paris on 24 Aug. 1835. He was privately educated in Paris, and, after passing through the Royal Military Academy at Woolwich, obtained a commission as second lieutenant in the royal engineers on 11 April 1854, and was promoted to be first lieutenant on 20 June of the same year.

After studying at Chatham, Scratchley was sent to Dover, whence, on 24 July 1855, he proceeded to the Crimea and did duty with a company of sappers and miners in the trenches before Sebastopol. He was present at the fall of Sebastopol, and took part in the expedition to and in the capture of Kinburn on the Black Sea. For his services he received the Crimean war medal, with a clasp for Sebastopol, and the Turkish war medal.

On his return to England in July 1856 Scratchley was stationed successively at Aldershot and Portsmouth. In October 1857 he joined in India the force of Major-general Sir Charles Ashe Windham [q. v.] at Cawnpore, and was appointed adjutant of royal engineers. He was present throughout the operations around the city against Tantia Topi from 24 to 30 Nov. 1857, and on 6 Dec. took part in the battle of Cawnpore, won by Sir Colin Campbell over the rebel Gwaliar force. He commanded the 4th company royal engineers in the subsequent operations of the commander-in-chief's army. On 18 Dec. he accompanied the column under Brigadier-general Walpole by Akbarpur to Itawa, where he was employed on 29 Dec. in blowing up the post held by the rebels. He then accompanied the column to Manipuri. On 3 Jan. 1858 this column joined that of

Brigadier-general Seaton at Bewar, and on the 4th the combined columns under Walpole entered Fathgarh, taken on the previous day by Sir Colin Campbell. From 5 to 14 Jan. Scratchley was employed, with five officers and one hundred men under him, in blowing up the nawab's fort at Farakabad. Scratchley was attached to a company of royal engineers during the operation before the final siege of Lucknow, and at the siege he was orderly officer to Brigadier-general Robert Cornelis Napier (afterwards Lord Napier of Magdala) [q. v.], who was chief engineer. He was in the storming party under Adrian Hope which carried the Begam's palace on 10 March, and was in personal attendance on Napier in the most exposed positions until the final capture of the city on 21 March 1858.

Scratchley was appointed adjutant of the engineer brigade of the army corps under Sir Hope Grant during the operations in Oudh. He marched from Lucknow on 11 April 1858, and took part in the action at Bari on the 13th. On following up the enemy to Bitaoli it was found that the Begam and his army had already evacuated it, and the force then marched southward to protect the road between Lucknow and Cawnpore, then threatened at Onao. Scratchley reached Jalalabad fort, near Lucknow, on 16 May, and remained there for some time. On 13 June he was at the action of Nawabganj. On 22 July he accompanied a force under Hope Grant, which relieved Man Singh at Shahganj, and marched thence to Faizabad, Ajudhia, and Sultanpur, where the rebels were repulsed on 28 Aug. 1858. Operations were then suspended until after the rainy season.

In October 1858 Scratchley commanded the engineers of the column under Brigadier-general Wetherall, and, marching from Sariam, took part in the attack on and capture, on 5 Nov., of Rampur-Kussia; in the attack on Shankarpur and its capture on the 9th; in the passage of the Ghaghra on 27 Nov.; and in the action of Machligaon on 4 Dec. Marching by the fort of Banhassia and by Gonda, he arrived at Balrampur on 16 Dec.; thence he accompanied the column in pursuit of Bala Rao, brother of Nana Sahib, to Kandakot, where, on 4 Jan. 1859, the rebels were driven across the border into Nipal, with the loss of all their guns, and Oudh was practically cleared of rebels. Scratchley was mentioned in despatches by Major-general Windham, Brigadier-general Wetherall, and Sir Colin Campbell. He received the Indian war medal, with clasp for Lucknow.

On 1 Oct. 1859 Scratchley was promoted to be second captain. On the appointment of Napier to a command in the China expedition Scratchley was chosen as his aide-de-camp; but in April 1860 he was ordered instead to take command of a detachment of royal engineers proceeding to Melbourne for employment on defence works. He arrived at Melbourne in August, and was employed under the Victorian government to design the works and to superintend their construction. He also filled the appointment of colonial engineer and military storekeeper. He threw himself with enthusiasm into the volunteer movement in the colonies, was one of the founders of and became honorary lieutenant-colonel of the Victorian artillery and engineers' volunteers. In September 1863, the colonial legislature having failed to provide funds for the defence works, Scratchley resigned his appointment. He received the thanks of the government of Victoria for his services in the colony.

Scratchley arrived in England at the end of 1863. On 15 March 1864 he was promoted to be brevet major for his war services. He was stationed at Portsmouth until October 1864, when he was appointed to the war office as assistant inspector of works for the manufacturing departments of the army, and later he became inspector of works.

Scratchley was promoted to be first captain in the royal engineers on 20 Dec. 1866, regimental major on 5 July 1872, and brevet lieutenant-colonel on 20 Feb. 1874. In 1877 he was selected by Lord Carnarvon, secretary of state for the colonies, to accompany Lieutenant-general Sir William Jervois (then governor of the Straits Settlements, and, in July 1877, appointed governor of South Australia) on a mission to the Australian colonies to advise as to their defences. Scratchley left England on 8 March 1877, and arrived in Sydney with Sir William Jervois on 30 April. In accordance with their able and elaborate report, the defence works of Sydney harbour, Port Phillip, Adelaide, and Brisbane have been mainly constructed. He was promoted to be regimental lieutenant-colonel on 1 Oct. 1877, and was thenceforth engaged by the governments of the different Australian colonies as their consulting military engineer and adviser. The fort, designed by him and executed under his orders, which protects the harbour of Newcastle was named after him by the New South Wales government to commemorate his services. He also designed and constructed, among other works, the fort on Bare Island, Botany Bay, the

iron-casemated fort under George's Head, the alteration of the harbour batteries of Sydney and the battery for 25-ton guns at Middle Head, important portions of the Port Phillip defences. The works which protect Hobart were improved by him; Adelaide and Brisbane also received his attention.

Scratchley was promoted to be brevet colonel on 20 Feb. 1879. He was made a companion of St. Michael and St. George on 24 May of the same year for his services in Australia. In 1881 Scratchley was appointed vice-president of a commission in New South Wales to report on the military defences of the colony. He retired from active military employment on 1 Oct. 1882, with the honorary rank of major-general, but continued in his employment under the colonial office. In April 1883 he returned to England to consult the war office as to the general plan of defences for the colonies of Australasia, and as to the manufacture of heavy ordnance and details of fortifications.

In the autumn of 1884 the imperial government, having repudiated the action of the Queensland government in annexing the whole of New Guinea, decided to declare a protectorate over south-east New Guinea, and on 22 Nov. Scratchley was gazetted her Majesty's special high commissioner for this territory. He arrived at Melbourne on 5 Jan. 1885. The colonies were angry with the home government for the delay in dealing with New Guinea, by which portions of it had fallen to other powers. This irritation was not lessened by having to find 15,000*l.* a year among them for the maintenance of the government of the new protectorate. Scratchley's first duty was the delicate one of visiting each colony to arrange the quota of contribution. On 6 June 1885 he was made a K.C.M.G. On 15 Aug. he left Sydney to visit his government, arriving on 28 Aug. by the specially fitted-out steamer Governor Blackall at Port Moresby in New Guinea. Here he established his seat of government. The difficulties were considerable, provision having to be made for the protection of the isolated white people as well as for the control of the enormous and suspicious native population. In September he made an expedition up the Aroa river, and later, accompanied by H.M.S. Diamond and two other men-of-war, made a coasting voyage, in order to investigate the circumstances of several murders of white men. He died at sea just after leaving Cooktown for Townville, on 2 Dec. 1885. He was buried in St. Kilda's cemetery, Melbourne, with public honours.

A likeness, enlarged from the last photograph taken of Scratchley, hangs in Government House, Sydney. A book entitled 'Australian Defences and New Guinea' embodies Scratchley's views on colonial defence. It was compiled from his diaries and notes by Mr. Kinloch Cooke.

Scratchley married, at Melbourne, Victoria, on 13 Nov. 1862, Laura Lilias, daughter of Sylvester John Browne of co. Galway, by whom he had two daughters, Violet and Valerie, and a son Victor; they, with their mother, survived him.

Scratchley contributed three papers to the 'Professional Papers of the Corps of Royal Engineers:' one of them was a 'Report on the Demolition of the Nawab's Fort, Furruckabad,' 1858 (new ser. vol. viii.); another consisted of 'Notes on the Fort and Entrenchments of Kussia Rampoor in Oudh' (*ib.*)

[Royal Engineers Records; Despatches; War Office Records; obituary notices in Royal Engineers' Journal, vol. xvi. 1886; Annual Register, 1885; Melbourne Argus and Sydney Morning Herald, December 1885; Times, 4 Dec. 1885; Kaye's Sepoy War; Malleson's Indian Mutiny; private papers.] R. H. V.

SCRIBA or THE SCRIBE, ROBERT (*fl.* 1170), theological writer. [See ROBERT OF BRIDLINGTON.]

SCRIMGER, HENRY (1506–1572), professor of civil law in Geneva. [See SCRYMGEOUR.]

SCRIMGEOUR, SIR JAMES (1550?–1612), constable of Dundee. [See SCRYMGEOUR.]

SCRIVEN, EDWARD (1775–1841), engraver, was born, according to his own account, at Alcester, Warwickshire, in 1775, but his name does not appear in the parish register of that place. He was a pupil of Robert Thew [q. v.], and became eminent as an engraver, chiefly of portraits, in the stipple and chalk manner. He worked mainly for the publishers of expensively illustrated books and serials, such as the 'British Gallery of Portraits,' 1809–17; 'Ancient Marbles in the British Museum,' 1814, &c.; Tresham and Ottley's 'British Gallery,' 1818; Lodge's 'Portraits of Illustrious Persons,' 1821–34; Dibdin's 'Ædes Althorpianæ,' 1822; Jerdan's 'National Portrait Gallery,' 1830–4; and Mrs. Jameson's 'Beauties of the Court of Charles II,' 1833. His few detached plates include 'Telemachus and Mentor discovered by Calypso,' after R. Westall, 1810; portrait of Rev. Richard Broomhead, after J. Allen, 1318; portrait of Thomas, lord Clifford of Chudleigh, after S. Cooper, 1819; 'Miranda,' after W. Hilton, 1828; and portrait of Dr.

E. D. Clarke, after J. Opie, 1828. He also engraved a set of imitations of West's studies of heads for his picture of 'Christ Rejected.' Scriven worked with much taste and skill and extreme industry. He was a man of great active benevolence among the members of his own profession, and a zealous supporter of the Artists' Annuity Fund, in the establishment of which, in 1810, he took a leading part. He died on 23 Aug. 1841, leaving a widow and five children, and was buried in Kensal Green cemetery, where a stone was erected to his memory by the members of the Artists' Fund. A portrait of Scriven, painted by A. Morton, was engraved by B. P. Gibbon as an illustration to Pye's 'Patronage of British Art.'

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Pye's Patronage of British Art, 1845; information from the rector of Alcester.] F. M. O'D.

SCRIVENER, FREDERICK HENRY AMBROSE (1813–1891), biblical scholar, son of Ambrose Scrivener (1790–1853), a stationer, by his wife Harriet Shoel (1791–1844), was born at Bermondsey, London, on 29 Sept. 1813. He was educated at St. Olave's school, Southwark, from 10 July 1820 to 1831, when he was admitted (4 July) at Trinity College, Cambridge. He was elected scholar on 3 April 1834, and graduated B.A. as a junior optime in 1835, M.A. in 1838. In 1835 he became an assistant master at Sherborne. From 1838 to 1845 he was curate of Sandford Orcas, Somerset, and from 1846 to 1856 headmaster of Falmouth school, holding also the perpetual curacy of Penwerris, which he retained till 1861. He was presented to the rectory of St. Gerrans, Cornwall, in 1862, and in 1874 became prebendary of Exeter. In 1876 he received the vicarage of Hendon, Middlesex. On 3 Jan. 1872 he was granted a civil list pension of 100*l.* 'in recognition of his services in connection with biblical criticism and in aid of the publication of his works.' He was created LL.D. of St. Andrews in the same year, and D.C.L. of Oxford in 1876. He took an important part in the revision of the English version of the New Testament (1870–1882). He died at Hendon, Middlesex, on 30 Oct. 1891, having married, on 21 July 1840, Anne (*d.* 1877), daughter of George and Sarah Blofeld.

Scrivener devoted his life to a study of the text of the New Testament. His first important publication was a collation of about twenty manuscripts of the Gospels hitherto unexamined. This appeared in 1853, and was followed in 1858 by an edition of the Greek Testament. His transcript of the 'Codex Augiensis' and contributions to New Testament criticism were published in 1859; 'Collations of the Sinaiticus and Cod. Bezæ' in 1864; the 'Cod. Ceaddæ Latinus' in 1887. The 'Adversaria Critica Sacra' were published after his death. His 'Plain Introduction to the Criticism of the New Testament,' of which the first edition appeared in 1861, remains a standard work. The number of manuscripts recorded was 'about 1170.' In the second edition, published in 1874, the number reached 'about 1277.' In the third, 1883, it was raised to about 1,430, besides a record of a large number contributed by Dean Burgon. After becoming vicar of Hendon, Scrivener found much difficulty in keeping pace with the advance of criticism, and the strain of preparing the third edition of 1883 was followed next year by a paralytic stroke. Nevertheless he continued to prepare a fourth edition, which was completed by the Rev. E. Miller after the author's death. The last edition records over three thousand manuscripts. Scrivener also published 'A Supplement to the Authorised English Version of the New Testament,' 1845 (Pickering); 'The Cambridge Paragraph Bible of the Authorised English Version,' 3 vols. 1870–3; and 'Six Lectures on the Text of the New Testament,' 1874.

Scrivener held firmly to the traditional text of the New Testament, declining to accept the theories of modern critics as to the comparative lateness of the *textus receptus*. His arguments have not found general support as against those of Westcott and Hort.

[Scrivener's Works; Times, 3 Nov. 1891; Athenæum, 31 Oct. 1891, p. 586; S. P. Tregelles's Codex Zacynthius, 1861, pp. xix, xxiii; Eadie's English Bible, 1876, ii. 205, 310; Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub. and Supplement; Foster's Alumni Oxon. (1715–1886); Classical Review, June 1896; Annual Register, October 1891, p. 196.] E. C. M.

SCRIVENER, MATTHEW (*fl.* 1660), divine, was probably descended of the family of Scrivener of Sibtoft (METCALFE, *Visitation of Suffolk*, p. 163), and was educated at Catharine Hall, Cambridge, being a contemporary there with Henry Hickman [q. v.] before 1647 (WOOD, *Athenæ Oxon.* iv. 370). He became vicar of Haslingfield in Cambridge, and died shortly before 1688. He wrote: 1. 'Apologia pro S. Ecclesiæ Patribus adversus Joannem Dalleum de Usu Patrum; accedit Apologia pro Ecclesia Anglicana adversus nuperum Schisma,' 1672, 4to, replied to by Hickman in 'The Nonconformists' Vindication,' 1679. 2. 'A Course of Divinity, or an Introduction to the Knowledge of the true Catholic Religion, especially as pro-

fessed by the Church of England,' 1674, fol. 3. 'A Treatise against Drunkennesse described in its Nature, Kindes, Effectes, and Causes, especially that of drinking healths, to which are added two short Sermons of St. Augustine,' London, 1685. 4. 'The Method and Means to a true Spiritual Life, consisting of three parts agreeable to the ancient way' (posthumous), 1688, 8vo.

[Authorities as in text; Scrivener's Works.]

W. A. S.

SCROGGS, SIR WILLIAM (1623?–1683), lord chief justice, was born at Deddington in Oxfordshire about 1623. The status of his parents is somewhat doubtful, but his father, who is described as William Scroggs of Deddington 'pleb.' (FOSTER, *Alum. Oxon.* 1500–1714, iv. 1326), was probably a retired butcher of considerable means. Dugdale told Wood that Scroggs 'was the son of an one-ey'd butcher near Smithfield Bars, and his mother a big fat woman with a red face like an ale-wife' (*Athenæ Oxon.* 1820, iv. 119). North and Luttrell also state that he was a butcher's son (*Lives of the Norths*, 1890, i. 196; *A Brief Relation of State Affairs*, 1857, i. 74), and the squibs with which he was assailed in after life constantly alluded to his father's business as that of a butcher.

At the age of sixteen young Scroggs matriculated at Oxford from Oriel College on 17 May 1639. He subsequently removed to Pembroke, where he became 'master of a good Latin stile, and a considerable disputant' (WOOD, *Athenæ Oxon.* iv. 115). He graduated B.A. on 23 Jan. 1640, and M.A. on 26 June 1643. Wood says that Scroggs was intended for the church, and that his father had 'procured for him the reversion of a good parsonage,' but that having fought for the king as 'a captain of a foot company, he was thereby disingaged from enjoying it' (*ib.* iv. 116). It is clear, however, that Scroggs had chosen the profession of the law before the civil war broke out, as he was admitted a member of Gray's Inn on 22 Feb. 1641. In the entry of his admission he is described as 'William Scroggs of Stifford, Essex, gent.' (FOSTER, *Register of Admissions to Gray's Inn*, 1889, p. 229). He was called to the bar on 27 June 1653, and his name appears for the first time in the 'Reports' as counsel for the defendant in Campion's case, which came before the upper bench in Trinity term, 1658 (SIDERFIN, ii. 97). According to North, 'his person was large, visage comely, and speech witty and bold. He was a great voluptuary and companion of the high court rakes. . . . His debaucheries were egregious, and his life loose, which made the lord chief justice Hales detest him' (NORTH, *Lives*, i. 196). He was knighted by Charles II not long after the Restoration, but, greatly to Dugdale's annoyance, refused to pay the fees which were due to the college of arms (WOOD, *Athenæ Oxon.* iv. 119). The exact date of his knighthood is not known. He is, however, designated by his title in a petition which he presented to the king in April 1665, alleging that he had been suspended from his place as 'one of the city of London's council,' on account of his inability to walk before the lord mayor on certain days of solemnity owing to the wounds which he had sustained in the cause of the late king (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1664–5, p. 310). In January 1667 he appears to have impressed Pepys by his arguments in the House of Lords in the Duke of Buckingham's claim to the barony of De Ros (*Diary and Correspondence*, 1848–9, iii. 380). In April 1668 he was assigned as counsel for Sir William Penn, but the impeachment was not proceeded with (COBBETT, *State Trials*, vi. 876).

On 23 June 1669 Scroggs was elected a bencher of Gray's Inn. He took the degree of the coif in October 1669, and on 2 Nov. following he was made a king's serjeant (SIDERFIN, i. 435; WYNNE, *Miscellany*, 1765, p. 297). On one occasion after he had become a serjeant, Scroggs was arrested on a king's bench warrant for assault and battery. Scroggs pleaded the privilege of his order, but Hale and the other justices of the king's bench decided against him. It would seem, however, that upon appeal to the exchequer chamber North gave his opinion that serjeants had a privilege to be sued in the court of common pleas only (NORTH, *Lives*, i. 90; LEVINZ, ii. 129; KEBLE, iii. 424; FREEMAN, i. 389; *Modern Reports*, ii. 296).

Through the influence of the Earl of Danby, Scroggs was appointed a justice of the court of common pleas, in the place of Sir William Ellis. He took his seat on the bench on 23 Oct. 1676, and 'made so excellent a speech that my lord Northampton, then present, went from Westminster to Whitehall immediately, told the king he had, since his happy restoration, caused many hundred sermons to be printed, all which together taught not the people half so much loyalty; therefore as a sermon desired his command to have it printed and published in all the market towns in England' (*Correspondence of Henry Hyde, Earl of Clarendon*, &c., 1828, i. 2). On the removal of Sir Thomas Rainsford, Scroggs was rewarded for his subserviency to the court by his appointment as lord chief justice of Eng-

land. He took his seat in the court of king's bench for the first time on 18 June 1678 (*Hatton Correspondence*, Camden Soc. Publ. new ser. xxii. 162). He was summoned to the assistance of the House of Commons on 24 Oct., while Oates was detailing his lying narrative of the 'popish plot.' In reply to the speaker Scroggs said that he would use his best endeavours, 'for he feared the face of noe man where his king and countrie were concerned,' and, withdrawing into the speaker's chamber, 'he tooke informations upon oath, and sent out his warrants' (*Autobiography of Sir John Bramston*, Camden Soc. p. 179; see also *Journals of the House of Commons*, ix. 521; *Journals of the House of Lords*, xiii. 301).

The first victim of the 'popish plot' was William Stayley, who was tried in the king's bench by Scroggs for treasonable words against the king on 21 Nov. Scroggs repeatedly put questions to the prisoner in order to intimidate and confuse him, and, when the verdict of guilty was pronounced, brutally exclaimed, 'Now you may die a Roman catholic, and when you come to die, I doubt you will be found a priest too' (Cobbett, *State Trials*, vi. 1501–12). Edward Coleman, the next victim, was tried before Scroggs in the king's bench, for high treason, on 27 Nov. Oates and Bedloe were the chief witnesses against the prisoner, and Scroggs in his summing up had the indecency to declare that 'no man of understanding but for by-ends would have left his religion to be a papist' (*ib.* vii. 1–78). At the trial of William Ireland, Thomas Pickering, and John Grove, for high treason, at the Old Bailey on 17 Dec., though it was clear that the testimony of Oates and his associates was perjured, Scroggs insisted that 'it is most plain the plot is discovered, and that by these men; and that it is a plot and a villainous one nothing is plainer.' In summing up the evidence Scroggs said: 'This is a religion that quite unhinges all piety, all morality. . . They eat their God, they kill their king, and saint the murderer.' When the three prisoners were found guilty, Scroggs, turning to the jury, said: 'You have done, gentlemen, like very good subjects and very good Christians—that is to say, like very good protestants—and now much good may their thirty thousand masses do them' (*ib.* vii. 79–144). On 10 Feb. 1679 Scroggs presided at the trial of Robert Green, Henry Berry, and Laurence Hill, in the king's bench, for the murder of Sir Edmund Berry Godfrey. He made a violent harangue against popery, declared his implicit belief in Prance's story, and expressed his 'great satisfaction that you are, every one of you, guilty' (*ib.* vii. 159–230). On the following day Samuel Atkins, a servant of Samuel Pepys, was tried before Scroggs in the king's bench as an accessory before the fact of Godfrey's murder. Atkins, however, established an alibi to the satisfaction of Scroggs, who declared that the prisoner appeared 'to be a very innocent man in this matter' (*ib.* vii. 231–50). The next victims of the 'popish plot' were five jesuit priests—Thomas Whitebread, William Harcourt, John Fenwick, John Gavan, and Anthony Turner. They were tried for high treason before Scroggs at the Old Bailey on 13 June. Fenwick and Whitebread had been previously tried for high treason, along with Ireland, Pickering, and Grove, but Scroggs had discharged the jury of them, as there was only one witness against them. Though Whitebread urged that no man could be put in jeopardy of his life the second time for the same cause, the objection was overruled by the court. In his summing up Scroggs declared that Dugdale's evidence gave him 'the greatest satisfaction of anything in the world in this matter,' and, turning to the prisoners, exclaimed, 'Let any man judge by your principles and practices what you will not do for the promoting of the same' (*ib.* vii. 311–418). On the following day he presided at the trial of Richard Langhorne at the Old Bailey for high treason. Though Langhorne produced several witnesses to disprove the evidence of Oates, Scroggs felt bound by his conscience to remind the jury that 'the profession, the doctrines, and the discipline of the church of Rome is such that it does take away a great part of the faith that should be given to these witnesses.' The jury found Langhorne guilty, and he was sentenced to death with the five jesuits who had been tried on the previous day (*ib.* vii. 417–90).

On 18 July Sir George Wakeman, William Marshal, William Rumley, and James Corker were tried at the Old Bailey before Scroggs for high treason. On this occasion Scroggs disparaged the testimony of Oates and Bedloe, and implored the jury 'not to be so amazed and frightened with the noise of plots as to take away any man's life without any reasonable evidence.' Bedloe had the impudence to complain that his evidence was 'not right summed up' by Scroggs, but the jury, taking their cue from the chief justice, brought in a verdict of not guilty (*ib.* vii. 591–688). By this sudden change of front Scroggs at once lost all the popularity which he had gained by his brutal zeal for the protestant cause. Oates and Bedloe were furious, and he was assailed on every side by broad-

sides and libels, in which he was commonly designated by the nickname of 'Mouth.' The popular opinion was that Scroggs had been bribed by Portuguese gold (LUTTRELL, i. 17–18; *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. pp. 474, 495, 12th Rep. App. vii. 160). This he solemnly denied, but the worth of his denial is questionable. Wood says that Scroggs mitigated 'his zeal when he saw the popish plot to be made a shooing-horn to draw on others' (*Athenæ Oxon.* iv. 116). One of his reasons for changing sides in this case was doubtless the implication of the queen in the charge brought against her physician, Wakeman; another, the discovery that Shaftesbury had not 'really so great power with the king as he was thought to have' (NORTH, *Lives*, i. 196). At the Hereford assizes Scroggs tried Charles Kerne for high treason as a popish priest; the evidence, however, was insufficient, and the prisoner was acquitted (COBBETT, *State Trials*, vii. 707–16). Andrew Bromwich and William Atkins, who were tried before Scroggs at the Stafford assizes, were not so fortunate, and both were condemned to death. To Bromwich Scroggs playfully said: 'Come, jesuit, with your learning, you shall not think to baffle us; I have of late had occasion to converse with your most learned priests, and never yet saw one that had either learning or honesty.' To the jury in the same case he significantly pointed out that they 'had better be rid of one priest than three felons' (*ib.* vii. 715–26, 725–39). After the assizes were over Scroggs visited Windsor, where he was received with great favour by the king, who 'tooke notice to him how ill the people had used him in his absence. "But," said he, "they have used me worse, and I am resolv'd we stand and fall together"' (*Hatton Correspondence*, i. 192).

On the first day of term (23 Oct. 1679) Scroggs in the court of king's bench made an exceedingly able speech in vindication of his own conduct. He declared that he had followed his conscience according to the best of his understanding in Wakeman's trial, 'without fear, favour, or reward; without the gift of one shilling, or the value of it, directly or indirectly, and without any promise or expectation whatever' (COBBETT, *State Trials*, vii. 701–6). On 25 Nov. Scroggs presided at the trial of Thomas Knox and John Lane, who were convicted of a conspiracy to defame Oates and Bedloe, but he declined to sum up the evidence, as the case was too clear (*ib.* vii. 763–812). In the following month Scroggs unexpectedly met Shaftesbury at the lord mayor's dinner-table, and, to the confusion of the exclusionists present, proposed the Duke of York's health (*Hatton Correspondence*, i. 207–10). He took part in the trial of Lionel Anderson, James Corker, William Marshal, William Russell, and Charles Parris, who were convicted at the Old Bailey of high treason as Romish priests on 17 Jan. 1680. Corker and Marshal had been acquitted with Wakeman of the charge of being concerned in the 'popish plot.' The principal witnesses against the prisoners were Oates, Bedloe, and Prance, but Scroggs on this occasion made no attempt to disparage their testimony (COBBETT, *State Trials*, vii. 811–66).

Meanwhile Oates and Bedloe exhibited before the privy council thirteen 'articles of high misdemeanors' against Scroggs, charging him, among other things, with setting at liberty 'several persons accused upon oath before him of high treason;' with depreciating their evidence, and misleading the jury in Wakeman's case; with imprisoning Henry Carr for printing the 'Weekly Packet of Advice from Rome, or the History of Popery;' with refusing to take bail in certain cases; with being 'much addicted to swearing and cursing in his discourse,' and to drinking in excess; and with daring to say in the king's presence that the petitioners 'always had an accusation against anybody.' Scroggs having put in an answer, the case was heard on 21 Jan. 1680 before the king and council, who were pleased to rest satisfied with Scroggs's 'vindication, and leave him to his remedy at law against his accusers' (LUTTRELL, i. 32; see NORTH, *Lives*, i. 196; COBBETT, *State Trials*, viii. 163–74). He presided at the king's bench on 3 Feb., during the greater part of the trial of John Tasborough and Anne Price for attempting to suborn Dugdale, of whom he thought 'very well' (COBBETT, *State Trials*, viii. 881–916). At the trial of Elizabeth Cellier, who was acquitted of the charge of high treason in the king's bench on 11 June, Scroggs refused to receive Dangerfield's evidence, and after exclaiming 'What! Do you with all mischief that hell hath in you think to brave it in a court of justice?' committed him to the king's bench prison (*ib.* vii. 1043–55). Scroggs presided at the trial for high treason of Roger Palmer, earl of Castlemaine [q. v.], in the king's bench on 23 June. Though Dangerfield on this occasion was allowed (after a consultation with the judges of the common pleas) to give evidence, Scroggs again attacked his credibility, and summed up in favour of the prisoner, who was acquitted by the jury (*ib.* vii. 1067–1112). An application

having been made in this term to the king's bench that the 'Weekly Packet' was libellous, Scroggs and his colleagues granted a rule absolute in the first instance forbidding the further publication of the newspaper. On 26 June Scroggs and the other justices of the king's bench gave the crowning proof of their servility to the court in frustrating Shaftesbury's attempt to indict the Duke of York as a popish recusant by suddenly discharging the grand jury (*Journals of the House of Commons*, ix. 688–9). At the trial of Henry Carr for libel at the Guildhall on 2 July, Scroggs still professed his belief in the 'popish plot,' which he described to the jury as 'the certainest of anything of fact that ever came before me.' Carr had attacked the chief justice in one of the numbers of the 'Weekly Packet,' which had appeared soon after Wakeman's trial, but this did not prevent Scroggs from taking part in the proceedings, and Carr was duly found guilty by the jury (*ib.* vii. 1111–1130; Luttrell, i. 50–1; *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 479).

On 23 Nov. the House of Commons, after hearing evidence of the proceedings in the king's bench on 26 June, resolved that 'the discharging of a grand jury by any judge before the end of the term, assizes or sessions, whilst matters are under their consideration and not presented,' was illegal, and at the same time appointed a committee 'to examine the proceedings of the judges in Westminster Hall.' The report of this committee was presented to the house on 22 Dec., when it was unanimously resolved that Scroggs, Jones, and Weston should be impeached (*Journals of the House of Commons*, ix. 661, 688–92). The articles of impeachment against Scroggs were eight in number. The first charged him with traitorously and wickedly endeavouring 'to subvert the fundamental laws and the established religion and government of this kingdom.' The second was for illegally discharging the grand jury of Middlesex before the end of term. The third was founded on the illegal order made by the court of king's bench for the suppression of the 'Weekly Packet.' The fourth, fifth, and sixth were for imposing arbitrary fines, for illegally refusing bail, and for granting general warrants. The seventh was for openly defaming and scandalising several of the witnesses of the 'popish plot.' The eighth charged him with 'frequent and notorious excesses and debaucheries' and 'profane and atheistical discourses' (*ib.* ix. 697–9, 700). On 7 Jan. 1681 the articles of impeachment were carried up to the House of Lords by Lord Cavendish, and were read in the presence of Scroggs, 'who stood up in his place.' After Scroggs had withdrawn from the house, a motion for his committal was made, but the previous question was moved and carried. Another motion for an address to suspend him from his office until after the trial was defeated in the same manner. He was ordered to find bail in 10,000*l.*, with two sureties in 5,000*l.* each, and to put in his answer on 14 Jan. (*Journals of the House of Lords*, xiii. 736–9). Before that day came parliament was prorogued, and on the 18th it was dissolved. Term began on 24 Jan., but Scroggs was absent from the king's bench, 'nor did he come all the term to the court' (Luttrell, i. 64). Three days after the meeting of the new parliament (24 March 1681), Scroggs put in his answer, denying that any of the charges amounted to high treason, and pleading not guilty. At the same time he presented a petition for a speedy trial (*Journals of the House of Lords*, xiii. 752). Copies of his answer and petition were sent to the House of Commons, but no further proceedings were taken in the matter, as parliament was suddenly dissolved after a session lasting only eight days.

On account of his great unpopularity it was thought expedient to remove him from the bench; and on 11 April 1681 Scroggs, much to his surprise, received his quietus. He was succeeded as lord chief justice by Sir Francis Pemberton [q. v.] As a reward for his servility to the court Scroggs was granted a pension of 1,500*l.* a year, while his son was promoted to the rank of a king's counsel. He withdrew to his manor of South Weald in Essex, which he had purchased from Anthony Browne in 1667. After a retirement of two years and a half Scroggs died at his town house in Chancery Lane on 25 Oct. 1683, and was buried in South Weald church.

Scroggs married Anne, daughter of Edmund Fettyplace of Denchworth, Berkshire, by whom he had an only son, William (see below), and three daughters, viz. (1) Mary, who died unmarried on 18 July 1675; (2) Anne, who became the third wife of Sir Robert Wright [q. v.], lord chief justice of England in James II's reign; and (3) Elizabeth, who married, first, Anthony Gilby of Everton in the county of Nottingham, barrister-at-law; secondly, the Hon. Charles Hatton, younger son of Christopher, first baron Hatton, and, dying on 22 May 1724, aged 75, was buried in Lincoln Cathedral.

Scroggs was an able but intemperate man, with a brazen face, coarse manners, a loud voice, and a brutal tongue. Neither his

private nor his public character will bear much examination. He possessed little reputation as a lawyer, but he was a fluent speaker, and had 'many good turns of thought and language.' Indeed, he could both speak and write better than most of the lawyers of the seventeenth century, 'but he could not avoid extremities; if he did ill it was extremely so, and if well in extreme also' (North, *Examen*, 1740, p. 568). His behaviour on the bench compares unfavourably even with that of Jeffreys. He frequently acted the part of a prosecutor rather than that of a judge. His summing up in some of the 'popish plot' cases can only be described as infamous. In fine, he was undoubtedly one of the worst judges that ever disgraced the English bench. But it should be remembered in passing judgment on his character that his faults and vices were shared in a greater or less degree by most of his contemporaries. Violent as his conduct appears to us, Scroggs can hardly be said to have strained the law as it then stood in any of the 'popish plot' trials, excepting perhaps in the cases of Whitebread and Fenwick. And though his motives may not have been disinterested, some little credit is due to him for the courage which he showed in the face of an angry mob in helping to expose the machinations of Oates, Bedloe, and Dangerfield. His colleagues in the king's bench, who shared with him the responsibility of these trials, were for the most part passive instruments in his hands. Sir Robert Atkyns [q. v.], however, who 'was willing to avoid all occasion of discoursing with Scroggs,' had several differences of opinion with him, and on one occasion Scroggs reported him to Charles II because he presumed to say that 'the people might petition to the king, so that it was done without tumult it was lawful' (*Parl. Hist.* v. 308–9).

The reports of the thirteen state trials at which Scroggs presided were revised by himself, and he appears to have made considerable sums of money by selling to booksellers the exclusive right of publishing them. Some of his judgments in the civil cases which came before him will be found in the second volume of Shower's 'Reports of Cases adjudged in the Court of King's Bench,' 1794, pp. 1–159. Several of his letters are preserved in the British Museum (*Addit. MSS.* 28053 f. 114, 29549 ff. 62, 64, 68–75). His 'Practice of Courts-Leet and Courts-Baron' was published after his death, London, 1701, 12mo; 2nd edit. London, 1702, 12mo; 3rd edit. London, 1714, 8vo; 4th edit. London, 1728, 8vo. Sir Walter Scott introduces Scroggs into 'Peveril of the Peak' (chap. xli.), and Swift refers to him in No. 5 of the 'Drapier's Letters' (Swift, *Works*, 1814, vii. 236–7).

Sir William Scroggs (1652 ?–1695), only son of the above, was educated at Magdalen College, Oxford, where he was a chorister. He matriculated at the age of seventeen on 26 March 1669, and graduated B.A. in 1673. He was admitted a member of Gray's Inn on 2 Feb. 1770, was called to the bar on 27 Oct. 1676, appointed a king's counsel in April 1681, and elected a bencher of his inn in May following. He was knighted at Whitehall on 16 Jan. 1681, and on 17 June following he presented an address to the king from some of the members of Gray's Inn, thanking him for dissolving parliament. He served as treasurer of his inn from November 1687 to November 1688. He married, first, in 1684, Mary, daughter of Sir John Churchill, master of the rolls, who died without leaving children; and secondly, in 1685, Anne, daughter of Matthew Bluck of Hunsdon House, Hertfordshire, by whom he had issue. Scroggs died in 1695, leaving his widow executrix of his will (Lutwyche, *Reports*, 1704, ii. 1510). She died on 23 April 1746, aged 81, and was buried at Chute in Wiltshire. His name appears more than once as counsel in the seventh volume of Cobbett's 'State Trials.'

[Authorities quoted in the text; Burnet's Hist. of his own Time, 1833, i. 190–1, 227–8, 255–85; Wood's Life and Times (Oxf. Hist. Soc. Publ. No. xxi.), ii. 465, 506, 515, 537; Foss's Judges of England, 1864, vii. 164–71; Lord Campbell's Lives of the Chief Justices, 1858, ii. 4–23; Woolrych's Memoirs of the Life of Judge Jeffreys, 1827, pp. 51–5, 316–17; Lingard's Hist. of England, 1855, ix. 172–92, 216–28; Sir J. F. Stephen's Hist. of the Criminal Law in England, 1883, i. 383–404, ii. 310–13; Pike's Hist. of Crime in England, 1873–6, ii. 216–17, 218–29; Morant's Hist. of Essex, 1766, i. (Hundred of Chafford) 119; Wright's Hist. of the County of Essex, 1836, ii. 534; Cussans's Hist. of Hertfordshire, i. (Hundred of Edwinstree) 162–3, (Hundred of Braughin) p. 44; Bloxam's Magdalen College Reg. 1853, i. 95; Le Neve's Pedigrees of Knights (Harl. Soc. Publ. vol. viii.), pp. 346, 369; Notes and Queries, 3rd ser. xi. 378, 468, 4th ser. iii. 216, 5th ser. vi. 207, 8th ser. v. 407, ix. 307, 439; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1665–6 p. 192, 1667–8 p. 238; Lansdowne MS. (Brit. Mus.) 255; Hist. MSS. Comm. 7th Rep. App. pp. 467, 471, 472, 494, 679, 8th Rep. App. i. p. 166, 11th Rep. App. ii. pp. 46, 197–8, 13th Rep. App. v. 344–5, App. vi. p. 20; Haydn's Book of Dignities, 1890.] G. F. R. B.

SCROOP, LAURENCE (1577–1643), jesuit. [See Anderton.]

SCROPE or **SCROOPE, ADRIAN** (1601–1660), regicide, son of Robert Scroope of Wormsley, Oxfordshire, by Margaret, daughter of Richard Cornwall of London. His family were a younger branch of the Scropes of Bolton (BLORE, *Rutland*, pp. 7, 9; TURNER, *Visitations of Oxfordshire*, p. 327). Scroope matriculated at Hart Hall, Oxford, on 7 Nov. 1617, and became a student of the Middle Temple in 1619 (FOSTER, *Alumni Oxon.*) In November 1624 he married Mary, daughter of Robert Waller of Beaconsfield, a cousin of the poet Waller (CHESTER, *London Marriage Licenses*, 1198). At the opening of the civil war he raised a troop of horse for the parliament (PEACOCK, *Army Lists*, pp. 54, 108, 2nd ed.), and in 1646 was major in the regiment of horse commanded by Colonel Richard Graves. When the army and parliament quarrelled Scroope took part with the soldiers, and possibly helped Joyce to carry off Charles I from Holdenby to Newmarket (*Clarke Papers*, i. 59, 119). He succeeded to the command of the regiment about July 1647 (*ib.* p. 151).

In June 1648, at the outbreak of the second civil war, Scroope was ordered to join Colonel Whalley in the pursuit of the Earl of Norwich and the Kentish royalists, and he took part in the siege of Colchester (*ib.* ii. 27; *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1648–9, pp. 111, 116). At the beginning of July he was detached from Colchester to pursue the Earl of Holland, whom he defeated and took prisoner at St. Neots on 10 July (*ib.* pp. 176–186; *Report on the Duke of Portland's MSS.* i. 478; RUSHWORTH, vii. 1187). He was then sent to suppress some disturbances at Yarmouth (*ib.* vii. 1216; *Old Parliamentary History*, xvii. 338), caused by the threatened landing of the Prince of Wales.

Scroope took part in the deliberations of the council of the army which resulted in the rupture of the treaty of Newport; was appointed one of the king's judges, and attended the meetings of the court with exemplary regularity. His name appears thirty-seventh among the signatures to the death warrant (*Clarke Papers*, ii. 54, 278; NALSON, *Trial of the Regicides*, 1682).

Scroope's regiment was one of those selected by lot for the expedition for the reconquest of Ireland (20 April 1649); but early in May 1649 they mutinied, refused to go to Ireland, and demanded the re-establishment of the representative council of agitators which had existed in 1647 (*The Resolutions of the Private Soldiery of Col. Scroope's Regiment of Horse, now quartering at Salisbury, concerning their present Expedition for the Service of Ireland*, 1649, folio; *A Declaration from his Excellency, etc., concerning the present Distempers of part of Commissary-Gen. Ireton's and of Col. Scroope's Regiments*, 1649, 4to). On 15 May Cromwell and Fairfax surprised the mutineers at Burford, and the ringleaders were tried by court-martial and shot (GARDINER, *Commonwealth and Protectorate*, i. 54–60). Scroope's regiment henceforth disappears from the army lists, and the soldiers composing it were probably drafted into other regiments. Scroope himself was made governor of Bristol (October 1649), a post which he held till 1655 (WHITELOCKE, *Memorials*, ed. 1853, iii. 113). In 1655 Bristol Castle and other forts there were ordered to be demolished, in pursuance of a general scheme for diminishing the number of garrisons in England, though Ludlow asserts that Bristol was selected because Cromwell did not dare to 'trust a person of so much honour and worth with a place of that importance' (LUDLOW, *Memoirs*, ed. 1894, i. 394).

In May 1655 Scroope was appointed a member of the council established by the Protector for the government of Scotland, at a salary of 600*l.* a year (THURLOE, iii. 423, iv. 127, 526). He did not distinguish himself as an administrator, and appears to have spent as much time as he could out of Scotland (*ib.* vi. 92, 156; *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1658–9, p. 101). During the political revolutions of 1659–60 he apparently remained neutral, and for that reason had some prospect of escape when the Restoration took place. He surrendered himself in obedience to the king's proclamation (4 June 1660), and on 9 June the House of Commons voted that he should have the benefit of the act of indemnity on payment of a fine of one year's rent of his estates (*Commons' Journals*, viii. 60). On 20 June he was accordingly discharged upon parole (*ib.* viii. 70). The House of Lords, however, ordered all the king's judges to be arrested, and excepted Scroope absolutely from pardon (*Lords' Journals*, xi. 102, 114, 133). The commons on 13 Aug. reiterated their vote in Scroope's favour, but, as the lords remained firm, they finally (28 Aug.) yielded the point (*Commons' Journals*, viii. 118, 139; MASSON, *Life of Milton*, vi. 49, 85). This was an inexcusable breach of faith, as Scroope had surrendered in reliance upon the king's proclamation. On Scroope's trial (12 Oct. 1660) Richard Browne, late major-general for the parliament, and now lord mayor elect of London, deposed that in a private conversation held since the Restoration Scroope had used words apparently justifying the king's execution, and had refused to pronounce it

murder. Scroope, who defended himself with dignity and moderation, pleaded that he acted by the authority of parliament, and that he 'never went to the work with a malicious heart.' Sir Orlando Bridgeman, the presiding judge, treated Scroope with great civility. 'Mr. Scroope,' he said, 'to give him his due, is not such a person as some of the rest;' but Browne's evidence, which had led to Scroope's abandonment by the commons, sealed his fate, and he was condemned to death (*Trial of the Regicides*, pp. 57–72, ed. 1660). He was executed at Charing Cross on 17 Oct. An account of his behaviour in prison and at the gallows describes him as 'a comely ancient gentleman,' and dwells on his cheerfulness and courage (*The Speeches and Prayers of some of the late King's Judges*, 4to, 1660, pp, 73, 80).

Scroope's eldest son, Edmund, was made fellow of All Souls' on 4 July 1649 by the parliamentary visitors, was subsequently keeper of the privy seal in Scotland, and died in 1658 (Foster, *Alumni Oxon.* 1500–1714; Wood, *Fasti*, ii. 146; Burrows, *Register of the Visitors of the University of Oxford*, p. 476). His brother Robert was about the same time made fellow of Lincoln College, and created by the visitors B.A. on 19 May 1649 (Wood, *Fasti*, ii. 128). Scroope also left two daughters, Margaret and Anne.

The regicide is sometimes confused with his distant kinsman, Sir Adrian Scrope or Scroope (*d.* 1667), son of Sir Gervase Scroope of Cockerington, Lincolnshire. Sir Gervase Scroope raised a regiment for the king's service, and was left for dead at Edgehill, where he received sixteen wounds, but survived to 1655. The son served in the king's army during the war, and was made knight of the Bath at the coronation of Charles II (Clarendon, *Rebellion*, vi. 97; Rushworth, v. 707; Bulstrode, *Memoirs*, pp. 78, 85, 103). The fine imposed on father and son for their delinquency amounted to over 6,000*l.* (*Calendar of Compounders*, p. 1327). Sir Adrian Scroope, who died in 1667, married Mary, daughter of Sir Robert Carr of Sleaford, and was the father of Sir Carr Scrope [q. v.] (Blore, pp. 6, 9).

[A 'life' of Adrian Scroope is given in Noble's Lives of the Regicides, ii. 200. Other authorities mentioned in the article.] C. H. F.

SCROPE or **SCROOP**, Sir CARR (1649–1680), versifier and man of fashion, was eldest son of Sir Adrian Scrope of Cockerington, Lincolnshire, knight of the Bath (*d.* 1667) [see under Scrope, Adrian]. His mother, Mary, daughter of Sir Robert Carr of Sleaford in the same county, died in 1685, and was noted in her day 'for making sharp speeches and doing startling things' (Cartwright, *Sacharissa*, pp. 234–6, 262–70, 282–7). Their son was born in 1649, and matriculated from Wadham College, Oxford, on 26 Aug. 1664, being entered as a fellow-commoner on 3 Sept. He was created M.A. on 4 Feb. 1666–7, and baronet on 16 Jan. 1666–7 (*Cal. State Papers*, 1666–7, p. 357).

Scrope came to London, and was soon numbered among the companions of Charles II and the wits 'who wrote with ease.' About November 1676 he was in love with Miss Fraser, lady-in-waiting to the Duchess of York; but her extravagance in dress—one of her costumes is said to have cost no less than 300*l.*—so frightened him that he changed his matrimonial intentions (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 12th Rep. App. pt. v. p. 31). In January of the next year Catharine Sedley (afterwards Countess of Dorchester) [q. v.] quarrelled with him in the queen's drawing-room over some lampoon that she believed him to have written (*ib.* p. 37). Scrope fancied himself ridiculed as 'the purblind knight' in Rochester's 'Allusion to the Tenth Satire of the First Book of Horace,' and attacked his rival in a very free and satirical poem 'in defence of satire,' an imitation of Horace (bk i. satire iv). Rochester retorted with a vigorous lampoon, which is printed in his works (ed. 1709, pp. 96–8), and Scrope made in reply a very severe epigram (*Roxburghe Ballads*, ed. Ebsworth, iv. 570–1; Johnson, *Poets*, ed. Cunningham, i. 194). Many references to Scrope (he was a man of small stature, and often ridiculed for his meanness of size) appeared in the satires of the period (cf. *Roxburghe Ballads*, iv. 569, &c.) He was a member of the 'Green Ribbon Club,' the great whig club, which met at the King's Head tavern over against the Inner Temple Gate (Sitwell, *First Whig*, pp. 85–6, 202).

In 1679 Scrope was living at the north end of the east side of Duke Street, St. James's, Westminster (Cunningham, ed. Wheatley, i. 534), and in August of the next year he was at Tunbridge Wells for his health, and with 'a physician of his own' (Cartwright, *Sacharissa*, p. 289). He is said to have died in November 1680, and to have been buried at St. Martin's-in-the-Fields; the baronetcy thereupon became extinct.

A translation by Scrope of the epistle of Sappho to Phaon was inserted in 'Ovid's Epistles translated by Various Hands,' numerous editions of which were issued between 1681 and 1725, and it was reprinted in Nichols's 'Collection of Poems' (1780, i.

6–10; Pope, *Works*, ed. Elwin and Courthope, i. 93–103). Other renderings of Ovid by him are in the 'Miscellany Poems' of 1684 (Nichols, *Collection*, i. 10–15). He wrote the prologue to Sir George Etherege's 'Man of Mode,' a song which was inserted in that play, and the prologue to Lee's 'Rival Queens' (*ib.*) His song of 'Myrtillo's Sad Despair,' in Lee's 'Mithridates,' is included in Ritson's 'English Songs' (ed. 1813, i. 69–70), and the song in the 'Man of Mode' is inserted in the same volume (pp. 177–178).

A satirical piece, called 'A very heroical Epistle from my Lord All-pride to Dol-Common' (1679), preserved in the 'Roxburghe Collection of Ballads' at the British Museum (iii. 819), and printed by Mr. Ebsworth in the fourth volume (pp. 575–576) of his collection, is supposed to have been written by Scrope.

[Wood's Fasti, ii. 294; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Gardiner's Wadham College Registers, i. 253; Cunningham's Nell Gwyn, ed. Wheatley, pp. xli–xlii; Notes and Queries, 7th ser. i. 429, 519; Foster's Yorkshire Pedigrees; Burke's Extinct Baronetcies; Moore's Carre Family, 1863; cf. a familiar epistle to 'Mr. Julian, Secretary to the Muses,' in Egerton MS. 2623, f. 81, which refers chiefly to Scrope, is printed in the Works of George Villiers, duke of Buckingham (1775, ii. 142–5), and has sometimes been attributed to Dryden.] W. P. C.

SCROPE, Sir GEOFFREY le (*d.* 1340), chief justice of the king's bench, was younger son of Sir William le Scrope of Bolton, and brother of Sir Henry le Scrope (*d.* 1336) [q.v.] His mother was Constance, daughter and heiress of Thomas, son of Gillo de Newsham, variously described as of Newsham-on-Tees and of Newsham-on-Tyne (*Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, ii. 10, 58). Geoffrey Scrope certainly had an estate at Whalton, near Morpeth, a few miles south-east of which there is a Newsham, but it is not upon the Tyne. Like his brother, Scrope adopted the profession of the law, and by 1316 he was king's serjeant. He is also called 'valettus regis.' He was summoned to councils and parliaments, and occasionally sat on judicial commissions. In 1321–2 he accompanied Edward II in his campaign against the barons, and gave sentence on Roger d'Amory at Tutbury. Both before and after this he was employed in negotiations with the Scots. He was raised to the bench as a judge of the common pleas on 27 Sept. 1323, and promoted to the chief-justiceship of the king's bench on 21 March 1324. The small estate he held as early as 1312 in Coverdale, south of Wensleydale, he augmented before 1318 by the acquisition of the manor of Clifton on Ure at the entrance of the latter dale, where he obtained a license to build a castle in that year. Early in the next reign he purchased the neighbouring manor of Masham from the representatives of its old lords, the Wautons, who held it from the Mowbrays by the service of an annual barbed arrow (*ib.* ii. 138; Dugdale, *Baronage*, i. 657; *Kirkby's Quest*, Surtees Soc., pp. 153, 334–9). Eltham Mandeville and other Vesci lands in Kent had passed into his hands by 1318. One of Edward II's last acts was to invest him with the great castle and honour of Skipton in Craven forfeited by Roger, lord Clifford. So closely was he identified with the court party that Mortimer was alleged to have projected the same fate for him as for the Despensers (*Parliamentary Writs*, II. ii. 244). But though Edward's deposition was followed by Scrope's removal from office, he received a pardon in February 1328, and was reinstated as chief justice. He was a soldier and diplomatist as well as a lawyer, and his services in the former capacities were in such request that his place had frequently to be supplied by substitutes, one of whom was his brother Henry, and for a time (1334–7) he seems to have exchanged his post for the (nominal) second justiceship of the common pleas. Again chief justice in 1338, he finally resigned the office before October in that year on the outbreak of the French war (cf. *Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, i. 155).

In the tournaments of the previous reign, at one of which he was knighted, Scrope had not disgraced the azure bend or of his family, which he bore with a silver label for difference, and in the first months of Edward III's rule he was with the army which nearly joined battle with the Scots at Stanhope Park in Weardale (*ib.* i. 132). But it was in diplomatic business that Edward III found Scrope most useful. He took him to France in 1329. In 1331 and 1333 he was entrusted with important foreign missions. He had only just been designated (1334) one of the deputies to keep a watch over John Baliol when he was sent on an embassy to Brittany and France. In 1335 and again in 1337 Scottish affairs engaged his attention. Just before crossing to Flanders in 1338 Edward III sent Scrope with the Earl of Northampton to his ally the emperor, and later in the year he was employed in the negotiations opened at the eleventh hour with Philip VI. He had at least six knights in his train, and took the field in the campaign which ended blood-

lessly at Buironfosse (1339). Galfrid le Baker (p. 65) relates the well-known anecdote of Scrope's punishing Cardinal Bernard de Montfavence's boasts of the inviolability of France by taking him up a high tower and showing him her frontiers all in flames. He now appears with the formal title of king's secretary, and spent the winter of 1339–40 in negotiating a marriage between the heir of Flanders and Edward's daughter Isabella. Returning to England with the King in February, he was granted two hundred marks a year to support his new dignity of banneret. Going back to Flanders in June, he took part in the siege of Tournay, and about Christmas died at Ghent (Murimuth, p. 120; Le Baker, p. 73). His body was carried to Coverham Abbey, to which he had given the church of Sadberge (*Fœdera*, iv. 417). Jervaulx and other monasteries had also experienced his liberality. Besides his Yorkshire and Northumberland estates, he left manors in five other counties. Scrope was the more distinguished of the two notable brothers whose unusual fortune it was to found two great baronial families within the limits of a single Yorkshire dale.

Scrope married Ivetta, in all probabiilty daughter of Sir William de Roos of Ingmanthorpe, near Wetherby. A second marriage with Lora, daughter of Gerard de Furnival of Hertfordshire and Yorkshire, and widow of Sir John Ufflete, has been inferred (*Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, ii. 104) from a gift of her son, Gerard Ufflete, to Scrope and his mother jointly in 1331; but Ivetta is named as Scrope's wife in 1332 (*Whalley Coucher Book*).

By the latter he had five sons and three daughters. The sons were: Henry, first baron Scrope of Masham [q. v.]; Thomas, who predeceased his father; William (1325?–1367), who fought at Cressy, Poitiers, and Najara, and died in Spain; Stephen, who was at Cressy and the siege of Berwick (1356); Geoffrey (*d.* 1383), LL.B. (probably of Oxford), prebendary of Lincoln, London, and York (*Test. Ebor.* iii. 35, but cf. *Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, ii. 110). The daughters were Beatrice and Constance, who married respectively Sir Andrew and Sir Geoffrey Lutterell of Lincolnshire; and Ivetta, the wife of John de Hothom.

[Rymer's Fœdera, original edit.; Scrope and Grosvenor Roll, ed. Nicolas, 1832; Foss's Judges of England, iii. 493; Murimuth in Rolls Ser.; Galfrid le Baker, ed. Maunde Thompson; Testamenta Eboracensia (Surtees Soc.); Dugdale's Baronage; Le Neve's Fasti Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ; Whalley Coucher Book (Chetham Soc.); Scrope's Hist. Castle Combe, 1852.] J. T–r.

SCROPE, GEORGE JULIUS POULETT (1797–1876), geologist and political economist, was born on 10 March 1797, being the second son of John Poulett Thomson, head of the firm of Thomson, Bonar, & Co., Russia merchants, of Waverley Abbey, Surrey, and of Charlotte, daughter of Dr. Jacob of Salisbury. Charles Edward Poulett Thomson, lord Sydenham [q. v.], was his brother. George was educated at Harrow school, and after keeping one or two terms at Pembroke College, Oxford, migrated in 1816 to St. John's College, Cambridge, graduating B.A. in 1821. But while still an undergraduate he had become a keen student of geology, influenced by Professor Edward Daniel Clarke [q. v.] and Professor Adam Sedgwick [q. v.], then at the outset of his career. With his parents he had spent the winter of 1817–18 at Naples, where Vesuvius—then active—on the one side and the Phlegræan fields on the other, naturally directed his thoughts to the phenomena of volcanoes. In 1819 he returned to Italy and extended his studies to the volcanic districts of the Campagna, visiting the following spring the Lipari Islands and Etna, besides making the tour of Sicily. In the spring of 1821 he married Emma Phipps Scrope, heiress of William Scrope (1772–1852) [q. v.] of Castle Combe, Wiltshire, and assumed her name. His geological work was in no way interrupted. In the same year, in June, he went to Auvergne, and spent six months in examining its extinct volcanos with those of the Velay and Vivarrais. This done, he again visited Italy, where he arrived just in time to witness the great eruption of Vesuvius in October 1822, when the upper part of the cone—about six hundred feet in height—was completely blown away. He also examined the Ponza islands and studied all the different volcanic districts of Italy from the Bay of Naples to the Euganean hills, returning to England in the autumn of 1823, by way of the districts of like nature in the Eifel, the vicinity of the Rhine and the north of Germany (Scrope, *Considerations on Volcanos*, p. vii; *Geological Magazine*, 1870, p. 96).

In 1824 he joined the Geological Society, and his reputation became so speedily established that in 1825 he was elected one of the secretaries, his colleague being Charles Lyell [q. v.] At that time Werner's notions—that basalts and suchlike rocks were chemical precipitates from water—had led astray the majority of geologists. The triumph of the 'Neptunists,' as the disciples of Werner were called, over the 'Plutonists,' whose leaders were James Hutton (1726–1797) [q. v.] and John Playfair [q. v.], seemed assured. But

Scrope had put Werner's notions to the surest test—the evidence of nature—and found them to be 'idols of the cave;' so that in 1828 he published the results of his studies in a book entitled 'Considerations on Volcanos.' It is full of accurate observations, careful inductions, and suggestive inferences; it enunciates emphatically the doctrine afterwards developed by Lyell and called 'Uniformitarian,' but as it was necessarily controversial, was much in advance of its age, and had ventured into a cosmological speculation, it did not meet with a generally favourable reception. The book was rewritten, enlarged, and published under the title 'Volcanos' in 1862. But Scrope's 'Geology and Extinct Volcanos of Central France,' published in 1826, produced a stronger impression and established the author's reputation as an accurate observer and sound reasoner. A second and revised edition appeared in 1858, and this is still carefully read by every geologist who visits Auvergne. Lyell, who reviewed the first edition in the 'Quarterly Review,' xxxvi. 437, justly called it the most able work which had appeared since Playfair's 'Illustrations of the Huttonian Theory.' In the same year (1826) Scrope was elected F.R.S.

He was also much in advance of his contemporaries in recognising the action of rivers in the formation of valleys, and was the author (among other contributions to the subject) of an important paper on the Meuse, Moselle, and other rivers (*Proc. Geol. Soc.* i. 170). His views were practically identical with those of Lyell, whom at this time he might be said, as slightly the senior in geological work, to lead rather than to follow; and when Lyell's 'Principles of Geology' appeared in 1827, the book was reviewed by Scrope (*Quart. Rev.* xlii. 411, liii. 406). He expressed agreement with the author on almost all points, except that he thought Lyell was going rather too far in maintaining that geological change in all past time had been not only similar to, but also in all respects uniform with, what could now be witnessed, and he was more ready than his friend to admit the possibility of a progressive development of species. Some geologists would maintain that Scrope's divergences from the author of the 'Principles' indicated a yet clearer perception of the earth's history. In short, it may be said that if Scrope had continued to devote himself wholly to geology, he would have probably surpassed all competitors.

But he also felt a keen interest in politics, in which his brother, afterwards Lord Sydenham, was taking an active part, and his energies were gradually diverted into another channel. Having settled down at Castle Combe, the family seat of the Scropes in Wiltshire, he had been impressed, especially from his experience as a magistrate, with the hardships of the agricultural labourer's life, and he threw himself heartily into the political struggle which was then in progress. In 1833, after the passing of the first reform bill, he was returned to parliament as member for Stroud (having unsuccessfully contested the seat in 1832) and represented the borough till 1868. Here he was an energetic advocate of free trade and various social reforms, especially that of the poor law. But these reforms were urged by his pen, for he was a silent member. His pamphlets, both before and after his entry into parliament, were very numerous. Seventeen stand under his name in the British Museum catalogue, but it is believed that seventy would be nearer the truth, for Scrope's fertility in this respect got him, in the House of Commons, the sobriquet of 'Pamphlet Scrope.' In 1833 he published a small volume on 'The Principles of Political Economy' (2nd edit. 1874) and another (in 1872) on 'Friendly Societies.' He also wrote a life of his brother, Lord Sydenham (1843).

Still geology was not deserted, for in 1856 and again in 1859 the 'elevation theory' of craters advocated by Humboldt, Von Buch, and other continental geologists brought Scrope back into the field. This theory, though mortally wounded by himself and Lyell, showed signs of life until his two papers (*Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc.* xii. 326, xv. 505) extinguished it. Auvergne was again studied by him in 1857, while preparing the revised and enlarged edition of his work on Central France, which appeared in 1858. Nor must a very important and suggestive paper be forgotten, which attributed the foliation of crystalline rocks to differential movements of the materials while the mass was still in an imperfectly solid condition (*Geologist*, 1858, p. 361).

In 1867 Scrope received the Wollaston medal from the Geological Society, and on his retirement from parliament in the following year geology again obtained a larger share of attention. He lived in retirement during the later years of his life, but his interest in the science was unabated; and when he could no longer travel, he aided younger men less wealthy than himself to continue the study of volcanic districts. Though for some time he suffered from failure of sight, like his friend Lyell, and from some of the usual infirmities of age, he could still

wield the pen, and the short notes and controversial letters which appeared during the last few months of his life showed no symptom of mental decline. He died at Fairlawn, near Cobham, Surrey, 19 Jan. 1876, and was buried at Stoke d'Abernon. He had sold Castle Combe after the death of his wife, who for many years had been an invalid in consequence of an accident when riding, not long after her marriage. Late in life he married again, and his second wife survived him. There was no issue by either marriage.

Scrope, according to the Royal Society's 'Catalogue of Scientific Papers,' was the author of thirty-six regular papers, the majority on volcanic geology and petrology, but in addition to this department of science and to political studies, he took great interest in archæology, contributing papers on this subject to the 'Wiltshire Magazine,' and publishing in 1852 (for private circulation) an illustrated quarto entitled 'History of the Manor and Ancient Barony of Castle Combe, Wilts.' His position as a geologist may be best described in words used by himself in his earliest publication, written at a period when the Huttonian theory was generally discredited, viz. that the science 'has for its business a knowledge of the processes which are in continual or occasional operation within the limits of our planet, and the application of these laws to explain the appearances discovered by our geognostical researches, so as from these materials to deduce conclusions as to the past history of the globe' (*Considerations on Volcanos*, Pref. p. iv). It is, perhaps, not too much to say that though two or three of his contemporaries, by a more complete devotion to geology, attained a higher eminence in the science, not one of them ever surpassed him in closeness and accuracy as an observer or in soundness of induction, and firm grasp of principles as a reasoner.

[Obituary notices, Nature, xiii. 291 (A. G[eikie]), Academy, ix. 102 (J. W. Judd), Athenæum, 29 Jan. 1876; Geol. Mag. 1876, p. 96, also memoir with portrait, 1870, p. 193; Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc. xxxii. Proc. p. 69; Proc. Roy. Soc. xxv. 1, mentioned in Lyell's Life and Letters and in Life of Murchison by A. Geikie (portrait, ii. 108); also information from Prof. J. W. Judd and R. F. Scott, esq., bursar of St. John's College, Cambridge.] T. G. B.

SCROPE, Sir HENRY le (*d.* 1336), chief justice of the king's bench, was the eldest son of Sir William le Scrope of Bolton in Wensleydale. His mother was Constance, daughter of Thomas, son of Gillo de Newsham. His brother Geoffrey is separately noticed. Their father, who was bailiff of Richmondshire in 1294, and was knighted at the battle of Falkirk, came of an obscure family originally seated in the East Riding and North Lincolnshire. No connection can be established with the Scrupes of Gloucestershire or with Richard FitzScrob [see Richard, *fl.* 1060]. The name is said to mean crab, and a crab was their crest. Scrope's paternal estate was small (*Kirkby's Quest*, pp. 150, 152, 176). He studied the law, and first appears as an advocate in 1307, the year before his elevation (27 Nov. 1308) to the bench of the common pleas. Attaching himself to Edward II, with whom he went to Scotland in 1310, Scrope withdrew from the parliament of 1311, in which the magnates placed restraints upon the king, and was peremptorily ordered to return. Edward entrusted him with a mission to Wales in 1314, and, on shaking off the control of the magnates promoted him (15 June 1317) to the chief-justiceship of the king's bench. Five years later Scrope received a share of the estates forfeited by the Earl of Lancaster's supporters, to which Edward added early in 1323 the Swaledale lands of Andrew de Harclay [q. v.] But towards the close of that year, for some unexplained reason, he was superseded as chief justice. He was almost immediately, however, appointed justice of the forests north of Trent, received a summons with the justices to the parliament of 1325, and in March 1326 was trying Yorkshire offenders by special commission (*Parl. Writs*, II. i. 284, 335). On Edward III's accession he was replaced (5 Feb. 1327) on the bench as 'second justice' (the title was new) of the common pleas, his old post being occupied by his brother (Foss; cf. *Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, ii. 13). In the summer he held an inquiry into a fray between the English and Hainaulters at York (*Fœdera*, iv. 292). From 28 Oct. 1329 to 19 Dec. 1330 he took the place of his brother, then absent abroad, as chief justice of the king's bench. On the latter date he was made chief baron of the exchequer, a post which he held until his death, though for a moment in November 1333 transferred to be chief justice of the common pleas; perhaps without his consent, for within twenty-four hours he received a new patent restoring him to his old place. Like his brother, Scrope was a knight banneret. He died on 6 Sept. 1336, and was buried in the Premonstratensian abbey of St. Agatha at Easby, close to Richmond, the patronage of which, with Burton Constable and other lands, he had purchased from the descendant

of Roald, constable of Richmond, who founded it in 1151. Scrope was considered its second founder. He had greatly augmented his paternal inheritance (*Kirby's Quest*, pp. 230, 335–7, 354, 358). His wife was Margaret, daughter either of Lord Roos or of Lord Fitzwalter. She afterwards married Sir Hugh Mortimer of Chelmarsh, Shropshire, and lived until 1357. Their three sons—William, Stephen, and Richard—were all under age at his death. William, born 1320, distinguished himself in the French and Scottish wars, and died 17 Nov. 1344, of a wound received at the battle of Morlaix in Brittany, two years before. He left no issue, and his next brother, Stephen, having predeceased him, the estates passed to Richard (1327 ?–1403) [q. v.], first Baron Scrope of Bolton and chancellor of England.

[Foss's Judges of England, iii. 499; Scrope and Grosvenor Roll ed. Nicolas, 1832, i. 94–5, 98, 127, 132, 142, 145, 222, ii. 11; Rotuli Parliamentorum, ii. 10; Parliamentary Writs, ed. Palgrave; Rymer's Fœdera, orig. ed.; Inquisitiones post mortem, ii. 72, 125; Kirkby's Quest (Surtees Soc.); Dugdale's Baronage and Origines Juridiciales; Scrope's Hist. of Castle Combe, 1852.] J. T–t.

SCROPE, HENRY LE, first BARON SCROPE OF MASHAM (1315–1391), was the eldest son of Sir Geoffrey le Scrope [q. v.], by his first wife, Ivetta de Roos. Born in 1315, he won his spurs early at Halidon Hill (19 July 1333). Just before his father's death in 1340 he fought at Sluys, and, after making the Scottish campaign of 1341, he accompanied Edward III to Brittany in the next year; after which he served in Ireland under Ralph d'Ufford, and then accompanied the king to Flanders in 1345. Scrope is said to have fought as a banneret both at Cressy (26 Aug. 1346) and Neville's Cross (17 Oct.) This may be doubted. He was certainly present at the siege of Calais (1346–7). During the truces he was chiefly employed on the Scottish border, but took part in August 1350 in the famous sea-fight off Winchelsea, known as Espagnols-sur-la-Mer. A few months later (25 Nov.) he was summoned to parliament as Lord Scrope. The designation 'of Masham' first appears when the representatives of the elder line came to sit in the House of Lords, no doubt for distinction. In 1355 Scrope went to Picardy with the king, and returned with him on the news of the loss of Berwick. For three years he was almost exclusively occupied on the border, but in 1359 he proceeded to Gascony, and next year figured with five other Scropes in Edward III's demonstration before Paris. Peace being made, he took up (18 Feb. 1361) the onerous post of warden of Calais and Guisnes, which he apparently held until his appointment as joint warden of the west march towards Scotland (1370) and steward of the household (1371). At Calais he had frequently conducted important negotiations, and as late as July 1378 was sent on a mission to the king of Navarre. He sat on the committee of the upper house appointed to confer with the commons in the Good parliament; was on the first council of Richard II's minority, and continued to attend parliament down to 1381. Spending his last years in retirement, he died on 31 July 1391, and was buried in York minster. Scrope increased the family estates both in and out of Yorkshire, where he acquired Upsal Castle, near Thirsk, the seat of a family of that name down to 1349, which gave a second territorial designation to some of his descendants. All that is known of his wife is that she was called Joan (? Upsal, cf. *Testamenta Eboracensia*, iii. 32). They had five or six sons, of whom the fourth, Richard (1350 ?–1405) [q. v.], was archbishop of York, and two daughters.

The eldest son, Geoffrey, married a daughter of Ralph, lord Neville (*d.* 1367), and after the peace of Brétigny went on a crusade with the Teutonic knights into heathen Lithuania, where he perished in 1362 at about twenty years of age.

The second son, William, after the peace followed the Earl of Hereford to Lombardy and the taking of Satalia (Attalia) in Asia Minor (1361). He died in the East, and may be the Scrope buried at Mesembria (Misvri) on the west coast of the Black Sea (*Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, i. 70, 125, 166); Nicolas (*ib.* ii. 106), however, refers these exploits to William, son of Sir Geoffrey le Scrope [q. v.]

The third son, Stephen, 'forty and upwards' in 1391, was knighted by the king of Cyprus at Alexandria in 1365 (*ib.* i. 124), and accompanied John of Gaunt into Guienne in 1373; he married (before 1376) Margery (*d.* 29 May 1422), daughter of John, fourth lord Welles, and widow of John, lord Huntingfield, succeeded as second Baron Scrope of Masham in 1391, and died on 25 Jan. 1406; his son Henry, executed in 1415, is separately noticed.

The youngest son, John (*d.* December 1405), married (*c.* 1390) Elizabeth, daughter and coheiress of David de Strabolgi, earl of Atholl, and widow of Sir Thomas Percy (*d.* 1386), second son of the first Earl of Northumberland (cf. *Testamenta Eboracensia*, i. 338).

The daughters were: (1) Joan, who married Henry, second baron Fitzhugh of Ravensworth (*d.* 1386); and (2) Isabel (*b.* 24 Aug. 1337), who married Sir Robert Plumpton of Plumpton, near Knaresborough.

[Rotuli Parliamentorum; Rymer's Fœdera, original edit.; Scrope and Grosvenor Roll, ed, Nicolas, i. 104, 105, 112, 127, 145, 242, ii. 112–120; Gent. Mag. 1805, ii. 798; Testamenta Eboracensia (Surtees Soc.); Scrope's Hist. of Castle Combe, 1852.] J. T–T.

SCROPE, HENRY LE, third BARON SCROPE OF MASHAM (1376?–1415), eldest son of Stephen, second baron [see under SCROPE, HENRY LE, first BARON SCROPE OF MASHAM], by Margery, widow of John, lord Huntingfield, was 'upwards of thirty years old' at his father's death in January 1406. He accompanied John Beaufort on the crusade to Barbary in 1390 (DEVON, *Issues*, p. 245). On the suppression of Thomas Mowbray's rebellion in 1405, Scrope received a grant of his manors of Thirsk and Hovingham (DUGDALE, i. 659). He and his father must have carefully dissociated themselves from Mowbray's fellow-rebel, Archbishop Richard Scrope [q. v.], who was Scrope's uncle. Immediately after succeeding to his father's honours, he assisted in escorting Henry IV's daughter Philippa to Denmark on her marriage. In May 1409 he executed an important mission in France with Henry Beaufort. Scrope enjoyed the friendship and confidence of the young prince of Wales, then in opposition. A modern writer says they sometimes shared the same bed, but he gives no authority (*Gesta Henrici V*, p. 11 *n.*) When the prince ousted Archbishop Arundel (January 1410) from the chancery, in favour of Thomas Beaufort, he put in Scrope (who was also given the Garter) as treasurer. Next year he took his second wife from the royal family. Even when Arundel, in January 1412, returned to power, and the prince for the time retired from the government, Scrope continued at the treasury.

His supersession by Henry V on his accession for the Earl of Arundel might seem to imply some cooling of their friendship but for the fact that he was entrusted with delicate foreign negotiations. In July 1413 he accompanied Bishop Henry Chichele [q. v.] on a mission to form a league with the Duke of Burgundy (*Fœdera*, ix. 34). He headed the embassy to Charles VI in the early months of 1414, and another in the summer to Burgundy (*ib.* ix. 102, 136). At the end of April 1415 he contracted to serve in France with thirty men at arms and ninety archers, and as late as 27 May there was talk of sending him again to John of Burgundy (*ib.* ix. 230; *Ord. Privy Council*, ii. 167). His complicity, therefore, in the plot discovered at Southampton on 20 July to dethrone Henry in favour of the Earl of March ('if King Richard be really dead') caused general surprise. It seemed strangely inconsistent with his character as well as his past career. He himself pleaded that he had become an accessory in order to betray the conspiracy (*Rot. Parl.* iv. 66). It has been suggested that Scrope was drawn into the plot by his connection with Cambridge, whose stepmother he had married for his second wife. She was a daughter of Richard II's half-brother, Thomas Holland, second earl of Kent (*d.* 1397). Possibly he had resented his deprivation of the treasury two years before. His claim to be tried by his peers, though allowed, availed him nothing, and the king marked his sense of Scrope's ingratitude by refusing to reduce the sentence to simple beheading, as in the case of his fellow-conspirators, the Earl of Cambridge and Sir Thomas Grey. Immediately after his condemnation (5 Aug.) he was 'drawn' right across Southampton, from the Watergate to the place of execution outside the north gate. His head was sent to York to be placed on one of the bars. His lands were forfeited, and those in Wensleydale and its vicinity granted to his cousin and neighbour, Henry, lord Fitzhugh. Others, perhaps Upsal and his East Riding estates, went to Sir William Porter (*ib.* iv. 213; DUGDALE, i. 660). In his interesting will (23 June 1415) he bequeathed numerous books in Latin and French (*Fœdera*, ix. 272).

Though twice married, Scrope left no issue. His first wife was Philippa, granddaughter and coheiress of Guy, lord Bryan, a famous warrior and knight of the Garter, and widow of John, lord Devereux (*d.* 1396). Though related in the third and fourth degrees, they married without a dispensation, but the difficulty was surmounted by the good offices of his uncle, the archbishop (11 July 1399). She died on 19 Nov. 1406. Scrope married secondly, about September 1411, Joan Holland, daughter of the second Earl of Kent. He was her third husband, and after his death she took a fourth, Sir Henry Bromflete, dying in 1434.

Scrope had four younger brothers, of whom the eldest, Geoffrey, died in 1418 (*Test. Ebor.* iii. 35), and the youngest, William (1394?–1463) was archdeacon of Durham (*ib.*)

The second brother, Stephen, took orders, became secretary to his uncle the archbishop, prebendary of Lichfield and York, and arch-

deacon of Richmond (1400–1418). He was chancellor of the university of Cambridge in 1400 and 1414, and is said to have written 'quædam de rebus Anglicis' (Tanner, p. 658). Dying on 5 Sept. 1418, he was buried near the archbishop in St. Stephen's Chapel in York minster, which was now the family burial-place, and afterwards known as the Scrope Chapel (*Test. Ebor.* i. 385, iii. 33; *Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, ii. 135).

The third brother, John (1388–1455), was admitted by Henry V on his deathbed to be the victim of injustice owing to the inclusion of the entailed estates in his brother's forfeiture. The king made Fitzhugh and Porter, the grantees, promise to surrender them. But, though John Scrope was on the council of regency for Henry VI, he did not recover them all till 1425, after Fitzhugh's death (*Rot. Parl.* iv. 213, 287). In 1426 he was summoned to parliament as fourth Baron Scrope of Masham. He was afterwards employed in important foreign negotiations, and by favour of Humphrey of Gloucester held the office of treasurer of England from 26 Feb. 1432 to July 1433. He died on 15 Nov. 1455. By his wife Elizabeth (*d.* 1466), daughter of Sir Thomas Chaworth of Wiverton, Nottinghamshire, he had three sons and two daughters. The only surviving son, Thomas (1429 ?–1475), succeeded him as fifth baron, married about 1453 Elizabeth, daughter of Ralph, seventh lord Greystock, and perhaps for that reason (his father-in-law being a Lancastrian) did not definitely throw in his lot with the Yorkist cause until the accession of Edward IV; his four sons, Thomas, Henry, Ralph, and Geoffrey (a clerk), each in turn held the barony. On the death, without issue, in 1517 of Geoffrey, ninth baron, the title fell into abeyance between his three sisters (or their issue): Alice, wife of Sir James Strangways of Harlesey; Margaret, wife of Sir Christopher Danby of Thorpe Perrow; and Elizabeth, wife of Sir Ralph Fitz-Randolph of Spennithorne.

[Rotuli Parliamentorum; Rymer's Fœdera, original edition; Ordinances of the Privy Council, ed. Nicolas; Scrope and Grosvenor Roll, ed. Nicolas, ii. 133, 136; Testamenta Eboracensia (Surtees Soc.); Dugdale's Baronage; Tanner's Bibliotheca Britannico-Hibernica; Le Neve's Fasti Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ.] J. T-t.

SCROPE, HENRY le, ninth Baron Scrope of Bolton (1534–1592), was the second and eldest surviving son of John le Scrope, eighth baron (*d.* 1549), who had been out in the pilgrimage of grace, by Catherine, eldest daughter of Henry Clifford, first earl of Cumberland. John le Scrope, fifth baron Scrope of Bolton [q. v.], was his great-great-grandfather. Born in 1534, Scrope acted as marshal of the army which Elizabeth sent in March 1560 to assist the Scottish protestants in the siege of Leith. Two years later he was appointed governor of Carlisle and warden of the west marches, offices which he held to the end of his life. He served as the intermediary in Elizabeth's secret intrigues against the regent Moray in 1567. When next year the news of Mary Stuart's flight and warm reception at Carlisle reached Elizabeth, Scrope, then in London, was at once ordered back to his post, in company with Sir Francis Knollys [q. v.], to take charge of the too fascinating fugitive. The border position of Carlisle necessitated her removal on 13 July to Scrope's castle at Bolton in Wensleydale, 'the highest walled castle' Knollys 'had ever seen.' Here she prepared her defence with Lesley and Melville, and received encouraging messages from the Duke of Norfolk through his sister, Lady Scrope, who seems also to have conveyed to her the suggestion of a marriage with Norfolk. On 26 Feb. 1569 Mary was removed to Tutbury. Lady Scrope's relationship to Norfolk, the proximity of Bolton to Scotland, and the catholicism of the neighbouring families, made it an unsafe place of keeping. Local tradition asserts that Mary once escaped and got as far as what is now known as the 'Queen's Gap' on Leyburn Shawl before she was overtaken. A few months later the Earls of Northumberland and Westmorland made their ill-starred attempt to rescue her from Tutbury. Though the latter was his wife's brother-in-law, Scrope was active in the suppression of the rising, and forwarded to Cecil an appeal made by Westmorland in a letter to Lady Scrope (*Cal. State Papers*, 1566–79, p. 210). In the spring of 1570 he ravaged Eskdale and Annandale (Froude, ix. 266). He occurs as a member of the council of the north in 1574 (*Cal. State Papers*, p. 463), received the Garter on 23 April 1584, and retained the wardenship of the west marches until his death in 1592 (*ib.* 1591–4, p. 125; Camden, p. 468; Dugdale, i. 657). The date is sometimes—apparently incorrectly—given as 10 May 1591 (Beltz, p. clxxxiii). At Bolton Hall are portraits of Scrope (æt. 22) and his two wives. He married, first, Mary (*d.* 1558), daughter of Edward, first baron North [q. v.], by whom he had a daughter Mary, who became the wife of William Bowes of Streatlam, near Barnard Castle; and, secondly, Margaret (*d.* 1592), daughter of Henry Howard, earl of Surrey [q. v.], the poet, by whom he left two sons, Thomas and Henry. Thomas (*d.* 1609) succeeded him as

tenth baron, and was the father of Emmanuel Scrope (1584–1630), who was created earl of Sunderland on 19 June 1627, and, leaving no legitimate issue, was the last of his line. Some of the family estates passed to Lord Sunderland's illegitimate daughters, Mary, wife of Charles Paulet, first duke of Bolton [q.v.], and Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Savage, third earl Rivers.

[Cal. State Papers; Scrope and Grosvenor Roll, ed. Nicolas, 1832; Camden's Annals of Elizabeth's Reign, ed. 1675; Dugdale's Baronage; Beltz's Memorials of the Order of the Garter; Grainge's Castles and Abbeys of Yorkshire; Froude's Hist. of England.] J. T–T.

SCROPE, JOHN LE, fifth BARON SCROPE OF BOLTON (1435–1498), was son of Henry, fourth baron, by Elizabeth, daughter of his kinsman, John, fourth lord Scrope of Masham, and was born on 22 July 1435 [see under SCROPE, HENRY LE, 1376–1415]. Inheriting the Yorkist politics of his father, who died on 14 Jan. 1459, he fought with Warwick at Northampton and was 'sore hurt' at Towton (*Paston Letters*, ii. 5). Edward IV gave him the Garter which had belonged to his father, the Duke of York. He took part in the gradual reduction of the Lancastrian strongholds in the north, and may have been at the battle of Hexham in 1464 (WAVRIN, p. 441).

Scrope was aggrieved, however, that Edward did not restore to him the lordship of the Isle of Man, of which his family had been divested by Henry IV, and in 1470 he began to raise Richmondshire for the recalcitrant Nevilles. But on Warwick being driven out of the country he made his peace, and, though he adhered to Warwick during the short Lancastrian restoration, Edward overlooked his inconstancy and employed him in negotiations with Scotland in 1473. In 1475 he accompanied the king to France. As he still persisted in quartering the arms of Man, he was ordered to relinquish them during the expedition, without prejudice to his right, if any (*Fœdera*, xii. 2). In the next year he went on a mission to Rome with Earl Rivers (*Paston Letters*, iii. 162). He held a command in the Duke of Gloucester's invasion of Scotland (1482), and took part in the subsequent negotiations with the Duke of Albany. Gloucester, when king, sought to confirm Scrope's support by a grant of lands in the south-west, with the constableship of Exeter Castle. He was also governor of the Fleet. Nevertheless he kept his position under a fifth king. In 1492 he was retained to go abroad with Henry VII, and as late as August 1497 assisted in raising the siege of Norham Castle. Scrope died on 17 Aug. 1498.

His first wife, whom he married before 1463, was Joan, daughter of William, fourth lord Fitzhugh (*d.* 1452) of Ravensworth Castle, Richmondshire. She bore him a son, Henry, sixth baron of the Bolton line, and father of the seventh baron, 'stern and stout,' who fought at Flodden, and whose portrait is still at Bolton Hall.

Scrope married, secondly, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Oliver St. John (by Margaret, widow of John Beaufort, duke of Somerset) and widow of William, lord Zouche of Haryngworth (*d.* 1463). She was still living in 1488 (*Rot. Parl.* vi. 424). By her he had a daughter Mary, who married Sir William Conyers of Hornby. His third wife was Anne, daughter and heiress of Sir Robert Harling of East Harling in Norfolk, and widow of Sir William Chamberlayne, K.G., and Sir Robert Wingfield. She survived Scrope only a few weeks.

A daughter Agnes married, first, Christopher Boynton; and, secondly, Sir Richard Radcliffe [q.v.], the adviser of Richard III.

[Rotuli Parliamentorum; Rymer's Fœdera, original edit.; Scrope and Grosvenor Roll, ed. Nicolas, ii. 61, 76; Testamenta Eboracensia (Surtees Soc.), iii. 94, 149; Ramsay's Lancaster and York; other authorities in the text.] J. T–T.

SCROPE, JOHN (1662?–1752), judge, son of Thomas Scrope of Bristol, a scion of the family of Scrope or Scroop of Wormsley, Oxfordshire [see SCROPE, ADRIAN], was born about 1662. Bred a strong protestant, he entered the service of the Duke of Monmouth, and carried despatches, in the disguise of a woman, between Holland and England. On the revolution of 1688 he entered himself at the Middle Temple, where he was called to the bar in 1692. On 13 May 1708 he was appointed baron of the newly constituted court of exchequer in Scotland, with a salary of 500*l.* a year and 1000*l.* a year for giving up his practice at the English bar. He was also one of the commissioners of the great seal in the interval (20 Sept.–19 Oct. 1710) between its surrender by Lord Cowper and its delivery to his successor, Sir Simon Harcourt. On 28 March 1722 he was returned to parliament for Ripon, but retained his Scottish judgeship until 25 March 1724, when he resigned, having on the preceding 21 Jan. received the post of secretary to the treasury; he held the latter until his death. In 1727 he was returned to parliament for Bristol, of which he was afterwards elected recorder. Scrope is characterised by Tindal (cited in *Parl. Hist.* viii. 1196) as 'perhaps the coolest, the most experienced, faithful, and sagacious friend the minister (Walpole) had.' He adds that

'he was greatly trusted in all matters of the revenue, and seldom or never spoke but to facts, and when he was clear in his point.' On his motion on 23 April 1729 an increment of 115,000*l.* was voted for the civil list; he defended the salt duty bill against Pulteney's criticisms on its second reading, 2 March 1731–2; he supported the motion for the exclusion of Ireland from the colonial sugar trade, 21 Feb. 1732–3, and the subsequent proposal (23 Feb.) to draw on the sinking fund to the extent of 500,000*l.* for the service of the current year. His fidelity to Walpole during the heated contests on the excise bill of the same year (14 and 16 March), and the motion for the repeal of the Septennial Act, 13 March 1733–4, lost him the Bristol seat at the subsequent general election, when he was returned (30 April) for Lyme Regis, Dorset, which he continued to represent until his death. On Walpole's fall he was summoned by the committee of secrecy to give evidence as to the minister's disposal of the secret-service money, but declined to be sworn (14 June 1742), saying that he was fourscore years of age, and did not care whether he spent the few months he had to live in the Tower or not, but that the last thing he would do was to betray the king, and next to the king the Earl of Orford. On 8 Dec. 1744 he opposed the bill for doubling the taxes on places and pensions. He died on 21 April 1752. There is a portrait of Scrope in the treasury, presented in 1776 by the Right Hon. George Onslow.

Scrope was author of 'Exercitatio Politica de Cive Protestante in Republica Pontificia' (a tractate against the papal power), Utrecht, 1686, 4to; and joint author with Baron Clerk of 'Historical View of the Forms and Powers of the Court of Exchequer in Scotland,' Edinburgh, 1820, 4to [see Clerk, Sir John].

[Collins's Peerage, iii. 302; Visitation of Oxfordshire (Harl. Soc.); Burnet's Own Time, 1823, v. 348 *n.*; Luttrell's Relation of State Affairs, vi. 300, 304, 633; Walpole's Letters, ed. Cunningham, i. 176, 178, 198; Coxe's Memoirs of Sir Robert Walpole, ii. 519; Seyer's Bristol, ii. 577, 580; Parl. Hist. viii. 702, 1015, 1196, 1214, 1328, ix. 482, xi. 441, xii. 825, xiii. 1031; Hist. MSS. Comm. 8th Rep. pt. i. App. pp. 79, 85; Swift's Works, ed. Scott, xvi. 64, 66; Gent. Mag. 1752, p. 192; Foss's Lives of the Judges; notes kindly supplied by G. L. Ryder, esq.] J. M. R.

SCROPE, RICHARD le, first Baron Scrope of Bolton (1327?–1403), chancellor of England, was the third son of Sir Henry le Scrope (*d.* 1336) [q. v.], chief justice of the king's bench, and his wife Margaret. At the age of seventeen (November 1344) he succeeded his eldest brother, William, in their father's estates. He had already served with this brother in Brittany, but won his first laurels at Neville's Cross, where he was knighted on the field, after which he lost no time in joining the king before Calais. There was hardly a campaign in France or Scotland for forty years to follow in which Scrope was not engaged. He early attached himself to the service of John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, in whose train he fought at Najara (1367), and in nearly all his subsequent expeditions down to 1385. This association went far to determine the part he played in the critical domestic politics of the closing years of Edward III's reign. On 8 Jan. 1371 Scrope—who had once (1365) sat for his county in the commons—was summoned to the upper house, and on 27 March succeeded Bishop Brantingham as treasurer on Sir Robert Thorp taking the great seal from William of Wykeham. This substitution of lay for clerical ministers was not particularly successful. It was Scrope no doubt who, on a tax upon parishes being proposed, estimated their number at forty thousand, while in reality there were only 8,600. He laid down his office in September 1375 to take up the (joint) wardenship of the west marches against Scotland.

On Richard II's accession Scrope became steward of the household, an office to which the minority gave unusual importance. He figured prominently in the first two parliaments of the reign, in the second of which, held at Gloucester, the great seal was transferred (29 Oct. 1378) to him. He remained chancellor for little more than a year, giving way to Archbishop Sudbury on 27 Jan. 1380, and returning to the business of the Scottish border. But on 4 Dec. 1381 he again became chancellor and a member of the commission headed by Lancaster to inquire into the state of the royal household. But as the nominee of parliament and Lancaster (who between 1380 and 1384 retained his services for life in peace and war), Scrope was soon at variance with the young king. He refused to seal Richard's lavish grants, and, when royal messengers demanded the great seal from him, would only surrender it into the king's own hands (11 July 1382). He told Richard that he would never again take office under him (Walsingham, ii. 68).

Retiring into the north, Scrope resumed his activity as warden on the border, and was in both the Scottish expeditions of 1384 and 1385. It was on the latter occasion that he challenged the right of Sir Robert Grosvenor to bear the same arms as himself—viz. azure,

bend or. This was not the first dispute of the kind in which Scrope had engaged. At Calais in 1347 his right to the crest of a crab issuing from a coronet had been unsuccessfully challenged (*Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, i. 62). Again, before Paris in 1360, a Cornish squire named Carminowe, who bore the same arms, had questioned his right to them. It was then decided that both were entitled to bear them—Carminowe because his ancestors had borne them since the time of King Arthur, and because Cornwall was 'un grosse terre et jadis portant le noun dune roialme;' and Scrope because his forefathers had used this blazon since the days of William the Conqueror (*ib.* i. 50, 214). The bearings were simple, and their recurrence easily explicable in districts so isolated from each other as Yorkshire, Cheshire, and Cornwall. Nevertheless, after a trial extending over nearly five years [see under Grosvenor, Sir Robert, for details], in which doubts were thrown on the gentility of Scrope as the son of a 'man of law,' judgment was finally given (27 May 1390) entirely in his favour. He got his adversary excused a fine incurred by non-payment of the costs, and the two were publicly reconciled before the king in parliament. The records of the trial and depositions of the witnesses, printed by Sir Harris Nicolas in 1832, throw much incidental light upon the early history of the Scrope family and upon the details of Edward III's wars. Scrope's son, the Earl of Wiltshire, abandoned the crab crest for a plume of feathers azure, leaving the former to the Masham branch. There is an impression of the 'sigillum de Crabb' in the 'Testamenta Eboracensia' (ii. 187).

The celebrated controversy had been interrupted by the political crisis of 1386–9, in which Scrope sided with the king's opponents, and sat on their commission of government. His opposition at least was disinterested, for he spoke out boldly in parliament on behalf of his much maligned brother-in-law, Michael de la Pole, earl of Suffolk [q.v.] (*Rot. Parl.* iii. 216–17). On Richard's resuming power and ruling with more deference to his subjects' susceptibilities, Scrope was more than once employed in negotiations with France and Scotland, and occasionally acted as a trier of petitions in parliament. But his advancing age induced him to devote much of his time to good works and the completion of his great castle at Bolton. The abbey of St. Agatha at Easby, close to Richmond, in which his father, its second founder, lay buried, had already experienced his generosity. He now (about 1393) set aside an annual rent of 100*l.* to provide twelve additional canons to pray for himself and his family. The fine late decorated refectory is said to have been his work (*Testamenta Eboracensia*, i. 274). He got the church of Wensley made collegiate, and furnished the chapels of St. Anne and St. Oswald at Bolton with a priest apiece (Dugdale, i. 655). His castle of Bolton, placed on the north side of Wensleydale five miles west of Wensley, was now rapidly approaching completion. The license to crenellate had been granted in 1379, but the contract with the builder is at least a year earlier. Though he lived to see it finished, Scrope passed most of his later life at 'Scrope's Inn,' Holborn, or at the manor of Pishobury in Hertfordshire, purchased in 1394 (Wylie, ii. 193). As the last stones of Bolton Castle were being placed in position, Richard took his belated revenge upon his old adversaries of 1386. But Scrope's former moderation or his eldest son's favour with the king procured an exception in his favour. On 29 Nov. 1397 a full pardon issued to 'Sir Richard le Scrop, an adherent of the Duke of Gloucester' (*Fœdera*, viii. 26). On the king's overthrow two years later, the odium incurred by Scrope's son as a chief agent of his tyranny threatened his father with a new danger. He appeared in the first parliament of Henry IV, and 'humbly and in tears' entreated the new king not to visit the sins of the son upon his father and brothers. Henry graciously consented that they should not be disinherited for Wiltshire's treason (*Rot. Parl.* iii. 453). With one exception—on the occasion of the attainder of the conspirators of Christmas 1399 in January 1401—this was Scrope's last public appearance. He died on 30 May 1403, and was buried in the abbey of St. Agatha. In 'Testamenta Eboracensia' (ii. 186) is a notice of a pension which he had to grant to a person seriously wounded by himself and his servants in York Minster.

By his wife Blanche (*d.* after 1378), daughter of Sir William de la Pole of Hull, Scrope had four sons, of whom the eldest, William, earl of Wiltshire (*d.* 1399), is separately noticed.

The second son, Roger, succeeded him as second baron, but died in the same year (3 Dec.), when his son Richard (*b.* 1393?), by one of the coheiresses of Robert, lord Tiptoft, became third baron; Richard's grandson was John le Scrope, fifth baron Scrope of Bolton [q. v.]

The third son, Stephen, whom his father married to a second Tiptoft coheiress, became in her right lord of Bentley, near Doncaster,

and of Castle Combe, Wiltshire, where he founded a family, which has lasted to our own day [see SCROPE, WILLIAM, 1772–1852]. In 1397 he served as justice of Munster, Leinster, and Uriell. He was one of the few who remained faithful to Richard II until his arrest, but under Henry IV became joint keeper of Roxburghe Castle (1400) and deputy-lieutenant of Ireland (1401). He won a victory there at Callan in September 1407, and died of the plague at Castledermot on 4 Sept. 1408. His widow married (January 1409) Sir John Fastolf [q. v.] He left a son Stephen and a daughter Elizabeth (WYLIE, ii. 124, iii. 162, 168; DEVON, *Issues*, p. 280; *Testamenta Eboracensia*, iii. 38; HOLINSHED, *Ireland*, p. 66).

The fourth son, Richard, is only mentioned in a deed, dated 31 Oct. 1366 (*Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, ii. 53). In consequence of an ambiguous expression in Scrope's will (*Testamenta Eboracensia*, i. 272), Richard le Scrope [q. v.], archbishop of York, has often been considered his son, even since Sir Harris Nicolas's convincing proof of his real parentage (*Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, ii. 121).

Some authorities doubtfully give Scrope a second wife; but they are not agreed whether she was a Margaret, daughter of Sir John Montfort, or a lady named Spencer. The fact seems doubtful.

[Rotuli Parliamentorum; Rymer's Fœdera, original edit.; Walsingham's Historia Anglicana (Rolls Ser.); Testamenta Eboracensia (Surtees Soc.); Scrope and Grosvenor Roll, ed. Nicolas, 2 vols. 1832 (the second volume contains pedigrees of both branches of the Scropes, lives of their members down to 1405, and biographies of most of Scrope's witnesses); Quarterly Review, April 1836; Dugdale's Baronage; Wylie's History of Henry IV.] J. T–T.

SCROPE, RICHARD LE (1350?–1405), archbishop of York, probably born about 1350, was fourth son of Henry, first baron Scrope of Masham [q. v.], by his wife Joan, and was godson of Richard, first baron Scrope of Bolton [q. v.], who refers to him in his will as 'my most dear father and son' (*Test. Ebor.* i. 272; *Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, ii. 121; WYLIE, ii. 194; cf. *Historians of York*, iii. 288). He was thus uncle to Henry le Scrope, third baron Scrope of Masham [q. v.], executed in 1415. He is said to have graduated in arts at Oxford and in law at Cambridge (*ib.* ii. 306). The former statement lacks proof. By 1375 he was a licentiate in civil law, and by 1386 doctor in both laws (GODWIN, i. 321; EVESHAM, p. 71). His uncle of Bolton presented him to the rectory of Ainderby Steeple, near Northallerton, in 1367, but he was not in deacon's orders until 1376 (WHITAKER, i. 260). In November 1375 he became an official of Bishop Arundel at Ely, and in 1376 warden of the free chapel in Tickhill Castle, then in John of Gaunt's hands (GODWIN; HUNTER, i. 236). Ordained priest in March 1377, he is said to have held a canonry at York, and next year became chancellor of the university of Cambridge (LE NEVE, iii. 599; WYLIE, ii. 200). In 1382 he went to Rome, and was made auditor of the curia. Appointed dean of Chichester (1383?), a papal bull on the death of William Rede or Reade [q. v.] in August 1385 provided Scrope to that see, and apparently the canons elected him (LE NEVE, i. 256; HIGDEN, ix. 66). But the king insisted on putting in his confessor, Thomas Rushhook [q. v.], bishop of Llandaff. Scrope was still at Rome, and was nominated notary of the curia on 28 April 1386 (WYLIE, ii. 201). Urban VI promoted him by bull at Genoa on 18 Aug. in that year to be bishop of Coventry and Lichfield, and consecrated him next day (*Fœdera*, vii. 541). The temporalities were restored to him on 15 Nov. In August 1387 he was installed in the presence of Richard II, then on progress, and swore to recover the lost estates of the see and refrain himself from alienations. 'Sure,' said Richard, 'you have taken a big oath, my lord' (*Anglia Sacra*, i. 450). He went on a mission to Scotland in 1392, and acted as a conservator of the truce with that country in 1394 (*Fœdera*, vii. 765; *Issues*, p. 247). In 1397 he journeyed to Rome to seek the pope's consent to Richard's pet project of canonising Edward II (*ib.* p. 264). The king spent the following winter with him at Lichfield on his way to the Shrewsbury parliament. On the death of Robert Waldby [q. v.], archbishop of York, Richard ignored the choice of the chapter, and at his request the pope translated Scrope thither by bull (2 June 1398).

Acquiescing in the revolution of 1399, Scrope was a member of the parliamentary commission which went to the Tower on 29 Sept. and received Richard's renunciation of the crown. In parliament next day, after an address on the text, 'I have set my words in thy mouth,' he read this surrender, and afterwards joined the archbishop of Canterbury in enthroning the new king. When Henry, on his Scottish expedition in the summer of 1400, found himself straitened for money, Scrope exerted himself to fill the void (WYLIE, i. 135). His loyalty would appear, however, to have been shaken by the discontent of the Percys, with whom he was closely connected. Not only were they munificent benefactors of his cathedral

church, but his younger brother, John, had married the widow of Northumberland's second son, and his sister Isabel was the wife of Sir Robert Plumpton of Plumpton, a wealthy tenant of Northumberland, near Spofforth. Hardyng, a retainer of the Percys, claimed (p. 351), after Scrope's death, that their rising in 1403 was entered upon 'by the good advice and counsel of Master Richard Scrope.' But he does not seem to have given them any overt support. They appealed, indeed, in their manifesto to his testimony that they had in vain sought peaceful redress of their grievances, but they joined his name with Archbishop Arundel's (*ib.* p. 353). When Henry came to York to receive Northumberland's submission, Scrope celebrated high mass in the minster (*ib.* ii. 211). It is hardly fair (Wylie, ii. 210) to connect his presence (with his suffragans) at the translation of the miracle-working bones of John of Bridlington [q. v.] on 11 May 1404 with the treasonable interpretation given two years before to the obscure prophecies attributed to this personage. Henry himself had in the interval granted privileges in honour of the 'glorious and blessed confessor' (*ib.* i. 272; *Annales*, p. 388).

Scrope joined the primate in stoutly resisting the spoliation of the church proposed by the 'unlearned parliament' of October 1404. Mr. Wylie thinks that he attended a council of the discontented lords in London as late as Easter (19 April) 1405; but this is putting some strain upon Hardyng's words (p. 362). It is certain, however, that in taking up arms at York in May, Scrope was acting in concert with Northumberland and Bardolf, who took advantage of Henry's departure for Wales to raise the standard of rebellion beyond the Tyne. One of the rebel lords, Thomas Mowbray, earl marshal [q. v.], was with him. The archbishop first made sure of local support by privately circulating a damaging indictment of Henry's government, which he declared himself ready to support to the death. It hit some very real blots on Henry's administration, and the known discontent which these had excited, and the high character of Scrope, gave reason to hope that the uprising would be general. Assured of armed support, he placarded York with the manifesto of the discontented in English. After a protest against holding parliament in places like Coventry under royal influence and interference with free election, three heads of reform were laid down. The estates of the realm, and particularly the clergy, were to be treated with less injustice, the nobles to be freed from the fear of destruction, and the heavy burden of taxation to be lightened by greater conomy and the suppression of malversation. If these reforms were effected, they had the assurance of the Welsh rebels that Wales would quietly submit to English rule (*Annales Henrici*, p. 403; Walsingham, ii. 422). The procedure foreshadowed followed the precedent of those armed demonstrations against Richard II for the redress of grievances in which Henry himself had engaged. If Scrope indeed were really the author of another and much longer manifesto attributed to him (*Historians of York*, ii. 292), he was not going to be content with less than the deposition of a 'perjured king' and the restoration of the 'right line.' But Mr. Wylie (ii. 214) has thrown great doubt upon his authorship of this document. It would seem to follow, though Mr. Wylie does not draw the conclusion, that Scrope was not prepared to go the lengths which the Percys went when left to themselves, unless indeed we assume that his quasi-constitutional plan of campaign was a mere blind, like Henry's first declarations on landing in 1399.

Scrope expounded his manifesto in the minster, the neighbouring clergy in their churches. Gentle and simple, priests and villeins, flocked armed into York. The citizens rose in a body. The archbishop appeared among them in armour, urging and encouraging them to stand fast, with the promise of indulgence, and, if they fell, full remission of their sins. A 'day of assignment' had been arranged with Northumberland, but the rapid movements of the Earl of Westmorland and the king's second son, John, the wardens of the Scottish marches, disconcerted their plans. On 27 May Mowbray, Scrope, and his nephew, Sir William Plumpton, led out their 'priestly rout,' which soon grew to eight thousand men, under the banner of the five wounds, to join the forces gathering in Mowbray's country near Topcliffe. But at Shipton Moor, some six miles north-west of York, on the edge of the forest of Galtres, they encountered the royal army. Westmorland, not caring to attack with inferior numbers, is said to have waited for three days and then resorted to guile. He sent to demand the cause of all this warlike apparatus. Scrope replied that their object was peace, not war, and sent him a copy of their manifesto. The earl feigned approval of its tenor, and proposed a personal conference with the archbishop between the armies. Scrope accepted, and took the reluctant Mowbray with him. Westmorland

assured him that nothing could be more reasonable than his proposals, and that he would do his best to get the king to adopt them. The little party then shook hands over this happy ending, and the earl proposed that they should drink together in order to advertise their followers of their concord. This done, he suggested that as all was now over, Scrope could send and dismiss his wearied men to their homes. Nothing loth, they at once began to disperse. Scrope did not realise that he had been duped until Westmorland laid hands on his shoulder and formally arrested him. This remarkable story is related by writers absolutely contemporary with the events; but Otterbourne (i. 256), who wrote under Henry V, represents the surrender as voluntary. Another version, based on the report of an eyewitness, ascribed the treachery to Lord Fitzhugh and the king's son John of Lancaster, duke of Bedford [q. v.] (*Historians of York*, iii. 288). Scrope and his companions were sent to Pontefract to await the decision of the king, who was hurrying up from Wales. On his arrival Scrope requested an interview, which Henry refused, sending Sir Thomas Beaufort to take away his crozier, which he only relinquished after a stiff tussle, declaring that none could deprive him of it but the pope, who had given it (*Annales Henrici*, p. 407; cf. Walsingham, ii. 423). Determined that York should witness the punishment of those who had incited her to treason, Henry carried his prisoners (6 June) to Scrope's manor of Bishopthorpe, some three miles south of the city. Before leaving Pontefract he had appointed a commission, including Beaufort and Chief-justice Gascoigne, to try the rebels, to which the Earl of Arundel and five other peers were now added (Wylie, ii. 230). Arundel and Beaufort received power to act as deputies of the absent constable and marshal. The trial was fixed for Monday, 8 June. The archbishop of Canterbury, who arrived in hot haste early that morning, to deprecate any summary treatment of a great prelate of the church, was persuaded by the king to take some rest on the understanding that nothing should be done without his co-operation. But Henry was deeply incensed against Scrope, and Lord Arundel and Beaufort took care his anger did not cool. He called upon Gascoigne to pass sentence upon Scrope and his fellow-traitors. The chief justice, who knew the law, refused to sit in judgment on a prelate (Gascoigne, p. 226). Another member of the commission, Sir William Fulthorpe, a man learned in the law, though not a judge, was then instructed to act as president. While the king and Archbishop Arundel were breakfasting the three prisoners were brought before Fulthorpe, Arundel, Beaufort, and Sir Ralph Euer, and Fulthorpe at once declared them guilty of treason, and by the royal order sentenced them to death (*ib.*, but cf. *Annales Henrici*, p. 409).

Scrope repudiated any intention of injuring the king or the realm, and besought the bystanders to pray that God's vengeance for his death should not fall upon King Henry and his house. No time was lost in carrying out this hasty and irregular sentence. Attired in a scarlet cloak and hood, and mounted on a bare-backed collier's horse 'scarcely worth forty pence,' Scrope was conducted towards York with his two companions in misfortune. He indulged in no threats or excommunications, but as he went he sang the psalm 'Exaudi.' He cheered the sinking courage of young Mowbray, and rallied the king's physician, an old acquaintance, on his having no further need for his medicine (*Chron.* ed. Giles, p. 46). Just under the walls of York the procession turned into a field belonging to the nunnery of Clementhorpe. It was the feast of St. William, the patron saint of York, and the people thronged from the city to the place of execution and trod down the young corn, in spite of the protests of the husbandmen and Scrope's vain request that the scene might be removed to the high road. While his companions met their death he prayed and remarked to the bystanders that he died for the laws and good government of England. When his turn came he begged the headsman to deal five blows at his neck in memory of the five sacred wounds, kissed him thrice, and, commending his spirit to God, bent his neck for the fatal stroke (Gascoigne, p. 227). As his head fell at the fifth stroke a faint smile, some thought, still played over his features (*Annales*, p. 410).

With the king's permission, his remains were carried by four of the vicars choral to the lady-chapel of the minster, where they were interred behind the last column on the north-east in the spot which became the burial-place of his family (Wylie, ii. 284). A more injudicious piece of complaisance it would be hard to imagine. It gave a local centre to the natural tendency of the discontented Yorkshiremen to elevate their fallen leader, the first archbishop to die a traitor's death, into a sainted martyr. Miracles began to be worked at his tomb, the concourse at which grew so dangerous that after three months the government had it covered with logs of wood and heavy stones to keep the people off. This only gave

rise to a new legend that an aged man, whom Scrope in a vision commanded to remove these obstacles, lifted weights which three strong men could barely raise (GASCOIGNE, p. 226). Subsequently the prohibition on bringing offerings to his tomb was removed, and they were devoted to the reconstruction of the great tower. The tomb still exists. Henry having averted the threatened papal excommunication, Scrope never received ecclesiastical recognition as a saint or martyr, despite the appeals of the convocation of York in 1462. But he was popularly known in the north as Saint Richard Scrope, under which appellation missals contained prayers to him as the 'Glory of York' and the 'Martyr of Christ.'

Scrope's high character, his gravity, simplicity, and purity of life, and pleasant manners are borne witness to by the writers most friendly to the king (*Annales Henrici*, p. 403; WALSINGHAM, ii. 269). Walsingham speaks vaguely of his 'incomparable knowledge of literature.' His manifesto, preserved only in a Latin translation, was meant for the popular ear, and the translator's criticism of the 'barbarousness and inelegance' of his original is probably a reflection on the English language rather than on Scrope's style. A late York writer attributes to him several sequences and prayers in use in the minster (*Historians of York*, ii. 429). It was during Scrope's archiepiscopate that the rebuilding of the choir, in abeyance since the death of Archbishop Thoresby, was resumed and carried to completion. The Scropes, with other great Yorkshire families, were munificent supporters of the work. An alleged portrait of Scrope in a missal written before 1445 is mentioned in 'Notes and Queries,' 2nd ser. i. 489. A drawing in watercolours by Powell, from a stained-glass window formerly in York minster, is in the National Portrait Gallery.

[There is a meagre notice of Scrope's earlier career in the Lives of the Bishops of Lichfield by Whitlocke (c. 1560) in Anglia Sacra, i. 450; a brief and inaccurate life is contained in the early sixteenth-century continuation of Stubbs's Lives of the Archbishops of York by an unknown author (Dr. Raine suggests William de Melton [q. v.]) This is printed in the Historians of the Church of York, vol. ii. (Rolls Ser.) The fullest and best modern biography will be found in the second volume of Mr. Wylie's History of Henry IV, though his judgment of Scrope is perhaps too severe. It should be compared with Bishop Stubbs's estimate in his Constitutional History, vol. iii. There is a short life by Sir Harris Nicolas in the second volume (p. 121) of his edition of the Scrope and Grosvenor Roll, 1832. The chief original authorities are the Annales Henrici IV, Continuatio Eulogii Historiarum, and Walsingham's Historia Anglicana in the Rolls Ser.; Otterbourne's History and the Monk of Evesham's Chronicle, ed. Hearne; Thomas Gascoigne's Account of the Trial and Execution printed at the end of his Loci e Libro Veritatum, ed. Thorold Rogers, and confirmed in many points by the Chronicle edited by Dr. Giles, 1848; Gascoigne also preserved, and his editor has printed, the exposition by Northumberland, &c., of the causes for which Scrope died. Another account, based on the report of an eyewitness, of Scrope's rebellion and execution is printed from a manuscript in Lincoln College, Oxford, in Historians of York, iii. 288–91. A lament for Scrope occurs in Hymns to the Virgin (Early English Text Soc. 1867), another was printed in the Athenæum, 4 Aug. 1888; Higden's Polychronicon (Rolls Ser.); see also Rymer's Fœdera, original ed.; Devon's Issues of the Exchequer; Godwin, De Præsulibus Angliæ, ed. Richardson, 1743; Le Neve's Fasti Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ, ed. Hardy; Testamenta Eboracensia (Surtees Soc.); Hunter's South Yorkshire; Whitaker's Richmondshire.] J. T–T.

SCROPE, THOMAS (*d.* 1491), bishop of Dromore, was also called BRADLEY from his birthplace in the parish of Medburne, Leicestershire; in the Austin priory there he is supposed to have received his early education. His epitaph (WEEVER, p. 768) affiliates him to the noble family of Scrope. In the bull appointing him bishop he is called Thomas Scropbolton (TANNER, p. 658), and the barons Scrope of Bolton were lords of Medburne and patrons of Bradley priory. His great age at his death and the arms on his tomb formerly in Lowestoft church (Scrope of Bolton quartering Tiptoft, differenced by a crescent) suggest that his father may have been one of the two sons of Richard le Scrope, first baron Scrope of Bolton [q. v.], who married Tiptoft heiresses. Roger, who became second baron, had, however, a son Thomas who was an esquire as late as 1448. Nor do the pedigrees give a son Thomas to Roger's younger brother, Stephen, ancestor of the Scropes of Castle Combe, and his wife, Millicent Tiptoft. He may perhaps have been illegitimate.

It does not appear what authority Bale and Pits had for the statement that, before becoming a Carmelite at Norwich, Scrope had been successively a Benedictine monk and a Dominican friar. Possibly his dedication of two of his works on the Carmelite order to Richard Blakney, a Benedictine, suggested his having been a member of the same order (TANNER). One of these books was written as early as 1426. He dedicated a translation of a foreign treatise on his order to Cyril Garland, prior of the Norwich Carmelites. But

before the date just mentioned he had adopted the stricter life of an anchorite, and about 1425 excited the indignation of Thomas Netter or Walden [q. v.] by going about the streets clothed in sackcloth and girt with an iron chain, crying out that 'the New Jerusalem, the Bride of the Lamb, was shortly to come down from heaven prepared for her spouse.' According to his epitaph, he was drawn from his retirement by Eugenius IV, to whom he dedicated another of his books. It was probably Eugenius who sent him as a papal legate to Rhodes. Nicholas V in January 1449 (?1450) made him bishop of Dromore in Ireland, and he was consecrated at Rome on 1 Feb. 1450 (TANNER; cf. WARE, i. 261). He still held that see when, on 24 Nov. 1454, he was instituted to the rectory of Sparham, Norfolk. He is usually said, on the authority of Pits, to have resigned Dromore about 1460, but there is some reason to suppose that this date is too late [see under MISYN, RICHARD]. He had been vicar-general of the bishop of Norwich since 1450, and remained his suffragan until 1477 (STUBBS, *Registrum Sacrum*, p. 148; TANNER). He was instituted to the vicarage of Trowse, Norfolk, on 3 June 1466, and collated to that of Lowestoft on 27 May 1478 (*ib.*) In his old age he is said to have given all his goods to pious works, and to have gone about the country barefoot every Friday inculcating the law of the decalogue (BALE). He died on 25 Jan. 1491, nearly a hundred years old, and was buried in Lowestoft church. A long Latin epitaph was inscribed on his monument.

Scrope wrote: 1. 'De Carmelitarum Institutione.' 2. 'De Sanctis Patribus Ordinis Carmeli' (Bodl. MS. Laud, G. 9), written in 1426. 3. 'De Origine et Vita Sanctorum xvii Ordinis Carmeli.' 4. Another work on the same order, dedicated to Eugenius IV, of which Bale had a manuscript. 5. 'Compendium Historiarum et Jurium,' in nine books. 6. 'Privilegia Papalia.' 7. 'De Fundatione, Antiquitate, Regula et Confirmatione ordinis Carmeli' ('MS. olim in auctione Cecilii,' note by TANNER). 8. 'De Sectarum Introitu ad Angliam.' 9. 'De sua Profectione ad Rhodios.' 10. 'Sermones de Decem Præceptis.' 11. An English version of the 'De peculiaribus Carmelitarum Gestis' of Philippe Ribot of Châlons (MS. Lamb. 192 f.), dedicated to Cyril Garland.

[Scrope and Grosvenor Roll, ed. Nicolas, ii. 72; Leland's Commentarii de Scriptoribus Britannicis; Bale's Scriptores Majoris Britanniæ; Pits, De Illustr. Angliæ Scriptoribus; Tanner's Bibliotheca Britannico-Hibernica; Fuller's Worthies; Ware's Catalogue of Irish Bishops; Cotton's Fasti Ecclesiæ Hibernicæ, iii. 278; Nichols's History of Leicestershire, ii. 509; Blore's History of Rutland; Tanner's Notitia Monastica, ed. 1787; Blomefield's Norfolk.]

J. T–T.

SCROPE, WILLIAM LE, EARL OF WILTSHIRE (1351 ?–1399), was eldest son of Richard, first baron Scrope of Bolton [q. v.], by Blanche de la Pole, sister of Michael, earl of Suffolk [q. v.] The date of his birth is unknown, but cannot have been much after 1350 if he was with John of Gaunt in his dash upon Harfleur in 1369 (*Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, i. 166). Four years later (July 1373) Scrope accompanied John into Guienne, and was there again in 1378 (*ib.* pp. 118, 122, 136). He seems to have passed thence into Italy to the camp of Charles, duke of Durazzo, who, in command of his uncle Louis of Hungary's armies, was co-operating in 1379 with the Genoese fleet in a great blockade of Venice (*ib.* i. 172; DARU, *Histoire de Venise*, ii. 122). Whether his crusade to Prussia preceded or followed this adventure there are no means of determining (*Scrope and Grosvenor Roll*, i. 172). He was made seneschal of Gascony on 28 May 1383, and held this office until 1392. From 1386 to 1389 he combined with it the captaincy of Cherbourg, and from the latter date that of Brest. He was not continuously absent from England during these years, however, for about 1389 he did some injury to the bishop of Durham and his servants, sufficiently grave to be atoned for by presenting a jewel worth 500*l.* at the shrine of St. Cuthbert (DUGDALE, i. 661). On his final return Richard made him vice-chamberlain of the household (February 1393) and, after a fashion set in the previous reign, retained his services for life in consideration of a grant of the castle, town, and barton of Marlborough in Wiltshire. In the same year Scrope bought the Isle of Man 'with its crown' (his legal title was Dominus de Man) from the childless William Montacute, second earl of Salisbury [q. v.], and subsequently figured in treaties as one of the allies of his sovereign (ST. DENYS, ii. 364). He quartered the legs of Man with the arms of Scrope. 'Miles providus et prædives' the chronicler calls him (*Annales Ricardi II*, p. 157). His position in the household, and possibly his relationship to Richard's former friend Suffolk, gave Scrope the ear of the king. In 1394 he became constable of Beaumaris, a knight of the Garter, and constable of Dublin Castle. Crossing to Ireland with Richard, he was promoted (January 1395) to be chamberlain of the household, and made chamberlain of Ireland (June 1395). With the Earls of Rutland and Notting-

ham, Scrope negotiated the French marriage (1396) which contributed so greatly to Richard's unpopularity. He returned from another French mission in the spring of 1397 to become one of the chief agents of Richard's long-delayed vengeance upon his old antagonists of 1388. Scrope was one of the seven who appealed Gloucester, Arundel, and Warwick of treason at Nottingham in August, and again, clothed in suits of the king's colours, before the famous September parliament of that fatal year. Warwick was sentenced to perpetual imprisonment under his care in the Isle of Man. His servants were accused of treating the earl inhumanly. Scrope's reward was the earldom of Wiltshire (the only county in which he had as yet estates) and a share of the confiscations. As a special favour, his earldom was granted (29 Sept.) to him and his heirs male for ever, while the other appellants received peerages limited to the heirs male of their bodies. Barnard Castle in the bishopric of Durham, Pains Castle and other lands in the march of Wales, and two Essex manors (all of which had belonged to Warwick) fell to his share, along with several lucrative offices in Wales and the newly created principality of Chester (Dugdale, i. 662; *Rot. Parl.* iii. 354). In the adjourned session at Shrewsbury (January 1398) Richard forced Wiltshire on the clergy as their proctor, and appointed him ambassador to Scotland and captain of Calais Castle. On 17 Sept. he became treasurer of England. John of Gaunt dying in February 1399 and his banished son being disinherited, Wiltshire received custody of his castles of Pickering and Knaresborough with the curious qualification 'to hold till such time as the Duke of Hereford shall by law recover them out of the king's hands' (Dugdale, i. 662; *Traison*, p. 286). Before starting for Ireland, Richard appointed Wiltshire an executor of his will with a legacy of two thousand marks, and left him to assist the regent (the Duke of York). On hearing of Henry of Lancaster's landing, York gathered troops to take the field against him, and told off (12 July) Wiltshire, with Sir John Bussy, Sir Thomas Green, and Sir William Bagot, to guard the young queen at Wallingford (*Fœdera*, viii. 83). But Henry's rapidity and the recalcitrance of York's troops compelled a change of plan, and they all went into the west to await Richard's arrival. While the regent halted at Berkeley, Wiltshire and his three companions pushed on to Bristol. On 28 July Henry appeared before the city and summoned Sir Peter Courtenay to surrender the castle, promising free egress to all but Wiltshire, Bussy, and Green (Bagot had escaped). On these terms the castle was given up and the three put under arrest. Next day, in deference, it is alleged, to the clamour of the populace, who would gladly have torn them limb from limb, and in view of the danger of carrying them about in the pursuit of Richard, who had now landed, they were given a hasty trial before a court purporting to be that of the constable and marshal, condemned as traitors, and immediately executed (*Annales*, p. 246; Evesham, p. 153). Henry sent their heads to London. Even the friendly annalist betrays an uneasy consciousness that this short shrift was not readily justified. Henry had probably not yet claimed the crown, and the judges were only constable and marshal designate, the actual holders of these offices being with the king. The fact that part of the inheritance wrongfully withheld from him was in Wiltshire's possession must have given Henry a personal grudge against him. There is no doubt that in the popular mind Wiltshire and his three associates were specially identified with Richard's later tyranny, and their unpopularity appears very clearly in the political songs and in 'Richard the Redeless' (ii. 154), where Langland alludes punningly to the short work that Henry made of the 'Schroff [rubbish] and schroup.' The Lancastrian historians are unmeasured in their denunciation of Wiltshire. The human race hardly contained one more infamous and cruel, according to Walsingham (ii. 213). He was charged with farming the royal escheats and planning the destruction of many magnates in order to swell his profits (*Annales*, p. 240). Norfolk had brought this latter accusation against him in 1397 (*Rot. Parl.* iii. 360). But in the absence of proofs we may leave it doubtful whether he was quite so black as they painted him.

His sentence was confirmed by an attainder in the first parliament of Henry IV (*ib.* iii. 353). The portrait reproduced in Scrope's 'History of Castle Combe' seems to be one of the set of constables of Queenborough painted by Lucas Cornelisz [q. v.] under Henry VIII, and is probably quite imaginary. Wiltshire left no issue by his wife, Isabel, daughter and coheiress of Sir Maurice Russell of Dorset. All his lands being forfeited, the king granted her a small pension (*ib.* iii. 383). She married, secondly, Thomas de la Ryviere; and, thirdly, Stephen Haytfield, dying on 1 May 1437.

[Rotuli Parliamentorum; Rymer's Fœdera, original edit.; Scrope and Grosvenor Roll, ed. Nicolas, 1832; Walsingham's Historia Anglicana and Annales Ricardi II (with Trokelowe)

in Rolls Series; Monk of Evesham, ed. Hearne; Chronique de la Traison (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Dugdale's Baronage; Beltz's Memorials of the Order of the Garter; Notes and Queries, 4th ser. iii. 437, 599; Nichols's Royal Wills.]

J. T–T.

SCROPE, WILLIAM (1772–1852), artist and sportsman, son of Richard Scrope, D.D., was born in 1772. He was a direct descendant of Richard, first baron Scrope of Bolton [q. v.], lord treasurer to Edward III, and succeeded to the property of the Scropes of Castle Combe, Wiltshire, on the death of his father in 1787. In 1795 the Scrope estates of Cockerington, Lincolnshire, also passed to him [see under SCROPE, ADRIAN]. Scrope was an excellent classical scholar, a keen sportsman, and one of the ablest amateur artists of his time. He painted views in Scotland, Italy, Sicily, and elsewhere, exhibiting occasionally at the Royal Academy, and later at the British Institution, of which he was one of the most active directors. He was frequently assisted in his work by William Simson, R.S.A. [q. v.] Throughout his life Scrope was a devotee of deer-stalking and salmon-fishing, and he published two well-known books, 'The Art of Deerstalking,' 1838, and 'Days and Nights of Salmon-fishing in the Tweed,' 1843, both illustrated with plates after Edwin and Charles Landseer, Wilkie, W. Simson, and others. They are valuable contributions to the literature of their subjects, and have been reissued, the former in 1885, the latter in 1883. Scrope rented a place near Melrose, where he lived on terms of great intimacy with Sir Walter Scott (LOCKHART, *Life of Scott*, 1845). He was a member of the Academy of St. Luke at Rome, and a fellow of the Linnean Society. He died at his house in Belgrave Square, London, on 20 July 1852. He was the last male representative of his family. He married, in 1794, Emma Long, daughter of Charles Long, esq., of Grittleton, Wiltshire, and had an only daughter and heir, Emma Phipps; she married, in 1821, George Poulett Thomson, who then assumed the name and arms of Scrope [see SCROPE, GEORGE JULIUS POULETT].

[Gent. Mag. 1852, ii. 201; Athenæum, 1852, p. 800; G. P. Scrope's History of Castle Combe, 1852; Graves's Dict. of Artists.] F. M. O'D.

SCRYMGEOUR or SCRIMGER, HENRY (1506–1572), professor of civil law at Geneva, was descended from the ancient family of the Scrymgeours or Scrimgers of Dudhope [see SCRYMGEOUR, SIR JAMES]. He was the second son of Walter Scrimger of Glasswell, provost of Dundee, and was born in that city in 1506. His sister Isobel married Richard Melville of Baldovie, and was mother of James Melville [q. v.], professor of theology at St. Andrews. Another sister, Margaret, became the wife of John Young, burgess of Edinburgh, in 1541, and her second son was Sir Peter Young of Seatoun, tutor of James VI. After a preliminary training in the Dundee grammar school, Scrimger was sent to the university of St. Andrews, where he passed his course of philosophy with great applause. He then proceeded to the university of Paris, and subsequently studied civil law at Bourges under Eginar Baron and François Duaren. There he formed an acquaintance with Jacques Amyot, professor of Greek and afterwards a cardinal. Being appointed secretary to Bernard Bocnetel, bishop of Rennes, he visited Italy with that prelate, who had been appointed ambassador from the court of France. Though professing the catholic religion, Scrimger had been influenced by the reforming spirit of his college companions, George Wishart, George Buchanan, John Erskine of Dun, and Provost Haliburton; and while he was at Padua he came in contact with Francesco Speira, who, it was stated, 'died under great horror of mind in consequence of his recantation of the protestant religion.'

Having resolved to adopt the new doctrines, he was invited by the syndics and magistrates of Geneva to settle there, and was appointed professor of philosophy. A year or two afterwards his house was burnt down, and he was reduced to great straits; but two of his former pupils sent him money, and Ulrick Fugger, a munificent patron of learning, invited him to Augsburg, where, during a residence of several years, he formed a noble library of printed books and manuscripts. On his return to Geneva he resumed the duties of his professorship of philosophy in 1563. His name appears as one of the witnesses to Calvin's will in 1564, and he was nominated to the chair of civil law in the university of Geneva in 1565. The freedom of the city was conferred upon him, and on 3 Jan. 1569–70 he was elected a member of the council of forty (*Fragmens Biographiques et Historiques extraits des Registres du Conseil d'État de la République de Genève*, 1815, p. 16).

His nephew, James Melville, in an account of Andrew Melville, says: 'In Genev he abead fyve years. . . . Ther he was weill acquented with my eam, Mr. Hendrie Scrymgeour, wha, be his lerning in the laws and polecie and service of manie noble princes, haid atteined to grait ritches, conquesit a

prettie roum within a lig [league] to Genev, and biggit thairon a trim house called "the Vilet," and a fear ludging within the town, quhilks all with a douchtar, his onlie bern, he left to the Syndiques of that town' (*Autobiography and Diary*, Wodrow Soc. 1842, p. 42). He enjoyed the friendship of literary men of all shades of opinion throughout Europe, and was in close companionship with Calvin and Beza, as well as with George Buchanan, Andrew Melville, and other leading reformers in Scotland. While at Geneva he composed valuable notes upon Athenæus, Strabo, Plutarch, Diogenes Laertius, the Basilics, Cornutus, Palæphatus, Demosthenes, Cicero's 'Philosophica,' and Eusebius's 'Ecclesiastical History.' These Scrimger intended to publish; but that intention was frustrated, owing to a dispute between him and Henry Stephen the printer, who suspected him of a design to set up a rival establishment. Most of these notes came eventually into the possession of Isaac Casaubon, who published some of them as his own. Scrimger died at Geneva in November 1572.

Scrimger's only published works are: 1. 'Exemplvm Memorabile Desperationis in Francisco Spera propter abivratam fidei Confessionem, Henrico Scoto [i.e. Henry Scrimger] avtore,' printed in 'Francisci Spieræ . . . Historia . . .' (Geneva? 1549?), 8vo, pp. 62–95 (cf. *Notes and Queries*, 8th ser. viii. 433). 2. 'Αὐτοκρατόρων Ἰουστινιανοῦ, Ἰουστίνου, Λέοντος νεαραὶ διατάξεις, Ἰουστινιανοῦ ἔδικτα. . . . Ivstiniani quidem opus antea editum, sed nunc primum ex vetustis exemplaribus studio & diligentia Henrici Scrimgeri Scoti restitutum atque emendatum, et viginti-tribus Constitutionibus, quæ desiderabantur, auctum,' Genèva, 1558, fol. Scrimger's text is the basis of the current edition of the 'Novellæ' by Ed. Osenbrüggen, Leipzig, 1854.

Scrimger bequeathed his manuscripts to his nephew, Sir Peter Young of Seatoun, whose brother Alexander brought them to Scotland in 1576. The care of this unique library devolved upon Dr. Patrick Young, and it is stated by Thomas Smith (*Vitæ Illustrium Virorum*, 1707, under 'Peter Junius,' p. 4) that 'the most valuable portions of it passed into public collections through his [Sir Peter's] son, Dr. Patrick Young.' Scrimger's autograph 'Commentaria in Jus Justinianeum,' his 'Collectanea Græco-Latina,' and other manuscript works by him were sold in London at the dispersal of the library of Dr. John Owen (1616–1683) [q.v.], dean of Christ Church, on 26 May 1684 (*Bibliotheca Oweniana*, p. 32).

[Buchanani Epistolæ, 1711, p. 17; Dempster's Hist. Eccles. Gent. Scot. 1627, p. 586; European Mag. 1795; Irving's Lives of Scotish Writers, i. 176; Mackenzie's Scotch Writers, ii. 471; Michel's Écossais en France, ii. 262; Millar's Burgesses of Dundee, 1887; Moreri's Grand Dictionnaire, 1740, vii. 'S.,' p. 200; Notes and Queries, 5th ser. xii. 322, 402, 6th ser. i. 265; Senebier's Hist. Littéraire de Genève, 1790, i. 365; Tanner's Bibl. Brit. p. 657; Teissier's Eloges des Hommes Savans, 1715, ii. 383; Terasson's Hist. de la Jurisprudence Romaine, 1750, p. 431; De Thou's Historia, 1733, iii. 69, 70.] T. C.

SCRYMGEOUR, Sir JAMES (1550?–1612), of Dudhope, constable of Dundee, was descended from Sir Alexander Carron, called 'Skirmisheour,' who was standard-bearer to Alexander I (1106–1124), an office still held as hereditary by the representative of the family. Among Sir James's notable ancestors were Sir Alexander (*d.* 1310?), the companion-in-arms of Sir William Wallace, from whom he received confirmation of the estate of Dudhope and the office of constable of Dundee in 1298; Sir James, who fell at the battle of Harlaw in 1411; James (*d.* 1503), a prominent member of the Scottish parliament; and James (*d.* 1544), constable and provost of Dundee, and also a distinguished M.P. As the latter died without male issue, the succession fell to his cousin, John Scrymgeour of Glaister (*d.* 1575), who was the father of Sir James. He was returned as heir to his father's estates in 1576, and succeeded to the hereditary offices of constable of Dundee and 'vexillarius regis.' On 6 Feb. 1576 Scrymgeour was admitted burgess of Dundee, and for more than thirty years took an active part in national and municipal affairs. He was a man of indomitable will, unscrupulous in his exercise of feudal power, and tyrannical towards those who opposed him. His name appears with ominous frequency in the register of the privy council, to which complaints were repeatedly made of his oppressions. He considered that the office of constable of Dundee gave him arbitrary control of the burgh; and he often imprisoned in the dungeons of Dudhope Castle those who resisted his authority. On more than one occasion he was denounced as a rebel by the privy council, but his position as favourite of James VI enabled him to defy these sentences of outlawry. In 1582 he fell into the more perilous error of joining with the Gowrie party, and for this offence he was banished from the three kingdoms; but he fled to England and disregarded the futile attempt of the king to secure his exile from England and Ireland. In 1586 he re-

turned to Scotland, and once more became the king's favourite. He formed one of the band of noblemen despatched to Denmark to arrange for the marriage of James VI with Anne of Denmark in 1589, and was present at the wedding ceremony in Opsloe, near Christiania, Norway. Scrymgeour was knighted for his services. After the death of James Haliburton (friend of the regent Moray) in 1588, Scrymgeour became provost of Dundee, and was afterwards twice reinstated in that office by the direct command of the king. He sat as a minor baron in four conventions (1594–1604), and represented Dundee in the parliaments of 1600 and 1605 and Forfarshire in those of 1605 and 1607. He was subsequently appointed one of the commissioners from Scotland to confer as to the union of the crowns, and seems to have enjoyed the full confidence of the king in this matter. His formal return as heir to the constableship was not made till 15 Dec. 1610, with the purpose of having his son's right to the office rendered indisputable. He was twice married: first, to Margaret, daughter of Sir Robert Carnegie of Kinnaird, who died childless; and, secondly, to Dame Magdalen Livingstone, widow of Sir Alexander Erskine of Gogar, who survived him and was mother of John (see below) (see *Scottish Review*, xxii. 350–1). Scrymgeour died at Holyrood on 13 July 1612.

He was succeeded by his son, John Scrymgeour, Viscount Dudhope (*d.* 1643). John did not take a leading part in politics. He represented Forfarshire in the parliaments of 1612, 1617, and 1621, and Argyllshire from 1628 till 1633. He was one of the Forfarshire barons that met James VI at Kinnaird when that monarch revisited Scotland in 1617. On 15 Nov. 1641 he was created Viscount Dudhope and Lord Scrymgeour by Charles I when in Scotland. By his marriage with Margaret Setoun of Parbroath, Fifeshire, he had two sons. His death took place on 7 March 1643.

He has often been confused with his elder son, James Scrymgeour, who succeeded as second Viscount Dudhope (*d.* 1644), and took a more prominent part in politics. The latter's character nearly resembled that of his grandfather. He was admitted burgess of Dundee on 9 July 1619. He was an ardent royalist, and was with Charles I at Marston Moor, where he received what proved to be a mortal wound. He died on 24 July 1644, leaving a widow, Isabel Ker, daughter of the first duke of Roxburghe, two sons, and two daughters.

The elder son, John Scrymgeour, third Viscount Dudhope and first Earl of Dundee (*d.* 1668), was one of the royalist leaders during the civil war. In 1648 he joined with the Duke of Hamilton and General John Middleton, afterwards first earl of Middleton [q. v.], in the attempt to rescue Charles I, and was present in command of a troop of horse at the battle of Preston. He succeeded in escaping to Scotland after the royalist defeat. He attended Charles II at Stirling Castle in 1651, and marched with him to England on the expedition that terminated at Worcester. Again he escaped uninjured, and then he joined Middleton in the abortive campaign in the north in 1654. He was captured in the braes of Angus by a party of Cromwellian soldiers, and sent prisoner to London, where he was detained for some time. At the Restoration his loyalty was rewarded. He was made a privy councillor and created Earl of Dundee on 8 Sept. 1660. He survived till 23 June 1668. By his marriage in 1644 with Lady Anne Ramsay, daughter of William, earl of Dalhousie, he had no children, and the title became extinct. His widow married Sir Henry Bruce of Clackmannan, whose family is now represented by the Earl of Elgin and Kincardine.

[Douglas's Peerage, sub voce Scrymgeour; Register of Privy Council, vols. iii–viii.; Millar's Roll of Eminent Burgesses of Dundee, pp. 49, 83, 109, 164; Scrymgeour MSS. in Dundee Charter-room; Reg. Mag. Sig. 1546–1620; Foster's Members of Parliament of Scotland.]

A. H. M.

SCUDAMORE, Sir CHARLES, M.D. (1779–1849), physician, third son of William Scudamore, a surgeon, and his wife Elizabeth Rolfe, was born at Wye, Kent, where his father was in practice, in 1779. His grandfather and great-grandfather were surgeons at Canterbury, and descended from an ancient Herefordshire family seated at Ballingham in that county. He was educated at the ancient grammar school of the town, of which the Rev. Philip Parsons was then master. He began his medical education as apprentice to his father, and continued it at Guy's and St. Thomas's hospitals in London for three years, after which he settled in practice as an apothecary at Highgate, and there remained for ten years. He began medical study at Edinburgh in 1813, and graduated M.D. at Glasgow on 6 May 1814, reading a thesis 'De Arthritide,' which was published at Glasgow in 1814. He was admitted a licentiate of the College of Physicians of London, 30 Sept. 1814, and began practice as a physician in Holles Street, London. He had some knowledge of chemistry, and in 1816 published in London 'An Analysis of the

Mineral Water of Tunbridge Wells.' In the same year he published the book by which he is best known at the present day, 'A Treatise on the Nature and Cure of Gout,' dedicated to Matthew Baillie [q. v.] It is based on the author's observation of about one hundred cases of gout, and contains one of the first contributions to the study of the distribution of gouty changes throughout the body. He mentions that there were at the date of his graduation only five hackney carriages and less than twenty private carriages in Glasgow, and attributes the rarity of gout there to the constant walking even of the rich citizens.

He is the first English author who mentions the frequent presence of a circular chest, instead of an elliptical one, in persons subject to gout. These original observations are accompanied by an abstract of the chief books on gout and by many pages of obsolete pathological theories. He showed little capacity for observing disease at the bedside, but had acquaintance with morbid anatomy. A second edition appeared in 1817, a third in 1819, and a fourth in 1823. In 1820 he published 'A Chemical and Medical Report' on several English mineral springs, and in that year was appointed physician to Prince Leopold of Saxe-Gotha. In 1824 he wrote 'An Essay on the Blood,' in 1825 one 'On Colchicum,' in 1826 'Observations on Laennec's Diagnosis,' and in 1827 'A Treatise on Rheumatism,' which is an interesting picture of the period when rheumatic fever was beginning to be separated in medical writings from chronic rheumatism, and when the relation of heart-disease to rheumatic fever, though known from the clinical teaching of David Pitcairn [q. v.], was but imperfectly observed. Scudamore treated rheumatic fever by bleeding, purgatives, colchicum, tartar emetic, opium, and quinine. He went to Ireland in March 1829 in attendance on the Duke of Northumberland, then appointed lord-lieutenant, who knighted him at Dublin on 30 Sept. 1829. He was also admitted an honorary member of Trinity College, Dublin, during his stay in Ireland. In 1830 he published a book of 'Cases illustrating the Remedial Power of the Inhalation of Iodine and Conium in Tubercular Phthisis,' of which a second edition appeared in 1834. He spent part of every year at Buxton, and was physician to the Bath Charity there, and published 'An Analysis of the Tepid Springs of Buxton' (1820). In 1839 he printed a 'Letter to Dr. Chambers' on gout, repeating his former views. In April and May 1843 he visited Gräfenberg, and on his return published a small book on the water-cure treatment. His last work, published in 1847, was 'On Pulmonary Consumption,' in which notes of cases of small value are embedded in a mass of compilation. He married, in 1811, Georgiana Johnson, but had no children. He died in his London house, 6 Wimpole Street, of disease of the heart, 4 Aug. 1849.

[Munk's Coll. of Phys. iii. 127; Medical Times, London, 1849, xx. 168; Works.]

N. M.

SCUDAMORE, FRANK IVES (1823–1884), post-office reformer and writer, the son of John Scudamore, solicitor, of an old Herefordshire family [see SCUDAMORE, JOHN, first VISCOUNT SCUDAMORE], by his wife Charlotte, daughter of Colonel Francis Downman, R.A. and niece of Sir Thomas Downman [q. v.], was born at Eltham in February 1823, and educated at Christ's Hospital. Sir Charles Scudamore, M.D. [q.v.], was his uncle. On leaving school he at once entered the post office (1841), and, on the amalgamation of the receiver-general's and the accountant-general's offices in 1852, was appointed chief examiner of the united department. In 1856 he became receiver and accountant general, and while holding that post was, after George Chetwynd of the money-order office, mainly instrumental in the elaboration of the scheme for government savings banks. Scudamore explained the proposed machinery to Mr. Gladstone, who, as chancellor of the exchequer, warmly adopted his scheme, and obtained the necessary authorisation from parliament in 1861. He wrote several small tracts to explain and popularise the inducements to thrift which the savings banks offered. A treasury minute of 5 July 1866 testified to the value of his services to this and to the kindred schemes of government insurance and annuities. In 1865 he drew up a report upon the advisability of the state acquiring the telegraphs (which were then in the hands of a few private companies) upon the lines of a scheme first suggested by Mr. F. E. Baines. Throughout a series of delicate negotiations Scudamore was employed as chief agent, and it was mainly due to his exertions that the way was prepared for the acts of 1868 and 1869; the first entitling the state to acquire all the telegraphic undertakings in the kingdom, and the second giving the post office the monopoly of telegraphic communication. In 1870 the Irish telegraphs were successfully transferred to the post office by Scudamore, under whose directions they were completely reorganised and brought into one harmonious system. In the meantime he had been promoted assis-

tant secretary (1863) and soon afterwards second secretary of the post office, and in 1871 he was made C.B. Later on, his eagerness for progress and impatience of obstacles led to some conflict of opinion, which was terminated by his resignation in 1875. Among other changes made by Scudamore was the introduction of female clerks into the postal service, every department of which for at least ten years before his resignation had been indebted to his energy and administrative ability. He afterwards accepted an offer of the Ottoman government to go to Constantinople to organise the Turkish international post office, and projected some useful reforms; the sultan conferred on him the order of the Medjidieh in 1877; but when, after interminable delays, Scudamore found that his projects were not seriously entertained, he gave up his post. He continued to live at Therapia, and found relaxation in literary work. His talent was shown as early as 1861 by one of his happiest efforts, a lecture on the fairies, entitled 'People whom we have never met.' Another diverting volume contains his papers, entitled 'The Day Dreams of a Sleepless Man,' London, 1875, 8vo. His somewhat casual and allusive style appears to less advantage in 'France in the East; a contribution towards the consideration of the Eastern Question' (London, 1882), which is a plea for the good intentions of France in south-eastern Europe, and denounces the policy of preserving the integrity of the Ottoman empire. He also wrote largely in 'Punch' and in the 'Standard,' the 'Scotsman,' the 'Comic Times,' and other papers. He died at Therapia on 8 Feb. 1884, aged 61, and was buried in the English cemetery at Scutari. He married, in 1851, Jane, daughter of James Sherwin, surgeon, of Greenwich, and left issue.

[Times, 9 Feb. 1884; Ann. Reg. 1884; Kelly's Upper Ten Thousand, 1875; Baines's Forty Years at the Post Office; Spielmann's History of Punch, p. 361; private information.] T. S.

SCUDAMORE, JOHN, first Viscount Scudamore (1601–1671), eldest son of Sir James Scudamore, who married, in 1599, at St. James's, Clerkenwell, Mary, daughter of Sir Thomas Throckmorton, and widow of Sir Thomas Baskerville, was baptised at Holme Lacy, Herefordshire, on 22 March 1601. The Holme Lacy branch of the Scudamore family probably diverged from the main stem settled at Kentchurch, Herefordshire, late in the fourteenth century. Another branch migrated to Canterbury about 1650, and from it are descended Sir Charles Scudamore [q. v.], William Edward Scudamore [q. v.], and Frank Ives Scudamore [q. v.] Sir James was the son of Sir John Scudamore (*d.* 14 April 1623) of Holme Lacy, knight, M.P. for Herefordshire in five parliaments, standard-bearer to the pensioners, and gentleman usher to Queen Elizabeth, as his grandfather, in turn, John Scudamore (*d.* 1571), high sheriff of Herefordshire and rebuilder of Holme Lacy, had been one of the four gentlemen ushers to Henry VIII. The Sir John of Elizabeth's day was a friend of learning, a benefactor of Bodley's library, and an intimate with its founder, who praises his 'sweet conversation;' and a special patron of the mathematician, Thomas Allen (1542–1632) [q. v.] (cf. *Letters from Eminent Persons*, ii. 202). Sir James, the viscount's father, a gallant soldier, accompanied Essex to Cadiz, where he was knighted in 1596 (Camden, *Annals*, 1630, bk. iv. p. 94 s.v. 'Skidmore'). He was held up as a pattern of chivalry as Sir Scudamour in Spenser's 'Faërie Queene,' the fourth book of which is devoted to his 'warlike deedes' on behalf of Duessa; and he is similarly commemorated in Higford's 'Institutions of a Gentleman,' where is a picturesque description of his tilting before Queen Elizabeth and a bevy of court ladies. 'Famous and fortunate in his time,' says Fuller, he was M.P. for Herefordshire 1604–11, and 1614, subscribed 37*l.* to the Virginia Company, and, dying before his father, at the age of fifty-one, was buried at Holme Lacy on 14 April 1619.'

John was educated under a tutor at Holme Lacy until 1616, when, on 8 Nov., he matriculated from Magdalen College, Oxford (he was created M.A. on 1 Nov. 1642). He is said to have entered at the Middle Temple in the following year (though there is no record of this in the register), and he soon afterwards obtained license to travel. Having spent about three years abroad, he was appointed by the Earl of Northampton to be captain of horse in Herefordshire. His family had been famous for generations for their horsemanship and breed of horses. On 1 June 1620 he was created a baronet, and he was M.P. for Herefordshire in 1620 and 1624, and for the city of Hereford in 1625 and 1628. He was sworn of the council of the marches on 25 Aug. 1623. He soon became a person of mark at the new court, and was specially attached to Buckingham, whom he accompanied on the Rochelle expedition. He sincerely lamented the duke's death (of which he sent an early account in a letter to Laud), and was present at his funeral. On 1 July 1628 he was created Baron Dromore and Viscount Scudamore of Sligo, and shortly after his elevation retired

to his country seat. He was an assiduous student, learned in history and theology, but during his retreat paid much attention to grafting and planting orchards, and is credited with introducing into his native county the redstreak apple—

> Of no regard till Scudamore's skilful hand
> Improv'd her, and by courtly discipline
> Taught her the savage nature to forget,—
> Hence styl'd the Scudamorean plant

(Philips, *Cyder*, bk. i. lines 503–6). A zealous royalist throughout his career, Scudamore was enthusiastically attached to the English church. Moved by the arguments of Sir Henry Spelman [q. v.], he repaired at great expense and endowed the dilapidated abbey church of Door (Dore), and restored the alienated tithes of several churches which his ancestor, Sir John, receiver of the court of augmentations under Henry VIII, acquired upon the suppression of the monasteries (cf. Stephenson, *Hist. of Llanthony Abbey*, pp. 22, 27). He became a devoted admirer of Laud, who often visited him in his journeys to and from St. David's when bishop of that see, kept up a correspondence with him as archbishop, and co-operated in his plans for the rebuilding of St. Paul's.

At the close of 1634 Scudamore was appointed by Charles I as his ambassador in Paris. He sailed in June 1635, and was received graciously by Louis XIII, who presented him with his portrait and that of his consort, Queen Anne of Austria. The expenses of his journey and first audience amounted to 852*l.* Shortly after his arrival Scudamore made a vain effort to purchase a valuable manuscript of the 'Basilics' (Basilica), or digest of laws commenced by the Emperor Basilius I in 867, and completed by Leo VI in 880. After the contract of sale was signed, Richelieu interposed to prevent this treasure leaving France (cf. Montreuil, *Droit Byzantin*, 1844; *Foreign Quarterly Review*, vii. 461), but Scudamore caused his son to translate 'The Sixty Sixe admonitory Chapters of Basilius to his sonne Leo,' which was printed at Paris in 1638 (the copy of this rare work in the British Museum bears the Scudamore armorial book-plate, but in the catalogue it is wrongly attributed to J. Scudamore, author of 'Homer à la Mode').

In February 1636 Scudamore was directed to serve a writ upon Lady Purbeck (who had escaped the clutches of the high commission and fled to Paris), commanding her to return to England. Richelieu again intervened, and sent a guard of fifty archers for the lady's protection (Scudamore to Coke, March 1636, *State Papers*, French, ap. Gardiner, *Hist.* viii. 145–6).

During his residence in Paris Scudamore had a private chapel fitted up in his own house, with candles and other ornaments, upon which severe strictures were passed (Clarendon); he also gave some leading Huguenots to understand that the Anglican church deemed them outside its communion. It was doubtless to correct this bias that in 1636 the staunchly protestant Robert Sidney, second earl of Leicester [q. v.], was joined to Scudamore in the embassage. The ambassadors, however, managed to work harmoniously together. To Milton, Hobbes, and Sir Kenelm Digby, Scudamore showed many courtesies when they visited Paris. In May 1638 he introduced Milton to Grotius, then Swedish ambassador in Paris (Milton, *Defensio Secunda*). With the latter Scudamore was on confidential terms, and he communicated to Laud Grotius's scheme for a union of the protestant churches (Swedish, Danish, Norwegian, and English), excluding, however, the Calvinists and Presbyterians, for whom Scudamore had a special dislike.

During the summer Scudamore announced the birth of Louis XIV, and paid elaborate compliments to the French queen, who had been childless during twenty-two years of married life. Notwithstanding these amenities, a serious slight was shortly afterwards put upon Lady Scudamore by the queen, and the difficulty was only solved by Lady Scudamore's return to England. Scudamore himself hinted that his recall would be welcome; this was granted at the close of 1638, and he crossed to England in January 1639. On his return to Holme Lacy he was met by a troop of horse from among his friends and tenants, was made high steward of Hereford city and cathedral, and kept open house at Holme Lacy with great magnificence the following Christmas. He continued his correspondence with Laud, who warned him 'not to book it too much,' and with Grotius, and encouraged by his patronage Thomas Farnaby [q. v.], Robert Codrington [q. v.], and John Tombes [q. v.], who dedicated to him several works. In 1641 there was some talk of Scudamore being appointed to the vacant secretaryship of state. Foreseeing the approach of the troubles, he laid in at Holme Lacy a stock of petronels, carbines, and powder. After the outbreak of the war in the west, in April 1643, he betook himself to Hereford and put himself under Sir Richard Cave's orders. When, however, a few days afterwards, Waller made a dash for the city, most of Cave's men deserted, and he had to surrender at discretion.

Scudamore was released upon condition of submitting himself to parliament in London. On going thither he found that his house in Petty France (a house adjoining that in which Milton subsequently wrote 'Paradise Lost') had been sequestered and all his goods seized and inventoried. He received news, moreover, that various outrages had been perpetrated at his country houses at Llanthony and Holme Lacy, but these were happily checked by Waller, who sent courteous apologies in answer to Lady Scudamore's remonstrance. Scudamore soon discovered his mistake in appealing to parliament. Irritated by the king's confiscation of Essex's estates in Herefordshire, they ordered the sale of his goods in Petty France and at the Temple, refused the fine that he offered, and committed him to the custody of the serjeant-at-arms. He remained in confinement for three years and ten months, when his affairs were settled upon his paying a fine of 2,690*l.*, his son James being subsequently included in this composition (November 1647; *Cal. for Compounding*, 1643). In all, however, owing to the forced sales of his goods, the sequestrations, and his gifts to the royal cause, he estimated that he lost 37,690*l.* by the civil war, quite apart from the munificent alms which he distributed to distressed royalists. Scudamore was much broken by his confinement and by the wreck of the royalist fortunes.

During his later years he devoted himself almost exclusively to study and to the seeking out and relieving of impoverished divines. Among those he 'secretly' benefited were Dr. Edward Boughen [q. v.], John Bramhall [q. v.], Thomas Fuller (1608–1661) [q. v.], Canon Henry Rogers (1585?–1658) [q. v.], Dr. Sterne, and Matthew Wren [q. v.] (cf. Walker, *Sufferings of the Clergy*, p. 35; Gibson, pp. 110, 112, where are enumerated upwards of seventy clergymen in receipt of alms from him). From 1656 he allowed 40*l.* per annum to Peter Gunning [q. v.], afterwards bishop of Ely (Baker, *Hist. of St. John's*, p. 235). He also presented many books and other gifts to the dean and chapter of Hereford. Bishop Kennett stated that he gave in all not less than 50,000*l.* towards religious objects. He died on 8 June 1671, and was buried in the chancel of Holme Lacy church. He married, on 12 March 1614–15, Elizabeth, daughter and heiress of Sir Arthur Porter of Llanthony, Gloucestershire. She died, aged 52, and was buried at Holme Lacy in December 1651. Some six years later died Scudamore's younger brother, Sir Barnabas, who served with distinction under Prince Maurice, and successfully defended Hereford in July–August 1645 against Alexander Leslie, first earl of Leven [q. v.] The siege was raised upon the approach of Charles on 1 Sept., when Scudamore, who was forthwith knighted, remarked that the Scotch mist had melted before the sun (*Letter to the Lord Digby concerning the Siege of Hereford*, 1645, 4to). Less than four months later (18 Dec.) the gates were opened by treachery, but Scudamore crossed the Wye on the ice, and escaped to Ludlow. Sir Barnabas died, impoverished in estate, on 14 April 1658.

The first viscount's son, James, baptised on 4 July 1624, M.P. for Hereford in 1642 and for Herefordshire 1661–8, accompanied his father to Paris, where he spent some years after 1639, and died in his father's lifetime, in 1668, at the age of forty-four. He appears to have been a friend of John Evelyn. To him has been wrongly attributed a vulgar parody in verse entitled 'Homer à la Mode' (1664), which was the work of his distant kinsman, James Scudamore of Christ Church, Oxford (son of John Scudamore of Kentchurch, 1603–1669), who was drowned on 12 July 1666; he was at Westminster, and there is extant a curious letter from his grandfather to Busby asking the master's acceptance of a cask of cider (cf. Nichols, *Lit. Illustr.* v. 395; Welch, *Alumni Westmon.* p. 154). The first viscount was succeeded by his grandson, John Scudamore (1650–1697); he married Frances, daughter of John Cecil, fourth earl of Exeter, by Frances, daughter of John Manners, earl of Rutland; the 'impudentest of woman,' wrote Lady Camden, she 'eloped with a Mr. Coningsby, who was thought to have got all Lord Skidmore's children' (*Rutland Papers*). The peerage became extinct upon the death of the third viscount, James Scudamore, on 2 Dec. 1716. He was educated at Gloucester Hall, Oxford, where he was contemporary with the poet John Philips and with Anthony Alsop, who dedicated to him in 1698 his 'Fabularum Æsopicarum Delectus' (Phillips, *Cyder*, 1791, p. 52 *n.*) He was M.P. for Herefordshire 1705–1713, and for Hereford 1715, and was created D.C.L. at Oxford on 12 May 1712, when Hearne met him, 'an honest man.' His widow died of small-pox in 1729, and her death occasioned Pope's allusion, 'and Scud'more ends her name' (*Works*, ed. Elwin and Courthope, ii. 436), her houses having been favoured resorts of some of Pope's circle. There is a fine portrait by Kneller of Lady Scudamore and her daughter at Sherborne Castle. Some of the second viscountess's character-

istics descended to her granddaughter, the last viscount's only daughter and heiress, Frances (*d.* 1750). She was born on 14 Aug. 1711, and married, on 28 June 1729, Henry Somerset, third duke of Beaufort. In 1730 an act was passed authorising the duke to use the additional name and arms of Scudamore, pursuant to the settlement of the third viscount; but before this act came into operation the duke proved the incontinence of his wife and divorced her (cf. *The New Foundling Hospital for Wit*, 1784; H. Walpole to Mann on this 'frail lady,' 10 June 1742). Upon his death in 1746, Lady Frances married Charles Fitzroy (afterwards Scudamore), natural son of the first Duke of Grafton, and their daughter, Frances Scudamore, conveyed the estates of the Scudamores to Charles Howard, eleventh duke of Norfolk, whom she married on 2 April 1771; she died a lunatic on 22 Oct. 1820.

The portraits of the first Lord Scudamore and his wife, with those of other members of the family, and those presented by Louis XIII, are now at Sherborne Castle, Dorset. Some of the property passed through a daughter to the Stanhope family, whence the earls of Chesterfield, present owners of Holme Lacy, bear the name of Scudamore-Stanhope.

[Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ed. Bliss; Wood's Fasti, i. 263; Collins's Baronetage, 1720, ii. 175; Collins's Peerage, 1781, suppl. p. 422, and i. 211; Burke's Extinct Peerage; G. E. C.'s Complete Peerage; Wootton's Baronetage; Gent. Mag. 1805 i. 483, 1817 i. 99–100; Chester's Marriage Licenses; Nichols's Progresses of James I, iii. 608 *n.*; Collins's Letters and Memorials, 1746, ii. 28, 97, 142, 174, 380–405, 440 sq.; Matthew Gibson's View of Door, Home Lacy, and Hempsted, 1727 (containing some memoirs of the Scudamore family); Military Memorial of Colonel John Birch (Camd. Soc.); Hutchinson's Herefordshire Biographies, 1890, p. 98; C. J. Robinson's History of the Mansions and Manorhouses of Herefordshire, passim; Duncombe's Herefordshire; Hoare's Modern Wiltshire; Guillim's Heraldry; Webb's History of the Civil War in Herefordshire, passim; Havergal's Fasti Herefordenses, p. 184; Gardiner's Hist. of England and Civil War; State Papers, Dom. vols. 1635–43, passim; Masson's Life of Milton, vol. i. passim; Wheatley and Cunningham's London, iii. 541; Brown's Genesis of United States of America, ii. 998; notes kindly given by W. R. Williams, esq., and by John Hutchinson, esq.; Brit. Mus. Cat.] T. S.

SCUDAMORE, WILLIAM EDWARD (1813–1881), divine, only son of Dr. Edward Scudamore of an ancient family, formerly seated at Kent-church, Herefordshire, and nephew of Sir Charles Scudamore, M.D. [q. v.], was born at Wye in Kent on 24 July 1813. Having been educated at a school in Brussels, at Edinburgh high school, and then at Lichfield, he entered St. John's College, Cambridge, as a sizar on 6 July 1831, and graduated B.A. as ninth wrangler in 1835. He was on 14 March 1837 admitted a fellow of his college, whence he proceeded M.A. in 1838. After serving for a short time as assistant master at Oakham school, he went to Minto in Roxburghshire as tutor in the family of Gilbert Elliot, second earl of Minto [q.v.] He made influential friends in the north, and was in March 1839 presented to the living of Ditchingham in Norfolk, the patron of which is bound under an old trust to elect a fellow of St. John's; he had been admitted to deacon's orders by the latitudinarian bishop Edward Stanley [q. v.] in the previous year. His views were largely fashioned by the Oxford movement, which found an exponent at Cambridge in John Fuller Russell [q.v.] He set to work to undo in his parish the result of upwards of ninety years' neglect by non-resident rectors. He restored the parish church, built a school, and raised subscriptions for a chapel-of-ease in an outlying portion of the parish. In 1854, partly through his influence, a small penitentiary, managed by sisters of mercy, was opened in Shipmeadow. In 1859 the penitentiary was transferred to Ditchingham, and, by his strenuous exertions as warden, both sisterhood and house of mercy were greatly enlarged. At a later date an orphanage and hospital were built, and are still carried on. His leisure he devoted to patristic and liturgiological studies, and he published in 1872 his 'Notitia Eucharistica' (2nd edit. enlarged, 1876). This is at once a storehouse of archæology and of sacramental doctrine. Scudamore followed the guidance of Hooker and the Anglican divines of the seventeenth century (cf. Herzog, *Relig. Encycl.* ed Schaff, ii. 1352). But his high-church sympathies, while tempered by erudition, were blended with puritan feeling. He dissented from the extremer views of the English Church Union, and urged its members in the interests of historical truth to modify their position. When the union issued an authorised 'Reply' to his 'Remarks' (1872), he rejoined in a temperate 'Exposure' (1873), convicting his adversaries of error on several points of ecclesiology.

Scudamore was more widely known by his devotional works, especially by his 'Steps to the Altar' (1846), which reached a sixty-seventh edition in 1887, and has been translated into Hindustani and frequently re-

printed in America. The writer expressed obligation in the preface to the devotional works of Ken and Wilson and to the 'Officium Eucharisticum' of Edward Lake [q.v.] Utterly unworldly, he received only 40*l.* for the book, in spite of its enormous sale. From Scudamore's 'Incense for the Altar' (1874) Dr. Pusey printed some selections in his 'Hints for a First Confession' in 1884. Scarcely less popular was his 'Words to take with us' (1859, 8vo; 5th ed. 1879).

Scudamore died at Ditchingham rectory on 31 Jan. 1881, and was buried in the parish cemetery. His wife Albina, daughter of John King, survives with two sons and one daughter.

In addition to the works mentioned above and several single sermons and small tracts, he published: 1. 'An Essay on the Office of Intellect in Religion,' 1849, 8vo. 2. 'Letters to a Seceder from the Church of England,' 1851, 12mo. 3. 'England and Rome: a Discussion of the Principal Points of Difference,' 1855, 8vo. 4. 'The Communion of the Laity,' 1855. 5. 'Litanies for Use at the various Seasons of the Christian Year,' 1860. 6. 'The North Side of the Table: an Historical Enquiry,' 1870, 8vo. 7. 'Ἡ Ὥρα τῆς Προσευχῆς,' 1873, 8vo. 8. 'The Diocesan Synods of the Earlier Church,' 1878, 8vo (all the above were published in London). Among other elaborate articles to Smith's 'Dictionary of Christian Antiquities' (1875–1880) he contributed those on 'Fasting,' 'Images,' 'Oblation,' 'Lord's Prayer,' 'Lord's Supper,' and 'Relics.'

[Robinson's Mansions and Manors of Herefordshire, pp. 135 sq. (with Scudamore pedigree); Luard's Graduati Cantabrigienses, 1884; notes from R. F. Scott, esq., of St. John's College; Guardian, 2 Feb. and 9 March 1881; Church Times, 11 Feb. 1881; Times, 7 Feb. 1881; Davenport's Scudamore and Bickersteth; or Steps to the Altar and Devotions of the Reformers compared, 1851; works in British Museum Library; private information.] T. S.

SCUDDER, HENRY (*d.* 1659?), divine, was of Christ's College, Cambridge. He was afterwards minister at Drayton in Oxfordshire, and in 1633 was presented by the king to the living of Collingbourne-Ducis, near Marlborough, Wiltshire. He held presbyterian views. In June 1643 he was summoned to the Westminster assembly of divines (Rushworth, pt. iii. vol. ii. p. 338). When in June 1645 an order came from the House of Commons to pray for the forces, Scudder was one of the four preachers assigned to Aldgate. On 6 April 1647 he 'made report of the review of the proofs of the "Confession of Faith" of the seven first chapters and part of the eighth.' On 9 Feb. 1648 his name was added to the committee for the scriptures.

Scudder preached before the House of Commons in October 1644, on a fast day at St. Margaret's, Westminster, and his sermon was printed by request of the house (*Commons' Journals*, iii. 639, 682). He died before the Restoration, and his successor at Collingbourne-Ducis was instituted in 1660. He was buried in the church, but the tomb has been removed. He married Elizabeth, daughter of George Hunt, for fifty years rector of Collingbourne-Ducis. She died on 15 Dec. 1633, when little over twenty. Her sister married William Whately [q. v.], Scudder's fellow-student at Christ's College, and subsequently vicar of Banbury, whose life Scudder wrote in 1639–40. A monument to Scudder's wife in the chancel wall of Leamington parish church was destroyed by fire in 1699, but the inscription is correctly preserved in Dingley's 'History in Marble' (Camden Soc.) A daughter married John Grayle [q. v.] in 1645.

Scudder was author of a celebrated devotional work entitled 'The Christian's Daily Walke in Holy Securitie and Peace.' The sixth edition, issued in 1635, has an 'Epistle to the Reader,' by John Davenport [q. v.], dated from Coleman Street, 25 April 1627. Davenport writes that 'the first coppie was more briefe [but?], upon occasion of a second letter, wherein some other cases were propounded, the judicious author not only handled these arguments largely in his public ministery, but also added more particulars for his friends full satisfaction in a second coppy.' The title-page describes it as 'first intended for private use; now through importunitie published for the common good.' A German translation by Theodore Haak appeared at Frankfurt in 1636. The book was frequently reissued. The editions of 1690 and 1761 have commendations by John Owen, D.D. [q. v.], whose portrait is prefixed, and by Richard Baxter [q. v.] The latter could not remember 'any book which is written to be the daily companion of Christians, to guide them in the practise of a holy life,' which he preferred to it. A fifteenth edition was issued in 1813. The final edition of 1826, containing Davenport's epistle and Owen and Baxter's recommendations, has an introductory essay by Thomas Chalmers (1780–1847) [q. v.]

Scudder also published: 1. 'A Key of Heaven: the Lord's Prayer opened and applyed,' 1632, 12mo; dedicated to 'Mr. Thomas Crew, and to all his hopefull children,' and has a preface by R. Sibbs of Gray's Inn, who

describes it as 'written without affectation.' 2. 'Prototypes, or the Primarie Precedent Presidents out of the Booke of Genesis. With Mr. Whatelye's Life and Death,' 1640, fol., and 1647. Here Scudder had the assistance of Edward Leigh [q. v.], who was, like himself, one of Whately's executors. A portrait of Scudder was engraved by Sherwin in 1674.

[Authorities cited; Fuller's Hist. of Cambridge University, 1655, p. 92; Mitchell and Struthers's Minutes of the Westminster Assembly, pp. 108, 252, 346, 364, 407, 483, 502; Hodgson's Entries in Parish Registers of Collingbourne-Ducis, reprinted from the Wiltshire Archæological Magazine, xxvi. 320; private information; Granger's Biogr. Hist. ii. 183; Brook's Lives of the Puritans, ii. 504, 505; Bromley and Evans's Cat. of Engr. Portraits; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Allibone's Dict. Engl. Lit.] G. Le G. N.

SCULLY, DENYS (1773–1830), Irish political writer, eldest surviving son of James Scully, a landed proprietor of Kilfeacle, co. Tipperary, was born at that place on 4 May 1773. He entered Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1794, and is said to have been the first catholic student admitted for two hundred years. After a short residence he left without graduating, and studied for the Irish bar, of which he became a member in Michaelmas term 1796. He practised on the Leinster circuit with success until delicate health compelled him to retire. He became known as one of the leading catholic agitators, and joined the important deputation which was appointed in February 1805 to wait upon Pitt with a petition to the House of Commons for emancipation. Pitt declined to present the petition, but Fox and Granville consented, and laid it before the house on 25 March. Scully prepared a famous 'Statement of the Penal Laws,' which appeared in 1812, and resulted in the prosecution of the printer, Hugh Fitzpatrick, who was fined 200*l.* and imprisoned for eighteen months. Besides this work, which ran through several editions, Scully helped Edward Hay [q. v.] to prepare his account of the harsh treatment to which the Wexford people had been subjected previous to 1798, and also wrote many able articles in the Dublin morning and evening 'Post.' In 1803 he published a pamphlet against the union, 'An Irish Catholic's Advice to his Brethren, how to estimate their Present Situation, and repel French Invasion, Civil Wars, and Slavery.' He died on 25 Oct. 1830 at Kilfeacle.

Vincent Scully (1810–1871), lawyer and politician, son of Denys Scully, was born in Dublin on 8 Jan. 1810, and was educated at Oscott, Trinity College, Dublin, and Trinity College, Cambridge, but did not graduate at either university. He was one of the editors of the 'Oscotian' (from 1826). In 1833 he was called to the Irish bar, and speedily obtained a good practice. In 1840 he became a queen's counsel. He was elected M.P. for Cork in 1852, and remained its member until 1857. He was re-elected in 1859 and sat till 1865. He died on 4 June 1871. He was the author of some able pamphlets on the Irish land question, one of which, 'Free Trade in Land' (1853), made many novel proposals. It is accompanied by a debenture map, and was reprinted in 1881 by his son Vincent, together with 'Occupying Ownership of Land (Ireland).' Scully's 'Transfer of Land Bill (Ireland),' introduced into the House of Commons in 1853, was praised for its ingenuity.

[Webb's Compendium of Irish Biography; obituaries in Irish papers; O'Donoghue's Poets of Ireland, p. 223; information from Vincent Scully, esq., Cashel.] D. J. O'D.

SEAFIELD, Earls of. [See Ogilvy, James, first Earl, 1664–1730; Ogilvy, James, third Earl, 1714?–1770.]

SEAFORD, Lords. [See Ellis, Charles Rose, first Lord, 1771–1845; Ellis, Charles Augustus, Lord Howard de Walden and Seaford, 1799–1868.]

SEAFORTH, Earls of. [See Mackenzie, Kenneth, fourth Earl, *d.* 1701; Mackenzie, William, fifth Earl, *d.* 1740.]

SEAFORTH and MACKENZIE, Lord. [See Humberston, Francis Mackenzie, 1754–1815.]

SEAGAR, JOHN (*d.* 1656), divine. [See under Segar, Francis.]

SEAGER, CHARLES (1808–1878), orientalist, born in 1808, was son of John Seager (1776–1849) of Evesbatch, Worcestershire, rector of Welsh Brecknor, Monmouthshire, from 1808 till his death on 27 May 1849. The father contributed emendations and observations on Greek authors to the 'Classical Journal,' published a supplement to Johnson's 'Dictionary' in 1819, and editions of Viger's 'Greek Idioms,' 1828, Hoogeveen's 'Greek Particles,' 1829, Bos's 'Greek Ellipses,' 1830, Hermann's 'Doctrine of Metres,' 1830, and Maittaire's 'Greek Dialects,' 1831.

Charles was matriculated as a member of Magdalen Hall, Oxford, on 30 Nov. 1832, and while a member of that society he obtained the Pusey and Ellerton scholarship in 1834. In that year he was elected a scholar of Worcester College, and in 1836 he gained the Kennicott Hebrew scholarship. He gra-

duated B.A. on 25 May 1836, and M.A. on 24 April 1839. For some time he was a pupil of Dr. Pusey, under whom he gave public lectures in Hebrew. He took orders in the established church, and, his residence in Oxford being contemporary with the rise of the tractarian party, he became closely associated with the movement, and assisted materially in the publication of the literature connected with it. He was one of the earliest members of the secession to Rome; in January 1842 Pusey wrote to Newman asking him to correct Seager's romanising tendencies; Newman made the attempt, but Seager was received into the catholic church on 12 Oct. 1843 at St. Mary's College, Oscott (Gondon, *Conversion de cent-cinquante ministres anglicans*, pp. 86, 100). His conversion caused Pusey much pain and embarrassment (Liddon, *Life of Pusey*, ii. 141, 229, 230, 377).

When the catholic university college was established, by Monsignor Capel, at Kensington, Seager was appointed to the chair of Hebrew and comparative philology. His knowledge of oriental languages was extensive, but his special *forte* lay in the Semitic branch, Hebrew, Arabic, and Syriac being his chief study. During the latter part of his life, however, he devoted considerable attention to the languages of Assyria and Egypt, and he was a regular attendant at the classes instituted by the Society of Biblical Archæology for instruction in those tongues. Professor Sayce and Mr. P. Le Page Renouf, the lecturers at those classes, were among his most intimate friends. He was a member of the council of the Society of Biblical Archæology, and took a prominent part in the discussion of the various subjects brought before the meetings. Shortly before his death he was readmitted a member of the university of Oxford, from which he had been expelled on his adhesion to the church of Rome. A decree was passed enabling him to replace his name on the books without payment of the usual fees. He died suddenly at the Hôtel de Ville, Florence, while attending the congress of orientalists, on 18 Sept. 1878. His widow died at Ramsgate on 27 March 1893.

His works are: 1. 'The Smaller Hebrew and Chaldee Lexicon of Professor Simonis, translated and improved from his second edition,' London, 1832, 12mo. 2. 'Græcorum casuum analysis. De vera casuum verborum, inflectionumque in genere, natura et origine . . . brevis disputatio,' London, 1833, 12mo. 3. 'The Daily Service of the Anglo-Catholic Church, adapted to family or private worship. By a Priest,' Banbury, 1838, 12mo. 4. 'Auricular Confession. Six letters in answer to the attacks of [the Rev. W. S. Bricknell] one of the city lecturers, on the Catholic principle of private confession to a priest. . . . By Academicus,' Oxford 1842, 8vo. 5. 'Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ Officia Antiqua: Portiforii seu Breviarii Sarisburiensis, annotatione perpetua illustrati, et cum Breviariis Eboracensi, Herefordensi, et Romano comparati, Fasciculus Primus,' London, 1843, 12mo; 2nd part, London, 1855, 12mo. The first portion of the 'fasciculus primus' had been separately published, London, 1842, 12mo. 6. 'The Spiritual Exercises of St. Ignatius of Loyola, translated from the authorised Latin; with . . . a preface by the Right Rev. Nicholas Wiseman, D.D., Bishop of Melipotamus,' London, 1847, 16mo. 7. 'Faithfulness to Grace. On the Position of Anglicans holding the Real Presence; with considerations on the sin of unlawful obedience,' London, 1850, 12mo. 8. 'The Female Jesuit abroad; a true and romantic Narrative of True Life: including some account, with historical reminiscences, of Bonn and the Middle Rhine,' London, 1853, 8vo. 9. 'The Cumulate Vote, as a moderative of State oscillations,' London (3 editions), 1867, 8vo. 10. 'Plutocracy as a Principle; or, does the possession of property involve, as a moral right, that of political power? A letter in which are impartially presented both sides of the question,' 2nd edit. London, 1867, 8vo. 11. 'The Suffrage as a Moral Right: what are its grounds?' London, 1867, 8vo.

He was also a contributor to the 'Classical Museum' and to the 'Transactions of the Society of Biblical Archæology.'

[Academy, 28 Sept. 1878, p. 315; Athenæum, July 1853 p. 823, 21 Sept. 1878 p. 372 and 28 Sept. p. 403; Bodleian Cat. iv. 846; Browne's Annals of the Tractarian Movement, pp. 73, 87; Letters of J. B. Mozley, pp. 85, 86; Letters of Newman, ed. Anne Mozley; Thomas Mozley's Reminiscences of Oriel; Clergy List, 1841, p. 175; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1715–1886 iv. 1269; Gondon's Motifs de Conversion de dix Ministres Anglicans, pp. 191–202; Halkett and Laing's Dict. of Anonymous Literature, pp. 200, 559; Tablet 1878 ii. 368, 377, 400, 408, and 1 April 1893 p. 504; Times, 23 Sept. 1878, p. 9, col. 6.] T. C.

SEAGER, EDWARD (1812–1883), lieutenant-general, was born on 11 June 1812, and, after serving in the ranks for nine years and one hundred and eighty-eight days from 1832, became a cornet of the 8th light dragoons on 17 Sept. 1841. He was adjutant from 5 Oct. 1841 to 25 Oct. 1854, being gazetted lieutenant on 29 June 1843,

captain on 26 Oct. 1851, and major 31 Jan. 1858. He served with his regiment in the Crimean war of 1854, and up to February 1855, and was present at the battles of Alma, Balaclava (where he was wounded), Inkerman, and the siege of Sebastopol. On 28 June 1855 he was appointed assistant military secretary to Major-general Lord William Paulet [q. v.], commanding on the Bosphorus, and continued in the same office under Sir Henry Knight Storks [q. v.] until the end of the war on 31 July 1856, when he was rewarded with a medal and four clasps, the fifth class of Medjidie, and the Turkish medal. Later on he served in Central India, 1858–9, was present at the action of Boordah, was mentioned in the despatches, and received a medal. From 5 Aug. 1859 to 5 Aug. 1864 he was lieutenant-colonel of his regiment, and was then gazetted a brevet colonel in the army. From 3 Nov. 1864 to 31 Jan. 1870 he was acting quartermaster-general in the Dublin district, and from 1 April 1873 to 3 April 1878 inspecting officer of yeomanry cavalry at York. On 15 Jan. 1870 he became a major-general, and on 1 July 1881 was placed on the retired list with the rank of lieutenant-general. On 10 May 1872 he received one of the rewards for 'distinguished and meritorious services,' and on 2 June 1877 was gazetted C.B. He died at Sion House, Scarborough, on 30 March 1883.

[Hart's Annual Army List, 1872, pp. 35, 50; Official Army List, June 1880, pp. 150, 1205, 1215; Times, 2 April 1883, p. 7.] G. C. B.

SEAGER, FRANCIS (*fl.* 1549–1563), poet. [See SEGAR.]

SEAGRAVE, ROBERT (1693–1760?), divine, son of Robert Seagrave, vicar of Twyford, Leicestershire, 1687–1720, was born there on 22 Nov. 1693. He was admitted subsizar at Clare Hall, Cambridge, on 8 Nov. 1710, and graduated B.A. in 1714, M.A. in 1718 (*Grad. Cantabr.* 1659–1823, p. 418). Seagrave, although ordained, held no cure, but acted as an extra-parochial clergyman, and preached in many places. He was one of the earliest to join the Oxford methodist movement, and, anxious to stir the church of England from her lethargy, published anonymously 'A Remonstrance addressed to the Clergy,' London, 1731, 8vo, and 'A Letter to the People of England, occasioned by the falling away of the Clergy from the Doctrines of the Reformation,' by Paulinus, London, 1735. To the fourth edition, 1739, he put his name. It was answered by an anonymous writer in 'An Appeal to the People of England in defence of the Clergy.' Seagrave next wrote in 1739, in defence of George Whitefield, 'An Answer to Dr. Trapp's Four Sermons,' which was answered in Trapp's 'Observations on the Conduct and Writings of Mr. Seagrave,' London, 1739, 8vo. Further vindications of Trapp appeared, and Seagrave issued, in further vindication of Whitefield, 'Remarks upon the Bishop of London's Pastoral Letter.' On 8 Sept. 1739 he held a dispute with Ebenezer Hewlett, an unlettered person at Blackwell's coffee-house. Some account of this was published by Hewlett in 'Mr. Whitefield's Chatechise (*sic*), being an explanation of the doctrine of the methodists,' London, 1739, 8vo.

In the same year Seagrave commenced preaching regularly on Sunday evenings at Lorimers' Hall, Cripplegate. Later he gave a Tuesday and a Thursday lecture. For the use of his congregation there he prepared 'Hymns for Christian Worship' (London, 1742, 8vo; 4th edit. 1748, reprinted 1860). Thirty of the hymns were his own. Among them are two still in common use, viz. 'Now may the Spirit's holy fire,' on the opening of a place of worship (included in Whitefield's 'Hymns for Social Worship,' 1753, and in Toplady's 'Psalms and Hymns'); and 'Rise, my soul, and stretch thy wings,' also in Whitefield's hymn-book.

Seagrave was preaching up till 1759. He probably died soon afterwards. His other works are: 1. 'Six Sermons on the Manner of Salvation,' London, 1737, 8vo. 2. 'A Draught of the Justification of Man different from the present Language of our Pulpits,' London, 1740, 8vo, being a continuation of the 'Letter to the People of England.' 3. 'Observations upon the Conduct of the Clergy, with an Essay towards a real Protestant Establishment,' 1738; 3rd edit. 1740, 8vo. 4. 'Christianity: how far it is and is not founded on Argument,' London, 1743, 8vo. 5. 'The True Protestant, addressed to the University of Cambridge,' 4th edit. 1751, 8vo. 6. 'The Principles of Liberty, or the Right of Mankind to judge for themselves in matters of Faith,' London, 1755.

[Wilson's Hist. of Diss. Churches, ii. 559, iii. 315; Miller's Singers and Songs of the Church, p. 152; Julian's Dict. of Hymnology, p. 1035; Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. ix. 142, 250, 314; Hymns and Spiritual Songs, &c., with a Sketch of the Author's life, by Daniel Sedgwick [q. v.], 1860; Evangel. Mag. 1814, p. 304; Tyerman's Life of Whitefield, i. 212, 278, 285, ii. 294; Griffith's Brand out of the Fire, 1759.] C. F. S

SEALLY, JOHN (1747?–1795), miscellaneous writer, born in Somerset about 1747, was educated at Bristol grammar

school, with a view to ordination. He may possibly be identical with 'John Sealy,' son of John Sealy of Bridgwater, Somerset, who matriculated from Hertford College, Oxford, on 22 May 1760, aged 18, and graduated B.A. in 1764 (Foster, *Alumni Oxon.* 1715–1886, s. v.) The death of his uncle and patron obliged him to enter a solicitor's office, which he soon quitted to learn the business of a merchant under Malachy Postlethwayt [q. v.] His master's strictness was so little relished by Seally that, with some assistance from his mother, he betook himself to authorship and journalism as a means of livelihood. During a visit to Manchester he persuaded a wealthy heiress to elope with him, but was overtaken by the father at Worcester. The lady is said to have died broken-hearted, and Seally consoled himself by marrying, in 1766, a reputed rich widow of double his age, only to find, some years later, that she had no money and a husband (the Rev. William Lewis) still living. In the meantime Seally sought occupation as a writing-master and accountant. About 1767 he established a school in Bridgwater Square, Westminster, and after some years' successful tuition took holy orders. In 1790 he was presented to the vicarage of East Meon with Froxfield and Steep, Hampshire. He died in Queen Square, Westminster, in March 1795. After his separation from Mrs. Lewis he married Mary, eldest daughter of Joseph Humphreys, rector of Ellisfield, Hampshire, and of North Stoke, Somerset, who survived him (notes from Seally's will, proved in P. C. C. on 22 April 1795).

Seally was elected fellow of the Royal Society on 30 June 1791 (Thomson, *Hist. Royal Soc.* Appendix iv. p. lxii). During a sojourn in Rome in 1774 he obtained admission to the Roman Academy (Arcadia) by a eulogy on Maria Maddelana Fernandez Corilla, poet-laureate of Italy. He was also M.A. and LL.D. A portrait engraved by Thorowgood is mentioned by Bromley.

Seally contributed occasional verses to various magazines, projected a short-lived political paper signed 'Britannicus,' conducted for some time the 'Universal Museum' and the 'Freeholder's Magazine,' and was concerned in the 'St. James's Magazine,' edited by Robert Lloyd [q. v.] He likewise published several novels, poems, and school-books, including: 1. 'The Loves of Calisto and Emira, or the Fatal Legacy,' 12mo, London, 1776; a French translation was published at Paris in 1778. 2. 'Moral Tales, after the Eastern manner,' 12mo, London (1780?). 3. 'The Marriage of Sir Gawaine,' an opera, 1782. 4. 'A complete Geographical Dictionary,' 2 vols. 4to, London, 1787. 5. 'The Lady's Encyclopædia,' 3 vols. 12mo, London, 1788.

[Notes and Queries, 7th ser. xi. 287, 395; Baker's Biogr. Dram. (1812), vol. i. pt. ii. p. 637; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; information from the vicar of East Meon.] G. G.

SEAMAN, LAZARUS (*d.* 1675), puritan divine, was a native of Leicester, where he was born of poor parents early in the seventeenth century. On 4 July 1623 he was entered as a sizar at Emmanuel College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1627, M.A. in 1631. Straitened means led him to leave Cambridge and teach a school, apparently in London. He was chosen lecturer at St. Martin's, Ludgate, and became chaplain to Algernon Percy, tenth earl of Northumberland [q. v.] In 1642 he was presented by Laud to the rectory of Allhallows, Bread Street; Laud had promised this presentation out of 'courtesie' to Northumberland, and complains that, though aware of this, Sir Henry Montagu, first earl of Manchester [q. v.], had written, commanding him in the name of the House of Lords to give the benefice to Seaman (*Hist. of the Troubles*, 1695, p. 199). In 1643 he was nominated a member of the Westminster Assembly of divines, and he was a regular attendant; the best thing he said was on 18 Feb. 1645, 'In no institution did God go against nature.' By a private discussion on transubstantiation, held about this time against two Romish priests, he was the means, according to William Jenkyn [q. v.], of preventing the conversion of a noble family to the Roman catholic church.

On 11 April 1644 Seaman was admitted master of Peterhouse, Cambridge, by Edward Montagu, second earl of Manchester [q. v.], in the room of John Cosin [q. v.], ejected on 13 March. Calamy reports that he discharged the duties of the mastership with 'abundant honour;' Walker relates that at the Restoration the fellows, in a petition to the crown, complained of his 'unstatutable government.'

On 6 Nov. 1645 Seaman was placed on the committee of accommodation designed by parliament to arrange terms for the comprehension of the independents; the project fell through, as the independents rejected comprehension and insisted on toleration. He was one of the remonstrants (26 May 1646) against the toleration of 'separate congregations,' and maintained in the Westminster Assembly the divine right of the presbyterian discipline. At the second meeting (8 Nov. 1647) of the provincial assem-

bly of London, Seaman, a member of the first London classis, was moderator. In September–November 1648 he was one of the four presbyterian divines commissioned to the Isle of Wight to recommend their case to Charles in discussion with the king, aided by episcopalian divines; Charles complimented Seaman on his ability. In January 1649 he signed the 'Vindication' drawn up by Cornelius Burges, D.D. [q. v.], protesting against the king's trial. He proceeded D.D. in 1649. In 1653 he was vice-chancellor, and in 1654 was appointed by Cromwell one of the visitors of his university.

Cosin was restored to the mastership of Peterhouse on 3 Aug. 1660. Seaman held aloof, with William Jenkyn and a few others, from the negotiations with Charles II in the presbyterian interest, and was looked upon as an uncompromising man, whom it was useless to tempt with offers of preferment. He resigned his benefice in consequence of the Uniformity Act; his successor, Risden, was appointed on 26 Aug. 1662. On the passing of the Five Miles Act, 1665, Baxter drew up a statement of reasons for not taking the oath which exempted from its operation; Seaman persuaded him to abstain from publishing it, and recommended a policy of 'silent patience.' He privately ministered to a congregation of his former parishioners, preached publicly after the great fire of 1666, and after the indulgence of 1672 built a chapel in Meeting-house Yard, Silver Street, Wood Street, Holborn. Wood, who knew him personally, refers to him respectfully as 'a learned nonconformist.' He died in Warwick Court, Newgate Street, about 9 Sept. 1675; Jenkyn preached his funeral sermon on 12 Sept.; an elegy on his death was issued (1675) as a broadsheet.

Seaman was a man of much learning, noted as a casuist, charitable in disposition, and a model of prudent reserve. He is chiefly remembered for his library, numbering upwards of five thousand books, which was the first sold in England by auction. The catalogue was published with the title 'Catalogus Variorum et Insignium Librorum instructissimæ Bibliothecæ . . . Quorum Auctio habebitur Londini in ædibus Defuncti . . . Cura Gulielmi Cooper Bibliopolæ,' &c., 1676, 4to, pp. 137. A notice 'To the Reader' states that 'it hath not been usual here in England to make sale of Books by way of Auction,' though this was 'practised in other countreys.' Four rules of sale are given, and the auction was to begin on 3 Oct. and continue each day at 9 A.M. and 2 P.M. till the books were sold. Of the two British Museum copies (821, i. 1 and 11906, e. 1) of the catalogue, the former, once in the possession of Narcissus Luttrell, has the prices added in manuscript. The highest sum obtained for a single lot was 8*l.* 2*s.* for the set of St. Chrysostom (Paris, 1636); the highest for a single volume was 1*l.* 15*s.* for Servetus's 'Dialogorum de Trinitate Libri Duo,' 1532, 8vo. Over 700*l.* was realised in all (*Bibliographica*, i. 376).

Besides sermons before parliament (1644–1647), before the Lord Mayor (1650), and a farewell sermon (in the London collection, 1663), Seaman published: 1. 'The Διατριβή proved to be Παραδιατριβή. A Vindication of . . . the Reformed Church . . . from Misrepresentations concerning the Ordination,' 1647, 4to (against Sidrach Simpson [q. v.] and Edmund Chillenden [q. v.]). 2. 'His Majesties Papers . . . with an Answer . . . by . . . Mr. Seaman,' 1648, 4to; reprinted as 'The Papers which passed between His Majesty . . . and Mr. Seaman . . . concerning Church-government' [1649], 8vo. He prefixed an address to 'A Glance of Heaven,' 1638, by Richard Sibbes, D.D. [q. v.] For the Turkish version of the catechism by John Ball (1585–1640) [q. v.], erroneously ascribed to him, see SEAMAN, WILLIAM.

[Funeral Sermon by Jenkyn, 1675; Baxter's Reliquiæ, 1696. ii. 229, iii. 13; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. (Bliss) iii. 777, 1122, iv. 213; Calamy's Account, 1713, pp. 16 sq.; Calamy's Continuation, 1727, i. 17; Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy, 1714, ii. 152; Wilson's Dissenting Churches of London, 1810, iii. 6 sq.; Neal's Hist. of the Puritans (Toulmin), 1822, vol. iii.; Mitchell and Struthers's Minutes of the Westminster Assembly, 1874, pp. 62, &c.; Longman's Magazine, December 1893 (by Mr. A. W. Pollard); information kindly furnished by the Master of Emmanuel and the Master of Peterhouse.] A. G.

SEAMAN, WILLIAM (1606–1680), orientalist, and first translator of the New Testament into Turkish, was born in 1606. In 1623–4 he matriculated at Balliol College, Oxford, graduating B.A. at the same time, and M.A. in 1626. In 1628 he became rector of Upton-Scudamore, a living in the gift of Queen's College, Oxford, which he held up to the time of his death. Soon after his institution he travelled to Constantinople, and there entered the service of Sir Peter Wyche [q. v.], the English ambassador, though in what capacity does not appear. Twells, in a note to his 'Life of Dr. Edward Pocock' (London, 1740), doubtfully states that Seaman was chaplain to an English ambassador at the Porte. Sir Peter was ambassador from 1628 to 1639, and Thomas Hunt was his chaplain from 1628 till 1636. In 1652 Seaman published a translation from the Turkish

of Hojah Effendi's 'Reign of the Sultan Orchan,' and dedicated it to Lady Jane Merick, who had formerly been the wife of Sir Peter Wyche. Seaman states as the reason of his presenting the work to her: 'Not only because (during my youth) I began the study of the Turkish language while I was a servant of your family, but likewise as having had my education, in the use of my pen, under the Right Honourable Sir Peter Wyche (your then noble husband) in the time of his embassie there.'

After 1650 Seaman, at the instigation of the Hon. Robert Boyle, who contributed 60*l.* to the cost of the undertaking, commenced his *magnum opus*, the translation of the New Testament into Turkish, and in 1659 he published the three epistles of St. John, under the title 'Specimen S.S. Scripturæ . . . Turcicè redditæ opera G. S.' In the following year he prepared, also at the desire of Boyle, a Turkish version of the 'Short Catechisme' of John Ball (1585–1640) [q. v.] This work (of which a copy exists in the Bodleian Library) is a small octavo, printed apparently at Oxford. There is neither title-page, author's name, nor date.

The New Testament was completed and published in quarto at Oxford in 1666. It is a creditable monument of Seaman's erudition and industry, and remained for a century and a half the only printed Turkish version. In 1670 Seaman published a Turkish grammar, concerning which several letters passed between himself and Dr. Pococke, who bestowed great care and pains in correcting and improving the style of the Latin preface and epistle dedicatory. In the dedication Seaman acknowledges the assistance he had received from Boyle, who contributed 20*l.* (to be paid in books) towards the cost of the work, and to Cyril Wyche, the son of his former patron, Sir Peter. At this time Seaman had a house in Whitecross Alley, Moorfields. He died on 7 Nov. 1680, and was buried in the church of Upton-Scudamore, having held the rectory for fifty-two years. He is stated to have been a moderate nonconformist. He was married and left issue.

[Twells's Life of Dr. Edw. Pocock; Court Books of the Levant Company; information from the Rev. R. Powley, rector of Upton-Scudamore, Wiltshire.] H. T. L.

SEAMUS DALL (*fl.* 1712), Irish poet. [See MACCUAIRT, JAMES.]

SEARCHFIELD, ROWLAND (1565?–1622), bishop of Bristol, born in 1564 or 1565, entered Merchant Taylors' School in 1575, and matriculated as fellow from St. John's College, Oxford, on 6 July 1582, aged 17. He graduated B.A. on 11 Oct. 1586, M.A. on 2 June 1590, and B.D. on 30 June 1597, being dispensed from the usual exercises on the ground that he was 'engaged on certain duties at the command of the archbishop of Canterbury.' He graduated D.D. on 1 June 1608, maintaining in his theses that various forms of religion were incompatible with unity of faith; that no one could be saved by the faith of another; and that heretics should be compelled to conform outwardly. He was appointed proctor of the university on 21 April 1596, and was licensed to preach on 17 Feb. 1605–6. In 1601 he was made vicar of Evenley, Northamptonshire, and rector of Burthrop, Gloucestershire, and in 1606 he became vicar of Charlbury, Oxfordshire. On 18 March 1618–19 he was elected bishop of Bristol, being consecrated on 9 May following, and receiving back the temporalities on the 28th. He died on 11 Oct. 1622, and was buried in Bristol Cathedral. John Manningham describes him as 'a dissembled Christian, like an intemperate patient which can gladly heare his physicion discourse of his dyet and remedy, but will not endure to obserue them' (*Diary*, Camd. Soc. p. 11). By his wife Anne, daughter of Ralph and Mary Hutchinson, he had one or more sons. The stone placed over his grave was subsequently removed to make room for the communion table.

[Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ii. 861; Godwin, De Præsul. Angliæ, ed. Richardson; Lansd. MS. 984, f. 23; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1619–23, pp. 44, 459; Le Neve's Fasti, ed. Hardy; Clark's Reg. Univ. Oxon. passim; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714; Clode's Memorials of the Merchant Taylors' Company, p. 665; Robinson's Reg. Merchant Taylors' School, i. 22.] A. F. P.

SEARLE, THOMAS (1777–1849), rear-admiral, son of James Searle of Staddlescombe, Devonshire, was born on 29 May 1777. He entered the navy in November 1789, served on the Mediterranean, home, and Newfoundland stations, and in 1796 was in the Royal George, flagship of Lord Bridport, by whose interest he was made lieutenant, on 19 Aug., to the Incendiary fireship. In 1797 he was in the Prince, flagship of Sir Roger Curtis; in 1798, in the Nemesis frigate, on the North American station, and in 1799 commanded the Courier cutter in the North Sea. On 26 Nov. 1799 he was made commander on the recommendation of Lord Duncan, who was greatly pleased with his activity during the year, and especially with his gallant capture of a large French privateer on 23 Nov. From

June 1800 to October 1802 he was employed in the transport service; and from July 1803 to April 1804, with the Portsmouth division of sea-fencibles. During 1804–1805–6, he commanded various small vessels off Boulogne and the north coast of France, and in December 1806 was appointed to the Grasshopper brig for service in the Mediterrean. His service in the Grasshopper was marked, even in that age, 'as dashing in the extreme.' On 11 Dec. 1807, off Cape Palos, he engaged a heavily armed Spanish brig of war with two settees in company; captured the brig and drove the settees to seek safety in flight. Lord Collingwood officially reported the affair as 'an instance of the zeal and enterprise which marked Searle's general conduct.' On 4 April 1808, in company with the Alceste and Mercury frigates, he assisted in destroying or capturing a convoy of merchant vessels at Rota, near Cadiz, after dispersing or sinking the gunboats that escorted them, and silencing the batteries of Rota, which protected them. This last service was performed by the brig alone 'by the extraordinary gallantry and good conduct of Captain Searle, who kept in upon the shoal to the southward of the town so near as to drive the enemy from their guns with grape from his carronades, and at the same time kept in check a division of the gunboats that had come out from Cadiz to assist the others engaged by the Alcestes and Mercury. It was a general cry in both ships: "Only look how nobly the brig behaves"' ([Sir] Murray Maxwell [q. v.] to the secretary of the admiralty, *Gazette*, 1808, p. 570). Consequent on Maxwell's letter Searle was advanced to post rank on 28 April 1808, though the promotion did not reach him till July; and meanwhile, on 23 April, being in company with the Rapid brig, on the south coast of Portugal, he fell in with two richly laden Spanish vessels from South America, under convoy of four gunboats. The merchant ships ran in under the batteries of Faro, by which they were protected; but the brigs, having captured two of the gunboats, driven the other two on shore, and silenced the batteries, brought off the ships, with cargoes of the value of 60,000*l*.

On leaving the Grasshopper, Searle was presented by the crew with a sword of the value of eighty guineas, and shortly after, by Lloyd's, with a piece of plate worth one hundred guineas. In 1809 he commanded the Frederickstein in the Mediterranean; in 1810–11, the Elizabeth in the North Sea and at Lisbon; and in 1811–12, the Druid in the Mediterranean. On 4 June 1815 he was nominated a C.B. In 1818–21 he commanded the Hyperion frigate in the Channel (in attendance upon George IV) and in a voyage to South America, whence he brought back specie to the amount of half a million sterling. From 1836 to 1839 he was captain of the Victory, then guardship at Portsmouth; and on 9 Nov. 1846 was promoted to the rank of rear-admiral. He died at Kingston House, Portsea, on 18 March 1849, and was buried at the garrison chapel, Portsmouth. He is described as a man of middle height, strongly built, black hair, dark complexion, and remarkably handsome. He married, in November 1796, Ann, daughter of Joseph Maddock of Plymouth Dockyard and Tamerton Foliot, and by her had a large family; eight daughters survived him.

[O'Byrne's Nav. Biogr. Dict.; Marshall's Roy. Nav. Biogr. v. (suppl. pt. i.) 309; James's Naval Hist. (ed. cr. 8vo) ii. 379–80, 382, 413–414, iv. 270–1, 326, 329–30; service-book in the Public Record Office; information from his great-grandson, Mr. W. J. Richards of Plymouth.] J. K. L.

SEATON. [See also SETON.]

SEATON, BARON. [See COLBORNE, SIR JOHN, 1778–1863.]

SEATON, EDWARD CATOR (1815–1880), author of the 'Handbook of Vaccination,' was born at Rochester in 1815, where his father, a retired naval surgeon, was in practice. He was educated at Edinburgh University, where he graduated M.D. in 1837, and, then joining his father at Rochester, was appointed surgeon to the North Aylesford Union. Purchasing a small practice, he settled at 77 Sloane Street, London, in 1841, removing to 33 Sloane Street in 1852, and remaining there until 1862. He took an active part in founding the Western Medical Society, of which he was secretary, librarian, and afterwards president. With the Epidemiological Society he was connected from its foundation in 1850 (serving as president in 1869). A committee of the society conducted inquiries concerning small-pox and vaccination, and reached the conclusion that the disease had much increased in foreign countries. The report, drawn up by Seaton, was presented to parliament (*Parliamentary Papers*, 1852–3, No. 434, and 1854–5, No. 88). The outcome of the inquiry was the Compulsory Vaccination Act of 1853. Among other papers printed by him were 'The Protective and Modifying Process of Vaccination' (*Journal of Public Health and Sanitary Review*, 1856–7, ii. 101, 343–68) and an 'Account of an Epidemic of Small

Pox in Jamaica,' 1851–2 (*Trans. Epidemiological Soc.* 1858, pp. 1–12). In 1858 Seaton was appointed an inspector under the general board of health, and was engaged in reporting on the state of vaccination in England, which he found to be deficient and requiring an amendment in the law. He contributed the article on vaccination to Reynolds's 'System of Medicine' (1866, i. 483–519), and published his well-known 'Handbook of Vaccination' (1868), a 'Report on Animal Vaccination,' and 'On the recent Small-pox Epidemic with reference to Vaccination,' in the new local government series in 1874. His efforts led to improved arrangements for public vaccination. In 1872 he became a fellow of the Royal College of Physicians, and represented Great Britain in the sanitary conference held at Vienna in 1874. From 1871 he acted as assistant medical officer to the local government board, and in June 1876 succeeded John Simon, C.B., as medical officer. In this capacity his sound clear judgment proved of great value. He died at the residence of his son-in-law, Thomas Spooner Soden, at 48 Ladbroke Grove, Notting Hill, London, on 31 Jan. 1880, and was buried in Kensal Green cemetery.

Besides the works enumerated, he wrote: 'General Memorandum on the Proceedings which are advisable in Places attacked by Epidemic Diseases,' 1878; 'Chelsea Vestry: Annual Reports of the Medical Officer of Health,' 1885–90.

[Dudgeon's Official Defence of Vaccinations, Leicester, 1876; Medical Times and Gazette, 31 Jan. 1880, pp. 137–8; Proceedings of Medical and Chirurgical Society, 1875, viii. 485; Lancet, 31 Jan. 1880, pp. 188–9; Trans. Epidemiological Soc. 1880, iv. 431–2.] G. C. B.

SEATON, JOHN THOMAS (*fl.* 1761–1806), portrait-painter, was son of Christopher Seaton, a gem-engraver, who was a pupil of Charles Christian Reisen [q. v.], and died in 1768. Seaton was a pupil of Francis Hayman [q. v.], and also studied in the St. Martin's Lane academy. He and his father were both members of the Incorporated Society of Artists, and signed their declaration roll in 1766. He resided for some time at Bath, whence he sent portraits to the exhibition of the society, and in 1774 he exhibited portraits at the Royal Academy. His portraits were usually small full-lengths in a landscape. He subsequently went to Edinburgh, where he practised with repute as a portrait-painter, and was living in 1806. A portrait by him of Walter Macfarlan (*d.* 1767) of Macfarlane is in the Scottish National Portrait Gallery.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Graves's Dict. of Artists, 1760–1893; Sequier's Dictionary of Painters.] L. C.

SEATON, THOMAS (1684–1741), divine, hymn-writer, and founder of the Seatonian prize for sacred poetry at Cambridge, born at Stamford in 1684, was admitted a sizar of Clare Hall, Cambridge, in 1701, under the tuition of Mr. Clarke, bedel of the university. He graduated B.A. in 1704, was elected a fellow of his college, and commenced M.A. in 1708. After taking holy orders, he became chaplain to Daniel, earl of Nottingham, on whose presentation he was instituted to the vicarage of Ravenstone, Buckinghamshire, on 9 Nov. 1721. He died at Ravenstone on 18 Aug. 1741, and was buried there on the 23rd. A large tombstone was erected to his memory in the churchyard, with a Latin inscription, which has been printed by Lipscomb (*Hist. of Buckinghamshire*, iv. 320, 323).

By his will he devised his estate at Kislingbury, Northamptonshire, to the university of Cambridge, on condition that out of the rents a prize should be annually awarded to a master of arts of that university who, in the judgment of the vice-chancellor, the master of Clare Hall, and the Greek professor, had composed the best English poem on the attributes of the Supreme Being or some other sacred subject. The first poem was printed in 1750, and the publication has continued uniformly to the present time, except in 1766, 1769, and 1771. Many of these compositions will be found in 'Musæ Seatonianæ. A complete Collection of the Cambridge Prize Poems, from their first institution . . . to the present time. To which are added two poems, likewise written for the prize, by Mr. Bally and Mr. Scott' (London, 1773, 8vo).

Seaton was himself the author of: 1. 'The Divinity of our Saviour proved: in an Essay on the Eternity of the Son of God,' London, 1719, 8vo; in answer to Whiston. 2. 'The Conduct of Servants in Great Families. Consisting of Dissertations upon several Passages of the Holy Scriptures relating to the Office of a Servant,' London, 1720, 12mo. 3. 'The Defects of the Objections against the New Testament Application of the Prophecies in the Old, exposed; and the Evangelists Application of 'em vindicated,' London, 1726, 8vo. 4. 'A Compendious View of the Grounds of Religion, both Natural and Reveal'd: in two dissertations,' London, 1729, 12mo. 5. 'The Devotional Life render'd Familiar, Easy, and Pleasant, in several Hymns upon the most common occasions of Human Life. Composed and collected

by T. S.,' London, 1734, 12mo; reprinted Oxford, 1855, 12mo.

[Addit. MS. 5880, f. 39 *b*; Cambridge Book of Endowments, p. 152; Camden's Britannia, ed. Gough, ii. 177; Carter's Cambridge, p. 394; Cooke's Preachers' Assistant, ii. 298; Cooper's Annals of Cambridge, iv. 243; Critical Review, 1782, p. 69; Graduati Cantabr. 1823, p. 419; Notes and Queries, 3rd ser. ii. 506.] T. C.

SEATON, Sir THOMAS (1806–1876), major-general, born in 1806, was the son of John Fox Seaton of Pontefract, and afterwards of Clapham. In July 1822, being then sixteen years and five months old, he obtained a cadetship in the East India Company's service, and on 4 Feb. 1823 he was commissioned as ensign in the first battalion of the 10th native infantry of the Bengal army. In July he was transferred to the second battalion of the 17th native infantry, stationed at Ludhiana in the Punjab. This battalion was soon afterwards converted into the 35th native infantry. He served with the first battalion (which had become the 34th) from October 1824 till July 1825, but then returned to the 35th, and remained in it till 1857. His commission as lieutenant was dated 1 May 1824. He took part in the siege of Bhartpur, and was afterwards stationed at Meerut and in the Lower Provinces, where he married Caroline, daughter of J. Corfield of Taunton, Somerset. On 2 April 1834 he was promoted captain. In 1836, having lost his wife, he went to England on furlough for three years, and returned to India in 1839, having married, as his second wife, Elizabeth, daughter of J. Harriman of Tivoli, Cumberland.

He found that his regiment was engaged in the campaign just opened in Afghanistan, and hastened to join it by way of the Bolan Pass. In his autobiography he has given a vivid picture of the sufferings of the convoy to which he was attached in crossing the desert of Shikarpur to Bagh in the intense heat of June. He rejoined his regiment at Kabul on 8 Sept. 1839, and remained there for two years, except for a short expedition over the Hindukush to Bamian. In October 1841, when the regiment was about to return to India as part of Sale's brigade, the general rising of the Afghans took place [see Sale, Sir Robert Henry]. The brigade had to reopen the Koord Kabul Pass, and to fight its way to Jalalabad, which it reached on 12 Nov.

The defence of Jalalabad lasted five months, and in the course of it Seaton had opportunities of showing his resource. He was sent to destroy the walls of an outlying fort which might give cover to the enemy; but they proved too hard for spade and pick, and he had no powder to spare. There was a sunken road at the foot of the wall, and the soil was soft; so he threw a dam across the lower part of the road, and turned a little stream into it. In a few hours the wall fell. In the first two months of the defence the stock of wine and spirits ran out, but Seaton contrived to make a still with some washermen's pots and a matchlock barrel, and supplied his mess with spirits as long as there was sugar left.

The cordial friendship between the two infantry regiments of the brigade—the 13th British light infantry and the 35th native infantry—was one of the most notable features of the defence of Jalalabad. They entertained one another at parting, after their return to India, and the 13th presented to the 35th a piece of plate, which passed into Seaton's possession when the 35th was disbanded in the mutiny. Seaton received the medal awarded to the 'illustrious garrison,' and was made C.B. He was given the local rank of major on 4 Oct. 1842.

From 1842 to 1851 he held the appointment of brigade-major at Agra. After three years' furlough in England he rejoined his regiment at Sialkot on 31 Jan. 1855, and took command of it. He had become major in the regiment on 17 Nov. 1852, and lieutenant-colonel in the army on 20 June 1854. In May 1857 he went to Simla on account of his health, but within a week he was sent to Umballa to take command of the 60th native infantry, a regiment which was ripe for mutiny. A few days afterwards the troops at Umballa set out for the siege of Delhi; but this regiment, in spite (or because) of its known condition, was detached on the march to intercept a body of mutineers at Rohtak. By dexterous handling Seaton delayed the inevitable outbreak for a fortnight; but on 10 June the regiment drove away its officers, and marched to join the mutineers in Delhi. The officers made their way to the British camp, where there was much surprise at their safe arrival; and Seaton served as a field officer during the earlier part of the siege.

On 23 July he was dangerously wounded, and after the fall of Delhi he was sent up to Simla. In November he was again ready for duty, and was made lieutenant-colonel of the 1st European fusiliers, his commission bearing date 27 June. He was made colonel in the army on 13 Oct. With a force of 2,300 men, including his own regiment, he escorted a large convoy from Delhi through the Duàb, to join the commander-in-chief. He had engagements with the mutineers

near Bibram, at Patiali, and at Mainpuri, in which he defeated them by skilful tactics with little loss.

He joined Sir Colin Campbell at Fatehgarh on 7 Jan. 1858, and was left in command there as brigadier during the siege of Lucknow. 'You'll be mobbed, my dear friend,' said Sir Colin, 'as soon as I leave, but you must hold out till I come back.' He had only a small force, but finding that the mutineers were mustering in large numbers in the neighbourhood, he marched out on the night of 6 April, fell upon a body of them at Kankar, and routed them so thoroughly that the main road to the north-west was no longer in danger. In this brilliant affair his men 'had marched, out and home, forty-four miles, had fought an action, defeating the enemy with considerable loss, and capturing their guns, ammunition, tents, stores, and baggage, and they had returned home safely with the captured guns, without leaving behind a single straggler, and, in spite of the tremendous heat, doing all in a little over twenty-two hours.'

In June he was sent to Shahjahanpur, and on 8 Oct. he surprised and defeated the Oudh mutineers at Bunhagong. In the following spring his brigade was broken up, as the fighting was at an end; and he retired soon afterwards with the rank of major-general. His retirement bore date 30 Aug. 1859. He had been made K.C.B. on 24 March 1858.

After spending several years in England, he settled in France on account of the milder climate, and he died at Paris on 11 Sept. 1876.

Seaton's autobiography, 'From Cadet to Colonel,' was published in two volumes in 1866, and reprinted in one volume in 1877. It is a well-told story of an Indian soldier's career. He also wrote some papers on 'Fret-cutting and Wood-carving,' for a boys' magazine, and they were reprinted as a manual in 1875.

[From Cadet to Colonel; Stocqueler's Memorials of Afghanistan, pp. 213–27; Malleson's Hist. of the Indian Mutiny; Annual Register, 1876; Illustrated London News, 23 Sept. 1876.]

E. M. L.

SEAWARD, JOHN (1786–1858), civil engineer, son of a builder, was born at Lambeth, London, in January 1786, and began life as a surveyor and architect, working with his father. He was afterwards engaged by Grillier & Co., contractors for the erection of Vauxhall Bridge; the direction of that work was entrusted to Seaward, and this circumstance brought him the acquaintance of Jeremy Bentham and Ralph and James Walker. He next managed some lead-mines in Wales, acquired a knowledge of chemistry, and became friendly with Woolf, Trevithick, and other mechanical engineers. Returning to London, he superintended the construction of Gordon's, Dowson's, and other docks on the Thames, and became agent for the Gospel Oak Ironworks in Staffordshire. He was at the same time connected with the Imperial and Continental Gas Company, and introduced gas lighting into several towns in France, Belgium, and Holland. In 1823 he made drawings for a new London Bridge of three arches, each of 230 feet span. In 1824 he established the Canal Ironworks, Millwall, Poplar, for the construction of machinery, more particularly of marine engines. The first vessel built there in 1825, the Royal George, was intended to run between Dover and Calais. He joined the Institution of Civil Engineers as a member in 1826, and was a frequent attendant at the meetings.

A younger brother, SAMUEL SEAWARD (1800–1842), joined John about 1826; the brothers produced machinery for every part of the world, and made the name of Seaward widely known. In 1829 they assisted in the formation of the Diamond Steam Packet Company, and built the engines for the boats which ran between Gravesend and London. Of these, the Ruby and the Sapphire were types for speed and for accommodation. In 1836 the brothers brought out the direct-acting engines for the Gorgon and Cyclops, known as Seaward's engines, nearly dispensing with the heavy side-beam engines which up to that period were in general use. Their success was complete, and the saving obtained in the consumption of fuel by the double-slide valve, both for the steam and exhaust, with other improvements, caused the government to entrust the Seawards with the building of twenty-four steamboats and some smaller vessels. At the same time they adapted their engines to the vessels of the East India Company, the Steam Navigation Companies, and the ships of foreign governments. They early advocated the use of auxiliary steam power for the voyage to India, and experimented with the Vernon in 1839 and 1840 with great success (*Trans. Instit. of Civil Engineers*, 1842, iii. 385–401). They also designed large swing-bridges, dredging machines, cranes, and other dock-apparatus, besides machinery for lead, saw, and sugar mills. Among the improvements and inventions for which John Seaward was personally responsible were the tubular boilers, which are still used in the royal navy, the disconnecting cranks for paddle-wheel engines, the telescopic funnel, the self-acting nozzles for feed and for regulating the saturation of the

water in marine boilers, the double passages in cylinders both for steam and eduction, the cheese-couplings used to connect and disconnect the screw propeller to and from the engines, and other minor improvements.

The death of Samuel Seaward, who was a F.R.S., at Endsleigh Street, London, on 11 May 1842 (*Min. of Proc. of Instit. of Civil Engineers*, 1842-3, ii. 11-12), threw upon John Seaward the entire management of the Canal Ironworks. In the construction of the engines of the Amazon, eight hundred horse power, he produced one of his most perfect works. The vessel unfortunately was destroyed by fire on her first passage to the West Indies on 4 Jan. 1852. He died at 20 Brecknock Crescent, London, on 26 March 1858.

He was the author of: 1. 'Observations on the Rebuilding of London Bridge, with an examination of the Arch of Equilibrium proposed by Dr. Hutton, and an investigation of a new method for forming an arch of that description,' 1824. 2. 'Observations on the Advantages and Possibility of successfully employing Steam Power in navigating Ships between this country and the East Indies,' 1829, signed J. S. & Co. For 'The Steam Engine,' by Thomas Tredgold, 1850, he contributed articles on 'Steam Navigation,' 'Vessels of Iron and Wood,' the 'Steam Engine,' and on 'Screw Propulsion.'

[Minutes of Proc. of Instit. of Civil Engineers, 1859, xviii. 199-202; Gent. Mag. May 1858, p. 566; Cat. of Scientific Papers, 1871, v. 609.] G. C. B.

SEBBI, SAEBBI, or **SEBBA** (*d.* 695?), king of the East-Saxons, was the son of Saeward. The father was, jointly with his two brothers, Sexred [q. v.] and another, king of the East-Saxons; he was a heathen, and was slain in battle by the West-Saxons in or about 626 (*Mon. Hist. Brit.* p. 637; Bede, *Hist. Eccl.* ii. c. 5; Henry of Huntingdon, p. 57). Sebbi became king about 665, succeeding his kinsman Swithelm, the brother and successor of Sigebert the Good [q. v.], who succeeded his cousin, Sigebert the Little [q. v.], who was the brother of Sebbi; he reigned conjointly with his nephew, Sighere [q. v.], son of Sigebert the Little, under the overlordship of the kings of Mercia (*Mon. Hist. Brit.* u.s.; *Hist. Eccl.* iii. c. 30). In the early years of his reign the great pestilence of 664 was raging, and under the pressure of this calamity a large number of the East-Saxons, with Sighere at their head, relapsed into heathenism (*ib.*; *Hist. of Epidemics in Britain*, i. 4-5). Sebbi, however, remained faithful to Christianity. On hearing of the relapse of the East-Saxons, Wulfhere [q.v.], king of Mercia, sent Bishop Jaruman (*d.* 667?) to recall them to the faith. His success was complete. Erkenwald [q. v.], who was appointed bishop of London in or about 675, was no doubt supported in his work by Sebbi, who appears as attesting a charter granted by one of his kinsmen to the nunnery of Barking, founded by the bishop (*Codex Diplomaticus*, vol. i. No. 35). Sebbi, who was much given to prayer, acts of charity, and good works, and whose character, men said, was more befitting a bishop than a king, desired to abdicate, and become a monk, but was prevented by his wife, who refused to be separated from him. When, however, he had reigned for thirty years, and had fallen into great weakness from the disease of which he died, he told his wife that he could no longer live with her in the world, and, having with difficulty obtained her consent, went to Waldhere [q. v.], the bishop of London, and received from him the monastic habit, giving him a large sum for the poor, and reserving nothing for himself. As he lay in sickness upon his bed with his thegns around him, who had come to ask about his health, he saw in a vision three men in shining garments, one of whom told him that on the third day his soul should pass from his body without pain and in the midst of glorious light. He died at the ninth hour of the third day following (in or about 695). A stone coffin had been prepared for him; it was found to be too short inside; the length of the cavity was increased; it was still too short, but suddenly, in the presence of Bishop Waldhere, one of the king's sons, and many others, was found to have been lengthened miraculously (*Hist. Eccl.* iv. 11). Sebbi was buried in St. Paul's Church, London, where his tomb in the north aisle was shown until the great fire of 1666. He left two sons, Sighard and Suefred, who succeeded him.

[Bede's Hist. Eccl. iii. c. 30, iv. cc. 6, 11; Kemble's Codex Dipl. vol. i. Nos. 35, 38 (both Engl. Hist. Soc.); Mon. Hist. Brit. p. 637; Henry of Huntingdon, p. 57; Will. of Malmesbury's Gesta Regum, i. 98 (both Rolls Ser.); Dict. Chr. Biogr. s.v. 'Sebbi,' by Bishop Stubbs; Dugdale's Monasticon, i. 438-9; Dugdale's Hist. of St. Paul's, ed. Ellis, pp. 32, 64; Creighton's Hist. of Epidemics, i. 4-5.] W. H.

SEBERT. [See also Sigebert.]

SEBERT, SABERET, or **SABA** (*d.* 616?), first Christian king of the East-Saxons, son of Sledda, king of the East-Saxons, by his wife Ricula, sister of Ethelbert or Æthelberht (552?-616) [q. v.], king of Kent, reigned in dependence on his uncle

Ethelbert, and became a Christian soon after the latter's conversion. He and his people received Mellitus [q. v.] as their teacher and bishop. The founder of St. Paul's Church in London, the chief city of the East-Saxons, was, however, not Sebert, but his superior king, Ethelbert. Sebert is said to have founded Westminster Abbey, but this is a late legend. He died soon after Ethelbert, in or about 616, and was succeeded by his three sons, who had remained heathen, and under whom the East-Saxons relapsed into heathenism [see under SEXRED]. In 1308 a tomb, said to be that of Sebert, was opened in Westminster Abbey for the purpose of translating the relics, and the right hand and forearm of the body were found undecayed.

[Bede's Hist. Eccl. ii. cc. 3, 5; A.-S. Chron. an. 604, ed. Plummer; Kemble's Codex Dipl. No. 555 (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Monasticon, i. 265, 288–91; Ann. Paulini ap. Chron. Edw. I and Edw. II, i. 266 (Rolls Ser.); Dict. Chr. Biogr. art. 'Sebert,' by Bishop Stubbs.] W. H.

SEBRIGHT, SIR JOHN SAUNDERS (1767–1846), seventh baronet, of Besford, Worcestershire, and Beechwood, Hertfordshire, politician and agriculturist, born on 23 May 1767, was the eldest son of Sir John Saunders Sebright, sixth baronet, by Sarah, daughter of Edward Knight, esq., of Wolverley, Worcestershire. The father, a colonel of the 18th foot and lieutenant-general in the army, represented Bath in three parliaments (1761–1780), and died in March 1794. The family settled in Worcestershire early in the fourteenth century; it came originally from Sebright Hall, near Great Baddow in Essex (see NASH, *Worcestershire*, i. 78–9). Edward Sebright, who was high sheriff of Worcestershire in 1622, was created first baronet in 1626, and proved himself a zealous royalist; he inherited from his uncle, William Sebright (*d.* 1620), who was M.P. for Droitwich in 1572, the manor of Besford, Worcestershire, which the uncle purchased.

The seventh baronet served for a short time in the army and was attached to the staff of Lord Amherst. He always took some interest in military matters. He was elected M.P. for Hertfordshire on 11 May 1807, and continued to represent the county till the end of the first reformed parliament. He disclaimed connection with any party, but, while always anxious to support the executive, generally acted with the more advanced whigs. He was a strong advocate of economy in administration, of the abolition of sinecures and unnecessary offices, and of the remission of indirect taxation. He was in principle a free-trader.

Free from most of the prejudices of the country squire, he showed his liberality most signally in his attitude towards the game laws. On 5 April 1821 he seconded Lord Cranborne's motion for an inquiry into the game laws, and supported all subsequent bills for their amendment. In 1826 he attributed the increase of crime chiefly to their influence (*Parl. Debates*, 2nd ser. xiv. 1242-3). In 1824, and again in 1828, he spoke in favour of the repeal of the usury laws, and he 'detested monopolies of all kinds.' As a practical agriculturist, owning land in three counties, Sebright gave his opinion (17 Dec. 1830) against any allotments larger than kitchen-gardens, but was willing to try an experiment on a larger scale (*ib.* 3rd ser. ii. 995).

When, on 1 March 1831, Lord John Russell moved for leave to bring in the first Reform Bill, Sebright, as an independent member, seconded the motion (*ib.* 3rd ser. ii. 1089; LE MARCHANT, *Althorp*, p. 298), and cordially supported this and the succeeding reform bills. On 17 Dec. 1832 he was returned for Hertfordshire, at the head of the poll, to the first reformed parliament, but retired at its close.

In 1809 he published a valuable letter to Sir Joseph Banks on 'The Art of Improving the Breeds of Domestic Animals' (sm. 8vo). Sebright was also author of 'Observations on Hawking, describing the mode of breaking and managing several kinds of hawks used in falconry,' 1826, 8vo; and of 'Observations upon the Instinct of Animals,' 1836, 8vo.

He died on 15 April 1846. A portrait of him was engraved by S. Reynolds from a painting by Boileau. He built and endowed a school at Cheverell's Green, and a row of almshouses for sixteen paupers in the parish of Flamstead, Hertfordshire, where some of the family property lay. He married, on 6 Aug. 1793, Harriet, heiress of Richard Crofts, esq., of West Harling, Norfolk. She died in August 1826, leaving, with seven daughters, a son, Sir Thomas Gage Saunders Sebright (1802–1864), who succeeded as eighth baronet.

[Wotton's Baronetage, 1771, i. 261–3; Burke's Peerage and Baronetage, 1893; Walford's County Families; Nash's Worcestershire, i. 78–9 (with pedigree); Cussans's Hertfordshire, iii. pt. i. pp. 106, 113; Parl. Debates, 1807–34; Evans's Cat. Engr. Portraits; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Donaldson's Agricult. Biography, p. 97.] G. LE G. N.

SECKER, THOMAS (1693–1768), archbishop of Canterbury, was born at Sibthorpe, a village in Nottinghamshire, in 1693. Thomas Secker, his father, who was a pious dissenter, lived on a small estate that he

owned there. His mother was a daughter of George Brough, a gentleman-farmer at Shelton, also a village in Nottinghamshire. Having been educated at the dissenting academy of Timothy Jollie [q. v.] at Attercliffe, the son was sent in 1710, partly, it would seem, at the expense of Dr. Isaac Watts, to study divinity, with a view to entering the dissenting ministry, under Samuel Jones (1680?–1719) [q. v.], who kept an academy, first at Gloucester, and then at Tewkesbury. Here he met some fellow-students who distinguished themselves in after life, notably Joseph Butler, afterwards bishop of Durham; Isaac Maddox, who became bishop of Worcester; and Samuel Chandler [q. v.], the nonconformist writer. There were sixteen pupils, and Secker, in a letter to Dr. Watts, gives an interesting account of their studies. Unable to make up his mind to which religious community to attach himself, he abandoned for the time the intention of entering the ministry, and in 1716 began to study medicine. He went to London and attended the best lectures there, and went over in 1718–19 to Paris, where he first met his lifelong friend and future brother-in-law, Martin Benson [q.v.], afterwards bishop of Gloucester. He kept up a correspondence with Butler, who extracted from his powerful friend, the Rev. Edward Talbot, a promise that he would persuade his father, William Talbot, bishop of Salisbury, to provide for Secker, if the latter would take orders in the church of England. Secker had already written to a friend intimating that he was not satisfied with the dissenters. In the summer of 1720 he returned to England, and was introduced to Talbot, who died of small-pox in the following December, having recommended Secker, Butler, and Benson to the notice of his father. The bishop attended to the wishes of his dying son, and provided for all three. Secker, under the influence of Butler, Benson, and S. Clarke, was won over to the church. He had no university degree, but at Leyden, on 7 March 1720–1, he received his M.D. degree, having written for the occasion a theme of unusual excellence, 'De Medicinâ Staticâ' (Leyden, 1721). He then entered as a gentleman-commoner at Exeter College, Oxford, and graduated by virtue of special letters from the chancellor In December 1722 he was ordained deacon, and on 28 March 1723 was ordained priest by Dr. Talbot, now bishop of Durham, at St. James's, Westminster, where he preached his first sermon. He was in high favour with the bishop, who in 1724 gave him the valuable living of Houghton-le-Spring. On 28 Oct. 1725 he married Catharine, the sister of his friend Benson. She had been living since Edward Talbot's death with his widow and daughter, and Mrs. and Miss Talbot continued to live with the Seckers after the marriage. Secker was an active parish priest at Houghton, where his knowledge of medicine was of great service to his poorer parishioners. But, for the benefit of Mrs. Secker's health, a sort of exchange was effected with Dr. Finney, rector of Ryton and prebendary of Durham, to both of which posts Secker, having resigned Houghton, was instituted in London on 3 June 1727. In July 1732 he was appointed chaplain to the king at the instance of Bishop Sherlock, who was much struck with a sermon he heard Secker preach at Bath. In August he preached before Queen Caroline (the king being abroad) at St. James's Chapel Royal, and from that time became an attendant at the queen's philosophical parties.

In May 1733 Secker, on the recommendation of Bishop Gibson, was appointed to the rectory of St. James's, Westminster. He proceeded D.C.L. at Oxford, not being of sufficient standing for the D.D. degree; and he preached on the occasion the Act sermon 'On the Advantages and Duties of an Academical Education,' which pleased the queen and contributed to his further advancement. In December 1734 he was nominated bishop of Bristol, and on 19 Jan. following was consecrated to that see in Lambeth chapel. He still retained both the rectory of St. James's and the prebend of Durham, for which, however, there was some excuse, as Bristol was the poorest bishopric in England. It was at this time that he drew up his 'Lectures on the Church Catechism' for the use of his parishioners at St. James's. Among the regular worshippers at his church was Frederick, prince of Wales, who now resided at Norfolk House, and Secker baptised many of the prince's children. George II had been impressed by Secker's sermon on the death of Queen Caroline, and he charged the bishop to try and bring about a reconciliation between him and his son; but the attempt proved abortive, and Secker incurred for a time the royal displeasure.

In 1737 he succeeded Dr. Potter as bishop of Oxford, and in this capacity his moderation and judgment stood him in good stead. Oxford was a stronghold of Jacobitism, and the bishop was a staunch supporter of the Hanoverian government; but, though he never concealed his opinions, Secker contrived to avoid collision with those with whom he disagreed. As bishop of Oxford he was brought into contact with Sarah, duchess

of Marlborough, who resided at Blenheim. He frequently visited her there, and was made one of her executors. In 1748 Mrs. Secker died, leaving no issue. In 1750 he was installed dean of St. Paul's, in succession to his friend Butler, who was made bishop of Durham. This again was a sort of exchange, made at the instance of the lord chancellor, Hardwicke. Secker resigned St. James's and his prebend at Durham in favour of a friend of the chancellor's. In 1758, in spite of his breach with the court, he became archbishop of Canterbury, being confirmed at Bow Church on 21 April. He was reconciled to George II before that king's death, and with his successor, whom he had baptised, confirmed, crowned, and married, he was a favourite. George III gave him in 1761 a miniature of himself, which descended through the bishop's niece to the Rev. Secker Gawthern, of Car Colston. For ten years Secker filled the post of primate creditably, if not brilliantly. In his later years he suffered severely from the gout. He died of a caries of the thigh-bone on 3 Aug. 1768, and was buried in a covered passage leading from Lambeth Palace to the north door of Lambeth church. At his own request neither monument nor epitaph was placed over his remains.

Secker was a favourable specimen of the orthodox eighteenth-century prelate. He had a typical horror of 'enthusiasm,' and deprecated the progress of methodism, though he was alive to its earnestness and piety, and did not persecute its adherents. His early training probably enabled him to distinguish between the attitude of the Wesleys and that of the dissenters. John Wesley declares that Secker was acquainted with every step they took, and never regarded their movement as a secession. Secker's remarks on methodism in his charges show great discernment, and for that very reason were not likely to please any party. On the other hand, he had no sympathy with the whig theology of the time, and spoke of the 'Hoadleian divinity' as 'Christianity secundum usum Winton.' He was not beyond his age in the matter of pluralities, thinking it no shame to hold a valuable living and a prebend, or an important deanery, in conjunction with a bishopric. But on almost all public questions he was on the side of enlightenment and large-hearted charity. Anti-Jacobite though he was, he protested against the persecution of the Scottish episcopal clergy after the rebellion of 1745. He was strongly in favour of granting the episcopate to the American church [see Sharp, Granville], following in this, as in many points, the example of his friend Butler; and he incurred great disfavour both in England and in America by advocating the scheme. Not long before his last illness he defended indignantly the memory of his old friend Butler from the absurd charge that he had died a papist (cf. Secker's three letters signed 'Misopseudes' in *St. James's Chron.* 1767). He was foremost in opposing the Spirituous Liquors Bill of 1743, which unquestionably wrought much mischief. He supported the repeal of the Jews' Naturalisation Bill of 1753, but so reasonably that fanatics thought he was arguing against the repeal. Though unbending as a churchman, he had the happy knack of disentangling the personal from the theological side of the question, and maintained friendly relations with many leading dissenters, such as Doddridge, Watts, Leland, Lardner, and Chandler. He was liberal with his money, and very happy in his family relations. He showed the potency of his friendships, among other ways, by cheerfully undertaking the rather thankless task of revising and correcting his friends' writings. Butler's 'Fifteen Sermons' and 'Analogy' are said to have had the benefit of his revision; certainly Dr. Church's 'Answer to Middleton,' and 'Analysis of Lord Bolingbroke's Works,' and Dr. Sharpe's 'Answer to the Hutchinsonians' were corrected by him. On the other hand, he is said to have been somewhat stiff and reserved to those with whom he could not sympathise. He certainly made several enemies. Horace Walpole is particularly bitter against Secker, bringing outrageous charges against him; and a less reckless writer, Bishop Hurd, in the well-known 'Life of Warburton' prefixed to his edition of Warburton's 'Works,' depreciates Secker's learning and abilities. Bishop Porteus defended his old friend and benefactor against both writers. Other champions were Bishop Thomas Newton, who describes him as 'that excellent prelate,' and Mr. Johnson of Connecticut, who thought 'there were few bishops like him;' while William Whiston, who disagreed with his views, called him 'an indefatigable pastor.' Even Horace Walpole owns that he was 'incredibly popular in his parish.'

As a writer Secker is distinguished by his plain good sense. The range of his knowledge was wide and deep. He was a good hebraist, and he wrote excellent Latin. The works which he has left to the Lambeth library are valuable quite as much from his manuscript annotations as for their own worth. Judging by his printed sermons, one would hardly rank him among the great pulpit orators of the English church. But he

purposely, his biographer tells us, composed them with studied simplicity, and the reader misses the tall commanding presence, and the good voice and delivery of the preacher. Archbishop Secker's printed works include no fewer than 140 sermons. Four volumes of them were published in his lifetime and the rest after his death. His other printed works are: 'Five Charges,' delivered by him to his clergy as bishop of Oxford in 1738, 1741, 1750, and 1753 respectively, and 'Three Charges' as archbishop of Canterbury in 1758, 1762, and 1766. All these give a valuable insight into the state of the church in the middle of the eighteenth century. His 'Instructions given to Candidates for Orders after their subscribing the Articles' (1786; 15th edit. 1824) deal with the questions in the ordination service. They are short, but sensible and earnest. His 'Oratio quam coram Synodo Provinciæ Cantuariensis anno 1761 convocatâ habendam scripserat, sed morbo præpeditus non habuit Archiepiscopus,' is remarkable for its excellent latinity. His thirty-nine 'Lectures on the Church Catechism' (1769, 2 vols.), written for the use of his parishioners at St. James's, were published in two volumes after his death. He also wrote, in reply to a colonial criticism of the scheme of appointing bishops in America, 'An Answer to Dr. Mayhew's Observations on the Charter and Conduct of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts' (1764). The subject of bishops for America also drew from him a 'Letter to the Right Hon. Horatio Walpole, Esq.,' dated 9 Jan. 1750–1, but not published until 1769, after his death, in accordance with his instructions. Secker argues in favour of the modest proposal that 'two or three persons should be ordained bishops and sent to our American colonies.' All these works were collected in 1792 in four octavo volumes.

A portrait by T. Willes was mezzotinted by J. McArdell in 1747. A later portrait by Reynolds, now at Lambeth, was engraved by Charles Townley (1797) and by Henry Meyer (1825). A copy of this portrait, probably by Gilbert Stuart, is in the National Portrait Gallery, London.

[A Review of the Life and Character of Dr. Thomas Secker, archbishop of Canterbury, by Bishop Beilby Porteus [1770]; Secker's Works in four vols.; Abbey's English Church and its Bishops, 1700–1800; Abbey and Overton's English Church in the Eighteenth Century; Hunt's Religious Thought in England; Brown's Worthies of Nottinghamshire, p. 247; Monthly Repository, 1810 p. 401, 1820 p. 65, 1821 pp. 193–4.] J. H. O.

SECKER, WILLIAM (*d.* 1681?), divine, preached at Tewkesbury and afterwards at All-Hallows, London Wall. He may have been the William Secker who was appointed rector of Leigh, Essex, on 30 Aug. 1667, and died there before November 1681 (Newcourt, *Repert. Eccles.* ii. 384).

Secker's sermon on 'A Wedding Ring fit for the Finger, or the Salve of Divinity on the Sore of Humanity, laid open at a Wedding in St. Edmunds' (? Edmonton), London, 1658, 12mo, was very popular, and was often reprinted (cf. edits. at Glasgow, 1850, 12mo; New York, 1854, 16mo). It was translated into Welsh, 'Y Fodrwy Briodas,' Brecon, 1775 (two editions), and as 'Y Cristion rhagorol,' Bala, 1880, 8vo. Secker also dedicated to Sir Edward and Lady Frances Barkham of Tottenham, who had befriended him, a volume of sermons entitled 'The Nonsuch Professor' (London, 1660, 8vo). This was republished (Leeds, 1803, 12mo; London, 1891), and was edited, with 'The Wedding Ring,' by Matthew Wilks, London, 1867, 12mo; it was several times reprinted in America.

[Kennet's Register, p. 594; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Darling's Cyclop. Bibl.; works above mentioned; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Notes and Queries, 3rd ser. iv. 49.] C. F. S.

SECKFORD or SACKFORD, THOMAS (1515?–1588), lawyer, second son of Thomas Seckford, esq., of Seckford Hall, Suffolk, sometime M.P. for Oxford, by Margaret, daughter of Sir John Wingfield, knt., of Letheringham, was born about 1515, and educated, it is believed, at Cambridge (Cooper, *Athenæ Cantabr.* ii. 18). He was admitted a student of Gray's Inn, London, in 1540, and was called to the bar, being Lent reader of that house in 1555 (Foster, *Gray's Inn Admission Register*, p. 14). He was sworn one of the masters of request in ordinary on 9 Dec. 1558, and he also held the offices of surveyor of the court of wards and liveries and steward of the court of Marshalsea. His name appears in a commission for the establishment of orders and regulations for the prison of the Fleet (1561); in a special commission of oyer and terminer for the county of Surrey (15 Feb. 1565–6), under which Arthur Pole [q. v.], Edmund Pole, and others were tried and convicted of high treason; and in another commission (12 June 1566) for the trial of offences committed within the verge of the queen's house. He was appointed one of the commissioners for causes ecclesiastical in 1570. On 1 Aug. in that year he was included in the special commission of oyer and terminer for the

city of London, under which John Felton was convicted of high treason. He was returned for Ipswich, and probably also for Bridgnorth, to the parliament which met on 8 May 1572; but it is difficult to determine whether it was he or his father who sat in four parliaments for Ipswich and the county of Suffolk. On 14 April 1573 he was, with others, empowered to deliver the gaol of the Marshalsea. His father died in 1575, and he, being the eldest surviving son, succeeded to the paternal estate. He built 'a very faire house in Ipswich within the newe barre gates.' His name figures in a special commissioner of oyer and terminer for the county of Middlesex (20 Feb. 1585–6), under which Dr. William Parry (*d.* 1585) [q. v.] was tried and convicted for conspiring the death of the queen. He was buried at Woodbridge, Suffolk, on 15 Jan. 1587–8.

He was a munificent benefactor to the town of Woodbridge, where he founded and endowed almshouses, in which twenty-four poor men and women still find an asylum in old age. Seckford assisted William Harrison (1534–1593) [q. v.] in describing 'the rivers and streams of Britain,' and Harrison dedicated to him his 'Description of Scotland' in Holinshed's 'Chronicles' (bk. iii.)

[Addit. MSS. 19086 ff. 22, 37, 19097 ff. 349 *b*, 378–85; Baga de Secretis; Record of the House of Gournay, pp. 808, 809; Parliamentary Hist. of England, 1762–3, iv. 207; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1547–80 p. 248, 1581–90 p. 281, Addenda, 1566–79 p. 649, 1580–1625 p. 788; Strype's Works (Index); Topographer and Genealogist, i. 551; Wright's Elizabeth, ii. 62, 184, 228, 246.] T. C.

SECURIS, JOHN (*fl.* 1566), medical writer, was born in England. His name was a latinised version of the English surname Hatchett. He studied at the university of Paris for two years about 1550, being then very young. He attended and admired the lectures of Jacobus Sylvius, and studied pharmacy in the shops of several apothecaries. He afterwards studied at Oxford, and in 1554 published 'A Gret Galley lately com into England out of Terra noua laden with phisitions, poticaries, and surgions.' It is a dialogue on the tokens and qualities of foolish and misguided physicians. He went to live in Salisbury, and seems to have been licensed to practise physic by the bishop. He presented a memorial to the bishop on the granting of episcopal medical diplomas. It contained seven proposals that every one who wished to practise physic in the diocese, and was not a graduate of a university, should only do so on receipt of a diploma from the bishop or his chancellor; that surgeons should be required to show that they could read and write; that apothecaries should not prescribe physic; that no unlicensed person should practise; that no one should assume a university degree which he did not lawfully possess; that midwives should be sworn before the bishop; and that apothecaries' shops should be inspected from time to time by physicians. He mentions the College of Physicians of London in this memorial with great respect. In 1561, and perhaps earlier, he began to publish 'A Prognostication' for the year, a small black-letter book, combining with information as to law terms advice as to when it was wise to let blood or take lenitive medicine. Then after a short preface, in which he says that he likes to practise physic better than to prophesy, there follows a prognostic of the weather for each month. He seems to have continued these till 1580 (Wood). The edition of 1562 is in the British Museum. In 1566 he published 'A Detection and Querimonie of the daily enormities and abuses committed in physick.' It is a small black-letter book, written in racy idiomatic English, with a Latin dedication to the universities of Oxford and Cambridge, printed in italics. It discusses physicians, surgeons, and apothecaries, and lays down rules for the education and conduct of each. He expresses his belief in the power of the royal touch of the kings of England and of France. There is a preface of six eight-line stanzas of English verse, and at the end a peroration 'to bothe the universities' in four stanzas of the same kind. This book was reprinted in 1662 with Record's 'Judiciall of Urines.' The date of his death is unknown. Wood (*Athenæ Oxon.* i. 458) states that John Securis (or Hatchett) was at New College, Oxford; but the original register shows that Thomas Securis (or Hatchett), and no other of the name, was admitted a scholar 19 June 1552, and that his place was filled 5 Nov. 1553. He was a native of Salisbury, and was admitted on the foundation at Winchester in 1546 (information kindly sent by Dr. J. E. Sewell, warden of New College, Oxford).

A contemporary Michael Securis or Hatchett (*fl.* 1545), a doctor who lived in the 'new borough of Sarum,' was author of 'Libri Septem de Antiquitate ac illustri Medicinæ Origine,' extant in Digby MS. 202 in the Bodleian Library, which also contains some other medical opuscula by the same author (see Macray, *Cat. Cod. MSS. Bodl.* ix. 282–283).

[Works; Tanner's Bibl. p. 659; Aikin's Biogr. Memoirs of Medicine, 1780.] N. M.

SEDDING, EDMUND (1836–1868), architect and musician, son of Richard and Peninnah Sedding of Summerstown, near Okehampton, Devonshire, was born on 20 June 1836. John Dando Sedding [q. v.] was his younger brother. He early displayed antiquarian tastes, which led to his visiting cathedrals, abbeys, and churches in England and France. In 1853 he entered the office of George Edmund Street [q. v.], where he devoted himself to the study of Gothic architecture. For some time he resided as an architect in Bristol, and, after again spending a period in London, removed about 1862 to Penzance, where he obtained a large practice. In Cornwall he built or restored the churches of Gwithian, Wendron, Altarnun, North-hill, Ruan, St. Peter's, Newlyn, and St. Stephen's, Launceston, while he had in progress at the time of his death a new church at Stockport, a rectory, and two churches in Wales, the restoration of Bigbury church, and a mansion at Hayle for Mr. W. J. Rawlings.

Sedding was a performer on the harmonium and organ, and an admirer of ancient church music. He was for a time precentor of the church of St. Raphael the Archangel, Bristol, and organist of St. Mary the Virgin, Soho. He greatly exerted himself in the revival of carol singing, and his books of Christmas carols were very popular. In 1865 his health failed, and he died at Penzance on 11 June 1868, being buried at Madron on 16 June. He married, on 18 Aug. 1862, Jessie, daughter of John Proctor, chemist, Penzance, by whom he left four children.

His chief musical compositions were: 1. 'A Collection of Nine Antient Christmas Carols for four voices,' 1860; 6th edit. 1864. 2. 'Jerusalem the Golden: a hymn,' 1861. 3. 'Seven Ancient Carols for four voices,' 1863; 2nd edit. 1864. 4. 'Five Hymns of ye Holy Eastern Church,' 1864. 5. 'Sun of my Soul: a hymn set to music in four parts,' 1864. 6. 'Litany of the Passion,' 1865. 7. 'The Harvest is the end of the World,' 1865. 8. 'Be we merry in this Feast: a carol,' 1866. To F. G. Lee's 'Directorium Anglicanum,' 2nd edit. 1865, he supplied fifteen quarto pages of illustrations.

[Julian's Hymnology, 1892, pp. 211, 212; Western Morning News, 17 June 1868, p. 2; Church Times, 1868, vi. 230, 241; Boase and Courtney's Bibl. Cornub. 1878–82, pp. 641, 1334; Street's Memoir of G. E. Street, p. 20.]

G. C. B.

SEDDING, JOHN DANDO (1838–1891), architect, second son of Richard and Peninnah Sedding, and younger brother of Edmund Sedding [q. v.], was born at Eton on 13 April 1838, and in 1858, like his brother, entered the office of George Edmund Street [q. v.] He made a close study of ecclesiastical architecture and decorative work connected with churches. After his architectural training was completed he mainly confined himself to designing embroidery, wall-papers, chalices, patens, and other goldsmith's work; but in 1872 he achieved a success in planning the church and vicarage of St. Clement's, Bournemouth. Thenceforward his architectural practice steadily grew. In 1876 he made the acquaintance of and submitted sketches to Mr. Ruskin, who told him that 'he must always have pencil or chisel in hand if he were to be more than an employer of men on commission.' Sedding took this adjuration to heart. He endeavoured to form a school of masons and of carvers and modellers from nature, and succeeded in exerting a remarkable influence over his workmen by his vigilant interest in the details of their craft. He himself was tireless in drawing and studying flowers and leaves, and from such studies he derived nearly all his ornamental designs. Elected F.R.I.B.A. in 1874, by 1880 he had an office in Oxford Street, London, and between that date and his death he built, among other works, the church of the Holy Redeemer at Clerkenwell; St. Augustine's, Highgate; St. Edward's, Netley; All Saints, Falmouth; St. Dyfrig's, Cardiff; Salcombe Church, Devonshire; the Children's Hospital, Finsbury; and Holy Trinity Church, Chelsea (unfinished). He became diocesan architect for Bath and Wells, designed the pastoral cross for the cathedral, and did much valuable work upon the churches of the diocese. He probably excelled in the additions and restorations which he executed in many of the small parish churches of the west of England, notably at Holbeton, Ermington, and Meavy in Devonshire; and in designing chancel screens, reredoses, altar crosses, and decorations he showed a happy originality. He moved his residence in June 1888 from Charlotte Street to West Wickham in Kent, and became an enthusiastic gardener, with a strong prepossession for cut-yew hedges and arcades, and other topiarian devices, writing in 1891 his very suggestive 'Garden Craft, Old and New.' Before it was published he died at Winsford Vicarage, Somerset (where he was engaged on some restoration) on 7 April 1891. A few days afterwards died his wife, Rose, daughter of Canon Tinling of Gloucester. Posthumously appeared his 'Art and Handicraft' (1893), embodying his views on the claims of architecture, some of which had already been expounded in an original paper

read before the Edinburgh art congress in 1889. Younger men in his profession derived much inspiration both from his work and from his utterances. Two black-and-white portraits are prefixed to 'A Memorial of John Sedding,' privately printed, 1892.

[Garden Craft, with memorial notice, by the Rev. E. F. Russell; Memorial of J. Sedding, 1892, with a short appreciation by H. Wilson; Builder, 11 April 1891; Boase and Courtney's Bibliotheca Cornubiensis; Times, 10 April 1891.] T. S.

SEDDON, FELIX JOHN VAUGHAN (1798–1865), orientalist, son of William Seddon, attorney, of Pendleton, near Manchester, was born in 1798, and educated at the Manchester grammar school. In 1815 he went to India, where he resided fifteen years, and during his stay acquired an intimate knowledge of several oriental languages. He was in 1820 appointed registrar of Rangpur, Bengal, and at the outbreak of the Burmese war, in 1824, accompanied the army as translator and accountant to the agent of the governor-general. He translated the articles of war and artillery exercise into Munipuri, for use of the native levy, and prepared a grammar and dictionary of the language of Assam. When his health failed in 1830, he was engaged on a comparative dictionary of the Munipuri, Siamese, and Burmese tongues. At a later date he assisted in translating the Bible into some Indian language. On 12 July 1833 he was elected professor of oriental languages at King's College, London, and published in 1835 'An Address introductory to a Course of Lectures on the Languages and Literature of the East,' 8vo. In 1837 he again went out to India, intending to open a college at Lucknow, a project in which William IV took much interest; but when he arrived there he found that the king of Oude was dead, and his successor was opposed to the plan. This and other difficulties obliged him to abandon the undertaking. He was afterwards appointed preceptor to the nawab Nizam, and for his services received a pension. The latter part of his life was spent at Murshidabad, Bengal, where he died, unmarried, on 25 Nov. 1865.

[Manchester School Register (Chetham Soc.), ii. 244.] C. W. S.

SEDDON, JOHN (1644–1700), calligrapher, born in 1644, became master of Sir John Johnson's free writing school in Priest's Court, Foster Lane, Cheapside. Massey describes him as a 'celebrated artist,' and says he exceeded 'all our English penmen in a fruitful fancy, and surprising invention, in the ornamental parts of his writing.' He died on 12 April 1700.

The following performances of his passed through the rolling press: 1. 'The Ingenious Youth's Companion. Furnished with variety of Copies of the Hand in Fashion. Adorned with curious Figures and Flourishes invented and perform'd à la Volée,' London [1690], oblong 8vo. It contains fifteen plates engraved by John Sturt. 2. 'The Pen-man's Paradise, both Pleasant and Profitable, or Examples of all y^e^ usuall Hands of this Kingdome. Adorn'd with variety of Figures and Flourishes done by command of Hand. Each Figure being one continued & entire Tract of the Pen' [London, 1695], oblong 4to. It was engraved by John Sturt, and contains thirty-four plates, besides the portrait of the author from a drawing by William Faithorne. 3. 'The Penman's Magazine: or, a new Copy Book of the English, French, and Italian Hands, after the best Made; Adorn'd with about an Hundred New and Open Figures and Fancies,' London, 1705, fol. The writing copies were 'performed' by George Shelley [q. v.] of the Hand and Pen in Warwick Lane, the figures and fancies being by Seddon. The whole work was supervised by Thomas Read, clerk of St. Giles's-in-the-Fields, formerly one of Seddon's scholars. Prefixed to it is a laudatory poem by Nahum Tate, poet laureate.

[Evans's Cat. of Engraved Portraits, *n.* 9373; Massey's Origin and Progress of Letters, ii. 128; Noble's Contin. of Granger, i. 311; Notes and Queries, 3rd ser. xi. 291; Watt's Bibl. Brit.] T. C.

SEDDON, JOHN (1719–1769), unitarian divine, son of Peter Seddon (1689–1731), dissenting minister at Penrith, Cumberland (1717–19), and Cockey Moor in the parish of Middleton, Lancashire (1719–31), was born in 1719 at Lomax Fold, Little Lever, in the parish of Bolton, Lancashire. On his father's death, Seddon's education was undertaken by the congregation of Cross Street, Manchester; he was at Stand grammar school under William Walker; at the Kendal Academy (entered 1733) under Caleb Rotheram, D.D. [q. v.]; and at Glasgow University, where he matriculated in 1739, and is said to have graduated M.A., but of this there is no record. On leaving Glasgow he became assistant at Cross Street to Joseph Mottershead [q. v.], and was ordained on 22 Oct. 1742. He was a preacher of facility and power, and pursued a line of singular independence in theology. Priestley, when at Warrington (1761–8), speaks of Seddon as 'the only Socinian in the neighbourhood,' adding, 'we all won-

dered at him.' He embodied his views in a series of six sermons, of which the first was preached on 27 May 1761. A contemporary account describes the excitement produced by his utterances; his outspokenness won for him increased respect, though he made few converts. The sermons were not published till 1793, when they were out of date, but they are noteworthy for their time as anticipating the historical argument of Priestley. Seddon lived on good terms with neighbouring clergy, especially with John Clayton (1709–1773) [q. v.], the Jacobite fellow of Manchester collegiate church. He was beloved for the amiability of his temper and his charity to the poor. After a long illness he died on 22 Nov. 1769, and was buried in Cross Street Chapel. He married, in 1743, Mottershead's eldest daughter, Elizabeth (*d.* 1765), and left a son, Mottershead Seddon. His library was sold on 26 Feb. 1770. He edited, with preface, 'The Sovereignty of the Divine Administration,' &c., 1766, 8vo, by Thomas Dixon (1721–1754) [see under Dixon, Thomas, M.D.] His 'Discourses on the Person of Christ,' Warrington, 1793, 8vo, were edited with 'An Account of the Author,' by Ralph Harrison [q. v.], at the suggestion of Joshua Toulmin, D.D. [q. v.]

[Harrison's 'Account,' 1793; Toulmin's Memoirs of Samuel Bourn, 1808, p. 253; Monthly Repository, 1810 p. 322, 1818 p. 430; Rutt's Memoirs of Priestley, 1832, i. 59; Baker's Memorials of a Dissenting Chapel, 1884, pp. 30 sq. 143; Nightingale's Lancashire Nonconformity (1893), v. 98 sq.; Cross Street Chapel Bicentenary, 1894, p. 49; extract from manuscript minutes of the Lancashire and Cheshire Widows' Fund (for date of birth), per the Rev. P. M. Higginson; extract from Glasgow matriculation register, per W. Innes Addison, Esq.]

A. G.

SEDDON, JOHN (1725–1770), rector of Warrington Academy, son of Peter Seddon, dissenting minister successively at Ormskirk and Hereford, was born at Hereford on 8 Dec. 1725. He appears to have been a second cousin of John Seddon (1719–1769) [q. v.], with whom he has often been confused. He was entered at Kendal Academy in 1742, under Caleb Rotheram, D.D. [q. v.], and went thence to Glasgow University, where he matriculated in 1744, and was a favourite pupil of Francis Hutcheson (1694–1746) [q. v.] and William Leechman [q. v.] On completing his studies he succeeded Charles Owen, D.D. [q. v.], as minister of Cairo Street Chapel, Warrington, Lancashire, where he was ordained on 8 Dec. 1747. Soon after his settlement the Percival family left the established church and attached themselves to Seddon, 'a liberal divine of Arian persuasion.' Seddon gave private tuition to Thomas Percival (1740–1804) [q. v.], who described him as scholar, preacher, and companion 'almost without an equal.'

Owing to the closing of the academies at Kendal (1753) and Findern, Derbyshire (1754), which had been due to private enterprise, a project was launched in July 1754 for establishing in the north of England a dissenting academy by subscription. Seddon was one of the most active promoters of the scheme; it was due to him that the final choice fell upon Warrington rather than upon Ormskirk. On 30 June 1757 he was elected secretary, and when the academy opened at Warrington on 20 Oct. he was appointed librarian. As secretary he did not get on well with John Taylor (1694–1761) [q. v.], who had been appointed to the divinity chair; the trustees, however, sided with Seddon against Taylor. Discipline was always a difficulty at Warrington; with a view to better control, in 1767 the office of 'rector academiæ' was created, and bestowed upon Seddon. At the same time he succeeded Priestley in the chair of belles lettres; his manuscript lectures on the philosophy of language and on oratory, in four quarto volumes, are in the library of Manchester College, Oxford.

Taylor's difference with Seddon originated in a controversy respecting forms of prayer. On 3 July 1750 a meeting of dissenting ministers took place at Warrington to consider the introduction of 'public forms' into dissenting worship. A subsequent meeting at Preston on 10 Sept. 1751 declared in favour of 'a proper variety of public devotional offices.' Next year the 'provincial assembly' appointed a committee on the subject; a long controversy followed. On 16 Oct. 1760 a number of persons in Liverpool, headed by Thomas Bentley (1731–1780) [q. v.], agreed to build a chapel for nonconformist liturgical worship, and invited several dissenting ministers to prepare a prayer-book. Taylor declined, and wrote strongly against the scheme. Seddon warmly took it up. On 6 Jan. 1762 he submitted 'the new liturgy' to a company of 'dissenters and seceders from the church' at the Merchants' coffee-house, Liverpool. This compilation, published 1763, 8vo, as 'A Form of Prayer and a New Collection of Psalms, for the use of a congregation of Protestant Dissenters in Liverpool,' is often described as Seddon's work; he edited it, but had two coadjutors; of its three services,

the third was by Philip Holland [q. v.]; the remaining contributor was Richard Godwin (1722–1787), minister at Gateacre, near Liverpool. The book was used in the Octagon Chapel, Liverpool, from its opening on 5 June 1763 till 25 Feb. 1776, after which the building was sold, and converted into St. Catherine's Church [see CLAYTON, NICHOLAS, D.D.] Seddon declined to become the minister of the Octagon Chapel, and in his own ministry practised extemporary prayer.

Seddon was a main founder (1758) of the Warrington public library, and its first president. He was the first secretary (1764) of the Lancashire and Cheshire Widows' Fund. He died suddenly at Warrington on 23 Jan. 1770, and was buried in Cairo Street Chapel. He married, in 1757, a daughter of one Hoskins, equerry to Frederick, prince of Wales, but had no issue. His wife's fortune was invested in calico-printing works at Stockport, and lost. She survived him. A valuable selection from his letters and papers was edited by Robert Brook Aspland [q. v.], in the 'Christian Reformer' (1854 pp. 224 sq., 358 sq., 613 sq., 1855 pp. 365 sq.) A silhouette likeness of Seddon is in Kendrick's 'Profiles of Warrington Worthies,' 1854.

[Funeral Sermon, by Philip Holland, in Holland's Sermons, 1792, vol. ii.; Brief Memoir, by Aspland, in Christian Reformer, 1854, pp. 224 sq.; Seddon Papers, in Christian Reformer, ut supra; Monthly Repository, 1810, p. 428; Turner's Historical Account of Warrington Academy, in Monthly Repository, 1813; Taylor's Account of the Lancashire Controversy on Prayer, in Monthly Repository, 1822, pp. 20 sq.; Bright's Historical Sketch of Warrington Academy, in Transactions of Historic Society of Lancashire and Cheshire, vol. xi. (11 Nov. 1858), also separately printed, 1859, and abridged in Christian Reformer, 1861, pp. 682 sq.; Nightingale's Lancashire Nonconformity (1892), iv. 217 sq. (1893), vi. 128 sq.; manuscript volume of letters relating to Octagon Chapel, in library of Renshaw Street Chapel, Liverpool; extract from Glasgow matriculation register, per W. Innes Addison, Esq.] A. G.

SEDDON, THOMAS (1753–1796), author, son of John Seddon, farmer, of Pendleton, near Manchester, was born in 1753, and received part of his education at the Manchester grammar school. He was intended by his father for the medical profession, but himself chose the church, though he was ill-suited for it. He matriculated from Magdalen Hall, Oxford, on 2 March 1776, but wasted his time, ran into debt, and took no degree, although he afterwards styled himself M.A. In January 1777 he was curate of the chapelry of Stretford, near Manchester, which he held until his death. For a time he was also curate at St. George's, Wigan, and from 1789 incumbent of Lydgate, Saddleworth, in the parish of Rochdale. His living at Stretford was sequestered for debt after he had been there two or three years. At Wigan he was unpopular, and generally he appears to have been negligent of his duties, and 'a clever but erratic parson of the Doctor Dodd species,' as James Crossley styled him (*Manchester School Reg.* i. 116). He married for means a young lady of good family near Manchester, and died in 1796, on his passage to the West Indies, as chaplain of the 104th or royal regiment of Manchester volunteers.

He was author of, apart from sermons: 1. 'Characteristic Strictures, or Remarks on upwards of One Hundred Portraits of the most Eminent Persons in the Counties of Lancaster and Chester,' London, 1779, 4to [anon.]; a series of libellous and satiric sketches which gave great offence. 2. 'Letters written to an Officer in the Army on various subjects, Religious, Moral, and Political, with a view to the Manners, Accomplishments, and proper Conduct of Young Gentlemen,' Warrington, 1786, 2 vols. 8vo. 3. 'Impartial and Free Thoughts on a Free Trade to the Kingdom of Ireland' [1780], 8vo.

[Manchester School Register, i. 115 (Chetham Soc.); Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1714–1886; Bailey's Old Stretford, 1878, p. 45; Clarke's School Candidates, ed. J. E. Bailey, 1877, p. 17.] C. W. S.

SEDDON, THOMAS (1821–1856), landscape-painter, son of Thomas Seddon, a well-known cabinet-maker, was born in Aldersgate Street, London, on 28 Aug. 1821. He was educated at a school conducted on the Pestalozzian system by the Rev. Joseph Barron at Stanmore, and afterwards entered his father's business, but he found its duties so irksome that in 1841 he was sent to Paris to study ornamental art. He attained great efficiency as a draughtsman, and on his return he made designs for furniture and superintended their execution. In 1848 he gained the prize of a silver medal and twenty pounds offered by the Society of Arts for a design for an ornamental sideboard. He also practised drawing from the life, and in 1849 visited North Wales and stayed some weeks at Bettws-y-Coed; there he began his first real studies of landscape, which he continued in the following year at Barbizon in the forest of Fontainebleau. In 1850 he took an active part in establishing the North London school of drawing and modelling in Camden

Town for the instruction of workmen. His first exhibited work, 'Penelope,' appeared at the Royal Academy in 1852, but next year he went to Dinan, and, turning his attention to landscape-painting, sent to the Royal Academy a picture of 'A Valley in Brittany,' which was followed in 1854 by a large picture of the ruined monastery of 'Léhon, from Mont Parnasse, Brittany.' He then, without returning to England, set out to join Mr. William Holman Hunt in Egypt, and reached Alexandria on 6 Dec. 1853. He spent some months in Egypt and in the Holy Land. During his stay at Cairo he painted a portrait of Sir Richard Burton in Arab costume, and made some careful and highly finished studies and sketches of eastern life. His 'Sunset behind the Pyramids' was rejected at the Royal Academy in 1855, but three of his oriental pictures, 'An Arab Sheikh and Tents in the Egyptian Desert,' 'Dromedary and Arabs at the City of the Dead, Cairo,' and an 'Interior of a Deewan, formerly belonging to the Copt Patriarch, near the Esbekeeyah, Cairo,' were in the exhibition of 1856. Many commissions followed, and Seddon, after returning to England in 1855, revisited Egypt in quest of fresh materials for his pictures; but within a month of his arrival at Cairo he died of dysentery in the church mission-house there on 23 Nov. 1856. He was buried in the protestant cemetery at Cairo.

Seddon left unfinished a large picture of 'Arabs at Prayer.' An exhibition of his works was held at the Society of Arts in 1857, when an appreciative address was delivered by Mr. John Ruskin. His picture of 'Jerusalem and the Valley of Jehoshaphat from the Hill of Evil Counsel,' painted on the spot in 1854, was purchased by subscription and presented to the National Gallery. His brother, John Pollard Seddon, the architect, published his 'Memoir and Letters' in 1858.

[Memoir and Letters of Thomas Seddon, by his brother, 1858; Athenæum, 1857, i. 19; Redgrave's Dictionary of Artists of the English School, 1878; Journal of the Society of Arts, 1857, pp. 360–2, 419; Royal Academy Exhibition Catalogues, 1852–1856.] R. E. G.

SEDGWICK, ADAM (1785–1873), geologist, was born on 22 March 1785 at Dent in the dales of western Yorkshire. He was the third child of Richard Sedgwick, perpetual curate of Dent, by his second wife, Margaret Sturgis. Till his sixteenth year he attended the grammar school at Dent, of which, during this time, his father became headmaster. Adam was next sent to the well-known school at Sedbergh. There he remained till 1804, when he went up to Trinity College, Cambridge, as a sizar. For a few months before he read with John Dawson [q.v.], the surgeon and mathematician, who had helped to bring him into the world. An attack of typhoid fever in the autumn of 1805 nearly proved fatal. He was elected scholar in 1807, and graduated B.A. in 1808, with the place of fifth wrangler. The examiner, who settled the final order of the candidates, is said to have considered Sedgwick the one who showed most signs of inherent power.

Sedgwick continued at Cambridge, taking private pupils and reading for a fellowship. The latter he obtained in 1810, but at the cost of serious and possibly permanent injury to his health. In May 1813 he broke a blood-vessel, and for months remained in a very weak state. In 1815, however, he was able to undertake the duties of assistant tutor, and he was ordained in 1816.

The great opportunity of his life came in the early summer of 1818, when the Woodwardian professorship of geology became vacant [see HAILSTONE, JOHN]. Though Sedgwick was practically ignorant of the subject, and his opponent, the Rev. George Cornelius Gorham [q.v.], was known to have studied it, he seems to have so favourably impressed the members of the university that he was elected by 186 votes to 59. Hitherto the office had been almost a sinecure; Sedgwick, although the income was then only 100*l.* a year, determined to make it a reality. He at once began earnest study of the subject, spending part of the summer at work in Derbyshire, and gave his first course of lectures in the Easter term of 1819. It was soon evident that a wise choice had been made. Sedgwick's lectures became each year more attractive. His repute as a geologist rapidly increased, and he took a leading part in promoting the study of natural science in the university. One instrument for this purpose was the Cambridge Philosophical Society, in the foundation of which he was one of the most active. He interested himself in the geological collection of the university, which he augmented often at his private expense, and saw transferred to a more commodious building in 1841.

In 1818 Sedgwick was elected fellow of the Geological Society; he was president in 1831, and received its Wollaston medal in 1851. He was made fellow of the Royal Society in 1830, and gained the Copley medal in 1863. In 1833 he was president of the British Association, and served as president of the geological section in 1837, 1845, 1853, and 1860. He was made hono-

rary D.C.L. of Oxford in 1860 and honorary LL.D. of Cambridge in 1866.

Though Sedgwick spent much time in the field during the vacations, he seldom left the British Isles, and to Ireland he went but twice. He visited the continent only four times, going as far as Chamonix in 1816, to Paris in 1827, to the Eastern Alps with Murchison in 1829, and he made, with the same companion, another long geological tour in Germany and Belgium in 1839.

Meanwhile Sedgwick engaged in much university business. He was senior proctor in 1827, and in 1847 he was made Cambridge secretary to Prince Albert when the latter was elected chancellor of the university, and from 1850 to 1852 served as a member of a royal commission of inquiry into the condition of that university. He was appointed by his college to the vicarage of Shudy-Camps (tenable with his fellowship), declined the valuable living of East Farleigh offered him in 1831 by Lord-chancellor Brougham, accepted a prebendal stall at Norwich in 1834, and declined the deanery of Peterborough in 1853. At Norwich, as in Cambridge, he stimulated an interest in science, and was hardly less popular as a preacher than as a host. But this removed him from Cambridge only for two months in the year. He delivered his usual courses of lectures till the end of 1870, though in later years he not seldom had to avail himself of the services of a deputy.

He died after a few days' illness very early in the morning of 27 Jan. 1873, and was buried in the chapel of Trinity College. It was determined to build a new geological museum as a memorial, and a large sum was collected for the purpose, but this scheme has not yet been carried out (1897). His name is commemorated by the 'Sedgwick Prize' (for an essay on a geological subject), founded by Mr. A. A. Vansittart in 1865.

Sedgwick was quick in temper, but sympathetic, generous, and openhanded; a lover of children, though he never married. As a speaker and lecturer he was often discursive, sometimes colloquial, but on occasion most eloquent. He possessed a marvellous memory, and was an admirable raconteur. Thus his humour, his simplicity of manner, and his wide sympathies made him welcome among 'all sorts and conditions of men,' from the roadside tavern to the royal palace. A reformer in politics, he was not without prejudices against some changes. The same was also true in science. Though so eminently a pioneer, new ideas met sometimes with a hesitating reception. He was rather slowly convinced of the former great extension of glaciers advocated in this country by Louis Agassiz and William Buckland [q. v.], never quite accepted Lyell's uniformitarian teaching, and was always strongly opposed to Darwin's hypothesis as to the origin of species. But he had a marvellous power of unravelling the stratigraphy of a complicated district, of co-ordinating facts, and of grasping those which were of primary importance as the basis of induction. A certain want of concentration diminished the quantity and sometimes affected the quality of his work, but any one whose good nature is great and interests are wide, who is at once a professor in a university and a canon of a cathedral—and active in both—must be liable to many serious interruptions. Moreover, Sedgwick's health, after his election to a fellowship, was never really good. His eyes, especially in later life, gave him much trouble; one indeed had been permanently injured in 1821 by a splinter from a rock. He seems to have met with more than his share of accidents—falls, a dislocated wrist, and a broken arm.

It is evident that he disliked literary composition and was somewhat given to procrastinate. But, notwithstanding these drawbacks, he left an indelible mark on his own university, and will be ever honoured as one of the great leaders in the heroic age of geology. At the outset of his career, as he stated in his last published words, 'three prominent hopes' possessed his heart—to form a collection worthy of the university, to secure the building of a suitable museum, and to 'bring together a class of students who would listen to my teaching, support me by their sympathy, and help me by the labour of their hands.' These hopes, as he says, were fully realised (*Catalogue of the Cambrian and Silurian Fossils*, &c., Pref. p. xxxi).

Sedgwick in his prime was a striking figure: almost six feet high, spare but strongly built, never bald, close-shaven, with dark eyes and complexion, strongly marked features, overhanging forehead, and bushy eyebrows. A portrait in oils by Thomas Phillips, R.A., dated 1832, and owned by Mr. John H. Gurney of Norwich, was reproduced for the 'Life and Letters' (1890), as was also a fine crayon portrait by Lowes Dickinson, dated 1867, now in the Woodwardian Museum at Cambridge. Busts of Sedgwick by H. Weekes and Thomas Woolner are in possession of the Geological Society, London, and Trinity College, Cambridge.

Sedgwick never published a complete book on any geological subject, though he wrote a lengthy introduction to the description of

'British Palæozoic Fossils in the Geological Museum of the University of Cambridge' by Professor McCoy (1854), and a preface to 'A Catalogue of the Cambrian and Silurian Fossils,' in the same collection, by John William Salter [q.v.] and Professor John Morris [q.v.] (1873). He appears in the 'Royal Society's Catalogue of Scientific Papers' as the sole author of forty papers and joint-author of sixteen, published for the most part in the 'Transactions' or the 'Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society,' the 'Transactions of the Cambridge Philosophical Society,' or the 'Philosophical Magazine.' Of these the more important can be grouped in five divisions: 1. 'On the Geology of Cornwall and Devon,' a subject which was dealt with in the first of his more important communications, read before the Cambridge Philosophical Society in 1820 (*Trans. C. P. S.* i. 39). Other papers follow, some of them written in conjunction with Murchison. In these the order of the rocks beneath the new red sandstone of the south-west of England was worked out, the stratigraphy of the Carboniferous deposits and of the underlying Devonian system was gradually established, and some valuable contributions were made to the history of the various crystalline masses in Devon and Cornwall, including those in the Lizard peninsula.

2. The next group of papers, small in number, deals with the 'new red sandstone' in the northern half of England, giving the results of field work between 1821 and 1824. One of them describes the mineral character and succession of the magnesian and other limestones, the marls, and the sandstones, which extend along the eastern flank of the Pennine range from the south of Northumberland to the north of Derbyshire, dwelling more particularly on the lower part; another deals with the corresponding rocks, breccias and conglomerates, with sandstones, marls and thin calcareous bands, on the western side of the same range, more especially in the valley of the Eden. The part of the new red sandstone more particularly worked out by Sedgwick has since been termed Permian, but his diagnosis of the relations of the strata, their marked discordancy from the underlying carboniferous and their closer affinity with the overlying red rocks, since called Trias, has proved to be correct.

3. A third group deals with a yet more difficult question—the geology of the lake district and its environs. The researches just named were carried downwards through the underlying carboniferous rocks, and then the intricacies of the great central massif were attacked. This task more especially occupied the summers from 1822 to 1824, and its results were published in papers, dating from 1831 to 1857. A more popular account was also given in five letters addressed to Wordsworth, published afterwards in Hudson's 'Complete Guide to the Lakes' (1853).

4. A fourth group includes a large number of miscellaneous papers, published at various dates and on different geological topics. Among the more important of these may be noted 'On Trap Dykes in Yorkshire and Durham' (1822); 'On the Association of Trap Rocks with the Mountain Limestone Formation in High Teesdale' (1823–4); two in 1828, written in conjunction with Murchison—one on the Isle of Arran, another on the secondary rocks in the north of Scotland; one (with the same coadjutor) on the Eastern Alps (1829–30); and last, but not least, the classic paper 'On the Structure of Large Mineral Masses, &c.,' read before the Geological Society of London, and published in their 'Transactions' (iii. 461).

5. The fifth and largest group deals with the geology of Wales. Sedgwick first took this in hand in the summer of 1831, when he was working for part of his time with Charles Robert Darwin [q.v.] Commencing with the rocks of Anglesey for a base, he worked over Carnarvonshire, and in 1832 carried on his researches into Merionethshire and Cardiganshire. In 1834 he accompanied Murchison over the district on the eastern border of the principality, on which the latter had been engaged. The results of these and of later visits, more especially in 1842 and 1843, were described from time to time in verbal communications to the Cambridge Philosophical Society and to the British Association, but the first systematic papers were read to the Geological Society in 1843 (*Proc. Geol. Soc.* vol. iv. pt. i. pp. 212; *Quart. Journal Geol. Soc.* i. 5). Others followed in 1844 and 1846. Soon after Murchison had published his 'Silurian System,' in 1839, it became evident that difficulties existed in correlating the work done by the two geologists in their several districts, and a controversy gradually arose concerning the limits of the Cambrian system as established by Sedgwick and of the Silurian system of Murchison (names which were first used about 1835). The general structure of north Wales had been determined by Sedgwick as early as 1832, and subsequent investigation in this region has confirmed the general accuracy of the order in which he placed the beds and of the main divisions which he established; while it has been proved that Murchison had confused together two distinct formations,

the Caradoc (Bala of Sedgwick) and that now called Upper Llandovery (the May Hill sandstone of Sedgwick), and had also fallen into serious error as to the stratigraphy of his own Llandeilo beds. The dispute reached an acute stage in 1852, when Sedgwick read two papers to the Geological Society of London. He considered that in regard to these, especially the former, the council of this society had dealt unfairly with him; and from 1854, after another dispute over a paper 'On the May Hill Sandstone,' &c., he ceased to be on terms of friendship with Murchison and was estranged from the society. By these papers, which embodied the results of investigations in 1852–3, the distinction of the true Caradoc and of the May Hill sandstone was established.

Sedgwick was also author of a 'Discourse on the Studies of the University of Cambridge.' This book originated in a sermon, preached in the chapel of Trinity College at the commemoration of benefactors on 17 Dec. 1832. Next year it was published, by request, after several months' delay. It ran through four editions in two years, and in 1850 was republished as a bulky volume, with a very long preface.

[There are frequent references to Sedgwick in the lives of Buckland, C. Darwin, Lyell, and Murchison, and obituary notices appeared during 1873 in the Proceedings of the Royal Society, the Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society, and other scientific periodicals; but these have been superseded by the above-named Life and Letters of the Reverend Adam Sedgwick, by J. W. Clark and T. McK. Hughes (2 vols. Cambridge, 1890).] T. G. B.

SEDGWICK, DANIEL (1814–1879), hymnologist, was born of poor parents in Leadenhall Street, London, on 26 Nov. 1814. After serving an apprenticeship, he became a shoemaker. In 1839 he married and joined the strict baptist congregation at Providence Chapel, Grosvenor Street, Commercial Road. Already in 1837 he had given up shoemaking to commence dealing in secondhand books. He gradually worked up a connection among collectors, mainly of theological literature. His customers included George Offor [q. v.], William Bonar, the collector of hymn-books, and Alexander Gardyne, whose collection of Scottish poetry is now in the Mitchell Library, Glasgow. His shop was at 81 (afterwards renumbered 93) Sun Street, Bishopsgate. In 1840 he taught himself writing, and acquired a neat and clear hand, but never gained any facility in literary composition. In 1859 he commenced publishing reprints of the rarer hymn-writers of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, under the general title of 'Library of Spiritual Song.' The first of the thirteen issues consisted of the hymns of William Williams (1717–1791) [q.v.] Pursuing his studies in hymnology, he produced in 1860 'A Comprehensive Index of many of the Original Authors and Translators of Psalms and Hymns,' with the dates of their various works, chiefly collected from the original publications (2nd edit. enlarged 1863). Thenceforth he was recognised as the foremost living hymnologist. He was consulted by men of all opinions—by Charles Haddon Spurgeon, when compiling 'Our own Hymn-book,' 1866, and Josiah Miller, when writing 'Singers and Songs of the Church.' 'Hymns Ancient and Modern' owed from its earliest days something to his assistance; and when Sir Roundell Palmer (Lord Selborne) was compiling his 'Book of Praise' in 1862 the sheets were submitted to Sedgwick's inspection, when he identified the majority of the compositions. In fact, hardly a hymn-book appeared in his later days in which his aid was not acknowledged. His manuscripts, which are now preserved in the Church House, Westminster, were used in Julian's 'Dictionary of Hymnology.' He died at 93 Sun Street on 10 March 1879, and was buried in Abney Park cemetery. His wife survived him; he had no issue.

Sedgwick prepared indexes of authors for the English editions (on the title-pages of which he figures as editor) of the American works: 'Pure Gold for the Sunday School,' 1877, and 'The Royal Diadem Songs for the Sunday School,' 1877, both by R. Lowry and W. H. Doane. His six catalogues of scarce religious poetry are of bibliographical value.

[Information kindly supplied by W. T. Brooke, esq.; Notes and Queries, 8th ser. 1892, ii. 409, 451; Julian's Dict. of Hymnology, 1892, pp. 1036–7; Bookseller, May 1879, p. 424; The Earthen Vessel, July 1879, p. 199; Roundell Palmer's Book of Praise, 1863, preface, p. v; C. H. Spurgeon's Our Own Hymn-book, 1866, preface, p. ix; Hymns Ancient and Modern, Biggs's edition, 1867, preface, p. x.] G. C. B.

SEDGWICK, JAMES (1775–1851), author, son of James Sedgwick of Westminster, was born in London in 1775. He matriculated from Pembroke College, Oxford, on 30 Oct. 1797, but did not graduate. He was called to the bar at the Middle Temple on 23 Jan. 1801. In 1809 he was appointed a commissioner of excise at Edinburgh, and in 1811 chairman of the excise board. In 1815 he was nominated by the treasury to a seat at the London excise board, but his patent was cancelled

in consequence of the prince regent having promised the Marchioness of Hertford that Colonel Sir Francis Hastings Doyle should have the first vacancy. By way of compensation Sedgwick was appointed examiner of the droits of admiralty accounts, with his previous salary of 1,500*l.* a year. He was promoted by patent, dated 25 Aug. 1817, to be chairman of the board of stamps. At the beginning of 1818 he conducted an inquiry into the conduct of the stamp revenue in Scotland, and discovered great abuses. His effort to secure the permanent dismissal of the officer to whom the disorder was attributable proved, to his irritation, unsuccessful. At the same time he gave offence to Lord Liverpool and the government by printing 'Observations' on the position of affairs and engaging in controversy in the 'Morning Chronicle' respecting the inquiry. His fourteen letters were reissued in the form of three pamphlets. When, in 1826, the board of stamps was dissolved, he alone of all the members was denied a pension. In 1828, however, he received a small retiring allowance of 400*l.* a year. Henceforth he had a grievance, and the greater part of his life was spent in memorialising successive administrations or petitioning parliament. In 1845 he published another series of 'Letters addressed to Lord Granville Somerset and others' on 'The Dissolution of the Board of Stamps, with Strictures on the Conduct of Sir John Easthope as proprietor of the 'Morning Chronicle."' The 'Morning, Chronicle' had ceased to print his complaints. He was a director of the County Fire Office. He died, from the effects of a fall, on 26 Jan. 1851 at his house, 3 Church Street, Kensington. He was married, and left one daughter.

Besides the works already mentioned, Sedgwick wrote: 1. 'An Abridgment of the Modern Determinations in the Courts of Law and Equity,' being a supplement to C. Viner's 'Abridgment,' 1799. 2. 'Remarks on the Commentaries of Sir W. Blackstone,' 1800; 2nd edit. 1804. Under the signature of 'A Barrister' he published: 3. 'Hints to the Public on the Nature of Evangelical Preaching,' 1808; 2nd edit. 1812: this work was replied to by W. B. Collyer, 1809. 4. 'A Letter to the Ratepayers of Great Britain on the Repeal of the Poor Laws,' to which is subjoined the outline of a plan for the abolition of the poor rates at the end of three years, 1833. Sedgwick edited the sixth edition of Sir G. Gilbert's 'Law of Evidence,' 1801. He is said to have conducted the 'Oxford Review' January 1807 to March 1808—fifteen monthly numbers.

[Gent. Mag. April, 1851, pp. 436–7; Times, 30 Jan. 1851, p. 4; Biogr. Dict. of Living Authors, 1816, p. 310.] G. C. B.

SEDGWICK, OBADIAH (1600?–1658), puritan divine, son of Joseph Sedgwick, vicar of St. Peter's, Marlborough, Wiltshire, afterwards of Ogbourne St. Andrew, Wiltshire, was born at Marlborough about 1600. He matriculated at Queen's College, Oxford, on 18 June 1619, aged 19, removed thence to Magdalen Hall, and graduated B.A. on 5 May 1620, M.A. 23 Jan. 1623. He was tutor (1626) to Sir Matthew Hale [q. v.] Having taken orders, he became chaplain to Horatio, baron Vere of Tilbury [q. v.], whom he accompanied to the Low Countries. Returning to Oxford, he commenced B.D. on 16 Jan. 1630. His first preferment (1630) in the church was as lecturer at St. Mildred's, Bread Street, London, where his puritanism got him into trouble. On 6 July 1639 he was presented by Robert Rich, second earl of Warwick [q. v.], to the vicarage of Coggeshall, Essex, in succession to John Dod. On the opening of the Long parliament he regained his lectureship at St. Mildred's, and became a preacher against episcopacy. Wood says that he used 'in hot weather to unbutton his doublet in the pulpit, that his breath might be the longer. In the autumn of 1642 he was chaplain to the regiment of foot raised by Denzil Holles [q. v.] He was a member of the Westminster Assembly (1643), and in the same year was appointed a licenser of the press. On 6 Oct. 1643 he spoke at the Guildhall in favour of the league with Scotland for the prosecution of the war, and his speech was published in 'Foure Speeches,' 1646, 4to. In a sermon of September 1644 he preached for 'cutting off delinquents.' He held for a short time the rectory of St. Andrew's, Holborn, on the sequestration (13 Dec. 1645) of John Hacket [q. v.]; but next year (before May 1646) he was appointed to the rectory of St. Paul's, Covent Garden, and resigned Coggeshall, where John Owen (1616–1683) [q. v.] succeeded him (18 Aug.) He was a member of the eleventh London classis in the parliamentary presbyterianism; but his ecclesiastical views were not rigid, for on 20 March 1654 he was appointed one of Cromwell's 'triers,' and in August of the same year was a clerical assistant to the 'expurgators.' His health failing, he resigned St. Paul's in 1656, and was succeeded by his son-in-law, Thomas Manton [q. v.] He was a man of property, being lord of the manor of Ashmansworth, Hampshire. Retiring to Marlborough, he died there at the beginning of January 1658, and was buried

near his father, in the chancel of Ogbourne St. Andrew. A portrait of Sedgwick, engraved by W. Richardson, is mentioned by Bromley. By his wife Priscilla he had a son Robert, baptised at Coggeshall on 19 Oct. 1641, who was a frequent preacher before parliament, and published many sermons between 1639 and 1657.

Besides these and a catechism, he published: 1. 'Christ's Counsell to . . . Sardis,' 1640, 8vo. 2. 'The Doubting Beleever,' 1641, 12mo; 1653, 12mo. 3. 'The Humbled Sinner,' 1656, 4to; 1660, 4to. 4. 'The Fountain Opened,' 1657, 4to. 5. 'The Riches of Grace,' 1657, 12mo; 1658, 12mo. Posthumous were: 6. 'The Shepherd of Israel,' 1658, 4to. 7. 'The Parable of the Prodigal,' 1660, 4to. 8. 'The Anatomy of Secret Sins,' 1660, 4to. 9. 'The Bowels of Tender Mercy,' 1661, fol.

JOHN SEDGWICK (1601?–1643), puritan divine, younger brother of the above, was born at Marlborough about 1601, entered at Queen's College, Oxford, in 1619, removed to Magdalen Hall, was ordained deacon at Christmas 1621, admitted B.A. 6 Dec. 1622 (after four refusals, as he had used the title of the degree before obtaining it), proceeded M.A. 7 July 1625, B.D. 9 Nov. 1633 (incorporated at Cambridge 1638). After holding curacies at St. Botolph's, Bishopsgate (London), Chiswick (Middlesex), and Coggeshall (under his brother), he obtained (1 April 1641) the rectory of St. Alphage, London Wall, on the sequestration of James Halsey, D.D. He was chaplain to the Earl of Stamford's regiment. He died in October 1643, and was buried at St. Alphage's on 15 Oct. His funeral sermon was preached by Thomas Case [q. v.] He was twice married; his second marriage (1632) was to Anne, daughter of Fulke Buttery of Ealing, Middlesex. Wood cites a posthumous notice of him in the 'Mercurius Aulicus,' which says he had but one thumb, had been reprieved from the pillory in 1633, and was of bad character. He published four single sermons (1625–41), and 'Antinomianisme Anatomized,' 1643, 4to.

A younger brother, Joseph (*fl.* 1653), was batler of Magdalen Hall on 7 Nov. 1634, aged 20, B.A. 2 March 1638, afterwards M.A. and fellow of Christ's College, Cambridge. He published: 1. 'An Essay to the Discovery of the Spirit of Enthusiasm,' 1653, 4to. 2. 'Learning's Necessity,' 1653, 4to. Another Joseph Sedgwick was prebendary of South Scarle in Lincoln Cathedral, and died on 22 Sept. 1702, aged 74 (LE NEVE, *Fasti*, ii. 207).

[Wood's Athenæ Oxon. (Bliss), iii. 65, 442, 1090, iv. 751; Wood's Fasti (Bliss), i. 392, &c.; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1892, iv. 1331; Baxter's Reliquiæ, 1696, i. 42; Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy, 1714, ii. 171; Brook's Lives of the Puritans, 1813, ii. 485 sq., iii. 295 sq.; Neal's Hist. of the Puritans (Toulmin), 1822, vol. iii.; Dale's Annals of Coggeshall, 1863, pp. 155 sq.; Mitchell and Struthers's Minutes of Westminster Assembly, 1874, p. 219 sq.; the baptismal register of St. Peter's, Marlborough, does not begin till 1611.] A. G.

SEDGWICK, THOMAS, D.D. (*fl.* 1550–1565), catholic divine, received his education in the university of Cambridge, where he became a fellow, first of Peterhouse, and afterwards of Trinity College. He studied theology and was created D.D. In June 1550 he held a disputation with Bucer at Cambridge on the subject of justification by faith (STRYPE, *Life of Cranmer*, pp. 203, 583, folio). He was instituted to the rectory of Erwarton, Suffolk, in 1552. In 1553–4 Bishop Gardiner recommended him to the president and fellows of Peterhouse for election to the mastership. Similar letters were addressed to them by the bishop on behalf of Andrew Perne [q. v.] The fellows nominated them both, and the bishop of Ely selected Perne. Sedgwick was elected Lady Margaret professor of divinity in 1554, and he was one of the learned Cambridge divines who were deputed by the university to dispute with Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer at Oxford, where he was incorporated D.D. on 14 April 1554 (*Oxford Univ. Register*, i. 224). On 12 March 1555–6 he was admitted to the vicarage of Enfield, Middlesex, on the presentation of Trinity College. He resigned this living as well as the Lady Margaret professorship in 1556, and on 30 May in that he was admitted to the rectory of Toft, Cambridgeshire. He was also one of the commissioners for religion and the examination of heretical books, and took an active part during the visitation of the university by Cardinal Pole's delegates in 1556 and 1557. In the latter year he was chosen regius professor of divinity. In 1558 he was presented to the vicarage of Gainsford and the rectory of Stanhope, both in the county of Durham (HUTCHINSON, *Durham*, iii. 267, 353). Sedgwick firmly adhered to the ancient faith, and in the list of popish recusants drawn up by the commissioners for ecclesiastical causes in 1561 he is described as 'learned, but not very wise,' and restrained to the town of Richmond or within ten miles compass about the same (STRYPE, *Annals*, vol. i. chap. xxiv.) He was living in 1567, when George Neville, master of the hospital at Well, bequeathed him 4*l.* (*Richmondshire Wills*, p. 206).

[Addit. MS. 5832 f. 152, 5843 ff. 76, 77; Cooper's Annals of Cambridge, ii. 85, 95, 103, 172; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. i. 213, 553; Foster's Alumni Oxon. early series, iv. 1331; Gorham's Reformation Gleanings, pp. 158, 164; Newcourt's Repertorium, i. 601; Wood's Fasti Oxon. ed. Bliss, i. 146.] T. C.

SEDGWICK, WILLIAM (1610?–1669?), puritan and mystic, son of William Sedgwick of London, was born in Bedfordshire about 1615. He matriculated at Pembroke College, Oxford, on 2 Dec. 1625, aged 15, and graduated B.A. 21 June 1628, M.A. 4 May 1631. His tutor was George Hughes [q. v.] On 5 Feb. 1634 he was instituted to the rectory of Farnham, Essex; next year he was incorporated M.A. at Cambridge. He held the living of Farnham till 1644, when he was succeeded by Giles Archer (instituted 27 April); but in 1642, leaving Farnham in charge of a curate, he removed to London. On 5 Oct. 1641 a petition was preferred against William Fuller (1580?–1659) [q. v.], dean of Ely and vicar of St. Giles-without-Cripplegate, by the parishioners of Cripplegate, complaining that he had hindered the appointment of Sedgwick as Thursday lecturer at St. Giles's. In 1642 Sedgwick became chaplain to the regiment of foot raised by Sir William Constable [q. v.] In 1644 he became the chief preacher in Ely, and by his evangelistic labours gained the title of 'apostle of the Isle of Ely.' His relations to ecclesiastical parties were not unlike those of William Dell [q. v.] and John Saltmarsh [q. v.] Wood says he was sometimes 'a presbyterian, sometimes an independent, and at other times an anabaptist.' It would be more correct to class him with the 'seekers.' Calamy says his 'heart was better than his head.' He was very ready to listen to any claims to prophetical power. A woman in the neighbourhood of Swaffham Prior, Cambridgeshire, proclaimed the near advent of the day of judgment. Sedgwick adopted her date, and announced it at the house of Sir Francis Russell of Chippenham, Cambridgeshire (father-in-law of Henry Cromwell). Nothing happened on the day fixed, but during the night following 'there arose on a sudden a terrible tempest of thunder and lightning.' From this abortive prophecy Sedgwick got the name of 'Doomsday Sedgwick.' At the end of 1647 he waited on Charles I at Carisbrooke Castle with his 'Leaves of the Tree of Life.' Charles read part of the book and gave it back, saying he thought 'the author stands in some need of sleep.' In 1652 he was attracted by John Reeve (1608–1658) [q. v.], the 'prophet' of the Muggletonians, and, without becoming a disciple, contributed to his 'quarterly necessity' till Reeve died. In June 1657 he explained his position in a correspondence with Reeve (*Sacred Remains*, 1706, pp. 1 sq.)

His preaching at Ely being terminated by the Restoration, he retired to Lewisham, Kent. In 1663, having conformed, he became rector of Mattishall Burgh, Norfolk, and he died in London about 1669 (Wood).

His writings, quiet in tone, are not wanting in spiritual feeling, nor devoid of pathos. Besides two sermons before parliament (1642 and 1643) he published: 1. 'The Leaves of the Tree of Life,' 1648, 4to. 2. 'Some Flashes of Lightenings of the Sonne of Man,' 1648, 4to; reprinted 1830, 12mo. 3. 'The Spirituall Madman . . . a Prophesie concerning the King, the Parliament,' 1648, 4to. 4. 'Justice upon the Armie Remonstrance,' &c., 1649, 4to. 5. 'A Second View of the Army Remonstrance,' 1649, 4to. 6. 'Mr. W. S.'s Letter to . . . Thomas Lord Fairfax in prosecution of his Answer to the Remonstrance of the Army,' 1649, 4to; part of this, with title 'Excerpta quædam ex W. S. remonstrantia ad Generalem Exercitus,' is in 'Sylloge Variorum Tractatuum,' 1649, 4to. 7. 'Animadversions on a Letter . . . to His Highness . . . by . . . Gentlemen . . . in Wales,' 1656, 4to. 8. 'Animadversions upon a book intituled Inquisition for the Blood of our Soveraign,' 1661, 8vo.

[Wood's Athenæ Oxon. (Bliss), iii. 894; Wood's Fasti (Bliss), i. 438, 460; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1892, iv. 1332; Calamy's Account, 1713, pp. 114, 117; Davids's Evang. Nonconf. in Essex, 1863, pp. 285, 566 sq.] A. G.

SEDLEY, CATHARINE, Countess of Dorchester (1657–1717), born on 21 Dec. 1657, and baptised eight days later at St. Giles-in-the-Fields, was the only child of Sir Charles Sedley [q. v.], by Catharine, daughter of John Savage, earl Rivers. As early as June 1673 Evelyn spoke of her as 'none of the virtuous, but a wit.' In 1677 Sir Winstone and Lady Churchill were anxious for a match between their eldest son (afterwards first Duke of Marlborough) and Catharine, his distant kinswoman. She was not good-looking, they admitted, and she squinted, but she was rich. The negotiation was soon broken off (Wolseley, *Life of Marlborough*, i. 189). Catharine became a familiar figure at Whitehall, Barillon describing her as clever, but very pale and thin. She soon supplanted Arabella Churchill (whom she excelled both in ugliness and impudence) in the good graces of the Duke of York. Charles II conjectured that she

must have been prescribed to his brother by his confessor as a sort of penance. Dorset made some rather brutal attacks upon her lack of beauty and love of finery, notably in the verses 'Tell me, Dormida, why so gay,' 1680 (*State Poems*, iii. 395). Catharine herself was astonished at the violence of the ducal passion. 'It cannot be my beauty,' she said, 'for he must see I have none; and it cannot be my wit, for he has not enough to know that I have any.' The Roman catholics were the chief targets of her caustic tongue, and they apprehended, not without cause, that upon James's accession she might occupy a position similar to that of the Duchess of Portsmouth. When James came to the throne he resolved that he would see his mistress no more, and bade her remove from Whitehall to the house in St. James's Square (No. 21, formerly occupied by Arabella Churchill), which he had purchased for her, at the same time increasing her allowance from 2,000*l.* to 4,000*l.* per annum. But despite these precautions, some three months later, whether by accident or design, the pair met at Chiffinch's and the amour was renewed. The revival of the intrigue was attributed to a design on the part of Rochester and Dartmouth to neutralise a catholic queen by a protestant mistress. Though report assigned to him a successful rival in Colonel Graham, the keeper of the privy purse, the king was content to believe himself the father of Catharine's children, and on 19 Jan. 1686 a writ passed the privy seal creating her Baroness of Darlington and Countess of Dorchester, with an enhanced pension of 5,000*l.* per annum. Such a gratuitous insult (for the honour was unsought by the shrewd Catharine) provoked the furious resentment of the catholic camarilla. For two days the queen refused both food and speech, while James, stricken by a tardy remorse, had recourse to a scourge (which curious love-token his wife subsequently bequeathed to the convent of Chaillot). The countess was ordered to withdraw from Whitehall to her own house, and thence to Flanders. Quite unabashed, she wrote that the number of convents in Flanders would render the air too oppressive for her; but eventually, after a personal interview with her lover, she consented to go to Ireland, where her friend Rochester was viceroy. She found Dublin 'intolerable' and the Irish 'mallincoly' (autogr. letter in Mr. A. Morrison's *Collections*, iii. 128). She returned in August 1686, and was visited with great secrecy by James; but her political importance was gone. She bore the revolution with complete equanimity, and in May 1691 William and Mary granted her a pension of 1,500*l.* per annum, while in 1703 her former pension of 5,000*l.* was renewed by a grant in the Irish parliament. In August 1696 she married Sir David Colyear, second baronet, who was created in 1699 baron, and four years later Earl Portmore. She was conspicuous at the coronation of George I (Lady Cowper, *Diary*, p. 5*n.*) She is supposed to have made a pious end, dying at Bath on 26 Oct. 1717. Dr. Johnson may have had this supposition in his mind when he wrote in the 'Vanity of Human Wishes:' 'And Sedley curs'd the form that pleased a king.'

By her husband, Earl Portmore, who survived till 2 Jan. 1730, she had two sons—David, viscount Melsington (*d.* 1729), and Charles Colyear, second earl of Portmore (*d.* 1785).

By the Duke of York (afterwards James II) she seems to have had several children who died young. Dangeau mentions in February 1686 that two of her sons by the king were being educated in Paris. The only child who lived to maturity was apparently Lady Catharine Darnley; she married, on 28 Oct. 1699, James Annesley, third earl of Anglesey, from whom, on account of alleged cruelty on his part, she was separated by act of parliament on 12 June 1701 (cf. *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 10th Rep. App. iii. 336). After his death, in January 1701-2, she married, secondly, on 16 March 1705-6, John Sheffield, first duke of Normanby and Buckingham [q. v.]; she died on 13 March 1743, and was interred, with almost regal pomp, in Westminster Abbey. Her extravagant pride in her rank was conspicuous even on her deathbed (cf. Walpole; *British Champion*, 7 April 1743). By her first husband she had an only daughter, Catherine, who married William, son of Sir Constantine Phipps [q. v.], lord-chancellor of Ireland. By her second husband she had a son Edmund, who succeeded to the title and estates, but, dying unmarried during his mother's lifetime, bequeathed to her all the Mulgrave and Normanby property. These estates she left by will to her grandson, Constantine Phipps, first baron Mulgrave, whose grandson, Constantine Henry Phipps [q. v.], on his elevation to the marquisate, assumed the title of Normanby.

Portraits of Lady Dorchester, by Kneller and Dahl, were at Strawberry Hill, while an anonymous portrait of her, in a low dress with red drapery, is in the possession of Earl Spencer (*Cat. Nat. Portr.* 1866, No. 1022).

[G. E. C.'s Peerage, s.v. Annesley, Darlington, Dorchester, and Portmore; Luttrell's Diary, vol.

iv. passim; Evelyn's Diary, ii. 84, 248; Reresby's Diary, passim; Burnet's Own Time; Ellis Corresp. ii. 92; Poems on State Affairs, 1716, passim; Dangeau's Mémoires, i. 303; Diary of Henry, earl of Clarendon, ed. Singer; Hist. MSS. Comm. 3rd Rep. App. pp. 173, 176; Mazure's Hist. de la Révolution, ii. 149, 170; Lady Cowper's Diary; Lingard's Hist. of England, x. 201 sq.; Macaulay's Hist. 1858, ii. 70 sq.; Ranke's Hist. of England, iv. 285; Jesse's Mem. of the Court of England under the Stuarts, iv. 491; Dasent's St. James's Square, pp. 181–2; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. iii. 281, 438.]

T. S.

SEDLEY, Sir CHARLES (1639?–1701), wit and dramatic author, was born about 1639 at Aylesford in Kent. He was the youngest and posthumous son of Sir John Sedley (or Sidley, as the name was properly spelt), baronet, of Southfleet in Kent, whither this ancient family had moved its seat from the neighbourhood of Romney Marsh. Sir John Sedley's wife Elizabeth was the daughter and heiress of the learned Sir Henry Savile (1549–1622) [q. v.] 'An Epitaph on the Lady Sedley' was written by Edmund Waller (*Poems*, ed. Drury, p. 243). Their son Charles succeeded to the title and estates after his elder brothers William and Henry had both died unmarried (Collins). Sedley entered Wadham College, Oxford, as a fellow commoner on 22 March 1655–6, but took no degrees. After the Restoration he entered parliament as one of the members (barons) for New Romney. The earliest of many notices concerning him in Pepys's 'Diary' refers to a shameful drunken frolic in which he, Lord Buckhurst (afterwards Earl of Dorset), and Sir Thomas Ogle engaged at the Cock Tavern in Bow Street, and for his share in the orgie he was fined 500*l.* in the court of king's bench. Chief-justice Foster is said to have observed on this occasion that it was for Sedley 'and such wicked wretches as he was that God's anger and judgments hung over us, calling him sirrah many times' (Pepys, s.d. 1 July 1663; cf. Johnson's *Lives of the Poets*, s.v. Dorset). Five years later Sedley and his boon-companion Buckhurst were guilty of a similar escapade, and when they were threatened with legal proceedings, the king was reported to have interfered on their behalf, besides getting drunk in their company (Pepys, 23 Oct. 1668). On 16 Nov. 1667 Pepys speaks of Lord Vaughan as 'one of the lewdest fellows of the age, worse than Sir Charles Sedley;' on 1 Feb. 1669 he alludes to the brutal assault contrived by him upon the actor Edward Kynaston [q. v.], who had presumed upon his striking personal resemblance to Sedley by appearing in public dressed in imitation of him. On 4 Oct. 1664 and 18 Feb. 1667, however, Pepys listened with much pleasure to Sedley's witty criticisms at the play.

Sedley married, on 23 Feb. 1657, at St. Giles's-in-the-Fields, Catherine, daughter of John Savage, earl of Rivers, by whom he had one daughter, Catharine [q. v.], who became the favourite mistress of James, duke of York, and was by him created Countess of Dorchester. According to a well-known anecdote, Sedley is said to have declared himself to be even in civility with King James, who had made his daughter a countess, by helping (through his vote in the Convention parliament) to make the king's daughter a queen. But, supposing the earliest of the prose papers printed as Sedley's, entitled 'Reflections upon our Late and Present Proceedings in England,' to be genuine, he at the time of the Revolution favoured delay till the question as to the birth of the Prince of Wales should have been settled, and, only in the event of this proving impossible, supported the succession of the Princess of Orange in her own right and without her consort. This contribution to the pamphlet literature of the crisis furnishes a good example of Sedley's clear and facile prose style. The parliamentary speeches attributed to him bear largely upon the advantages of retrenchment, and in general reflect the opinions of a moderate tory. Notwithstanding the continued interest in public affairs exhibited in these speeches, Sedley is said to have withdrawn from London as much as possible after the death of Charles II. In January 1680 his skull was fractured by the fall of the roof of the tennis-court in the Haymarket, and he narrowly escaped with his life (*Hatton Correspondence*, Camd. Soc. i. 216). He died on 20 Aug. 1701. A portrait was engraved by Vandergucht (Bromley).

The literary reputation of Sedley among his contemporaries equalled his notoriety in the world of fashion and scandal. King Charles II is said to have told him that 'Nature had given him a patent to be Apollo's viceroy,' and to have frequently asserted that 'his style, either in writing or discourse, would be the standard of the English tongue.' Flatteries were lavished on him by Rochester, Buckingham, and Shadwell (see Langbaine); and Dryden introduced him, under the anagrammatic designation of Lisideius, as one of the personages of the dialogue published in 1668 as 'An Essay of Dramatic Poesy.' Dryden dedicated to Sedley 'The Assignation' (1673), where he calls him the Tibullus of his age, and recalls the genial nights spent

with him 'in pleasant and for the most part instructive discourse.'

When the literary remains of Sedley are examined, they are found very imperfectly to warrant their contemporary reputation. His prose writings consist, besides the pieces already mentioned, of a commonplace 'Essay on Entertainments,' and a prose version of Cicero's oration 'pro M. Marcello.' The burlesque 'Speech and Last Will and Testament' of the Earl of Pembroke may be his, but it has also been attributed to Butler. Sedley's non-dramatic verse comprises little that is noticeable, and is not to be regarded as equal in merit even to his friend Dorset's. He has, however, occasionally very felicitous turns of diction, the effect of which is enhanced by the unstudied simplicity of his manner. Among his amorous lyrics, while various tributes to Aurelia or Aminta are forgotten, the pretty song 'Phillis is my only Joy' (to which he wrote the companion 'Song à la mode') survives chiefly because of its setting as a madrigal. Another lyric of merit is 'Love still has something of the Sea.' In his non-dramatic productions Sedley, although a licentious, is not as a rule an obscene writer. He has also left a series of translations and adaptations, including versions in heroic couplets of Virgil's 'Fourth Georgic' and 'Eclogues,' and an adaptation, under the sub-title of 'Court Characters,' of a series of epigrams from Martial.

The plays of Sir Charles Sedley consist of two tragedies and three comedies. 'Antony and Cleopatra' (1677, reprinted 1702, under the title of 'Beauty the Conqueror, or the Death of Marc Antony') was extolled by Shadwell (dedication of *A True Widow*) as 'the only tragedy, except two of Jonson's and one of Shakespeare's, wherein Romans are made to speak and do like Romans.' It would be more appropriately compared with Dryden's 'All for Love' (1678), but is too frigid and uninteresting a composition, especially in its earlier portions, to sustain the comparison. It is in heroic couplets, largely interspersed with triplets, to which Sedley was particularly addicted. 'The Tyrant King of Crete,' which seems never to have been acted, is merely an adaptation of Henry Killigrew's 'The Conspiracy' (printed 1638), or, more probably, of its revised edition, 'Pallantus and Eudora,' printed 1653 (see Genest, x. 150). This romantic drama is in blank verse, which the printer terribly confused.

The comedy of 'The Mulberry-garden' (1668), partly founded on Molière's 'École des Maris,' is an example, composed partly in easy prose, partly in rhymed couplets, of what may be called the 'rambling' comedy of the age. This worthless piece is supposed to play just about the time of Monck's declaration in favour of the Restoration. 'Bellamira, or the Mistress' (1687), founded on the 'Eunuchus' of Terence, is the single one of Sedley's plays which may both for better and for worse be said to come near to his reputation; it is both the grossest and, from a literary point of view, the best executed of his plays. The character of the heroine was said to be intended as an exposure of the Duchess of Cleveland (cf. Genest, i. 455). The author, in his prologue, need hardly have asked:

> Is it not strange to see, in such an age,
> The pulpit get the better of the stage?

Sedley also adapted a French original which has not been identified under the title of 'The Grumbler.' This piece appears to have remained unacted till 1754, when it was brought out as a farce at Drury Lane, and this or the original was again adapted by Goldsmith in 1773 for Quick's benefit (Genest, iv. 391–2, v. 373; *Biographia Dramatica*, ii. 274).

Sedley's poems, together with those of Dorset, were collected in 'A New Miscellany,' 1701, and in a 'Collection of Poems' of the same date. They were published separately, together with his speeches, in 1707, London, 8vo; subsequent editions, 1722 and 1776.

[The Works of the Hon. Sir Charles Sedley, Bart., in Prose and Verse, with Memoirs of the Author's Life, written by an Eminent Hand, 2 vols. 1776 (the Memoirs are nugatory; vol. ii. contains the preface prefixed by Captain Ayloffe, who claims affinity with Sedley, to the Miscellaneous Works, with the Death of Marc Antony, 1702); Collins's Baronetage of England, 1720, i. 327–9; Pepys's Diary; Langbaine's English Dramatic Poets, 1691, pp. 485–8; Genest's English Stage.] See also Sedley, A. W. W.

SEDULIUS (*d.* 828), commentator on the Scriptures, has often been confounded by mediæval writers with Cœlius Sedulius the poet, who was the author of the 'Carmen seculare,' and of the hymns in the Roman Breviary, 'A Solis ortus Cardine' and 'Hostis Herodes impie.' Both writers are said to have been Irishmen, and their works have a religious purpose; but Ussher has shown that Cœlius Sedulius the poet flourished in the fifth century, and must be the commentator who even quotes the poet, and is sometimes termed junior, in allusion to his later date.

Ware identified the later Sedulius with a British bishop of Irish birth, who is said to

have been at Rome in 721, and there signed the decrees of a Roman council; but Lanigan considers this a mistake, and nothing seems to be known of the bishop in question.

He is with more reason identified with the Sedilius or Siadhal, son of Feradach, who was abbot of Kildare, and died in 828. He is described by Hepidanus, a monk of St. Gall, who wrote in 818, as Sedulius Scotus, a 'distinguished author.' The works of Sedulius consist of a Latin commentary on the Epistles of St. Paul, drawn from the works of the fathers, and one on the Gospel of St. Matthew, collected from various sources. They are frequently quoted by Archbishop Ussher in his 'Religion of the Ancient Irish,' and they have been published in the 'Bibliotheca Patrum,' where they are assigned to 'Sedulius Scotus.' According to the 'Annals of the Four Masters,' Sedulius was abbot of Kildare, and died in 828.

[Ussher's Works, iv. 245–58, 291–3, vi. 319–332; Lanigan's Eccl. Hist. i. 17, iii. 255; Bibliotheca Patrum, tom. vi.; Labbe apud Baronius, De Scriptoribus Ecclesiasticis, pp. 149–152.] T. O.

SEEBOHM, HENRY (1832–1895), ornithologist, born on 12 July 1832, was eldest son of Benjamin Seebohm of Horton Grange, Bradford, Yorkshire (who came to England from Germany in 1815), by his wife Esther Wheeler, of Hitchin, Hertfordshire. His parents belonged to the Society of Friends, and he was educated at the Friends' school, York, where he developed a taste for natural history. At an early age he engaged in business, and ultimately settled at Sheffield as a manufacturer of steel. His spare time was devoted to ornithology, and from time to time he made journeys into Holland, Greece, Asia Minor, Scandinavia, Germany, and Siberia to collect and study birds in their native haunts.

One of his most successful expeditions was to the valley of the Lower Petchora in 1875, with Mr. Harvie-Brown, when the eggs of the grey plover and of many rare species of birds were obtained. The account of this voyage, as well as of a trip to Heligoland, whither he went to study the migration of the birds at the house of the celebrated ornithologist, Herr Gätke, was given in his 'Siberia in Europe,' 8vo, London, 1880. In 1877, accompanied by Captain Wiggins, he visited the valley of the Yenesei, where further ornithological discoveries of great importance were made, and recorded in his 'Siberia in Asia,' 8vo, London, 1882. Later he visited Southern Europe and South Africa to study European birds in their winter quarters, and to collect materials for his work on 'The Geographical Distribution of the Family Charadriidæ,' 4to, London, 1887.

Seebohm joined the British Ornithologists' Union and the Zoological Society in 1873; he was elected a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society in 1878, and was one of the secretaries from June 1890 till his death. He was elected a fellow of the Linnean Society in December 1879.

In later years he resided at South Kensington and Maidenhead. He died on 26 Nov. 1895.

Besides the works already named, Seebohm was the author of: 1. 'Catalogue of Birds in the British Museum, vol. v., Turdidæ,' 8vo, London, 1881. 2. 'A History of British Birds and their Eggs,' 8vo, London, 1883–5. 3. 'Classification of Birds,' 8vo, London, 1890; supplement 1895. 4. 'The Birds of the Japanese Empire,' 8vo, London, 1890. 5. 'Geographical Distribution of British Birds,' 8vo, London, 1893. 6. 'Address to the Yorkshire Naturalists' Union,' 8vo, London, 1893. He also contributed upwards of eighty papers, chiefly on ornithological subjects, between 1877 and 1895, to the 'Proceedings of the Zoological Society,' 'The Ibis,' and other scientific publications. He left unfinished a work on 'The Eggs of British Birds' and on 'Thrushes.'

He was a liberal contributor to the national collection during his lifetime, and at his death left his whole ornithological collection to the British Museum (Natural History).

[Times, 28 Nov. 1895; Nature, 5 Dec. 1895, p. 105; Athenæum, 7 Dec. 1895, p. 794; Ibis, 1896, pp. 159–62; information kindly supplied by his brother, Mr. F. Seebohm; Brit. Mus. (Nat. Hist.) Cat.; Royal Soc. Cat.; Zool. Record.] B. B. W.

SEED, JEREMIAH (1700–1747), divine, born in 1700, was son of Jeremiah Seed, who graduated B.A. from Jesus College, Cambridge, in 1682, and was rector of Clifton, Westmoreland, from 1707 until his death in 1722 (*Grad. Cant.* p. 346; Nicolson and Burn, *Hist. of Cumb. and West.* i. 414). He was educated at Lowther grammar school, and matriculated on 7 Nov. 1716 at Queen's College, Oxford, proceeding B.A. on 13 Feb. 1721–2, and M.A. 1725 (Foster, *Alumni*, 1715–1886, iv. 1271). He was chosen a fellow in 1732, and became for some years curate to Dr. Waterland, vicar of Twickenham, whose funeral sermon he preached on 4 Jan. 1741 (2nd edit. London, 1742). Seed was presented by his college in the same year to the rectory of Knight's Enham, Hampshire, where he remained until his death on 10 Dec. 1747.

Seed was much admired as a preacher. Dr. Johnson remarked that he had 'a very fine style,' but 'he was not very theological.' Others deemed his preaching 'elegant but languid.' Two sermons were published during his lifetime; others posthumously as 'Discourses' (London, 1743, 8vo; 6th, 1766). 'The Posthumous Works,' consisting of sermons, essays, and letters 'from the original manuscripts,' was edited by Joseph Hall, M.A., fellow of Queen's College, London, and was printed for M. Seed (? his widow), 1750, 2 vols., with a portrait by Hayman, engraved by Ravenet. Other editions appeared, 2 vols., Dublin, 1750; London, 1770, 8vo, 1 vol.; and the work is said to have been translated into Russian.

[Chalmers's Biogr. Dict.; Rose's Biogr. Dict.; Darling's Cyclop. Bibliogr. ii. 2688–9; Gent. Mag. 1747, p. 592; London Mag. xvi. 581; Lysons's Environs of London, iii. 586; Boswell's Johnson, ed. Hill, iii. 248.] C. F. S.

SEELEY, Sir JOHN ROBERT (1834–1895), historian and essayist, born in London on 10 Sept. 1834, was third son of Robert Benton Seeley [q. v.], publisher. From his father Seeley imbibed a love of books, together with a special bias towards history and religious thought. He went first to school under the Rev. J. A. Barron at Stanmore. It was a school where no prizes were given, but where more attention than usual was paid to English literature. From Stanmore he went on to the City of London school, then already winning a reputation under Dr. George Ferris Whidborne Mortimer [q. v.] Here he made such rapid progress that he entered the sixth form when little over thirteen. But the work was too hard for him, and physical exercise was neglected. His health suffered; he was obliged for a time to leave school. Forced to give up his classics, he took to reading English, and obtained a knowledge of English authors very rare in boys of his age. He had already read through 'Paradise Lost' four or five times before he left school. In 1852 he went to Cambridge, entering the university as a scholar of Christ's College. He studied classics principally; he read widely, not neglecting the accurate scholarship in vogue at Cambridge, but paying attention by preference to the literary qualities and the philosophical and historical contents of his authors. He impressed at least one of his teachers by his remarkable command of language and expression. In society he was somewhat reserved and shy, but he made some warm friends. Among his contemporaries at Christ's were C. S. Calverley, W. (now Sir Walter) Besant, Skeat, Peile, and other men who afterwards came to distinction. Seeley was known as one of the ablest of an able set. His conversation was noted for its dialectical subtlety and terseness, and, though not combative, he never shrank from thorough discussion. Ill-health compelled him to defer his degree for a year, but in 1857 he graduated, his name appearing, along with three others, at the top of the classical tripos. The senior chancellor's medal, which he also obtained, marked him out as, upon the whole, the best scholar of his year.

Shortly afterwards he was elected to a fellowship in his own college, and was appointed classical lecturer. This post he held for two years. In 1859 he published, under the pseudonym of John Robertson, his first book, a volume of poems, which contains a poem on the choosing of David, versifications of several psalms, and a series of historic sketches, chiefly monologues of historic personages. His mind was clearly busy on the two topics which interested him most through life—religion and history; but the dramatic and personal element is more prominent than in his later works. In 1859 he left Cambridge to take the post of chief classical assistant at his old school. In 1863 he was appointed professor of Latin in University College, London. Here he remained for six years. But the study of his professorial subject did not satisfy him; his mind was actively at work on the problems of Christian doctrine regarded from an historical point of view. In 1865 he published 'Ecce Homo,' in some respects the most remarkable of his works. It is an attempt to present the life, work, and teaching of Christ in a simple and positive form, avoiding textual and other dubieties, sketching and connecting the larger features rather than elaborating details. He assumes in general the authenticity of the gospel narrative, but deals with the person of Christ on its human side only. The book immediately attracted attention, and, though intentionally uncontroversial, provoked a storm of controversy, in which Mr. Gladstone (*Good Words*, ix. 33 et sqq.), Cardinal Newman, Dean Stanley, and others took part. Its title and the limitation of its scope were held to imply a denial of certain doctrines which the author deliberately avoided discussing. In the preface to a subsequent edition he defended himself against misconstructions, without however committing himself to positive assertions on the subjects in question. The book was published anonymously, but the secret of its authorship was not long maintained. In the preface to the first edition Seeley hinted at another volume

dealing with some of the topics omitted in 'Ecce Homo.' But 'Natural Religion,' published in 1882, cannot in this sense be regarded as a sequel to the former work. 'Natural Religion' avoids discussing the supernatural basis of faith, but does not therefore deny its existence. It endeavours to widen the conception of the word 'religion,' which the author declares unduly narrowed, and to establish the possibility of a reasonable religion without the supernatural element. The work was not so well received as 'Ecce Homo.' The style is equally vigorous, the argument as lucid, but the subject is devoid of that personal interest and association possessed by the earlier book, while the view of religion which it advocates appeals only to the few.

In 1869 Seeley became professor of modern history at Cambridge in the place of Charles Kingsley, and at Cambridge he remained for the rest of his life. He had as yet published nothing historical beyond some short papers, but historical speculation had interested him from early years. His lectures at once made a great impression. They were carefully prepared, epigrammatic in style, animated in delivery, attractive and stimulating from the originality, width, and suggestiveness of their views. For many years his classes were large, and were by no means confined to those who were making history a special study. Besides lecturing, he held weekly classes for the purpose of discussing historical and political questions with advanced students. These gatherings were called 'conversation classes,' but they became, at least latterly, a sort of monologue, in which the professor took his class through a regular course of political science.

In the inaugural lecture which he delivered when appointed professor he defined his view of the connection between history and politics, and laid down the lines on which his teaching was consistently to run throughout his tenure of the professorship. He insisted on the principle that a knowledge of history, but especially of the most recent history, is indispensable to the politician. And by history he meant political history—not biography, nor the history of religion, art, or society, but the history of the state. With this view, when the historical tripos was established at Cambridge in 1873, he infused into it a strong political element. He would indeed have preferred to call it a political tripos, and to make history subordinate to politics. His lectures were, with few exceptions, confined to the history of the last two centuries, and his attention was mainly given to international history, to the action and reaction of states upon each other. The history of Great Britain as a member of the European system was, he maintained, a subject strangely and unduly neglected in favour of domestic or constitutional history by British historians.

For some time Seeley's labours were not restricted to Cambridge. The income of his chair was at first very small, and he was compelled to supplement it by giving lectures in the large towns of the north and in Scotland, where he achieved a high reputation as a lecturer. Some of his public addresses and other papers were collected in a volume entitled 'Lectures and Essays,' and published in 1870. The most important of these are perhaps the essays on the 'Fall of the Roman Empire' and on 'Milton,' and his inaugural lecture at Cambridge.

While still professor of Latin Seeley had, at the request of the Oxford University Press, begun an edition of the first decade of Livy. A volume containing the first book of Livy was published in 1871. The introduction is original and suggestive, and displays his capacity for forming clear and positive conclusions on complicated historical problems. But such antiquarian research was not very congenial to him, and he never continued the edition.

Some years after he became professor of history an anonymous benefactor made an addition to the income of the chair, while about the same time the Cambridge University Press gave a practical illustration of the endowment of research by paying in advance for a work on which Seeley was engaged. He was thus enabled to give up extraneous employment, and to devote himself to his professorial lectures and to the book in question. This book, 'The Life and Times of Stein,' is probably Seeley's most solid and lasting contribution to historical knowledge, but it was not one of his most successful productions. He had little taste for personal detail or for simple narrative, and the character of Stein hardly lends itself to attractive biographical treatment. But as an elucidation of the anti-Napoleonic revolution, and of the share taken by Stein and Prussia in the revival of Germany, the book has no rival in the English language. 'The Expansion of England,' published in 1883, was a greater success so far as public reputation is concerned. This little volume consists of lectures delivered in the university, very slightly altered or amplified for publication. It sketches with a remarkable unity of view and vigour of treatment the great duel with France which began with the revolution of 1688 and ended with

Waterloo. No previous writer had so succinctly and so pointedly emphasised the colonial and commercial aspects of that struggle. The book was eagerly taken up by a very large public: it drew attention, at an opportune moment, to a great subject; it substituted imperial for provincial interests; and it contributed perhaps more than any other single utterance to the change of feeling respecting the relations between Great Britain and her colonies which marks the end of the nineteenth century.

The study of British foreign policy occupied Seeley during the greater part of the remainder of his life. His original intention was to write a detailed history of this subject during the period covered by the 'Expansion.' But he found it necessary to supply an introduction, and, in tracing the origin of those principles and antagonisms on which the policy of the eighteenth century was based, he was gradually forced back to the reign of Elizabeth. It was the protestant reformation, definitely adopted by Elizabeth, which in his view determined all the subsequent relations between England and the great maritime states of the continent. Thus, what had been intended for a short introduction gradually swelled into a considerable book, which he left completed, but not finally revised at his death. It was published in 1895, under the title 'The Growth of British Policy,' 2 vols. In this work Elizabeth, Cromwell, and William III are displayed as the great founders of the British empire, and religion and commerce as the leading motives which directed their action. Before actually setting to work on this book Seeley had published (1886) a concise 'Life of Napoleon,' expanded from an article in the 'Encyclopædia Britannica.' It is a masterly summary of Napoleon's aims and actions, but is written perhaps from too hostile a point of view, and, while doing justice to Napoleon's great powers, deprives him of all claim to originality as a statesman. A little book on 'Goethe,' published in 1893, and a volume of 'Lectures on Political Science,' issued posthumously, complete the list of Seeley's published works. The volume on Goethe is an amplification of some papers published in the 'Contemporary Review' in 1884. It is a study of Goethe the philosopher and teacher, rather than of Goethe the poet or the artist. As in the essay on Milton, it is rather what the author had to say than the way he said it which seems to have been most interesting to Seeley. This little volume was undertaken as a relief from severer work, for which illness made him unfit.

The last years of his life were rendered less productive than they might have been by the attacks of the disease—cancer—to which he eventually succumbed. He was elected fellow of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge, in October 1882, and in 1894 was made K.C.M.G. on the recommendation of Lord Rosebery. He had long been in somewhat weak health, and suffered much from insomnia; but he bore his troubles with marvellous patience, and attended to his professorial duties whenever not actually incapacitated by illness. He died at Cambridge on 13 Jan. 1895.

In his teaching of modern history Seeley adopted, though he did not formulate, the view that 'history is past politics, and politics present history.' Historical narrative without generalisation had no value for him; he always tried to solve some problem, to trace large principles, to deduce some lesson. If the conclusions which he reached could be made applicable to present difficulties, so much the better. History was to be a school of statesmanship. So eager was he to establish general principles that his conclusions occasionally appear paradoxical, and are sometimes open to dispute. But his method is at once stimulating and productive, and his whole conception of the subject tends to place it on a high level of public utility. Of the duties of the individual towards the state Seeley formed a high ideal, and, though not an active politician, he held strong political views. In later life he was a liberal unionist, and on more than one occasion raised his voice in public against home rule. He was for several years closely connected with the Imperial Federation League, and, though he never traced out any definite scheme of federation, there was nothing that he had more at heart than the maintenance of the union between Great Britain and her colonies. In university politics he took little part; the routine of academic business and the labour of examinations were alike distasteful to him. He never, even in his younger days, went much into society. In 1869 he married Mary Agnes, eldest daughter of Arthur Phillott, by whom he had one child, a daughter, who survives him.

His chief published works are: 1. 'David and Samuel, with other Poems, original and translated, by John Robertson,' 1859. 2. 'Ecce Homo,' 1865. 3. 'Lectures and Essays,' 1870. 4. 'The first Book of Livy, with an Introduction, Historical Examination, and Notes,' 1871. 5. 'English Lessons for English People' (written in collaboration with Dr. Abbott), 1871. 6. 'The Life and Times of Stein, or Germany and Prussia in the Napoleonic Age,' 1878. 7. 'Natural

Religion,' 1882. 8. 'The Expansion of England.' 9. 'A Short Life of Napoleon I,' 1885. 10. 'Goethe reviewed after Sixty Years,' 1893. 11. 'The Growth of British Policy: an Historical Essay,' 1895. 12. 'Lectures on Political Science,' 1895.

[Articles in the Cambridge Review and the Christ's College Magazine by Professor Hales; article in the Caius College Magazine by Dr. Venn; memoir prefixed to the Growth of British Policy, by Professor Prothero; private information.] G. W. P.

SEELEY, ROBERT BENTON (1798–1886), publisher and author, son of Leonard Benton Seeley, publisher, was born in 1798 in Ave Maria Lane, London, where his father (the son of a bookseller at Buckingham) had established himself as a bookseller and publisher about 1784. The business was afterwards removed to 169 Fleet Street. Robert Benton served in his father's business until 1826, when he took control of the publishing branch of it, and entered into partnership with Mr. Burnside. In 1827 he opened a shop at 10 Crane Court, from which in 1830 he removed to 172 Fleet Street, and in 1840 to 54 Fleet Street. In 1854 he entered into partnership with Mr. Jackson and Mr. Halliday (who both died a few years later), and in 1857 he relinquished his interest in the business to his second son, although for some years he continued to render active help in the management.

Seeley was brought up in the traditions of evangelical churchmanship, and his publications were mainly confined to books expounding evangelical opinions. He issued an edition of the works of Richard Cecil [q. v.] in 1838, biographies of Hannah More (1838), John Newton (1843), and Henry Martyn (1855), and many of the publications of the Church Missionary Society. He was intimate with the Rev. Edward Auriol, Dean Boyd, and Dean Champneys, whose works he published.

Seeley joined his friends in promoting many religious and philanthropic movements. He was one of the founders of the Church Pastoral Aid Society in 1837, and of the Society for Improving the Condition of the Labouring Classes in 1844, and he served on the subdivision of parishes commission in 1849. With the Earl of Shaftesbury he exerted himself in supporting the factory bills. He was a member of the metropolitan board of works from 1856 to 1857. He died at 59 Hilldrop Crescent, Camden Town, London, on 31 May 1886, leaving Leonard Benton Seeley (see below) and three other sons and six daughters. The second son, Mr. Richmond Seeley, succeeded to the publishing firm. His third son, Sir John Robert Seeley, is noticed separately.

Seeley personally engaged in literary work, on both religious and historical lines, sending many contributions to the 'Times,' the 'Morning Herald,' the 'Record,' the 'Morning Advertiser,' and 'Fraser's Magazine.' One of his most thoughtful works was his 'Essays on the Church, by a Layman,' 1834, which went through many editions. Its object was to show that church establishments were in accordance with scripture, and that secession from the communion of the English church was not justifiable. More interesting was Seeley's 'The Greatest of the Plantagenets, Edward I,' 1860, which reappeared as 'The Life and Reign of Edward I,' 1872. Here Seeley successfully defended Edward I from the contemptuous strictures of Hume and other historians, and proved his greatness as a ruler, an opinion that later writers have generally adopted. Seeley's other writings were: 1. 'Essays on Romanism,' 1839. 2. 'Memoirs of the Life and Writings of M. T. Sadler,' 1842. 3. 'Remedies for the Perils of the Nation: an Appeal,' 1843. 4. 'The Church of Christ in the Middle Ages,' 1845. 5. 'The Atlas of Prophecy, being the Prophecies of Daniel, with an Exposition,' 1849. 6. 'The Pope a Pretender: the Substance of a Speech,' 10th edit. 1850. 7. 'A Memoir of the Rev. A. B. Johnson,' 1852. 8. 'The Life of W. Cowper,' 1855. 9. 'The Life of J. Wesley,' 1856. 10. 'The Spanish Peninsula: a Sketch,' 1861. 11. 'Is the Bible True?' seven dialogues between James White (a pseudonym) and E. Owen, 1862. 12. 'Have we any Word of God?' 1864. 13. 'Is the Bible True? Seven dialogues by a Layman,' 1866. 14. 'Essays on the Bible,' 1870. 15. 'The Life and Writings of St. Peter,' 1872. 16. 'The greatest of the Prophets, Moses,' 1875.

LEONARD BENTON SEELEY (1831–1893), the eldest son, born in 1831, was educated at the City of London school and at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he was fifth wrangler, was placed in the first class of the classical tripos, and in the first class in the moral sciences tripos, graduating B.A. in 1852, and M.A. in 1855. In 1854 he was elected fellow of Trinity College. On 30 April 1855 he was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn; he practised as a conveyancer and equity draughtsman, and his written opinions displayed much care and learning. He died at 1 Great James Street, London, on 30 Oct. 1893. He edited 'Euclid,' 1875; 'Horace Walpole and his Works, select Passages from his Writings,' 1884; 'Fanny Burney and her Friends,' 1890; and 'Mrs. Thrale, afterwards Mrs. Piozzi: a Sketch of her Life and Passages

from her Diaries and Letters,' 1891 (*Times*, 2, 3 Nov. 1893).

[Times, 1 July 1886, p. 1, 3 July p. 7; Publishers' Circular, 15 June 1886, pp. 601–2, with portrait; World, November 1893.] G. C. B.

SEEMAN or **ZEEMAN, ENOCH** (1694–1744), portrait-painter, was born in 1694 at Danzig in Germany, where his father was settled as a painter. It is possible that the famous German 'virtuoso' painter, Balthasar Denner, who received some of his early instruction in painting at Danzig, may have been a pupil of Seeman's father, for some of Seeman's early paintings were executed in imitation of Denner's manner. Among these were a portrait of himself at the age of nineteen, and an old woman's head in which the wrinkles, hair, fabric of clothes, are delineated in the minute manner which is seen in Denner's works. Seeman was brought by his father, when young, to London, and practised there as a portrait-painter with great success. He resided in St. Martin's Lane, and at first styled himself 'Enoch Seeman, junior.' He was a good portrait-painter, and his portraits of ladies were much admired. The conventionalities, however, of costume and posture have destroyed the value of his portraits. His portraits or portrait-groups were sometimes on a very large scale, such as the imposing picture of the Lapland giant, Gaianus, painted in 1734, now at Dalkeith Palace, and the family group of Sir John Cust [q. v.] at Belton House, Grantham. Seeman frequently painted his own portrait, in which he is seen in an animated attitude, with long flowing hair. One example is in the royal picture gallery at Dresden, and was engraved by J. G. Schmidt. Another, with his daughter in boy's clothes, was at Strawberry Hill. A portrait by him of Sir Isaac Newton, formerly in the possession of Thomas Hollis, F.S.A., was engraved in mezzotint by J. MacArdell. Seeman also painted George II, Queen Caroline (a portrait of whom by him is in the National Portrait Gallery), and other members of the royal family. He died suddenly in 1744. His son, Paul Seeman, painted portraits and still life, and his three brothers were all painters and ingenious artists, one of whom, Isaac Seeman, died in London on 4 April 1751. The name is sometimes, but erroneously, spelt Zeeman.

[Vertue's Diaries (Brit. Mus. Addit. MSS. 23074, 23076, &c.); Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting; Redgrave's Dict. of Artists.] L. C.

SEEMANN, BERTHOLD CARL (1825–1871), botanist and traveller, born at Hanover on 28 Feb. 1825, was educated at the Lyceum there, then under Grotefend, the celebrated cuneiform scholar, from whose son he received his first botanical teaching. Seemann's first botanical paper, 'Descriptiones Plantarum Novarum vel minus cognitarum,' published in 'Flora' in 1844, was written when he was seventeen. After graduating at Göttingen, he in 1844 came to Kew and worked under John Smith the curator (1798–1888), in order to fit himself for travel as a botanical collector. In 1846 Sir William Jackson Hooker [q. v.] procured Seemann's appointment as naturalist to H.M.S. Herald, under Captain H. Kellett, C.B., then engaged on a hydrographical survey of the Pacific. Seemann started at once for Panama. Finding that the Herald had not returned from Vancouver, he explored the Isthmus, finding many new plants, besides hieroglyphics at Veraguas, which he described in a paper read before the Archæological Institute. He joined the Herald in January 1847, and remained with her till June 1851. Almost all the west coast of America was explored, and three cruises were made into Arctic seas. In Peru and Ecuador Seemann travelled with Mr. (afterwards Captain) Bedford Clapperton Trevelyan Pim [q. v.] from Payta through the deserts and over the Andes to Guayaquil; and in Mexico he went from Mazatlan over the Sierra Madre to Durango and Chihuahua, narrowly escaping the Comanche and Apache Indians. In 1848 the Herald was ordered to Behring Strait to search for Franklin, first in company with the Plover and afterwards with the Enterprise and the Investigator. Herald Island was discovered, and a higher latitude than any previously attained in that region was reached, while Seemann collected many plants and anthropological specimens relating to the Esquimaux, visited Kamtchatka and the Sandwich Islands several times, and finally came home by Hongkong, Singapore, the Cape, St. Helena, and Ascension. 'The Botany of the Voyage,' which was published between 1852 and 1857, with analyses by J. D. (now Sir Joseph) Hooker and one hundred plates by W. H. Fitch, comprises the floras of Panama, north-west Mexico, West Esquimauxland, and Hongkong. Seemann's 'Narrative of the Voyage,' published in two volumes in English in 1853, was translated into German in 1858. Its author was made Ph.D. of Göttingen, and was elected a member of the Imperial Academy Naturæ Curiosorum (now the Leopoldine Academy) under the title of Bonpland. In the same year he began, in conjunction with a brother, who died in 1868, to edit a German journal of botany under

the name of 'Bonplandia,' of which ten quarto volumes were published at Hanover between 1853 and 1862. In 1857 he went to Montreal, representing the Linnean Society at the meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, and took the opportunity to visit the United States. In 1860 he was commissioned, with Colonel Smythe, R.A., to report on the Fiji Islands, before the English government accepted their cession. His letters, written in the voyage out, to the 'Athenæum' and the 'Gardeners' Chronicle,' were translated both into French and into German. He made the ascent of Vorua and Buku Levu. His report 'On the Resources and Vegetable Products of Fiji' was presented to parliament, and in 1862 was published separately as 'Viti: an Account of a Government Mission to the Vitian or Fijian Islands.' The appendix contained a catalogue of all the previously described plants of the islands, and some new species were described in 'Bonplandia.' In the same year he contributed an essay on 'Fiji and its Inhabitants' to Francis Galton's 'Vacation Tours.' In 1865 he began the issue of a 'Flora Vitiensis,' in ten quarto parts, with one hundred plates by Fitch. Of this, nine parts, written by himself, were published before his death; the tenth, dealing with the cryptogamic plants, and by various hands, was issued in 1873.

After discontinuing the issue of 'Bonplandia' in 1862, Seemann in 1863 began the publication of the 'Journal of Botany, British and Foreign;' from 1869 Dr. Henry Trimen [q. v.] and Mr. J. G. Baker were associated with him in the editorship. In 1864 some French and Dutch capitalists sent him to Venezuela to report on its resources. Near the Tocuyo he discovered a valuable bed of anthracite. From March to August 1866, and during 1867, he accompanied Captain Bedford Pim to Nicaragua. Seemann's letters to the 'Athenæum' and to the 'Panama Star and Herald' were reprinted in 1869 as 'Dottings on the Roadside in Panama, Nicaragua, and Mosquito.' One result of these journeys was the purchase by English capitalists of the Javali gold mine, Chontales, Nicaragua, of which Seemann was appointed managing director. He had also the management of a large sugar estate near Panama. The climate ruined his health, and he died at Javali of fever on 10 Oct. 1871. Seemann married an Englishwoman, who predeceased him, leaving one daughter.

He became a fellow of the Linnean Society in 1852, and was a vice-president of the Anthropological Society and a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society. In botany he made a special study of *Camellia* and *Thea*, of which he published a synopsis in the Linnean 'Transactions' (vol. xxii.), and of the ivy family, his account of which was reprinted from the 'Journal of Botany' in 1868. He introduced into cultivation the cannibal tomato, eaten with human flesh in the Fiji Islands, the candle-tree (*Parmentiera cerifera*), and several handsome species of palm. Regel dedicated to him the genus *Seemannia*, gesnerads, natives of the Andes.

Besides the botanical works and books of travels already mentioned, Seemann was author of the following scientific treatises: 1. 'Die Volksnamen der amerikanischen Pflanzen,' Hanover, 1851, 8vo. 2. 'Die in Europa eingeführten Acacien,' Hanover, 1852, 8vo. 3. 'Popular History of the Palms,' London, 1856, 8vo. 4. 'The British Ferns at one View,' with illustrations by W. Fitch, London, 1860, 8vo. 5. 'Hannoversche Sitten und Gebräuche in ihrer Beziehung zur Pflanzenwelt,' Leipzig, 1862, 16mo. 6. 'Revision of the Natural Order Hederaceæ,' London, 1868, 8vo. He also wrote descriptions in English and German of the 84 Coloured Plates of Endlicher's 'Paradisus Vindobonensis,' 1858, folio, and translated from the German descriptions of 'Twenty-four Views of the Vegetation of the Coasts of the Pacific,' by F. H. von Kittlitz, 1861, 8vo. He wrote prefaces to I. J. Benjamin's 'Acht Jahre in Asien und Afrika,' 1858, to W. T. Pritchard's 'Polynesian Reminiscences,' 1866, and to Lindley and Moore's 'Treasury of Botany,' 1865.

Seemann, who displayed remarkable versatility, wrote numerous articles in periodicals in English, German, and other languages. He was also a musical composer, and was author of three short German plays which enjoyed popularity in Hanover. Their titles ran: 'Wahl macht Qual,' Hanover, 1867, 8vo; 'Der Wohlthäter wider Willen,' Hanover, 1867, 8vo; and 'Die gelben Rosen,' Hanover, 1867, 8vo.

[There is a lithographic portrait of him in the Journal of Botany for 1872; Gardeners' Chronicle, 1871, p. 1678; Proceedings of the Linnean Society, 1871–2, p. lxxiv; Edwards's Photographic Portraits of Men of Eminence, 1866; Appleton's American Dictionary.]

G. S. B.

SEFFRID, SEFRID, SEINFRID, or **SAFRED II** (*d.* 1204), bishop of Chichester, was archdeacon of Chichester when, in 1178, he was made dean of that church. He was consecrated bishop of Chichester on 16 Nov. 1180. He was on the side of the monks of Christ Church, Canterbury, in their

quarrel with Archbishop Baldwin, and was employed by Urban III and the king in connection with the dispute in 1187 and 1188. In 1187 a large part of his cathedral church, built by Bishop Ralph Luffa, and consecrated in 1108, was destroyed by a fire which probably began on the roof. He used all means at his command to repair the damage. The triforium suffered little, but the clerestory had to be rebuilt; stone vaulting was substituted for the wooden roofs of the nave and aisles, the eastern limb was almost wholly rebuilt and much lengthened, the chapels on the eastern sides of the transepts were added, and pointed single-light windows took the place of the Norman windows in nave and choir (Stephens). The church was dedicated in September 1199, but the rebuilding was not finished in Seffrid's lifetime. Seffrid is said also to have rebuilt the bishop's palace. In 1189 he was present at the coronation of Richard I, and at the great council at Pipewell. He strongly condemned the outrage inflicted by the chancellor on Geoffrey (*d.* 1212) [q. v.], archbishop of York, in 1191, and wrote to the monks of Canterbury declaring that he was ready to take part in avenging such an insult to the whole church. He was ordered by the king, then in captivity, to come to him in Germany in 1193 in company with the chancellor (Rog. Hov. iii. 212). He was present at the new coronation of Richard on 17 April 1194, and at the coronation of John on 27 May 1199. In September 1200 he was too ill to attend the archbishop's synod at Westminster. He died on 17 March 1204. With the consent of the dean and chapter of Chichester he made statutes for the canons and vicars of the cathedral, which strengthened the independence of the chapter, and he regulated the residence of the canons and the duties of the dignitaries of the church. He founded a hospital for lepers half a mile to the east of Chichester, and another farther off in the same direction.

[Stephens's Mem. of S. Saxon See, pp. 65–9, 321; Gervase of Cant. i. 295, 385, 412, 491, Epp. Cantuar. pp. 57, 151, 167, 345, Gesta Henrici II de (B. Abbas), ii. 28, Rog. Hov. ii. 254, iii. 15, 212, 247, iv. 90, R. de Diceto, ii. 169, Ann. Winton, ii. 73, 79, and Wav. pp. 242, 252, 256, ap. Ann. Monast. (these six Rolls Ser.); Godwin, De Præsulibus, p. 503, ed. Richardson.] W. H.

SEGAR or **SEAGER**, FRANCIS (*fl.* 1549–1563), translator and poet, whose name, variously spelt, is that of an old Devonshire family, was probably the 'Francis Nycholson, *alias* Seagar,' who was made free of the Stationers' Company on 24 Sept. 1557. He was the author of: 1. 'A brefe Declaration of the great and innumerable Myseries and Wretchednesses used i[n] Courtes ryall, made by a Lettre whych mayster Alayn Charatre wrote to hys Brother. Newly augmented, amplified and inrytched, by Francis Segar, B.L.,' 1549, 12mo. A fragment of this tract is in the Bodleian Library. It was probably a new edition of Caxton's translation of Alain Chartier's 'Curial.' Prefixed to it are five four-line stanzas 'to the reader' by Segar (Ritson, *Bibliographia Poetica*, p. 327; Hazlitt, *Handbook*, p. 96). 2. 'Certayne Psalmes select out of the Psalter of David, and drawen into Englishe metre, wyth Notes to every Psalme in iv. partes to Synge by F. S. Printed by William Seres,' London, 1553, 8vo. This is dedicated in Sternhold's stanza to Lord Russell, by 'your lordeshyps humble orator, Francys Seager.' There are nineteen psalms, followed by a poem in the same metre entitled 'A Description of the Lyfe of Man, the Worlde and Vanities thereof' (Lowndes, under Psalms, p. 1996; Dibdin, *Typographical Antiquities*, iv. 200). 3. 'The Schoole of Vertue and Booke of good Nourture for Chyldren and Youth to learne theyr dutie by newly perused, corrected and augmented by the fyrst Auctour F. S. With a briefe Declaration of the Dutie of eche degree. Printed by William Seres,' 1557, 16mo. An acrostic giving the author's name (Seager) is prefixed to this volume, which is divided into twelve chapters of doggerel rhyme. This is the earliest known edition of a once popular work. It has been reprinted by the Early English Text Society in the 'Babees Book,' 1868 (pp. cxiii. 333–55). It was edited by Robert Crowley [q. v.], who added 'certain prayers and graces,' and abridged in Robert Weste's 'Booke of Demeanor' (1619, reprinted in 1817 and in 1868 in the 'Babees Book'). Wood says that Crowley's version was in his time 'commonly sold at the stalls of ballad-singers' (*Notes and Queries*, 4th ser. vi. 452).

In the 1563 edition of the 'Myrrour for Magistrates' Segar has a poem of forty-four seven-line stanzas, entitled 'How Richarde Plantagenet, Duke of Glocester, murdered his brother's Children, usurping the Crowne' (No. 24). In the ensuing prose colloquy 'the meetre' of the poem is, with reason, complained of, but its irregularity defended as suitable to Richard's character. The poem reappears in the editions of 1571, 1575, 1578, and 1815 (p. xxi, and ii. 381–95).

Francis was perhaps a member of the yeoman family of Seagar or Segar of Broad

Clyst, Devonshire, of whom a representative, JOHN SEAGAR (*d.* 1656), graduated B.A. from Wadham College, Oxford, in May 1617, and M.A. from St. Mary Hall in June 1620. He received the living of Broadclyst from his kinsman, William Seagar, the patron, in 1631, and died at Pitminster, Somerset, on 13 April 1656, having published 'The Discovery of the World to come' (London, 1650, 4to; a copy is in Dr. Williams's Library). He subscribed his name to 'The Joint Testimonie of the Ministers of Devon' (1648), and he may be the 'John Seager' who married Dorothy Snelling at Plympton St. Mary on 11 Nov. 1622 (VIVIAN, *Visit. of Devon*, p. 694; GARDINER, *Reg. of Wadham*, i. 26; OLIVER, *Eccles. Antiq.* i. 126; WOOD, *Athenæ Oxon.* ed. Bliss, iii. 276; FOSTER, *Alumni Oxon.*; note from the Rev. J. Ingle Dredge).

[Corser's Collectanea, pt. x. pp. 227–30; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. i. 544; Cat. of Brit. Mus. Library; Warton's Hist. of English Poetry, 1871, iv. 142, 166, 199.] R. B.

SEGAR, SIR WILLIAM (*d.* 1633), Garter king-of-arms, was, according to Anstis, son of Francis Segar, who, as it is said, was a prothonotary in Holland. His mother, Ann, was daughter of Richard Sherrard. He was bred a scrivener, and held some employment under Sir Thomas Heneage [q. v.], vice-chamberlain to Queen Elizabeth, and through the interest of that statesman he gained admittance to the College of Arms, being created Portcullis pursuivant at Derby House by George Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury, 10 June 1585. In that capacity he attended the splendid festival of St. George, kept at Utrecht, 23 April 1586, by the Earl of Leicester. On 4 Jan. 1588–9 he was made Somerset herald, and in 1593 he was created Norroy king-of-arms, though his patent is dated as late as 2 June 1602 (RYMER, *Fœdera*, xvi. 451).

In 1603 a bill passed under the signet for advancing Segar to the office of Garter king-of-arms, in succession to Sir William Dethick [q. v.], and upon this foundation, without the authority of the great seal, he, under the appellation of 'Rex Armorum Ordinis,' carried the insignia of the Garter to the king of Denmark. But Dethick, soon after this disseisin, was reinstated, and on 8 Sept. he was joined in a commission, by his proper style, to invest the Duke of Würtemberg. The circumstances of this investiture led to fresh censures of his conduct, and he was deposed from his office. Segar, being conscious of the invalidity of the former signet, procured a new one, and likewise a patent under the great seal in January 1606–7 constituting him Garter king-of-arms.

In 1612 he was sent with the insignia of the order to Maurice, prince of Orange, and on 5 Nov. 1616 he was knighted at Whitehall (METCALFE, *Book of Knights*, p. 168). In December 1616 he was imposed upon by Ralph Brooke, York herald, who by artifice procured him to attest and confirm armorial bearings to Gregory Brandon, the common hangman of London [see BRANDON, RICHARD]. Both Segar and Brooke were committed prisoners to the Marshalsea, but when the iniquitous business was unravelled Segar was restored to freedom, and on 5 April 1617 the king granted him an annual addition of 10*l.* to his stipend (RYMER, xvii. 5). On 16 Nov. 1618 he was appointed one of the special commissioners to inquire into the condition of Lincoln's Inn Fields (*ib.* p. 119). He was one of the eminent persons recommended by Edmond Bolton in 1624 to be members of the projected Academy Royal, or College and Senate of Honour (*Archæologia*, xxxii. 146); and in 1627 he was joined in a special commission, with Dudley, lord Carleton, to invest the Prince of Orange with the insignia of the order of the Garter (RYMER, xviii. 889). He died in December 1633, and was buried in the chancel of the church at Richmond, Surrey, on the 11th of that month.

He married, first, Helen or Eleanor, daughter of Sir — Somers of Kent, knight; and secondly, Mary, daughter of Robert Browne of Evington, Herefordshire. He had a large family.

His works are: 1. An account of the festival of St. George, kept at Utrecht by the Earl of Leicester, 1586; in Stow's 'Annales,' ed. Howes, 1615, p. 716. 2. 'The Booke of Honor and Armes. Wherein is discoursed the causes of Quarrell and the nature of Iniuries, with their Repulses' [anon.], London, 1590, 4to. 3. 'Armes of the Knightes of the Noble Order of the Garter' [1591] (cf. THORPE, *Catalogue of Ancient Manuscripts* for 1835, p. 148, where a detailed account is given of the contents of the work). 4. 'Honor, Military and Ciuil, contained in foure bookes,' London, 1602, fol., dedicated to the Queen. A portrait of the author, engraved by Francis Delaram, forms, in some copies, the frontispiece. Some chapters in this work are taken almost verbatim from the 'Booke of Honor and Armes.' The third book contains fifty-four curious and interesting chapters upon the subjects of jousts, tournaments, triumphs, and inaugurations of emperors, kings, and princes. Horace Walpole, earl of Orford, reprinted many of these chapters, at the Strawberry

Hill press, in a volume entitled 'Miscellaneous Antiquities,' 1772, 4to (cf. DALLAWAY, *Inquiries into the Origin and Progress of Heraldry*, p. 222). 5. Verses in praise of J. Guillim's 'Rudimentes of the Arte of Armorye,' circ. 1610, Addit. MS. 26680. 6. 'The Genealogie or Pedegree of . . . Captaine Sir William Cole of the Castell of Eneskillen,' 1630, compiled in collaboration with William Penson, Lancaster herald. This was privately printed [London ?], 1870, 4to, with additions under the certificates of Sir W. Betham and Sir J. Bernard Burke, Ulster kings-of-arms. 7. 'R. Jacobi I Delineatio Metrica,' being Latin verses addressed to James I and the Emperor Charles V, Royal MS. in British Museum, 12 G. ix. 8. 'Aspidora Segariana, or the Grants, Confirmations, &c. of Sir W. Segar,' Addit. MS. 12225: a copy collated by Simon Segar, his great-grandson. 9. 'The Earl Marshal his Office both in Peace and War. Set down by the Special Commandment from the King's Majesty's own Mouth,' printed in Guillim's 'Display of Heraldry,' ed. 1724, from the Ashmolean MS. 856, p. 431. 10. 'Pedigree of the Family of Weston, of Sutton Place, Surrey. Addit. MS. 31890. 11. 'The Arms and Descents of all the Kings of England from Egbert to Queen Elizabeth,' Addit. MS. 27438. 12. 'Baronagium Genealogicum: or the pedigrees of the English Peers, deduced from the earliest times . . . including as well collateral as lineal descents. Originally compiled . . . by Sir W. Segar, and continued to the present time by Joseph Edmondson,' 6 vols., London, 1764–84, fol. 13. 'Original Institvtions of the Princely Orders of Collars,' Edinburgh, 1823, 4to, privately printed from a fine manuscript on vellum, in the library of the Faculty of Advocates; dedicated to James I.

To him has been attributed the authorship of 'The Cities great Concern, in this Code or Question of Honour and Arms, whether Apprenteship extinguisheth Gentry?' 1675 (MOULE, *Bibl. Heraldica*, p. 194). The real author was Edmund Bolton [q. v.]

His great-grandson, SIMON SEGAR (*fl.* 1656–1712), son and heir of Thomas Segar of St. Giles-in-the-Fields, Middlesex, was admitted a member of Gray's Inn in 1656. On 14 June 1677 he was appointed collector of all the duties of the house, except commons due to the steward. In 1674 he was appointed second butler and library keeper, and in 1675 several sums of money were paid to him for 'setting up of the Readers' coates of armes in the Library' (DOUTHWAITE, *Gray's Inn: its History and Associations*, 1886, pp. 23, 178, 279). He published 'Honores Anglicani; or Titles of Honour the Temporal Nobility of the English Nation (quatenus such) have had, or do now enjoy,' London, 1712 and 1715, 8vo (MOULE, pp. 278, 279). He was also the author of 'A Table showing the number of gentlemen admitted into the society of Gray's Inn in each year from 1521 to 1674, with an alphabetical List of the Benchers and Treasurers and other matter directly drawn from authentic sources' (Harleian MS. 1912).

[Addit. MS. 34217 f. 2 *b*; Anstis's Order of the Garter, i. 398; Ashmole's Hist. of the Garter, Append. *n.*, lxxiv. pp, 418, 618; Bromley's Cat. of Engr. Portraits; Brydges's Censura Lit.; Letters of George, Lord Carew, to Sir Thomas Roe, pp. 72, 73; Dallaway's Inquiries, p. 122; Foster's Gray's Inn Admission Register, preface; Granger's Biogr. Hist. of England; Guillim's Display of Heraldry (1724), i. 56, 419; Harleian MSS. 1084, 1107 art. 21, 1301 art. 7; Lansdowne MS. 255, art. 65; Moule's Bibl. Herald, pp. 37, 52, 194, 279; Nichols's Progr. Eliz. iii. 41; Nicolas's Memoir of Augustine Vincent, p. 55; Notes and Queries, 3rd ser. xi. 430; Noble's College of Arms, pp. 172, 181, 186, 203, 202, 230, 293; Weever's Funeral Mon. p. 682.] T. C.

SEGRAVE, GILBERT DE (*d.* 1254), judge, was second son of Stephen de Segrave (*d.* 1241) [q. v.], by Rohesia, daughter of Thomas Despenser. His elder brother having died in their father's lifetime, he succeeded to the family estates in Leicestershire in 1241. Dugdale seems to have been in error in describing him as a canon of St. Paul's, for he does not appear in the lists. In 1231 Gilbert de Segrave had a grant of Kegworth in Leicestershire, and shortly after was made governor of Bolsover Castle. He was appointed justice of the forests south of the Trent in 1242 (*Rôles Gascons*, i. 104, &c.) and governor of Kenilworth Castle. In 1251 he was one of the justices to hear pleas in the city of London, but was not noticed as a judge after January 1252. In 1253 he accompanied the king to Gascony (*ib.* i. 2131, 2195, 2199, 2620). In January 1254 he was sent home by the king as one of his messengers to ask for money from the parliament (MATT. PARIS, v. 423). Afterwards he rejoined the king, and was in Gascony on 16 June, and at Bordeaux as late as 7 Sept. (*Rôles Gascons*, i. 3792, 4015). Very soon afterwards, having obtained a safe-conduct from Louis IX, he started home through Poitou in the company of John de Plessis, earl of Warwick [q. v.], and other nobles. The party was treacherously seized by the citizens of Pons in Poitou, where Segrave fell ill, and died in prison before 8 Oct. (cf. *ib.* i. 3487; *Ann.*

Mon. iii. 193). On 12 Oct. his wardships were granted to the king's son Edward (*ib.* iii. 194; *Rôles Gascons*, i. 3720). He married Amabilia, daughter and heiress of Robert de Chaucumb (*Excerpt. e Rot. Finium*, i. 462). By her he was father of Nicholas de Segrave, first baron Segrave [q. v.], and of Alice, wife of William Mauduit, earl of Warwick [q. v.] Matthew Paris (v. 463) describes him as 'vir nobilis ac dives et moribus adornatus.'

[Matthew Paris; Dunstable Annals ap. Annales Monastici, vol. iii.; Nichols's Hist. Leicestershire, iii. 409; Foss's Judges of England.]

C. L. K.

SEGRAVE, GILBERT DE (*d.* 1313?), theologian, was presumably a member of the baronial house of Segrave of Segrave, Leicestershire. He graduated as a doctor of theology and canon law at Oxford, and was on 6 Feb. 1297 made prebendary of Milton Ecclesia in the cathedral of Lincoln, and later archdeacon of Oxford. At the request of the pope, Thomas of Corbridge [q. v.], archbishop of York, gave him the sacristy of the chapel of St. Sepulchre at York. Edward I demanded the office for one of his own clerks, and on the death of Corbridge in 1304 Segrave was deprived of it. Probably in connection with this matter, Segrave in 1309 claimed forty marks from Corbridge's executors. He died at the Roman court, probably at Avignon, before 13 March 1313, on which date the pope appointed a Roman cardinal to his stall in Lincoln, and to the archdeaconry of Oxford, vacant by his death. Two works, 'Quæstiones Theologicæ' and 'Quodlibeta,' are ascribed to him. He is often confused with Gilbert de Segrave (*d.* 1316) [q. v.], bishop of London.

[T. Stubbs ap. Hist. of York, ii. 412 (Rolls Ser.); Leland's Comment. de Scriptt. p. 408, ed. Hall, and Bale's De Scriptt. Brit. Cent. xii. 97, taken from Leland, do not confuse the two Segraves, but Tanner's Bibl. Brit. p. 660, does confuse them, though giving full notes on both; Le Neve's Fasti, ii. 65, 187, ed. Hardy; Raine's Fasti Ebor. p. 356.]

W. H.

SEGRAVE, GILBERT DE (*d.* 1316), bishop of London, son of Nicholas de Segrave, first baron Segrave [q. v.], was in 1279, when he was a subdeacon, presented by his father to the living of Kegworth, Leicestershire. In 1282 John Peckham, archbishop of Canterbury, gave him the benefice of Harlaxton, Staffordshire. Having in 1291 received a dispensation for plurality of benefices, he was, in August 1292, instituted to the living of Aylestone, Leicestershire, and also held the rectory of Fen Stanton, Huntingdonshire. In 1302 he received the prebend of St. Martin's in Lincoln Cathedral (LE NEVE, i. 184), and probably later that of Portpoole in St. Paul's, London, of which church he was precentor in 1310. He was elected bishop of London on 17 Aug. 1313, received the temporalities on 28 Sept., and was consecrated on 25 Nov. at Canterbury by Henry Woodlock, bishop of Winchester, the see of Canterbury being then vacant. On 24 March 1314 he was enthroned in St. Paul's, and the same day laid the foundation-stones, as founder, of a new feretory for St. Erkenwald [q. v.] He began a visitation of his diocese, visiting St. Paul's in person on 18 April, and in May dedicated several altars in the church. He died on 18 Dec. 1316, and was buried on the 30th. By Tanner, who, however, gives materials for correcting his mistake, Fuller, Newcourt, Nicholls, Canon Raine, and others, he is confused with Gilbert de Segrave (*d.* 1313?) [q. v.], theologian; the reasons for rejecting their view will be gathered from a comparison of the lives of the two Gilberts.

[Ann. Londin. and Ann. Paulini ap. Chronicles of Edw. I and Edw. II, i. 230, 275, 280 (Rolls Ser.); Tanner's Bibl. Brit. p. 660; Le Neve's Fasti, ii. 184, 348, 426, ed. Hardy; Newcourt's Repertorium, i. 17; Nichols's Leicestershire, iii. 409, 856; Cal. Close Rolls, Edw. I and Edw. II, passim.]

W. H.

SEGRAVE, SIR HUGH (*d.* 1385?), treasurer of England, presumably connected with the baronial house of Segrave, extinct in the direct male line in 1353, was keeper of the castle of Brustwick, and of the forests of Kingswood and Filwood in Gloucestershire, under Queen Philippa. In these offices he, then being a knight, was confirmed by Edward III in 1369. He served in the French war, and in 1370 received 45*l.* 10*s.* 2*d.* as wages for himself and his retinue. In 1372 he was with others commissioned to treat with the Flemish. On 20 July 1377 he was appointed of the council of Richard II, and in 1380 was made steward of the king's household. He was employed in 1381 in negotiating the king's marriage with Anne of Bohemia. Being a personal friend of Thomas, abbot of St. Albans, who solicited his help, he did what he could for the abbey in the troubles brought upon it by the revolt of the commons. On 16 July he received the custody of the great seal, and kept it until the appointment of William Courtenay [q. v.], the archbishop, as chancellor on 10 Aug., on which day Segrave was made treasurer of the kingdom. He addressed the commons in parliament on 13 Nov., declaring the king's revocation of the charters of manumission. In that year he received from the king the

manor of Overhall in Essex, to hold by the service of making 'wafres,' and attendance on the coronation (Foss). He also held an estate in Kempston, Bedfordshire. Conjointly with two others he had the custody of the great seal for a few weeks from 11 July 1382. A new treasurer was appointed on 17 Jan. 1386, in which year Segrave was dead.

[Foss's Judges, iv. 86–7; Rymer's Fœdera, vol. iii. pt. ii. p. 932, iv. 10, 113, 119, 123, Abbrev. Rot. Orig. ii. 304, Litt. Pat. p. 203, Devon's Issue Roll of T. de Brantingham, p. 89, Inquis. post mortem, iii. 84 (these five Record Publ.); Cal. of Patent Rolls, 1377–81, ed. 1895, passim; Rot. Parl. iii. 99, Chron. Angliæ, p. 334, T. Walsingham, ii. 30, Gesta Abb. S. Albani, iii. 322, 345 (these three Rolls Ser.); Bishop Stubbs's Const. Hist. ii. 460–1, ed. 1875).] W. H.

SEGRAVE, JOHN DE (1256?–1325), baron, born about 1256, was the eldest son and heir of Nicholas de Segrave, first baron Segrave [q. v.], and of his wife Matilda. In 1270 he married Christiana, the daughter of Sir Hugh de Plessetis [see under PLESSIS or PLESSETIS, JOHN DE, EARL OF WARWICK], and his wife Margaret, from whom he received in frank marriage the manor of Stottesdon. At the same time his sister Annabel was married to Hugh's son John. After his father-in-law's death John de Segrave had custody of his lands during the minority of his heir (*Cal. Close Rolls*, 1307–13, p. 381). In 1277 and 1282 he served in the two great campaigns against Llywelyn of Wales (*Parl. Writs*, i. 831). In October 1287 he went to Ireland, nominating proctors to represent him for one year (*Cal. Patent Rolls*, 1281–92, p. 278). On 6 Aug. 1291 he received at Berwick letters of protection for one year on staying in Scotland on the king's service (*ib.* p. 440; *Hist. Doc. Scotl.* i. 218). He was afterwards constantly employed in the Scots wars. On the death of his father in 1295 John, then thirty-nine years of age, entered as heir into the possession of his property (*Calendarium Genealogicum*, p. 523). He was first summoned to the Bury parliament of November 1296 (*Parl. Writs*, i. 831), and was henceforth regularly summoned until his death.

On 14 Jan. 1297 Segrave was one of the magnates attending the Hilarytide parliament at York, with the intention of proceeding against the Scots (HEMINGBURGH, ii. 156). But home troubles supervened, and the expedition was postponed. Segrave now closely attached himself to one of the leaders of the baronial opposition. In 1297 Segrave made an indenture with Roger Bigod, fifth earl of Norfolk and marshal of England [q. v.], by which he covenanted to serve the earl, with five other knights, in war and in peace, for the rest of his life in England, Wales, and Scotland. He was to receive in war 40*s.* a day for himself and his company, including twenty horses, and in return he obtained a grant of the earl's manor of Lodene in Norfolk (DUGDALE, *Baronage*, p. 674). This intimate relation with the leader of the growing baronial opposition to Edward I determined Segrave's future policy. Nevertheless he was ordered to aid the sheriffs of Warwick and Leicester in coercing the recalcitrant clerks who followed Archbishop Winchelsea in refusing to aid in the national defence (*Cal. Patent Roll*, 1291–1301, p. 239). During the crisis of 1297 he was summoned on 1 July to appear in London to attend the king beyond sea, but he appeared as proxy for the earl marshal, who concealed his unwillingness to attend the king under the plea of sickness (*Fœdera*, i. 872). However, Segrave soon transferred his energy to Scotland. On 28 Dec. 1297 he received letters of protection for himself and his followers, on their proceeding to Scotland on the king's service (GOUGH, *Scotland in 1298*, pp. 17, 18, 25), and he subsequently fought in the Falkirk campaign. In 1299 he was again summoned to fight against the Scots. In 1300 he was once more in Scotland, taking a conspicuous part at the siege of Carlaverock, representing the earl marshal in this campaign as at the musters of 1297 (*Siege of Carlaverock*, p. 12; cf. LANGTOFT, ii. 322).

In 1301 Segrave attended the parliament at Lincoln, and was one of the signatories of the famous letter of the barons to the pope, dated 12 Feb. He is described as 'John, lord of Segrave' (*Fœdera*, i. 927). On 5 Aug. 1302 he was appointed to the custody of the castle of Berwick-on-Tweed (*Hist. Doc. Scotl.* ii. 444). On 29 Sept. he was ordered to execute in all haste a foray into Scotland as far as Stirling and Kirkintilloch (*ib.* ii. 448). After November the truce with the Scots ended, and Segrave was entrusted with the custody of Scotland (RISHANGER, *Chron.* pp. 212–13). On the first Sunday in Lent 1303 Segrave, his followers being at the time scattered in three detachments, was suddenly attacked when near Edinburgh by some Scots in ambush, severely wounded, and taken prisoner with twenty other knights. He was, however, subsequently recaptured by the other portions of his army who had escaped the earlier surprise (RISHANGER, p. 214; cf. HEMINGBURGH, ii. 222–3; LANGTOFT, ii. 344). Segrave continued in Scotland after Edward I arrived to prosecute the war in person. He was present at the siege of Stir-

ling, which surrendered on 24 July 1304, and, upon the final departure of Edward, was appointed justice and captain in Scotland south of the Forth. Serious resistance to Edward now seemed over, and Segrave's main business was to administer the conquered districts, and to track out William Wallace, who still held out. In March 1304 Segrave defeated Wallace in one of his last attempts at resistance (*Wallace Papers*, pp. 179–80, Maitland Club). Next summer Wallace was handed over to Segrave, who personally escorted his prisoner to London, reaching the city on 22 Aug. 1305. Before this Edward had on 18 Aug. put Segrave at the head of the special commission appointed to try Wallace (*ib.* p. 185; cf. *Ann. Londin.* p. 139). He remained responsible for Wallace's custody during his imprisonment in London, and on 23 Aug. pronounced the sentence of treason against him. After Wallace's death Segrave took his remains back to Scotland, receiving 15*s.* as the cost of their carriage (*Hist. Doc. Scotl.* ii. 485). On 25 Oct. he received five hundred marks of salary from Hilarytide to 1 Aug. 1305 (*ib.* ii. 483). It looks as if this were regarded as the date of his ceasing to act as warden of Scotland. In 1306 he was again summoned to Carlisle to share in Edward I's first expedition against the Scots.

Under Edward II Segrave received numerous offices. In the early months of the new reign he became justice of the forests beyond Trent, and constable of Nottingham Castle. On 10 March 1309 he was appointed warden of Scotland, with a following of sixty men at arms (*Fœdera*, ii. 70), and on 10 April 1310 the appointment was renewed (*ib.* ii. 106). As Scotland was now rapidly falling into the hands of Robert Bruce, Segrave's work was rather to preserve the English frontier than to govern a country that had almost entirely rejected Edward II's authority. He is in fact described by a border chronicler as warden of the marches on the side of Berwick (*Chron. de Lanercost*, p. 213). But a continued truce from November 1309 to the summer of 1310 restricted Segrave's efforts. He adhered to the barons during the struggle against Gaveston, and as a result his offices of constable of Nottingham and justice of the forests beyond Trent were on 1 Oct. 1310 transferred by the king to Gaveston himself. Both grants were renewed to Gaveston two months before his execution, but such forms are not likely to have really displaced Segrave in favour of the king's friend. On 4 Sept. 1312, soon after Gaveston's death, Segrave received the office of keeper of the forests on this side Trent (*Cal. Close Rolls*, 1313–18, p. 401). In 1314 he took part in the great expedition against Scotland, and on 24 June fought at Bannockburn. After the English defeat he fled towards Carlisle, and took refuge with others in the castle of Bothwell; but the sheriff, who held the castle, deserted from Edward to Robert Bruce, and handed over the fugitives as prisoners (*Chron. de Lanercost*, p. 228; cf. Monk of Malmesbury, p. 206; G. le Baker, pp. 8, 171). Segrave was kept in Scotland until the end of the year, when he was released in exchange for some Scottish prisoners and on payment of a large ransom (*Lanercost*, p. 228; *Fœdera*, ii. 257). His son Stephen arranged the conditions of the exchange. He still held his keepership and the custody of Nottingham Castle, to which the charge of Derby Castle was now added. In 1315 commissioners were appointed to hear and determine certain disputes arising from his taking up carriages in virtue of that office (*Rot. Parl.* i. 325). On 14 July 1316 he received a grant of 1,000*l.* in aid of his ransom from the Scots and for other losses in the king's service, sums due to the crown being deducted from the gross sum (*Cal. Close Rolls*, 1313–18, p. 351). He was one of the continual council, appointed at the reconciliation between Edward II and Lancaster in 1318, to be perpetually about the king (*Cal. Close Rolls*, 1318–23, p. 112). On 30 Nov. 1321 he was one of those ordered to raise the local levies on the king's behalf in the shires of Warwick, Leicester, and Stafford (*ib.* p. 507).

On 16 July 1324 Segrave was appointed, with Fulk FitzWarin, captain of the troops going to Gascony, serving under Edmund of Woodstock, earl of Kent [q. v.] (*Fœdera*, ii. 561–2). Next year he died in Aquitaine, being nearly seventy years old. His eldest son, Stephen de Segrave, had died a little before him. His second son, John, described as early as 1312 as John de Segrave the younger, and very liable to be confused with his father in the later years of his life, married Juliana, daughter and heiress of John de Sandwich, lord of Folkestone, and died in 1349, leaving an infant daughter and heiress named Mary. John the elder was succeeded in his title and estates by his grandson John, son of Stephen, who served in Edward III's French wars, and by his marriage to Margaret, daughter and heiress of Thomas of Brotherton, earl of Norfolk [q. v.], the youngest son of Edward I, further increased the great position of his family. John died in 1353, leaving an only daughter Elizabeth, whose marriage to John III de Mowbray [q. v.] brought the Norfolk estates

into a family in whose favour the Earl of Norfolk's title was soon revived. Margaret, John's widow, soon afterwards married Sir Walter de Manny [q. v.] This John was the last of the Segraves summoned to parliament.

The extent of the Segrave territories and influence became much widened during John's lifetime. His father's estates were almost confined to two or three of the central midland counties, but John also acquired territory in Norfolk, Oxfordshire, Huntingdonshire, and other distant shires. In 1300 he obtained charters of free warren for his demesne lands at North Newenton, Oxfordshire, and Lodene, Norfolk, and a little later for those at Almondbury, Huntingdonshire. In 1301 he had license to crenellate his house at Bretby, Derbyshire (*Cal. Pat. Rolls*, 1292–1301, p. 580). In 1306 he had license to fortify his manor-house at Caludon, Warwickshire, with a moat and embattelled wall, and licenses for a weekly market and fairs in 1316 at Fenny-Stanton, Hampshire, and in 1319 at Alspath, Warwickshire.

[Rymer's Fœdera, vols. i. and ii.; Parl. Writs; Historical Documents relating to Scotland; Calendarium Genealogicum; Calendars of Close and Patent Rolls of Edward I and Edward II; Nicolas's Siege of Carlaverock, p. 12, with a short biography, pp. 126–9; Dugdale's Baronage, i. 674–5; Gough's Scotland in 1298; Rishanger's Chron., Peter Langtoft's Chron., Monk of Malmesbury, and Annales Londinenses in Stubbs's Chron. of Edward I and Edward II, all in Rolls Ser.; Walter Hemingburgh (Engl. Hist. Soc.); Chron. de Lanercost and Wallace Papers (Maitland Club); Geoffrey le Baker's Chron. ed. E. M. Thompson.] T. F. T.

SEGRAVE, NICHOLAS DE, first BARON SEGRAVE (1238?–1295), born about 1238, was the son of Gilbert de Segrave (*d.* 1254) [q. v.], the judge, and of his wife Amabilia or Annabel, daughter and heiress of Robert de Chaucumb. His grandfather was the justiciar Stephen de Segrave (*d.* 1241) [q. v.] His father died in prison at Pons in Saintonge, and the custody of the captive's lands, though his wife survived, had been granted in 1254 to Edward, the king's son (*Dunstable Annals*, p. 194). Nicholas was then either sixteen or seventeen years old (*Calendarium Genealogicum*, p. 65). He came of age about the time when the troubles between Henry III and his barons culminated in the Oxford parliament of 1258. A great Leicestershire landholder, he naturally attached himself to Simon de Montfort, and he is specially mentioned among the 'juniores pueri Angliæ' who were like wax in the hands of the rebel leaders (WYKES, pp. 133–4). He was at the parliament in 1262, when the king told the barons that he had obtained absolution from his oath to observe the provisions of Oxford (HEMINGBURGH, i. 308). He was summoned to attend the king on 1 Aug. 1263 at Worcester, and there to receive knighthood before engaging in the campaign against the Welsh. But he was by that time in active revolt against the king (*Dunstable Annals*, p. 222). He took part in the spoiling of Peter of Aigueblanche [q. v.], the Savoyard bishop of Hereford (WYKES, p. 134). He shared in the excommunication brought against his party by Archbishop Boniface. On 13 Dec. 1263 he was among the barons who agreed in referring their disputes to the arbitration of St. Louis (STUBBS, *Select Charters*, p. 407). When, after the repudiation of St. Louis' award, fresh war broke out between the barons and the king, Segrave took a leading part in defending Northampton against Henry. He was one of the few who managed to escape from the great destruction that followed when Henry captured that town. He fled thence to London, whence he took part in the siege of Rochester. At the Londoners' request he was made the captain of those citizens who joined Montfort's army in Sussex, and, fighting with them on the left flank of Simon's army at the battle of Lewes in 1264, shared their disgraceful rout at the hands of Edward (HEMINGBURGH, i. 315; RISHANGER, *Chron.* p. 27). On the ensuing triumph of his party, Segrave was one of those summoned to Montfort's famous parliament in January 1265. On 4 Aug. 1265 he fought at Evesham, where he was wounded and taken prisoner (*Flores Hist.* iii. 6; *London Annals*, p. 69; *Waverley Annals*, p. 365). On 26 Oct. 1265 the king granted all his lands to Edmund, the future Earl of Lancaster (*Fœdera*, i. 465). This associated Segrave with the most desperate of the 'disinherited,' and he was one of the band of fugitives who still held out in 1267 in the isle of Ely, and was excommunicated by the papal legate. His depredations included the plunder of some merchants of Toulouse (*Royal Letters*, ii. 323). When Gilbert of Clare, earl of Gloucester [q. v.], revolted against the king and occupied London, Segrave, with other refugees, escaped from the Isle of Ely, and on 11 April was admitted into Southwark, whereupon the legate in the Tower put the Southwark churches under interdict and renewed his excommunication of Segrave and his companions (*London Annals*, p. 77). It is not clear whether Nicholas returned to Ely, or reconciled himself to the king at the same time as Gloucester. Anyhow, he was re-

garded as responsible for the final capture of Ely. One story makes his mother, whose second husband, Roger de Somery, was an active royalist, betray the path to the rebel camp at Ely to Edward, the king's son (*Dunstable Annals*, p. 246). Wykes (pp. 207–8) says, however, that Nicholas himself betrayed the island to Edward, and did not attempt to defend the post where he was stationed. In any case, Nicholas's surrender was included with that of the defenders of the island and received the same terms, getting back his estates on condition of paying the composition stipulated by the 'Dictum de Kenilworth.' He received authorisation to levy a special aid on his tenants to raise the fine, and Geoffrey of Genville became surety for his future conduct. He soon obtained the complete confidence of Edward, and, taking the cross within four years, he received letters of protection on his starting for Palestine in the train of his former enemy.

Segrave continued in Edward's favour after his accession to the throne. He took part in the campaigns of 1277 and 1282 against Llywelyn of Wales (*Parl. Writs*, i. 832). He was summoned to the Shrewsbury parliament of August 1283 (*ib.*) In 1877 the House of Lords referred the creation of the Segrave barony to this writ of summons (G. E. C. *Complete Peerage*, v. 411). In January 1285 he appears as engaged jointly with Richard de Burgh, earl of Ulster, in selling large amounts of Irish wool to merchants from Lucca (*Cal. Doc.* Ireland, 1285–92, p. 17). On 2 Jan. he nominated attorneys to represent him until Easter during his absence beyond sea (*Cal. Patent Rolls*, 1281–92, p. 149). This may refer to a visit to Ireland, but more probably to Segrave's intention of attending the king on a projected voyage to France that was soon afterwards abandoned. On 1 July Segrave again had letters of protection as about to go beyond sea (*ib.* p. 181). On 24 Oct. 1287 he took out letters of attorney for one year, being about to proceed by license to Ireland (*ib.* p. 191; *Cal. Doc.* Ireland, p. 160). On 18 May 1288 he received grants of the custody of the lands of William de Ferrars during his minority, paying a fine of one hundred marks for the privilege (*Cal. Patent Rolls*, p. 295). In September 1290 he acted as commissioner of oyer and terminer in Lincolnshire and Nottinghamshire (*ib.* pp. 466–7), and again in 1291 in Warwickshire (*ib.* p. 455). In April 1292 he received letters of protection on going to Scotland in the king's service (*ib.* p. 484). He was one of the judges of the great suit as to the Scottish succession ('Ann. Regni Scotiæ' in RISHANGER's *Chron.* pp. 256–260). The Nicholas de Segrave who in 1290 and subsequently was guardian of Ayr and Dumbarton castles (*Cal. Doc.* Scotland, i. 207, 277) is probably Nicholas's son, from whom he is now commonly distinguished by being called Nicholas de Segrave senior. In July 1292 Segrave was appointed commissioner to hear plaints against the king's bailiffs in the Isle of Man (*Cal. Patent Rolls*, p. 519). He obtained a charter of free warren for all his demesne lands situated in the counties of Warwick, Derby, Huntingdon, Northampton, and Leicester, in which latter county his influence seems to have mainly centred. He got a charter to hold a fair and market at Mount Sorrel in Leicestershire. He remained at court until the very end of his life, attesting charters so late as 25 Nov. 1294 (*Cal. Doc.* Ireland, 1293–1301, p. 83). He died late in 1295, being summoned to parliament in the August of that year, and in November to foreign service (*Parl. Writs*, i. 832).

Nicholas de Segrave was the first of his house to relinquish its lawyer traditions, and taught his children 'to imitate the brave and associate with the nobles' (NICOLAS, *Siege of Carlaverock*, p. 12). He abandoned the old arms of his family, and took the arms, sable, a lion rampant, argent, described in the chronicle of the siege (*ib.* p. 125; cf. NICHOLS, *Leicestershire*, iii. 407). By his wife Matilda de Lucy (*d.* 1337) he left five sons, all described as 'valiant, bold, and courageous knights' (*Siege of Carlaverock*, p. 12; cf. BLAAUW, *Barons Wars*, p. 176, and the pedigree in NICHOLS's *Leicestershire*, iii. 413, where the names are rather differently given). Three of these, Gilbert de Segrave (*d.* 1316), John de Segrave, and Nicholas de Segrave, lord of Stowe, are separately noticed. The others included Simon, who was imprisoned in 1307, and Henry and Geoffrey, both of whom were alive and of full age in the same year. There was also a daughter Annabel, who married John de Plessetis.

[Annales of Dunstaple, Waverley, and Worcester, and Chronicle of Wykes in Annales Monastici, vols. iii. and iv., Flores Historiarum, Ann. London. in Stubbs's Chron. of Edward I and Edward II, all in Rolls Ser.; Calendarium Genealogicum, Parl Writs, vol. i., Rymer's Fœdera, vol. i., all in Record Commission; Stubbs's Select Charters; Calendar of Documents relating to Ireland, 1285–92; Calendar of Patent Rolls, 1285–92; Blaauw's Barons' Wars; Dugdale's Baronage, i. 673–4; Nicolas's Siege of Carlaverock.] T. F. T.

SEGRAVE, NICHOLAS DE, LORD OF STOWE (*d.* 1322), was the second son of Nicholas de Segrave, first baron Segrave [q. v.], and his wife Matilda de Lucy. He was born later than 1256, the probable birth year of his elder brother, John de Segrave, second baron Segrave [q. v.] He became active in the service of Edward I during the later years of his father's lifetime, though it is not always easy to distinguish his acts from those of his father. It is probably the younger Nicholas who appears in 1291 as warden of the castles of Dumbarton and Ayr, and as receiving fifteen shillings a day for his expenses in that capacity, besides other sums for stores and strengthening their defences (*Cal. Doc. Scotl.* ii. 547). He remained castellan of these fortresses at least until May 1292 (*ib.* ii. 302). At the end of his father's life Nicholas was summoned to the parliament of 1 Aug. 1295 as 'Nicholas de Segrave, junior' (*Parl. Writs*, i. 832–3). Henceforth Nicholas was regularly summoned to parliament until 25 May 1321. It is curious that his elder brother received no summons before 26 Aug. 1296. Meanwhile Nicholas continued to be occupied in the Scottish wars. In 1298 he fought at Falkirk, bearing the new arms adopted by his father, with a label gules by way of distinction ('Falkirk Roll of Arms' in GOUGH'S *Scotland in 1298*, p. 133). In June 1300 he was at the siege of Carlaverock, attending in the train of Humphrey de Bohun, earl of Hereford, the constable of England (NICOLAS, *Siege of Carlaverock*, p. 12). He acted on this occasion as the deputy of the constable (*Hist. Doc. Scotl.* ii. 415). In 1301 he attended the parliament at Lincoln, and signed the letter of the barons of 12 Feb. to the pope, as 'Nicholas de Segrave, lord of Stowe' (*Fœdera*, i. 927).

Segrave took part in the campaigns of 1303 and 1304 which secured the temporary subjugation of Scotland to Edward I. While in the field with the king a violent quarrel broke out between Segrave and Sir John de Cromwell, who accused each other of grave offences. Segrave challenged Cromwell to trial by battle, but Edward refused to allow his nobles to fight with each other instead of with the Scots. Segrave then challenged Cromwell to fight in France, and withdrew from the army in the midst of the campaign to wage his private battle. The warden of the Cinque ports vainly attempted to prevent him crossing the Channel, but Cromwell does not appear to have followed him, and Segrave soon returned to Dover. There the warden of the Cinque ports arrested him as he was staying in the house of Nicholas the archer. Twenty-one 'barons' of Dover combined in rescuing Segrave, who now got safely back to his home at Stowe. But Edward I had returned from Scotland, and on 21 Jan. 1305 ordered the sheriff of Northamptonshire to summon him to the forthcoming parliament at Westminster, to abide by the king's judgment. On 28 Feb. parliament met, and Segrave duly appeared and made his submission. He was sent to the Tower, and pronounced by the magnates as worthy of death. Sentence was perhaps passed, but the lords interceded for him, declaring that he had left the realm for no treasonable purpose, but to meet his accusers. He was soon pardoned on condition of seven sureties being found for his going to prison and surrendering his goods if called upon. On 29 March the manucaptors gave their undertaking on his behalf. Segrave was at once restored to favour, and took part in Edward's last campaign against Robert Bruce (*Rot. Parl.* i. 171, 172–4, 181, and *Flores Hist.* iii. 121–2, give full and substantially harmonious accounts of the trial).

Under Edward II, Nicholas de Segrave was in high favour. Unlike his brother John, Nicholas adhered to Edward II in his early troubles with his barons. He was one of the four great personages who alone heartily supported Piers Gaveston (*Chron. de Lanercost*, p. 212). Accordingly he figures among the bad counsellors that Edward promised to remove at the parliament of Northampton in August 1308 (*Ann. Paulini*, p. 264). Segrave, however, soon reappeared at court. He was one of the barons who signed the letter of 6 Aug. 1309 to the pope (*Ann. Londin.* p. 162). In the same year he became governor of Northampton Castle, and on 12 March marshal of England (*Fœdera*, ii. 38). The office of marshal was vacant by the death of Roger Bigod, the last earl of Norfolk and marshal of his house. But William Marshal, a peer of parliament, and a collateral representative of the great Marshal family, claimed the office as devolving on him by hereditary right, and so fierce was the strife between the two claimants that on 20 July 1311 they were both forbidden to attend parliament with arms (*ib.* ii. 140). In 1310 Segrave was again engaged in Scotland, and had license to convert his manor-house of Barton Segrave, Northamptonshire, into a castle. On 20 Sept. 1312 Segrave with his old enemy, John Cromwell, and others visited the Londoners at the Guildhall, and asked for security from the citizens for fulfilling their promises to the king (*ib.* p. 215). The death of William

Marshal at Bannockburn deprived him of a rival, and in 1316 the marshalship was definitively granted to Thomas of Brotherton [q.v.], the king's brother. Before long Segrave resented Edward's policy, and attached himself closely to Thomas, earl of Lancaster [see THOMAS, 1278?–1322]. In 1317 Edward issued orders for his apprehension, which were, however, cancelled on 24 Sept. (*Cal. Close Rolls*, 1313–18, p. 569). In 1318 he was serving under Thomas of Lancaster against the Scots. In October 1320 he appeared at the Westminster parliament as one of Earl Thomas's proxies (*Ann. Paulini*, p. 290). He died in 1322.

Segrave married Alice, daughter of Geoffrey of Armenters, who had previously married Gerard Lisle. This union brought to Nicholas the manor of Stowe. The only child of the marriage was a daughter Matilda, who married Edmund de Bohun, a kinsman and political supporter of the Earl of Hereford (*Rot. Parl.* i. 410). She was thirty years old at her father's death. The barony thus became extinct, and Stowe passed to Alice's son by her former marriage (BAKER, *Northamptonshire*, i. 441).

In the poem on the siege of Carlaverock, Segrave is described as one 'whom nature had adorned in body and enriched in heart.' The 'Flores Historiarum' (iii. 121) describes him as 'unus de præstantioribus regni.' His power centred in Northamptonshire, where he had his main seat at Stowe 'of the nine churches' near Daventry, and at his new castle of Barton Segrave. He also owned the manor of Weston in the same county, and the manors of Haydon, Essex, and Peasenhall, Suffolk, about which last he had a long suit with Alice, widow of Earl Roger Bigod (*Cal. Close Rolls*, 1307–13, pp. 152, 282, 504–5). Thomas de Flore, the executor of his will, had not wound up the business of his estate so late as 1329 (*Cal. Close Rolls*, 1327–30, p. 572).

[Rolls of Parliament, vol. i.; Rymer's Fœdera, vols. i. and ii.; Parliamentary Writs; Flores Historiarum, vol. iii.; Ann. Londin. and Ann. Paulini in Stubbs's Chronicle of Edward I and Edward II, both in Rolls Ser.; Hist. Documents relating to Scotland; Calendars of Close and Patent Rolls, Edward I and Edward II; Chronicle of Lanercost (Maitland Club); Nicolas's Siege of Carlaverock, p. 11, with a short biography, pp. 122–5; Dugdale's Baronage, i. 675; Gough's Scotland in 1298; Baker's Northamptonshire, vol. i.] T. F. T.

SEGRAVE or **SEDGRAVE, STEPHEN DE** (*d.* 1241), chief justiciar, was son of Gilbert de Segrave, called also Gilbert, son of Hereward, who in 1166 held Segrave in Leicestershire as a fourth part of a knight's fee, under William, earl of Warwick. He took orders, but from a clerk became a knight. In 1201 he was sued as unjustly occupying a virgate of land in Segrave that had belonged to Thomas FitzGilbert, evidently his brother, then an outlaw. He was made constable of the Tower of London, with a salary of 50*l.*, in 1203, and was fortifying it at the king's cost in 1221. Out of regard for Hugh le Despenser, Segrave's brother-in-law, John in 1208 remitted half a debt of 112 marks that, as his father's heir, he owed the crown. Remaining faithful to the king, he received from him in 1215 the lands of Stephen de Gaunt in Lincolnshire and Leicestershire, and in 1216 the manor of Kineton in Warwickshire in fee, at a yearly rent. After the accession of Henry III his importance and offices rapidly increased. From 1217 onwards he was prominent as a judge, sitting at Westminster in 1218 and later, and being constantly employed as a justice itinerant, as in Bedfordshire in 1217–18, in Warwickshire and Leicestershire in 1220, in Nottinghamshire, Bedfordshire, and Derbyshire in 1226–7, and in Yorkshire in 1231. In 1219 he was sent on the king's business to the legate, receiving payment for his expenses. He was given the custody of Sauvey Castle, Leicestershire, in 1220, in which year he received a grant from the king of the manor of Alconbury in Huntingdonshire. He was sheriff of Essex and Hertfordshire from 1221 to 1223, and of Lincolnshire from 1222 to 1224. From 1228 to 1234 he was sheriff of Buckinghamshire and Bedfordshire, and from 1229 to 1234 of Warwickshire, Leicestershire, and Northamptonshire. His wealth increased, and he bought lands. In 1229 he made a simoniacal bargain with the pope's envoy Stephen, with reference to tithes. He was then one of the king's chief councillors, and on Henry's departure for Brittany in 1230 was left one of the justiciaries of the kingdom [see under NEVILLE, RALPH, *d.* 1244]. In 1232 he bought the profits, other than the ferms paid into the exchequer, of the counties of Bedford, Buckingham, Warwick, and Leicester for life. On the fall of Hubert de Burgh [q.v.] in that year, the king on 29 July appointed Segrave chief justiciar, though he was only styled a knight (MATT. PARIS, iii. 220), and gave him the custody of the castles of Dover, Rochester, Canterbury, Windsor, Odiham, Hertford, and Colchester. He was violently hostile to Hubert, and pressed the king to imprison him, and even to put him to death as a traitor.

Segrave as chief justiciar gave his full support to the system of administration by

foreigners carried out by Peter des Roches, the king's favourite [q.v.], and in conjunction with him counselled Henry to withstand Richard Marshal, third earl of Pembroke [q.v.], Gilbert Basset [q.v.], and other lords who in 1233 were associated against the government. The bishops in October threatened to excommunicate him and others of the party by name for giving the king evil counsel, but finally pronounced only a general sentence against those who turned the king's heart against his natural born subjects. He accompanied the king's army to Grosmont in November, and lost his baggage when Marshal's adherents surprised the royal camp. The king having made an offer to Marshal in December, provided that he would surrender to his mercy, Segrave took means that the earl should be informed that he advised him to do so. In the first days of 1234 Richard Siward, at the head of a company of outlaws, ravaged Segrave's native place, evidently Segrave, burnt his fine houses, oxen, and stores of grain, and carried off many valuable horses and rich spoil. Later the same band ravaged Alconbury, and burnt his buildings there. He was much hated, and it was believed that he was concerned in the treachery by which Richard Marshal lost his life in April. When in May the king was reconciled to his lords, Segrave was dismissed from his offices, and on 14 June was deprived of five of his manors, and was called upon to give an account of his receipts and expenditure. He took shelter in the abbey of St. Mary des Prés, near Leicester, where it is said that he resumed the clerical office; but this doubtless is a sarcasm. On 14 July he appeared before the king at Westminster, under the protection of the archbishop of Canterbury. Henry called him a foul traitor for having evilly advised him against Hubert de Burgh and his other lords, and demanded his accounts, but, at the archbishop's request, gave him until Michaelmas to make them up. He is said to have attempted to excuse himself by laying the blame on Peter des Roches and Walter Mauclerk [q. v.] In February 1235 he paid a fine of one thousand marks to be reconciled with the king, but was not then taken back into favour as he had hoped. In June 1236 he was fully restored to favour, and in 1237 was reconciled by the legate Otho to the lords whom he had offended. He was appointed justice of Chester (Dugdale). Henry seems to have again made him one of his trusted counsellors, and it was perhaps because he was on specially confidential terms with the king that, in common with Richard of Cornwall and the queen, he was exempted by name from the excommunication pronounced by the archbishop of Canterbury in 1239 against certain of the king's advisers, though it is possible that his conduct had become less obnoxious than formerly. Before his death he entered the Augustinian abbey of St. Mary des Prés, where he died after making a just will, and devoutly receiving the sacrament, on 9 Nov. 1241 (Matt. Paris, iv. 169). As his lands were taken into the king's hands on 13 Oct., it has been supposed that he must have died before that date (*Excerpt. Rot. Fin.* i. 356); but it seems possible that he may have vacated his lands on taking the habit of a canon in the abbey, so that the date given by Paris may be exactly correct. Paris says that he was easily led by others, that he owed his rise from a humble station to great wealth and high office to his own exertions, that he cared more for his own interest than the public good, but that he did some things that merited the happy end of life that he made. He was a benefactor to the abbey of St. Mary des Prés, and to the priory of Stoneleigh, and the Cistercian abbey of Combe, both in Warwickshire. His shield, as given by Paris, was blazoned sable, three garbs or, banded gules. He married, first, Rohesia, daughter of Thomas and sister of Hugh le Despenser [see under Despenser, Hugh le, *d.* 1265]; and, secondly, Ida, also called Ela, sister of Henry Hastings, who in 1247 was fined 500*l.* for a second marriage with Hugh Pecche (*Rot. Fin.* ii. 6, 17). He had three sons, the eldest, John, who married Emma, daughter and heiress of Roger de Caux, and died in 1231; Gilbert (*d.* 1254) [q. v.], who succeeded him; and Stephen, and a daughter Eleanor. In Segrave's time was compiled the 'Red Book' of the lordship of Segrave, much used by Nichols, and now in the British Museum.

[Lives of Segrave are given by Dugdale, Baronage, i. 671–2; Nichols's Hist. of Leicestershire, iii. 407, with many notices in other places, and Foss's Judges, ii. 468–72. Many notices are in Rot. Litt. Claus., Rot. Litt. Pat., and Excerpt. e Rot. Fin. (Record publ. and as quoted by Dugdale and others from MSS.) Much will be found about him in Rog. Wend. (Engl. Hist. Soc.), Matt. Paris, and the Ann. Monast., and some notices in Royal Letters Hen. III (these three Rolls Ser.)] W. H.

SEGRAVE, STEPHEN de (*d.* 1333), archbishop of Armagh, was a member of the important Leicestershire house of Segrave. Adopting the ecclesiastical career, he studied at Cambridge, and served as chancellor of the university between 1303 and 1306 (Le Neve, *Fasti Eccl. Angl.* ed. Hardy, iii. 597). He ultimately became doctor of canon law (*Fœdera*, ii. 66), and a clerk in the royal household (*ib.*)

His court and family connections brought him ample preferment. From 1300 to 1318 he was rector of Stowe, Northamptonshire, the chief seat of his kinsman, Nicholas de Segrave (*d.* 1322) [q. v.] Before 1309 he also held the rectory of Aylestone, near Leicester, a place that was also within the sphere of the family interest (*Calendar of Papal Letters*, ii. 68). The position of his kinsman, John de Segrave [q. v.], as warden of Scotland for Edward I and Edward II probably secured for Stephen substantial preferment in that country, though he secured the promise rather than the enjoyment of the Scottish revenues. Before 1309 he was made dean of Glasgow and canon of Dunkeld (*ib.*) Robert Wishart [q. v.], bishop of Glasgow, was one of the heads of resistance to the English. Accordingly on 10 Jan. 1309 Edward II besought Clement V and the cardinals to remove Wishart from his bishopric, and appoint Segrave in his place, describing him as his 'familiar clerk, of noble birth and sound morals' (*Fœdera*, ii. 66). Segrave did not secure even the nominal position of bishop of Glasgow, but on 27 Dec. of the same year he received license from the pope to hold two more benefices in plurality, as his present preferment had been reduced in value by reason of the war between the English and the Scots (*Cal. Papal Letters*, ii. 68). The success of Robert Bruce must soon have deprived Segrave of all hope of Scottish bishoprics or deaneries. He was forced to borrow largely, owing in 1310 80*l.* to one London citizen, and in 1311 60*l.* to another (*Cal. of Close Rolls*, 1307–13, pp. 330, 445). On 29 Jan. 1315 he was appointed archdeacon of Essex by Edward II (Le Neve, ii. 334). He also held the living of Stepney, near London (Murimuth, p. 28, Rolls Ser.) Before 1319 he was canon of St. Paul's, London, and had resigned his archdeaconry (Newcourt, *Repertorium Eccl. Londin.* i. 71). He had a controversy with Robert Baldock, bishop of London, with regard to his rights over the manor of Drayton (*ib.*) Before April 1318 he was also canon of Lincoln (*Cal. Papal Letters*, ii. 172). On 16 March 1323 he was appointed by provision of John XXII, archbishop of Armagh (*ib.* ii. 229), the see being vacant by the resignation of Roland, the previous archbishop, who had shirked a papal inquiry into his irregularities, crimes, and non-residence. His consecration was postponed by the pope for a year. On 31 July 1323 he received restitution of his temporalities as archbishop-elect (*Fœdera*, ii. 529). On 28 April 1324 he was ordered by the pope to leave Avignon, and devote himself to the government of his diocese. He had already been consecrated bishop by Raynaldus, bishop of Ostia (*Cal. Papal Letters*, ii. 239; Theiner, *Vetera Monumenta Scot. et Hib. Hist. Illustrantia*, p. 228). A little before this there had been a rumour in England that Segrave had resigned his archbishopric to the pope, retaining only the honour of the bishop's office, without its duties or emoluments (*Literæ Cantuar.* i. 108, Rolls Ser.) In 1325 he was in Ireland (Theiner, *Vetera Monumenta*, pp. 229–30). In July 1328 Segrave went to the papal curia, receiving a commendation from Edward II to the pope (*Fœdera*, ii. 746), along with permission to cross the sea from Dover with his horses and equipment (*Cal. Close Rolls*, 1327–36, p. 403). On 15 Oct. 1330 he received permission from the pope to hold benefices worth 100*l.* a year *in commendam* (*Cal. Papal Letters*, ii. 337). He spent little time in Ireland, but several letters of John XXII to him on points connected with the administration of his see are in Theiner's 'Vetera Monumenta.' Segrave died in England on 27 Oct. 1333 (Ware, *On the Bishops of Armagh*, p. 14; Theiner, p. 263).

[Authorities cited in the text.] T. F. T.

SEGUARDE, JOHN (*fl.* 1414), rhetorician and poet, was the son of a knight of Norwich, and became master of the old grammar school of Norwich. He reproved the profanity of monks and priests, and the abuse of poetry by those who wrote lascivious verses and rhymes. He was consequently deprived. He himself bore a high reputation as a rhetorician and poet, and wrote the following works, all of which are extant in Merton College MS. cxcix.: 1. 'Metristenchiridion,' a book on metres, which he dedicated to Richard Courtenay [q. v.], bishop of Norwich. 2. 'Comœdia or Ludicra.' 3. 'A Book of Epigrams,' dedicated to one Master J. W. 4. 'Argumenta & Integumenta Metamorphoseon.' Pits ascribes to him a work, 'De Laudibus Regis Henrici Quinti,' in the Royal Library, 15 A xxii. 5, ascribed to him, is by Segardus junior of St. Omer.

[Coxe's Catalogue of Oxford MSS.; Blomefield's Norfolk, iv. 376; Holinshed, ii. 584 (ed. 1586–7), s.a. 1422.] M. B.

SEGUIER, WILLIAM (1771–1843), artist, first keeper of the National Gallery, and superintendent of the British Institution, born in London in 1771, was eldest son of David Seguier, a well-known copyist and art-dealer, by his wife Elizabeth Thwaites. The family descended from a French Huguenot refugee family, who had settled in London

after the revocation of the edict of Nantes, and claimed connection with the famous French lawyers and statesmen of the same name. The father, who was at first engaged in trade, took to art late in life. An uncle, Peter Seguier, was a sculptor. Showing a fondness for art, Seguier received lessons from George Morland [q. v.], who was a friend of the family, and attained some skill as a painter. He painted topographical scenes, such as a 'View of Covent Garden Theatre when on Fire,' and a 'View of the Seven Dials,' and he was a skilful imitator, rather than copyist, of the old masters. He drew also a few portraits. He abandoned painting, however, as a profession, on his marriage with a wealthy lady of French extraction, Miss Ann Magdalene Clowden, and devoted himself to becoming a connoisseur and expert in all matters connected with art, especially with painting. He assisted a number of notable amateurs in forming their collections of pictures, among them being Sir Robert Peel, Mr. Watson-Taylor, and others, and the subsequent repute of their collections was a high tribute to the value of Seguier's assistance. He was employed by George IV in forming the fine collection of Dutch and Flemish pictures at Buckingham Palace, and was appointed by the king to be conservator of the royal picture galleries, a post which he continued to hold under William IV and Queen Victoria. When the purchase of the Angerstein collection was being considered, Seguier was consulted, and on the formation of the National Gallery he was appointed its first keeper. He was also for many years superintendent of the British Institution, and, through his acquaintance with the principal private collections, was able to promote the valuable loan exhibitions held there during the summer, the winter exhibitions being confined to the works of living artists. Seguier did much to make the British Institution of use to young artists and students. He was also a partner with his brother, John Seguier (see below), in a business establishment of experts and restorers of pictures, in Russell Court, Cleveland Row, and several leading artists were employed on important works for the king and others through his agency. One of his chief patrons was the Duke of Wellington, who entrusted to Seguier the whole of the collection of pictures brought back by him from Spain for the purpose of restoration. Seguier was sent by the government to try and negotiate the purchase of Marshal Soult's pictures, but without success. He died at Brighton, where he had been employed at the Pavilion, on 5 Nov. 1843, and was buried in St. Luke's Church, Chelsea; his body was, however, subsequently removed to the Brompton cemetery. Seguier formed for himself a valuable collection of works of art, especially of engravings and etchings, which were sold at Messrs. Christie's in June 1844. He left four daughters.

John Seguier (1785–1856), younger brother of the above, born in London in 1785, studied as an artist in the schools of the Royal Academy, where he gained a silver medal in 1812. He attained some skill as a topographical artist, especially in views of London. He was partner with his brother as picture restorer in Russell Court, Cleveland Row, and on his brother's death succeeded him as superintendent of the British Institution. Among other works he restored the ceiling of the banqueting hall, Whitehall, painted by Rubens. He died in London in 1856. He married Margaret, daughter of Anthony Stewart [q.v.], a well-known miniature-painter, by whom he left a son, Frederick Peter Seguier, author of 'A Dictionary of Painters' (London, 1870, 4to).

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Gent. Mag. 1844, ii. 77; Athenæum, 18 Nov. 1843; Smith's Recollections of the British Institution; information from Mr. Frederick P. Seguier.] L. C.

SEGUIN, ARTHUR EDWARD SHELDEN (1809–1852), bass singer, born in London on 7 April 1809, was educated at the Royal Academy of Music, from which he narrowly escaped dismissal for some youthful breaches of discipline in 1827 (cf. Corder's 'History of the Royal Academy of Music' in the *Overture*, 1891, p. 129). In that year he came into prominence by his fine singing at a students' public concert in the Hanover Square Rooms. His performance of the part of Basilio in Rossini's 'Barber of Seville' at the first dramatic performance of the Royal Academy of Music on 8 Dec. 1828 was warmly praised by the press (cf. *Morning Post*, 9 and 22 Dec. 1828). On 6 Nov. 1830 he took the part of Ismael in Lord Burghersh's opera 'Catherine,' Ann Childe (who subsequently became his wife) filling the title-rôle. Early in 1831 he sang Polyphemus in a stage representation of Handel's 'Acis and Galatea' at the Queen's Theatre, Tottenham Street, under the management of George Macfarren, the elder [q. v.] In 1832 Seguin was engaged at Drury Lane, where he appeared with Malibran in 'La Sonnambula,' and during the two following years, and from 1835 to 1837, he sang at Covent Garden. He made a hit with his performance of Masetto in the revival of

Mozart's 'Don Giovanni' in February 1833. On 13 Aug. 1838 he created the part of the baron in G. A. Macfarren's 'Devil's Opera' at the English Opera House. Immediately afterwards he quitted England for America, where he first appeared as the Count in Rooke's 'Amelie' on 15 Oct. at the Old National Theatre, New York. In America he founded an operatic company, 'The Seguin Troup,' which met with success in the United States and Canada. Seguin is said to have been elected a chief by an Indian tribe, an honour he shared with Edmund Kean. He died in New York on 9 Dec. 1852. His was described as 'one of the finest bass voices ever heard' (*Athenæum*, 1853, p. 115), and he was an excellent comedian.

His wife, Ann Childe Seguin (1814–1888), born in 1814, whom he married about 1831, was his fellow-pupil, and subsequently a sub-professor at the Royal Academy of Music. Her services as a concert-singer were in considerable demand. She appeared at the King's Theatre, London, in 1836, under Laporte's management. On her husband's death she retired from the stage and devoted herself to teaching music in New York, where she died in August 1888.

[Authorities quoted in the text; Harmonicon, passim; Musical World, 1853, p. 38; Brown's American Stage; Banister's Life of G. A. Macfarren, p. 47.] R. H. L.

SEIRIOL (*fl.* 530), Welsh saint, was son of Owain Danwyn ab Einion Yrth ap Cunedda Wledig, according to the Hafod MS. of 'Bonedd y Saint' (*Myvyrian Archaiology*, 2nd edit. p. 415) and later authorities (*Myv. Arch.* p. 429; *Iolo MSS.* pp. 113, 125). He was therefore a cousin and contemporary of Maelgwn Gwynedd [q. v.], and probably brother to the 'Cuneglase' (Cynlas) of Gildas. Becoming a monk, he founded the monastery of Penmon, Anglesey, which, with the offshoot on Priestholm or Puffin Island (known in Welsh as 'Seiriol's Isle'), continued to exist in one form or another to the Reformation. The parish church of Penmon is dedicated to Seiriol, whose festival, according to the 'History of Anglesey' (1775), is 1 Feb. Tradition says that Seiriol and Cybi, who founded the monastery at Holyhead, used daily to meet near two springs (still bearing their names) at Clorach, near Llanerch y Medd, and that the difference in the position of the two travellers in relation to the sun caused a difference in their respective complexions, which was commemorated by the names 'Seiriol Wyn' (White) and 'Cybi Felyn' (Tawny) (Llwyd, *Beaumaris Bay*, 1800). Matthew Arnold has embodied this tradition, though not quite correctly, in the sonnet beginning 'In the bare midst of Anglesey they show.'

[Rees's Welsh Saints; authorities cited.] J. E. L.

SELBORNE, Earl of. [See Palmer, Roundell, 1812–1895.]

SELBY, CHARLES (1802?–1863), actor and dramatist, born about 1802, was, in 1832, a member of the company at the Strand. Two years later he produced at the Adelphi a farce entitled 'The Unfinished Gentleman.' The idea contained in this he worked out in a series of papers which appeared in the 'Sunday Times' newspaper, and were, with illustrations by Onwhyn, reprinted in 1841 (London, 8vo; 2nd edit. 1859) under the title of 'Maximums and Speciments of William Muggins, Natural Philosopher and Man of the World.' From the quasi-autobiographical revelations in this work (which is for the most part a dull and unskilful imitation of the earlier style of Charles Dickens) it may perhaps be gathered that Selby was self-educated, and that in the course of a vagabond life he had visited Barbados, and had some nautical experience. In 1841–2 he was, with his wife, under Macready at Drury Lane. In 1842 he gave to the Strand a drama founded afresh on his sketches in the 'Sunday Times,' and in June supplied the same theatre with his very successful farce, 'Boots at the Swan.' During thirty years he remained before the public as actor and dramatist, in the former capacity playing principally character parts, in the latter supplying a long series of plays chiefly adapted from the French. On 17 April 1843 he was, at Drury Lane, the Emperor Matapa in Planché's 'Fortunio and his Seven Gifted Servants.' In January 1844 his 'Dissolving Views' was received with much favour at the Strand. In July of the same year three farces from his pen were running at the same house, whereat in September his 'Antony and Cleopatra,' a farce, was given. In June 1845 he gave, at the Adelphi, 'Powder and Ball,' a terpsichorean burletta. At this house he played the French Minister in a two-act play of Dion Boucicault, entitled 'Peg Woffington,' and in October he acted in his own adaptation of 'Le Diable à Quatre.' In August 1846 a new farce of Selby's was given at the Queen's, where Mrs. Selby was playing Mrs. Candour, and an adaptation of 'Le Pas des Déesses' at the Adelphi, at which house 'Phantom Dancers' followed in November. On 4 Feb. 1847, at the Haymarket, he was the original Lord Fipley in Boucicault's

'School for Scheming.' On 12 July, at the Adelphi, his 'Out on the Sly' was played, and on 20 Dec. his spectacle, 'The Pearl of the Ocean.' On 10 May 1849 'Taken in and done for' appeared at the Strand, and 'Hotel Charges' followed at the Adelphi on 13 Nov. In Taylor and Reade's 'Two Loves and a Life' (Adelphi, 20 March 1854) he was the first Duke of Cumberland, and on 31 May was the original M. Veaudoré in the 'Marble Heart,' his own adaptation of 'Les Filles de Marbre.' At the same house on 1 Oct. 'My Friend the Major' was given for the first time. On 5 March 1855 he was the original French Watchmaker in Boucicault's 'Janet Pride.' He was also seen at this time as Chanteloupe in 'Victorine' and Peppercoal in the 'Flying Dutchman,' and was Black Brandon in Haines's 'My Poll and my Partner Joe.' On 16 Nov. 1857 he was the original Dr. Neiden in the 'Headless Man.' His 'Paris and Pleasure' ('Les Enfers de Paris'), was given at the Lyceum on 20 Nov. 1859. Selby was, on 1 March 1860, the original Flimsey in Watts Phillips's 'Paper Wings.' With Falconer at Drury Lane he was McIan, his last part in the manager's 'Bonnie Dundee,' on 23 Feb. 1863.

Selby also played Connor O'Kennedy in the 'Green Bushes,' Chenille in Jerrold's 'Prisoner of War,' on 8 Feb. 1842; Audley in his 'Catspaw' on 19 May 1850, and Jubilee in his 'Retired from Business' on 3 May 1851. Among other pieces, Selby wrote 'Robert Macaire' (a drama in three acts) and 'Barnaby Rudge.' A few of his plays are in two acts, and one or two are in three. The majority are one-act pieces of the lightest description, many of which are included in Duncombe's, Webster's, or Lacy's collection of plays. Selby had over seventy plays on the list of the Dramatic Authors' Society, and supplied with successful characters Yates, Wright, Compton, the Keeleys, Mrs. Nisbett, Mrs. Waylett, and others. He died at his residence, 27 Henrietta Street, Covent Garden, of a combination of ague and dropsy, on 21 March 1863, and was buried at Kensal Green.

His wife, also a competent actress in middle-aged or elderly characters, who in 1832 was playing five parts in the same piece at the Queen's Theatre, the 'Adventures of a Day,' took, after her husband's death, to instructing stage pupils. In pursuit of this scheme she opened, on 31 Aug. 1863, the Royalty with 'Court Gallants,' a piece of her husband's, and other entertainments. She died on 8 Feb. 1873, aged 76.

Above middle height and with a good stage presence, Selby was a useful and responsible actor. His face had naturally a quaint comic twist, such as comedians are used to cultivate. Besides his plays and his 'Maximums and Speciments of William Muggins,' Selby issued in 1851 a small schoolbook entitled 'Events to be remembered in the History of England,' which passed through many editions, and a skit called 'The Dinner Question, by Tabitha Tickletooth,' 1860, 12mo.

[Notes and Queries, 8th ser. ix. 211; Dramatic and Musical Review, various years; Scott and Howard's Blanchard; Era newspaper, 22 March 1863; Era Almanack, various years; Lady's Magazine; Brit. Mus. Cat.] J. K.

SELBY, PRIDEAUX JOHN (1788–1867), naturalist, was born in Bondgate Street, Alnwick, on 23 July 1788. He was the eldest son of George Selby of Beal and Twizell, Northumberland, his mother being Margaret, second daughter of John Cook, a captain in the mercantile marine, and granddaughter of Edward Cook, recorder of Berwick from 1711 to 1731. The father was head of one branch of an old and influential family long prominent in the history of Northumberland and the borders. Five members of the family received the honour of knighthood at James I's hands. One of them, Sir George Selby, mayor of Newcastle, obtained the sobriquet of King's Host from the sumptuous manner in which he entertained the king on his progresses to and from Scotland. From a very early age Prideaux Selby showed a strong bent to ornithology, and by the time that he was twelve or thirteen years of age had composed manuscript notes of the habits of our commoner birds, illustrated with coloured drawings remarkable for the delicacy of their execution and their truthfulness to nature. He received his early education at Durham school. A period of private tuition intervened before he entered as a gentleman commoner at University College, Oxford, on 2 May 1806. After spending some time at the university he left without taking a degree, and went into residence at Twizell (his father having died in 1804). He took an active part in the social and political life of his county. He was a magistrate and deputy lieutenant, and unsuccessfully contested Berwick at the general election as a reformer in 1812. In 1823 he served the office of high sheriff for Northumberland.

But he mainly devoted himself to natural history, more especially to ornithology, and after ornithology to forestry and entomology. The publication of his 'Illustrations of British Ornithology' (19 parts), dedicated to the Wernerian Natural History Society of Edinburgh, of which society Selby had become a

member early in life, commenced with a volume of plates in 1821. The first volume of the text ('Land Birds') appeared in 1825, and the second volume in 1833. The whole was completed in 1834. Twenty-six of the 228 plates were contributed by his brother-in-law, Admiral Mitford; the rest were drawn by the author from specimens which he had for the most part obtained and set up himself. Experiencing a difficulty in getting his drawings engraved to his satisfaction, he himself engraved a considerable number of the copper plates. This work was the first attempt to produce a set of life-sized illustrations of British birds, and, although now superseded by those of Gould and others, it still remains of value and importance. Simultaneously with the production of this work Selby assisted Sir William Jardine [q. v.] in bringing out 'Illustrations of Ornithology,' 4 vols. 4to, 1825–43, and he also wrote the volumes 'Pigeons' (1835), 'Parrots' (1836), for Jardine's 'Naturalists' Library.' Although not an original member of the Berwickshire Naturalists' Club, he took an active part in establishing it, and was a frequent contributor to its 'Transactions' and to those of the Natural History Society of Newcastle, of which he was an early member.

In 1833 he joined Dr. Graham, Dr. Greville, and others in a tour through Sutherlandshire which yielded so much fresh information on the fauna and flora of the north of Scotland that in the following year an expedition on a much larger scale was organised by Dr. Greville, Mr. Wilson, Jardine, and himself. In 1837, in conjunction with Jardine and Dr. G. Johnston, he founded the 'Magazine of Zoology and Botany,' which in the following year became the 'Annals or Magazine of Zoology, Botany, and Geology.' Selby was one of the editors. Sir William Jackson Hooker [q. v.] and Richard Taylor [q. v.] afterwards joined the original conductors. With this periodical Selby's name remained connected until his death, but he took no active part in editing the last or third series.

Selby was elected a fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh, of the Linnean and other scientific societies. In 1839 the university of Durham conferred on him the honorary degree of master of arts. Three years later he published his well-known work on 'British Forest Trees,' in which he embodied an experience of nearly forty years, chiefly gained in the plantations which he began at Twizell on a large scale at an early age The work was a popular rather than a scientific treatise. Selby also formed extensive collections of the entomology of his own district.

Selby was at once a sportsman, field naturalist, and scientific student, and few have combined the three characters more effectively. He died at Twizell on 27 March 1867. On 17 Dec. 1810 he married Lewis Tabitha, daughter of Bertram Mitford of Mitford Castle, by whom he left three daughters, but no male issue, and the male line of his branch of the family became extinct at his death.

Selby's collection of foreign bird-skins was presented to the university of Cambridge, and is now incorporated with those in the University Museum. His collections of coleoptera, hymenoptera, and lepidoptera were also presented to the university; the former still remain in their original cases; the two latter are incorporated with, and form the most important portion of the series of North British hymenoptera and lepidoptera in the University Museum. His collection of British birds was purchased a few years ago by Mr. A. H. Browne of Callaly Castle, where they are still accessible to the public.

Besides the works already mentioned, he was author of numerous papers in the 'Transactions' of the Natural History Society of Newcastle, and of the Berwickshire Naturalists' Club, in the 'Edinburgh Journal of Natural History and Geography,' and the 'Annals of Zoology and Botany.'

[Private information; Surtees's Hist. of Durham; Scott's Hist. of Berwick; Proc. Berwickshire Naturalists' Club, 1867; Agassiz's Bibliographia (Zoologie et Géologie), ed. Ray Soc.]

W. S. C.

SELBY, WALFORD DAKIN (1845–1889), antiquary, born on 16 June 1845, was the eldest son of Thomas Selby of Witley and Wimbush Hall, Essex, by his wife Elizabeth, youngest daughter and coheiress of Ralph Foster of Holderness, Yorkshire. His great-great-grandfather had taken the name Selby by royal license in 1783, but the family name was originally Browne, and they claimed descent from the Brownes, viscounts Montagu. Selby once preferred a claim to that dormant peerage, but abandoned it owing to his inability to prove beyond dispute a marriage on which the claim rested. He was educated at Brighton College, and then at Tunbridge School; on leaving the latter he was placed with Dr. Stromberg at Bonn to learn German and French. In 1865 he became a junior clerk in the Record Office, where he ultimately became superintendent of the search-room. In 1883, in conjunction with his friend, Mr. James Greenstreet, he founded the Pipe Roll Society, of which he was director-in-chief, and honorary treasurer till his death, which took place at his residence,

9 Clyde Street, Redcliffe Gardens, S.W., on 3 Aug. 1889. He was buried on the 8th in Kensal Green cemetery.

Selby's career at the Record office was distinguished by unfailing courtesy and minute knowledge of the records under his charge. From 1884 to April 1889 he edited the 'Genealogist,' and he was a frequent contributor on literary subjects to the 'Athenæum,' 'Academy,' 'Antiquary,' 'Antiquarian Magazine,' and other periodicals. His papers on 'The Robbery of Chaucer at Hatcham,' and 'Chaucer as Forrester of North Petherton, in the County of Somerset,' were published as Nos. 1 and 3 in the 'Life-Records of Chaucer,' which Selby edited for the Chaucer Society, 1875 et seqq. He also compiled 'The Jubilee Date Book,' 1887, and edited 1. 'Bond's Book of Dates,' 1875. 2. 'Lancashire and Cheshire Records,' 2 pts. 1882–3. 3. 'Norfolk Records,' 1886. At the time of his death he was preparing a new edition of 'The Red Book of the Exchequer,' which has been completed by Mr. Hubert Hall, an edition of Queen Elizabeth's manuscript translation of 'Boethius de Consolatione Philosophiæ,' and a new index to the 'Inquisitiones post mortem.'

[Works in Brit. Mus. Libr.; The Genealogist, vol. vi. Introd. and pp. 65–7; Athenæum, 1889, vol. ii.; Acad. 1889, ii. 103.] A. F. P.

SELDEN, JOHN (1584–1654), jurist, was born on 16 Dec. 1584 at Salvington in the parish of West Tarring, Sussex, and was baptised there on 30 Dec. 1584. His father, John Selden, is described by Selden himself as 'ex familia quæ tunc ibi viguit honesta;' by Aubrey as 'an yeomanly man of about 40*l.* per annum,' and in the baptismal register of his son as 'the minstrell,' an office which appears from the parish accounts to have involved attendance at the church ales. Selden's mother was Margaret, only daughter of Thomas Baker of Rushington, of a knightly family in Kent. She is said to have been won by the musical talents of her husband, and to have brought him a pretty good estate. The house in which Selden was born is still standing, and has on the door a Latin inscription, perhaps of his composition. After being educated at Chichester free school under Hugh Barker [q. v.], he was sent to Hart Hall, Oxford, and matriculated on 24 Oct. 1600; he was committed to the tuition of Anthony Barker, but left without graduating. In 1602 he was entered at Clifford Inn, and in May 1604 was admitted to the Inner Temple, and called to the bar on 14 June 1612.

Selden practised the law in the Temple, occupying chambers at the top of Paper Buildings looking towards the garden. It is probable that he never had any large or general business in the courts, though he appeared with distinction in a few great cases involving special learning; it is probable also that he gave opinions and practised as a conveyancer. In 1624 Selden was fined and disabled from holding any office in his inn for refusing to act as reader; in 1632 he was relieved from disability, and in 1633 elected a bencher. From an early period he acted as steward to Henry Grey, ninth earl of Kent [q. v.], with whom his relations were always close; but study was always his main occupation.

Selden's studies were, even in his early days in London, not confined to the law. As early as 1605 he had made the acquaintance of Ben Jonson, Camden, and probably of Sir Robert Bruce Cotton [q. v.] the antiquary, who soon offered Selden the hospitality of his house in Palace Yard, and made him free of his invaluable library. Probably no event was so important in determining the course of Selden's studies. Selden and Camden were in 1605 among the guests entertained by Jonson on his release from prison, to which he and Chapman had been committed for insulting Scotsmen in their 'Eastward Hoe.' When Jonson's 'Volpone' was published in 1607, Selden contributed a prefatory 'carmen protrepticon' (cf. Jonson, *Conversations with Drummond*, Shaksp. Soc. pp. 10, 20, 36). In 1607, too, he completed a work entitled 'Analecton Anglo-Britannicon,' which is an attempt to give a summary of the history of the inhabitants of this island from the earliest times down to the Norman invasion. The work, which first saw the light in 1615 at Frankfurt in an incorrect and mutilated form, was dedicated to Sir Robert Bruce Cotton. In 1610 he published 'Jani Anglorum Facies altera,' in which he discussed with great learning, but in a somewhat indigested form, the traces of the laws and customs of the Britons, the Saxons, and the Norsemen. A lack of decision in drawing the line between the successive inhabitants of this island injures the work, which was dedicated to Robert, earl of Salisbury, the lord high treasurer. In the same year (1610) appeared 'England's Epinomis,' which is to some extent an English version of the 'Janus;' but the 'Janus' contains passages not in the 'Epinomis,' while on the other hand the latter tract contains a discussion with regard to the laws of Richard I and John not to be found in the Latin. In this same year (1610) appeared the tract entitled 'The Duello, or Single Combat: from Anti-

quity derived into this Kingdom of England, with several kinds and ceremonious forms thereof, from good authority described.' The result of Selden's investigations into the origin of this mode of trial led him to attribute it to the Normans, a conclusion in which he is supported by the best modern authorities (POLLOCK and MAITLAND, *History of English Law*, ii. 597).

The publication of three such works in one year by a student of an Inn of Court of two years' standing was a remarkable evidence of industry and learning. Selden's next two publications show him associated with the poets of his day. In 1612 he wrote (at the request of Michael Drayton, then poet-laureate) notes on the first eighteen cantos of his 'Polyolbion,' and in 1613 he wrote commendatory verses in Greek, Latin, and English to William Browne's 'Britannia's Pastorals.'

In 1614 Selden published his 'Titles of Honour,' dedicated to his friend and chamberfellow, Edward Heyward. In the first part he deals with the titles and dignities of emperors, kings, and other rulers, beginning with the inquiry whether there were kings before the flood. In the second part he deals with inferior titles, commencing with those of heirs-apparent to thrones; and finally discusses feminine titles, honorary attributes such as 'clarissimus' and 'illustris,' and the laws of precedence.

In 1616 Selden edited the treatise of Sir John Fortescue (1394?–1476?) [q. v.], 'De Laudibus Legum Angliæ,' and in 1617 he wrote a 'Treatise on the Jews in England' for Purchas; this appeared in Purchas's work in a mutilated form, a circumstance which is said to have led to a quarrel between the two authors.

In the same year (1617) appeared Selden's treatise 'De Diis Syris,' the first of his oriental studies (see pp. 219–20 below). In the same year also was written 'A brief Discourse touching the Office of Lord Chancellor of England,' which was presented by Selden to Sir Francis Bacon on his appointment as lord keeper. A fourth and still more important book appeared in the same year (1617), the 'History of Tythes,' the best known of all Selden's productions, except his 'Table Talk.' It was dedicated to Sir Robert Cotton. Selden begins the history of tithes with the gift of Abraham to Melchizedek, and then discusses them as they existed among the Jews. He next considers what traces there are of them among the Greeks and Romans; then, arriving at the Christian era, he divides the history into periods—from the birth of Christ to A.D. 400, from A.D. 400 to 800, from A.D. 800 to 1200, from A.D. 1200 to his own day—dealing in fullest detail with their origin and development in England.

In more than one passage of this essay Selden handles the question whether tithes are payable *jure divino*. In the sixth chapter (section 6), he first approaches the subject; he does not deny that they are payable by what he calls 'ecclesiastical or positive law,' but he denies that they are payable by what he calls 'the divine moral law or the divine natural law, which should bind all men and ever;' and he endeavours to show that the practices of the early church were consistent only with this view. In the seventh chapter he again reverts to the subject, and states the chief question in debate among divines in these terms: 'whether by God's immediate moral law the evangelical priesthood have a right to tythes in equal degree as the layman hath to his nine, or if they have them only as by human positive law and so given them for their spiritual labour.' It obviously follows that if tithes are of divine law, both as to their existence and their quota, they cannot be affected by human law; and here Selden's love of the common law comes into play, and he urges the fact that 'the practised common law . . . hath never given way herein to the canons, but hath allowed customs and made them subject to all civil titles, infeodations, discharges, compositions, and the like.' It is not perhaps difficult to guess in which direction the mind of Selden leaned on this crucial question between the canon and the common law, but it is difficult to find in the treatise any direct expression of his private judgment.

It was not only passages touching 'the divine right' of tithes which gave offence to the clergy. The preface appears to have been written after the work had made some noise, owing doubtless to the circulation of the manuscript among Selden's friends. In this preface he with more than usual spirit turns on his critics; he energetically protests that his book is 'not written to prove that tythes are not due by the law of God; not written to prove that the laity may detain them; not to prove that lay hands may still enjoy appropriations; in sum, not at all against the maintenance of the clergy; neither is it anything else but itself—that is, a mere narrative of the History of Tythes.' With increased heat he pointed to the opposition which the clergy offered in past times to the progress of true knowledge and to the suspicions with which they had viewed 'the noble studies' of Roger Bacon, Reuchlin, Budæus, and Erasmus. When

published the book aroused a fierce storm. The author was summoned to answer for his opinions before some of the lords of the court of high commission and some of the privy council, and he acknowledged his error in a few lines in writing. The submission contained, as Selden contended, no confession of mistakes in the book, and expressed no change of opinion, but merely regret at the publication of the work. The form of the submission was probably a matter of arrangement between himself and those of his judges who seemed to favour him. The book itself was suppressed by public authority, and by some command, probably of the king, he was forbidden to print any reply to his numerous antagonists, a restraint of which he bitterly complained to the Marquis of Buckingham in May 1620.

On three occasions King James sent for Selden, twice at Theobalds and once at Whitehall, and discoursed with him on his 'History of Tythes' and on other learned questions. Three tracts—only the last seems to have been separately published—were the result of the king's commands given at these interviews: one on the passage in the Revelation of St. John touching the number 666; another on a passage of Calvin in reference to this book; a third on the birthday of our Saviour (London, 1661, 8vo). To these was added a paper on his purpose in writing the 'History of Tythes.'

Selden had thus become a man of mark before he entered upon his political career, which opened in 1621. The object of the legislation of the period was to secure the liberty of the subject and the right of the House of Commons to free debate by declaring rather than by altering the existing law, and the great debates in which Selden, Coke, and Eliot took part often seem rather to have resembled arguments in a court of law than debates in a legislative assembly. The ancient records both of the courts and of the house were often produced and read, and were the subjects of lively though learned discussion.

Selden had acquired vast knowledge of constitutional law and of the records of the law courts and of parliament, and was often consulted on these subjects before he was returned to the commons. In the preparation of the famous protestation of the commons of 18 Dec. 1621, Selden, although not a member of the house, took an active part in the way of seeking precedents. His action gave umbrage to the king, and he was, with others, by the king's orders committed to the custody of Sir Robert Ducie, sheriff of London, who treated him courteously. After the prisoners had been brought before certain peers and privy councillors, presided over by Lancelot Andrewes [q. v.], bishop of Winchester, all were liberated. Again, in 1622, before Selden entered the house, Bacon consulted him on the question of the validity of the judgments given in the House of Lords during the late parliament (see Bacon's letter of 14 Feb. 1621–2 in Spedding's *Life and Letters of Bacon*, vi. 332–3).

In 1623 Selden was returned to the fourth and last parliament of James as a burgess for Lancaster. In the first parliament of Charles I he does not seem to have sat, but in 1626 he was returned to the second parliament of Charles I as member for Great Bedwin, Wiltshire. He then took an active part with Wentworth and Noy in the attack on Buckingham, and was sent to the lords as one of the chief managers in the impeachment of the favourite. To him was assigned the presentation of the argument in favour of the fourth article which charged the duke with neglecting to guard the seas and protect the merchants; and of the fifth article, which charged the duke with confiscating a French ship, the St. Peter, worth 40,000*l.*, with detaining her after an order by the king for her restoration to the owner, and with taking several things out of her. Selden was also nominated one of a secret committee of twelve to prepare the proofs of the charges against Buckingham. In June 1626 the house was dissolved, and the matter dropped, but on 17 June Heath, the attorney-general, invited the twelve members of the secret committee to attend him at his chambers. The meeting took place, and Eliot, who was authorised to draw up a reply on behalf of the committee, was at once arrested. Selden spent the ensuing long vacation under the hospitable roof of the Earl of Kent at Wrest, Bedfordshire, pursuing antiquarian and historical study.

While the sitting of parliament was suspended, the political strife was transferred to the courts of law. In 1627 several persons were committed to prison by order of the privy council for refusing to lend money to the king on his sole demand. Of these prisoners, Sir Edmund Hampden sued out a habeas corpus in the king's bench, and in November the question of the legality of their detention on a warrant, which did not specify the offences, was argued before the court. Selden appeared as counsel for Hampden. The argument of the counsel for the prisoners excited great and unwonted sympathy, and their speeches are said to have been received with wonderful applause. But the court refused to bail the prisoners. In March 1628, four days before the opening of

Charles's third parliament, to which Selden was returned as member for Ludgershall, Wiltshire, he and other liberal leaders met to concert their plan of action at Sir Robert Cotton's house in Palace Yard. Selden and Coke argued that the reassertion of the ancient laws of the country by which the liberty of the subject was secured must take the first place, and that until this was accomplished no progress could be made in the redress of grievances. This opinion prevailed.

Accordingly, when parliament met, Selden took a prominent part in the debates which arose on the question of habeas corpus; he was the chairman of the committee appointed to consider the precedents as to imprisonment without cause assigned. On 2 April 1628 he addressed the house on the question. On 7 April he, together with Coke and Littleton, laid before the House of Lords the resolutions of the commons on the subject, and delivered before the lords a speech in assertion of the liberty of the subject. These speeches of Selden, together with copies of the records cited, were ordered by the house to be entered on the journals, and liberty was given to the clerk to give out copies. They formed probably a kind of manual from which less learned members of the party might prepare speeches.

The records with which Selden had fortified his speech before the lords became the occasion of an angry controversy. Lord Suffolk was reported to have charged Selden with tampering with one of the documents cited, and to have added that Selden deserved to be hanged. These words were brought before the House of Commons, which on 17 April 1628 presented to the lords two charges against the earl. In the upper house Suffolk declared that he had never used the words. In the commons Sir John Strangways declared on his honour that the earl had used the words. On 8 April 1628 (the day following his speech before the lords) Selden spoke on the question of the billeting of soldiers, and on 11 April on the question of martial law. Numerous notes have been preserved of speeches against the pretensions of the crown made by him on later days in the session. On 5 June the king sent the house a message that it would be adjourned on 11 June, and in the angry debate which followed Selden spoke in favour of naming Buckingham. On 18 June he opposed the king's claim to the personal estate of a deceased bastard, and next day (19 June) he spoke on a bill for the restitution to his rights of Carew, son of Sir Walter Ralegh. On 26 June the house was prorogued.

The recess of 1628 was passed by Selden at Wrest, and there he occupied himself with his work on the Arundel marbles. In January 1629 parliament again assembled; on 22 Jan. Selden brought before it the case of Savage, who had been sentenced by the Star-chamber to lose his ears. On 12 Feb. he supported the petition of the printers and booksellers against Laud's interference with their trade. In the same month he took an active part in the discussion of the bill for tonnage and poundage. In the violent scene of 2 March with which that session ended, Selden addressed the speaker in words of grave warning.

On 4 March 1629, in consequence of the house's proceedings, nine members, among whom were Selden and Eliot, were conducted to the privy council sitting at Whitehall, and, without hearing, were committed to the custody of Sir Alan Apsley, the keeper of the Tower ('vir humanissimus,' as Selden describes him), for imprisonment during the king's pleasure. At the same time, under an order from the king and council, seals were placed on the papers of Selden, Eliot, and Holles. On 10 March the parliament was dissolved by the king. On 17 March the prisoners were examined, in the presence of certain privy councillors, by Sir Robert Heath, the attorney-general. Selden's account of his answers is somewhat vague, but they seem to have consisted of an unblushing denial of the real facts as to the part he had played in parliament (cf. GARDINER, *History*, vii. 80). During his imprisonment Selden was at first denied the use of books and papers—a deprivation very bitter to his studious nature. Subsequently, on his petition, this prohibition was relaxed, but not without vexatious conditions. On 6 May and 5 June the cases of Selden and some of his fellow-prisoners were brought before the court of king's bench on applications for a habeas corpus and for bail respectively, Selden, Valentine, and Holles sitting in court by their counsel, Littleton, the substance of whose argument had been prepared by Selden. In the result the prisoners were remitted to prison, to be produced in court after the long vacation. Their detention had, according to the evil practice of that age, been a subject of conference and of correspondence between the king and the judges. In a letter from the king to the judges of his bench (24 June 1629) Charles says, in evident reference to their appearance in court during the argument of their case, that he had heard that the prisoners 'had carried themselves unmannerly towards the king and their lordships;' and he intimates a desire that they

should be kept in prison indefinitely. At first Charles was inclined to assent to a more lenient treatment in the case of Selden and Valentine, but on more mature deliberation he directed that all the prisoners should be treated alike. In October efforts were made to induce the prisoners to accept liberty on the terms of entering into security for their good behaviour, and the king wrote to Hyde, the lord chief justice, urging him to force them to submission. This demand for security was resented by Selden as a gross indignity to men of position and honour and members of the late parliament. Irate at the strong position taken by the prisoners, the court seems to have increased in the following month the harshness of their imprisonment. They were deprived of the liberty of moving about within the precincts of their prison and of seeing their friends. Selden's place of imprisonment was frequently changed, and he passed in turn from the Tower to the Marshalsea (at Southwark) and the Gate House at Westminster (cf. Rushworth, ii. 73–4).

At last, in May 1631, Selden was liberated at the instance of the earls of Arundel and Pembroke, who were anxious to have his assistance in some litigation in which he had special knowledge. He was set free on giving security to appear before the court on the first day of the next term, and this procedure was repeated till February 1635, when, as the result of a somewhat abject petition to the king presented in October 1634, he was unconditionally discharged.

During these harassing and intricate proceedings, viz. in 1630, another prosecution was begun against Selden in the Star-chamber for circulating copies of a squib written in the preceding reign by Sir Robert Dudley [q. v.], and called 'A Proposition for his Majesty's service to bridle the impertinency of Parliament.' The prosecution was allowed to drop on the birth of a prince of Wales.

The court's hostility seems to have excited little or no resentment in the mind of Selden. In 1631 it was rumoured that he had gone over to the royalist side; in 1633 Selden actively helped to organise the masque which the four inns of court prepared at once to give expression to their loyalty, and to show their dissent from Prynne's 'Histrio-mastix' (Whitelocke, pp. 19–22).

In the Short parliament of 1640 Selden does not appear to have sat; but to the Long parliament he was returned by his university of Oxford. His colleague, Sir Thomas Roe [q. v.], died in 1644, and, as the vacancy was not filled up, Selden alone represented the university during the rest of the Long parliament. He was appointed one of the committee to examine the papers of Lord Strafford, but opposed the proceedings of the house against him. On 10 Nov. 1640 he was placed on the committee on the state of the kingdom; on 23 Nov. he led the attack on the court of the marshal; on 27 Nov. he opposed the crown on the great question of ship-money; on 31 Jan. and 9 March 1641 he spoke on the question of episcopacy, opposing its abolition. On 3 May he signed the declaration of adherence to the church of England; and on 5 June he was placed on the committee to draw articles of impeachment against Archbishop Laud. On 6 July the house resolved that the sealing of the papers of Selden and other members was a violation of the privileges of parliament. On 17 Jan. 1642 he was one of a committee of twenty-two appointed to examine Charles I's violation of the privileges of parliament, and to petition the king for the payment of damages to Pym, Hampden, and others unjustly accused of treason. In the following month (4 Feb. 1642) an order was made that Selden and certain other members should attend on Wednesday next, and continue their service in the house, an indication perhaps that Selden was somewhat withdrawing from his parliamentary labours, and of a suspicion that he was inclining towards the king's side.

In 1642 the king entertained the notion of entrusting the great seal either to Lord-chief-justice Banks or to Selden. But Lord Falkland and Hyde, who were consulted on the point, felt so positive that the offer would be refused by Selden that the matter went no further (Clarendon, *Hist.* v. 209). Another attempt, made by the king through the Marquis of Hertford, to induce him to leave London and join the court at York was met by Selden's alleging, and probably with truth, that he could be of more service to the king in London than in York. 'He was in years,' says Clarendon, 'and of a tender constitution; he had for many years enjoyed his ease which he loved; was rich, and would not have made a journey to York or have lain out of his own bed for any preferment.' When, in this same year (1642), there arose between the king and commons the great question as to the control of the military force of the kingdom, Selden took up a position which appears to have expressed his real and unbiased opinion: he regarded the commission of array issued by the king as entirely illegal, and spoke strongly against it in the house; but he also regarded the ordinance of the militia as 'without any shadow of law or pretence of precedent,' and stood against it accordingly.

To these opinions he adhered when Lord Falkland, with the knowledge of the king, addressed him on the subject. In the same year arose the question as to the power of parliament to nominate lords lieutenant in the absence of the king with the army. It was a matter which divided the party of progress. But Selden went with the advanced guard, and accepted a commission as deputy lieutenant under a lord lieutenant appointed by parliament.

In 1643 Waller formed a royalist plot for overpowering the city militia and dissolving the parliament. One evening he went to Selden's study, where he found him, Pierrepoint, and Whitelocke, with the intention of imparting the plot to them; but after he spoke of the project in general terms Selden and his friends so inveighed against any such thing 'as treachery and baseness, and that might be the occasion of shedding much blood, that he durst not for the awe and respect which he had for Selden and the rest communicate any of the particulars to them, but was almost disheartened himself to proceed in it.' After the discovery of the plot, and Waller's arrest, Waller was examined as to whether Selden was in any way privy to his proceedings.

In the same year Selden, with some other members of both houses, sat in the assembly of divines at Westminster. In the debates of this body (says Whitelocke) 'Mr. Selden spake admirably, and confuted divers of them in their own learning. And sometimes when they had cited a text of scripture to prove their assertion, he would tell them, "Perhaps in your little pocket-bibles with gilt leaves" (which they would often pull out and read) "the translation may be thus, but the Greek or the Hebrew signifies thus and thus," and so would totally silence them.' Selden proved a thorn in the sides of the Westminster divines, for he liked the claims of presbytery no better than those of episcopacy; and, according to Fuller (*Church Hist.* bk. xi. sect. ix. par. 54), he used his talents rather 'to perplex than inform' his auditors, his interests being 'to humble the jure-divino-ship of presbytery.'

On 27 Oct. 1643 the House of Commons resolved that the office of clerk and keeper of the records of the Tower should be sequestered into the hands of Selden, and that he should receive the profits of the place. Proceedings of the council of state in 1650 (17 Oct. and 20 Dec.) seem to show that Selden had then ceased to derive any benefit from the office, but was willing to continue in it without reward. In April 1645 he was appointed one of twelve commoners who, together with six lords, constituted a committee to manage the admiralty. In August Selden declined the mastership of Trinity Hall, Cambridge, which he was offered by the direction of the House of Commons. In September he opposed in a speech, the substance of which has been preserved, the petition of the assembly of divines that in every presbytery the pastors and ruling elders should have the power of excommunication and of suspending from the sacrament. On 24 Feb. 1646 he spoke in favour of the abolition of the court of wards.

On 18 Jan. 1647 the house resolved that Selden should have 5,000*l.* 'for his damages, losses, imprisonments, and sufferings sustained and undergone by him for his services done to the Commonwealth in the parliament of Tertio Caroli.' It is doubtful whether Selden received this sum; a report was current that he 'could not out of conscience take it' (Wood, '*Athenæ Oxon.*) His conduct in a suit relating to a Mrs. Fisher's will (S. P. C. 1631, pp. 233, 371), and in relation to the office of keeper of the records, seems to show that this report is probably true. On 23 Feb. 1649 a committee was appointed by the council of state to consider the dignity and precedence of ambassadors, and Selden and Challenor were directed to assist them.

Selden took no further part in public affairs. During the trial and execution of the king and the rise of Cromwell, Selden abstained from any expression of his views. 'The wisest way for men in these times is to say nothing' was a maxim of his, on which he seems to have rigorously acted (*Table Talk*, Peace).

But Selden was able to protect the cause of learning during these troubled times. He procured the delivery to the university of Cambridge of Archbishop Bancroft's library; and to the university of Oxford he rendered more important services. In 1646 the vice-chancellor appealed to him to 'relieve his declining undon mother;' and when in May 1647 an ordinance of the lords and commons was made for the visitation and reform of the university, Selden was appointed one of the committee to hear appeals from the visitors. In numerous sittings of that body Selden took an active part, and was able to temper the somewhat unfair treatment to which the university was in danger of being subjected.

In spite of the pressure of his public duties, Selden's literary work had progressed steadily. From the treasures of Sir Robert Cotton's library he had edited the six books of Eadmer [q. v.], giving an account of the courts of the first two Williams and of the first Henry. To the text he appended 'Notæ

et Spicilegium,' and published the work in 1623. In 1629 appeared a yet more important work, the 'Marmora Arundelliana,' an account of the ancient works of art collected by Thomas Howard, second earl of Arundel [q. v.] The work was begun in 1627 with the aid of Patrick Junius and Richard James, and was completed in the long vacation of 1628 at Lord Kent's mansion at Wrest. When published in 1629 it had a great and rapid sale. Its most important contents included a chronicle known as the 'Parian Chronicle' (deciphered from the Marmor Parium, the upper half of which has since disappeared), and documents relative to the treaty between the peoples of Smyrna and Magnes, followed by versions in ordinary modern Greek and in Latin. A few Latin and Hebrew inscriptions are also discussed. This work, though it did not escape the censure of Bentley (*Dissertation on Phalaris*), is one of the highest value ; it marks 'a sort of æra,' says Hallam, 'in lapidary learning.' Boeckh, who closely followed Selden, testifies not only to the accuracy of his transcriptions, but to the excellence of his commentary.

At the command, it appears, of James I, Selden had in 1618 composed an essay in support of the English claim to the dominion of the seas. Already in 1609 Grotius had in 'Mare Liberum' maintained, in accordance with the present theory of international law, that the high seas were open to all. Three or four years later some English vessels took from Dutch vessels laden with the spoil of twenty-two walruses, taken in the Greenland waters, all the results and all the instruments of capture, on the ground that the Dutchmen lacked the English king's license to fish in Greenland waters. Holland complained to England, and in 1618 a conference between commissioners of the two powers took place in England, at which Grotius was one of the representatives of Holland. It was on this occasion that Selden prepared his treatise, but at the time the king declined to authorise the publication from a fear that some passages might displease the king of Denmark, to whom James was deep in debt. In 1635 Selden, at the command of Charles I, again took the work up ; Laud acted as intermediary, not without the hope that this gleam of court favour would win Selden to the royal side. In this project Laud failed ; but it led to an intimacy between him and Selden, who became 'both a frequent and a welcome guest at Lambeth House, where he was grown into such esteem with the archbishop that he might have chose his own preferment in the court (as it was then generally believed), had he not undervalued all other employments in respect of his studies' (Heylyn, *Life of Laud*, ed. 1671, p. 303).

In 1636 the work was published under the title of 'Mare Clausum, seu de Dominio Maris libri duo.' It is, like all the works of Selden, replete with learning ; but in this case the propositions in support of which that learning is used are so directly at variance with the most elementary rights of men, that the learning was wasted. The first book argues that by the law of nature or nations the sea is not common to all men, but is as much as the land the subject of private property. In the second book he maintains that the lordship of the circumambient ocean belongs to the crown of Great Britain as an indivisible and perpetual appendage. This claim has long since been abandoned. Charles I was so pleased by Selden's performance that, by an order of the privy council, it was directed that one copy should be kept in the archives of the council, another in the court of exchequer, and a third in the court of the admiralty. Meanwhile, in obedience to a command of the House of Lords, Selden prepared his treatise on the 'Privilege of the Baronage of England,' and on 6 Dec. 1641 delivered his work into the hands of the sub-committee for privileges of the house (Introd. ad fin.) The first part relates to privileges enjoyed by the baronage of England, 'as they are one estate together in the upper house,' as e.g. the privilege of voting by proxies ; the second relates to privileges enjoyed by them, 'as every one of them is privately a single baron,' as e.g. their right of substituting a protestation upon honour for an oath, and their benefit of clergy though unable to read.

In 1647 Selden published his edition of 'Fleta,' an early English law treatise (based on Bracton), of which a unique manuscript belonged to Cotton [see Fleta]. To this treatise Selden prefixed a dissertation of great and varied learning, travelling over a wide range of subjects (Pollock and Maitland, *History of English Law*, i. 188). He mainly deals with the influence of Roman law on English jurisprudence, and discusses the place of the civil law in the courts martial and the courts of the admiralty, not without a reference to the almost obstinate love of the English people for their common law. Such a work appears an ample justification of the founders (in 1887) of the Selden Society for their selection of Selden as their eponymous hero.

In 1653 Selden assisted Sir Roger Twysden in editing ten works on English his-

tory which had not hitherto been printed. This work was published in 1653 as 'Decem Historiæ Anglicanæ Scriptores.' Selden, by way of preface, composed and published his 'Judicium de Decem Historiæ Anglicanæ Scriptoribus.' A discussion on the Culdees occurs in the section on Simeon of Durham, as well as observations on the 'Scotichronicon.' In other cases Selden confined himself more strictly to stating what was known about the author in question.

In 1652 Graswinckel, a Dutch jurist, published at The Hague 'Maris Liberi Vindiciæ adversus Petrum Baptistam Burgum Ligustici maritimi dominii assertorem.' Under colour of attacking Burgus and the question about the dominion of the Italian waters, the writer attacked Selden and the claim of Britain to dominion over the adjacent ocean; and he asserted that Selden had written his 'Mare Clausum' for the purpose of getting out of prison. To such allegations Selden replied in his latest book, 'Vindiciæ' (1653), in which he gave a full account of his imprisonments and of the writing and the publication of the 'Mare Clausum.' This book, like others in which Selden engaged in a hand-to-hand conflict with some antagonist, contrasts favourably as regards the directness and simplicity of its style with his more learned treatises.

Meanwhile, from his earliest years Selden had found time to combine with his legal studies voluminous researches in oriental learning. For use in his oriental studies Selden made a collection of manuscripts and printed books, most of which passed at his death into the Bodleian Library; he also had access to the manuscripts which Laud was procuring at great trouble and expense, and which were stored at Lambeth or presented to the university of Oxford. Selden's own collection is rich in Hebrew and Arabic works (some of the latter rare and unprinted to this day); the Persian, Turkish, and Chinese languages are also represented in it, besides western idioms. He first won fame in Europe as an orientalist by his treatise 'De Diis Syris,' published in London in 1617, but, according to the preface, finished twelve years before; parts of this subject had been already handled by the Toulouse professor, Peter Faber, in the third volume of his 'Semestria' (Leyden, 1595). The charge, however, levelled against Selden by his enemies of having plagiarised from Faber was unfounded. Selden's book attracted attention on the continent, and was reprinted in 1629 at Leyden by L. de Dieu, afterwards celebrated as a Semitic scholar, at the instance of Daniel Heinsius, to whom the edition was dedicated by Selden; in 1668 it was reprinted at Leipzig; use was also made of it by Vossius in his great treatise on idolatry. The material for a satisfactory treatment of Syrian mythology had not then come to light, and Selden's reasoning was vitiated by the prejudice current in his time (and long after) in favour of the antiquity of the Hebrew language and the traditional dates of the biblical books; but the book displays much philological acumen as well as erudition. Most of Selden's work as an orientalist consisted in the exposition of Jewish, or rather rabbinical, law. He published in 1631 'De Successionibus in bona defunctorum ad leges Ebræorum,' re-edited in 1636 with another treatise 'De Successione in Pontificatum Ebræorum,' and dedicated to Laud; in 1640 'De Jure Naturali et Gentium juxta Disciplinam Ebræorum;' in 1644 'De Anno Civili et Calendario Veteris Ecclesiæ seu Reipublicæ Judaicæ;' in 1646 'Uxor Ebraica seu de Nuptiis et Divortiis Veterum Ebræorum libri tres;' in 1650 'De Synedriis Veterum Ebræorum,' a work of which the second part appeared in 1653, and the unfinished third part posthumously. All these works were reprinted during the author's lifetime (except the last) at Leyden or Frankfort-on-the-Oder, and the treatise 'De Jure Naturali et Gentium' contained much that was interesting to others besides specialists in Hebrew law, although its defects, lucidly pointed out by Hallam, did not escape Selden's contemporaries. The acquaintance with the original of the Old Testament and the ancient versions and commentaries which all these works display is very great. Their author's familiarity with rabbinical literature was such as has been acquired by few non-Israelite scholars; and many details of oriental civilisation and antiquities were certainly brought to the knowledge of Europeans for the first time in them. We may instance the Copto-Arabic system of notation (in the calendar reproduced in the third volume of the 'De Synedriis'), and the distinction between the tenets of the Rabbanite and Karaite Jews (in the treatise 'De Anno Civili'). Their extraordinary erudition won much praise, and, as Selden rarely if ever attacked other writers, they offended few susceptibilities; but severe critics complained with justice of their discursiveness and occasional obscurity, and still more of the uncritical use made by Selden of documents of very unequal value; and indeed Selden's statements about Jewish law are more often based on comparatively modern compilations than on the original sources, to some of which perhaps he had not access; and in accepting the rabbinical tra-

dition as a faithful account of the Israelitish state, he was behind the best criticism of his time. A question of more general interest than rabbinical law was approached in his edition of a fragment of the history of Eutychius ('Eutychii Ægyptii, patriarchæ orthodoxorum Alexandrini, Ecclesiæ suæ origines,' 1642). The purpose of this work was to adduce fresh evidence in favour of the view of the original relations between the episcopate and the presbytery advocated by Salmasius and impugned by Petavius. It was attacked with bitterness by Roman catholic writers, and answered in a bulky work by the Maronite Abraham Ecchellensis seven years after Selden's death. The charge of inaccurate scholarship brought against Selden's translation of the Arabic seems unjust, and indeed Selden's acquaintance with the Arabic language, though not profound, was equal to that of any of the European scholars who preceded Edward Pococke [q. v.] It was urged with greater justice that the authority of so late a writer as Eutychius (876–940) was insufficient for Selden's purpose. Nevertheless Selden proceeded to prepare an edition of the whole of Eutychius's chronicle, and left instructions in his will that it should be completed by Pococke.

Selden doubtless derived part of his ample means from his employment as steward of the Earl of Kent and from the liberality of the countess. At their country seat at Wrest in Bedfordshire he invariably spent his vacations. After the earl died, in 1639, Selden continued to manage the estate of the dowager countess. By a deed of 6 July 1648 she gave to Selden (in the event of her dying without issue, which happened) an interest for his life and twenty-one years after in her estates in the counties of Leicester and Warwick, and by her will in 1649 she gave to him all her personal estate, including leaseholds. At some date not ascertained he took up his residence in her town mansion, a large house with a garden, called the Carmelite or White Friars, situate a short distance east of the Temple. Aubrey repeats a story, which is probably false, that Selden married the countess, but never acknowledged the fact till after her death, which took place in 1651. Her mansion he speaks of, not without pride, as 'Museum meum Carmeliticum' (*De Synedr.* lib. iii. c. 14, s. 9). It contained his Greek marbles, his Chinese map and compass, his curiosities in crystal, marble, and pearl, his cabinets and cases, all indicated by letters, and, above all, his incomparable library. Selden lived in considerable style (he leaves legacies to four men described as his servants); he was never without learned company, and, though personally temperate, he kept a liberal table.

On 10 Nov. 1654 Whitelocke advised with Selden as to alterations in his will which increasing weakness prevented. He died at Carmelite House on 30 Nov. 1654. Of his deathbed several narratives have been preserved, though none of them seem to be first-hand accounts. One given by Aubrey represents him as refusing to see a clergyman through the persuasion of Hobbes; another, found in the Rawlinson MSS. at the Bodleian, as refusing to receive Hobbes, confessing his sins, and receiving absolution from Archbishop Ussher, and as expressing the wish that he had rather executed the office of a justice of the peace than spent his time in what the world calls learning (Macray, *Annals of the Bodleian Library*, 2nd edit. p. 110 *n.*) According to 'Historical Applications and Occasional Meditations, by a Person of Honour' (1670), he was attended by his friends Archbishop Ussher and Dr. Langbaine, and told them that 'at that time he could not recollect any passage out of infinite books and manuscripts he was master of wherein he could rest his soul, save out of the holy scriptures, wherein the most remarkable passage that lay upon his spirit was Titus ii. 11–14.' Selden was buried in the Temple Church 'magnificently' (says Wood), in the presence of all the judges and of other persons of distinction.

He appears to have died possessed of considerable property both real and personal, a small part only of which he bequeathed to relatives. By a codicil to his will he left some of his books to the university of Oxford (for so it seems to have been construed, notwithstanding an apparent defect), and others to the College of Physicians; the residue of his library he bequeathed to his executors, of whom Sir Matthew Hale was one, but with a gentle protest against its being sold. These books were offered by the executors to the Inner Temple on terms which were refused, and were subsequently given by them to the Bodleian at Oxford. According to Ayliffe (*State of the University of Oxford*, 1714, i. 462), eight chests, containing the registers of abbeys and other manuscripts relating to the history of England, were, after Selden's death, destroyed by fire in the Temple. Nevertheless, about eight thousand volumes, including many manuscripts and a few unique books, and many of much value, reached the Bodleian Library. Selden also bequeathed to the university of Oxford his Greek marble inscriptions about his house in Whitefriars, and his heads and statues of Greek workmanship. In Prideaux's 'Mar-

mora Oxoniensia,' published in 1676, nine marbles are identified as forming part of Selden's bequest (Preface). One, if not all, of these sculptures came from Asia Minor ('e Græcia Asiatica,' *De Synedriis*, lib. iv. c. 14, s. 9). These marbles, like the Arundel marbles and some given by Sir George Wheeler, were originally exposed in the open air within the enclosure of the schools; in 1714 they were removed into the picture gallery; in 1749 into one of the rooms of the ground floor, and in 1888 to the university galleries. They seem to have suffered considerably while in the care of the university (Macray, pp. 190–1).

The story that Selden on his death-bed caused his papers to be destroyed (told by an anonymous writer in a Bodleian scrap-book) appears to be plainly erroneous, for there exist in the library of Lincoln's Inn five volumes of Selden's manuscripts which are partly in his handwriting and partly in that of various amanuenses. They no doubt came to Sir Matthew Hale as executor of Selden, and they were, together with other manuscripts, bequeathed by him to Lincoln's Inn; they appear to have been bound after they came into the hands of the society. They consist of copies and extracts from registers and documents of all kinds, of rough notes, of papers relative to cases in which Selden was professionally engaged, and of a single sheet of autobiography. A catalogue of these manuscripts was prepared by the Rev. Joseph Hunter for the record commissioners, and reprinted by the society (1838). One paper in these manuscripts is interesting as the only trace of Selden's interest in natural history. It is a catalogue in his handwriting of some sixty-four birds.

It was not till 1689, when the revolution had given freedom to the press, that the 'Table Talk' of Selden, the book by which he is generally known to fame, was first printed. This work was composed by Richard Milward [q. v.], a secretary of Selden, and contains reports of Selden's utterances from time to time during the last twenty years of his life. Its authenticity was doubted by Dr. Wilkins, but for reasons which have not satisfied the world; and the work may safely be accepted as the most vivid picture extant of the habits of thought and the modes of expression of the great Erastian lawyer. The conversations cover a great range of subjects relative to human life and history; but Selden was never metaphysical and rarely philosophical. The book exhibits him with a great and varied knowledge of life; as a man of strong and somewhat scornful intellect; as delighting to illustrate his discourse by similitudes; as solving all questions in church and state by a reference to one or two simple principles—the sovereignty of the state, and the contract between the sovereign and his people. 'All is as the state pleases;' 'every law is a contract between the king and the people, and therefore to be kept'—are two sentences characteristic of Selden's habitual thought. Such principles are destructive of the claims to *jus divinum* alike of kings, bishops, and presbyters; and they exclude those theories of natural right to which ardent reformers are wont to have recourse. A comparison of the style of his 'Table Talk' with that of his speeches and written works supports the statement of Clarendon that he was far more direct, simple, and effective as a speaker than as a writer.

Selden's early friend, Ben Jonson, described him as 'living on his own, the lawbook of the judges of England, the bravest man in all languages.' To him Jonson addressed a poetical epistle, in which he wrote:

> You that have been
> Ever at home, yet have all countries seen,
> And, like a compass, keeping one foot still
> Upon your centre, do your circle fill
> Of general knowledge; watched men, manners too,
> Heard what times past have said, seen what ours do.

Two other friends have left sketches of Selden's character. 'His mind,' says Whitelocke, 'was as great as his learning; he was as hospitable and generous as any man; and as good company to those whom he liked.' 'Mr. Selden,' says Lord Clarendon (*Life*, pt. i. p. 16), 'was a person whom no character can flatter, or transmit in any expressions equal to his merit and virtue. He was of so stupendous learning in all kinds and in all languages (as may appear in his excellent and transcendent writings) that a man would have thought he had been entirely conversant amongst books, and had never spent an hour but in reading and writing; yet his humanity, courtesy, and affability was such that he would have been thought to have been bred in the best courts but that his good nature, charity, and delight in doing good, and in communicating all he knew, exceeded that breeding. His style in all his writings seems harsh and sometimes obscure, which is not wholly to be imputed to the abstruse subjects of which he commonly treated, out of the paths trod by other men, but to a little undervaluing the beauty of a style, and too much propensity to the language of antiquity; but in his conversation he was the most clear discourser,

and had the best faculty in making hard things easy, and presenting them to the understanding of any man that hath been known. Mr. Hyde was wont to say that he valued himself upon nothing more than upon having had Mr. Selden's acquaintance from the time he was very young, and held it with great delight as long as they were suffered to continue together in London; and he was very much troubled always when he heard him blamed, censured, and reproached for staying in London and in the parliament after they were in rebellion, and in the worst times, which his age obliged him to do; and how wicked soever the actions were which were every day done, he was confident he had not given his consent to them, but would have hindered them if he could with his own safety, to which he was always enough indulgent. If he had some infirmities with other men, they were weighed down with wonderful and prodigious abilities and excellencies in the other scale.'

The tone adopted by him in his discussion of ecclesiastical questions, the devout language of his last will, and the circumstances of his deathbed, all seem to show that he was a genuine believer in Christianity as a religion having a divine origin, though he thought far otherwise of the particular modes of government and of the ceremonies of the church. His latitudinarian views, coupled probably with a cynical mode of speaking on the questions which were so keenly debated in his time, together with the fact that Selden was on friendly terms as well with Hobbes as with Archbishop Ussher, are probably the source of the rumour that Selden 'was at the heart an infidel and inclined to the opinions of Hobbs.' Sir Matthew Hale, says Richard Baxter, 'oft professed to me that Mr. Selden was a resolved, serious Christian, and that he was a great adversary to Hobbs's errors, and that he had seen him openly oppose him so earnestly as either to depart from him or drive him out of the room' (Baxter's App. to the 'Life and Death of Hale,' Hale's *Works*, 1805, i. 112).

In politics, if Selden did not exhibit the character of a hero, a martyr, or a saint, he played the part of an honest man. The fact that he was consulted alike by the commons on their rights and by the lords on their privileges is a remarkable testimony not only to his learning, but to his freedom from party bias. He seems in all cases to have maintained what he believed to be the right, and to have been diverted from this course neither by the hope of popular applause nor by the favour of the court, nor by resentment for wrongs by which many men would have been soured. His desire was for an ordered liberty, and that he thought was to be found in the ancient constitution of the country. He had no democratic feeling, and no admiration for the great mass of mankind. 'So generous,' he says, 'so ingenuous, so proportioned to good, such fosterers of virtue, so industrious, of such mold are the few; so inhuman, so blind, so dissembling, so vain, so justly nothing but what's ill disposition are the most' (Dedication to *Titles of Honour*). Nor did he cherish the sanguine belief which characterises the zealous reformer, that all change is for the better and that all movement is forward. On the contrary, he had perhaps to a degree unusual even with Englishmen the love of precedent; he felt that in the records of the race was to be found the only remedy for the shortness of the life of the individual. 'The neglect or only vulgar regard,' he says, 'of the fruitful and precious part of it [antiquity] which gives necessary light to the present in matter of state, law, history, and the understanding of good authors, is but preferring that kind of ignorance which our short life alone allows us before the many ages of former experience and observation, which may so accumulate years to us as if we had lived even from the beginning of time' (Dedication to *History of Tythes*).

Selden from first to last reserved to himself that leisure which is needful for the life of a student. But, while jealous of his studious leisure, he carried on a considerable correspondence with friends. Ben Jonson, Archbishop Ussher, Lord Conway, the universal correspondent Peiresc, Dr. Langbaine, Whitelocke, and Gerard Vossius were among his correspondents. The fragments which have survived of his correspondence with Eliot exhibit Selden in the pleasing light of a man to whom his friends turned with the certainty that his time, his trouble, and his learning would willingly be given to aid them, or even their friends. 'His mind,' says Wood, 'was as great as his learning—full of generosity, and harbouring nothing that seemed base.' So, too, in money matters Selden, though he died rich, appears to have been neither greedy in acquiring nor stingy in the spending of money, and he appears to have been liberal in his assistance to literary enterprises, such as the publication of the 'Septuagint.'

In person Selden is described by Aubrey as 'very tall—I guess six foot high—sharp, oval face, head not very big, long nose inclining to one side, full popping eie' (i.e. grey eyes). The following are the chief known

portraits: In oils: an anonymous one in the National Portrait Gallery; one in the Bodleian Gallery, attributed to Mytens; one in the Bodleian Library attributed to the same artist; and a second in the same library which is probably the portrait referred to by Hearne as having been placed in the library on 18 May 1708, and also by Granger, who mentions a portrait by Vandyck as in the Bodleian Library. Among engraved portraits are that prefixed to Pococke's 'Eutychius,' fol. 1658; engraved by J. Chantry, prefixed to the 'Nativity of Christ,' 1661, 8vo; by Van Hove, 1677, 12mo; prefixed to the 'Janus Anglorum,' 1682, fol., engraved by R. White; by Faber after Vandyck, 1713, 4to; by Virtue after Lely prefixed to Selden's works, edited by Wilkins, 1726; by J. Sturt after Faithorne; by Burghers, prefixed to the catalogue of the Bodleian Library; one in Lodge's 'Portraits,' after a Mytens in the Bodleian (see Bromley, *Catalogue of Portraits*, 1795; Granger's *Biographical History*, s.v. 'Selden;' Hearne, *Remarks and Collections*, under date 19 May 1708).

Alike in his Latin and in his English works, the style of Selden is prolix and embarrassed. He seems to have possessed a vast memory, and as he thought and wrote this memory seems ever to have suggested to him some collateral subject, and thus painfully to have diverted him from the direct course of his statement or argument. He is perpetually overburdened with the weight of his learning. The following is a chronological list of his works: 1. 'Jani Facies,' London, 1610, 12mo; London, 1681, 12mo, englished by Redman Westcott (i.e. Adam Littleton), and published in 'Tracts,' London, 1683, fol. 2. 'England's Epinomis,' London, 1610, and in 'Tracts,' London, 1683, fol. 3. 'Duello,' London, 1610, 4to; London, 1771? 4to. 4. 'Notes on Drayton,' 1612, fol. and 1613, fol. 5. 'Titles of Honour,' London, 1614, 4to; London, 1631, fol.; London, 1672, fol.; translated into Latin by Arnold, Frankfurt, 1696, 4to. 6. 'Analecton,' Frankfurt, 1615, 4to; with the 'Metamorphosis,' 1653, and with the 'Janus,' 1653, 12mo. 7. 'Notes on Fortescue,' 1616, 8vo; 1672, 12mo; 1737, fol.; 1775, fol. 8. 'De Diis Syris,' London, 1617, 8vo; Leyden, 1629, 8vo; Leipzig, 1668, 8vo; Amsterdam, 1680, 8vo; in Ugolini's 'Thesaurus,' vol. xxiii., 1744, fol.; Venice, 1760, fol.; translated by Hanson, Philadelphia, 1881. 9. 'History of Tythes,' 1618, 4to; a second edition in the same year and form. 10. 'Eadmer,' 1623, fol. 11. 'Marmora Arundelliana,' London, 1624, 4to; 1628, 4to; London, 1629, 4to. 12. 'De Successionibus,' London, 1631, 4to; London, 1636, fol.; Leyden, 1638, 8vo, with 'Uxor Ebraica,' London, 1646, 4to. 13. 'Mare Clausum,' London, 1635, fol.; London, 1636, 8vo; Leyden, 1636, 4to; Amsterdam, 1636, 12mo; London, 1652, fol.; translated by Needham, London, 1663, fol., in 'Cocceii Anim. ad Grotium,' Breslau, 1752, fol. 14. 'De Successione in Pontificatum,' Leyden, 1638, 12mo, in vol. xii. of Ugolini's 'Thes.' Venice, 1651, fol. 15. 'De Jure Naturali,' London, 1640, fol.; Strasburg, 1665, 4to; Leipzig and Frankfurt, 1695, 4to; in vol. xxvii.* of Ugolini's 'Thes.' Venice, 1763, fol. 16. 'Judicature in Parliament,' 1640, 4to. 17. 'Privileges of Baronage,' London, 1642, 8vo; 1689, 8vo. 18. 'Eutychius,' 1642, 4to. 19. 'De Anno Civili,' London, 1644, 4to; Leyden, 1683; in vol. xvii. of Ugolini's 'Thes.' Venice, 1755. fol. 20. 'Uxor Ebraica,' London, 1646, 4to, with the 'De Successionibus,' Frankfurt-on-Oder, 1673 and 1695, both 4to. 21. 'Fleta,' London, 1647, fol.; 1685, 4to; Leipzig, 1734, 4to; translated by Kelham, London, 1771, 8vo. 22. 'De Synedriis,' London, 1650-5, 4to; Amsterdam, 1679, 4to; Frankfurt, 1696, 4to; and epitomised by Bowyer, London, 1785, 4to. 23. 'Decem Scriptores,' London, 1653, fol. 24. 'Vindiciæ,' London, 1653, fol. 25. 'On the Nativity of Christ,' London, 1661, 8vo. 26. 'Of the Office of Lord Chancellor,' edited by W. Dugdale, London, 1671, fol.; 1672, fol.; and London, 1672, 8vo. 27. 'Table Talk,' London, 1689, 4to; London, 1696, 8vo; London, 1716, 12mo; Glasgow, 1755, 12mo; London, 1777, 8vo; London, 1786, 12mo; London, 1797, 16mo; Chiswick, 1818, 12mo; Edinburgh, 1819, 12mo (in 'British Prose-Writers'), 1821, 12mo; London, 1847, 8vo; London, 1856, 8vo; Edinburgh, 1854, 8vo (in Cassell's Library); reprinted by Arber, 1868; London, 1887, 8vo; Oxford, 1892, 8vo.

Selden's works were collected by Dr. David Wilkins, London, 1726, in three volumes, folio (each volume in two parts). In addition to the works collected by Wilkins, there have been attributed to Selden: An essay 'De Juramentis,' published in the twenty-sixth volume of Ugolini's 'Thesaurus,' Venice, 1768, fol.; a work called 'Metamorphosis Anglorum,' London, 1653, 8vo; 'A Brief Discourse concerning the Powers of Peers and Commons, by a Learned Antiquary,' 1640, 4to; and a treatise, 'De Nummis,' London, 1675, which was really the work of Alessandro Sardi.

A 'Discourse on the Laws and Government of England,' by Nathaniel Bacon, was said to be collected from some manuscript notes of Selden, and was published in 1649,

and again in 1672, 1682, 1689, and 1760. In the advertisement to the edition of 1689 it is said that Lord Chief-justice Vaughan had owned that the groundwork of this book was Selden's.

[For the life generally: the Vita by Wilkins, prefixed to his edition of the works; Wood's Athenæ, s. v. 'Selden;' Aubrey's notes in Bliss's edition of Wood. For early life: epitaph in Temple Church; manuscript fragment of autobiography in Selden MSS. in Lincoln's Inn Library, catalogued xii. (xiii.) No. 42; parish register and parish account-books of West Tarring. For his connection with Inner Temple: the entries in the parliament books under respective dates. For his History of Tythes and the attending circumstances: Selden's Treatises of the Purpose and End, &c.; reply to Tilsley; preface to the three tracts. For his political life: the Eliot Papers in Forster's John Eliot, 2nd edit.; Selden's speeches and arguments in Works; Rushworth, vols. i. ii. vi.; Journals of the House of Commons; the Calendars of State Papers; Whitelocke's Memorials; Clarendon's History, bk. v. For his imprisonments: Vindiciæ; the Eliot Papers, ubi supra; the Calendars, Rushworth, vol. ii. Whitelocke. For his pecuniary affairs: will of the Countess of Kent, in registry of probate division; will and codicil of Selden in Wilkins's Life. For his proceedings in reference to the university of Oxford: Wood's Annals of the University, vol. ii., and correspondence in Wilkins's Life. For his sculptures: Prideaux's Marmora Oxoniensia; Chandler's edition of the same work; Michaelis's Ancient Marbles in Great Britain, and Macray's Annals of the Bodleian Library, 2nd edit. For his library: Macray's Annals. Professor Margoliouth has supplied the account of Selden's oriental learning on pp. 219–20.] E. F–y.

SELKIRK, fifth Earl of. [See Douglas, Thomas, 1771–1820.]

SELKIRK, ALEXANDER (1676–1721), prototype of 'Robinson Crusoe,' born in 1676, was the seventh son of John Selcraig, shoemaker, of Largo, Fifeshire, who had married Euphan Mackie in 1657. Encouraged by his mother, Selkirk—to use the form of name which he adopted—exhibited at an early age a strong wish to go to sea, but owing to his father's opposition he remained at home until 1695, when the parish records show that he was cited to appear before the session for indecent conduct in church. It was found, however, that he had gone to sea, and nothing more is known of him until 1701, when he was again at Largo, in trouble for quarrelling with his brothers, and was rebuked in the face of the congregation. Next year Selkirk sailed for England, and in May 1703 he joined Captain Dampier's privateering expedition to the South Seas. He must have had considerable previous experience, for he was appointed sailing-master on the Cinque Ports, of which Thomas Stradling became captain after the death of Charles Pickering. Various prizes were taken, and Stradling and Dampier parted. In September 1704 the Cinque Ports put into Juan Fernandez, and recovered two men who had accidentally been left on the island some months before. A quarrel with Stradling led Selkirk to resolve to leave the ship, and he was landed, with all his effects, on this uninhabited island. He at once saw the rashness of his conduct, but Stradling refused to take him on board again.

For many days Selkirk was in great distress; but as winter approached he set about building two huts, and in a few months he was reconciled to his lot. The island abounded in goats, and hunting became his chief amusement. After his powder was exhausted, he attained to great skill in running and climbing in pursuit of goats. He made clothes of goat-skins, and tamed cats and goats to be his companions. Knives were formed out of some old iron hoops. Twice ships came in sight, and Selkirk was perceived by one of them; but as this was a Spanish ship Selkirk hid himself, and the ship went on after firing some shots. At length the ships belonging to a new enterprise of Dampier touched at Juan Fernandez (31 Jan. 1709), and, Selkirk having drawn their attention by a fire, a boat was sent on shore and he was taken on board the Duke, commanded by Captain Woodes Rogers [q. v.], who had Dampier as pilot. The character given Selkirk by Dampier caused him to be at once appointed mate. The ships set sail on 12 Feb. Several prizes were taken, and Selkirk was given the command of the Increase (29 March). In January 1710 he was made sailing-master of a new prize, under Captain Dover, and on 14 Oct. 1711, after a long delay at the Cape, they reached the Thames. Selkirk's booty was 800*l.*

Selkirk had been absent from England for over eight years, more than half of which he had spent on Juan Fernandez, and his adventures excited much interest when described in Captain Woodes Rogers's 'A Cruising Voyage round the World,' and Captain Edward Cooke's 'A Voyage to the South Sea and round the World' (vol. ii. introduction), both published in 1712. There was also a catchpenny pamphlet, 'Providence Displayed, or a Surprising Account of one Alexander Selkirk . . . written by his own hand' (reprinted in 'Harl. Misc.,'

1810, v. 429). Selkirk was introduced to Steele, who knew Woodes Rogers (AITKEN, *Life of Steele*, ii. 195–6), and his story was made the subject of a graphic paper (No. 26) in the 'Englishman' (3 Dec. 1713). Steele describes him as a man of good sense, with a strong and serious but cheerful expression.

In 1719 Defoe published 'Robinson Crusoe' [see DEFOE, DANIEL]. Perhaps Defoe's attention was recalled to Selkirk's story by the appearance of a second edition of Rogers's 'Voyage' in 1718. Despite some apocryphal stories, there is nothing to show that Defoe knew anything of Selkirk beyond what had been published by Rogers, Cooke, and Steele. Defoe owed little of his detail to this 'downright sailor,' as Cooke put it, 'whose only study was to support himself during his confinement' (WRIGHT, *Life of Defoe*, 1894, pp. 171–2, 402; DEFOE'S *Romances and Narratives*, ed. Aitken, 1895, vol. i. p. lii).

Selkirk returned to Largo early in the spring of 1712, and there lived the life of a recluse, making for the purposes of meditation a sort of cave in his father's garden. After a short time, however, he met a girl named Sophia Bruce, and persuaded her to elope with him, apparently to Bristol, and thence to London. The records of the court of queen's bench contain a process against 'Alexander Selkirke,' of the parish of St. Stephen, Bristol, for an assault on Richard Nettle, shipwright, on 23 Sept. 1713 (*Notes and Queries*, 2nd ser. xi. 246). In a will of January 1717–18 Selkirk called Sophia his 'loving friend, Sophia Bruce, of the Pall Mall, London, spinster,' and made her his executrix and heiress, leaving her, with remainder to his nephew Alexander, son of David Selkirk, a tanner of Largo, a house at Craigie Well, which his father had bequeathed to him (cf. *Scots Mag.* 1805, pt. ii. pp. 670–4). Selkirk apparently deserted Sophia afterwards. After his death, a Sophia Selcraig, who claimed without legal justification to be his widow (no date is given), applied for charity to the Rev. Samuel Say, a dissenting minister in Westminster ('Say Papers,' in the *Monthly Repository*, 1810, v. 531).

Meanwhile Selkirk had resumed his life as a sailor, and before 1720 seems to have married a widow named Frances Candis. On 12 Dec. 1720 he made a new will, describing himself as 'of Oarston [Plymstock, Devon], mate of his majesty's ship Weymouth.' He left everything he had to his wife Frances, whom he made his sole executrix. He entered the Weymouth as master's mate on 20 Oct. 1720, and apparently died on board next year. In the ship's pay-book he is entered as 'dead 12 Dec. 1721.' The will of 1720 was propounded for probate on 28 July 1722, and was proved by the widow on 5 Dec. 1723, when both her marriage to Selkirk and his death were admitted. She claimed the house at Craigie Well, and apparently obtained possession of it. Before December 1723, when she proved the will, she had married a third time, being then the 'wife of Francis Hall' ('Will of Alexander Selkirk, 1720,' in *New England Hist. and Gen. Reg.* October 1896, and with facsimile, *ib.* April 1897). Selkirk seems to have had no children.

Various relics were preserved by Selkirk's friends, and a bronze statue has been erected at Largo. A tablet in his memory was also placed, in 1868, near his look-out at Juan Fernandez, by Commodore Powell and the officers of H.M.S. Topaz, for which they were thanked by Thomas Selcraig, Selkirk's only collateral descendant, then living in Edinburgh (*Notes and Queries*, 4th ser. ii. 503, iii. 69). But the best memorials are 'Robinson Crusoe' and Cowper's 'Lines on Solitude,' beginning 'I am monarch of all I survey.'

[The fullest account of Selkirk, based chiefly on the contemporary narratives already mentioned, is contained in the Life and Adventures of Alexander Selkirk, by John Howell, 1829. An earlier work, Providence Displayed, or The Remarkable Adventures of Alexander Selkirk, by Isaac James, appeared in 1800, and the story was retold in the Rev. H. C. Adams's Original Robinson Crusoe, 1877. The author of 'Picciola' (Saintine, i.e. J. Xavier Boniface) professed to base his interesting romance 'Seul' (Paris, 1850) upon the true history of Selkirk, and his work was translated as 'The Solitary of Juan Fernandez,' Boston, 1851. See also Wilson's Life of Defoe, 1830, iii. 453; Sutcliffe's Crusoniana, 1843, pp. 144–52; Collet's Relics of Literature, 1823, pp. 342–4; Funnell's Voyage round the World, 1707; Gent. Mag. xliii. 374, 423, lvii. 1155, lviii. 206; information kindly given by Mr. John Ward Dean of Boston, U.S.A., and Mr. Hubert Hall, F.S.A., of the Public Record Office.] G. A. A.

SELLAR, PATRICK (1780–1851), of Westfield, Morayshire, factor to George Granville Leveson-Gower, first duke of Sutherland [q. v.], was only son of Thomas Sellar of Westfield by Jane, daughter of the Rev. Patrick Plenderleath, an Edinburgh minister. After a legal education in Edinburgh, he became factor to the Duke of Sutherland, and was employed in the changes on the Sutherland estates that took place between 1807 and 1816. The middlemen were

abolished, and, in consequence of the periodical failure of the crops in the straths or river valleys, the crofters were removed to settlements on the coast. On a charge of oppression in connection with these removals Sellar was tried at Inverness on 23 April 1816 before Lord Pitmilly, and was acquitted by the unanimous verdict of the jury.

Sellar retired from the Duke of Sutherland's service in 1818, but retained his sheep-farms on the estate till his death in 1851. In 1819 Sellar married Anne, daughter of Thomas Craig of Barmuckety, Elgin, by whom he had nine children. The third son, William Young Sellar, is noticed separately.

His seventh son, Alexander Craig Sellar (1835–1890), graduated B.A. with a first class in *literæ humaniores* from Balliol College, Oxford, in 1859 (M.A. 1865), joined the Scottish bar in 1862, became assistant education commissioner in 1864, was legal secretary to the lord-advocate from 1870 to 1874, and was M.P. in the liberal interest for the Haddington Burghs from 1882 to 1885. In 1885 he was elected for the Partick division of Lanarkshire, and joined the liberal unionist party on its formation next year, when he was re-elected for the same constituency. In the new parliament he acted as whip of his party until 1888. He died on 16 Jan. 1890.

[Private information. A full account of the charges against Patrick Sellar, and a discussion thereof, will be found in Report of Trial (Edinburgh, 1816); reprinted in The Sutherland Evictions, by his son, Thomas Sellar (London, 1883); cf. Alexander Mackenzie's History of the Highland Clearings and Professor Blackie's Lays and Legends of the Highlands, to which works that of Thomas Sellar is a reply.] A. L.

SELLAR, WILLIAM YOUNG (1825–1890), professor of Latin in Edinburgh University, third son of Patrick Sellar [q. v.], was born at Morvich, Sutherlandshire, on 22 Feb. 1825, and joined, at the early age of seven, the youngest class in the Edinburgh Academy, then under its first head master, Dr. Williams, the friend of Scott and Lockhart. At the age of fourteen he was 'dux' or head boy of the school. Thence he went to Glasgow University, where Edmund Law Lushington was professor of Greek and William Ramsay (1806–1865) [q.v.] was professor of Latin. Under these teachers and friends Sellar advanced in classical learning. He gained a Snell exhibition and a Balliol scholarship, matriculating 1 Dec. 1842, and was a contemporary of his friends Matthew Arnold and Principal Shairp, and a pupil and friend of Benjamin Jowett, later master of Balliol. After taking a first class in *literæ humaniores*, and graduating B.A. in 1847 (M.A. 1850), Sellar was elected to a fellowship at Oriel in 1848. He lectured for a short time in the university of Durham, whence he went to assist Professor Ramsay in the Latin chair at Glasgow (1851–3). From 1853 to 1859 he was assistant professor of Greek at St. Andrews. From 1859 to 1863 he held the Greek chair in that university, and from 1863 till his death in October 1890 he was professor of Latin in the university of Edinburgh. He married, in 1851, Eleanor, daughter of Mr. Dennistoun of Golfhill, and left issue.

The least obviously permanent, though perhaps the most important, part of Sellar's work was academic. A sound though not, in his own judgment, a brilliant scholar, his appreciation of classical literature was keen and contagious. His modesty, humour, kindness, and generous sentiments conciliated the affection, while his learning secured the respect, of his pupils, many of whom have been distinguished scholars and men of letters. His published works were 'The Roman Poets of the Republic' (1863); 'The Roman Poets of the Augustan Age: Virgil,' 1877; and 'Horace and the Elegiac Poets' (edited by Professor W. P. Ker), 1892. These are remarkable examples of sound and sensitive literary criticism.

[Private information.] A. L.

SELLER, ABEDNEGO (1646?–1705), non-juring divine, son of Richard Seller of Plymouth, was born in that town about 1646, and matriculated from Lincoln College, Oxford, as 'pauper puer,' or servitor, on 26 April 1662. He left the university without taking a degree, and 'past through some mean employment' (Wood, *Athenæ Oxon.* iv. 564). On 11 March 1665 he was ordained deacon by Bishop Seth Ward at the palace, Exeter, and was described as a literate, but did not proceed to the priesthood until 22 Dec. 1672, when he was ordained by Bishop Sparrow in Exeter Cathedral. He was probably the Abednego Seller who married Marie Persons at Abbotsham, near Bideford, on 2 Dec. 1668.

Seller was instituted to the rectory of Combe-in-Teignhead, near Teignmouth, Devonshire, on 29 March 1682, and vacated it on 8 Sept. 1686 by his institution to the vicarage of Charles at Plymouth. Refusing the oaths to the new sovereigns, he was deprived of this preferment, and his successor was admitted to it on 2 Sept. 1690. Seller removed to London and settled in Red Lion Square. Bishop Smalridge wrote rather harshly of him in 1696, that he 'had the reputation of a scholar, though not of a good

man, before he was a non-juror' (NICHOLS, *Illustr. of Lit.* iii. 253). His library was of considerable value, but on 17 Jan. 1699–1700 'a fire hap'ned in Red Lyon Square,' and burnt, among other properties, 'Mr. Sellar's the nonjuring parson's library, with a great number of choice and scarce manuscripts' (LUTTRELL, *Brief Relation*, iv. 605). He died in London in 1705.

Seller left to the Bodleian Library a manuscript of the end of the fifteenth century, containing William of Malmesbury's 'De Gestis Pontificum' and the 'Chronicon Lichfeldense.' To Lincoln College he gave 'y^e^ perpetual use of his Byzantine Historians in folio.' The rest of his books were to be sold 'for the benefit of his grandchildren who are under age.' Twenty-two manuscripts in his collection are described in Bernard's 'Catalogi lib. Manuscriptorum' (1697, ii. 96), and he possessed nearly two hundred coins. A copy of the 'Thesaurus' of Bonaventure Vulcanius (1600), now at the British Museum, was his property, and contains some notes in his handwriting (cf. GRANGER, *Biogr. Hist.* ed. 1824, v. 216; HERBERT, *Autobiogr.* ed. Lee, p. xlvi).

Seller was the author of: 1. 'An Infallible Way to Contentment in the midst of Publick or Personal Calamities' (anon.), 1679 and 1688. It was translated into Welsh about 1790, and reprinted in 1803 and 1822; to the latter reprint a preface was contributed by the Rev. Thomas Tregenna Biddulph [q. v.] In 1883 it was reproduced by the Religious Tract Society as the third of its 'Companions for a Quiet Hour.' It was then described as eloquent and as 'singularly free from all trace of sectarianism,' but the writer is often indebted to the author of the 'Whole Duty of Man' (*Academy*, 12 Jan. 1884, p. 24). 2. 'Remarques relating to the state of the Church of the First Centuries; with Animadversions on J. H.'s "View of Antiquity"' (anon.), 1680, dedicated to Dr. William Cave. J. H. was Jonathan Hanmer [q. v.] of Barnstaple. 3. 'The Devout Communicant assisted with Rules, together with Meditations, Prayers, and Anthems for Every Day of the Holy Week,' 1686; 6th edit. 1695. This work, after much revision and enlargement, was republished in 1704 as 'The Good Man's Preparation for the Receiving of the Blessed Sacrament,' and was then dedicated to Sir W. Boothby. 4. 'Remarks upon the Reflections of the Author of Popery Misrepresented [Gother] on his answerer [Stillingfleet], particularly as to the Deposing Doctrine' (anon.), 1686. 5. 'A Plain Answer to a Popish Priest questioning the Orders of the Church of England' (anon.), 1688. It was answered by Thomas Fairfax [q. v.], a jesuit, to whom Seller in 1689 replied in a second edition 'with an answer to the Oxford Animadverter's Reflections.' 6. 'History of Passive Obedience since the Reformation' (anon.), 1689. 7. 'Continuation of the History of Passive Obedience' (anon.), 1690; to some copies an appendix of fifty-six pages is added; it was written to show that the oath of allegiance to William and Mary should not be taken, and was answered by numerous writers, including Bishop Stillingfleet, Samuel Johnson, rector of Corringham, Essex, and James Parkinson, fellow of Lincoln College, Oxford. Seller probably wrote 'A Letter to the Author of a late paper entituled "A Vindication of the Divines of the Church of England" in defence of the "History of Passive Obedience"' (anon.), 1689. 8. 'Considerations upon the Second Canon in the book entituled Constitutions and Canons Ecclesiastical' (anon.), 1693. 9. 'Form of Prayer and Humiliation for God's Blessing upon his Majesty and his Dominions' (anon.), 1690. 10. 'An Exposition of the Church Catechism from our Modern Authors and the Holy Scriptures' (anon.), 1695. 11. 'The Antiquities of Palmyra, with an appendix on the names religion, and government; and a commentary on the inscriptions lately found there,' 1696; 2nd edit. 1705 (cf. *Philosophical Transactions*, xix. 358–60). Seller assisted Dr. William Cave in his 'Historia Literaria' (1688), though Cave rarely acknowledged his aid. Some Greek lines by him are prefixed.

[Western Antiquary, v. 289–92 (by Rev. J. Ingle Dredge), afterwards issued separately on 21 Jan. 1886; Supplementary note by Mr. Dredge from vol. vi. with date 19 July 1886; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Halkett and Laing's Dict. of Anonymous Lit. pp. 501, 864, 942, 1145, 1920, 2163–4; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. v. 587; Hearne's Collections, ed. Doble, ii. 235; Macray's Bodleian Libr. 2nd ed. p. 174; Harl. MS. 3782, f. 26; Nichols's Illustr. of Lit. iv. 101.]

W. P. C.

SELLER, JOHN (*fl.* 1700), hydrographer to the king, compiler, publisher, and seller of maps, charts, and geographical books, was for many years settled at the Hermitage in Wapping (*Notes and Queries*, 7th ser. xii. 515); he had also a shop in Exchange Alley, near the Royal Exchange. In June 1667 he answered a set of magnetical queries propounded to the Royal Society (*Phil. Trans.* i. 478). In 1671 he published a folio volume of charts and sailing directions, under the title of 'The English Pilot,' and another called 'The Sea Atlas,' to which were prefixed letters patent from the king, setting forth

that as he (Seller) had been for several years collecting and composing these works, it was forbidden 'to copy, epitomise, or reprint' the treatises of navigation; 'to counterfeit any of the maps, plans, or charts' in them, or to import them or any part of them from beyond the seas, 'either under the name of Dutch Waggoners or any other name whatsoever,' within the term of thirty years.

Notwithstanding the declaration on the title-page of the 'English Pilot' that it is 'furnished with new and exact draughts, charts, and descriptions gathered from the experience and practice of divers able and expert navigators of our English nation,' the maps and charts were taken from the Dutch, and were, in many instances, printed from the Dutch plates, from which the original Dutch title had been imperfectly erased, and an English title, with Seller's name, substituted. The 'English Pilot' ran through many editions, till the end of the eighteenth century, new maps from time to time taking the place of the old. The number of maps which Seller published was very great; some of them, no doubt, drawn by himself or under his direction; but there is no reason to suppose that he was a surveyor or hydrographer in any other sense than a compiler and seller of charts. Besides these, he published almanacs for the Plantations—for Jamaica and Barbados; a 'Pocket Book containing several choice Collections in Arithmetic, Geometry, Surveying, Dialling,' &c. (12mo, 1677); and 'The Sea-Gunner, shewing the Practical Part of Gunnery as it is used at Sea' (sm. 8vo, 1691). John Seller, jun., had a shop at the sign of the Star, near Mercer's Chapel in Cheapside, where the older man's publications were on sale.

[General and Map Catalogues in the British Museum; his own publications; information from Mr. C. H. Coote.] J. K. L.

SELLON, BAKER JOHN (1762–1835), lawyer, born on 14 March 1762, was second son of William Sellon (*d.* 1790), perpetual curate of St. James's, Clerkenwell. He was admitted into Merchant Taylors' School on 2 Nov. 1773 (*Register*, ed. Robinson, p. 137), whence he was elected to St. John's College, Oxford, on 11 June 1779, and graduated B.C.L. on 24 Oct. 1785 (Foster, *Alumni Oxon.* 1715–1886, s. v.) His own wish was to have entered holy orders, but, at his father's request, he studied law, and was called to the bar from the Inner Temple on 10 Feb. 1792. After practising for several years with distinction, he was admitted a serjeant-at-law in Easter term, 1798, and became ultimately leader of the Norfolk circuit. Increasing deafness, however, obliged him to refuse a judgeship, and finally to retire from the bar. At his request Henry Addington, viscount Sidmouth [q. v.], appointed him in 1814 police magistrate at Union Hall, whence, in January 1819, he was transferred to Hatton Garden office. There he continued to act until his retirement in 1834. He died at Hampstead on 19 Aug. 1835. By his marriage, on 24 Jan. 1788, to Charlotte (*d.* 1832), daughter of Rivers Dickinson of St. John Street, Clerkenwell, he had a large family. His second daughter, Maria Ann, married, in 1819, John James Halls [q. v.], and his third daughter, Anne, married, in 1816, Sir Benjamin Collins Brodie the elder [q. v.]

Sellon was author of: 1. 'Analysis of the Practice of the Courts of King's Bench and Common Pleas, with some Observations on the mode of passing Fines and suffering Recoveries,' 8vo, London, 1789. 2. 'The Practice of the Courts of King's Bench and Common Pleas,' 2 vols. 8vo, London, 1792–6; 2nd edit. 2 vols. 8vo, London, 1798. A book founded upon George Crompton's 'Practice,' 1780 and 1786. 3. 'Treatise on the Deity and the Trinity,' 8vo, London, 1847, a posthumous work, edited by W. Marsh.

[Gent. Mag. 1790 ii. 673, 763, 1835 ii. 651–3; Reminiscences of Wm. Rogers, rector of St. Botolph, Bishopsgate, p. 6; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Allibone's Dict. of Authors.] G. G.

SELLON, PRISCILLA LYDIA (1821–1876), foundress of Anglican sisterhoods, born in 1821, was daughter of William Richard Baker Sellon, commander R.N. The latter was a son of Thomas Smith, receiver-general to the dean and chapter of St. Paul's, by Sarah, daughter of William Sellon, and sister of Baker John Sellon [q. v.] Smith assumed in 1847, on inheriting the property of his aunt, Sophia Sellon, the name and arms of his mother's family.

Miss Sellon lost her mother early in childhood, and was trained by her father in habits of independence. The want of employment for women impressed her in youth, and, learning printing, she advocated it as an industry for her sex. She was just about to leave England on New Year's Day, 1848, when she was arrested by an appeal from Bishop Henry Phillpotts [q. v.], in response to which she began working among the poor in the three towns of Plymouth, Devonport, and Stonehouse. She was alone for some time, but gradually other ladies joined her in the work, and she became the foundress of the

Society of Sisters of Mercy of the Holy Trinity, Devonport. Schools and orphanages were established by her, and she took blocks of houses for poor tenants, enforcing among them simple rules of conduct. In this way she spent a considerable portion of her own means, while, with her father's concurrence, the property, valued at several thousands of pounds, to which she was entitled at his death was appropriated to the endowment of the society.

Dr. Pusey took a warm interest in the scheme, and acted as spiritual director of the sisterhood. This circumstance was in itself sufficient to evoke hostile criticism. During 1848 complaints were made against Miss Sellon in the local press, and the bishop deemed it necessary, as visitor of the orphans' home, to institute a public inquiry into her actions (15 Feb. 1849). He came to the conclusion that she had committed some imprudent acts, but on the whole he warmly espoused her cause. She had worked devotedly during the cholera epidemic of 1848, and in the spring of 1849 she had a serious illness. Robert Stephen Hawker [q.v.] addressed to her in 1849 a sympathetic tract, entitled 'A Voice from the Place of S. Morwenna in the Rocky Land,' and she herself issued in 1850 'A few Words to some of the Women of the Church of England.' During 1852 the printing-presses at Plymouth and Devonport teemed with pamphlets for and against her, and the bishop thought it necessary to resign the post of visitor to her society (cf. his *Letter to Miss Sellon*, 1852). Miss Sellon wrote a reply to one of her opponents, the Rev. James Spurrell, which passed through seven editions; her father published a pamphlet contradicting 'the alleged acts of cruelty,' the second edition of which came out in 1852 (Davidson, *Bibliotheca Devoniensis*, and supplement; Worth, *Three Towns Bibliotheca*).

The sisterhoods continued to flourish, and branches were established in many centres of population. Some of the sisters went out to the Crimea, and in 1864 Miss Sellon organised an establishment of missionary sisters of the church of England to work in the Pacific. In 1866 and 1871, when epidemics of cholera and small-pox raged in London, the members of her societies worked with great vigour. Her exertions told upon her health, and, after suffering from paralysis for fifteen years, she died at West Malvern on 20 Nov. 1876.

[Guardian, 29 Nov. 1876, pp. 1550 and 1557; Tract of Commander Sellon; Liddon's Life of Pusey, iii. 192; Times, 24 Nov. 1876, p. 1, 25 Nov. p. 9; Men of the Time, 8th ed. In 1869 Miss Sellon was described under the name of Miss Melton in 'Maude, or the Anglican Sister of Mercy; edited by Miss E. J. Whately,' and in 1878 there was published 'Augusta, or the Refuted Slanders of 30 Years ago on the late Miss Sellon and her Sisters, once more refuted and dedicated to Miss Whately, by M. A. H. Nicholl.'] W. P. C.

SELLYNG, RICHARD (*fl.* 1450), poet, wrote in old age a poem, 'Evidens to Beware and Gode Counsayle,' in the Harleian MS. 7333, f. 36 *a*, which he submitted to the correction of John Shirley [q. v.] He is described in the title as 'that honourable squier,' and may be the Richard Sellyng who in 1432–1433 conveyed Bernham's Manor, Norfolk, to Sir J. Fastolf and John Paston (cf. *Paston Letters*, ed. Gairdner, i. 164, 228).

[Warton's English Poetry, iii. 169; Ritson's Bibl. Poet. p. 101; Blomefield's History of Norfolk.] M. B.

SELRED or **SÆLRÆD** (*d.* 746), king of the East-Saxons, son of King Sigebert the Good, succeeded Offa (*fl.* 709) [q. v.] in or about 709, when Offa departed on his pilgrimage. Selred was slain in the thirty-eighth year of his reign, which would be 746 (as in *A.-S. Chron.*) He was succeeded by his son Swithæd. Bishop Stubbs suggests that until 738 he may have reigned conjointly with a king called Swebriht (*d.* 738) (Symeon, ii. 32). It has been held that Selred was king of East-Anglia and not of Essex (see *Chron. of Melrose*, an. 747), but this opinion must be rejected as contrary to the earliest authority, the genealogies of the kings (Stubbs).

[Mon. Hist. Brit. pp. 629, 637; Will. of Malmesbury's Gesta Regum, i. c. 98 (Rolls Ser.); Dict. Chr. Biogr. art. 'Selred,' by Bishop Stubbs; authorities in text.] W. H.

SELVACH (*d.* 729), king of Scottish Dalriada, was probably a younger son of Fearchair Fada (the Long) [q. v.] He appears in the fictitious list of Buchanan under the name of Solvathius as the sixty-fourth king, and in the rectified list of Father Innes as the twentieth king of the Scots of Dalriada. Our certain knowledge is limited to a few brief entries in the 'Annals' of Tighernach and of Ulster. The year after the death of Fearchair Fada, which took place in 697, his fort of Dunolly was burnt, and Ainbhealach, the elder brother of Selvach (latinised as Amberkelethus, son of Findanus, by Buchanan, who reckons five kings between him and Solvathius, the latinised name of Selvach), was expelled and sent in bonds to Ireland (*Annals of Ulster*). In 701 Dunolly

was again and more completely destroyed by Selvach, and the sept of Cathboth, a branch of the tribe of Lorn, to another branch of which Selvach belonged, was slaughtered (*ib.*), and in the following year the Britons were defeated by the Dalriads at a place called Livingerhat (? Loch Artetit, east of Loch Lomond). In 712 Dunaverty (Aberte) was besieged by Selvach (*ib.*), who in 714 rebuilt Dunolly (*Annals of Tighernach*). In 717 the Britons were defeated by the Dalriads at a stone called Minverce (*ib.*), perhaps a place called Clach na Breattan in Glen Falloch at the head of Loch Lomond. In September 719 there was a battle at Finglen in Lorn, known by tradition as 'the battle of the brothers,' between the two sons of Fearchair Fada, when Ainbhealach, who, we may presume, had escaped from Ireland, was slain by Selvach (*ib.*) In October of the same year Duncad MacBecc and the tribe of Gabhran defeated Selvach and the tribe of Lorn in a sea fight at Ardannisby (*ib.*) Four years later, following a common Celtic usage of unsuccessful or ageing kings, Selvach became a priest (*ib.*), and in the entry which records this he is called king of Dalriada. His son Dungal reigned in his stead (*Synchronisms of Flann Mainistrech*), but in 726 was driven from his kingdom by Eochadh, son of Eochach of the tribe of Gabhran. Again following a usual custom of Celtic chiefs, Selvach came out of his monastic retreat and endeavoured by leading his tribe to recover the kingdom of Dalriada from the rival tribe of Gabhran. But a battle fought by him in 727 with that tribe at Rosfoichen, a headland near Loch Feochan, not far from Oban, was unsuccessful, and Eochadh retained the sovereignty over Dalriada till his death in 733. In 736 two sons of Selvach, Dungal and Feradach, were taken captive by Angus MacFergus, the great monarch of the Picts, who wasted Dalriada and occupied the fort of Dunad (*Annals of Tighernach*). The date of the death of Selvach is given as 730 (A.D. 729) in the 'Annals of Ulster,' the best authority for this period.

[Some ingenious conjectures will be found in Skene's Celtic Scotland, and some apocryphal details in Buchanan; but the Irish Annals, mentioned above, are alone followed here. See also Skene's Notes to Fordun's Chronicle.] Æ. M.

SELWYN, SIR CHARLES JASPER (1813–1869), lord justice, third and youngest son of William Selwyn (1775–1855) [q. v.], and brother of George Augustus Selwyn (1809–1878) [q. v.], bishop of Lichfield, and of William Selwyn (1806–1875) [q. v.], divine, was born at Church Row, Hampstead, Middlesex, on 13 Oct. 1813. He was educated at Ealing, at Eton, and at Trinity College, Cambridge, of which he was successively scholar and fellow. He graduated B.A. 1836, M.A. 1839, and LL.D. 1862. He was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn on 27 Jan. 1840, practised chiefly before the master of the rolls, and amassed a large fortune. As a counsel he was not very brilliant, but he got up his cases with singular accuracy and was listened to with great attention by the court. He served as commissary to the university of Cambridge from 1855 to 1858, received a silk gown on 7 April 1856, and in the same year was made a bencher of his inn. He entered parliament as member for Cambridge University in April 1859, and sat for that constituency until 1868. He was a staunch conservative and a sound churchman, remarkable for polished elocution and firm but conciliatory tone. He first spoke in the house on the address to the queen on arming the volunteer corps (*Hansard*, 5 July 1859, p. 678), and on 13 Aug. 1859 made a powerful speech on a question of privilege connected with the Pontefract election inquiry (*ib.* pp. 1409–11). In the same month he moved a resolution whereby the committee on the Stamp Duties Bill was enabled to introduce a clause extending probate duty to property exceeding one million in value (*ib.* 4 Aug. p. 991), and a few months later secured the rejection of Mr. L. L. Dillwyn's Endowed Schools Bill (*ib.* 21 March 1860, pp. 979–83). His best speech was on the motion for the second reading of the Ecclesiastical Commission Bill (*ib.* 6 June 1860, pp. 2087–103). He spoke for a long time with great earnestness against the bill, and moved an amendment to it. The bill was subsequently withdrawn after a three nights' debate. On 20 Feb. 1861 he divided the house successfully by an amendment to the Trustees of Charities Bill (*ib.* pp. 675–83). One of his last speeches was on the Reform Bill of 1867, when he advocated that the lodger franchise should be extended to university lodgers in the town of Cambridge (*ib.* 24 June 1867, p. 484).

Selwyn became solicitor-general in Lord Derby's administration on 18 July 1867, and was knighted on 3 Aug. Disraeli appointed him a lord-justice of appeal on 8 Feb. 1868, and he was named a privy councillor on 28 March. As a judge, Selwyn proved himself considerate and patient. He died at Pagoda House, Richmond, Surrey, on 11 Aug. 1869, and was buried in Nunhead cemetery. He married, first, in 1856, Hester, fifth daughter of J. G. Ravenshaw, chairman of the East India Company, and widow of Thomas Dowler, M.D. He married, secondly,

on 2 April 1869, Catherine Rosalie, daughter of Colonel Godfrey T. Greene and widow of the Rev. Henry Dupuis, vicar of Richmond. His issue were a son and two daughters. Selwyn, in conjunction with L. F. Selwyn, wrote in 1847 'Annals of the Diocese of New Zealand.'

[Foss's Biographia Juridica, 1870, p. 607; Law Times, 1869, xlvii. 376; Pen-and-Ink Sketches in Chancery, 1867, No. 2, pp. 10–12; Eton Portrait Gallery, 1876, pp. 447–8; Men of the Time, 1868, p. 725; Illustrated London News, 1867, li. 200 (with portrait); Register and Mag. of Biography, 1869, ii. 145.]

G. C. B.

SELWYN, GEORGE AUGUSTUS (1719–1791), wit and politician, was born on 11 Aug. 1719. His father, Colonel John Selwyn of Matson, near Gloucester (son of Major-General William Selwyn, governor of Jamaica in 1703–4), had been an aide-de-camp to Marlborough, was M.P. for Gloucester from 1734 to 1747, and treasurer of Queen Caroline's pensions; he died on 6 Nov. 1751. George inherited his wit from his mother Mary, a daughter of General Farrington, a vivacious beauty, and a woman of the bedchamber to Queen Caroline. It was at her house in Cleveland Court, St. James's, that occurred the scuffle between Walpole and Townshend, which was the original of the quarrel scene between Peachum and Lockit in the 'Beggar's Opera.' She died on 6 Nov. 1777, aged 86 (cf. Hervey, *Memoirs*; Walpole, *Correspondence*, ed. Cunningham, vol. i. passim). Selwyn was the contemporary of Gray and Horace Walpole at Eton, and matriculated from Hart Hall (afterwards Hertford College), Oxford, on 1 Feb. 1738–9. A short residence at the university was followed by the grand tour, but Selwyn returned to Oxford in 1744, and was rusticated in the following year for a reputed insult to the Christian religion; he contended that the freak (of employing a chalice at a wine party) was merely a satire on the doctrines taught by the church of Rome. Having been forbidden to approach within five miles of the university, he took his name off the books to avoid expulsion (*Selwyn and his Contemporaries*, i. 86). Already, before twenty-one, he had been appointed to the sinecures of clerk of the irons and surveyor of the meltings of the mint, the work being performed by deputy, and his sole labour consisted in dining weekly at the public expense. But his pay and the allowance from his father only brought him a total income of 220*l.* a year.

In 1747 he was returned to parliament for the family borough of Ludgershall, of which he became the proprietor on the death of his father on 6 Nov. 1751; his elder brother John, M.P. for Whitchurch, had died of a polypus in the heart on 27 June 1751. He also succeeded to the estate and mansion of Matson and to influence which enabled him to sit for the city of Gloucester from 1754 to 1780, while he could nominate two members for Ludgershall. In parliament he was not merely silent, but nearly always asleep, except when taking part in a division. He voted with the court party, and was rewarded with the further sinecure of registrar of the court of chancery in Barbados, and paymaster of the works, with a large salary. The latter office was abolished in 1782, but Selwyn was appointed by Pitt in the following year to the equally lucrative position of surveyor-general of the works.

Though Selwyn, like Calcraft, was a silent member of parliament, he was a noted conversationist in the clubs and the author of witticisms which set the tables in a roar. He was elected to White's in 1744, and his name was attached to the Jockey Club resolutions of 1767. He was fond of play and, it is said, of women. Walpole relates that the demureness with which Selwyn uttered a good thing gave zest to it, but the savour of such of his jests as survive has long been lost. Perhaps the cleverest of his recorded remarks was that made to Walpole, who had said that the system of politics under George III was the same as that under his grandfather, George II, and that there was nothing new under the sun. Selwyn added, 'nor under the grandson.' In play he had better fortune than many of his associates, and was not beggared. There is no foundation for the story which Wraxall has recorded, that Selwyn joined with Lord Bessborough in 1780 in hindering Sheridan's election at Brooks's Club. Lord Bessborough was not a member of the club till two years after Sheridan's election.

Selwyn's fondness for seeing corpses and criminals and for attending executions was the subject of frequent comment during his lifetime, but it was warmly disputed by intimate friends like Dr. Warner and Philip Thicknesse (*Gent. Mag.* 1791, i. 299, ii. 705). Warner declared that his really distinguishing trait was

> Social wit which, never kindling strife,
> Blazed in the small sweet courtesies of life.

After suffering several years from gout and dropsy, Selwyn died at his house in Cleveland Court, St. James's, on 25 Jan. 1791. A portrait of Selwyn by Reynolds (along with Frederick, fifth earl of Carlisle) is in the Carlisle collection. There is a well-known

portrait of him (also by Reynolds), along with Richard Edgecumbe and 'Gilly' Williams, in the possession of Lord Taunton. Both are reproduced in the 'History of White's Club.'

Selwyn was unmarried. His fondness for children was, however, extreme. He adopted a girl named Maria Fagniani, of whom the Marchesa Fagniani was the mother, and who married, in 1798, Francis Charles, third marquis of Hertford [see under SEYMOUR, FRANCIS INGRAM, second MARQUIS OF HERTFORD], and died at a very advanced age at Paris on 2 March 1856. A dispute between the Duke of Queensberry and Selwyn as to the paternity of the girl was never settled. Both Selwyn and the Duke of Queensberry left her large sums at their deaths.

[Jesse's Selwyn and his Contemporaries; Hayward's Essays, i. 149–208; Black's Jockey Club, pp. 131–3; Liechtenstein's Holland House; Wheatley and Cunningham's London; Gent. Mag. 1791, i. 94, 183, 299.] F. R.

SELWYN, GEORGE AUGUSTUS (1809–1878), primate of New Zealand and bishop of Lichfield, born 5 April 1809, at Church Row, Hampstead, was second son of William Selwyn (1775–1855) [q. v.], and brother of Sir Charles Jasper Selwyn [q. v.], and of William Selwyn (1806–1875) [q. v.] Major Charles Selwyn (*d.* 1749) was an associate of General Oglethorpe, and a prominent benefactor of the church in Jamaica early in the eighteenth century (ANDERSON, *Colonial Church*, iii. 544–5). His father's uncle, George, was sent, when seven years old, to the preparatory school of Dr. Nicholas at Ealing, where the future cardinal, Newman, and his brother Francis were among his schoolfellows. Thence he went to Eton, where he was distinguished both as scholar and athlete, and made the acquaintance of Mr. Gladstone, and in 1827 he became scholar of St. John's College, Cambridge. He came out second in the classical tripos in 1831, graduating B.A. 1831, M.A. 1834, and D.D. *per lit. reg.* 1842, and he was made a fellow of his college. After graduating he settled at Eton as tutor to the sons of Lord Powis. In 1833 he was ordained deacon, and acted as curate to the Rev. Isaac Gossett, vicar of Windsor. Both at Eton and at Windsor Selwyn displayed much organising talent. In 1841, after an episcopal council held at Lambeth had recommended the appointment of a bishop for New Zealand, Bishop Blomfield offered the post to Selwyn. He was consecrated at Lambeth on 17 Oct. 1841, and sailed on 26 Dec. On the voyage out he so far mastered Maori by the help of a native lad returning from England, that he was able to preach in that language immediately on his arrival, and acquired enough knowledge of seamanship to enable him to be his own sailing master among the dangerous waters of the Pacific. Bishop Selwyn's see was the first of a series organised by the English church in the colonies, and his organisation and government of his diocese proved of special importance. In six years' time he completed a thorough visitation of the whole of New Zealand, and in December 1847 began a series of voyages to the Pacific Islands, which were included in his diocese by a clerical error in his letters patent. His letters and journals descriptive of these journeyings present the reader with a vivid picture of his versatility, courage, and energy. His voyagings resulted in 1861 in the consecration of John Coleridge Patteson [q. v.] as bishop of Melanesia. Selwyn elaborated a scheme for the self-government of his diocese, and in 1854 visited England for the purpose of obtaining power to subdivide his diocese, and permission to the church of New Zealand to manage its own affairs by a 'general synod' of bishops, presbyters, and laity. His addresses before the university of Cambridge produced a great impression. On his return to New Zealand four bishops were consecrated, two to the Northern and two to the Southern Island, and the legal constitution of the church was finally established. The first general synod was held in 1859. Selwyn's constitution of the New Zealand church greatly influenced the development of the colonial church, and has reacted in many ways on the church at home. In 1855 the Maori war interrupted the progress of civilisation and Christianity among the natives, and caused an almost universal apostasy. Selwyn was a keen critic of the unjust and reckless procedure of the English land companies, and was misunderstood by Englishmen and Maoris alike. His efforts to supply Christian ministrations to the troops on both sides were heroic and indefatigable. In 1867 he visited England a second time to be present at the first Pan-Anglican synod, an institution which his own work had done much to bring about. While he was in England the see of Lichfield became vacant, and he accepted the offer of it. He was enthroned as ninety-first bishop on 9 Jan. 1868. In 1868 he paid a farewell visit to New Zealand. He governed Lichfield till his death on 11 April 1878. On 25 June 1839 he married Sarah Harriet, only daughter of Sir John Richardson [q. v.], by whom he had an only son, John Richardson Selwyn, bishop of Melanesia (1877) and master of Selwyn College

(1893). Selwyn College, Cambridge, was erected by public subscription in memory of Bishop Selwyn, and was incorporated by royal charter on 13 Sept. 1882. The bishop's portrait by George Richmond, R.A., belongs to St. John's College, Cambridge.

Besides numerous sermons, letters, and charges, Selwyn was the author of: 1. 'Are Cathedral Institutions useless? A Practical Answer to this Question, addressed to W. E. Gladstone, Esq., M.P.,' 1838; written in answer to an inquiry from Mr. Gladstone. 2. 'Sermons preached chiefly in the Church of St. John the Baptist, New Windsor,' privately circulated, 1842. 3. 'Letters to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel from the Bishop of New Zealand, with extracts from his Visitation Journals;' printed in the society's series entitled 'Church in the Colonies,' Nos. 4, 7, 8, 12 and 20. 4. 'A Verbal Analysis of the Holy Bible, intended to facilitate the Translation of the Holy Scriptures into Foreign Languages,' 1855.

[In Memoriam: a Sketch of the Life of the Right Rev. George Augustus Selwyn, by Mrs. G. H. Curteis, 2nd ed. 1879; Memoir of the Life and Episcopate of George Augustus Selwyn, D.D., by the Rev. H. W. Tucker, 2 vols. 1879; Bishop Selwyn of New Zealand and of Lichfield: a Sketch of his Life and Work, with some further Gleanings from his Letters, Sermons, and Speeches, by G. H. Curteis, 1889; Rusden's History of New Zealand, vols. i. and ii. passim; Times, 12 April 1878.] R. B.

SELWYN, WILLIAM (1775–1855), legal author, second son of William Selwyn, K.C. (who was treasurer of Lincoln's Inn in 1793), by Frances Elizabeth, daughter of Dr. John Dod of Woodford, Essex. George Augustus Selwyn [q. v.], the wit, was his father's first cousin. Born in 1775, William was educated at Eton and St. John's and Trinity Colleges, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1797, being first chancellor's medallist in classics, and senior optime in the mathematical tripos, and proceeded M.A. in 1800. At Lincoln's Inn, where he was admitted a student in 1797, he was called to the bar on 24 Nov. 1807, and elected treasurer in 1840. He went the western circuit, was recorder of Portsmouth from 1819 to 1829, and took silk in Trinity vacation 1827. Soon after the marriage of Queen Victoria he was chosen to assist the prince consort in his legal studies. In later life he became a chronic valetudinarian, and lived in retirement at Pagoda House, Kew Road, Richmond, Surrey, an estate inherited from his father in 1817. He also paid frequent visits to Tunbridge Wells, where he died on 25 July 1855. His remains were interred in the churchyard of the neighbouring village of Rusthall.

Selwyn married, in 1801, Lætitia Frances (*d.* 1842), youngest daughter of Thomas Kynaston of Witham, Essex, by whom he left issue three sons—viz. (1) William Selwyn (1806–1875) [q. v.]; (2) George Augustus (1808–1878) [q. v.], primate of New Zealand and bishop of Lichfield; (3) Sir Charles Jasper [q. v.]—and two daughters, viz. (1) Lætitia Frances, and (2) Frances Elizabeth, wife of George Peacock [q. v.], dean of Ely.

Selwyn collaborated with George Maule in the production of 'Reports of Cases argued and determined in the Court of King's Bench,' London, 1814, 2 vols. 8vo. He was author of 'Abridgment of the Law of Nisi Prius,' 3 successive parts, London, 1806–8, 8vo, a work of great merit, of which the latest (13th) edition, by David Keane, Q.C., and Charles T. Smith, judge of the supreme court of the Cape of Good Hope, appeared in 1869, London, 2 vols. 8vo.

[Bigland's Gloucestershire, ii. 201; Rudder's Gloucestershire, p. 542; Cambridge Calendar, 1798; Gent. Mag. 1855, ii. 320; Tucker's Life of G. A. Selwyn, D.D.; Brayley and Britton's Surrey, iii. 108; Grey's Early Years of the Prince Consort, p. 361; Haydn's Book of Dignities.] J. M. R.

SELWYN, WILLIAM (1806–1875), divine, eldest son of William Selwyn [q. v.], was born in 1806. George Augustus Selwyn (1806–1875) and Sir Charles Jasper Selwyn [q. v.] were his brothers. He was educated under Keate at Eton, where his name appears in upper school fifth form in 1823 (Stapylton, *Eton School Lists*, 1864, p. 113 *a*). He entered St. John's College, Cambridge, in October 1824. In the following three years in succession he gained Sir William Browne's medal for a Greek ode, and in 1826 carried off all the Browne medals. In the same year he was Craven scholar. He graduated in 1828 as sixth wrangler (being one of the Johnian 'seven stars'), and also senior classic and first chancellor's medallist. His subsequent degrees were M.A. in 1831, B.D. in 1850, D.D. in 1864.

In March 1829 he was made a fellow of St. John's, in succession to the younger Herschel, and in the same year gained the Norrisian prize. He was ordained deacon by the bishop of Ely in 1829, and priest by the bishop of Rochester in 1831. In 1831 he was presented by the Duke of Rutland to the rectory of Branstone, Leicestershire, which he exchanged in 1846 for the vicarage of Melbourne, Cambridgeshire, in the gift of the dean and chapter of Ely. He held Mel-

bourne till 1853. In 1833 he was made a canon residentiary of Ely, an office which he retained till his death. In 1855 he was elected to the Lady Margaret professorship, beating his chief competitor, Harold Browne, who then held the Norrisian chair, by the casting vote of the chairman. 'It is Harold the conqueror this time, not William,' was his remark to his opponent, under the impression that the election had gone the other way. He showed his generous spirit on the occasion by insisting on setting apart out of his own income the yearly sum of 700*l.*, first for the better endowment of the Norrisian professorship during Harold Browne's tenure of it, and after that to accumulate till it should reach the sum of 10,000*l.*, when the money should be devoted to such purposes for furthering the study of theology in Cambridge as the senate, with his own approval, should decide upon. Selwyn lived to see the new divinity school erected with the funds thus raised.

In 1852 he was named a member of the cathedrals commission, and the report of 1854 was understood to be largely his work. He was also the moving cause of the rebuilding of his own college chapel, for which purpose funds had been accumulating under the bequest of a late master. In Michaelmas term 1866, when riding along the Trumpington road, he was thrown from his horse, owing to the carelessness, it was said, of an undergraduate, who was riding on the wrong side of the road. In a copy of Latin elegiacs, dated 20 Nov., which appeared in the 'Times' of 15 Dec. 1866, the sufferer apostrophised the 'juvenum rapidissime' in lines of mingled humour and pathos. He never wholly recovered from the effects of the fall, and died on 24 April 1875, being buried at Ely on the 29th.

Selwyn married, on 22 Aug. 1832, Juliana Elizabeth, eldest daughter of George Cooke, esq., of Carr House, Doncaster, who survived him, but left no family. In person he was tall and spare, with a strong likeness to the portraits of George Herbert. He had a *curiosa felicitas* of expression, and was an enthusiastic oarsman.

Besides many letters and sermons, Selwyn published: 1. 'Principles of Cathedral Reform,' 1840. 2. 'Horæ Hebraicæ.,' 1848–60. 3. 'Notæ Criticæ in Versionem Septuagintaviralem,' 1856–8. 4. 'Winfrid, afterwards called Boniface,' a poem, 1864. 5. 'Waterloo, a Lay of Jubilee,' 1865. 6. 'Speeches delivered at Cambridge on various occasions,' 1875 (these last collected and reprinted after his death). He also edited 'Origenes contra Celsum,' bk. i. 1860, bks. i.–iv. 1877; and translated Tennyson's 'Enoch Arden' into Latin verse, 1867.

[Article by Dr. J. S. Wood in the Eagle (St. John's College Magazine), 1875, ix. 298–322; Guardian newpaper, 28 April and 5 May 1875; Gent. Mag. 1832, ii. 263; information from Mr. S. Wayland Kershaw, M.A., librarian of Lambeth; personal recollections.] J. H. L.

SEMPILL. [See also SEMPLE.]

SEMPILL, FRANCIS (1616?–1682), ballad-writer, son of Robert Sempill of Beltrees, Lochwinnoch, Renfrewshire [see under SEMPILL, SIR JAMES, ad fin.), and his wife Mary Lyon, was born about 1616. Educated according to his position, he probably studied law. Like his ancestors, he ardently supported the Stuarts. The family estates were heavily burdened, and, failing to relieve them of debt, he in 1674 alienated to his son by deed the lands of Beltrees and Thirdpart. In 1677, when there was a process of 'horning' against Sempill, his resources further declined. He both sold and feued, granted the superiority over his estates to his neighbour, Crawford of Cartsburn, and resigned to his son the life-rent due to himself and his wife from certain lands. In 1677 Sempill was appointed sheriff-depute of Renfrewshire, and one of his decisions shortly afterwards involved him in a riot in which he was severely handled (WODROW, *Sufferings of the Church of Scotland*, vol. ii. App. p. 8). According to Law (*Memorialls*, 1638–84), he died suddenly at Paisley, 12 March 1682. Sempill married, 3 April 1655, his cousin Jane Campbell of Ardkinlas, Argyllshire, who survived him, together with two sons, Robert and James.

The author of many occasional pieces on social and political subjects, Sempill was widely known as poet and wit. Through an intimacy formed with Cromwell's officers in Glasgow, he was early recognised in England as a song-writer (JOHNSON, *Musical Museum*). Sempill wrote complimentary verses on James, duke of York, and celebrated the births of his children. In his autobiographical poem, 'The Banishment of Poverty by His Royal Highness J. D. A.' (i.e. James, duke of Albany), he gives a lively narrative of his troubles, including his sojourn in the debtors' refuge at Holyrood. Sempill is also credited with a variety of fairly pointed poetical epitaphs, with a Christmas carol, and a sentimental lyric on 'Old Longsyne.'

'She rose and let me in,' a song that is often attributed to Sempill, figures in D'Urfey's 'New Collection of Songs' (1683), and in Henry Playford's 'Wit and Mirth,'

vol. i. (1698). While Alexander Campbell and other Scottish literary historians think the English song is 'conveyed' from Sempill, Ritson ('Historical Essay' prefixed to *Scotish Songs*) claims it for D'Urfey, asserting that the original English version was subsequently 'Scotified.' The Scottish version was doubtless by Sempill. He is also credited, somewhat indecisively, with the ballad of 'Maggie Lauder.' Whether Sempill is responsible for the 'Blythsome Wedding,' which is likewise claimed for Sir William Scott (1674?–1725) [q. v.] of Thirlestane, is open to question. The evidence is scanty and traditions conflicting. Its broad humour and manifest knowledge of the Scottish rustic are features that support Sempill's claims, which are stoutly asserted in family records.

[Campbell's Introduction to the History of Scottish Poetry; Paisley Repository, No. 5; Harp of Renfrewshire; Cunningham's and Chambers's Songs of Scotland; Laing's Fugitive Scottish Poetry; Paterson's Poems of the Sempills of Beltrees.] T. B.

SEMPILL, HEW, eleventh LORD SEMPILL (*d.* 1746), was the fifth son of Francis Abercromby of Fetterneir, Aberdeenshire, who was created Lord Glassford for life on 5 July 1685. His mother was Anne, baroness Sempill, daughter of Robert, seventh lord Sempill. He became ensign in July 1719, and although he succeeded to the peerage (taking his mother's maiden name), held by his mother, on the death of his brother John, tenth lord Sempill, in August 1716, he remained in the army, serving in Spain and Flanders under Marlborough and Ormonde. In 1718 he was promoted major of the 26th regiment or Cameronians, and in 1719 lieutenant-colonel of the 9th foot. On 14 Jan. 1741 he succeeded the Earl of Crawford as colonel of the Black Watch, then the 43rd and now the 42nd foot. In 1743 the regiment, originally raised to keep watch in the highlands, received orders to proceed south to England; and when a rumour reached the soldiers in London that they were to be sent to the West Indies, they immediately proceeded to return to Scotland, but were overtaken and compelled to turn back. Their destination was Flanders, and there, under Lord Sempill, they specially distinguished themselves in the defence of the town of Aeth when it was besieged by the French. So exemplary was the conduct of the regiment in Flanders that the elector palatine desired his envoy to thank George II for their behaviour, adding that for their sakes he would 'always pay a respect and regard to a Scotchman in future.' On 25 April 1745 Lord Sempill was appointed colonel of the 25th foot, and at the battle of Culloden on 16 April 1746 he acted as brigadier-general, his regiment occupying a place in the second line on the left wing. He died at Aberdeen on 25 Nov. 1746, while in command of the troops stationed there. Lord Sempill in 1727 sold the estates of Elliotson and Castle Semple, and in 1741 bought the estate of North Barr. He was the author of 'A Short Address to the Public on the Practice of cashiering Military Officers without a Trial; and a Vindication of the Conduct and Political Opinion of the Author,' London, 1793. By his first wife, Sarah, daughter and coheiress of Nathaniel Gaskill of Manchester, he had five sons and six daughters; he was succeeded by his eldest son, John.

[Cannon's Hist. of the 42nd Regiment; Lieutenant-colonel Percy Groves's Hist. of the 42nd Royal Highlanders, 1893; Chambers's Hist. of the Rebellion of 1745; Collections for Renfrewshire, 1890; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 496–7.] T. F. H.

SEMPILL or **SEMPLE**, HUGH, HUGO SEMPILIUS (1596–1654), mathematician, born at Craigevar in Scotland in 1596, was nephew of Colonel William Sempill [q. v.] He was aggregated to the Society of Jesus at Toledo in 1615, and became rector of the Scottish College at Madrid, where he died on 29 Sept. 1654.

He was the author of: 1. 'De Mathematicis Disciplinis lib. XII, in quibus earum utilitas, dignitas, natura, divisio explicantur,' Antwerp, 1635, fol. (dedicated to Philip IV, king of Spain). 2. 'Experientia Mathematica, de compositione numerorum, linearum quadratorum, &c.,' Madrid, 1642, 8vo. 3. 'Dictionarium Mathematicum,' which was prepared for the press but never published.

The following manuscripts by him are preserved in the National Library at Madrid: 'Historia de regimine Philippi IV' (G. 73); 'Parecer sobre el riego de los prados de Aranjuez y lugares vecinos, en tiempo de Felipe IV;' 'Parecer sobre las señales que se vieron en el cielo, año 1637' (S. 104); 'Discurso contra los ministros codiciosos' (CC. 88).

[Catholic Miscellany, ix. 40; De Backer's Bibl. de la Compagnie de Jésus (1876), ii. 755; Foley's Records, vii. 697; Leith's Narratives of Scottish Catholics, p. 372; Oliver's Jesuit Collections, p. 37; Southwell's Bibl. Script. Soc. Jesu, p. 354; Stothert's Catholic Mission in Scotland, p. 611.] T. C.

SEMPILL, SIR JAMES (1566–1625) of Beltrees, called by KNOX 'the dancer,' was eldest son of John Sempill (son of Robert,

third lord Sempill [q. v.]) His mother, Mary Livingstone, is described by Knox as 'the lusty' daughter of Alexander, fifth lord Livingstone, and one of the 'four Marys' of Mary Queen of Scots. Both John Sempill and Mary were special favourites of the queen, from whom they received on 9 May 1564–5 the lands of Auchtermuchty in Fifeshire, and various lands in Ayrshire. In 1577 doom of forfaiture was pronounced against John Sempill for his part in a conspiracy to assassinate the regent Morton. The conspiracy was revealed by Gilbert Sempill, his associate, and John Sempill made confession and was sentenced to be hanged, drawn, and quartered, but was reprieved and sentenced to be imprisoned in Edinburgh during the regent's pleasure. He died soon after obtaining his liberty, 25 April 1579.

The son was born in 1566, and, being about the same age as the young prince (afterwards James VI), he was, to use his own quaint language regarding the circumstances of his upbringing, 'devoted to his [the prince's] service' by his parents before he 'was;' 'thereafter named in, and after his majesty's own name, before himself could know it; yet after knowledge, confirmed, in his H. court, almost ever since nursed and schooled.' 'And so,' he continues, 'is our David, the king of my birth, the master of my service, the father of my name, framer of my nature, and the Gamaliel of my education, at whose feet (no, at whose elbow and from whose mouth) I confess I have suckt the best of whatsoever may be thought good in me' ('Sacrelege Sacredly Handled,' quoted in Paterson's *Sempills of Beltrees*, p. xxiv). After a course of instruction with the young king, under the direction of George Buchanan, he completed his education at the university of St. Andrews.

Sempill assisted James VI in preparing for the press his 'Basilicon Doron,' 1599; and of the seven copies, all privately printed, one was presented to him. This he privately showed to Andrew Melville, who, having taken note of certain statements on ecclesiastical policy, communicated them to his nephew, James Melville, which led to the matter being brought before the synod of Fife, much to the king's indignation [see under Melville, Andrew, 1545–1622]. When Andrew Melville was in 1606 committed to the Tower of London, Sempill did his utmost to befriend him and secure his liberation.

In 1599 Sempill was resident in London as 'agent' in the affairs of the king of Scots, and in February 1599–1600 he received a passport from Elizabeth to return to Scotland (cf. Paterson's *Sempills of Beltrees*, pp. xxx–xxxi). Shortly after his return he was made knight-bachelor, and in 1601 he was sent on an embassy to France. In February 1602–3 the king, in token of the good service done by him both at home and abroad, 'granted and disponed to him, his heirs and assignees,' a jewel of great beauty and value, formerly belonging to the king's mother, with full power to 'sue all persons who have the said jewel in their keeping for delivery thereof to him;' and 'with command to the advocate to assist in the delivery to him of the jewel, or the value thereof' (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* vi. 534). When King James visited Paisley in 1617, Sempill prepared an oration which 'a pretty boy of nine years' delivered before him in the hall of the Earl of Abercorn.

Sempill died at his house at the Cross of Paisley in February 1625–6, and is described in the obituaries of Robert Boyd of Trochrig as a 'grand enemie à la pseudo-hierarchie.' By his wife, Egidia, daughter of Elphinstone of Blythswood, he had two sons, Robert [see below] and George, the latter of whom died young, and five daughters, of whom Marion was married to Colin Campbell of Ardkinlas, and Margaret to Walter Macfarlane of Macfarlane.

Sempill was the author of several controversial works displaying some learning and no small dialectic skill: 1. 'Cassandra Scoticana to Cassander Anglicanus,' Middelburg, 1618. 2. 'Sacrelege sacredly handled, that is, according to Scripture only; for the use of all Churches in general, but more especially for those of North Britaine,' London, 1619 (against Scaliger and Selden). 3. 'Scoti τοῦ τυχόντος Paraclesis contra Danielis Tileni Silesii Parænesin, cuius pars prima est de Episcopali Ecclesiæ Regimine,' 1622; written at the suggestion of Andrew Melville, and with his help, against a work of Tilenus, a late colleague of Melville's at Sedan, entitled 'Parænesis ad Scotos, Genevensis Disciplinæ Zelotas,' London, 1620. He also continued the poetic tradition of the Sempills by producing the 'Packman's Pater Noster,' a clever satirical attack, but outrageously partisan in tone, against the church of Rome; an edition published at Edinburgh in 1669 bore the title, 'A Pick-Tooth for the Pope, or the Packman's Pater Noster set down in a Dialogue betwixt a Packman and a Priest; translated out of Dutch by S. I. S. and newly augmented and enlarged by his son, R. S.'

The son, Robert Sempill (1595?–1665?), who was born probably about 1595, and educated at the university of Glasgow, where he matriculated in March 1613, enlarged his father's satire, 'The Packman's Pater Noster,' and won for himself a place of his own among Scottish poets by his famous elegy on 'The

Life and Death of Habbie Simson, Piper of Kilbarchan.' The intrinsic merits of the piece, as well as its graphically humorous picture of the amusements of the olden time, would alone entitle its author to a high place among Scottish poets, but it is specially notable besides for its stave, a revival of an ancient one which had passed into desuetude. Through the popularity of the poem the stave became the standard one for Scots elegiac verse long before Burns gave it his special imprimatur. The elegy is supposed to date from about 1640, and had achieved wide popularity as a broadside before it was included in Watson's 'Choice Collection,' 1706–1709. Sempill is also credited with the authorship of the epitaph on 'Sawny Briggs, nephew to Habbie Simson and brother to the Laird of Kilbarchan,' in the same stanza; and he no doubt was the author of other poems—it may even be of some attributed to his son Francis [q.v.] Robert Sempill died between 1660 and 1669. By his wife, Marie Lyon, daughter of Lyon of Auldbar, he had a son Francis, and a daughter Elizabeth, married to Sir George Maxwell of New Wark.

[James Melville's Diary in the Wodrow Society; M'Crie's Life of Andrew Melville; Reg. P. C. Scotl. vol. vi.; Calderwood's Hist. of the Kirk of Scotland: Paterson's Poems of the Sempills of Beltrees, 1849.] T. F. H.

SEMPILL or SEMPLE, ROBERT, third Lord Sempill (*d.* 1572), commonly called the great Lord Sempill, was the elder son of William, second lord Sempill, by his first wife, Lady Margaret Montgomery, eldest daughter of Hugh, first earl of Eglinton. The family from the thirteenth century were heritable bailiffs of the regality of Paisley, and sheriffs of Renfrewshire, under the lord high steward of Scotland. They frequently distinguished themselves in the English wars, and were employed in important duties of state. Sir Thomas Sempill, father of John, first lord Sempill, was killed at the battle of Sauchieburn on 11 June 1488, fighting in support of James III, and the first lord (created by James IV about 1489), fell at Flodden on 9 Sept. 1513.

The third lord, while master of Sempill, obtained, on 20 Oct. 1533, a charter of the office of governor and constable of the king's castle of Douglas. He succeeded his father in 1548. Being a steadfast supporter of the queen regent against the lords of the congregation, he is described by Knox as 'a man sold under sin, an enemy to God and to all godliness' (*Works*, i. p. 339). On account of an attack he had made on Arran, the lords of the west resolved to take his house of Castle Semple, and laid siege to it in December 1559 (*Cal. State Papers*, For. 1559–60, No. 395). Leaving his son at Castle Semple, he took refuge in the stronghold of Dunbar, then under the command of a French captain, M. Sarlabois. The latter was in August 1560 asked to give him up (*ib.* 1560–1, No. 428), but declined to do so until he received the command of the king and queen (*ib.* No. 538). Randolph shortly afterwards reported that Sempill had conveyed himself secretly out (*ib.* No. 550), then that he had retired to his own castle with twenty arquebusiers lent him by Sarlabois (*ib.* No. 571), and, finally, that he had gone to France (*ib.* No. 661); but when his castle was taken in November (*ib.* No. 717), he was still at Dunbar. He was 'relaxed from the horn' in March 1561 (*ib.* 1561–2, No. 15).

Sempill was one of the 'nobles and barons of the west country' who on 5 Sept. signed a band in support of Mary and Darnley, in opposition to the Earl of Moray and other rebels (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* i. 363), and in the army raised against them held a command in the vanguard of the battle (*ib.* p. 379); but though a catholic, he, after the murder of Darnley, joined the association for the 'defences of the young prince' in opposition to Bothwell and the queen. At Carberry Hill on 14 June 1567 he commanded in the vanguard of the army which opposed the queen; and he was also one of those who signed the documents authorising William Douglas of Lochleven to take the queen under his charge in his fortalice of Lochleven. In Morton's declaration regarding the discovery and custody of the 'casket letters,' he is mentioned as having been present at the opening of the casket. After the queen's escape from Lochleven he assembled his dependents against her at Langside on 13 May 1568; and on the 19th he was, with the Earl of Glencairn, appointed lieutenant of the western parts, with special instructions to watch the castle of Dumbarton, and prevent the entrance into it of provisions or reinforcements or fugitives (*ib.* i. 614–15). For his special services he obtained a gift of the abbey of Paisley. Notwithstanding the utmost efforts of Glencairn and Sempill, the castle of Dumbarton continued to hold out, until, on 1 April 1571, its rock was scaled by Thomas Crawford [q.v.] of Jordanhill. Previous to this Sempill, while returning one evening in May 1570 from the army which had demolished the castle of the Hamiltons, was seized by some of the Hamiltons' dependents, and carried a prisoner to Draffen, whence he was shortly

afterwards removed to Argyle (*Cal. State Papers*, For. 1569–71, No. 962; CALDERWOOD, *History*, ii. 565). Calderwood states that he remained in Argyle for twelve months, but he was probably set at liberty in February 1570; for when the house of Paisley surrendered to the regent at that time, the lives of those within it were granted on this condition (*Cal. State Papers*, For. 1569–71, No. 1570).

On 12 June 1572 he had a charter of the lands of Glassford, and he appears to have died in the autumn of the same year. By his first wife, Isabel, daughter of Sir William Hamilton of Sanquhar, he had, with four daughters, two sons—Robert, who predeceased him, leaving a son Robert, fourth lord Sempill, and Andrew, ancestor of the Sempills of Burchell. By his second wife, Elizabeth Carlyle, of the house of Thorthorwald, he had a son John, ancestor of the Sempills of Beltrees [see under SEMPILL, SIR JAMES]. The fourth lord Sempill was in 1607 excommunicated by the kirk as 'a confirmed and obstinate papist,' and appears to have died in 1611.

Neither the third lord Sempill nor his son Robert, master of Sempill, nor the fourth lord Sempill could have been (as Sibbald, Motherwell, and others maintain) the Robert Sempill who was author of the 'Sempill Ballads' [see SEMPILL, ROBERT, 1530?–1595]; the fourth lord was born too late, while in the case of the first two the early date of their death precludes the supposition.

[Cal. State Papers, For. Ser. reign of Elizabeth, and also Scot. Ser. Reg. P. C. Scotl. vols. i.–ii.; Histories of Knox and Calderwood; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 493–4; Collections for the County of Renfrew, vol. ii. 1890.]

T. F. H.

SEMPILL, ROBERT (1530?–1595), ballad-writer on the side of the reformers, born about 1530, was doubtless a cadet of the house of Sempill, of illegitimate birth. Sibbald, Motherwell, and others vainly sought to identify him with Robert, fourth lord Sempill, who succeeded his grandfather in 1572 and died in 1611 [see under SEMPILL or SEMPLE, ROBERT, third LORD SEMPILL]. The ballad-writer received a liberal education. A part of his early life was spent in Paris. In one of his poems he speaks of Clement Marot, who died in 1544, as alive. On his return to Scotland he probably adopted the military profession. Three humorous poems of his of a licentious character that have been preserved in George Bannatyne's manuscript in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, may be referred to a date anterior to 1567, in which year Sempill is known to have written political pasquils. That he held some position at court, or had rendered some political service at this time, is proved by an entry in the lord-treasurer's books of 66*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* paid 'to Robert Semple.' According to his poem entitled 'Ane Complaint upon Fortoun,' he was present at the siege of Leith in 1559–60. In 1570 he issued from the press of Lekprevik in a broadside 'The Regentis Tragedie,' which enjoyed much popularity. During the next two years he wrote a number of pieces of great bitterness, chiefly directed against the Hamiltons, Sir William Kirkcaldy, Sir William Maitland, and others who adhered to the cause of Mary or favoured the catholic faith. In 1572 he was once more in Paris, whence he fled at the massacre of St. Bartholomew. In 1573 he was in Edinburgh, and was probably with the army of Morton during the memorable siege of the castle. In that year he published, in a small quarto volume in black letter—the only known extant copy is in the British Museum—a graphic account of the bombardment of the fortress and the surrender of Grange and Lethington. This poem contains the names of many of the officers of the attacking force, of whom no record has elsewhere been preserved.

Besides 'Ane Complaint upon Fortoun,' written in 1581, in which he feelingly laments the downfall of Morton, Sempill wrote in 1584 a merciless but clever pasquinade, entitled 'The Legend of the Bischop of St. Androis Lyfe,' in which he held up to ridicule Patrick Adamson [q. v.] Dempster places Sempill's death in 1595.

In his ballads, which enjoyed a very great popularity, Sempill appears as a staunch supporter of Moray and the party of the Reformation. His satires are crude and often coarse, but vigorous. As records they are eminently trustworthy, and have a lasting value. Most of the ballads have come down to us in black-letter broadsides, which are preserved in the state paper office, the British Museum, and the library of the Society of Antiquaries, London. Two manuscripts of 'The Legend of the Bischop of St. Androis Lyfe' are extant, one in the library of the university of Edinburgh, the other in that of the Faculty of Advocates.

The three poems in the Bannatyne manuscript were first printed by Allan Ramsay in the 'Evergreen,' Edinburgh, 1724. The 'Sege of the Castel of Edinburgh' and 'The Legend of the Bischop of St. Androis Lyfe' were included by Sir John Graham Dalyell in 'Scotish Poems of the Sixteenth Century,' Edinburgh, 1801, 2 vols. The whole of Sempill's pieces are contained in 'The Sempill

Ballates,' edited by T. G. Stevenson, Edinburgh, 1872, and in 'Satirical Poems of the Time of the Reformation,' edited for the Scottish Text Society by James Cranstoun, LL.D., Edinburgh, 1889–93, 2 vols. 8vo.

[The editions of Sempill's ballads, cited above.] J. C–N.

SEMPILL or **SEMPLE**, WILLIAM (1546–1633), soldier of fortune and political agent, born in 1546, was a cadet of the noble family of Sempill long seated in Renfrewshire. His exact place in the family tree has been variously stated. His name does not occur in Douglas's 'Peerage.' Conn calls him 'frater baronis,' which he certainly was not. Other contemporary writers make him the bastard son of the third or uncle of the fourth baron (COLVILLE, *Letters*, ed. D. Laing, p. 329). Father Hugh Sempill [q. v.], who was undoubtedly his brother's son, describes himself as 'Craigbaitæus,' the Sempills of Craigbait or Craigbet being a branch of the family descended from David, a younger brother of the third, or the 'great' lord Sempill.

In his youth Sempill was for some time attached to the court of Mary Stuart. He subsequently joined a Scottish regiment under Colonel William Stewart, in the service of the Prince of Orange, and on 25 March 1582 he took the command of a company of Scots in the strongly fortified garrison of Liere, near Antwerp. Here, according to one account, smarting under injuries from Colonel Stewart, and under insults which he had received from the governor of the town, who had threatened to hang him for complaining of the sufferings of the Scottish soldiers (for they had been ten weeks without pay or food, and were compelled to live upon roots), Captain Sempill in revenge resolved to betray the garrison into the hands of the Prince of Parma (W. Herle to Burghley, *Hatfield MSS.* ii. 511). According to the Jesuit historian Strada, Sempill obtained a secret interview with Parma at Poperinghee, and declared to him that he had purchased his captaincy at Liere only in order to deliver up the place to the Spaniards, and that if he should succeed in this he should ask for no other reward than his own satisfaction in the event. Parma accordingly placed Sempill in communication with Matthew Corvino, an old and experienced soldier, with whom the plan was arranged. On the night of 1 Aug. 1582 Sempill obtained permission on some pretext to make a sortie, and was given thirty Scots and seven States soldiers for the purpose. He then effected a junction with the troops of Corvino, and early in the morning of the 2nd returned to Liere, where by a preconcerted arrangement with his brother, who was serving as a lieutenant in the same garrison, the gates were opened, and after a brief struggle, during which Sempill distinguished himself by slaying the gatekeeper and officer of the watch, the Dutch forces were overpowered and the Spaniards took possession of the town. The moral effects of Sempill's action were considerable, for though Liere was not a large place, it was, on account of its strength and position, regarded as 'the bulwark of Antwerp and the key of Brabant;' and the betrayal of Bruges in the following year by Colonel Boyd was probably prompted by his countryman's example. After a short visit to Parma at Namur, Sempill was now (1582) sent into Spain with a strong recommendation to the king, who, says Strada, handsomely rewarded him. In November 1587 Philip despatched him to Bernardino de Mendoza then at Paris, warning the ambassador to be cautious in dealing with him, as, in spite of his apparent zeal, he was nevertheless 'very Scotch.' Mendoza, however, was able to report to the king that he found Sempill more trustworthy than most Scotsmen of either sword or gown, and the colonel (as he was now called) was in consequence busily employed in the secret negotiations then being carried on with the catholic nobles of Scotland in view of the projected invasion of England. It was supposed by George Conn [q. v.] that Sempill was also entrusted with a mission to James himself, in the hope of bringing about a marriage of the Scottish king with the infanta of Spain.

Sempill landed at Leith early in August 1588, when he was immediately apprehended by Sir John Carmichael by the king's order. The Earl of Huntly contrived to release him, but James had him again captured and imprisoned in Edinburgh. Once more, by an expenditure of four hundred crowns on the part of Robert Bruce (if this spy and conspirator is to be trusted) and with the aid of Huntly and Lady Ross, a daughter of Lord Sempill, the colonel effected an escape of which a romantic account is given by Father Forbes-Leith in his 'Narratives of Scottish Catholics' (p. 368). The privy council now (Aug. 20) issued an order 'against resetting William Semple, who had come on a pretended mission from the Prince of Parma and had been trafficking treasonably with His Majesty's subjects.' Before leaving Scotland for the Low Countries Sempill made arrangements for carrying on a secret correspondence with his friends; and in February of the following year his servant,

Pringle, was captured in England with a packet of treasonable letters, directed by Huntly, Errol, and others to Parma and the king of Spain. Pringle confessed to Walsingham that he had been sent over from Flanders by Sempill six weeks before. The colonel's name frequently reappears in the state papers of 1593–4 in connection with the Spanish intrigues and military enterprises of that time, but he does not seem to have again visited Scotland.

In 1593 he married in Spain Doña Maria de Ledesma, widow of Don Juan Perez de Alizaga, and daughter of Don Juan de Ledesma, member of the council of India. In 1598 Robert, the fourth lord Sempill, who had been appointed Scottish ambassador at Madrid, was instructed by James to sound the intentions of Philip III with regard to the succession to the English crown. Lord Sempill in his correspondence frequently mentions the assistance he had received from 'the crunal my cusing,' while the colonel himself wrote to James (12 Oct. 1598) of 'the lang intension that I haif haid to die in my cuntre in yo^{r} Ma^{ties} service' (*Miscellaneous Papers*, Maitland Club, p. 173). Sempill lived to a great age, occupying at the Spanish court the office of 'gentleman of the mouth' to the king, and busying himself with the affairs of the catholic missionaries in Scotland to whose support he liberally contributed, as is shown by the letter of Father Archangel Leslie, addressed to the colonel 20 June 1630, printed in the 'Historical Records of the Family of Leslie' (vol. iii. p. 421).

In 1613 Philip III had granted to Sempill the house of Jacomotrezo in Madrid as an equivalent of the sums due to him in arrears of salaries and pensions. This house he designed and endowed as a college for the education of catholic missionaries who were to be drawn from the gentry of Scotland, and by preference from members of his own family. The government of the college was to be in the hands of the Jesuit fathers. The original deed of foundation and endowment, dated 10 May 1623, was printed by the Maitland Club (*Miscellaneous Papers*), together with a translation of the colonel's testament, dated 20 Feb. 1633. He died in this house on 1 March 1633, at the age of eighty-seven. His wife survived him, dying on 10 Sept. 1646.

[Conæus, De duplici statu, p. 144; Gordon's Catholic Church in Scotland, p. 66; Forbes-Leith's Narratives, following an anonymous contribution to the Catholic Directory for Scotland, 1873 (but untrustworthy on Sempill's military career); for particulars of the betrayal of Liere, Bergmann's Geschiedenis der Stad Lier, pp. 265–272, based upon the rare contemporary pamphlet, Bref Discours de la trahison advenue en la ville de Liere en Braband par un capitaine escossais nommé Guillaume Semple, etc., 1582; Strada, De bello Belgico (ed. 1648), ii. 233; Meteren, Hist. des Pays-Bas, f. 217; Calderwood's Hist. iv. 680, v. 6; Reg. Privy Council, ii. 229; Pitcairn's Trials, i. 172, 332; Teulet, Papiers d'État, iii. 586, 592; Cal. State Papers, Scotland, 553, 640, 804; Border Papers, i. 310, 860, &c.] T. G. L.

SEMPLE. [See also SEMPILL.]

SEMPLE, DAVID (1808–1878), antiquary, was born at Townhead, Paisley, on 21 Aug. 1808. Educated in the local grammar school and trained in a lawyer's office, he settled in business on his own account in Paisley, and was considered an able conveyancer. He was long the agent for the liberals of the burgh. He was elected a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland. He died at Paisley on 23 Dec. 1878.

Semple's works—mainly dealing with local history—are: 1. 'Poll-tax Rolls of Renfrewshire of 1695,' published in 1862. 2. 'The Lairds of Glen' and 'History of the Cross Steeple,' 1868. 3. 'St. Mirin,' with two supplements, a learned and patient treatise on the patron saint of Paisley, 1872. 4. 'Barons and Barony of Renfrewshire,' 1876. 5. 'The Tree of Crockston,' 1876. 6. 'Abbey Bridge of Paisley,' 1878. He also prepared a complete edition of Tannahill's 'Poems,' with a memoir and notes (Glasgow, 1870, 8vo).

[Irving's Book of Eminent Scotsmen; Brown's Paisley Poets.] T. B.

SEMPLE, GEORGE (1700?–1782?), Irish architect, son of a builder's labourer, was born in Dublin about 1700. His earliest known work is the steeple (103 feet in height) of St. Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin, which he designed and erected in 1749. He also built St. Patrick's Hospital (1749–57), and several private mansions, including Ramsfort, co. Wexford, which was afterwards destroyed. His best known work was Essex Bridge across the Liffey. This was begun in 1752, and completed in 1754, and was considered one of the best bridges in Ireland. The government awarded him 500*l.* for his services. Essex Bridge was taken down in 1872, being replaced by the present Grattan Bridge, from Parliament Street to Capel Street. In 1777 Semple was living in Queen Street, Dublin, and died late in 1781 or early in 1782. His immediate descendants were also architects. He published a treatise 'On Building in Water' (Dublin, 1776, 4to).

[Gilbert's Hist. of Dublin; Whitelaw and Walsh's Hist. of Dublin; Dublin directories, 1770–82; Pasquin's Artists of Ireland. Redgrave erroneously gives his name as Temple.]

D. J. O'D.

SEMPLE *alias* **SEMPLE-LISLE, JAMES GEORGE** (*fl.* 1799), adventurer, who also passed under the names Maxwell, Harrod, and Grant, was born at Irvine in 1759, and was the son of James Semple, formerly an exciseman, who eventually laid claim to the extinct title of Viscount Lisle. In 1776 he was serving in America, where he was taken prisoner, but was released in 1777, and returned to England. He then became acquainted with Mrs. Eliza Gooch the novelist. Marrying a goddaughter of the notorious Duchess of Kingston [see CHUDLEIGH, ELIZABETH], he accompanied the latter to the continent. There he claims to have accompanied Frederick the Great during his bloodless campaign of 1778, to have been introduced to the Empress Catharine of Russia, to have accompanied Prince Potemkin to the Crimea, and to have designed a uniform for the Russian army. He also visited Copenhagen. Returning to England in 1784, he was arrested for obtaining goods by false pretences, and on 2 Sept. 1786 was sentenced to seven years' transportation. Released on condition of quitting England, he repaired to Paris, where he represents himself as serving on General Berruyer's staff, and as witnessing in that capacity the execution of Louis XVI. Returning to England in time to avoid arrest, he was again, on 18 Feb. 1795, sentenced to transportation for defrauding tradesmen. Disappointed in his hopes of pardon, he stabbed himself in Newgate in 1796, when about to be shipped for Botany Bay, and tried to starve himself to death. He recovered, however, and in 1798 was despatched in the Lady Jane Shore transport, bound for Australia. During the voyage a mutiny broke out, Semple's warning of the plot having been disregarded by the captain, Wilcox. Semple, with several others, was allowed to put off in a boat, landed in South America, and, after many adventures, reached Tangier, where he surrendered, and was sent back to England. He was committed to Tothill Fields prison, and at the time of publishing his autobiography in 1799 was still confined there. Nothing further is known of him. A portrait engraved by Barlow is mentioned by Bromley.

[Life, 1799; Mem. of the Northern Impostor, 1786; Life of Mrs. E. S. Gooch, 1792; Ann. Register, 1796, App. p. 46, and 1798, App. p. 60; Gent. Mag. 1796.]

J. G. A.

SEMPLE, ROBERT (1766–1816), traveller, and governor under the Hudson's Bay Company, son of British parents, who were made prisoners during the American war of independence, was born at Boston, Massachusetts, in 1766. Brought up to mercantile pursuits, he was associated with London firms, and travelled constantly in the course of business, recording his impressions and adventures in short plain narratives which were favourably received. He was in Cape Colony in 1802, and made a stay of some duration, journeying inland a short distance. In 1803 he was back in London, and on 26 June 1805 left for a journey through Spain and Italy to Naples, and thence to Smyrna and Constantinople. In 1808 and 1809 he made a second journey in Portugal and Spain, eventually going to Gibraltar and Tangier. In 1810 he travelled in the West Indies and Brazil, and was in Caracas, Venezuela, at the beginning of the rebellion against Spain. In 1813 he made an adventurous journey in the rear of the allied armies from Hamburg by Berlin to Gothenburg; he was on this occasion taken for an American spy by Lord Cathcart and placed under arrest.

In 1815 Semple was chosen by the influence of Lord Selkirk to be chief agent or governor of the Hudson's Bay Company's factories and territories. Leaving England in June, he arrived at Red River in September, and energetically moved from place to place inspecting the settlements. In the spring of 1816 he was back at Red River There had long been a feud between the Hudson's Bay Company and the North-West Company. On 19 June 1816 a caravan belonging to the latter company was passing near the fort at Red River with the intention of occupying ground to which their right was disputed. Semple rode out with an escort to meet them. A fracas ensued in which shots were exchanged, and Semple was mortally wounded, dying soon after he was carried into the fort. A literature of recrimination between the two companies was the chief result of the affair.

Semple was admitted even by his opponents to have been just and honourable in his short administration. He had a taste for literature and science. His chief writings are: 1. 'Walks and Sketches at the Cape of Good Hope, &c.' London, 1803. 2. 'Observations on a Journey through Spain and Italy to Naples, &c. in 1805,' London, 1807, 2 vols. 8vo. 3. 'A Second Journey in Spain in the Spring of 1809, &c.' London, 1810 (2nd edition, 1812). 4. 'Sketch of the Present State of Caracas,' London, 1812.

5. 'Observations made on a Tour from Hamburg through Berlin to Gothenburg,' London, 1814. 6. 'Charles Ellis, or the Friends,' a novel, London, 1814.

[Works in Brit. Mus. Libr.; A review in A Collection of Modern . . . Voyages and Travels, London, 1808; Edinburgh Review, 1814, vol. xxii.; Gent. Mag. 1816, pt. ii. p. 454; Halkett's Statement respecting the Earl of Selkirk's Settlement . . . and the Massacre of Governor Semple, London, 1817; Lord Selkirk's Narrative of Occurrences respecting Lord Selkirk's Settlement, &c. 1817; note on p. viii of Amos's Report of Trials, &c. against Lord Selkirk, London, 1820.]

C. A. H.

SEMPRINGHAM, GILBERT OF (1083?–1189), founder of the Gilbertines. [See GILBERT.]

SENAN (488?–544?), saint and bishop, was son of Gerrgen, who was descended from Conaire I, king of Ireland. He is one of the nine saints of the race of Conaire who are classed apart in the 'Leabhar Breac' and the 'Book of Leinster' as being held in high esteem in Munster. They are divided into groups of three, each group having a special title. Senan belonged to the last three, the 'Torches' as they were termed. Born about 488 in Corcobaskin, co. Clare, he, when arrived at man's estate, was compelled by the local chieftain to join in a foray on the adjoining territory of Corcomroe. But he took no part in their deeds of violence; and when the expedition was defeated and he was taken prisoner, this led to his life being spared. Dissatisfied with this wild life, he resolved to enter a religious community, and for this purpose placed himself under the instruction of Cassidan, whose church was at Irrus, co. Clare. From him he went to St. Natal of Kilnamanagh, near Kilkenny. He is next said to have visited Rome and Tours, and also St. David's in Wales, and to have brought home a copy of the Gospels written by St. Martin. This was known afterwards as 'Senan's Gospel.' On the completion of his studies his first settlement was on the Great Island in Cork Harbour, according to the metrical Irish life by Colman, son of Lenin. From this he went to Iniscarra, on the river Lee, where he had not been long settled when Lugaid, chief of the district, demanded tribute from him. This Senan refused, and an angry discussion took place; but in the end the claim was withdrawn at the instance of Lugaid's friends. While here fifty Roman pilgrims arrived in Cork Harbour, many of whom were hospitably received by Senan. We next read of his building a church at Inisluinge, which Lanigan believed to be one of the islands in the Shannon. But this is an error, as it was situated in the parish of Iniscarra, where the ruins of a later structure on the same site still bear the name. Descending the river Lee Senan sailed round the western coast, touching at Inistusker, off the coast of Kerry, where he passed some time. The churches and beehive houses at Olean Senaig, one of the Magharees off the Bay of Tralee, have been attributed to him, but erroneously, as Senach, after whom they are named, is a different person, though he also was one of the famous nine. Passing on to Iniscaorach, or Mutton Island, he finally reached Iniscathaigh, at the mouth of the Shannon, so called from a monster named the Cathach, which he expelled from the island. Here occurred the visit of St. Canair of Bantry to him which has been immortalised by Moore in his ballad of 'St. Senanus and the Lady.'

Iniscathaigh is reckoned by Keating among the bishoprics of the province of Cashel, and, according to Ussher, it was subsequently divided between the sees of Limerick, Ardfert, and Aghadoe. Its importance is attested by its round tower; and as late as the reign of Elizabeth we find mention of the 'converbship' (coarbship) of Iniscathy, to which large revenues appear to have been attached, and which had then passed into lay hands. Senan's fame was chiefly in the west of Ireland, where numerous churches were dedicated to him. He is also the patron of Lansannan in Denbighshire, and Bedwelty in Monmouthshire, and one of the patrons of Lantressant in Anglesey, and is thought to have given his name to Sennen in Cornwall. Bishop Forbes has identified him with the Scottish saint Kerrog and with the French St. Sané, one of the chief patrons of the diocese of Pol de Léon. His golden bell—heaven-sent, as it was believed—was in existence as late as 1834, but is now lost. The ancient poet, Dallan Forgaill, composed a panegyric on him termed the 'Amra Senain,' a copy of which is in the 'Leabhar Breac,' and another in the Royal Library of Brussels. His day in the calendar is 8 March, which, however, is not that of his death, but of his burial. He is said to have died in 544.

[Bollandists' Acta Sanct. 8 March, i. 759–98; O'Curry's Lectures on the Manuscript Materials of Ancient Irish History, p. 339, and on the Manners and Customs of the Ancient Irish, vol. i. p. cccxxix; Leabhar Breac (facsimile), 241*a*; MSS. 4190–200, Royal Library, Brussels; Lanigan's Eccl. Hist. i. 444–6, ii. 2 seq., 20, 89–91; Betha Shenain, from the Book of Lismore, translated by

Whitley Stokes; Anecdota Oxoniensia, Oxford, 1890; Cal. State Papers, Ireland, Elizabeth, 1574–85.] T. O.

SENATUS, called BRAVONIUS (*d.* 1207), prior of Worcester, rose to that dignity after filling the offices of precentor and librarian. He taught in the monastery and did much to develop the school. As librarian he made a concordance of the gospels, addressed to Master Alured, by whose order it was written. He quotes many authorities, and refers to the copy of Offa's Bible sent from Rome, and then preserved at Worcester. The dedicatory letter has been printed from a manuscript at Conches addressed to Master S. (MARTENE and DURAND, *Thes. Anecd.* i. 484). In the Corpus MS. (Cambridge) No. 48 the whole work is extant in Senatus's autograph. He also wrote a life of St. Oswald [q. v.], bishop of Worcester, and afterwards archbishop of York, which has been printed by Raine (*Church Historians of York*, ii. 60). It is extant in the Durham MS. B. iv. 39, where it is followed by the manuscript life of St. Wulstan [q. v.], bishop of Worcester, which is probably also by Senatus. It may be a Latin translation of the English life by Colman, monk of Worcester (HARDY, *Descr. Cat.* ii. 72). Another Latin translation of this biography in Cott. Claud. A. v. is by William of Malmesbury (WHARTON, vol. ii. p. xv).

In the Bodleian MS. N.E. B. 2. 1. are six letters written by Senatus as prior: to Roger, bishop of Worcester; to Master Alured (as above); to John Comyn, archbishop of Dublin, 'de horis canonicis' (two copies); to Clement, prior of Osney, praising the schools of Oxford; to Master Alured, 'de officio et orationibus missæ;' and to William de Tunbridge, 'de attributis divinis.' In the Lambeth MS. 238, fo. 207, is his 'expositio in canonem missæ,' dedicated to Master Alured (WHARTON, i. 548). Leland saw a collection of his letters at Worcester (*Coll.* iii. 160). Senatus resigned the priorate on 20 Nov. 1196, and died in 1207.

[Wharton's Anglia Sacra; Ann. Wigorn. and Tewkesb. (Rolls Ser.); Bernard's Catalogue of Manuscripts; Dugdale's Monasticon Anglicanum; Tanner's Bibliotheca.] M. B.

SENCHAN (*fl.* 649), Irish bard, is generally mentioned with the epithet Torpeist in Irish literature to distinguish him from Senchan, son of Coemlog, and nephew of Coemgin of Glendalough (*Felire*, pp. 51, 98, 168); from Senchan, son of Colman Mor, slain in 590; from the three Senchans, successively abbots of Emly, who died in 769, 776, and 780; and from Senchan, abbot of Killeigh in Offaly, who died in 791. Like the famous Torna, foster-father of Niall (*d.* 405) [q. v.], he sometimes bears the epithet Eigeas, learned. He was a native of Connaught, and became chief bard of that region when Guaire was its king (649–62). In the story called 'Imtheacht na Tromdhaimhe' ('The Departure of the Poets' College'), which is one of the later appendages of the 'Tain Bo Cuailgne' ('the Cattle Raid of Cuailgne'), it is stated that on the death of Dallan Forgaill [see DALLAN, SAINT] four learned women were consulted by the ollavs of Ireland as to who his successor as chief bard of Ireland should be. Muireann, Dallan's wife, one of the four, said that Dallan had expressed a wish for Senchan to succeed him. Senchan then composed a funeral oration in verse for Dallan, beginning 'Inmhain corp a dtorchair sunn' ('Dear the body that here lies dead'), and was unanimously elected ardollamh, or chief professor of Ireland. He and his college, to the number of three hundred, with nearly four hundred attendants and a hundred and fifty dogs, went to Durlus, the court of Guaire, where the events took place which led to the recovery of the then lost story called 'Tain Bo Cuailgne.' As Dallan was famous in the reign of Aedh mac Ainmire, who died in 594, and as he survived Columba [q. v.], Senchan's asserted succession to his bardic supremacy about the commencement of the reign of Guaire in 649 presents no chronological inconsistency. The oldest copy of 'Imtheachtna Tromdhaimhe' at present extant is in the book of MacCarthy Riach, a manuscript of about 1480. The tale is not mentioned in 'Leabhar na Huidri,' a manuscript of about 1100, which contains a copy of the 'Tain Bo Cuailgne.' In the 'Book of Leinster,' a manuscript of 1150, in which there is another copy of the 'Tain Bo Cuailgne,' there is a chapter headed 'Do fallsignd tana bo cualnge,' fol. 245 ('Of the Discovery of the Tain Bo Cuailgne'), in which it is stated that Senchan assembled the bards of Ireland in order to recover at length the whole story. Only fragments were then known, and he sent forth scholars to seek far and wide for the complete text. The 'Book of Leinster' (fol. 23, col. 1, line 10) also contains the only extant work of Senchan. It is a poem beginning 'Rofich fergus fichit catha co cumnigi' ('Fergus stoutly fought twenty battles'); but after one other line referring to Fergus, it goes on to celebrate the battles of Rudraigi, king of Ireland. It is a catalogue of names, with epithets to fill up the gaps in the metre. In the glossary of Cormac, under the word 'prúll,' great increase, is a story of a voyage made by Senchan to the Isle of

Man, and of an incident in it given as the origin of his cognomen. A monster came into the boat—'Is desin rohaimniged Senchan Torpeist i Senchan dororpa peist'—it was from that he was named Senchan Torpeist: i.e. Senchan to whom appeared a monster. The date of his death is not mentioned in the chronicles.

[Book of Leinster, facsimile of manuscript published by Royal Irish Acad.; Owen Cormrellan in Trans. of Ossianic Soc. vol. v.; E. O'Curry's Lectures on the Manuscript Materials for Irish Hist.; Whitley Stokes's Three Irish Glossaries, 1862, and Calendar of Oengus, 1871; R. O'Flaherty's Ogygia, London, 1685.] N. M.

SENEX, JOHN (*d.* 1740), cartographer and engraver, had in 1719 a bookseller's establishment at the Globe in Salisbury Court, Fleet Street. Here Ephraim Chambers [q. v.] was for some time his apprentice. Senex engraved the plates for the London almanacs from 1717 to 1727, except in 1723; and he executed the cuts for the second edition of Sir William Browne's 'Account of Microscopes and Telescopes.' He was, however, chiefly known as a cartographer and globe-maker. He printed with C. Price, probably in 1710, 'Proposals for a New Sett of Correct Mapps.' In that year he issued, with Price and John Maxwell, maps of North America and Germany, and in 1712 one of 'Moscovy.' They appeared collectively in 1714 as 'The English Atlas,' under the joint names of Senex and Maxwell. 'A new General Atlas' followed in 1721. Senex 'improved, very much corrected, and made portable' John Ogilby's 'Survey of all the Principal Roads of England and Wales,' in 1719, and corrected and enlarged P. Gordon's 'Geography Anatomized,' in 1722 (reissued in 1730, 1735, and 1740). About 1720 he, with two others, made a representation to the House of Commons on the subject of a new globular projection. He was admitted a fellow of the Royal Society on 4 July 1728, and read there on 4 May 1738 a paper on his 'Contrivance to make the Poles of the Diurnal Motion in a Celestial Globe pass round the Poles of the Ecliptic.' The celestial globe was to be 'so adjusted as to exhibit not only the risings and settings of the stars, in all ages, and in all latitudes, but the other phænomena likewise, that depend upon the motion of the diurnal axis round the annual axis.' Senex died on 30 Dec. 1740. Many of his maps are in the library of Trinity College, Dublin.

[Gent. Mag. 1741, p. 50; Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. x. 8, 157, 237; Nichols's Lit. Anecdotes, iii. 315, v. 659, vi. 94 *n.*; Phil. Trans. 1738, pp. 203–4; Bryan's Dict. of Painters and Engravers; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Allibone's Dict. Engl. Lit.; Brit. Mus. Cat.] G. Le G. N.

SENGHAM, WILLIAM (*fl.* 1260), Austin friar, of humble parentage, took the Augustinian habit at Rome in his youth, and was sent to teach in England, together with Albertinus de Verona, by Lanfranc, prior-general of the order. By Sengham's industry twenty houses of Austin friars were founded. Nicasius Baxius wrote of him:

'Anglia me genuit, formavit Roma, recepit
Anglia, quo caperet quæ mihi Roma dedit.'

Tanner attributes to him the following works, of which only the last is known to be extant: 1. 'De Claustro Animæ.' 2. 'De Professione Novitiorum.' 3. 'De Tentationum Remediis.' 4. 'Scripturarum Explicationes.' 5. An Index to the 'De Fide et Legibus, ascribed to William Perault, extant in a manuscript belonging to the dean and chapter of Lincoln. Thomas Colby, bishop of Waterford, made indices to his works and praised his teaching.

[Ossinger's Bibl. August.; Tanner's Bibliotheca; Bale's Scriptores.] M. B.

SENHOUSE, Sir HUMPHREY FLEMING (1781–1841), captain in the navy, baptised on 6 June 1781, was third son of William Senhouse (1741–1800), lieutenant R.N., surveyor-general of Barbados and the Leeward Islands, by Elizabeth, daughter of Samson Wood, speaker of the Barbados assembly. His grandfather, Humphrey Senhouse of Netherhall, Cumberland, married Mary, daughter and coheiress of Sir George Fleming [q. v.], bishop of Carlisle. He entered the navy in January 1797 on board the Prince of Wales, flagship of Rear-admiral (Sir) Henry Harvey [q. v.], in the West Indies. In November 1797 he was moved into the Requin brig, in which he came for the first time to England towards the end of 1799. From March 1800 to April 1802 he served in the Fisgard under the command of Captain (afterwards Sir) Thomas Byam Martin [q. v.], and Captain (afterwards Sir) Michael Seymour [q. v.] On 7 April 1802 he passed his examination, and two days afterwards was promoted to be lieutenant of the Galgo. In May 1803 he was appointed to the Conqueror with Captain (afterwards Sir) Thomas Louis [q. v.] With Israel Pellew [q. v.], who relieved Louis in April 1804, he served in the Mediterranean, in the voyage to the West Indies, and in the battle of Trafalgar, till January 1806. He then went out to the West Indies in the Elephant, was put on board the Northumberland flagship

of Sir Alexander Forrester Inglis Cochrane [q. v.], and in September 1806 was appointed to command the Express on the Spanish Main and among the Leeward Islands till March 1808, when he joined the Belleisle as flag-lieutenant to Sir Alexander Cochrane. Cochrane sent him home with despatches in the following July. On 26 Jan. 1809 he rejoined the admiral, now in the Neptune, and served through the reduction of Martinique. For this, on 7 March, he was promoted to the Wolverene, which, and afterwards the Ringdove and Supérieure, he commanded in the West Indies till the following December. In 1810–12 he commanded the Recruit at Gibraltar, Newfoundland, and Halifax; and in 1812–14 the Martin on the Halifax station.

On 12 Oct. 1814 he was advanced to post rank, and from April to September 1815 commanded the Superb on the coast of France, as flag-captain to Sir Henry Hotham [q. v.] He was again with Hotham in the Mediterranean, as flag-captain in the St. Vincent, which he commanded from 1831 to 1834. On 13 April 1832 he was nominated a K.C.H., and was knighted on 5 June 1834. In April 1839 he commissioned the Blenheim, which he took out to China, where he died, on 14 June 1841, of fever contracted by fatigue and exposure during the operations at Canton. He was buried at Macao. Fifteen days after his death he was nominated a C.B. He married, in 1810, Elizabeth, daughter of Vice-admiral John Manley, and left two daughters.

[O'Byrne's Nav. Biogr. Dict. p. 1049 *n.*; Marshall's Roy. Nav. Biogr. vii. (suppl. pt. iii.) 405; Times, 8, 9 Oct. 1841; Gent. Mag. 1841, ii. 654; service-book in the Public Record Office.] J. K. L.

SENHOUSE, RICHARD (*d.* 1626), bishop of Carlisle, was third son of John Senhouse (*d.* 1604) of Netherhall, Cumberland, by Anne, daughter of John Ponsonby of Hail Hall. The father was an antiquary who collected Roman remains. Sir Robert Cotton visited him in 1599. Richard was educated, according to Jefferson, first at Trinity and afterwards at St. John's College, Cambridge, whence he graduated M.A. in 1598 (incorporated at Oxford in 1600), and proceeded B.D. by grace of 15 Feb. 1606, D.D. in 1622. He became fellow of St. John's on 7 April 1598. He was a good preacher, and became chaplain successively to the Earl of Bedford, Prince Charles, and King James I. In 1606 he was appointed vicar of Bumpsted Steeple, Essex; in 1608 he was rector of Cheam, Surrey, and on 13 Dec. 1621 he became dean of Gloucester. He was made bishop of Carlisle on 26 Sept. 1624, and preached the coronation sermon for Charles I. He died, it is said owing to a fall from his horse, on 6 May 1626, and was buried in the cathedral. A volume containing four sermons by him was published, London, 1627, 4to.

[Burke's Landed Gentry, ii. 1819; Jefferson's Hist. of Carlisle, pp. 182, 218; Hutchinson's Cumberland, ii. 631; Baker's Hist. of St. John's Coll. i. 292, ii. 615; Le Neve's Fasti, i. 444, iii. 242; information from Mr. Chancellor Fergusson; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1623–5, pp. 304, 339, 353; Stowe MS. 76, f. 248.] W. A. J. A.

SENHOUSE or SEVER, WILLIAM (*d.* 1505), bishop of Durham, whose name appears as Senhouse, Senews, Senuz, Sever, and Siveyer, was born at Shincliffe, a village close to Durham. He is said to have been related to, as he has often been confused with, Henry Sever [q. v.]; but more probably he was connected with the Senhouse family of Cumberland, a later member of which, Richard Senhouse [q. v.], became, like William, bishop of Carlisle. William entered the Benedictine order, and is said by Wood to have been educated either in Gloucester College or Durham College, Oxford. On 11 March 1467–8 he was ordained subdeacon in St. Mary's Abbey, York, where he became abbot in 1485. In 1495 he was elected bishop of Carlisle, the temporalities being restored to him on 11 Dec.; he was consecrated in the following year. In 1496 he was one of the commissioners sent to Scotland to negotiate the marriage of Henry VII's daughter Margaret with James IV, and he helped to arrange the treaty that was signed in the following year. In 1499 he was appointed one of the conservators of the truce between the two kingdoms (cf. *Cal. Hatfield MSS.* i. 3). In 1502 he was translated to Durham, resigning the abbey of St. Mary, which he had hitherto held. He died in 1505, and was buried at St. Mary's Abbey, York.

[Le Neve's Fasti Eccl. Anglicanæ, iii. 240, 292; Godwin, De Præsulibus, ed. Richardson; Letters and Papers ill. the Reigns of Richard III and Henry VII (Rolls Ser.), ii. 283; Hutchinson's Cumberland, ii. 268, 627; Surtees's Hist. Durham, iv. 106; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ii. 695; Testamenta Eboracensia (Surtees Soc.), pts. iii. and iv. passim; Brodrick's Memorials of Merton Coll. p. 229; Dodd's Church Hist.] A. F. P.

SENIOR, NASSAU WILLIAM (1790–1864), economist, born 26 Sept. 1790 at Compton Beauchamp, Berkshire, was the eldest of ten children of the Rev. John Raven Senior, vicar of Durnford, Wiltshire, by his wife Mary, daughter of Henry Duke, solicitor-general of Barbados. J. R. Senior

was the only son of Nassau Thomas and grandson of Aaron Señor, a Spaniard naturalised in England in 1723. He was a graduate of Merton College, Oxford (B.A. 1785, M.A. 1788), and is said to have been a man of remarkable abilities, though he was content with the quiet life of a country clergyman. He died at Umberhorne, Gloucestershire in 1824. His wife was a woman of great beauty, sweetness, and strong practical sense. Nassau Senior's early education was conducted by his father, from whom he imbibed a permanent love of classical literature. He entered Eton on 4 July 1803, and in 1807 was elected a demy of Magdalen College, Oxford. The college tutor desired to make his office a sinecure, and, though Senior's conduct as a student was irreproachable, his reading was self-directed and desultory. He failed at his first appearance in the schools, on account of a hasty answer to a question in divinity and a consequent discussion with the examiner. Stung by the failure, he told his father that he would win a first-class next term. He engaged the services of (Archbishop) Whately, then eminent as a private tutor. He worked unremittingly, formed a lifelong friendship with Whately, and after a few months took a first-class in *lit. hum.* in 1811. He graduated B.A. in January 1812, and M.A. in 1815. In 1812 he became probationary fellow of Magdalen, and in 1813 Vinerian scholar. He had entered at Lincoln's Inn on 19 Nov. 1810, and in 1812 began his legal studies in London. In 1813 he became a pupil of Sugden (Lord St. Leonards), with whom he formed a warm friendship. He became a certificated conveyancer about 1817, was called to the bar on 28 June 1819, and, when Sugden abandoned conveyancing, succeeded to much of his tutor's practice. A delicate throat and weak voice prevented him from succeeding in other branches of the profession. Among his pupils and friends were Romilly, master of the rolls, C. P. Villiers, Edward Denison (afterwards bishop of Salisbury), and Richard Ford, of the 'Handbook of Spain.' In 1821 he married Mary Charlotte, daughter of John Mair of Iron Acton, and settled in Kensington Square. He then built a house in Kensington Gore, which he occupied from 1827 to the end of his life. His hospitality there led Sydney Smith to call it the chapel of ease 'to Lansdowne House.' Though a steady worker, he was from the first eminently sociable.

Senior's attention had been especially directed to political economy. He had been much impressed by the evils of misdirected charity in his father's parish, and at the age of twenty-five, as he afterwards said, resolved to reform the English poor law. His first publication upon economic questions was an article upon the state of agriculture in the 'Quarterly Review' for July 1821. It is a criticism of a well-known report of a committee of the House of Commons, and an orthodox exposition of free-trade doctrine.

He became a member of the Political Economy Club in 1823, and for many years took a very active part in their debates (*Minutes*, privately printed, 1882). In 1825 he was chosen as the first holder of the professorship of political economy at Oxford, founded in that year by Henry Drummond [q. v.] He held it for five years, when he was succeeded by his friend Whately. He afterwards held it for another term, from 1847 to 1852. He published several lectures, which won him a reputation both in England and France.

In 1830, at the request of the home secretary, Lord Melbourne, he prepared a report upon trade combinations, the substance of which is given in his 'Historical and Philosophical Essays.' In 1833 he was appointed a member of the poor-law commission, and was the author of the famous report upon which was founded the poor law of 1834. Senior's writings upon this subject show his thorough familiarity with the history and actual working of the laws, and a principal share in the credit of one of the most beneficial measures of his time must be assigned to him. A sum of 500*l.* and a knighthood were offered to him for these services. He declined both, and afterwards refused offers of a Canadian governorship and of the position of legal member of the Indian Council. He also declined a place on the new poor-law board. He was appointed master in chancery on 10 June 1836, and he held the office until its abolition in 1855, when he retired upon his full salary. He was in later years a member of several royal commissions—the factory commission of 1837, the hand-loom commission of 1841, the Irish poor-law commission of 1844, and the education commission of 1857.

Senior had at an early period become well known in official and literary circles in London society. Among his chief friends were Whately, Sydney Smith, Lord Lansdowne, Copleston, Sir G. Cornewall Lewis, and Sir James Stephen. Besides his economical writings he had contributed several articles to the 'Quarterly' and 'London' reviews upon the 'Waverley Novels,' which are warmly praised and often quoted by Lockhart (*Life of Scott*, ch. liv.) At a later period he wrote an article upon 'Vanity Fair' in the 'Edin-

burgh Review,' which was of great service, as Thackeray always considered, to the growth of the author's reputation. He was, however, chiefly interested in politics, and his most important articles appeared in the 'Edinburgh Review' after 1840. Brougham speaks of him as a 'great acquisition' in a letter to Macvey Napier of 16 July 1841 (*Napier Correspondence*, p. 352), and for several years he wrote many articles upon political and economic questions. Many references in the letters to Napier show that these articles were highly valued at the time, and written after consultation with the most trusted authorities of the party. Sir James Stephen writes to Napier in 1842 (*ib.* p. 379), that Senior 'cannot be too highly valued in his own peculiar walk, which is that of comprehensive, mature, and luminous thinking about permanent national interests.' Senior was, of course, in general sympathy with the whigs of the time, though he was always rather judicial than partisan in his political views. He had been brought into contact not only with Englishmen, but with foreigners of eminence. Alexis de Tocqueville had sought his acquaintance in 1833, and formed a lifelong intimacy. In 1836 Cavour, on his first visit to London, also became a friend, and mentions him in 1844 (*Comte Cavour et la Comtesse de Circourt, Lettres inédites*, Rome, 1854) as 'l'esprit le plus éclairé de la Grande-Bretagne.' Senior made frequent visits to the continent. He was in Paris during the attack upon the national assembly on 15 May 1848. He then began to keep a full journal, and from this time till 1863 recorded conversations with many distinguished men in France and elsewhere. These were frequently revised by the original speakers. Senior took great care to avoid any breach of private confidence; but these records of the opinions of contemporary statesmen upon matters of high importance are often of great historical value. Large parts of them have been published by his daughter, Mrs. Simpson, since his death. The list of his works (see below) gives an indication of the width of his interests, and his desire of obtaining the views of the ablest men of various parties.

Senior was eminently a man of strong common-sense. He was of a placid disposition, and thoroughly enjoyed life. He had a characteristic dislike to dwelling upon painful topics, and maintained a steady reserve on some points. He advises a young friend to study theology carefully, but if he formed unusual opinions, to mention them to none but his most intimate friends. He was a man of strong affections, though not demonstrative in his utterance, and most steadily attached to his numerous friends.

He died at his house in Kensington on 4 June 1864, leaving a widow and two children. His daughter, Mary Charlotte Mair, married Mr. C. T. Simpson. His son, Nassau John (1822–1891), married in 1848 Jane Elizabeth (*b.* 10 Dec. 1828), daughter of John Hughes, of Donnington Priory, and sister of the author of 'Tom Brown's Schooldays.' Mrs. Nassau John Senior, a very graceful and accomplished woman, was also generally loved for simplicity and sweetness of character. She took great interest in social questions, and on 18 Jan. 1874 was made temporary inspector of workhouses and pauper schools. She was the first woman to hold such a position. The appointment was made permanent in February 1874, but an illness ultimately fatal forced her to resign in November. Her observations led her to originate the 'Association for Befriending Young Servants,' which has been of much service. (The 'Spectator' of 31 March and 7 April 1877 describes her work.) She received the medal of the Red Cross Society for her work in the London office during the war of 1870–1871. Mrs. Senior died on 24 March 1877. Her portrait, by Mr. G. F. Watts, R.A., belongs to Mr. Walter Senior.

Senior, says Cossa (*Introduction to the Study of Political Economy*, 1893, p. 327), deserves the first place among the English economists between Ricardo and J. S. Mill. He wrote much that was valuable upon the distribution of the precious metals, and the causes which determine the rate of wages. He is often noticed for his introduction of the phrase 'abstinence,' to describe the motive for the accumulation of capital. He belonged in the main to the school of Ricardo, whom, however, he criticises freely; but his strong common-sense and interest in practical applications of his principles prevent him from stating his doctrine in the absolute form of James Mill and McCulloch. He was especially influenced by Malthus, whose theory he applied to the great reform of the poor laws. Senior was a corresponding member of the French Institute (Sciences morales et politiques).

His separately published works are: 1. 'Introductory Lecture before the University of Oxford,' 1827. 2. 'Three Lectures on the Transmission of the Precious Metals . . .' 1828, 2nd edit. 1830. 3. 'Two Lectures on Population. . .' (Easter Term, 1828, and correspondence with Malthus), 1829. 4. 'Three Lectures on the Rate of Wages, with preface on the Causes and Remedies of the late Dis-

turbances,' 1830. 5. 'Three Lectures on the cost of obtaining Money, and on the effects of Private and Government Paper Money,' 1830. 6. 'Letter to Lord Howick on a Legal Provision for the Irish Poor, Commutation of Tithes, and a Provision for the Irish Roman Catholic Clergy,' 1831. 7. 'Statement of the Provision of the Poor and of the Condition of the Labouring Classes . . .' 1835. 8. 'An Outline of the Science of Political Economy,' 1836. This formed part of the 'Encyclopædia Metropolitana.' It was reprinted separately in 1850 in 'Political Economy,' and reached a sixth edition in 1872. 9. 'Letters on the Factory Act as it affects the Cotton Manufacturers,' 1837. 10. 'A Lecture on the Production of Wealth,' 1849. 11. 'Four Introductory Letters on Political Economy,' 1852. 12. 'American Slavery' (reprint, with additions of a review of 'Uncle Tom's Cabin' in the 'Edinburgh Review'), 1856. 13. 'A Journal kept in Turkey and Greece . . . (in 1857–8),' 1859. 14. 'Suggestions on Popular Education,' 1861. 15. 'Biographical Sketches,' 1863. 16. 'Essays on Fiction,' 1864. Posthumous publications, edited by his daughter, are: 17. 'Journals, Conversations, and Essays relating to Ireland' (prepared for publication by Senior, includes a journal of 1852 and earlier articles), 2 vols. 1868. 18. 'Historical and Philosophical Essays,' 2 vols. 1865. 19. 'Journals kept in France and Italy from 1848 to 1852,' 2 vols. 1871. 20. 'Correspondence and Conversations of Alexis de Tocqueville with N. W. Senior,' 2 vols. 1871. 21. 'Conversations with M. Thiers, Guizot, and other distinguished Persons during the Second Empire,' 2 vols. 1878 (continues No. 19). 22. 'Conversations with distinguished Persons during the Second Empire from 1860 to 1863,' 2 vols. 1880 (continues No. 21). 23. 'Conversations and Journals in Egypt and Malta' (during a journey with the Suez Canal commission in 1855–6), 2 vols. 1882.

Senior contributed 'twelve school miseries' to the 'Miseries of Human Life,' by James Beresford [q. v.], a book praised by Scott in the 'Edinburgh Review' (*Miscellaneous Works*, xix. 139, &c.) To the journals may be added 'Louis Napoleon painted by a Contemporary' in the 'Cornhill Magazine' of May 1873.

[Information from Senior's daughter, Mrs. Simpson, and his grandson, Mr. Walter Nassau Senior. See also Bloxam's Register of the Demies of Magdalen College; an article in the Cornhill Magazine for August 1864 by Mrs. Richmond Ritchie; and many references in Ticknor's Life and Letters.] L. S.

SENLIS or ST. LIZ, SIMON DE, EARL OF NORTHAMPTON AND HUNTINGDON (*d.* 1109), was son of a Norman noble called Randel le Ryche. According to the register of the priory of St. Andrew at Northampton (*Monast. Angl.* v. 190), he fought with his brother Garner for William the Conqueror at Hastings. But there is no mention of him in Domesday book, and it seems more probable that he did not come to England till about the end of the reign of William I (FREEMAN, *Norman Conquest*, iv. 604). According to the legends preserved in the pseudo-Ingulph and the 'Vita Waldevi,' Simon was given by the Conqueror the hand of Judith, the widow of Earl Waltheof of Huntingdon; but Judith refused to marry him on account of his lameness. Simon then received the earldom of Northampton and Huntingdon from the king, and eventually married Matilda or Maud, the daughter of Waltheof and Judith. The marriage is an undoubted fact, but probably must be placed, together with the grant of the earldoms, not earlier than 1089. According to the 'Vita Waldevi,' Simon went on the crusade in 1095, but he appears to have been fighting on the side of William Rufus in Normandy in 1098, when he was taken prisoner by Louis, son of the king of France (FREEMAN, *William Rufus*, ii. 190). He was also one of the witnesses to the coronation charter of Henry I in 1100 (STUBBS, *Select Charters*, p. 102). Afterwards he went on the crusade. He died in 1109, and was buried at the priory of La Charité-sur-Loire. Earl Simon built Northampton Castle, and founded the priory of St. Andrew, Northampton, according to tradition, about 1084, but more probably in 1108 (*Monast. Angl.* v. 190–1). By his wife, Matilda, Simon had two sons—Simon, who is noticed below, and Waltheof (*d.* 1170) [q. v.], who was abbot of Melrose. A daughter Maud married Robert FitzRichard of Tonbridge.

SIMON II DE SENLIS, EARL OF NORTHAMPTON (*d.* 1153), was a minor at his father's death. His mother married as her second husband David (1084–1153) [q. v.], afterwards king of Scotland. David obtained the earldom of Northampton in right of his wife and to the exclusion of his stepson. The young Simon witnessed the Oxford charter of King Stephen at Easter 1136, simply as Simon de Saintliz (STUBBS, *Select Charters*, p. 121). Stephen granted the earldom of Huntingdon to Simon's half-brother, Henry of Scotland (1114?–1152) [q. v.] When Henry and his father gave their support to the Empress Matilda, Simon not unnaturally joined Stephen, who previously

to 1141 restored him to the earldom of Northampton. Earl Simon fought for Stephen at Lincoln in 1141, and was one of the three earls who remained faithful to Queen Matilda during her husband's captivity. After the death of Henry of Scotland in 1152, Simon was rewarded for his loyalty by receiving the earldom of Huntingdon. He died in August 1153. He had been one of the foremost of Stephen's supporters, and his death, coinciding with that of the king's son Eustace, removed the two chief opponents to an agreement between the king and Henry FitzEmpress (Hen. Hunt. p. 288). Henry of Huntingdon makes Robert of Gloucester describe Simon II as one whose acts never got beyond speeches, nor his gifts beyond promises (*ib.* p. 270). Simon II de Senlis founded the nunnery of De la Pré, near Northampton, and the abbey of Saltrey in Huntingdonshire. He married Isabel, daughter of Robert de Beaumont, earl of Leicester (*d.* 1118), by whom he had a son, Simon. Simon III de Senlis was apparently recognised in the earldom of Northampton as soon as he came of age in 1159; he obtained the earldom of Huntingdon also on its forfeiture by William the Lion of Scotland in 1174. He married Alice, daughter and heiress of Gilbert de Gant, earl of Lincoln, but died without offspring in 1183 or 1184.

[Ordericus Vitalis, iii. 402, iv. 169, v. 130 (Soc. de l'Hist. de France); Henry of Huntingdon (Rolls Ser.); Vita et passio Waldevi ap. Chroniques Anglo-Normandes, vol. ii.; Dugdale's Monasticon Anglicanum, v. 178, 185, 190–1, 207, 521; Freeman's Norman Conquest and William Rufus; Round's Geoffrey de Mandeville; Dugdale's Baronage, i. 58; Doyle's Official Baronage, ii. 611–12; G. E. C[okayne]'s Complete Peerage, iv. 282–4, vi. 67.] C. L. K.

SEPPINGS, Sir ROBERT (1767–1840), naval architect, born at Fakenham in Norfolk in 1767, was son of Robert Seppings and his wife Lydia, daughter of John Milligen, a linendraper at Harleston. Sir Robert's birthplace is eight miles from Burnham Thorpe, where Nelson was born in 1758. His father was a cattle salesman, but his business did not prosper, and Seppings in his boyhood had to contribute to the family's income by carrying letters to a neighbouring town on a mule. Subsequently his mother's brother, John Milligen, a retired naval captain who had settled at Plymouth, adopted, in the place of children of his own, his nephew Robert, as well as the two daughters of his brother, Thomas Milligen. One of these, Charlotte, became Seppings's wife, while her sister Martha married Richard (afterwards Vice-admiral Sir Richard) Dacres, G.C.H., and her sons became Admiral Sir Sidney Colpoys Dacres [q. v.] and Field-Marshal Sir Richard James Dacres [q. v.]

In 1782 Captain Milligen apprenticed his nephew Robert, then fifteen years old, as a working shipwright in Plymouth dockyard. His education was very limited at the time, and his knowledge of mathematics was always slender; but he rapidly acquired a deep interest in his profession, and displayed an inventive genius which industry, determination, and the rapidity and accuracy of his powers of observation enabled him to turn to practical uses.

His first important invention may be referred to 1800. He was then master shipwright assistant at Plymouth dockyard. His chief work was to shore and lift ships in dock, and he was impressed by the time wasted in the processes employed. He sought a method by which ships might be suspended instead of lifted, and with this end in view, after experimenting with models in his cabin on the dock, he constructed new machinery, formerly called 'Seppings blocks.' By an arrangement of three wedges —two being placed vertically beside the ship, and one set horizontally across the other two—the examination of the keels and lower timbers of vessels was accomplished with comparative ease and rapidity. Where the old system needed the services of five hundred men, Seppings's system required but twenty men and two-thirds of the time formerly required. A vessel could, in fact, be docked and undocked by means of Seppings's blocks in one spring tide. A trial of the blocks was first made at Plymouth dockyard in September 1800, on the large Spanish first-rate San Josef. A dock at Plymouth was first fitted up with the blocks in 1801 by order of the navy board. For this invention Seppings was granted 1,000*l.* by the admiralty, and the Copley medal on 23 Nov. 1803 by the Society of Arts. In the 'Proceedings' of that society, vol. xxii., is a detailed account of the system of blocks, with diagrams.

Although the admiralty habitually discouraged innovation, Sir John Henslowe, the surveyor of the navy, was in full sympathy with Seppings's efforts. Owing doubtless to his representations, the navy board, in defiance of its traditions, gave practical proof of their appreciation of Seppings's ingenuity by at once removing him to Chatham, and by making him in 1804 a master-shipwright. Meanwhile, Seppings had begun another series of experiments on the construction of ships, which resulted in his in-

vention of the system of diagonally bracing and trussing the frame-timbers, an invention of the first importance in shipbuilding. Hitherto, ships of the first class had suffered from the arching of their keels, technically called 'hogging.' This arose from the irregularity of the weight occasioned by greater upward pressure in the centre than in the extremities. When a first-rate ship entered the sea, she was usually found to have dropped two to five or six inches at head and stern. To prevent this result Seppings suggested that the frame-timbers should not, as had previously been done, be merely placed square and rectangular to each other, but that they should be braced together by trusses laid diagonally, and forming a series of triangles. While at Plymouth in 1800 Seppings had experimented in this direction on the Glenmore, an old and weak vessel of 36 guns. His success induced him, on his promotion to Chatham, to extend his operations in 1805 to the Kent, 74 guns, when docked for repairs. The plan answered all his expectations, and in 1810 it was applied with excellent effect to the old Tremendous (74). The Howe, launched on 28 March 1815, was the first ship laid down and wholly built on the diagonal principle. The system met with bitter opposition from the older shipwrights; it was pronounced to be 'without sense or science,' but Sir John Barrow [q. v.], second secretary of the admiralty, regarded it with favour, and described its merits in an article in the 'Quarterly Review.' Barrow induced Charles Yorke, first lord of the admiralty, to direct its adoption in the government shipyards. Seppings fully and clearly explained the new system in a paper read before the Royal Society on 10 March 1814, and supplied a print of a section indicating the arrangements in detail. He showed how a barred gate was stiffened by fixing across it a diagonal strip of wood, and proved that the diagonal braces and trusses placed on either side of the ship, with cross-bracing between the port-holes, and the attachment of the beams to the sides of the vessel by small timbers, rendered the ship one mass, and attained the essential qualities of 'strength, safety, and durability.' In conclusion, Seppings acknowledged the honourable spirit of liberality which dictated 'the orders for carrying out this new principle of constructing his majesty's ships.' A second paper, read before the Royal Society on 27 Nov. 1817 (*Transactions*, 1818), showed the success of the principle on its trial on the Howe (120), the St. Vincent (120), and the Justitia (74), an old Danish ship. Critics of 'high mathematical talents, who generally approved of the system' (Knowles, *Principles, &c.*, p. 12), controverted some of its details; but Seppings, who had no mathematical training, proved them in the wrong by actual experiment.

A third invention by Seppings was suggested by the loss of life on the Victory (100) at the battle of Trafalgar, owing to shot passing unimpeded through the boarding of the beakhead. In 1807 Seppings recommended the replacement of the beakhead of the ship by timbers run up the sides forming a circular bow. Subsequently he introduced a round stern, which became a formidable battery.

On 14 June 1813 Seppings was appointed by patent (*Admiralty Bill Office Registry of Salaries*) to the office of surveyor of the navy, and was elected a fellow of the Royal Society on 10 March 1814. He received the honour of knighthood on 17 Aug. 1819 on board the Royal George yacht 'under sail, the royal standard flying' (*Heralds' College*). He received many other marks of honour at home and abroad. The Emperor Alexander of Russia, the kings of Denmark and Holland, all presented him with valuable gifts to mark their appreciation of his professional services. In 1836 the university of Oxford conferred on him the degree of D.C.L.

When, in 1832, Sir James Graham [q. v.], first lord of the admiralty, began a reform of the naval administration, Seppings resigned, on 12 June 1832, after nearly fifty years' service, his successor, Sir William Symonds, being appointed by warrant on 13 June 1832. After his retirement from Chatham, Seppings settled at Taunton, Somerset, where he died on 25 Sept. 1840. A small tablet in the chancel of St. Mary's there is inscribed with a brief record of his career.

By his innovations Seppings rendered ships in every way more seaworthy and better adapted for defence. In the museum of the Royal United Service Institution there is a fine model of a vessel presented by Seppings to the board of admiralty, which opens lengthwise, showing in opposite sections the two halves of a ship, the one with the old construction, the other with Seppings's improvements and inventions. His improved methods of shipbuilding are now universally adopted in all ships, whether constructed for the navy or the merchant service. In 1891, at the Naval Exhibition at Chelsea, the gallery in which models illustrating the progress of naval architecture were shown, was entitled the 'Seppings' gallery.

Lady Seppings died at Taunton on 22 Nov. 1834. Seppings's eldest son, John Milligen Seppings, filled for twenty years the office of

inspector of shipping under the East India Company at Calcutta; with the death of his only surviving child (a daughter), the family in the male line became extinct. Another of Sir Robert's sons, Captain Edward Seppings, with his wife and two children, was killed at Cawnpore during the mutiny.

[Principles and Practice of Constructing Ships as mentioned and introduced by Sir Robert Seppings, by John Knowles, F.R.S., 1822; Gent. Mag. 1840, ii. 97; Philosophical Transactions, 1814, 1818; Proceedings of the Society of Arts, vol. xxii.; English Cyclopædia; Penny Encyclopædia, s.v. 'Shipbuilding;' The British Fleet, by Commander N. Robinson, R.N.; Statement of Case of Mr. Robert Seppings as to the Invention for obviating lifting Ships, Chatham, 1804; James's Naval History, ed. 1826.]

E. M. B.

SERES, WILLIAM (*d.* 1579?), printer, is said by Ames to have been in partnership with John Day (1522–1584) [q. v.] as a printer as early as 1544, but the earliest known book published by Seres is dated 1548. He also printed in connection with Anthony Scoloker [q. v.] and William Hill. Day and Seres separated about 1550, and the latter established himself at 'St. Peter College' in St. Paul's Churchyard. When that building was occupied by the Stationers' Company, Seres set up at the sign of the 'Hedge Hog' at the west end of St. Paul's Churchyard. The use of this device—the badge of Sir Henry Sidney—has led to the assumption that Seres was Sidney's servant. It is more probable that he was in the service of Cecil, who on 11 March 1553-4 procured for him a patent to be sole printer of all primers (i.e. forms of private prayer) and psalters. On the accession of Mary, Seres, who had published a large number of protestant books, was deprived of his patent and thrown into prison (*Egerton Papers*, Camden Soc., p. 140). Elizabeth, however, renewed the patent, including in it Seres's wife and son. Subsequently Seres parted with some of his rights to Henry Denham, and this led to a protracted dispute between Denham and Seres's widow (Ames, ed. Dibdin, iv. 194–5; Timperley, *Typogr. Encycl.* pp. 362–3). Seres took an active part in the affairs of the Stationers' Company; he was a member of the old company existing before the charter of 1556; in the new company he was master five times, namely, in 1570, 1571, 1575–6–7; he was also a generous benefactor to the company. He died between March 1577–8 (Arber, ii. 676) and June 1580 (*ib.* ii. 682). The business was carried on under the name of his son, William Seres, junior, until 1603. Dibdin enumerates more than sixty works printed by Seres between 1548 and 1577. Among the more important were Sir John Cheke's 'Hurt of Sedition,' 1549 and again in 1569, and Sir Geoffrey Fenton's 'Monophylo,' 1572. In 1562 he published a verse translation of 'A Prayer,' by himself, and apparently he was also author of an 'Answer to the Proclamation of the Rebels in the North,' 1569, in verse (Maitland, *Index of English Books at Lambeth*, p. 98; Ames, ed. Dibdin, iv. 216; *Notes and Queries*, 8th ser. viii. 345). He must be distinguished from one William Seres, a Scot, who 'departed out of Scotland because he had stolen away the sheriff of Linlithgow's wife, the Lord Semple's daughter; after that he was three years in Almaine with the Palsgrave and the emperor; then with others he came by a ship and was taken in Brittany and condemned to the galleys' (*Cal. State Papers*, For. Ser. 1566–8, No. 183). Having been released, he was actively concerned in the rebellion of 1569, and afterwards lived abroad (Murdin, *Burghley State Papers*, pp. 215–7; *Hatfield MSS.* ii. 17, 26; *Notes and Queries*, 8th ser. viii. 345).

[Arber's Transcript of the Stationers' Reg. passim; Ames's Typogr. Antiq. ed. Herbert, pp. 686, 705, ed. Dibdin, iv. 193, 226; Timperley's Encycl. pp. 362–3; Cal. State Papers, For. Ser. 1563, Nos. 1414, 1461, 1531; Archæologia, xxv. 108; Egerton Papers (Camden Soc.), pp. 138, 143; Strype's Works, index, passim; Corser's Collect. Anglo-Poet.; Hazlitt's Handbook and Collections, passim; Notes and Queries, 8th ser. viii. 345.]

A. F. P.

SERGEANT. [See also Sargent.]

SERGEANT, JOHN (1622–1707), Roman catholic controversialist, son of William Sergeant, yeoman, of Barrow-upon-Humber, Lincolnshire, was born there in 1622, and educated in a private school kept by Mr. Rawson in the neighbouring village of Barton. He was admitted a sub-sizar of St. John's College, Cambridge, on 12 April 1639. In 1641 he contributed verses to the university collection of poems on the king's return from Scotland, and in 1642–3 he graduated B.A. He became secretary to Thomas Morton, bishop of Durham, upon the recommendation of Dr. William Beale [q. v.], master of St. John's. This position he held for about a year, during which time he was employed in transcribing quotations from the ancient fathers. His researches in early ecclesiastical history resulted in his conversion to the Roman catholic church. Afterwards retiring to the English College at Lisbon, he went through a course of theology and was ordained priest.

For some time he was prefect of studies, and in 1652 he was sent on the English mission. His brethren soon after his arrival made him a canon and secretary of their chapter. Finding him well skilled in controversial writing, they encouraged him to undertake the defence of the catholic cause, and this he did with remarkable assiduity for upwards of forty years. He was, indeed, the 'very genius of controversy,' and there was no great protestant writer of his time that he did not encounter. In his 'Literary Life,' written in 1700, he states that he had printed thirty-two books at a cost of over 800*l.*, which sum he paid out of his own earnings, without burdening catholics or any of his brethren (*Catholicon*, iii. 127). In 1675 he was at Rouen, where he became well acquainted with the Abbé Walter Montagu [q. v.], and during his residence in France he lived on terms of intimacy with Bossuet, to whom he dedicated his 'Methodus Compendiosa.' In 1688 he was engaged in the composition of a second answer to Tillotson's 'Rule of Faith,' and seven sheets of it had been struck off by Bennet, the catholic printer, when the mob, rising at the Revolution, plundered the press, seized all the printed sheets, and took away some of the 'copy.' For two years after this Sergeant had enough to do to provide for his own safety, passing himself off as a physician and assuming at different times the names of Dodd, Holland, and Smith. 'He was unmanageable all his life,' observes one of his friends, Sylvester Jenks, in his unpublished letters to another of Sergeant's friends, Father Fairfax, 'and ended his days with printing libels, in which he abused, not only me, but many of my betters in a much more scurrilous manner than ever he did you or yours.' He died, 'with a pen in his hand,' in 1707.

Charles Plowden remarks that Sergeant was 'the author of a system of controversy entirely grounded on the erroneous principles of Blackloe [i.e. Thomas White (1582–1676), q. v.], which he published in a book entitled "Sure Footing." This book was attacked by catholic and protestant divines, especially by Dr. Peter Talbot, catholic archbishop of Dublin; and it was defended in various tracts by the author. He seems to have possessed a small share of ill-digested knowledge, much presumption, and an ardent temper, suited to the genius of faction and party. He was closely connected, in friendship and error, with Blackloe, and also with . . . Hobbes. Among the catholics he was usually called "Blackloe's Philip," in allusion to the secondary part which Philip Melanchthon acted under Luther' (*Remarks on the Memoirs of Gregorio Panzani*, 1794, p. 285). An account of Sergeant's theological opinions is given in Peter Talbot's 'Blackloanæ Heresis . . . Historia et Confutatio,' 1675, 4to, published under Talbot's pseudonym, 'Lominus' [see Talbot, Peter]. He must doubtless be distinguished from the John Sergeant whose evidence with regard to Oates's plot was printed by order of the House of Commons, 1681, fol.

The controversialist's works are: 1. English verses addressed 'To Sir Kenelme Digby upon his two incomparable Treatises of Philosophy' [London, 1653], 4to. 2. 'Schism disarm'd of the Defensive Weapons lent it by Doctor Hammond and the Bishop of Derry,' Paris, 1655, 8vo. 3. 'Schism Dispatcht, or a Rejoynder to the Replies of Dr. Hammond and the Ld. of Derry' [J. Bramhall], [Paris?], 1657, 8vo. 4. 'Reflections upon the Oath of Supremacy and Allegiance. By a Catholic Gentleman,' 1661, 12mo (cf. Butler, *Historical Memoirs*, iii. 430). 5. 'An Answer to Dr. Pierce's Sermon' [on Matthew, xix. 8], n. p., 1663, 8vo. 6. 'Sure Footing in Christianity, or Rational Discourses on the Rule of Faith. With three short Animadversions on Dr. Pierce's Sermon; also on some Passages in Mr. Whitby and Mr. Stillingfleet which concern that Rule. By J. S.,' London, 1665, 8vo; a second edition appeared the same year with 'an appendix, subverting fundamentally and manifoldly my Ld. of Down's [i.e. Jeremy Taylor's] Dissuasive,' and a 'Letter to Dr. Casaubon.' 7. 'A Discovery of the Groundlessness and Insincerity of my Ld. of Down's Dissuasive. Being the Fourth Appendix to Svre-Footing. With a Letter to Dr. Casaubon, and another to his Answerer. By J. S.,' London, 1665, 8vo. 8. 'Let Common Reason be Judge,' a treatise on the use of holy images in answer to B. Horwood [1665?]. 9. 'Sober Advice to Mr. Gataker' [1666?] 10. 'The Solid Grounds of the Roman Catholic Faith,' in answer to Dr. Matthew Poole's 'Nullity of the Romish Faith,' Oxford, 1666, 8vo. 11. 'A Letter of Thanks from the Author of Sure-Footing to his Answerer, Mr. J. T[illotson],' Paris, 1666, 8vo. 12. 'Faith vindicated from Possibility of Falshood' [anon.], Louvain, 1667, 8vo. 13. 'The Method to arrive at Satisfaction in Religion' (anon.) [1671], 12mo. 14. 'Errour nonplust; or, Dr. Stillingfleet shown to be the Man of no Principles. With an Essay how Discourses concerning Catholick Grounds bear the Highest Evidence' (anon.), 1673, 8vo. 15. 'Methodus compendiosa qua recto pervestigatur et certo invenitur Fides Christiana,' Paris, 1674, 12mo; dedicated to Bossuet. 16. 'Clypeus Septemplex. Declaratio

D. Sergeantii circa doctrinam in libris suis contentam exhibita Sacræ Congregationi ... Cardinalium in universa Christiana Republica contra hæreticam pravitatem Generalium Inquisitorum: appendix seu querimonia J. Sergeantii adversus M. Lominum [i.e. Peter Talbot, catholic archbishop of Dublin] ...' Douay, 1677, 8vo. 17. 'Vindiciæ J. Sergeantii tribunalibus Romano et Parisiensi, ubi ab ill^mo P. Talboto ... de doctrina prava accusatus fuit, in librorum suorum defensionem exhibitæ' [Douay], 1678, 8vo. 18. 'A Letter to the D.[ean] of P. [St. Paul's, i.e. Dr. E. Stillingfleet] in Answer to the arguing part of his first Letter to Mr. G.[odden]' (anon.) London, 1687, 4to; a reply to this was published anonymously by Clement Ellis, M.A. 19. 'A Second Catholic Letter; or, Reflections on the Reflecter [Clement Ellis]'s Defence of Dr. Stillingfleet's First Letter to Mr. G[odden] against the Answer to the arguing part of it' (anon.), London, 1687, 4to. 20. 'A Third Catholic Letter in answer to the arguing Part of Dr. Stillingfleet's Second Letter' (anon.), London, 1687, 4to. 21. 'The Fourth Catholick Letter in answer to Dr. Stillingfleet's Sermon preach'd at Guild-hall, Nov. 27, 1687, entituled Scripture & Tradition compared; addrest to his Auditory,' London, 1688, 4to. 22. 'The Fifth Catholic Letter in reply to Dr. Stillingfleet's (pretended) Answer to about the Fortieth Part of J. S.'s Catholic Letters, addrest to all impartial Readers,' London, 1688, 4to. 23. 'A Letter to [William Wake] the Continuator of the Present State of our Controversy. Laying open the Folly of his extravagant Boasting, and the Malice of his Willfull Forgeries' [1688?] 24. 'The Sixth Catholick Letter, laying open the Folly of the Continuator's extravagant Boasting, and the Malice of his wilful Forgeries. In which also the Accounts between J. S.'s two Adversaries, Dr. Stillingfleet and Dr. Tillotson, are cast up' [London, 1688], 4to. 25. 'The Schism of the Church of England, &c. demonstrated in four Arguments. Formerly propos'd to Dr. Gunning and Dr. Pearson, the late Bishops of Ely and Chester, by two Catholick Disputants in a celebrated Conference upon that Point' (anon.), Oxford, 1688, 4to. 26. A second answer to Tillotson's 'Rule of Faith,' London, 1688, 8vo, partly printed but never published. 27. 'The Method to Science. By J. S.,' London, 1696, 8vo. 28. 'Solid Philosophy asserted against the Fancies of the Ideists: or the Method to Science farther illustrated. With Reflexions on Mr. Locke's Essay concerning Human Understanding. By J. S.,' London, 1697, 8vo. Mr. James Crossley, F.S.A., says: 'I have Locke's copy of Sergeant's 'Solid Philosophy asserted,' the margins of which are filled with answers in Locke's autograph to the animadversions contained in that book. It is somewhat strange that neither these nor his manuscript notes on the pamphlets of Thomas Burnett of the Charterhouse, written against the "Essay on the Human Understanding," which are also in my possession, have ever been published or noticed by his biographers' (Worthington, *Diary*, ii. 193 *n.*) 29. 'Raillery defeated by calm Reasoning,' London, 1699, 12mo. 30. 'Transnatural Philosophy, or Metaphysicks: demonstrating the Essences and Operations of all Beings whatever, which gives the Principles to all other Sciences. And shewing the perfect Conformity of Christian Faith to Right Reason, and the Unreasonableness of Atheists, Deists, Antitrinitarians, and other Sectaries. By J. S.,' London, 1700, 8vo; 2nd edit. London, 1706, 8vo. 31. 'The Literary Life of John Sergeant. Written by Himself in Paris, 1700, at the Request of the Duke of Perth,' London, 1816, 8vo, edited by John Kirk, D.D. 32. 'An Account of the Chapter erected by William [Bishop] titular Bishop of Chalcedon, and Ordinary of England and Scotland,' 16mo; reprinted, with preface and notes by William Barclay Turnbull, London, 1853, 8vo. 33. 'Transactions relating to the English Secular Clergy,' 1706. 34. 'The Jesuit's Gospel,' a pamphlet which was repudiated by the whole of the catholic clergy (Gillow, iii. 619). 'Schism Unmask'd,' 1658, is ascribed to Sergeant by Dolman, but the real author was the jesuit father, John Percy (cf. Jones, *Popery Tracts*).

Among those who published replies to works by Sergeant were Hammond, Bramhall, Pierce, Casaubon, Taylor, Stillingfleet, Whitby, Tillotson, Wilkins, Poole, Gataker, W. Falkner, Clement Ellis, and George Hughes.

[Addit. MS. 5880, f. 189; Birch's Life of Tillotson, pp. 33, 34, 35, 371, 409; Bodleian Cat.; Bonney's Life of Jeremy Taylor, p. 349; Bramhall's Works (1842), Life, pp. xxviii, xxix, vol. ii. p. 358 *n.*; Catholicon (1816), ii. 129–36, 169–176, 217–24, iii. 9–16, 55–64, 97–104, 121–7, 248; Commons' Journals, ix. 710, 711; Dodd's Church Hist. iii. 472; Foulis's Romish Treasons and Usurpations, pref. p. vii; Gillow's Bibl. Dict. iv. 49; Halkett and Laing's Dict. of Anonymous Lit.; Pref. to Hickes's Devotions in the Ancient Way of Offices, 2nd edit. 1701; Jones's Popery Tracts, p. 484; Panzani's Memoirs, pp. xiv, 93 *n.* 326 *n.* 382, 384; Sergeant's Literary Life, 1816; Watt's Bibl. Brit.; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. (Bliss), iii. 496, iv. 1053, 1055.] T. C.

SERGISON, CHARLES (1654–1732), commissioner of the navy, born in 1654, entered the service of the crown as a dockyard clerk in July 1671. In 1675 he became clerk to the clerk of the acts, whose office was then held jointly by Thomas Hayter and John Pepys, a younger brother of Samuel Pepys [q. v.] John Pepys died in 1677 and was succeeded by James Sotherne, who, after March 1680, held the office by himself till 25 Dec. 1869. Sergison was then appointed in Sotherne's room, and remained clerk of the acts for thirty years, for the most part single-handed, but from 1701 to 1706 jointly with Samuel Atkins, formerly clerk of Samuel Pepys. During this period, which included the war of the Spanish succession, as well as the little war of 1718, the work of the navy board was excessively heavy, and Sergison won the highest opinion of the several administrations with whom he acted. The emoluments of the office were large, though rather by perquisites and fees than by pay, and in 1691 Sergison was able to purchase Cuckfield Park in Sussex. During the reign of Anne he more than once asked for permission to retire, but was told that he could not be spared. Afterwards, when he was superseded at the age of 65, in 1719, he seems to have felt it as an undeserved insult. During the rest of his life he lived at Cuckfield Place, and there he died on 26 Nov. 1732. He was buried in Cuckfield church, where there is a tablet to his memory. Sergison married Anne, daughter of Mr. Crawley of the navy office; she predeceased him; and on his death without children the estate passed to his grand-nephew, Thomas Warden, who took the name of Sergison. He also died, leaving no children, and was succeeded by his brother Michael, who assumed the name of Sergison. In his family the estate still remains.

Sergison formed a large collection of manuscripts relating to the navy; and though many of these have been dispersed, many are still at Cuckfield Place. He had also a fine collection of models, which has been preserved entire and in beautiful condition.

[Sussex Archæological Collections, xxv. 62–84; Duckett's Naval Commissioners.]

J. K. L.

SERLE, AMBROSE (1742–1812), Calvinistic writer, was born on 30 Aug. 1742, and entered the navy, in which by 1795 he had attained the rank of captain (*Ann. Reg.*) When William Legge, second earl of Dartmouth [q. v.], became secretary of state for the colonies in 1772, Serle was appointed one of his under-secretaries, and in January 1776 he was made clerk of reports. He went to America in 1774, accompanied the British army from 1776 to 1778, and during part of that time had control of the press in New York. His knowledge of American affairs was considerable, and his letters throw much light upon the course of events (cf. *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 14th Rep. App. x. passim). On returning from America in 1780 he settled at Heckfield, Hampshire. In 1795 the latter was a commissioner of 'the transport service and the care of prisoners of war,' and was reappointed in 1803 and 1809. He died on 1 Aug. 1812, and was buried in the churchyard at Broadwater, near Worthing. He was married, and a daughter Jane (1780–1792) was Mrs. Romaine's goddaughter.

In 1764, while living in or near London, Serle became a friend of William Romaine [q. v.] Other friends were John Thornton, John Newton, Toplady, and Legh Richmond. Soon after 1780 he published his 'Horæ Solitariæ' (2nd edit. 1787) and the 'Christian Remembrancer' (1787). A series of letters from Romaine (*Works*, vol. viii.) shows the deep affection and entire accord in religious matters which subsisted between him and Serle. Nowhere does the conviction of the vital importance of Calvinism as of the essence of the gospel appear more strongly than in Serle's books. The 'Horæ Solitariæ' and the 'Christian Remembrancer' passed through many editions. Romaine circulated them broadcast. Other works by Serle are: 1. 'Christian Husbandry,' 1789. 2. 'The Christian Parent,' 1793, often reprinted. 3. 'Charis,' 1803. 4. 'The Secret Thoughts of a departed Friend,' written while the author was suffering from paralysis in 1812, and designed for posthumous publication, 1813. 5. 'The Church of God,' 1814.

[Gent. Mag. 1812, ii. 193; Serle's Works; Brit. Mus. Cat.]

H. L. B.

SERLO, called GRAMMATICUS (1109–1207?), monk of Fountains, born in 1109, was brother of Ralph, abbot of Louth Park in Lincolnshire. Though he was present when the monks of St. Mary's, York, left that house to found the abbey at Fountains, and was related to some of them, he did not himself enter Fountains till 1138, when he was twenty-nine (WALBRAN, *Memorials of Fountains*, i. viii. 57; but cf. LELAND, *De Script. Brit.* i. 159; and PITS, *De Illustr. Angl. Script.* p. 223). From Fountains he was sent in 1147 to assist in founding Kirkstall, near Leeds, where he spent the rest of his long life. It was Serlo who in his ninety-ninth year gave Hugh of Kirkstall the information which he worked up into his 'Narratio

de fundatione Fontanis Monasterii in comitatu Eboracensi' (*Memorials of Fountains*, vol. i.) Serlo's daily lectures to his pupils are said to have been the origin of his books. He probably died at Kirkstall about 1207.

Serlo is said to have written 'De bello inter Scotiæ Regem et Angliæ Barones,' a Latin poem printed by Twysden (*Decem Scriptores*, i. 331). Other works attributed doubtfully to him are 'De Morte Sumerledi,' 'De Dictionibus Disyllabis,' 'De Dictionibus æquivocis,' 'De Dictionibus univocis' (Bale, *Script. Illust. Brit.* i. 198), and 'De Differentiis Verborum' (Pits, l.c. p. 224). Several of these are extant in manuscript in different college libraries in Cambridge.

It is difficult, however, to distinguish the writings of Serlo of Fountains from those of three other men of the same name (Hardy, *Descriptive Catalogue*, vol. ii. Rolls Ser.) The first Serlo (*fl.* 960?) probably lived about the middle of the tenth century, and was a Benedictine of St. Augustine's, Canterbury. After a feud with monks of another house in that city, he wrote with great bitterness against monks in general a book called 'Monachorum Libidines' (Bale, l.c. i. 136). He is said to have been bishop of Cornwall, but his name does not appear among those of the bishop of that diocese (Pits, l.c. p. 175, but see Stubbs, *Regist. Sacr. Angl.* p. 167). Other works doubtfully attributed to him are five books of commentaries on the Pentateuch, a treatise 'de proverbiis,' and a book of homilies (Pits, l.c.)

The second, Serlo of Bayeux (1036?–1104), a Norman by birth, was perhaps at different times canon of Bayeux and of Avranches, monk of Mount St. Michael in Normandy, and chaplain to William, afterwards the conqueror of England (*Hist. et Cart. Monast. Gloucestr.* i. 10, Rolls Ser.) His patron was Odo [q. v.], bishop of Bayeux, half-brother of William, and, at the suggestion of Osmund, the chancellor, the king gave him the abbey of Gloucester, 29 Aug. 1072 (*Cart. Monast. Gloucestr.* l.c.) At the time of Serlo's appointment there were only two monks of full age in the house, but under his vigorous administration its prosperity was firmly established, and the number of monks raised to over a hundred (Will. Malm. *Gesta Regum*, ii. 512, Rolls Ser.; Dugdale, *Monast. Angl.* i. 531–2; cf. *Cartul. Monast. Gloucest.* i. 58 seq.) Serlo rebuilt the abbey church and had it consecrated in 1100 (*ib.* pp. 11–12), but it appears to have been destroyed by fire shortly after. Serlo was a man of strong will and high personal character, and, after thirty-two years of able rule, died on 3 March 1104 (*ib.* p. 13; Sym. Dunelm. ii. 236). An epitaph upon him written by Godfrey of Winchester [q. v.], is extant (*Cartul. Gloucestr.* p. 13). To disentangle Serlo's writing and especially his verse from that of his friend, Godfrey of Winchester, seems impossible (*Descriptive Cat.* ii. 58, 69, 74, 97, &c.), but he perhaps wrote the treatise 'Super Oratione Dominica,' sometimes attributed to Serlo of Fountains (Tanner, *Bibl. Brit.-Hib.* p. 662 *n.*) There is also extant a letter which he wrote to William Rufus, informing him of a dream of one of his monks concerning the king's approaching death (Ord. Vit. x. 781).

The third Serlo (*d.* 1147), called the Priest, lived under Henry I, and was the son of Syred the Smith and Leofleda (*Cartul. Gloucest.* i. 81; Tanner, l.c.; Bale, l.c.) He was fourth dean of Salisbury, in what year is not known (Le Neve, *Fasti Eccl. Angl.* ii. 612), and was first abbot of Cirencester in 1117 (Flor. Wig. ii. 92, Engl. Hist. Soc.; *Monast. Angl.* vi. 176). Serlo and his mother sold their land in Gloucester to the abbey of St. Peter's in 1129, his son Bartholomew being a witness to the transaction (*Cartul. Gloucest.* i. 812). Serlo died at Cirencester in 1147.

[Authorities cited in the text.]

A. M. C–e.

SERMON, WILLIAM (1629?–1679), physician, born probably in 1629, was 'nearly related' to one Edmond Sermon, a native of Naunton-Beauchamp, Worcestershire. He seems to have gained his first medical experience 'in the armies.' About April 1666 his 'occasions' called him to Bristol, 'and the physicians there leaving the city,' owing to the plague, he was, by desire of the mayor, 'shut up at the Mermaid Tavern upon the Back, and after that at Mr. Richard Winstone's house in the county of Gloucester, near the city aforesaid, in which infected houses,' he says, 'I continued the space of three months, and cured all of the Pest that took my Directions.' He now obtained 'a sufficient practice upon the worst of diseases,' and remained at Bristol till 8 June 1669, when he was summoned to Newhall in Essex to attend George Monck, duke of Albemarle [q. v.], for dropsy. On 12 July Monck gave him a certificate of his cure, and Charles II, on 6 Aug., sent letters to the university of Cambridge requesting them to grant Sermon a medical degree (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1669, October to December, p. 441). In 1670 he accordingly graduated M.D.

On 9 Sept. 1669 an advertisement appeared in the 'London Gazette,' stating that Sermon had 'removed from Bristol, and may

be seen at his house in West Harding Street, in Goldsmith's Rents, near Three-legged Alley, between Fetter Lane and Shoe Lane' (*ib.* p. 486). He now gained a considerable practice, and was made physician-in-ordinary to the king. In 1672 appeared the eighth edition of his 'Advertisement concerning those most famous and safe cathartiques and diuretique Pills . . . wherewith was cured the late Lord-general Monck of the Dropsie.' Sermon denies that Monck eventually died of the dropsy, 'as many enviously report' (cf. GUMBLE, *Life of Monck*, pp. 246, 254, 476). Much of the book is repeated in 'The Ladies Companion, or the English Midwife' (1671, 8vo), which is illustrated with sixteen copper cuts, giving 'the various forms of the childs proceeding forth of the womb.' The author complains of 'the great rage of black-mouth'd envy' excited by his success. A third work, issued in 1673, was 'A Friend to the Sick, or the honest English Man's preservative . . . with a particular discourse of the Dropsie, scurvie, and yellow jaundice.' Prefixed to it are some Latin hexameters by P[ayne] Fisher [q. v.], and some English laudatory verses by various friends, including William Winstanley [q. v.]

Sermon died at his house in the parish of St. Bride's, London, in the winter of 1679. A portrait of him, drawn and engraved by William Sherwin [q. v.] in 1671, represents him in a doctor's gown at the age of forty-two. Under it are some doggerel lines, referring to his cure of Monck. It is prefixed to both 'The Ladies Companion' and the 'Friend to the Sick.' Wood calls him 'that forward, vain, and conceited person.'

[Sermon's Works; Wood's Fasti Oxon. ed. Bliss, ii. 354; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Grad. Cant.; Granger's Biogr. Hist. of England, iv. 5.] G. Le G. N.

SERRES, DOMINIC (1722–1793), marine-painter, was born in 1722 at Auch in Gascony, and was educated in the public school there. He is said to have been nephew of the archbishop of Rheims. His parents intended him for the church, but, this not suiting his taste, he ran away from his native town, and made his way on foot into Spain. He there shipped on board a vessel for South America as a common sailor, and eventually became master of a trading vessel to the Havannah, where he was taken prisoner by a British frigate and brought to this country about 1758. After his release he married and lived for a time in Northamptonshire. He had received some instruction in drawing, and commenced life in England as a painter of naval pieces, for which the wars of the period furnished abundance of subjects. He received some assistance from Charles Brooking [q. v.], and soon established a position. In 1765 Serres became a member of the Incorporated Society of Artists, and exhibited with them for two years. On the establishment of the Royal Academy in 1768 he was chosen one of the foundation members, and was a constant contributor up to the time of his death. Between 1761 and 1793 he exhibited eight works at the Society of Artists, twenty-one at the Free Society, and 105 at the Royal Academy. Among the latter were 'The Siege at Fort Royal, Martinique' (1769), 'The Royal George returning from the Bay' (1771), 'The Burning of the Town of Gimras' (1772), 'The Thésée sinking while engaging with the Torbay' (1777), and 'The Engagement between the Serapis and the Countess of Scarborough with Paul Jones and his Squadron' (1780). Serres was a good linguist. In 1792 he succeeded Wilton as librarian to the academy. He was also appointed marine-painter to George III, but he did not long hold these offices. He died in 1793, and was buried at St. Marylebone Old Church. He married about 1758, and left two sons, who followed his profession, John Thomas [q. v.] and Dominic, and four daughters, two of whom were honorary exhibitors at the Royal Academy. Paul Sandby was his friend and next-door neighbour.

There are several large sea-pieces by Serres (in bad condition) at Greenwich Hospital and at Hampton Court Palace; they do not sustain the reputation he enjoyed in his lifetime. A few of his water-colour drawings are at South Kensington Museum.

[Redgrave's Dict.; Edwards's Anecdotes; William Sandby's Thomas and Paul Sandby; Redgrave's Century; Graves's (Algernon) Dict.; Memoir of J. T. Serres, 1826, p. 7.] C. M.

SERRES, JOHN THOMAS (1759–1825), marine-painter, elder son of Dominic Serres [q. v.], was born in December 1759, and followed his father's profession. He was for some time drawing-master to a marine school at Chelsea. In 1780 he began to exhibit at the Royal Academy, sending two water-colour views and a painting of Sir George Rodney engaging the Spanish squadron. In 1790 he went to Italy, visiting Paris, Lyons, Marseilles, Genoa, Pisa, Florence, and Rome, where he passed five months, and then proceeded to Naples. After an absence of a little more than a year, he was recalled to England by a letter from Miss Olive Wilmot, the daughter of a house-painter at Warwick, to whom he had engaged himself before he left

England, and whom he married, against the wishes of his friends, 17 Sept. 1791 [see SERRES, MRS. OLIVIA].

In 1793 he succeeded his father as marine-painter to the king, and was also appointed marine draughtsman to the admiralty. In the latter capacity he was frequently employed in making sketches of the harbours on the enemy's coast, and had a vessel appointed for his service, receiving 100*l.* a month when on duty. He also contributed regularly (chiefly shipping and marine subjects) to the exhibitions of the Royal Academy till 1808. In 1801 he published a translation of 'The Little Sea-torch,' a guide for coasting ships, illustrated by a large number of coloured aquatints, and in 1805 his 'Liber Nauticus,' or instructor in the art of marine-drawing.

He saved a good deal of money, but was ruined by the intrigues and extravagance of his wife. He was separated from her (by deed) in 1804, and in 1808 went to Edinburgh to escape the persecutions to which he was still subjected from her, ceasing to contribute to the Royal Academy for seven years. But it was of no avail; he was arrested and thrown into prison, and, the same round of persecutions continuing, he was driven to make an attempt at suicide, which was happily frustrated. The failure of the speculation for building the Coburg Theatre, in which he had invested 2,000*l.* of his savings, obliged him to take advantage of the Insolvent Act. He exhibited again at the Royal Academy in 1817, and occasionally exhibited there and elsewhere till his death; but his wife's pretensions to be Princess Olive of Cumberland, though they received no support from him, had deprived him of the royal favour, which he never regained. Teaching now became his chief occupation and support. Broken in spirit and health, he laboured on in prison till he became seriously ill with a tumour. He was moved into the rules of the king's bench, but the removal hastened his death, which took place on 28 Dec. 1825. In his will he declared his wife's pretensions to be wholly without foundation. He was buried beside his father. He was a clever artist, and his pictures have lasted much better than his father's.

Some watercolour drawings by John Thomas Serres, and a 'View of the Lighthouse in the Bay of Dublin, with His Majesty's Yacht, Dorset,' in oils, dated 1788, are in the South Kensington Museum.

His younger brother, Dominic, landscape-painter and drawing-master, exhibited nine works at the Royal Academy between 1778 and 1804, but late in life fell into a hopeless despondency, lost his employment, and was supported by his brother.

[An exculpatory memoir by 'A Friend,' 1826 Redgrave's Dict.; Graves's (Algernon) Dict. Redgraves' Century; Cat. of Oil Pictures in South Kensington Museum.] C. M.

SERRES, MRS. OLIVIA (1772–1834), calling herself the Princess Olive of Cumberland, born at Warwick, 3 April 1772, was daughter of Robert Wilmot, house-painter of Warwick, who afterwards removed to London, and of Anna Maria, his wife. She was baptised on 15 April 1772 at St. Nicholas Church, Warwick. Much of her early life was spent at the house of her bachelor uncle, Dr. James Wilmot, a fellow of Trinity College, Oxford, and rector of Barton-on-Heath, Warwickshire. When she was seventeen she received lessons in drawing at her father's house in London from John Thomas Serres [q. v.], marine-painter. On 17 Sept. 1791 she married her teacher at Barton-on-Heath, her uncle, Dr. Wilmot, officiating. She was under age, and was married by special license, her father, Robert Wilmot, making an affidavit that he was her natural and lawful father and consented to her marriage. The marriage proved unhappy, and in 1804 a separation was arranged.

Afterwards she occupied herself with painting, and gave lessons in art. She exhibited landscapes at the Royal Academy in 1794, and from 1804 to 1808, and at the British Institution in 1806. Obtaining an introduction to some members of the royal family, she was in 1806 appointed landscape-painter to the Prince of Wales. In 1809 she began an incoherent correspondence with him, offering to lend him 20,000*l.* at the same time as she begged for pecuniary assistance. She likewise tried her hand at literature, publishing 'St. Julian,' a novel, in 1805; 'Flights of Fancy: Poems,' in 1806; and subsequently 'Olivia's Letters to her Daughters,' and 'St. Athanasius's Creed explained for the Advantage of Youth,' 1814.

Meanwhile her uncle, Dr. Wilmot, died in 1808, leaving his money to his brother for his life, and afterwards in equal shares to his niece Olive and her brother. In 1813 Mrs. Serres published a memoir of her uncle, as 'The Life of the Author of Junius's Letters, the Rev. James Wilmot, D.D.' She represented him as a person of political and social influence, and, on obviously absurd grounds, asserted that he wrote the letters of Junius (cf. *Gent. Mag.* 1813 ii. 99, 413, 545, and 1814 i. passim). Four years later—in 1817—in another pamphlet, entitled 'Junius, Sir Philip

Francis denied a Letter addressed to the British Nation,' she pretended to prove this statement from evidence of handwriting.

In 1817 she made her first claim to be the daughter of Henry Frederick, duke of Cumberland and Strathearn [q. v.], brother of George III. In a petition to the king she alleged that she was the daughter of the duke by Mrs. Payne, a sister of Dr. Wilmot, and wife of a captain in the navy (cf. *Gent. Mag.* 1818). In 1820, after the death of George III and the Duke of Kent, she amplified her pretensions, now asserting herself to be the legitimate daughter of the Duke of Cumberland, and in a memorial to George IV assumed the title of Princess Olive of Cumberland. She managed to hire a carriage, placed the royal arms on it, and drove out with her servants dressed in the royal livery. In September 1821 she was at the Islington parish church rechristened as Olive, daughter of the Duke of Cumberland, and Olive, his first wife. A newspaper, called 'The British Luminary,' took up her cause, and Henry Nugent Bell [q. v.], the genealogist, is said to have reported favourably on it.

According to her story—as finally elaborated and supported by what was represented as genuine documentary evidence—Dr. Wilmot of Oxford secretly married a sister of Stanislas, king of Poland, and had by her a daughter, who was placed under the care of Dr. Wilmot's sister, Mrs. Payne. At the age of eighteen the girl won the admiration of both the Duke of Cumberland and the Earl of Warwick, but the earl gave way, and the duke married her at Lord Archer's house in London on 4 March 1767, in the presence of Warwick and James Addez, D.D. Of this marriage she asserted that she was the child, but that ten days after her birth she was substituted for a stillborn daughter of Dr. Wilmot's brother Robert, who was thenceforth reputed to be her father.

In July 1821 Mrs. Serres was arrested for debt, and moved the court for a stay of proceedings on the ground that she was the legitimate daughter of the Duke of Cumberland, and as such was exempt from arrest in civil cases. The court held that, as she had put in bail, she was too late to raise privilege. She now produced what purported to be an early will of George III, witnessed by Chatham and Dunning, leaving 15,000*l.* to 'Olive, the daughter of our brother of Cumberland.' In 1822 she applied to the prerogative court for process to call upon the king's proctor to see George III's will; but the court held that it had no jurisdiction. In March 1823 Sir Gerald Noel, who long interested himself in Mrs. Serres's pretensions, presented a petition to parliament from 'the Princess of Cumberland,' and in June he moved that it should be referred to a select committee. This motion was seconded by Joseph Hume. Sir Robert Peel, the home secretary, declared Mrs. Serres's contentions to be baseless, and the motion was negatived without a division. In 1825 Serres died in the rules of the king's bench, repudiating in his will any belief in the genuineness of his wife's claims. Mrs. Serres spent the rest of her life in difficulties, and, dying on 21 Nov. 1834, within the rules of the king's bench, was buried in St. James's Church, Piccadilly.

Besides the works enumerated which she produced under her own name, she published much anonymously. There are good reasons for believing that she had a hand in the scandalous 'Secret History of the Court of England, and the Authentic Records of the Court of England by Lady Anne Hamilton.' Lady Anne Hamilton denied all responsibility for the work (see 'Hannah Lightfoot' by W. Thoms, reprinted from *Notes and Queries*).

Mrs. Serres left two daughters. The younger took part with her father. The elder, Lavinia Janetta Horton de Serres (1797–1871), married, in 1822, Antony Thomas Ryves, a portrait-painter, and obtained a decree of divorce from him in 1841. She took up her mother's claim, and on her mother's death called herself Princess Lavinia of Cumberland and the Duchess of Lancaster. In 1844 Sir Gerard Noel, her mother's champion, formed a committee of friends to assist her in asserting her alleged rights. A bill was filed against the Duke of Wellington, as executor of George IV, praying for an account of the legacy of 15,000*l.* alleged to have been left to her mother by George III. The court of chancery held, however, that it had no power to give relief under a will that had not been proved in the ordinary fashion. In 1858 she published an 'Appeal for Royalty: a Letter to Her Most Gracious Majesty Queen Victoria, from Lavinia, Princess of Cumberland and Duchess of Lancaster.' In this book she related incidentally the fictitious story of an early marriage between George III and Hannah Lightfoot, and published copies of what purported to be certificates, in her possession, of the marriage which she pretended was celebrated by Dr. Wilmot. The document was doubtless forged by her mother.

Mrs. Ryves took advantage of the Legitimacy Declaration Act of 1861 to bring her case again into court. She first obtained in

1861 a declaration of the validity of the marriage of her mother with her father. In June 1866 she petitioned the court to declare that the Duke of Cumberland and Olive Wilmot were lawfully married, and that Olive, afterwards Olive Serres, was their legitimate child. All the documents previously mentioned in the controversy—about seventy in all—were produced; but before the solicitor-general, Sir Roundell Palmer (afterwards Lord Selborne) [q. v.], finished his address for the crown, the jury unanimously declared the signatures to be forgeries.

Mrs. Ryves afterwards published a pamphlet, 'Ryves v. the Attorney-General: Was Justice done?' 1866. She enjoyed a pension from the Royal Academy in consideration of her father's eminence, and died at Haverstock Hill on 7 Dec. 1871, leaving two sons and three daughters.

[Gent. Mag. 1835, ii. 93; Life of J. T. Serres, by a Friend; Hannah Lightfoot and Dr. Wilmot's Polish Princess (reprinted from Notes and Queries), by William J. Thoms; Princess of Cumberland's Statement to the English Nation; Annual Register, 1866, the Trial of Ryves v. the Attorney-General; information kindly supplied by W. A. J. Archbold, esq.] D. J. B.

SERVICE, JOHN, D.D. (1833–1884), Scottish divine, son of John Service, engraver in the calico works of Robert Dalglish, M.P., at Lennoxtown, was born at Campsie on 26 Feb. 1833. He received his education at the Campsie parish school, and then entered the calico works as a clerk. At fifteen he was sent to Glasgow University to study for the church. For several years afterwards he was engaged in literary work, editing the 'Dumbarton Herald' in 1857, and from 1858 till 1862 he was sub-editor under Patrick Edward Dove [q. v.] of Mackenzie's 'Imperial Dictionary of Universal Biography.' He was ordained in the church of Scotland in 1862, and for ten months performed ministerial work at Hamilton, near Glasgow. Shortly afterwards he spent eighteen months in Australia owing to failure of health. At the end of the period he was inducted to St. John's presbyterian church (May 1866) at Hobart Town in Tasmania.

He returned to Glasgow in May 1870, and in 1871 he became assistant to Charles Strong at Anderston, which position he left on being presented by the Earl of Stair to the parish of Inch, near Stranraer. While there he wrote a novel, which, after running through 'Good Words' under the title of 'Novantia,' was issued in 1875 as 'Lady Hetty: a Story of Scottish and Australian Life.' A volume of sermons and essays, entitled 'Salvation Here and Hereafter,' appeared in 1877, and caused a sensation in Scotland on account of its broad-church views. Service also wrote much in the 'Glasgow Herald' and other newspapers. In 1871 he contributed to the 'Contemporary Review' an article entitled 'The Spiritual Theory of Another Life.' On 30 April 1877 Glasgow University conferred on Service the degree of D.D., and on 19 Dec. 1878 he was appointed minister of the new west-end church at Hyndland, Glasgow, a position he occupied until his death on 15 March 1884.

On 29 April 1859 Service married Jessie, second daughter of James Bayne, teacher of music in Glasgow, by whom he had four sons and two daughters.

A volume of 'Sermons' by Service was published in 1884, with a prefatory notice and portrait of the author. His 'Prayers for Public Worship' appeared in 1885. In 1880 he contributed an essay on Burns to Mr. T. H. Ward's 'English Poets.'

[Notice prefixed to Service's Sermons, 1884; private information.] G. S–H.

SETCHEL, SARAH (1803–1894), water-colour painter, daughter of John Frederick Setchel, a bookseller in King Street, Covent Garden, London, was born in 1803. After leaving school, she took up drawing with energy, but received no regular instruction beyond that which she derived from studying at the British Museum and the National Gallery, and from some lessons in miniature-painting from Louisa Sharpe [q. v.] Her first exhibited work, 'Fanny,' appeared at the Royal Academy in 1831, and she continued to exhibit there and at the Society of British Artists until 1840, when she sent to the latter exhibition 'A Scene from Howitt's Rural Life of England.' She was elected in 1841 a member of the New Society (now the Royal Institute) of Painters in Water-colours, and in the following year contributed to its exhibition 'A Scene from "Smugglers and Poachers" in Crabbe's Tales of the Hall,' a drawing of much power and pathos, representing a prison interior where a young man whose life is in jeopardy is visited by his betrothed. It became very popular, and was engraved in mezzotinto by Samuel Bellin as 'The Momentous Question.' Her works appeared but seldom in the exhibitions, and one other only became well known. This was 'The Heart's Resolve,' a subject from Crabbe's tale of 'Jesse and Colin,' exhibited in 1850, and engraved by Samuel Bellin as a companion plate to 'The Momentous Question.' She continued to exhibit domestic subjects until 1867, but her later works did not sustain her earlier reputation.

Miss Setchel died at Sudbury, near Harrow, Middlesex, on 8 Jan. 1894, aged 80.

[Miss Clayton's English Female Artists, 1876, ii. 124–9; Times, 17 Jan. 1894; Athenæum, 1894, i. 90; Exhibition Catalogues of the Royal Academy, Society of British Artists, and New Society of Painters in Watercolours, 1831–1867.] R. E. G.

SETON, Sir ALEXANDER (*fl.* 1311–1340), keeper of Berwick, was probably a brother of Sir Christopher Seton [q. v.] His name is found among those of the Scottish nobles who, in 1320, signed the letter to the pope asserting the independence of Scotland. From Robert I he received the manor of Tranent and other lands, as well as the fortalice and lands of Fawside. In February 1311–12 he was named prior or inquisitor of forfeited lands in Lothian (*Cal. Documents relating to Scotland*, 1307–57, No. 245). He had a safe-conduct in September 1322 to go and return from England (*ib.* No. 767), and on 25 July 1324 he received a safe-conduct to go to Scotland and come again (*ib.* No. 846). In 1327 he was appointed keeper of Berwick (*Exchequer Rolls of Scotland*, i. 63), and while it was besieged by the English in 1333 held command of the town, the Earl of March being entrusted with the defence of the castle. After a long blockade, during which provisions ran short, they agreed to capitulate within a certain time unless succour was obtained, giving as hostage, among others, Thomas Seton, son of Sir Alexander. Just before the period expired Sir William Keith succeeded in throwing himself into the town with a body of Scots soldiers. Keith, who was now chosen governor, refused to surrender, whereupon Edward, on the ground that the Scots had broken the stipulations of the treaty, hanged Thomas Seton before the gate of the town in the sight of the garrison. Alarmed for the safety of the other hostages, the Scots renewed negotiations, and signed an agreement to deliver up the town, unless they were relieved before 19 July by two hundred men-at-arms or the English were defeated in pitched battle. It was accordingly surrendered after the defeat of the Scots at Halidon Hill on 19 July 1333.

Seton was present in Edward Baliol's parliament on 10 Feb. following, and witnessed the cession of Berwick to the English. He had a safe-conduct to go into England, 15 Oct. 1337, and he was one of the hostages for John, earl of Moray, on his liberation in August 1340. By his wife Christian, daughter of Cheyne of Straloch, he had three sons and a daughter: Alexander, killed in opposing the landing of Edward Baliol, 6 Aug. 1332; Thomas, put to death by Edward III before the walls of Berwick; William, drowned during an attack on the English fleet at Berwick in July 1333; and Margaret, who being predeceased by her three brothers, became heiress of Seton. She married Alan de Wyntoun, whose son, Sir William Seton of Seton, was created a lord of parliament.

[Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland; Exchequer Rolls of Scotland; Rymer's Fœdera; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 640–1.] T. F. H.

SETON, Sir ALEXANDER, first Earl of Huntly (*d.* 1470), was the elder son of Alexander Seton (second son of Sir William Seton of Seton), by Elizabeth Gordon, only daughter and heiress of Sir Adam Gordon, lord of Gordon, killed at Homildon, 14 Sept. 1402. On 20 July 1408 Seton and his wife received from Robert, duke of Albany, a charter, with remainder to their heirs, of the lands and baronies of Gordon, and other lands belonging to the late Lord of Gordon; and Seton was thereafter styled Lord of Gordon and Huntly. The son was one of the Scots nobles who attended Princess Margaret of Scotland to France in 1436 on her marriage to the dauphin Louis, son of Charles VIII; and in the following year he was sent to England to treat of a peace. In January 1445–6 he happened, on his way home from attending the court, to be the guest of the Ogilvys at Castle Ogilvy, when they were preparing for combat against the Crawfords, and shared in their defeat at Inverquaharity. Naturally, therefore, he supported the king against the league of Douglas with the Earls of Crawford and Ross, and, after the assassination of Douglas by the king in Stirling Castle in 1452, he was appointed (having in 1449 been created Earl of Huntly) lieutenant-general of the kingdom, and entrusted with the special task of subduing Crawford. On 15 March he encountered him near Brechin and totally defeated him, but not without severe loss, his two brothers, Sir William and Sir Henry Seton, being among the slain. During his absence his lands were wasted by the Earl of Moray, brother of the late Douglas; but on his return from his victory at Brechin he devastated the lands of Moray, and plundered and burnt the city of Elgin. Ultimately he succeeded in completely restoring order, and, having come to terms with Crawford, contrived during the king's progress in the north in 1453 that Crawford and his followers should appear before the king in beggarly apparel, when he so successfully interceded for them that they received a free pardon,

and Crawford was restored to his estates and titles.

Huntly was one of the commanders at the siege of Roxburgh Castle in 1460, when the king was killed by the bursting of one of the siege guns. He died at Elgin on 14 July 1470. By his first wife, Jean, daughter and heiress of Robert de Keith, grandson and heir of Sir William de Keith, great marischal of Scotland, he had no issue. By his second wife, Egidia, daughter and heiress of Sir John Hay of Tulliebody, Clackmannanshire, he had a son Sir Alexander Seton, ancestor of the Setons of Touch, Stirlingshire. By his third wife, Elizabeth, daughter of William, lord Crichton, lord high-chancellor of Scotland, he had three sons and three daughters, who took the name of Gordon, the succession to the earldom of Huntly being settled on the issue of this marriage, by charter 29 Jan. 1449–50. The sons were George Gordon, second earl of Huntly [q. v.]; Sir Alexander of Midmar, ancestor of the Gordons of Abergeldie; and Adam, dean of Caithness and rector of Pettie.

[Lindsay of Pitscottie's Chronicle; Bishop Lesley's History of Scotland; Exchequer Rolls of Scotland; Tytler's History of Scotland; William Gordon's House of Gordon; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), i. 643–4.] T. F. H.

SETON, ALEXANDER (*d.* 1542), Scottish friar and reformer, was educated at the university of St. Andrews, and is probably to be identified with a student of that name who was a determinant in 1516. According to Calderwood (*History*, i. 93), he was 'brother to Ninian Seton, laird of Touch,' and if so he was the youngest son of Sir Alexander Seton of Touch and Tullybody, by Lady Elizabeth Erskine, daughter of Thomas, second earl of Mar. It was probably about 1534 or 1535 that he began, according to Knox, to 'tax the corrupt doctrine of the papacy' (*Works*, i. 45), maintaining that the 'law of God had of many years not been truly taught' (*ib.*) His statements, reflecting especially on the conduct of the bishops, gave such offence that they accused him to James V, whose confessor he was, whereupon, dreading the king's anger, he suddenly left for England. From Berwick he sent the king a letter, in which he offered to return to Scotland and debate the matters in dispute in his presence before any bishop, abbot, friar, or secular he might name (printed in Knox, i. 48–52). According to Knox, he 'taught the evangel' in England for some years (*ib.* p. 54), but in 1541 he made a recantation at St. Paul's Cross in London, which was published with the title, 'The Declaracion made at Paules Crosse in the Cytye of London, the fourth Sunday of Advent, by Alexander Seyton, and Mayster William Tolwyn, persone of St. Anthonyes in the sayd Cytye of London, the year of our Lord God MDXLI, newly corrected and amended. Imprinted at London in Saynt Sepulchres parysshe in the Olde Bayly by Richard Lant. Ad imprimendum solum.' He was for some time chaplain to Charles Brandon, duke of Suffolk, in whose house he died in 1542.

[Histories of Knox and Calderwood; Foxe's Book of Martyrs; Laing's Notes to Knox's History.] T. F. H.

SETON, Sir ALEXANDER, first Earl of Dunfermline (1555?–1622), born about 1555, was fourth son of George, fifth lord Seton [q. v.], by Isabel, daughter of Sir William Hamilton of Sanquhar. Sir John Seton (*d.* 1594) [q. v.] was his brother. Being intended for the church, he went to Rome, where he studied at the College of Jesuits. It was probably before this that (on 17 Sept. 1565) he received from Queen Mary a grant of the priory of Pluscardine, of which his father had been economus and commissioner since 17 April 1561. In his sixteenth year he delivered with great applause an oration, 'De Ascensione Domini,' in the pope's chapel of the Vatican before Gregory XIII and the cardinals. This was probably in December 1571; for mention is made of his having about this time been presented to the pope, who commanded him to be treated as his own son (*Cal. State Papers*, For. 1569–71, No. 2166). According to Lord Kingston (*Continuation of the History of the House of Seton*), he was 'a great humanist in prose and verse, Greek and Latin, and well versed in the mathematics and great skill in architecture.' He is supposed to have taken holy orders, and it is also customary to state that the occurrence of the Reformation caused him either to give up thoughts of entering the church or to abandon the holy vocation; but the definite notice of his presentation to the pope in 1571 shows that he had not even entered on his studies when the Reformation took place. But whatever his original intentions, and whatever the cause of his abandoning them, if he did abandon them, he ultimately began the study of law, and, after attending various lectures in France, returned to Scotland, where he at length passed advocate. At some unknown period, but probably on the fall of Mary Stuart, he was deprived of the priory of Pluscardine which was held successively by Alexander Dunbar and James Douglas, natural sons of

James, earl of Morton; but after the fall of Morton Douglas was denounced a traitor, and in April 1581 the priory was restored to Seton.

Although he became nominally a protestant, Seton appears to have remained on good terms with his catholic instructors; and on an English jesuit apprehended on 1 March 1583 a letter was found from him to the master of the seminary at Rome (Calderwood, *History of the Kirk of Scotland*, iii. 702). Thereupon the general assembly of the kirk sent a deputation to the king and council to cause him to undergo trial for the offence (*ib.* p. 706). The king promised that he should be sent for and confronted with the jesuit (*ib.* p. 707). The result is not stated, but it seems to have been satisfactory to the king, if not to the kirk, for the same year the prior accompanied his father, Lord Seton, on an embassy to France.

After the fall of Arran, in 1585, Seton was chosen one of the king's new privy councillors, under the act passed on 10 Dec. On 27 Jan. 1586 he was chosen an extraordinary lord of session, when he took his seat as prior of Pluscardine; and on 16 Feb. he was appointed an ordinary lord, as Baron Urquhart, the lands of Urquhart and Pluscardine having been united into a barony and granted to him. As the genuineness of his protestantism was suspected, the kirk succeeded in insisting that before he undertook office as ordinary lord he should partake of the communion at the time appointed by the ministers of Edinburgh ('Book of Sederunt,' quoted in Brunton and Haig, *Senators of the College of Justice*, p. 199). On 4 April 1588 he was named a commissioner for assessing the taxation of 10,000*l.* to defray expenses in connection with the king's approaching marriage (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* iv. 269). On 28 May 1593 he was appointed lord president of the court of session, and from this time may be ranked as one of the principal political advisers of the king. On 9 Jan. 1596 he was named one of the eight auditors of the exchequer known as the Octavians (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* v. 255), of whom he was regarded as the chief. Shortly afterwards he gave indications of his catholic sympathies by a speech at the meeting of the convention of estates, in which he urged the recall of the banished catholic earls, on the ground that it was safer they should return than remain abroad to plot against the state (Calderwood, v. 438). It was scarce to be expected that the kirk authorities would coincide with this view of the matter, and its commissioners ordained that, on 2 Nov., he should appear before the synod of Lothian for dealing in favour of the Earl of Huntly (*ib.* p. 448). Of this, says Calderwood, he 'purged himself very largely' (*ib.*) But the kirk remained unsatisfied in regard to this and other matters; and the feeling against him found special expression in the tumult in Edinburgh in the following December, one of the requests made by the four commissioners of the kirk sent to the king immediately afterwards being that he should 'remove from his company' Lord-president Seton and others 'thought to be authors of the chief troubles of the kirk,' and known to be representatives of the 'excommunicated earls' (Calderwood, v. 513–514; 'Narrative of the King' in *Reg. P. C. Scotl.* v. 362–3). Not long afterwards the king accepted the resignation of the Octavians. Nevertheless the kirk, by its violence, obtained no substantial benefit, but the opposite; and the triumph of the king over the unruly city was completed by the appointment of Lord Urquhart as its lord provost, an office which he held for nine years in succession.

On 4 March 1597–8 Seton obtained a letter under the great seal erecting the barony of Fyvie into a free lordship, with the title of a lord of parliament; and shortly afterwards he was intrusted with the guardianship of the king's second son, Prince Charles, afterwards Charles I. In December he was also chosen one of the king's new privy councillors, on the limitation of the number to thirty-one (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* v. 500). But though closely identified with the general policy of the king, he on two remarkable occasions displayed an independence which says much for his integrity and honour. When the king by a personal appeal—which virtually amounted to a demand—attempted to reverse a decision of the court of session passed in favour of Robert Bruce, whom the king had deprived of his stipend, Seton rose and told him that this was a question of law, in which they were sworn to do justice according to their consciences and the statutes of the realm; that of course the king could command them to the contrary, but that in that case he and every honest man on the bench would either vote according to his conscience, or resign and not vote at all (Nicolson to Cecil, 16 March 1598–9, quoted in Tytler, *History of Scotland*, ed. 1864, iv. 270). Still more creditable to his honour and manliness—for here he was not placed in any official dilemma—was his opposition at the convention at Perth, in June 1600, to the king's foolish demand for money to maintain a

standing army, that he might be able, on the death of the queen of England, to make good his rights to the succession (*ib.* p. 282). On the accession of James to the throne, Prince Charles—afterwards Charles I—who was not deemed strong enough to be removed south, remained in Seton's charge; and after the queen's removal to England Seton was appointed a commissioner for the management of her property in Scotland (*ib.* p. 537). On 12 Jan. 1604 he was named vice-chancellor, to represent the king in parliament in the absence of the chancellor (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* vi. 596), and by the parliament which met at Perth in July he was appointed one of the commissioners for the union with England. Here his masterly knowledge of all legal details, combined with a strongly independent judgment, was of invaluable service to the Scottish commissioners in the arrangements as to trading privileges and interests. It was therefore found advisable that he should be made chancellor instead of Montrose, who accepted the nominal dignity of commissioner for his majesty for life. He resigned the presidentship of the court of session on being made chancellor, and he was also (6 March 1606) created Earl of Dunfermline. So highly was the nation gratified with the result of his services on the commission that on his return to Edinburgh he was 'convoyed with many people of all ranks' after a manner 'no subject was seen before to come accompanied to Edinburgh' (Calderwood, vi. 274).

Although the ecclesiastical leanings of Dunfermline were apparently catholic, he was not supposed to be specially favourable to the establishment of an episcopacy. The mild measures adopted by him against the Aberdeen assembly of July 1605 may, however, have been due mainly to inadvertence; and the supposition that he had in any sense connived at its deliberations, as the episcopalians insinuated, is extremely improbable. Nevertheless, the king ordered that the charge against him should be strictly investigated; but a dignified letter from the chancellor, in which he forcibly represented the absurdity of the charge, sufficed to defeat the purpose of his enemies. The king, with the shrewd common-sense which, however uncertain in its operation, usually stood him in good stead in important emergencies, and with the unblushing disregard of legality in which he took special delight, affirmed that he 'would not have him convicted,' nor would he put him out of office although 'the matter were proven' (see especially the summary of the evidence by Professor Masson in footnote to *Reg. P. C. Scotl.* vii. 493–496). Probably the king was moved by the desire for, or promise of, Dunfermline's co-operation in the Red parliament, which met at Perth shortly afterwards, when, mainly through the management of Dunfermline and Dunbar, acts were passed 'anent the king's majesty's prerogative' and 'anent the restitution of bishops.'

On account, it would seem, of Dunfermline's supposed sympathies with Lord Balmerino [see Elphinstone, James, first Lord Balmerino], the king in 1608 wrote to the town council requesting that, instead of re-electing Dunfermline as provost, they should elect one of their own neighbours. The council disregarded this advice; but, learning that the king was deeply offended, they with Dumfermline's consent, and probably at his suggestion, permitted him to resign, and elected Sir John Arnot in his stead (Calderwood, vi. 819). In October of the following year he paid a visit to the king in England, when he was chosen a member of the English privy council. On the death of Dunbar, in January 1611, Dunfermline and others of the council, says Calderwood, took journey to London, 'fearing alteration, and every man seeking his own particular' (*ib.* vii. 154). In the purpose of their journey they were successful. Dunfermline inherited Dunbar's place of authority and influence in the king's counsels, and when in London obtained the custody of the palace and park of Holyrood, and was named one of the new Octavians (*ib.* p. 158). In October of the following year he acted as the king's commissioner at the parliament of Edinburgh, in which the act of 1592, establishing presbyterianism, was rescinded. He died at his seat of Pinkie House, near Musselburgh, on 16 June 1622, in the sixty-seventh year of his age.

Dunfermline was thrice married. By his first wife, Lilias, second daughter of Patrick, third lord Drummond, and sister of James, first earl of Perth, he had five daughters: Anne, married to Alexander, viscount Fenton, only son of Thomas, first earl of Kellie; Isabel, married to John, first earl of Lauderdale; Margaret, died in infancy; another Margaret, married to Colin, first earl of Seaforth; and Sophia, married to David, first Lord Lindsay of Balcarres. By his second wife, Grizel Leslie, fourth daughter of James, master of Rothes, he had a son Charles, who died young, and two daughters—Lilias, unmarried, and Jean, married to John, eighth lord Yester. By his third wife, Margaret Hay, sister of John, first earl of Tweeddale, he had a son, Charles, second earl of Dunfermline [q. v.], and two

daughters—Grizel, unmarried, and Mary, died young.

The best testimony to Dunfermline's character is found in the fact that Spotiswood, who did everything possible to work his overthrow, admits that he 'exercised his place with great moderation, and to the contentment of all honest men;' and that, although 'inclining to the Roman faith,' he was 'very observant of good order, and one that hated lying and dissimulation, and above all things studied to maintain peace and quietness.' Calderwood expresses virtually the same opinion: 'He was a good justicier, courteous and humane, both to strangers and to his own country people, but no good friend to the bishops.'

Dunfermline is supposed to have been the architect of his own mansions. He in great part rebuilt Fyvie Castle, Aberdeenshire, in which he introduced the French arch. He also built the principal part of Pinkie House. Dempster assigns to Dunfermline the authorship of 'Orationes Solemnibus aliquot Festis coram Pontifice;' but this is a mere magnification of the statement that, while a youth, he delivered one single oration before the pope. Two of his Latin epigrams are prefixed to Bishop Lesley's 'History of Scotland.' He also addressed an epigram to Sir John Skene [q. v.] on the publication of his treatise 'Regiam Majestatem.' A Latin epitaph by him in commemoration of his parents is in Seton church.

A half-length portrait of Dunfermline, by Zucchero, is at York, and he is included in the group of the Seton family by Sir Anthony Mor or More [q. v.]

[Reg. P. C. Scotl.; Histories of Spotiswood and Calderwood; Cal. State Papers, Scotland, For. Ser. during the reign of Elizabeth, and Dom. Ser. during the reign of James I; Brunton and Haig's Senators of the College of Justice; Sir Richard Maitland's History of the House of Seton in the Bannatyne Club; George Seton's Memoir of Alexander Seton, Earl of Dunfermline, 1882; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), i. 480–1.] T. F. H.

SETON, ALEXANDER, sixth Earl of Eglinton (1588–1661). [See Montgomerie.]

SETON, ALEXANDER, Viscount Kingston (1621?–1691), born about 1621, was the third son of George, third earl of Winton [q. v.], by his first wife, Lady Anne Hay, eldest daughter of Francis, eighth earl of Errol. On the visit of Charles I to Seton Palace in 1633, Alexander Seton, a youth of twelve, welcomed the king in a formal Latin oration. In 1636 he went to study at La Flèche in France, and afterwards he made a tour through a great part of France, Italy, and Spain. He returned to Scotland in 1640, but, to avoid subscribing the covenant, went in 1643 to Holland. Venturing to return some time afterwards, and still declining to subscribe, he was excommunicated in Tranent church on 8 Oct. 1644. He then crossed over to France, where for some time he remained in attendance on the young Prince Charles. After the coronation of Charles II at Scone, he was created Viscount Kingston and Lord Craigiehall by patent dated at Perth Saturday, the 4th day of January 1651 (Balfour, *Annals*, iv. 251). He wrote a continuation of Sir Richard Maitland's 'History of the House of Seton' (Bannatyne Club). He died on 21 Oct. 1691. By his first wife, Jean, daughter of Sir George Fletcher, he had a daughter, Jean Seton, married to James, third lord Mordington. By his second wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Archibald Douglas of Whittinghame, he had three daughters and six sons. The sons were: Charles, master of Kingston; George; Alexander; Archibald, second viscount Kingston; John; and James, third and last viscount Kingston, who, for his share in the rebellion of 1715, was attainted by parliament. He was further married to Elizabeth Hamilton, third daughter of John, first lord Belhaven, and to Lady Margaret Douglas, daughter of Archibald, earl of Angus, but left no issue by either of these marriages.

[Balfour's Annals; extracts from the Family Bible in Dunse Castle, in Sir Richard Maitland's Genealogy of the House and Surname of Seton, 1830; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 39.] T. F. H.

SETON, Sir ALEXANDER, Lord Pitmedden (1639?–1719), Scottish judge, born about 1640, was younger son of James Seton of Pitmedden (killed at the battle of Bridge of Dee, June 1639) and Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Samuel Johnston of Elphinston. He was admitted an advocate of the Scottish bar on 10 Dec. 1661, and was knighted by Charles II in 1664. He was nominated an ordinary lord of the court of session on 31 Oct. 1677, on the death of Sir Richard Maitland of Pittrichie, and took his seat as Lord Pitmedden on 13 Nov. 1677. He was also admitted a lord of justiciary on 5 July 1682, on the promotion of Lord-president Falconer, and was created a baronet of Nova Scotia on 15 Jan. 1684. He represented the county of Aberdeen in parliament in 1681, 1685, and 1686, and gave deep offence by the boldness with which he opposed the mea-

sures of the government. James II was resolved to secure the repeal of the test and penal laws, and of nine judges who held seats in parliament, Pitmedden was the only one who opposed the royal will. He was consequently removed from office by a royal letter dated 12 May 1686. At the revolution he declined reappointment as a judge, holding it to be inconsistent with the oath of allegiance which he had taken to James; and, retiring into private life, he died in 1719. He married Margaret, daughter of William Lauder, one of the clerks of session, by whom he had five sons and five daughters (Douglas, *Baronage*, p. 184).

According to Wodrow, Pitmedden possessed a vast and curious library. He wrote 'A Treatise of Mutilation and Demembration and their Punishments' as an appendix to the 1699 edition of Sir George Mackenzie's 'Laws and Customs of Scotland in Matters Criminal.' He was also the author of 'Explication of the XXXIX Chapter of the Statutes of King William concerning Minors,' Edinburgh, 1728, 8vo.

Sir William Seton (*d.* 1744), second baronet of Pitmedden, the eldest son, was in his father's lifetime chosen to represent the county of Aberdeen in the Scots parliament from 1702 till 1706, when the queen named him one of the commissioners to treat of the union between Scotland and England. He was also made one of the commissioners to adjust the equivalent to be allowed to Scotland in recognition of the agreement by the Scots to equality of duties, and consequently to liability for a share of the English debt. He died in 1744, having married Catherine, daughter of Sir Thomas Burnet of Leys, by whom he had issue four sons and four daughters. Sir William wrote: 1. 'The Interest of Scotland in Three Essays,' 1700, 8vo. 2. 'Some Thoughts on Ways and Means for making this Nation a Gainer in Foreign Commerce,' 1705, 8vo. 3. 'Scotland's Great Advantages by an Union with England,' 1706, 4to (reprinted in Scott's edition of 'Somers Tracts'). He also published a 'Speech on the First Article of the Treaty of Union,' 1706.

[Brunton and Haig's Senators of the College of Justice; Anderson's Scottish Nation, iii. 440; Seton's Memoir of Alexander Seton, earl of Dunfermline; Douglas's Baronage, p. 184; Mackinnon's Union of England and Scotland, p. 218; Catalogue of Advocates' Library.]

G. S–H.

SETON, ALEXANDER (1814–1852), lieutenant-colonel, born at Mounie in Aberdeenshire on 4 Oct. 1814, was the second but eldest surviving son of Alexander Seton of Mounie, by Janet Skene, his wife, daughter of Skene Ogilvy, D.D., minister of Old Machar, Aberdeenshire. He was descended from Sir Alexander Seton, lord Pitmedden [q. v.] Alexander was educated at home until the age of fifteen, and then studied mathematics and chemistry for some months under Ferdinando Foggi at Pisa. On 23 Nov. 1832 he was gazetted second lieutenant in the 21st or royal North British fusiliers, and next year he was sent with part of his regiment to the Australian colonies. He returned to Scotland on leave in 1838, and was promoted to a first lieutenancy on 2 March. He rejoined his regiment in India, and received a company on 14 Jan. 1842. Shortly after he exchanged into the 74th, and was stationed at Chatham. There he studied for two years in the senior department of the Royal Military College, and in November 1847 received a first-class certificate. In 1849 he proceeded to Ireland as assistant deputy quartermaster-general of the forces there. He held this post till 24 May 1850, when he was promoted to a majority. On 7 Nov. 1851 he obtained the rank of lieutenant-colonel, and about the same time was ordered to take command of the drafts destined for the Cape of Good Hope, where his regiment was engaged in the Kaffir war. He sailed in the steam troopship Birkenhead, which on the morning of 26 Feb. 1852 struck on a rock in False Bay, twenty miles south of Cape Town, and foundered in little more than ten minutes. In spite of the sudden nature of the catastrophe, Seton issued his orders with perfect calmness. The scene is said by an eyewitness to have resembled an embarkation, with the difference that there was less confusion. The boats could only contain the women and children, and out of 638 persons 445 were lost, Seton himself being killed by the fall of part of the wreck. He died unmarried, and his property descended to his younger brother, David. The heroism displayed by Seton and the rest of those on board the Birkenhead was commemorated by Sir Francis Doyle in a poem on 'The Loss of the Birkenhead,' in 'The Return of the Guards and other Poems' (1866; cf. R. L. Stevenson, *Essay on Admirals*, and Rudyard Kipling, *Seven Seas*).

[A Short Memoir of Alexander Seton, 1854; Burke's Landed Gentry, 6th edit.; Annual Register, 1852, pp. 470–2; Cornhill Mag. February 1897.]

E. I. C.

SETON, CHARLES, second Earl of Dunfermline (*d.* 1673), was the son of Alexander Seton, first earl of Dunfermline [q. v.], by his third wife, Margaret Hay,

sister of John, first earl of Tweeddale, and succeeded his father on 16 June 1622. He was one of the leaders of the Scots covenanting army which in June 1639 took up a position on Dunse Law to bar the progress of Charles northwards, and on 6 June presented to the king in his camp a petition that he would appoint commissioners to treat in regard to the matter in dispute (Balfour, *Annals*, ii. 324); and he was one of those who signed the articles of pacification, as well as a paper of submission to the king (printed in Spalding's *Memorialls*, i. 216–217). In November he and John Campbell, first earl of Loudoun [q. v.], were sent to London to report to the king the proceedings of the assembly of the kirk and the parliament for ratification (Balfour, ii. 363; Spalding, i. 230; Guthrie, p. 69); but the king refused to receive them, and forbade them to approach within eight miles of the court (Spalding, i. 235). Dunfermline was also again sent to the king early in 1640, and, on account of the discovery of the letter of the Scots to the king of France, was, with the Earl of Loudoun and the other commissioners, detained for a time in custody. He was colonel in the Scots army which, under Lesley, crossed the Tweed in August. In the following October he was appointed one of the eight commissioners for the treaty of Ripon, and he was also one of the subcommittee appointed for the final conclusion of the treaty in London. While in London he received from the king a lease of the abbacy of Dunfermline for three times nineteen years. In September he was nominated a member of the privy council (Balfour, *Annals*, iii. 67), and the appointment was confirmed in November (*ib.* p. 149). In 1642 he was appointed the king's commissioner to the general assembly of the kirk of Scotland, which met at St. Andrews on 27 July (Spalding, *Memorialls*, ii. 172). In January 1646 he was chosen a member of the committee of estates, and, after the surrender of Charles to the Scots at Newcastle, was sent, along with Argyll and others, to treat with him, and accompanied Argyll to London to lay the king's case before the parliament. Having supported the 'engagement' for the attempted rescue of the king in 1648, he was debarred by the Act of Classes from holding any office of public trust. After the king's execution he went to the continent, and he took part in the negotiations at Breda in connection with the recall of Charles II, whom he accompanied to Scotland. In July 1650 he entertained Charles at Dunfermline (Balfour, *Annals*, iv. 84). When in October 1650 the king left Perth and joined the northern loyalists, Dunfermline was one of the commissioners sent to arrange matters with him (*ib.* p. 115). On 29 October he was on petition freed from the disabilities imposed on him by the Act of Classes, and permitted to take his seat in parliament (*ib.* p. 188). Shortly afterwards he was appointed one of the committee of estates for managing the affairs of the army, and he was in frequent attendance on the king during his stay in Scotland. In the army raised for the invasion of England his regiment formed part of the second brigade (*ib.* p. 300). At the Restoration he was sworn a privy councillor, and on 2 Nov. 1667 he was appointed an extraordinary lord of session, and the same year a lord of the articles. In 1671 he was appointed lord privy seal. He died in January 1673. By his wife, Lady Mary Douglas, third daughter of William, seventh earl of Morton, he had, with one daughter, three sons: Alexander, third earl of Dunfermline, who died soon after succeeding to the title; Charles Seton, killed in a sea-fight against the Dutch in 1672; and James, fourth and last earl, who in 1689 commanded a troop of horse under Dundee at Killiecrankie, and, being outlawed, went to France, where he died without issue in 1699.

[Balfour's Annals; Bishop Guthrie's Memoirs; Spalding's Memorialls of the Trubles, in the Spalding Club; Baillie's Letters and Journals, in the Bannatyne Club; Gardiner's Hist. of England; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), i. 480–1.] T. F. H.

SETON, Sir CHRISTOPHER (1278?–1306), friend of Robert the Bruce, born about 1278, was the son of Sir Alexander Seton of Seton, descended from Philip de Seton, who obtained a charter of the lands of Seton and Winton in East Lothian from William the Lion, to be held *in capite* of the crown. Sir Alexander Seton (*fl.* 1311–1340) [q. v.] was probably his brother. He is mentioned on 25 May 1299 as being in the twenty-first year of his age (*Cal. Documents relating to Scotland*, vol. ii. No. 1091). On 4 Oct. 1298–9 he did homage to the king of England for his father's lands (*ib.* No. 1102), and he is mentioned as in the king of England's service, 13 March 1303–6 (*ib.* No. 1664), and again did homage on 12 Oct. of the same year (*ib.* No. 1697). But having married Lady Christina Bruce, third daughter of Robert, earl of Carrick, sister of Robert Bruce, he supported the claims of the Bruce to the Scottish crown, and was present at his coronation at Scone on 21 March 1306. At the battle of Methven on 13 June he saved Bruce when unhorsed by Philip de Mowbray,

After this disaster he fled southwards, and shut himself in Loudoun Castle, Ayrshire, but it was captured by the English, and, being taken prisoner, he was carried to London, where he was hanged and quartered as a traitor. On learning his sad fate Bruce, who was then passing near Dumfries, caused to be founded, on the spot where he learned the tidings, a chapel to the Virgin, in remembrance of his fellow-in-arms and preserver of his life.

[Barbour's Bruce; Fordun's Chronicle; Cal. of Doc. relating to Scotland, vol. ii.; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 640–1.] T. F. H.

SETON, GEORGE, first Lord Seton (*d.* 1478), was, according to Sir Richard Maitland, the son of 'Lord John Seton' (Sir John Seton of Seton), but according to Douglas (*Peerage*, ed. Wood, ii. 642), his grandson, and the son of Sir William Seton, killed in the lifetime of his father, Sir John Seton, at the battle of Verneuil in Normandy on 17 Aug. 1424. The latter version of his parentage is corroborated by the register of the great seal, where George, lord Seton, is referred to as the grandchild of Sir John (*Reg. Mag. Sig.* vol. i. No. 332.) According to Sir Richard Maitland, the first Lord Seton, when nine years of age, fell into the hands of Lord-chancellor Crichton, who for a time kept him a prisoner in the castle of Edinburgh, from which he was, however, delivered by the laird of Johnstone. In 1448 he accompanied Crichton on an embassy to France and Burgundy, to arrange for a marriage between James II and the daughter of the French king (Rymer, *Fœdera*, xi. 213). The same year he was created a peer of parliament by the title of Baron Seton. In March 1451 he conceded to Crichton the lands of Winton in the barony of Seton (*Reg. Mag. Sig.* vol. i. No. 432). In 1472 and 1473 he was sent on embassies to England (Rymer, xi. 749, 755). He died on 14 July 1478. Maitland describes him as 'a good householder, and all given to nobleness.' By his first wife, Lady Margaret Stewart, only daughter and heiress of John, earl of Buchan, he had a son John, who predeceased him, leaving a son George, second Lord Seton; and, according to Maitland, he had also another son, Dougal. By his second wife, Christian Murray of the house of Tullibardine, he had a daughter Christian.

[Maitland's Genealogy of the House of Seton; Reg. Mag. Sig. Scot. vol. i.; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 642–3.] T. F. H.

SETON, GEORGE, fourth Lord Seton (*d.* 1549), was son of George, third lord Seton (killed at Flodden on 13 Sept. 1513), was grandson of George, second lord (*d.* 1507), and was great-grandson of George, first lord [q. v.] His mother was Lady Janet Hepburn, eldest daughter of the first Earl of Bothwell. In 1484 he was appointed a commissioner for settling certain border difficulties, and in 1497 he was named a conservator of a treaty with the English. Such was his love of learning that after his marriage he continued his studies at the university of St. Andrews (and also at Paris; and he is said to have acquired great skill in surgery and other sciences, including music, theology, and astrology. During a voyage to France his ship was captured by some Dunkirkers and plundered; and in revenge he bought a large vessel, named the Eagle, with which he endeavoured to make reprisals by plundering the ships of the Flemings.

The fourth Lord Seton was in 1526 appointed a member of the parliamentary committee 'pro judicibus,' and on 12 Nov. 1533 an extraordinary lord of session. In January 1542–3 he was entrusted by the governor, Arran, with the custody of Cardinal Beaton in Blackness Castle. Knox affirms (*Works*, i. 97) that by buddis (i.e. offers or bribes) given to Seton, the cardinal was permitted to return to St. Andrews. The 'buddis,' according to Arran's account, were large sums of money from the cardinal (Sadler, *State Papers*, i. 37), but, according to another account, an arrangement for an advantageous marriage of two of his daughters (*Hamilton Papers*, ii. 40). Nominally, the cardinal, though he had returned, was supposed to be still in custody. He went on the bonds of four lords (*ib.*); and Sir George Douglas assured Sadler that Seton was bound to the governor in 'life and lands' for his custody (Sadler, *State Papers*, i. 107), and that at St. Andrews he was 'in as sure and strong prison and as strongly kept in his own house' as if he were detained in the strongest fortress in all Scotland (*ib.*) But all this was almost self-evident pretence. His removal to St. Andrews was inexplicable if it was intended that he should be kept in custody; and whether Seton were bribed or not, he was well aware that the governor—who probably accused Seton of having received bribes mainly to hide his own pusillanimity—had come to shrink from the responsibility of detaining the cardinal in custody, and that, the cardinal once freed, the governor might be safely defied.

Seton was one of those who took the field against Hertford in May 1544, and during his retreat Hertford, no doubt by special instructions from Henry VIII, took revenge, not merely for this, but for Seton's conni-

vance at the escape of Beaton, by burning the castle and church of Seton. Seton is usually stated to have died in July 1545, an error which appears originally to have been the result of a misprint; for Sir Richard Maitland, his particular friend and near neighbour, affirms the date of the death to be 19 July 1549. That this could not have been a clerical error on Maitland's part is clear from his statement that the English were then besieging Haddington, and were masters of East Lothian, on which account the body was first placed in the abbey of Culross, and not removed for burial in the choir of the college hall of Seton until the retirement of the English.

By his first wife, Elizabeth, daughter of John, lord Hay of Yester, Seton had three sons and four daughters: George, fifth lord Seton [q. v.]; John, ancestor of the Setons of Carriston, Fifeshire; James; Marian, married, first to John, fourth earl of Menteith, and secondly to John, eleventh earl of Sutherland; Margaret, married to Sir Robert Logan of Restalrig; Eleanor, married to Hugh, seventh lord Somerville; and Beatrice, married to Sir George Ogilvy of Dunlugas.

Maitland, who describes Seton as 'a wise and virtuous statesman,' mentions that he 'was well experienced in all games, and took pleasure in hawking, and was holden to be the best falconer of his days.' It was at his request that Sir Richard Maitland undertook to write his 'History of the House of Seton.'

[Knox's Works; Sadler's State Papers; Hamilton Papers; Maitland's History of the House of Seton; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 643–4.] T. F. H.

SETON, GEORGE, fifth Lord Seton (1530?–1585), born about 1530, was eldest son of George, fourth lord Seton [q. v.], by Elizabeth, daughter of John, lord Hay of Yester. He was one of the commissioners sent by the parliament of Scotland, 17 Dec. 1557, to witness the nuptials of Queen Mary with the dauphin of France. He is mentioned as lord provost of Edinburgh in November of the same year (*Extracts from the Burgh Records of Edinburgh*, 1557–71, p. 13), having succeeded Archibald Douglas of Kilspindie, and, during his absence in France, his friend, Sir Robert Maitland, acted as president (*ib.* p. 16). He was also provost in 1558–9. Knox states that, although he attended the preaching of the reformer John Willock [q. v.] in 1558, he afterwards resiled to the old beliefs (*Works*, i. 256), and officially, as provost of Edinburgh, 'greatly troubled and molested the brethren' by taking upon him the protection of the Black and Grey Friars (*ib.* pp. 362–3). Knox consequently characterises him as 'a man without God, without honesty, and oftentimes without reason' (*ib.*) His protection of the friars was, however, vain, and on the arrival of the lords of the congregation in Edinburgh in June 1559, he 'abandoned his charge,' and permitted them to work their will in the suppression of 'all monuments of idolatry' (*ib.*) After the departure of Knox from Edinburgh in the autumn of the same year, he was sent with the Earl of Huntly 'to solicit all men to condescend to the queen's mind' by permitting mass to be said in St. Giles's, and allowing the people to choose what religion they would (*ib.* p. 389), but, as Knox expressed it, 'the brethren stoutly and valiantly in the Lord Jesus gainsaid their most unjust petitions' (*ib.* p. 390). Shortly after this Seton, according to Knox, without provocation offered 'brak a chaise upon' [endeavoured to capture] Alexander Whitelaw, an agent of Knox, who was coming to Edinburgh, and pursued him without success as far as Ormiston in the belief that he 'had been John Knox' (*ib.* p. 393).

After the triumph of the protestant party Seton went for a time to France, arriving at Paris on 3 July 1560 (Throckmorton to the queen, 9 Aug., in *Cal. State Papers*, For. 1560–1, No. 411). On 1 Oct., however, he obtained from Mary [Stuart], queen of France, a passport to pass from France through England into Scotland (*ib.* No. 593), and, meeting Throckmorton in Paris, he told him that, though he had been 'evilly used' in Scotland, he intended 'to go home and live and die a good Scotchman' (Throckmorton to the queen, 22 Oct., *ib.* No. 666). On the return of Queen Mary to Scotland in 1561 he was sworn a member of the privy council, and appointed master of the household. On 10 Nov. he and the Earl of Bothwell, who had been at feud, entered into bonds—in presence of the queen and by her express command—to keep the peace to each other until the first February following, under pain 'of dishonour, infamy, and defamation' (*Reg. P. C. Scot.* i. 183). In 1564 he quarrelled with Maitland of Lethington on account of one Francis Douglas (*Cal. State Papers*, For. 1564–5, No. 917), and, the queen deeming it advisable that he should for a time leave the country, he obtained permission in March 1564–5 to go to France (Randolph to Cecil, *ib.* No. 1044). He was still in France when the queen was married to Darnley, but was so high in favour with the queen that she went to his house at Seton to spend the honeymoon (*ib.* No. 1298). In August following he was recalled to Scot-

land (*ib.* No. 1430), and, returning shortly afterwards, became one of the queen's most consistent and devoted supporters during the remainder of her checkered career in Scotland. On the night after the murder of Rizzio, having been made privy to the queen's purpose to escape from Holyrood, he waited in the neighbourhood with a body of horse, and attended her first to Seton and thence to Dunbar. A catholic by conviction, he was one of the few noblemen present at the baptism of the young prince in the castle of Stirling on 17 Dec. 1566; and, when others refused to bear 'the salt, grease, and candle, and such other things,' Seton, with the Earls of Eglinton and Atholl, 'brought in the said trash' (Knox, ii. 536). It was to Seton House that the queen went for privacy after Darnley's assassination, Seton himself vacating the house and leaving it to be wholly occupied by the queen and her attendants. He remained faithful to her after her marriage to Bothwell, and it was at Seton she slept on the day before her surrender at Carberry, Seton being one of her supporters there. He was made privy to the plan for her escape from Loch Leven in May 1568, and, having invaded the neighbourhood with a large body of horse, he, immediately that she touched the shore, convoyed her first to his own castle of Niddrie, Linlithgowshire, and thence to Hamilton. He was one of the leaders at Langside on the 13th, and was there taken prisoner. On 13 Dec. 1569 he gave surety that he would enter into ward in the castle of St. Andrews (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* ii. 69). After the assassination of the regent Moray he joined with other lords in support of the queen, and he signed the letter of May 1570 to Elizabeth on her behalf. When the lords deemed it advisable to leave Edinburgh, Seton assembled his supporters at the palace, and 'bragged that he would enter in the town and cause beat a drum [i.e. to summon the people to the queen's standard] in despite of all the carles' (Calderwood, ii. 560). He did so, but without effect (*ib.*) In his company at Holyrood was the Lady Northumberland, and shortly afterwards she and he were sent on an embassy to the Duke of Alva (*ib.*; *Cal. State Papers*, For. 1579–71, No. 1277). There is a tradition that when in Flanders he was forced to support himself by becoming a wagoner; but this is unlikely, although a picture of him as a wagoner is said to have been at one time in the long gallery at Seton. He arrived at the castle of Edinburgh with money from Flanders on 19 Feb. 1572 (*ib.* 1572–4, No. 144). After the fall of the castle he made his peace with Morton's government, and gave sureties for his obedience and allegiance (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* ii. 212). It would appear, however, that then and afterwards he remained under the ban of the kirk's excommunication, for in an action against him before the privy council for refusing to allow a designation of a manse and a glebe, it was declared that 'he had no place to stand in judgment by reason of the sentence of excommunication against him' (*ib.* p. 314). On 27 June 1577 he, as well as Robert, master of Seton, obtained a license to go abroad (*ib.* p. 735).

Seton was one of the nobles who assembled in Edinburgh in July 1578 to oppose the reinstatement of Morton in power, some time after his resignation of the regency (Moysie, *Memoirs*, p. 14); and for intercepting Bowes, the ambassador of Elizabeth, on the 18th, between Edinburgh and Kirkliston, on his way to Stirling, and compelling him to turn back to Edinburgh, he was summoned before the council, and failing to appear was denounced a rebel and put to the horn (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* iii. 11). He was also denounced a rebel on 24 Sept. for failing to answer to a complaint of James Crichton of Cranston-Riddell, for violently preventing Cranston from intromitting with the lands of Tranent (*ib.* p. 35), but in November gave caution to appear before the council by December (*ib.* p. 48), and finally gave caution not to make further impediment to Crichton (*ib.* p. 55). On 7 May 1579 he also answered a summons for intromitting with the king's goods and household stuff (*ib.* p. 152), which he had pledged in payment of a debt (*ib.* p. 195). On 12 June Seton and his eldest surviving son, Robert, signed a bond for him and his three sons to serve the king, and cease from having communication with John Hamilton, sometime commendator of Arbroath, and Claud Hamilton, sometime commendator of Paisley (*ib.* p. 182), against whom the old acts for the murder of the two regents had been revived, and who were then in hiding.

Seton was one of the lords who, after the fall of Morton, conveyed him on 18 Jan. 1580–1 to Dumbarton Castle (Moysie, p. 29; Calderwood, iii. 484). Before the trial of Morton the king stayed some days at Seton (Moysie, p. 32). Although justly objected to by Morton as one of his well-known enemies, Seton sat on the assize for Morton's trial, and, with his two sons, he witnessed Morton's execution in a stair south-east of the cross (Calderwood, iii. 575). He was a strong supporter of the Duke of Lennox, and, when Lennox was commanded to depart from Scotland, convoyed him south to Eng-

land (*ib.* p. 693). In April 1583 the commissioner of the synod of Lothian complained against him to the king for entertaining a seminary priest (*ib.* p. 704), but the accusation came to nothing, and in October the king manifested his entire confidence in him by sending him on an embassy to France (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* iii. 604). He died on 8 Jan. 1584–5, soon after his return from France, aged about 55.

The Setons, on account of the large number of noble families descended from them, were styled 'Magnæ Nobilitatis Domini,' and, owing to their intermarriages with the royal family, their shield obtained the addition of the royal or double tressure. The fifth lord is said to have declined an earldom, regarding it as a greater distinction to be Lord Seton, whereupon King James is reputed to have commended his resolution in the following Latin epigram:

Sunt comites, ducesque alii, sunt denique reges:
Setoni Dominium sit satis esse mihi.

By his wife Isabel, daughter of Sir William Hamilton of Sanquhar, high treasurer of Scotland, he had one daughter, Margaret, married to Lord Claud Hamilton, and five sons: George, master of Seton, who died in March 1562; Robert, sixth lord Seton, who was a special favourite of James VI, and on 16 Nov. 1600 was created Earl of Winton; Sir John Seton, lord Barns [q. v.]; Alexander, prior of Pluscardine and afterwards Earl of Dunfermline [q. v.]; and Sir William Seton Kyllismore, sheriff of Midlothian, and postmaster-general of Scotland.

A painting of Lord Seton and his family, by Sir Anthony Mor or More [q. v.], has been frequently engraved.

[Histories of Knox and Calderwood; Moysie's Memoirs, Lord Herries' Memoirs, and Sir James Melville's Memoirs in the Bannatyne Club; Reg. P. C. Scotl. i.–iii.; Cal. State Papers, Scot. Ser. and For. Ser. reign of Elizabeth; Sir Richard Maitland's History of the House of Seton, with continuation by Viscount Kingston in the Bannatyne Club; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 644–5.] T. F. H.

SETON, GEORGE, third Earl of Winton (1584–1650), second son of Robert Seton, first earl of Winton, by Margaret, daughter of Hugh Montgomerie, third earl of Eglinton, was born in December 1584. His brother, Alexander, took the surname of Montgomerie, and became in 1611 sixth Earl of Eglinton [q. v.] George succeeded to the earldom of Winton in 1607, in the lifetime of his elder brother, who resigned the title and estates in his favour. In accordance with the old traditions of his family, he entertained James VI at Seton Palace, on his visit to Scotland in 1617, and also twice entertained Charles I in 1633. In 1620 he erected the additional residence of Winton Castle in Pencaitland parish, Haddingtonshire, an original and remarkably striking modification of Tudor architecture. He was referred to by John Maxwell [q. v.], bishop of Ross, and afterwards archbishop of Tuam, in 1638, as 'popishly affected' (Balfour, *Annals*, ii. 263), and though he took no prominent part in public affairs, seems to have generally favoured the king. He supported the engagement for the king's rescue in 1648, and gave to the commander-in-chief, the Duke of Hamilton, 1,000*l.* in free gift for his equipage. He died at Seton on 15 Dec. 1650 of a palsy, and 'was interred among his ancestors in the church there without any funeral solemnity' (*ib.* iv. 255). By his first wife, Lady Anne Hay, eldest daughter of Francis, eighth earl of Errol, he had, with three daughters, four sons: George, lord Seton, who having joined Montrose shortly after the battle of Kilsyth, was taken prisoner at Philiphaugh, but was finally liberated on a bond of 100,000*l.*, and died at Seton in 1648, leaving, with other children, a son George, lord Seton (*d.* 1648), whose son George became fourth earl of Winton (*d.* 1704); Charles; Alexander, viscount Kingston [q. v.]; and Francis. By his second wife, Elizabeth, daughter of John, lord Herries, he had, with five daughters, four sons: Christopher, William, John, and Robert.

[Balfour's Annals; Spalding's Memorialls and Gordon's Scots Affairs in the Spalding Club; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 643–4.] T. F. H.

SETON, GEORGE, fifth Earl of Winton (*d.* 1749), was the son of George, fourth earl of Winton, by his second wife, Christian, daughter of John Hepburn of Alderston. The father, though only ten years of age when in 1650 he succeeded his grandfather, George Seton, third earl of Winton [q. v.], was fined 2,000*l.* under Cromwell's act of grace. He left Scotland at an early age, and for some time served in the French army. Returning to Scotland, he was employed by Charles I against the covenanters, and commanded a regiment at Pentland in 1666, and at Bothwell Bridge in 1679. At his death in 1704 the son George, fifth earl, was abroad, and as he had ceased to correspond with his friends in Scotland, his residence was unknown. Before his return his right to the earldom was questioned by his cousin, Viscount Kingston [see under Seton, Alexander, 1621?–1691], the marriage of

his parents having been irregular; but in 1710 he took steps to have his right to the earldom established, and was served heir to his father. About this time he was described in Mackay's 'Secret Memoirs' as 'a young gentleman who hath been much abroad in the world,' and 'mighty subject to a particular caprice natural to his family.'

Before the outbreak of the rebellion in 1715 the Earl of Winton took steps to organise his own retinue and those of several of his neighbours (*Lockhart Papers*, i. 492). In a list of Scots nobles he is inserted as having '300 men, most of them with their chief, against the government and in the rebellion' (Patten, *History of the Rebellion*, p. 194). On 14 Oct. he joined the Earl of Kenmure at Moffat, when the chevalier was proclaimed king as James VIII. He strongly opposed the advance into England, recommending that the Jacobite force should proceed by Dumfries to Glasgow, and effect a junction with the western clans. Nevertheless he interposed to induce the highlanders to withdraw from their mutinous attitude against the entry into England; and although he himself was so strongly convinced of its hopelessness that he resolved to return home, he was finally induced, against his better judgment, to take part in the expedition. He was taken prisoner at the battle of Preston on 14 Nov. Alone of the earls tried for treason for their share in the rebellion, he refused to plead guilty. After trial he was found guilty and sentenced to death, but succeeded in making his escape from the Tower by cutting the prison bars, and went to France. He died unmarried at Rome on 19 Dec. 1749.

[Mackay's Secret Memoirs; Lockhart Papers; Patten's Hist. of the Rebellion; State Trials, vol. xv.; Douglas's Scottish Peerage (Wood), ii. 647–8.] T. F. H.

SETON, JOHN, D.D. (1498 ?–1567), Roman catholic divine, born in or about 1498, was educated at St. John's College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1528. Soon afterwards he was elected a fellow of St. John's on Bishop Fisher's foundation, and he commenced M.A. in 1532. He taught philosophy in his college, and gained high reputation as a tutor. After being ordained priest he became one of Bishop Fisher's chaplains, and attended that prelate in the Tower (Baker, *Hist. of St. John's*, ed. Mayor, i. 101). In 1542 he was one of the fellows of St. John's who signed an appeal to the visitor against Dr. John Taylor (*d.* 1544) [q. v.], the master, afterwards bishop of Lincoln. In 1544 he proceeded D.D., and about that time was appointed one of the chaplains to Gardiner, bishop of Winchester and chancellor of the university, who highly esteemed him for his great learning, and collated him to the rectory of Hinton, Hampshire (Cooper, *Athenæ Cantabr.* i. 219). On the bishop's trial he bore testimony in his favour. In his deposition he is styled bachelor of divinity. He was present at the disputation with Peter Martyr held at Oxford in 1550. In 1553 he was installed canon of Winchester and in the following year prebendary of Ulskelf in the church of York (Le Neve, *Fasti*, ed. Hardy, iii. 220). He was one of the doctors of divinity who, by the direction of Bishop Gardiner, proceeded to Oxford in order to take part in the disputation with Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer, concerning matters of religion, and on this occasion he was incorporated D.D. there on 14 April 1554 (Wood, *Fasti Oxon.* ed. Bliss, i. 144). In the following year he visited John Bradford in prison, for the purpose of inducing him to recant. In 1558 he attended Thomas Benbridge with the same object. His name is found in a list of the 'papistical clergy' drawn up in 1561, wherein he is described as learned, but settled in papistry, having been ordered to remain within the city of London, or twenty miles compass of the same (Strype, *Annals of the Reformation*, i. 275 et seq.) After suffering imprisonment and enduring much persecution on account of his attachment to the ancient form of religion, he escaped from the country and proceeded to Rome, where he died on 20 July 1567 (*Gent. Mag.* 1823, i. 218).

Seton's contemporaries bestowed much praise on him for his knowledge of philosophy and rhetoric. He wrote: 1. 'Panegyrici in victoriam illustrissimæ D. Mariæ Angliæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Reginæ, &c. Item in Coronationem ejusdem Sereniss. Reginæ Congratulatio. Ad hæc de Sacrosancta Eucharistia Carmen D. Joanne Setono authore,' London, 1553, 4to; dedicated to the queen. 2. Latin verses before Dr. Alban Langdale's 'Catholica Confutatio Nic. Ridlei,' Paris, 1556. 3. 'Dialectica; annotationibus Petri Carteri, ut clarissimis, ita brevissimis, explicata. Huic accessit, ob artium ingenuarum inter se cognationem, Gulielmi Buclæi arithmetica,' London, 1572, reissued 1574, 1577, 1584, 1599, 8vo; Cambridge, 1631, 8vo; dedicated to Bishop Gardiner. This work was extensively circulated in manuscript among students long before it appeared in print, and for nearly a century it was recognised as the standard treatise on logic.

[Addit. MSS., 5880 f. 40, 24492 f. 12; Ames's Typogr. Antiq. (Herbert), pp. 861, 866, 942,

1205, 1268; Aschami Epistolæ, pp. (6) 68, 75, 82, 90, 209; Bale's Script. Brit. Cat. p. 720; Bowes's Cat. of Cambridge Books, p. 511; British Mag. xxxii. 511; Dodd's Church Hist. i. 511; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714, iv. 1334; Foxe's Acts and Monuments (Townsend); Palatine Note Book, iii. 46; Peck's Desiderata Curiosa, 2nd edit. p. 326; Pits, De Angliæ Scriptoribus, p. 750; Strype's Works (general index); Tanner's Bibl. Brit. p. 664; Warton's Hist. of English Poetry, iii. 347.] T. C.

SETON, Sir JOHN, Lord Barns (*d.* 1594), Scottish judge, was the third son of George, fifth lord Seton [q. v.], by his wife Isabel, daughter of Sir William Hamilton of Sanquhar. While still a young man he went to Spain to the court of Philip II, by whom he was made knight of the royal order of St. Jago and master of the household. He was appointed master of the stable to James VI of Scotland some time before 1581, when he had an encounter with James, earl of Arran (Calderwood, *History*, iii. 592). The same year he was sent as ambassador to complain to Elizabeth regarding her conduct in interfering in behalf of the Earl of Morton, but was not permitted to enter England. On 27 Jan. 1586–7 he was admitted a member of the privy council (*Reg. P. C. Scotl.* iv. 139), and on 17 Feb. 1587–8 he was appointed, with the title Lord Barns, an extraordinary lord of session, in room of his brother, Alexander Seton, afterwards Earl of Dunfermline [q. v.] He died on 25 May 1594. By his wife Anne, daughter of William, seventh lord Forbes, he had, with other children, a son John who succeeded him.

[Calderwood's Hist. of the Kirk of Scotland; Reg. P. C. Scotl. vols. iii.–iv.; Brunton and Haig's Senators of the College of Justice.] T. F. H.

SETON or **SETONE, THOMAS de** (*fl.* 1344–1361), chief justice of the king's bench, appears as a counsel in the 'Year-Books' from 1344 onwards, and was one of the king's serjeants in 1345, when he applied before the council that the iter in the bishopric of Durham might be foregone for that year. He was appointed to a judgeship, probably in the king's bench, previously to April 1354, when he was a trier of petitions in parliament (*Rolls of Parliament*, ii. 254). He was a judge of the common pleas in Michaelmas 1355. In 1356 he recovered damages from a woman for calling him 'traitor, felon, and robber' in the public court. On 5 July 1357 Setone was made chief justice of the king's bench, *ad tempus*; the temporary character of the appointment is shown by the fact that Setone continued to act as judge of common pleas till Michaelmas 1359, and he is so styled when admitted to the king's secret council in the same year. But he must have soon afterwards been raised permanently to the chief-justiceship, which office he held till 24 May 1361, when Henry Green [q. v.] was appointed his successor.

[Foss's Judges of England.] C. L. K.

SETTLE, ELKANAH (1648–1724), city poet, the son of Josias Settle and his wife Sarah, was born at Dunstable on 1 Feb. and baptised on 9 Feb. 1647–8 (*Bedfordshire Notes and Queries*, vol. iii. pt. vii. 206). He matriculated on 13 July 1666 from Trinity College, Oxford, where his tutor was Abraham Campian, but he left Oxford without taking a degree and proceeded to London. According to Gildon, he once possessed a good fortune, which he quickly dissipated. If Downes may be believed, it was in the same year (1666) that Settle, then barely eighteen, completed his first play, 'Cambyses, King of Persia: a Tragedy.' It was the first new play acted that season at Lincoln's Inn Fields. Betterton and his wife were in the cast, and, the other parts being 'perfectly well acted,' it 'succeeded six days with a full audience' (Downes, *Roscius Anglicanus*, 1886, p. 27). It was subsequently produced at Oxford, and was printed in 1671 and 1673. Wood states that Settle's fellow collegian, William Buller Fyfe, had some part in the composition, the plot of which was mainly derived from Herodotus. Settle was inflated by his success, and 'Cambyses' formed the first of a series of bombastic dramas, the scenario of which was discreetly laid in Persia or Morocco.

Settle's triumph was eagerly adopted by Rochester as a means of humiliating Dryden. Through Rochester's influence Settle's next tragedy, 'The Empress of Morocco,' was twice acted at Whitehall, the prologues being spoken respectively by Rochester and by Lord Mulgrave. It seems to have been originally given in 1671, and revived at Dorset Garden in 1673, when Betterton played it for two weeks with great applause. Though highflown, it is not devoid of merit, and Genest called the plot 'well managed.' In his dedication to the Earl of Norwich, Settle says, 'I owe the story of my play to your hands and your honourable embassy into Africa.' It was published by Cademan in 1671, and again in 1673 with six engravings (one of which represents the front of Dorset Garden), at the enhanced price of two shillings. It is said to have been the first play ever published with engravings (later editions 1687 and 1698). The court was for

the time completely won over by Settle's heroic tragedies, passages from which were quoted against Dryden's 'Tyrannic Love' and 'Conquest of Granada;' at the universities, where it was keenly discussed whether Dryden or Settle were the greater genius, the younger fry, said Wood, inclined to Elkanah. As his enemies had anticipated, Dryden's temper was stirred, and with Crowne and Shadwell he clubbed to crush the upstart by an unworthy and abusive pamphlet (*Notes and Observations on the Empress of Morocco*). Settle was undismayed, and retorted vigorously in 'Notes and Observations on the Empress of Morocco Revised,' 1674, 4to, to which he added, by way of counter-attack, 'Some few Erratas to be printed, instead of the Postscript, with the next edition of the "Conquest of Granada."' Apart from his success, Settle appears to have given the poet small provocation; but Dryden nursed his jealousy, and gave vent to his resentment in the second part of his 'Absalom and Achitophel,' published about November 1682, where his former rival is described as

Doeg, though without knowing how or why,
Made still a blundering kind of melody,
Spurr'd boldly on, and dashed through thick and thin,
Through sense and nonsense never out or in;
Free from all meaning, whether good or bad,
And, in one word, heroically mad.

Dryden's intention to signalise him had doubtless reached Settle's ears, for he produced almost at the same time his 'Absalom Senior, or Achitophel Transpros'd' (published at the sign of Sir Edmondbury Godfrey, near Fleetbridge, 1682), a whig reply to the first part of Dryden's satire, with a free description of its author. In several of his later plays the laureate referred contemptuously to Settle, for whom he predicted an audience in Bartholomew Fair. Elkanah took leave of his tormentor in 'Reflections on several of Mr. Dryden's Plays,' 1687, 4to.

In the meantime, notwithstanding the transference of Rochester's patronage to Crowne and Otway, Settle 'rhymed and rattled' persistently. His 'Love and Revenge,' founded upon the 'Fatal Contract' of William Hemings [q. v.], was produced at Dorset Garden in 1675 and printed. In the dedication the dramatist congratulates providence on lengthening the Duke of Newcastle's life, so that he might 'witness the prosperous reign of a great and pious monarch.' In a 'postscript' he attacked Shadwell, a much better writer than himself. His 'Conquest of China by the Tartars' was given at the same theatre, Jevon, who had a leading part, taking great liberties with its turgid periods (Downes, p. 35; printed London, 1676, 4to). His 'Ibrahim, the Illustrious Bassa: a Tragedy' (based on Georges de Scudéry's 'L'Illustre Bassa'), was licensed on 4 May 1676 and printed (1677 and 1692, 4to), with a dedication to the Duchess of Albemarle, and his 'Fatal Love; or the Forced Inconstancy,' a fustian version of the legend of Clitophon and Leucippe, was given at the Theatre Royal (Drury Lane) in 1680.

Neglected by the court, Settle made overtures to the opposition, and his political bias is sufficiently shown in his next play, 'The Female Prelate, being the History of the Life and Death of Pope Joan,' which was produced at the Theatre Royal in 1680, and printed immediately, with a dedication to Shaftesbury. The invective is outrageous, but the plot and incidents, says Genest, are good (*Hist.* i. 275). Settle's mastery of scenic effect and the violence of his protestantism led to his unanimous election as organiser-in-chief of the pope-burning procession on Queen Elizabeth's birthday (17 Nov. 1680); and Roger L'Estrange, in 'Heraclitus Ridens' (No. 50), described him as poet-laureate and master of ordnance to the whig party, who would vindicate Lucifer's first rebellion for a few guineas. Next year he wrote, at Shaftesbury's instance, his 'Character of a Popish Successor' (1681), which evoked a storm of remonstrance. Settle accentuated his remarks in a revised edition, which he afterwards alleged that Shaftesbury, dissatisfied by its moderation of tone, had retouched. His personal attacks upon the Duke of York are said to have involved him in a duel with Thomas Otway. Of these passages in his life he wrote: 'I now grew weary of my little talent for Dramaticks, and forsooth must be rambling into politics . . . and much have I got by it' (pref. to *Distressed Innocence*). Determined, at least, not to lose by politics, Settle, upon the dissolution of the Oxford parliament, promptly recanted, and wrote 'A Narrative of the Popish Plot,' 1683, fol., exposing the perjuries of 'Doctor' Oates, and covering with abuse Shaftesbury and his old associates at the 'Green Ribbon Club.' Written with a clever assumption of fairness, the 'Narrative' evoked a cloud of answers and letters, and a heated 'Vindication of Titus Oats.' Settle was undeterred from publishing hostile 'animadversions' upon the dying speeches of William, lord Russell, and Algernon Sidney, and he went so far as to issue 'A Panegyrick on Sir George Jefferies' (1683) on his elevation to the chief-justiceship, Jeffreys having been conspicuous as 'Shimei' in his satire of 'Achi-

tophel Transpros'd.' His tory enthusiasm reached its climax in 1685, when he published an adulatory 'Heroick Poem on the Coronation of the High and Mighty Monarch, James II' (London, 4to), and shortly afterwards entered himself as a trooper in James's army on Hounslow Heath. He is said, moreover, to have published a weekly sheet in support of the administration.

Upon the revolution Settle recommenced overtures to his whig friends; but, feeling that both parties were looking askance at him, he put in for the reversion of Matthew Taubman's post of city laureate, for which political consistency was not a necessary qualification. Taubman's last pageant was dated 1689; in 1690 the show was intermitted, but Settle was duly appointed city poet in the following year, and issued for lord-mayor's day 'The Triumphs of London' (for Abel Roper, London, 4to). His four pageants 1692–5 bear the same title. No pageants are known for 1696–7, but in 1698 Settle produced 'Glory's Resurrection.' He then reverted to the older title until 1702. The 'Triumphs' for the next five years are missing, but Settle issued one for 1708, though the exhibition of that year was frustrated by the death of Prince George of Denmark. It seems to have been the last lord-mayor's show to have been described in a separate official publication.

In the meantime Settle had not abandoned his career as a playwright. His 'Heir of Morocco' (1694, 4to), forming a second part to his 'Empress of Morocco,' and based upon a slender substratum of facts furnished by the English occupation of Tangier, was produced at the Theatre Royal in 1682 (revived on 19 Jan. 1709). Then after a long interval came his 'Distressed Innocence, or the Princess of Persia' (1691, 4to), founded on the 39th chapter of the 5th book of Theodoret, but 'warped' in favour of the Christians. The piece was given at the Theatre Royal in 1691. His 'New Athenian Comedy' (1693, 4to) and 'The Ambitious Slave,' a tragedy (1694, 4to), were followed at Dorset Garden in 1697 by 'The World in the Moon' (1697, 4to), an opera, of which the first scene was formed by a moon fourteen feet in diameter. Of his 'Virgin Prophetess, or the Fate of Troy' (1701, 4to), Genest says that the language and the deviations from the accredited legend were 'disgusting, but the spectacle must have been fine.' 'The City Ramble, or the Playhouse Wedding' (1711, 4to), based to some extent upon the 'Knight of the Burning Pestle' and the 'Coxcomb,' with humorous additions of some merit, was produced at Drury Lane on 17 Aug. 1711. By this time Settle's reputation was so damaged that he determined to bring out the piece anonymously. But the secret 'happened to take air,' and he fell back upon producing it during the long vacation. His last play, 'The Ladies' Triumph' (1718, 12mo), produced at Lincoln's Inn Fields in 1718, ended with a masque in which Settle skilfully introduced elaborate scenery and machinery.

The theatre and the corporation proved only occasional resources, and very soon after the revolution Settle fulfilled various predictions by letting himself out to write drolls for Bartholomew Fair, love-letters for maid servants, ballads for Pye Corner, and epithalamiums for half a crown. In Bartholomew Fair he served under the show-woman, Mrs. Mynn, and produced at her booth his 'Siege of Troy' in 1707. At the same show he is said to have played a dragon in green leather, whence Pope puts into his mouth the couplet—

> Yet lo! in me what authors have to brag on!
> Reduced at last to hiss in my own dragon

(*Dunciad*, iii. 285; cf. Young's *Epistle to Mr. Pope*, i. 261–8). As a laureate Settle celebrated with equal readiness the act of succession ('Eusebia Triumphans,' 1702 and 1707), the danger to the church ('A New Memorial,' 1706), the propagation of the Gospel in foreign parts ('A Pindarick Ode,' 1711), the tory peace of 1713 ('Irene Triumphans,' 1713), and the whig triumph two years later ('Rebellion Display'd,' 1715). He seems to have always had in hand a stock of printed elegies and complimentary verses under such titles as 'Augusta Lacrimans,' 'Thalia Lacrimans,' 'Thalia Triumphans,' 'Memoriæ Fragranti,' to which he affixed names and dedications in accordance with the demand. Resourceful as he was, however, Elkanah's income dwindled until, about 1718, his city friends procured him a retreat in the Charterhouse. He died there, a poor brother, on 12 Feb. 1723–4 (*Hist. Reg.* Chron. Diary, 1724, p. 11; the Charterhouse burial registers 1710–40 are missing). Five days after his death he was described in the 'True Briton' as a man 'of tall stature, red face, short black hair,' who 'lived in the city, and had a numerous poetical issue, but shared the misfortune of several gentlemen, to survive them all.' He married, on 28 Feb. 1673–4, Mary Warner, at St. Andrew's, Holborn (*Notes and Queries*, 8th ser. xii. 483).

Settle was not deficient in promise as scholar, rhymester, and wit; but he wrecked his career by his tergiversation and by his inept efforts to measure his mediocre capacity against the genius of Dryden. He soon be-

came a butt for caricature as a voluminous and reckless dunce. 'Recanting Settle,' wrote a critic, when his tragedies and libels could no more yield him penny loaves and ale, 'bids our youth by his example fly, the Love of Politicks and Poetry' (*Poems on State Affairs*, ii. 138). In one of his earliest satires Pope dubbed him Codrus, after the prolix poetaster of Juvenal (Lintot, *Miscell.* 1712, revised for *Dunciad*, i. 183), and in the 'Dunciad' are many jibes at his expense, notably the allusion to the lord-mayor's show, which 'liv'd in Settle's numbers one day more' (bk. i. 90). In 1776, on the occasion of his conversation with Johnson, Wilkes referred to Elkanah as the last of the city poets, and one whose poetry matched the queerness of his name (Boswell, *Johnson*, ed. Hill, iii. 76).

In addition to the works enumerated and minor complimentary pieces, Settle was author of: 1. 'The Life and Death of Major Clancie, the grandest Cheat of this Age,' 1680, 8vo. 2. 'Insignia Bataviæ; or the barbarous behaviour of the Dutch towards the English in East India,' 1688, 4to. 3. 'The Compleat Memoirs of the Life of that Notorious Impostor, Will. Morrell, *alias* Bowyer, *alias* Wickham,' 1694, 12mo; 1699, 8vo. 4. 'Minerva Triumphans. The Muses' Essay. To the Honour of the Generous Foundation, the Cotton Library at Westminster,' 1701 fol. 5. 'Carmen Irenicum. The Happy Union of the Two East India Companies. An Heroic Poem,' 1702, fol. (for 1, 4 and 5, see Hazlitt, *Bibl. Coll.* 3rd ser. pp. 229–30). Settle also edited the 'Herod and Mariamne' (1673, 4to) of Samuel Pordage [q. v.], and contributed to the popular translation of 'Ovid's Epistles' (1683, 8vo). He re-edited for the stage Sir R. Fanshaw's version of Guarini, which appeared at Dorset Garden in 1676 as 'Pastor Fido, or the Faithful Shepherd' (London, 1677, 4to); 'a moderate pastoral' (Genest, i. 196). He revised and rewrote the last two acts of Beaumont and Fletcher's 'Philaster' for the Theatre Royal in 1695 (London, 4to).

The British Museum possesses Settle's 'Triumphs of London' for 1691, 1692, 1693, 1694, 1695, 1699, 1708, and his 'Glory's Resurrection' for 1698. The Guildhall Library has all these, with the exception of 1693, and, in addition, the 'Triumphs' for 1701 and 1702.

[Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ed. Bliss, iv. 684; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714; Rawlinson MSS. (in Bodleian), iii. 407; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. i. 41 seq.; Nichols's Lord Mayors' Pageants, 1831; Fairholt's Hist. of Lord Mayors' Pageants, i. 109, 121–2; Langbaine's Dramatic Poets, 1698, p. 123; Dennis's Letters, 1721, vol. ii.; Dunton's Life and Errors, passim; The Session of the Poets, held at the foot of the Parnassian Hill, 9 July 1696; The Towne Displayed, 1701; Johnson's Poets, ed. Cunningham; Dryden's Works, ed. Scott and Saintsbury; Pope's Works, ed. Elwin and Courthope; Disraeli's Quarrels of Authors, pp. 206, 288; Masson's Milton, vi. 611; Morley's Bartholomew Fair; Lowe's Betterton, p. 137; Gissing's New Grub Street, 1891, p. 31 (Settle contrasted with Shadwell); Beljame's Public et les Hommes de Lettres en Angleterre 152, 207; Ward's English Dram. Lit. ii. 534; Doran's Annals of the Stage; Sitwell's First Whig, pp. 86–7, 101, 202; Chalmers's Biogr. Dict.; English Cyclopædia; Lowndes's Bibl. Man. (Bohn); Hazlitt's Bibl. Collections and Notes; Guildhall Libr. Cat. 1889; Brit. Mus. Cat.] T. S.

SETTLE, THOMAS (*fl.* 1575–1593), divine, born about 1555, matriculated as pensioner at Queens' College, Cambridge, in 1575, but left college without a degree. He was ordained by Bishop Freake of Norwich, and was minister at Boxted in Suffolk. In May 1586 he was cited before Archbishop Whitgift at Lambeth to answer six charges: that he did not observe the order in the Book of Common Prayer, that he did not use the sign of the cross in baptism, that he did not marry with the ring, that he frequented conventicles, that he denied the validity of private baptism, that he denied the descent into hell. Settle acknowledged his contumacy on the last charge, and refused subscription to any rites or ceremonies. After a stormy dispute with Whitgift he was committed to the Gatehouse, where he was kept prisoner till 1592. On his release he joined the Brownists' congregation, which met privately in London, and was arrested again before the end of the year, while attending a meeting at the house of George Johnson in St. Nicholas Lane. On 6 April 1593 he was brought before the high commission and required to take the oath *ex officio*, but absolutely declined. He admitted that he had separated himself from the established church for about a year, that he had not taken the sacrament in his parish church for three years, and that he had opposed the discipline of the church for seven years; but he declined to say from whom he had imbibed his opinions. He confessed to being present at illegal religious meetings, and refused to attend public service. He was sent back to prison, and nothing further is recorded of him. He may have been the author of 'Tho. Settle his Catechisme,' London, 8vo, n.d.; licensed to Henry Carr and Henry Hasselup, 22 May 1587. There is no reason to identify him with the Settle men-

tioned by R. Bancroft (*Daungerous Positions*, p. 81).

[Brook's Lives of the Puritans, ii. 46–8; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr. ii. 402; Dexter's Congregationalism, pp. 256*n*., 274; Hanbury's Historical Memorials, i. 87 *n*., 88; Ames's Typogr. Antiq. ed. Herbert, p. 1338; Neal's Puritans, i. 388–9; Strype's Annals, 1824, iv. 134.] R. B.

SEVENOKE, SIR WILLIAM (1378?–1433?), lord mayor of London, born about 1378, is said by Lambert (*Perambulation of Kent*, 1596, p. 520) to have been 'found lying in the streetes at Sennocke . . . and named after the place where he was taken up.' The city records (quoted by Stow) state that he was the son of William Rumschedde, and apprenticed to Hugh de Bois, a citizen and 'ferrer' (ironmonger) of London, for a term of years which expired in 1394. This William Rumschedde was probably the boy's foster-father, and an official of Sevenoaks. On seeking admission to the city freedom he was transferred, at his request, to the Grocers' Company, as his master had not followed the trade of a 'ferrer,' but that of a grocer (*City Records*, Letter-book H, p. 316). His admission to the latter company was in 1397–8, and he served the office of joint master in 1405–6 (*Facsimile Archives of the Grocers' Company*). His name disappears from the grocers' list in 1427–8.

Sevenoke is one of the heroes in Richard Johnson's 'Nine Worthies of London,' 1592 (reprinted in the *Harleian Miscellany*, 1811, viii. 437–61), in which he is made to describe his career in verse. According to this chronicle he went after his apprenticeship with Henry V to his French wars, and engaged in combat with the 'Dolphyne,' who gave him 'a bag of crowns' for his prowess. He was elected as senior of the two wardens of London Bridge in 1404, but held the office, which was one of great dignity and importance, for only one year (WELCH, *Hist. of the Tower Bridge*, p. 253; cf. p. 102). Sevenoke is described in the husting rolls as an alderman in 1412, but no entry of his election appears in the city records until 24 May 1414, when he was elected for Tower ward (*Letter-book* I. f. 132). His name occurs in numerous husting deeds from 1400 to 1415, and later, as co-trustee of various properties in the parish of his own residence, St. Dunstan-in-the-East, and in other parishes. He was elected sheriff on 21 Sept. 1412 (*ib.* f. 117*b*; cf. RILEY, *Memorials*, p. 595). Three years later Thomas Maynelle, a grocer and inhabitant of his ward of Tower, was brought before him for certain irregular doings. Maynelle threatened the alderman with the fate of Nicholas Brembre [q. v.] unless he was careful in his behaviour. For this he was bound over by the court of aldermen in 200*l.* to keep the peace (*ib.* pp. 605–6).

Sevenoke became mayor in 1418 (*Letter-book* I. f. 220 *b*), and took strong measures to suppress the Christmas mummers, forbidding any person to walk by night 'in eny manere mommyng, pleyes, enterludes, or eny other disgisynges with eny feynid berdis [beards], peyntid visers,' &c., and ordering that 'eche honest persone' should hang before his dwelling 'a lanterne with a candell therein, to brenne as long as hit may endure' (*ib.* f. 223). He also tried to abolish the custom among the city officials of begging for Christmas gifts, and attended as head of the city at the solemn mass held in Guildhall Chapel on 13 Oct. 1419, before the election of Richard Whittington as mayor. This custom, inaugurated in Sevenoke's mayoralty, has lasted in a modified form to the present day. On 23 Feb. 1423 Sevenoke was appointed on a commission with William Crowmere, mayor, William Waldene, and John Fray to inquire into cases of treason and felony within the city, and two days later they found Sir John Mortimer guilty of having broken prison (SHARPE, *London and the Kingdom*, i. 269; see under MORTIMER, EDMUND II). Sevenoke was member of parliament for London in 1417, and attained great wealth as a merchant. He was buried, according to Stow, in the church of St. Martin Ludgate, where he had a monument. Three of his wills, dated 20 Dec. 1426, 17 June 1432, and 5 July 1432 respectively, were enrolled in the court of husting in 1432–3, and dispose exclusively of real property (SHARPE, *Calendar*, ii. 462, 466). By a fourth will, dated 14 July 1432, he devised certain lands and tenements in the parish of Allhallows, Barking, to the town of Sevenoaks for establishing and endowing almshouses for twenty poor people, and a free school for that town. The school was afterwards further endowed by Sir Ralph Bosville and others, and became a flourishing institution known as Queen Elizabeth's Grammar School. Sevenoke bore as arms azure, seven acorns or.

[Price's Historical Account of the Guildhall, pp. 180–1; Strype's Stow, 1720, bk. v. pp. 117–118; Nichols's Hist. of the Ironmongers' Company, 1866, p. 18; Stow's Survey of London; Hasted's Hist. of Kent, i. 355–6; Loftie's Hist. of London, ii. 344; Carlisle's Endowed Grammar Schools, i. 616; Heath's Account of the Grocers' Company, 1854, pp. 213–21; authorities above cited.]

C. W–H.

SEVER, HENRY (*d.* 1471), first provost of Eton College and warden of Merton, was a member of Merton College, Oxford, in

1427, when he served as senior proctor in the university. He graduated D.D., and subsequently became chaplain and almoner to Henry VI. By the charter of incorporation he was on 11 Oct. 1440 appointed first provost of Eton College (*Bekynton Correspondence*, ii. 274, 281, 286). In 1442 he was succeeded as provost by William Waynefleet [q. v.], and at the end of that year he became chancellor of Oxford University. In the following year he was specially recommended by the university to the favour of Eugenius IV. On 29 May 1445 he was collated to the prebend of Harleston in St. Paul's Cathedral, and in April 1449 he became chancellor of that church. In 1446 the college presented him to the chapel of Kibworth, which he resigned soon after, and on 19 Feb. 1455–6 elected him warden of Merton College. In the reign of Edward IV Sever is said to have held fourteen ecclesiastical preferments (Harwood, *Alumni Eton.* p. 2). He died on 6 July 1471, and was buried in the choir of Merton College chapel; a monumental brass placed over his tomb is now within the rails of the communion-table on the south side of the chancel. His will, dated 4 July 1471, is printed in 'Testamenta Eboracensia' (iii. 188–90); by it Sever made many bequests to Merton College. While warden he rebuilt or completed the warden's house and the Holywell tower, probably at his own expense; these services won him the title of second founder of the college. Sever has been frequently confused with William Senhouse [q. v.], whose name was generally but erroneously spelt Sever.

[Testamenta Eboracensia (Surtees Soc.), iii. 188–90; Corresp. of Bekynton (Rolls Ser.); Newcourt's Repertorium, i. 113, 153; Le Neve's Fasti, ed. Hardy, ii. 360, 389, iii. 343, 467, 543; Camdeni et Ill. Virorum Lit. 1690, pp. 219–20, 224–5; Harwood's Alumni Etonenses; Maxwell-Lyte's Eton College, pp. 8, 18; Brodrick's Memorials of Merton, pp. 16, 160, 314.]

A. F. P.

SEVER, WILLIAM (*d.* 1505), bishop of Durham. [See Senhouse.]

SEVERN, ANN MARY (1832–1866), painter. [See Newton.]

SEVERN, JOSEPH (1793–1879), painter, was born at Hoxton on 7 Dec. 1793. His father, James Severn, a musician by profession, belonged to an old Gloucestershire family, reduced by misfortune; his mother, whose maiden name was Littel, was of Huguenot extraction. The boy early showed a passion for drawing, which was encouraged by his father, who possessed considerable artistic sensitiveness without much taste or knowledge. Unable either to teach his son or to procure him regular instruction, he apprenticed him to an engraver. The noviciate in this profession proved intolerable to young Severn, who found himself constrained to constant copying while longing to attempt original work. He contrived to find time for the execution of drawings, purchased an easel and colours with the proceeds, and managed to pick up some instruction as a casual attendant at the academy schools. While thus struggling he formed, probably in 1816, the friendship with Keats by which he is now chiefly remembered; and his connection with Keats's brother George was even more intimate. In 1817 it was announced that the Royal Academy proposed to bestow a gold medal for the best historical painting by a student, a prize which had not been awarded for twelve years owing to the lack of merit among the candidates. The subject, 'Una seizing the Dagger from the despairing Red Cross Knight' ('Faerie Queene,' bk. i. canto 10), fired Severn's imagination, already powerfully stimulated by his intercourse with Keats, and, further encouraged by the commendation which Fuseli, then keeper of the academy, had bestowed upon some of his drawings, he resolved to be a competitor. He worked with the greatest determination, selling his watch and books to procure the necessary material, and, to his own and the general surprise, was declared the winner, on 10 Dec. 1818. For the time, nevertheless, his success obtained for him no substantial advantage; he found no encouragement except in miniature-painting. His more ambitious picture, 'Hermia and Helena,' though hung at the academy exhibition, attracted no attention; and the envy of disappointed rivals drove him from the academy schools. This, however, was not altogether disadvantageous in so far as it allowed him time for an increased intimacy with Leigh Hunt, Reynolds, and the other members of Keats's circle, which aided him in acquiring the culture in which he had hitherto been deficient. His friendship with Charles Armitage Brown [q. v.] became especially close. In September 1820 he formed, on the shortest notice, that generous resolution of accompanying the invalid Keats to Italy, which has fulfilled the aspiration of Shelley, that 'the spirit of his illustrious friend might plead against oblivion for his name.' It augments the honour due to Severn that his intention met with the strongest opposition from his father, who went so far as to

knock him down; and that his devoted attendance on the dying Keats imperilled his prospect of obtaining a travelling pension from the Royal Academy by retarding the execution of the picture which was a necessary condition. After Keats's death on 24 Feb. 1821, Severn addressed himself to the completion of his picture, 'The Death of Alcibiades,' which after its arrival in England was long mislaid at the academy, but came to light in time to obtain for Severn not only a travelling pension of 130*l.* for three years, but the repayment of the sum he had expended in going to Rome. It must be said that the hopes which inspired this liberality were disappointed; Severn did not achieve any considerable eminence as a painter. But 'the death of Keats and my devoted friendship,' he says, 'had become a kind of passport to the English in Rome, and I soon found myself in the midst of not only the most polished society, but the most Christian in the world—I mean in the sense of humanity, of cheerfulness, of living for others rather than ourselves. This was invaluable as the introduction to my future patrons and the foundation of valuable and lasting friendships.' By friendship, patronage, and commissions from distinguished visitors to Rome, Severn prospered in the world. He painted some historical or imaginative works, such as 'Greek Shepherds,' 'The Death of Alexander,' 'Endymion,' an idealised representation of Keats; and an altar-piece from the 'Apocalypse,' placed, after great opposition, in the church of San Paolo fuori delle Mura. He also painted portraits and numerous pictures from modern Roman life, of which 'The Roman Ave Maria,' engraved in Mr. Sharp's biography, a commission from the Emperor Nicholas, now in the Imperial Gallery at St. Petersburg, is a good specimen.

He will nevertheless be best remembered, even as an artist, by his connection with Keats, whom he painted both living and from memory. Severn's best portrait—a half-length miniature—belongs to Sir Charles Dilke [see art. KEATS, JOHN]. During Severn's first residence at Rome much of his time and thoughts was occupied by tasteless designs for a monument to Keats and by ineffectual efforts to get Keats's biography written.

About 1825 Severn became enamoured of Elizabeth, daughter of Archibald, lord Montgomerie (*d.* 1814), a ward of the Countess of Westmorland [see under MONTGOMERIE, HUGH, twelfth EARL OF EGLINTON]. The countess habitually resided in Italy, and had been one of his warmest patrons. Her violent and unreasonable opposition to the match, however, postponed it until October 1828. The marriage proved a happy one, and, although he became involved in a harassing lawsuit, his career was generally prosperous. The education of his children was probably his motive for returning to England, a step which, though planned in 1838, was not effected until 1841. The nineteen years of his English residence were uneventful, except for the zeal with which he threw himself into the Westminster Hall cartoon competition and his influence upon Milnes's 'Life of Keats.' His pictures were chiefly reminiscences of Italian scenery and manners, such as the view of the Campagna painted for Mr. Gladstone, and 'Shelley in the Coliseum,' painted for Sir Percy Shelley. He also executed an 'Ariel,' a graceful and delicate conception, engraved in Mr. Sharp's biography. He enjoyed the cordial friendship of Eastlake, George Richmond, and Mr. Ruskin; but his pictures did not find much acceptance with the public, and he came to occupy himself more and more with literature. Some specimens of his attempts at fiction are preserved in Mr. Sharp's volumes, and abundantly manifest his lack of vocation. He planned an illustrated edition of 'Adonais,' and wrote some notes towards it, but the undertaking did not proceed far. Frederic Locker-Lampson describes him in 1859 as a 'jaunty, fresh-natured, irresponsible sort of elderly being, leading a facile, slipshod, dressing-gowny, artistic existence in Pimlico' (*My Confidences*, p. 342).

In 1860 the British consulship at Rome became vacant by the resignation of Charles Newton, who returned to the British Museum, and shortly afterwards became Severn's son-in-law. It was probably at Newton's suggestion that Severn applied for the appointment, which he obtained, mainly by the interest of Mr. Gladstone and Bunsen. Long residence had familiarised him with the Roman social atmosphere; a further recommendation was his liberality of opinion, which, in his capacity as acting Italian as well as British consul, he evinced by frequent interpositions on behalf of persons obnoxious to the papal government. Looking and passing for a much younger man than he actually was, he retained his office with credit until 1872, when he retired on a pension. He continued to live in Rome, painting almost to the last, and died there on 3 Aug. 1879. His remains were at first interred in the new cemetery, but ultimately removed and deposited by the side of Keats. He lost no opportunity of manifesting that devotion to the memory of his friend to which he is in-

debted for the better part of his own celebrity.

Of Severn's six children, three, Walter, Arthur, and Ann Mary, afterwards married to Sir Charles Newton [see NEWTON, ANN MARY], became artists of note.

[The principal authority upon Severn is Mr. William Sharp's Life and Letters of Joseph Severn, 1892, drawn up from copious manuscript material. See also art. KEATS, JOHN, and the biographies of Keats by Lord Houghton and Mr. Sidney Colvin; Dilke's Papers of a Critic, i. 17; Athenæum, 1879; Dublin University Mag. vol. xcvi.] R. G.

SEWALL DE BOVILL (*d.* 1257), archbishop of York, was a pupil at Oxford of St. Edmund (Rich), the future archbishop of Canterbury. Edmund, who was greatly attached to Sewall, is said to have foretold his friend's promotion and troubles. About 1240 Sewall became dean of York. He held the prebend of Fenton, in the same church, apparently as early as 1237. While dean he wrote to Innocent IV in support of the proposed canonisation of St. Edmund (MARTENE, *Thes. Nov. Anecd.* iii. 1838). Some constitutions made by him as dean of York, in 1252, are in Cotton MS. Vitellius A. ii. f. iii. Previously to 16 Jan. 1250 he was made archdeacon of York. On the death of Archbishop Gray in 1255 the canons elected him to the vacant see. The king refused his consent on the ground that Sewall was of illegitimate birth. On 1 Oct. the chapter determined to prosecute an appeal at Rome; eventually the pope granted a dispensation removing the defect of birth, and confirmed the election. The king was thus compelled to give his assent on 4 May 1256, and Sewall was consecrated at York on 25 July by Walter de Cantelupe, bishop of Worcester. Shortly after his consecration, Adam de Marisco [q. v.] addressed him a long letter of advice urging him to take Bishop Grosseteste as his example (*Monumenta Franciscana*, pp. 438–89). The pope claimed the right to appoint to the deanery on its vacation by Sewall, and in 1257 an Italian, Jordan, was by his authority fraudulently installed. Sewall resisted the intrusion, and as a consequence was suspended from his office and excommunicated. It does not seem clear whether Sewall was absolved before his death, but the dispute was apparently compromised by the provision of a pension for Jordan. On 20 July 1257 Sewall was one of the commissioners appointed to decide the dispute between Alexander of Scotland and his nobles (*Fœdera*, i. 362). He died on 10 May 1257 (STUBBS ap. RAINE, *Historians of the Church of York*, ii. 405; but MATT. PARIS, v. 691, gives the date as 2 May). He was buried in the south transept of York minster, where his tomb is marked by a marble slab bearing a cross.

Sewall's rule as archbishop was troubled by his quarrel with the pope, whom on his deathbed he summoned to judgment (*ib.* v. 692). But his sufferings and resistance to papal intrusion won him great popularity. Matthew Paris describes him as a humble and holy man, well skilled in law and other sciences (v. 516). Bale ascribes to him: 1. 'Breviloquium ad Alexandrum papam.' 2. 'Sermones et Epistolæ.' 3. 'Ad suos Sacerdotes.'

[Annales Monastici, Matthew Paris, Monumenta Franciscana, Raine's Historians of the Church of York (all these in Rolls Ser.); Chron. Lanercost, pp. 71–2; Bliss's Calendar of Papal Registers; Le Neve's Fasti Eccl. Angl.; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.-Hib. p. 664; Dixon and Raine's Fasti Eboracenses, pp. 295–9.] C. L. K.

SEWALL, SAMUEL (1652–1730), colonist and judge, son of Henry Sewall and Jane, daughter of Stephen Dummer, was born at Bishopstoke, Hampshire, on 28 March 1652. Emigrating in childhood with his parents to Newbury, Massachusetts, he was educated at a private school and at Harvard, entering in 1667, and graduating B.A. in 1671 and M.A. in 1674. He was then ordained minister, but on his marriage in 1677 was induced to leave that calling, and, under the patronage of his father-in-law, started a printing-press at Boston. He soon became known in public life, and in 1684 was elected a member of the court of assistants for Massachusetts. In 1688 he came to England on business. In 1692 Sewall, as a justice of the peace, was concerned in adjudicating in the Salem witchcraft case, but afterwards bitterly repented of his share in the proceedings, and publicly announced the fact, henceforward spending one day annually in fasting and prayer. He afterwards became one of the regular judges of Massachusetts, and in 1718 chief justice. He retired in 1728, and died at Boston on 1 Jan. 1730.

Sewall married, on 28 Feb. 1676, Hannah, daughter of John Hull and Judith Quincy. He left a long line of descendants, the 'loyalist' branch of which changed the spelling of the name to 'Sewell' [see under SEWELL, JONATHAN]. Sewall's diary, an interesting and valuable source for the social history of the colony from 1674 to 1729, was first published in the 'Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society,' 5th ser. vol. v. An engraving, from a supposed original portrait (date and artist unknown), forms the frontispiece. Sewall was also author of a pamphlet against

slavery, entitled 'The Selling of Joseph (1700).

[Sewall's Letters and Diaries; Appleton's Cyclopædia of American Biography.]

C. A. H.

SEWARD, ANNA (1747–1809), authoress, known as the 'Swan of Lichfield,' born in 1747 at Eyam, Derbyshire, was elder daughter of Thomas Seward [q. v.] Her mother was Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev. John Hunter, headmaster of Lichfield grammar school and the teacher of Dr. Johnson. Anna early developed literary tastes, and her father declared that she could repeat passages from 'L'Allegro' before she was three. In 1754 her father removed to Lichfield, where Anna resided for the rest of her life. There she became acquainted with Dr. Erasmus Darwin [q. v.], and he encouraged her to write poetry.

In June 1764 her sister Sarah died when on the eve of marriage with Mr. Porter, Dr. Johnson's stepson. It would seem that he had thought of the elder sister before the younger (cf. *Poetical Works*, vol. i. pp. cxix–cxxi), and that after Sarah's death he wished to renew his addresses to Anna. But his advances were not encouraged. The gap left in her affections by the death of her sister was filled by Honora Sneyd, whom Mr. and Mrs. Seward adopted. Miss Sneyd became in 1773 Richard Lovell Edgeworth's second wife.

Henceforth Anna devoted herself mainly to her father (her mother died in 1780). Her leisure was spent in literary work, social duties, and in a voluminous correspondence with literary friends. She refused all offers of marriage. But she was at one time engaged to a 'Colonel T.' (cf. *Letters*, iv. 175–180), and in later life formed an attachment for John Saville, vicar-choral of Lichfield Cathedral (cf. NICHOLS, *Illustr. of Lit.* viii. 427). When he died in 1803 she erected a monument to his memory in the cathedral.

Miss Seward's earliest poems appeared under the auspices of Anna, lady Miller [q. v.] in the 'Batheaston Miscellany.' Among them are an 'Elegy on the Death of Mr. Garrick' and an 'Ode on Ignorance.' In 1781 she published a 'Monody on the unfortunate Major André,' which was republished, with another popular elegiac effort on Captain Cook, in 1817. In 1782 she published 'Louisa: a poetical novel.' It was well received, won Hayley's admiration, and passed through five editions. About this time Miss Seward visited Hayley in Sussex, and there met Romney, who in 1786 painted her portrait. For some time the picture remained in Hayley's possession, but in 1788 Romney seems to have presented it to Miss Seward's father (cf. HAYLEY, *Memoirs*, i. 277; SEWARD, *Letters*, ii. 126). Miss Seward addressed a poem to Romney on the subject. In 1786 she paid one of her rare visits to London, and writes of 'literary breakfastings' at the house of Helen Maria Williams [q. v.], and of Mrs. Siddons's performance of Rosalind, which did not please her. Next year she made the acquaintance of Mr. and Mrs. Piozzi [q. v.], and frequently met at Lichfield Dr. Darwin, Thomas Day, Richard Lovell Edgeworth, Dr. Parr, Howard the prison reformer, and Dr. Johnson. The last she cordially disliked (cf. NICHOLS, *Illustr. of Lit.* vii. 321–63). About 1776 Miss Seward first met Boswell, whom she subsequently supplied with particulars concerning Johnson. Boswell, who knew her prejudice against Johnson, offended her by a somewhat cool reception of her statements (cf. HILL, *Boswell*, ii. 467; *Gent. Mag.* 1793, i. 197 et passim). Miss Seward published letters signed 'Benvolio,' decrying Johnson in the 'Gentleman's Magazine' in 1786 and 1793 (cf. *Gent. Mag.* 1786 i. 125–6, 302–4, 1787 ii. 684–5).

In March 1790 her father died, leaving her mistress of an independent fortune of 400*l.* a year. She continued to occupy her father's residence, the bishop's palace, Lichfield.

On the appearance of the first and second volumes of Scott's 'Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border,' in 1802, Miss Seward wrote to Scott warmly commending it. Despite the pedantry of her style he recognised her 'sound sense and vigorous ability.' She sent him a Scottish ballad of her own manufacture, 'Rich auld Willie's Farewell,' and Scott placed it among the 'imitations' which form a section of the 'Border Minstrelsy.' He relates that Miss Seward, whom he had never seen, sent him a long and passionate epistle on the death of a dear friend whom he had likewise never seen, but conjured him on no account to answer the letter since she was dead to the world. 'Never were commands more literally obeyed,' wrote Scott to Joanna Baillie. 'I remained as silent as the grave, till the lady made so many enquiries after me that I was afraid of my death being prematurely announced by a sonnet or an elegy.' In 1807 Scott paid Miss Seward a visit at Lichfield, and she greatly interested him. She characterised the meeting as 'among the high-prized honours which my writings have procured for me.'

In 1799 Miss Seward published a collection of original sonnets intended to restore the strict rules of the sonnet. She handled

the form with some measure of success. Leigh Hunt especially admired the sonnet entitled 'December Morning,' 1782 (*Men, Women, and Books*, ii. 141).

Miss Seward published in 1804 a 'Memoir of Dr. Darwin,' which she dedicated to the Earl of Carlisle. It consists chiefly of anecdotes of the early part of Darwin's life, and of the society at Lichfield while he lived there. Miss Seward lays claim to the verses that form the exordium of Darwin's poem, 'The Botanic Garden.' Miss Seward, it seems, had sent the lines to him in July 1778, and they were forwarded without her knowledge to the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' with an alteration in the concluding lines (cf. *Letters*, ii. 311–13, iii. 155–6, v. 333–4). Robert Anderson denied the truth of this assertion (cf. Nichols, *Illustr. of Lit.* vii. 215–16). Two years after Darwin's death the lines appeared under Miss Seward's name in Shaw's 'History of Staffordshire,' 1798 (p. 34). Miss Seward's 'Memoir of Darwin' was severely condemned in the 'Edinburgh Review,' and she wrote to Scott of the editor, 'Jeffreys ought to have been his name' (Smiles, *A Publisher and his Friends*, i. 92).

After 1804 her health began to fail. In 1807 she was attacked by a scorbutic disorder, and she died on 25 March 1809. She was buried in the cathedral at Lichfield, where she had erected a monument, the work of the sculptor Bacon, to her father's memory. It commemorates the whole of the Seward family. The lines on it to Anna's memory are by Scott.

Miss Seward was a tall handsome woman with regular features and an animated expression. Scott says that 'her eyes were auburn, of the precise shade and hue of her hair, and possessed great expression.' Hayley described her as 'a handsome likeness of those full-length pictures of Queen Elizabeth, where the painters gave her majesty all the beauty they could, consistent with the character of her face' (Hayley, *Memoirs*, i. 244). She had a melodious voice, and, according to Hayley, read aloud 'with peculiar force and propriety.' In conversation she had great command of literary anecdote (cf. Nichols, *Lit. Anecd.* ix. 381). Southey declared that, 'with all her affectation,' there was 'a very likeable warmth and sincerity about her' (*Correspondence of Southey and C. Bowles*, p. 319). She held tolerant religious views, and was a liberal in politics. She sympathised with the French revolution: 'I was educated in whiggism,' she wrote to Dr. Parr in 1793.

Miss Seward bequeathed her literary works and remains to Scott, and her letters (twelve quarto manuscript volumes) to Archibald Constable, the Edinburgh publisher. By her request, Scott edited her posthumous compositions, and in 1810 published the poetical works in three volumes, prefixing a memoir, by himself, with extracts from her letters. She had asked Scott to perform a like office for the whole of her literary correspondence, but he declined 'on principle,' because he had 'a particular aversion to perpetrating that sort of gossip.' The matter was therefore left in the hands of Constable, who published in 1811 the letters written between 1784 and 1807 in six volumes. With Constable's consent, Scott examined the manuscript and struck out the extravagant utterances relating to himself and his work. The book had a certain vogue, for in 1813 appeared 'The Beauties of Anna Seward,' selected and arranged by W. C. Oulton. Another edition appeared in 1822, and has for frontispiece an engraving by Woolnoth of the Romney portrait.

Miss Seward's poetry belongs to the school represented by William Hayley [q. v.], and satirised by Gifford in the 'Baviad' (cf. Stephen, *Thought in the Eighteenth Century*, ii. 457). Her work abounds in every sort of affectation. Horace Walpole found that she had 'no imagination, no novelty.' He classed her with Helen Williams and 'a half a dozen more of those harmonious virgins' whose 'thoughts and phrases are like their gowns, old remnants cut and turned' (Walpole, *Letters*, ed. Cunningham, ix. 73). Miss Mitford described her as 'all tinkling and tinsel—a sort of Dr. Darwin in petticoats' (*Letters*, 2nd ser. ed. Chorley, i. 29). Scott was a far more indulgent critic, but he was good-natured to a fault, and was perhaps flattered as a young man by the attentions of a poetess (cf. Lockhart, *Scott*, 1 vol. ed. pp. 188, 201). Johnson, writing in 1788 to Mrs. Piozzi, declared there was nothing equal to Miss Seward's description of the sea round the North Pole in her elegy on Captain Cook (Hill, *Boswell*, iv. 331), for which Hayley was believed to be in part responsible (cf. Nichols, *Illustr. of Lit.* vii. 216). Darwin called her the inventress of epic elegy (cf. Polwhele, *Unsex'd Females*, p. 33). At times she shows an appreciation of natural scenery, and now and then turns a good line (cf. Leigh Hunt, *Men, Women, and Books*, ii. 141). Of her epitaphs, that on Gilbert Walmsley [q. v.] is inscribed on his tomb in Lichfield Cathedral (Hill, *Boswell*, i. 81 *n.*); another, on Garrick, was intended for his monument in the same place, but the sculptor neglected to leave space for it. The third volume of the poems contains paraphrases

and imitations of Horace, although she knew no Latin. In 1788 she wrote a sermon for a young clergyman, who preached it, and it was probably not the sole composition of the kind she attempted (cf. *Gent. Mag.* 1801, i. 113, 195, 396).

Besides the portrait by Romney, already mentioned, which seems to have been engraved both by Woolnoth and Ridley, Miss Seward sat for a miniature to Smart in 1771 and to Miers in 1777. A portrait painted in 1762 by Kettle, and engraved by Cardon, forms a frontispiece to the first volume of the letters, and was in 1811 in the possession of Thomas White of Lichfield.

[Scott's memoir, prefixed to the poems, 1810, and Miss Seward's Letters, 6 vols. 1811, are the chief authorities, besides those quoted in the text.] E. L.

SEWARD, THOMAS (1708–1790), canon of Lichfield and of Salisbury, son of John Seward of Badsey, Worcestershire, born in 1708, was admitted a foundation scholar of Westminster school in 1723. He was elected by the school to scholarships at Christ Church, Oxford, and Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1727, but upon his rejection by both universities he became a pensioner of St. John's College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1730 and M.A. in 1734; then he became travelling tutor to Lord Charles Fitzroy, third son of the Duke of Grafton, who died while on the tour in Italy in 1739 (cf. Walpole, *Letters*, ed. Cunningham, viii. 415). The Duke of Grafton subsequently promised some preferment for Seward. He became rector of Eyam, Derbyshire, and Kingsley, Staffordshire. He also obtained the prebend of Bubbenhall in the church of Lichfield, though the date of his admission does not appear, and on 30 April 1755 he was collated to the prebend of Pipa Parva in the same church. He was installed in the prebend of Lyme and Halstock in the church of Salisbury on 5 June 1755. He resided at Lichfield from 1754, and was acquainted with Dr. Johnson, whom he used to entertain on his visits to Lichfield. Boswell describes him as a great valetudinarian, and 'a genteel, well-bred, dignified clergyman, who had lived much in the great world.' In 1779 he was portrayed as the Canon in the novel 'Columella,' by Richard Graves (1715–1804) [q. v.] He died at the bishop's palace, Lichfield, on 4 March 1790. He married Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev. John Hunter, headmaster of Lichfield grammar school, and was father of Anna Seward [q. v.], the authoress, who caused a monument to be erected to her parents in Lichfield Cathedral. The monument was executed by Bacon, and the verses which form part of the epitaph were the composition of Sir Walter Scott. His portrait, painted by Wright of Derby, was engraved by Cromell for Miss Seward's 'Letters,' vol. ii.

Seward edited, in conjunction with Sympson, the 'Works' of Beaumont and Fletcher, and wrote the preface, 10 vols. London, 1750, 8vo. It was a poor performance; Coleridge exclaimed in his 'Lectures on Shakespeare' (p. 146): 'Mr. Seward! Mr. Seward! you may, and I trust you are, an angel, but you were an ass!' 'The Female Right to Literature' and four other poems by Seward were printed in Dodsley's 'Collection,' ii. 296–308 (cf. *Gent. Mag.* 1780, p. 123). Seward also published: 1. 'The Conformity between Popery and Paganism, London, 1746, 8vo [cf. Middleton, Conyers]. 2. A curious sermon, preached at Lichfield in 1756, entitled 'The late dreadful Earthquakes no proof of God's particular Wrath against the Portuguese.'

[Boswell's Johnson, ed. Hill; Gent. Mag. 1790 i. 280, 369; Graduati Cantabr.; Le Neve's Fasti, ed. Hardy, i. 588, 621, ii. 672; Nichols's Illustr. of Lit.; Nichols's Lit. Anecd.; Welch's Alumni Westmon., ed. Phillimore, pp. 281, 296.] T. C.

SEWARD, WILLIAM (1747–1799), man of letters, the only son of William Seward (partner in the firm of Calvert & Seward, then the chief brewers of beer in London), was born in January 1747. When very young he was trained at a small seminary near Cripplegate, and he is said to have been at Harrow school in December 1757 (Thornton, *Harrow School*, pp. 136–8). For a time he was at Charterhouse school, and on 4 June 1764 he matriculated from Oriel College, Oxford. As he was possessed of considerable property and had no taste for trade, he declined, to his father's dismay, to continue in the family business.

On quitting the university Seward travelled on the continent, particularly in Italy, and then returned to London with a confirmed love of literature and the fine arts, and a pronounced tendency to hypochondria. He invariably spent the winter in London and the summer in the country (Burney, *Memoirs*, iii. 265). He was a great favourite in the house of the Thrales at Streatham, where Dr. Johnson often met him. To Johnson's rooms in London he was a frequent visitor, and he was among the friends that attended the doctor's funeral. Parr consulted him on Johnson's epitaph, and Seward made a suggestion which was adopted. With letters of recommendation from Johnson to

Boswell he visited Edinburgh and the highlands in 1777. In August 1781 he made the 'western tour' in England, calling in every town on 'a doctor, apothecary, or chemist,' about his health, and extracting at the same time information about the place and its surroundings. Two years later (June 1783) he was going to Paris and then to Flanders, to study the pictures of Claude Lorraine. Miss Seward, an old acquaintance but no relation, met him at Buxton in June 1793.

Seward was a member of the Eumelean Club that met at the Blenheim tavern in Bond Street, and of the Essex Club founded by Dr. Johnson early in 1784. He was elected F.R.S. on 11 Feb. 1779 and F.S.A. on 25 March 1779. He died of a dropsy at his lodgings, Dean Street, Soho, on 24 April 1799, and was buried in the family vault at Finchley on 1 May. His portrait was painted by George Dance on 5 May 1793, and engraved by William Daniell. A second portrait of him, by J. G. Wood, was engraved by Holl, and published on 3 June 1799.

Seward was 'in action all benevolence.' In the 'Poems of Mrs. John Hunter' (2nd edit. 1803, pp. 74–5) is an elegy in praise of his benevolence. He did not 'disdain' Tom Paine, and he subscribed ten guineas towards purchasing an annuity for Porson (Watson, *Life of Porson*, p. 99). While doing good to every one, he spoke well of nobody, yet he could be, when he chose, a piquant and stimulating conversationalist. Miss Burney, who made his acquaintance in 1777, had always 'a true esteem for him,' as his pretence of affectation and his spirit of satire were but 'quizziness' (cf. Clayden, *Early Life of Rogers*, pp. 168–74).

Many articles, including a series of 'Reminiscentia,' were supplied by Seward to the 'Whitehall Evening Post,' and he contributed anecdotes and literary discoveries to Cadell's 'Repository' and the 'European Magazine.' His papers of 'Drossiana' in the 'European Magazine,' beginning in October 1789, p. 243, formed the basis of his anonymous 'Anecdotes of some Distinguished Persons' (1795–7), 5 vols., which passed into a fifth edition in four volumes in 1804. This was followed in 1799 by two volumes of 'Biographiana.' These works showed much reading and were deservedly popular. Mathias in the 'Pursuits of Literature' (2nd dialogue, lines 61 and 62), speaks of Seward as a 'publick bagman for scraps,' but in a note describes the volumes as 'very entertaining but very dear,' and their author as the best 'compiler of anecdotes except Horace Walpole.'

[Foster's Alumni Oxon.; European Mag. October 1799, pp. 219–20 (by Isaac Reed, and with engraved portrait); Gent. Mag. 1799, i. 439–40; Monthly Mag. 1799, p. 334; Memoirs of Dr. Burney, ii. 87–9, 154; Early Diary of F. Burney, ii. 153; Madame d'Arblay's Diary, i. 140–1, 178, 226, 231–3, 426, ii. 66, 71, 88–9, 95, 233–4, iv. 173–4, vi. 187; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. ii. 553, 638, iii. 399, ix. 467; Goldsmith's Works, ed. Gibbs, v. 412–14; Anna Seward's Letters, iii. 265–6, iv. 53–8; Hayward's Piozzi, ii. 75; Boswell, ed. Hill, ii. 337, iii. 123, iv. 198, 423, 445; Johnson's Letters, ed. Hill, i. 346, ii. 33, 35, 299, 434.] W. P. C.

SEWARD, WILLIAM WENMAN (*fl* 1800), writer on Irish politics and topography, published at Dublin: 1. 'The Rights of the People asserted, and the Necessity of a more equal Representation in Parliament stated and proved,' &c., 1783, 8vo (a fervidly patriotic effusion, dedicated to 'the Volunteers of Ireland,' displaying, however, considerable knowledge of political and constitutional history). 2. 'The Hibernian Gazeteer,' 1789, 12mo. 3. 'Topographia Hibernica . . . giving a Complete View of the Civil and Ecclesiastical State of the country: arranged alphabetically, with Appendices,' 1795, 4to; it is dedicated to William Robert, duke of Leinster, and has for frontispiece an engraving of the Round Tower of Roscrea, Tipperary; for the ancient topography, Archdall and Ledwich were followed; a copy in the British Museum (interleaved) has manuscript notes by the author; among these is an alphabetical list of the English adventurers in Ireland during the first English invasion, under Henry II; the book is described in Peel's 'Bibliotheca Hibernica' as 'a valuable topographical dictionary.' 4. 'Collectanea Politica; or the Political Transactions of Ireland, 1760–1803,' 1803, 8vo (the British Museum has no copy).

[Seward's Works; Allibone's Dict. Engl. Lit. ii. 2000.] G. Le G. N.

SEWEL, WILLIAM (1654–1720), quaker historian, son of Jacob Williamson Sewel, a free citizen and surgeon of Amsterdam, was born there in 1654. His paternal grandfather, William Sewel, a Brownist of Kidderminster, emigrated from England to escape religious persecution, and married a native of Utrecht. His mother, Judith Zinspenning, daughter of a German papist, afterwards a baptist, was a woman of strong character. She joined the quakers in 1657, after hearing William Ames (*d.* 1662) [q. v.], became an eloquent minister, visited England in 1663, was author of 'A Serious Reproof to the Flemish Baptists,' 1660, a 'Book of Pro-

verbs' (translated into English by William Caton [q. v.], London, 1663), 'An Epistle' (SEWEL, *Hist.* ii. 125–8), and other small books. She died at Amsterdam on 10 Sept. 1664, aged 34. Her husband predeceased her.

Sewel was brought up by an uncle. At eight he was fairly proficient in Latin (*Crisp and his Correspondents*, p. 59), but was soon apprenticed to a weaver, and pursued his study of languages in the intervals of throwing the shuttle. At fourteen he visited his mother's friends in England. Returning to Holland after a sojourn of ten months, he obtained work as a translator, contributed regularly to the 'Amsterdam Courant' and other papers, wrote verses, and conducted a periodical. In spite of an invitation from William Penn to become master of the quaker school opened at Bristol, Sewel remained in Amsterdam until his death on 13 March 1720. He was married, and had issue. A portrait, by Rademaker, engraved by De Later, is in the 'Boekzaal der geleerde Werreld,' 1705; another engraving, by J. C. Philipps, forms the frontispiece of both the first and second editions of his dictionary.

Sewel spent twenty-five years in preparing his principal work, 'The History of the Rise, Increase, and Progress of the Christian People called Quakers.' It was first published in Dutch, 'Histori van de Opkompste, Aanwas en Voortgang der Christenen bekend by den naam van Quakers,' Amsterdam, 1717, fol. (another edition, 1742). The English edition (London, 1722, fol.), dedicated to George I, although described by its author as 'rudis indigestaque moles,' is remarkable as the product of a writer who had only spent ten months in England. It was largely undertaken to correct the misrepresentations of 'Historia Quakeriana' (Amsterdam, 1695, 8vo; English translation, London, 1696, 8vo, by Gerard Croese, a German, to whom Sewel had himself given many letters and narratives from England). Sewel's work was based upon a mass of correspondence, George Fox's 'Journal,' and, for the public history, Clarendon's 'Rebellion' and Ludlow's 'Memoirs.' Its accuracy has never been impugned, and it remains a classical authority. The 'History' was reprinted, London, 1725, fol. 1795, 8vo, 2 vols. 1779–80, 1811, and 6th ed. 1834. American editions appeared at Philadelphia, 1728, fol. and 1832 (cf. HILDEBURN'S *Issues of the Philadelphia Press*, i. 92–3), Burlington, New Jersey, 1774; and New York, 1844, 2 vols. (with a life of the author). It was translated into German, 'Die Geschichte von dem Ursprung,' 1742, fol., and abridged for children, London, 1864, 16mo.

Sewel's other works are: 1. 'A Large Dictionary of English-Dutch,' 2 pts. Amsterdam, 1691, 4to; 5th ed. 1754; 6th, 1766. 2. 'A Compendious Guide to the Low Dutch Language' (English and Dutch), Amsterdam, 1700, 12mo; other editions, 1725, 1740, 1747, 1760–86. These two were reprinted together, 1708, 4to. It was reissued by S. H. Wilcocke, London, 1798, 8vo, who in pruning Sewel's 'exuberant diffusiveness' discards the illustrative phrases which are a great feature of his work. 3. 'Oratio in Luxum' (Latin and Dutch), 1715, 4to.

Sewel edited the 'Grammaire Hollandoise of Philippe la Grue,' 1744, 3rd ed. 1763, 4th, 1785, and translated the following into Dutch from the English: Robert Boyle's 'Disquisition about the final causes of Natural Things,' 1688; Penn's 'No Cross, no Crown,' 1687, 12mo, and his 'Good Advice to the Church of England,' &c., 1687, 4to; Bishop Burnet's 'Short History of the Reformation of the Church of England,' 1690; Steven Crisp's 'Way to the Kingdom of Heaven,' 1695, 8vo; William Dampier's 'New Voyage round the World,' The Hague, 1698–1700 (Leyden, 1707, 1737), the rare and curious account of shipwreck, entitled 'God's Protecting Providence,' &c., Philadelphia, 1699 (2nd edit. London, 1700; 7th edit. 1790), of Jonathan Dickinson (*d.* 1722). From the Latin: Basil Kennett's 'Romæ Antiquæ Notitia,' published in Seine's 'Beschryving van Oud en Niew Rome,' 1704, fol.; and the works of Josephus, 1722, fol. From French, David Martin's 'Histoire du Vieux et du Nouveau Testament,' 1700; and from the German, Gottfried Arnold's 'Wahre Abbildung der ersten Christen,' 1700, fol.; another edition, 1703. He also translated into Dutch, Matthew Prior's 'Ode on King William's Arrival in Holland,' 1695, 4to.

[Sewel's Hist. of the Rise, &c., preface; Memoirs of J. Kendall, p. 162; Friends' Biographical Catalogue of Portraits, p. 599; Steven's Hist. of the Scottish Church, Rotterdam, p. 272; Wagenaar's Amsterdam, xi. 326; Chalmers's Biogr. Dict. xxvii. 361; Van der Aa's Biogr. Woordenboek, xvii. 635; Gent. Mag. July 1785, p. 504, where he is called Dr. Seveley, and June 1812, p. 531; Friends' Monthly Mag. ii. 145; British Friend, December 1860, p. 294; the present writer's Crisp and his Correspondents, pp. xi, xxxiii, l, 5, 8, 26, 47, 59; Smith's Cat. of Friends' Books, ii. 560, 979; Story's Journal, p. 490; Delvenne's Biogr. du Royaume des Pays-Bas, iv. 405; Friends' Quarterly Mag. and Review, 1832, pp. 117–19, where letters from Sewel to John Penington are printed. The Meeting for Sufferings owns a bound quarto manuscript volume in Sewel's autograph containing copies of his letters

in Latin to William Penn, Thomas Elwood, Theodore Eccleston, Bishop Gilbert Burnet, Gerard Croese, Josiah Martin, Christopher Meidel, and many other persons, the last dated August 1719.] C. F. S.

SEWELL, GEORGE (*d.* 1726), controversialist and hack-writer, born at Windsor, was the eldest son of John Sewell, treasurer and chapter-clerk to the dean and canons of Windsor, and was descended from the ancient family of Sewell living at Great Henny in Essex. He was educated at Eton, and his poem of 'The Favourite, a simile,' embodies reminiscences of his Eton life (cf. SOUTHEY, *Later Poets*, i. 253–4). He then went to Peterhouse, Cambridge, and graduated B.A. in 1709; for a time he studied medicine under Boerhaave at the university of Leyden, and about July 1725 he took the degree of M.D. at Edinburgh.

Sewell practised at first in London, but without success. He then retired to Hampstead, where he met with better fortune, until three other physicians came to the same place, and ruined his practice. Under the pressure of want he became a booksellers' hack, publishing numerous poems, translations, and political and other pamphlets. He died of consumption at Hampstead, in great poverty, on 8 Feb. 1725–6. On 12 Feb. he was accorded a pauper's funeral. His pathetic verses, prophetic of his death, are cited in Campbell's 'Specimens of the British Poets' (1841, p. 345).

In early life Sewell inclined to toryism, and was a bitter critic of Bishop Burnet, whom he attacked in five pamphlets (1713–1715). His animosity extended to the bishop's son, and he brought out anonymously in 1715 a satirical 'True Account of the Life and Writings of Thomas Burnet.' Sewell also wrote in the tory interest 'Remarks upon a Pamphlet intituled [Observations upon the State of the Nation'] (anon.) 1713 (3rd edit., 1714); and 'Schism destructive of the Government: a Defence of the Bill for preventing the Growth of Schism;' 2nd edit. 1714, in which he answered the arguments of Sir Richard Steele. Afterwards he attached himself to the cause of Sir Robert Walpole, and issued 'The Resigners vindicated: by a Gentleman,' 1718, which went through four editions in that year, and was succeeded by 'The Resigners, Part ii. and last,' 1718.

Sewell's best-known production in general literature was his 'Tragedy of Sir Walter Raleigh, as it is acted at the Theatre in Lincoln's Inn Fields,' 1719; 5th edit. with a new scene (and prefatory verses from Amhurst and others), 1722; 6th edit. 1745. The author traded on the national hatred of Spain. Quin played the part of the hero in this piece, which was produced on 16 Jan. 1718–1719, and was often repeated. It was revived for one night at Drury Lane, 14 Dec. 1789 (*Notes and Queries*, 3rd ser. ii. 412).

Sewell contrived to link his name with those of many illustrious writers of this period. Verses by him are in Prior's 'Collection of Poems,' 1709 (cf. *Poems of Prior*, 1742, pp. xlvi–l; cf. ii. 75). He twice defended Addison's 'Cato,' in pamphlets issued in 1713 and 1716 (cf. JOHNSON, *Lives*, ed. Cunningham, ii. 139). He wrote the preface for Addison's 'Miscellanies in Verse and Prose,' 1725, which include two translations by him (viz. the 'Puppet-show,' pp. 20–4, and 'The Barometer,' pp. 29–32). A copy of verses by him was added to 'Sir Richard Steele's Recantation' (AITKEN, *Steele*, ii. 74). Sewell bore a principal part in the fifth volume of the 'Tatler,' sometimes called 'The spurious Tatler,' which was edited by William Harrison, and in the ninth or 'spurious' volume of the 'Spectator.' He wrote a 'Life and Character of Mr. John Philips,' author of 'The Splendid Shilling' (2nd edit. 1715; 3rd edit. 1720), which was also issued with the works of Philips, and down to 1760 was often reprinted. To Pope's edition of Shakespeare (1725) Sewell added a seventh volume, containing 'Venus and Adonis, Tarquin and Lucrece, Miscellany Poems, Essay on the Stage, Glossary and remarks on the Plays.' The same pieces formed the eighth volume of a Dublin edition issued in 1725 and 1726, and the tenth volume of a London edition in 1728. It was perhaps in consequence of this unsolicited contribution that Pope, in the first edition of his 'Epistle to Dr. Arbuthnot,' wrote of 'Sanguine Sew—' (line 164), which was afterwards altered to 'Slashing Bentley' (*Works*, ed. Courthope, iii. 254). To George Cheyne's 'History of Himself' (1743, pp. 44–49) was added Sewell's account of Archibald Pitcairne, of whose 'medical dissertation' Sewell issued a translation with J. T. Desaguliers in 1717. He assisted in the translation of Ovid's 'Metamorphoses' (1717), which was projected in opposition to that of Garth, although Sewell addressed the latter 'as his dear friend' in a poem in his 'New Collection' (anon.), 1720. He contributed to, and probably supervised, a volume of 'Sacred Miscellanies' (*circa* 1713), and he prepared in 1717 a very bad edition of the 'Poems of Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey' (NICHOLS, *Lit. Anecdotes*, viii. 301, 304; POPE, *Works*, ed. Courthope, v. 208).

Others of his publications in general literature were: 1. 'The Patriot: a Poem. Inscribed to Robert, Earl of Oxford,' 1712; in

his 'Posthumous Works' (1728) the name of the representative patriot was changed to Walpole. 2. 'An Epistle from Sempronia to Cethegus, with Reply' (anon.), 1713: a satire on the Duke and Duchess of Marlborough. 3. 'The Proclamation of Cupid, or a Defence of Women: a Poem from Chaucer,' 1718, reprinted in No. 5 infra. 4. 'Poems on several Occasions,' 1719. 5. 'A new Collection of original Poems' (anon.), 1720. 6. Posthumous Works, viz. 'Tragedy of King Richard I,' 'Essays and Poems,' 1728; edited by his brother, Gregory Sewell. Some of his poems are inserted in Nichols's 'Collection,' vii. 133–49, and in Bell's 'Fugitive Poetry,' vi. 111–15. Long letters to and from him are in the correspondence of John Dennis (1721), i. 122–5, and in the works of Aaron Hill (1753), i. 9–19, ii. 406–13 (cf. *Notes and Queries*, 2nd ser. ii. 423).

[Jacob's Poetical Register, i. 177–8, 328; Park's Hampstead, pp. 323–7; Brit. Essayists, ed. Chalmers, vol. i. p. lxxxi, vol. v. p. lxxii; Cibber's Lives of the Poets, iv. 188–91; Halkett and Laing's Dict. of Anon. Lit. ii. 1245, 1716, iii. 2158, 2184, iv. 2660.] W. P. C.

SEWELL, HENRY (1807–1879), first premier of New Zealand, was the fourth son of Thomas Sewell, a solicitor, who was steward of the Isle of Wight, and of Jane, youngest daughter of John Edwards, curate of Newport. Richard Clarke Sewell (1803–1864) [q. v.], Dr. James Edward Sewell, and William Sewell (1805–1874) [q. v.] were his brothers, and Elizabeth Missing Sewell, the novelist, his sister. He was born at Newport on 14 Sept. 1807, and educated at Hyde Abbey school, near Winchester. He qualified as a solicitor, and joined his father's firm in 1826, living first in Newport and then at Pidford. He moved to Brockhurst, but, on the death of his first wife in 1844, went to reside in London, where he interested himself in the Canterbury Association for the Colonisation of New Zealand, ultimately becoming secretary and deputy chairman in 1850.

At the end of 1852 Sewell was sent out to New Zealand to wind up the affairs of the association. Arriving in February 1853, he settled at Lyttleton (whence he afterwards moved to Nelson), and commenced practice as a solicitor. In May 1854 he was elected to the House of Representatives as member for Christchurch, and from June to August was in the Fitzgerald ministry. He became on 7 May 1856 the first premier on the introduction of responsible government, but on 13 May he resigned because the crown declined to allow the ministry full responsibility. On 2 June 1856 he joined the first Stafford ministry as colonial treasurer and commissioner of customs, and held office till April 1859. From 12 July 1861 to August 1862 he was attorney-general in the Fox ministry, in December 1861 giving up his seat in the House of Representatives, and becoming member of the legislative council for Wellington; he continued as attorney-general under Alfred Domett [q. v.] till January 1863. He was minister of justice in Sir A. Weld's first ministry from 24 Nov. 1864 to 16 Oct. 1865, and again under Sir J. Fox from 28 June 1869 to 10 Sept. 1872. For his action in joining this government he was violently attacked in the lower house, and on 17 Oct. 1872 made a long and characteristic personal explanation in the council (*New Zealand Debates*, xii. 733). Thus for more than ten years Sewell was one of the most active and prominent of New Zealand politicians (cf. Gisborne).

Sewell left New Zealand in the spring of 1876, and went to reside at Romford, Essex, where his eldest son was curate. He moved to Salisbury Villa, Station Road, Cambridge, where he died on 14 May 1879. He was buried at Waresley, Huntingdonshire.

Sewell married, first, on 15 May 1834, Lucinda Marianne, eldest daughter of General William Nedham of Mount Olive, Jamaica, and Widcombe, Bath, M.P. for Athenry in the last Irish parliament, 1798–1800) (she died, 28 July 1844, leaving six children); secondly, on 23 Jan. 1850, Elizabeth, second daughter of Capt. Edward Kittoe, R.N., of Deal, who survived him just over a year.

Sewell was author of 'Thoughts on the Relations of Men to the External World,' London, 1848, and of three pamphlets on New Zealand politics.

[Private information gathered by Mr M. C. Orwen, also from Miss E. M. Sewell; Mennell's Dict. of Australasian Biography; Gisborne's New Zealand Rulers and Statesmen.] C. A. H.

SEWELL, JONATHAN (1766–1839), chief justice of Lower Canada, son of Jonathan Sewell (1728–1796), the last attorney-general of Massachusetts, was born at Cambridge, Massachusetts, in June 1766, in the 'old family mansion,' came over to England with his parents, and was educated at Bristol grammar school. In 1785 he went with his father to New Brunswick and studied law in the office of Ward Chipman, going to Quebec in 1789, where he was called to the bar of Lower Canada on 30 Oct. 1789. In 1793 he became solicitor-general, and in 1795 attorney-general and advocate-general; about the same time he entered the House

of Assembly as member for William Henry, for which he sat through three parliaments, till in 1808 he became chief justice of Quebec, speaker of the legislative council, and president of the executive council.

One of his earliest acts as chief justice produced a remarkable episode in Canadian history. In 1809 he introduced rules of practice into the procedure of the courts. In 1814 they were attacked by the assembly, under the leadership of James Stuart (1780–1853) [q. v.], as a breach of privilege by law-making and as affecting the liberty of the subject. Sewell was impeached for subverting the constitution, and charged with malicious influence over the governor, leading to various specified acts which covered the whole range of conflict between the house and the government under Sir James Henry Craig [q. v.], the press cases, the Bedard case, and the John Henry scandal. Monk, chief justice of Montreal, was joined in the indictment. The new governor, Sir George Prevost (1767–1816) [q. v.], tried to bring the assembly to reason and incurred its wrath. Sewell went to England to defend himself, and was by its order in 1815 restored to his post. It was clear to the home government that the action of the assembly was due to political and religious animosity which had probably been inflamed by Sewell's sarcasm and indifference; but Sir John Coape Sherbrooke [q. v.], who had succeeded Prevost, stated that Sewell's reinstatement added enormously to the difficulties of the government. Early in 1817 an effort was made to revive the impeachments, but Stuart suddenly seemed to lose his influence; the matter was dropped, and Sewell received compensation for ill-treatment. The rest of his career was uneventful. In 1829 he resigned his seat on the council, and in 1838 the post of chief justice. He died in Quebec on 12 Nov. 1839, and was buried amid general mourning. Sewell was married, and had three sons, who settled in Quebec.

Sewell was an excellent chief justice, stern, but with great command of temper. He was created an honorary LL.D. by Harvard University.

He published: 1. 'A Plan for the Federation of the British Provinces of North America,' 1814. 2. 'An Essay on the Judicial History of France,' 1824. 3. 'The Advantages of Opening the St. Lawrence,' 1824. 4. 'Dark Days of Canada,' 1831.

[Morgan's Sketches of Celebrated Canadians, and Bibliotheca Canadensis; Quebec Mercury, 12 Nov. 1839, and a letter in issue of 16 Nov. 1839; Roger's History of Canada, pp. 254–7, 321, 326.] C. A. H.

SEWELL, MARY (1797-1884), authoress, was born on 6 April 1797, at Sutton in Suffolk. She was daughter of John Wright, a gentleman-farmer, and his wife Ann, daughter of John Holmes of Tivetshall, Norfolk. Both parents were members of the Society of Friends. When Mary was twelve her father gave up farming, and joined business with a shipowner at Yarmouth. With the exception of a year spent at a school at Tottenham, Mary received her education at home. All regular study ended at the age of fifteen, when she commenced reading on her own account such authors as Moore, Byron, Southey, and Scott. Her father's affairs not prospering, she was for a time governess in a school in Essex. In 1819 she married Isaac Sewell, youngest son of William Sewell of Great Yarmouth, who had courted her for five years. They settled at Yarmouth, and there a daughter Anna was born on 30 March 1820. Soon afterwards they came to London, where a son Philip was born on 14 Jan. 1822. Isaac Sewell was not successful in business. At one time he kept a small shop near Bishopsgate Street, at another travelled for a large Nottingham lace factory. At length, in 1835, he was appointed manager of the London and County Joint-Stock Bank at Brighton. For the next ten years the family lived at Brighton, and subsequently at Lancing, Hayward's Heath, and Grayling Wells, until 1857 (when Sewell retired from the bank). Mrs. Sewell busied herself with the training of her children, writing for them her first book, 'Walks with Mamma,' in words of one syllable. In 1835 she left the Society of Friends for the church of England, into which she was eventually baptised. Her tone of mind was deeply religious, and she took great interest in philanthropic movements. She was a member of the Anti-Slavery Association.

In her sixtieth year Mrs. Sewell began seriously to write verses, with the object of inculcating moral virtues in all relations of life. 'Homely Ballads' was printed for private circulation in 1858 (it reached a fortieth thousand in 1889). Shortly afterwards Mrs. Sewell went to live at Blue Lodge, Wick, within a short distance of both Bath and Bristol, and there most of her works were written. In 1860 appeared her ballad, 'Mother's Last Words,' which had an unprecedented sale of 1,088,000 copies. It tells in simple language the story of two poor boys who were kept from evil courses by the memory of their mother's last words. Of another ballad, 'Our Father's Care,' 1861, no fewer than 776,000 copies were sold; 'Chil-

dren of Summerbrook,' 1859, a tale in verse for little schoolgirls, and 'Patience Hart's Experiences in Service,' 1862, a prose tale, each had a sale of thirty-three thousand copies. Her stories were short, and published in pamphlet form.

In 1867 Mrs. Sewell returned to Norfolk, and spent the rest of her days at Old Catton, near Norwich. There her daughter died in April 1878, and her husband on 7 Nov. following. Mrs. Sewell's old age was remarkably vigorous. She died on 10 June 1884, and was buried beside her husband and daughter in the Friends' burying-ground at Lamas, Norfolk.

The popularity of her verses was due to the simplicity of language and form, to the simple faith they inculcated, and to the obviousness of the moral. Her poems were collected in 1861 under the title of 'Stories in Verse,' and again after her death in 1886, as 'Poems and Ballads,' in two volumes, with a memoir by Mrs. Bayly.

ANNA SEWELL (1820–1878), authoress, only daughter of the above, was born at Yarmouth on 30 March 1820. The severe spraining of both ankles in early childhood lamed her, and made her an invalid for life. In 1871 she began in the intervals of sickness to write her attractive 'autobiography' of a horse; it was published in 1877 under the title of 'Black Beauty,' and had a remarkable success (nearly a hundred thousand copies had been sold by 1894, when a new edition appeared). It was translated into French, Italian, and German. Its general aim was to induce kindness and sympathy towards horses, while it specially denounced the use of the bearing-rein; it was warmly recommended by the Royal Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals. Miss Sewell died in April 1878.

[Life and Letters of Mrs. Sewell by Mrs. Bayly, 1889, with portraits of Mrs. Sewell and her daughter; Devonshire House Portraits, pp. 600–2; Allibone's Dict. ii. 2001, and Supplement, ii. 1332; private information.] E. L.

SEWELL, RICHARD CLARKE (1803–1864), legal writer, eldest son of Thomas Sewell of Newport, Isle of Wight, brother of Henry Sewell [q. v.], premier of New Zealand, and of William Sewell [q. v.], was baptised at Newport on 6 Feb. 1803, and entered Winchester College in 1818. He matriculated from Magdalen College, Oxford, on 26 July 1821, was a demy of his college from 1821 until 1837, and a fellow from 1837 to 1856. He served as senior dean of arts in 1838, as bursar 1840, and was vice-president and prælector of natural philosophy in 1843. He graduated with a second-class in *lit. hum.*, B.A. 1826, M.A. 1829, and D.C.L. 1840. He was awarded the Newdigate prize in 1825 for an English poem on 'The Temple of Vesta at Tivoli.' On 25 June 1830 he was called to the bar at the Middle Temple, became known as a special pleader, and took business on the western circuit and at the Hampshire sessions. Later in life he went to Australia, where he practised in the criminal law courts, and was in 1857 appointed reader in law to the university of Melbourne. He died at Melbourne on 9 Nov. 1864.

Sewell was a man of varied learning. He published: 1. 'Collectanea Parliamentaria,' 1831. 2. 'A Digest of the New Statutes and Rules, with the Cases decided at Banc and at Nisi Prius,' 1835. 3. 'The Municipal Corporation Act, 5 and 6 Will. IV, c. 76,' 1835. 4. 'Vindiciæ Ecclesiasticæ, or a Legal and Historical Argument against the Abolition of the Bishops' Courts in Cases of Correction, as proposed by the Church Discipline Act,' 1839. 4. 'A Manual of the Law and Practice of Registration of Voters in England and Wales,' 1835; 2nd ed. 1844. 5. 'A Treatise on the Law of Sheriffs with practical Forms and Precedents,' 1842. 6. 'A Treatise on the Law of Coroner, with Precedents and Forms,' 1843. 7. 'A Letter to the Members of the Venerable House of Convocation [on the subject of the Proceedings against W. G. Ward],' 1845. 8. 'Sacro-Politica: the Rights of the Anglican Church examined with, and tested by, the Laws of England and the Principles of the British Constitution,' 1848. 9. 'Legal Education: an Inaugural Lecture,' Melbourne,' 1857. 10. 'The Speech of R. C. Sewell in defence of G. Chamberlain and W. Armstrong, charged with intent to murder W. Green,' Melbourne, 1859. 11. 'A Letter to Lord Worsley on the Burdens affecting Real Property,' 1846. For the English Historical Society he edited 'Gesta Stephani,' 1846, and contributed to the 'Field' 'The Papers of a Hampshire Fisherman.'

[Gent. Mag. March 1865, p. 386; Bloxam's Reg. of St. Mary Magdalen College, Oxford, 1881, vii. 284–7.] G. C. B.

SEWELL, SIR THOMAS (*d.* 1784), master of the rolls, the son and heir of Thomas Sewell of West Ham, Essex, is said to have been 'bred up under an attorney' (*Gent. Mag.* 1784, ii. 555). He was admitted a member of the Middle Temple on 6 June 1729, was called to the bar on 24 May 1734, became a king's counsel in Hilary term 1754, and a bencher of his inn in the following May. He practised with

much success in the chancery courts, where, at the time of his appointment to the rolls, he was said to be making between three and four thousand pounds per annum (*Chatham Correspondence*, 1838–40, ii. 294–5 *n.*) After attempting to procure the Duke of Newcastle's interest at Seaford and Dover (*Addit. MSS.* Brit. Mus. 32856 f. 317, 32864 ff. 316, 336), he was returned to parliament in December 1758 for the borough of Harwich, which he continued to represent until the dissolution in March 1761. At the general election in this year he unsuccessfully contested Exeter. He was, however, elected for Winchelsea at a by-election in December 1761, and on 4 Dec. 1764 (*London Gazette*, 1764, No. 10475) he was appointed master of the rolls in the place of Sir Thomas Clarke [q. v.], with the annual salary of 2,500*l.* W. Gerard Hamilton, in a letter to John Calcraft, says the appointment 'surprised every one exceedingly, and I am told no one more than Sewell himself, who had never applied for it, and who had no idea that he was in the contemplation of government till the acceptance of the office was proposed to him by the chancellor and Lord Mansfield jointly' (*Chatham Correspondence*, ii. 298 *n.*) Sir Fletcher Norton, the attorney-general, appears to have been named Clarke's successor at the rolls in the first instance (see WALPOLE, *Memoirs of the Reign of King George III*, 1894, ii. 26; WALPOLE, *Letters*, 1857–9, iv. 294, 297–8). Sir William de Grey, the solicitor-general, on hearing of Sewell's promotion, sent an indignant protest to George Grenville (*Grenville Papers*, 1852–3, ii. 471–2). Sewell was knighted on 30 Nov. 1764, and sworn a member of the privy council on 12 Dec. following (*London Gazette*, 1764, No. 10478). In January 1765 he was re-elected for Winchelsea. He, however, lost his seat at the general election in March 1768, and thereupon retired from parliamentary life. On the death of John Bowes, baron of Clonlyon, in July 1767, Sewell was mentioned for the Irish chancellorship (*Grenville Papers*, iv. 132), but the appointment was eventually given to James Hewitt (afterwards Viscount Lifford [q. v.]), then a puisne judge of the king's bench in England. Sewell, who made an able and efficient judge, presided at the rolls for over nineteen years. He died after a lingering illness on 6 March 1784, and was buried in the Rolls chapel.

He married, first, Catherine, elder daughter of Thomas Heath of Stansted Montfichet in Essex, M.P. for Harwich, by whom he had four sons and four daughters. His first wife died on 17 Jan. 1769. He married, secondly, on 20 March 1773, Mary Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Dr. Humphrey Sibthorp of Canwick in Lincolnshire, professor of botany in the university of Oxford; by her he had an only daughter, who died an infant. His second wife died at Twyford Lodge, Maresfield, Sussex, on 16 Sept. 1820, aged 77.

Sewell died intestate, and was succeeded in the possession of Ottershaw Park and the manors of Aden, Stannards, and Fords, in Chobham, Surrey, by his eldest son, Thomas Bailey Heath Sewell, who died on 19 Oct. 1803, and was buried at Chobham. Sewell's third daughter, Frances Maria, was married to Matthew Lewis, deputy secretary at war, on 22 Feb. 1773, and became the mother of Matthew Gregory Lewis [q. v.], better known as Monk Lewis.

Sewell hardly seems to have shone in parliamentary life. Though no speech of his is to be found in the volumes of 'Parliamentary History,' a story is told that during one of the debates in the House of Commons in 1764 on Wilkes's arrest Sewell supported the adjournment of the question for three days because 'it would enable him to look into the authorities, and give a decided opinion on the subject, which he was, at present, unable to do.' When the debate was resumed, Sewell, who appeared according to his custom in his bag-wig, said that 'he had that morning turned the whole matter over in his mind as he lay upon his pillow, and, after ruminating and considering a great deal, he could not help declaring that he was of the same opinion that he was before.' Upon which Charles Townshend exclaimed that 'he was very sorry to observe that what the right honourable gentleman had found in his nightcap he had lost in his periwig' (*Law and Lawyers*, 1840, ii. 8).

[Foss's Judges of England, 1864, viii. 366–8; Lord Campbell's Lives of the Lord Chancellors, 1857, vii. 130, 132, 197–8, 201; Life of Lord Kenyon, 1873, pp. 102, 135; Life and Correspondence of M. G. Lewis, 1839, i. 6–7; Manning and Bray's Surrey, 1804–14, i. 498, iii. 196, 198, 201, 224; Brayley and Britton's Surrey, 1850, ii. 161–2, 225; Bloxam's Magdalen College Register, vi. 228; Townsend's Calendar of Knights, 1828, p. 53; Gent. Mag. 1754, p. 142, 1769 p. 55, 1773 pp. 103, 154, 1774 p. 390, 1784 i. 237–8, 1820, ii. 377; H. S. Smith's Parliaments of England, i. 69, 108, iii. 84; Official Return of Lists of Members of Parliament, ii. 112, 134; Haydn's Book of Dignities, 1890; Notes and Queries, 1st ser. viii. 388, 521, 621, ix. 86, 2nd ser. x. 396, 3rd ser. ii. 157, 177, 4th ser. vii. 305, 376, 7th ser. xii. 269, 8th ser. viii. 507, ix. 138, 178, 248.]

G. F. R. B.

SEWELL, WILLIAM (1804–1874), divine and author, born at Newport, Isle of Wight, on 23 Jan. 1804, and baptised on 13 Jan. 1807, was second son of Thomas Sewell of Newport, and brother of Henry Sewell [q. v.], premier of New Zealand, of Richard Clarke Sewell [q. v.], of Elizabeth Missing Sewell, a well-known novelist, and of the Rev. Dr. James Edward Sewell, warden of New College, Oxford, since 1860. William was a commoner at Winchester, and, matriculating from Merton College, Oxford, on 4 Nov. 1822, was postmaster there from 1822 to 1827. He took first-class honours in classics, and graduated B.A. 1827, M.A. 1829, B.D. 1841, and D.D. 1857. The chancellor's prize for the English essay fell to him in 1828, and that for the Latin essay in 1829. The former prize essay, 'The Domestic Manners of the Greeks and Romans compared with those of the most refined States of Europe,' was printed in the 'Oxford English Prize Essays,' vol. iv. 1836. On 30 June 1827 he was elected a Petrean fellow of Exeter College, in 1830 he was ordained to the curacy of Whippingham in the Isle of Wight, and on 10 July 1831 was appointed to the perpetual curacy of St. Nicholas in Carisbrooke Castle, a small sinecure which he held till his death. He was tutor of his college from 1831 to 1853, and became librarian in 1833, sub-rector and divinity reader in 1835, and dean in 1839. In 1832 he was an examiner in the classical schools, and from 1836 to 1841 Whyte's professor of moral philosophy. The substance of his lectures he recast and published in two volumes, called 'Christian Morals and Christian Politics,' which formed part of the 'Englishman's Library' in 1840. He established a Moral Philosophy Club, to meet at the members' rooms in succession.

Sewell was an early friend of Pusey, Newman, and Keble, and in the earlier stages of the tractarian movement was one of the ablest men of the party. But the movement's romanising tendencies alienated him from it, and after the issue of 'Tract XC' he withdrew from all association with it. He explained his position in a published letter to Pusey (1841), and in March 1842 more clearly defined it in an article in the 'Quarterly Review' on 'The Divines of the Seventeenth Century,' which helped to stem the progress of the Tractarians in the direction of Rome.

Sewell was long one of the most prominent men in Oxford, writing and speaking on every public question. Newman declared that he had a word ready for everything; Hampden took the less flattering view that he was 'namby-pamby without solidity, consistency, and formation.' James Bowling Mozley says, under date of 15 March 1834: 'We had a splendid sermon from Sewell of Exeter College at the Assizes, on the origin of evil; not one person in the church understood one sentence of it.'

As a college tutor Sewell fully deserved his wide reputation. His lectures—chiefly on Plato and Bishop Butler—were discursive but always interesting (cf. Samuel Clark, *Memorials*, 1878, pp. 135, 147–9). On the appearance of J. A. Froude's 'Nemesis of Faith' in 1849, Sewell, after reading it, declaimed to his class next morning (27 Feb.) on the wickedness of the book; and when one of the pupils, Arthur Blomfield (afterwards rector of Beverston, Gloucestershire), admitted, in reply to Sewell's inquiry, that he possessed a copy, Sewell seized it, tore it in pieces, and threw it on the hall fire (*Daily News*, 2 May 1892). This incident gave rise to a commonly received report that Froude's 'Nemesis of Faith' was publicly burnt by the authorities of the university. He had advanced views in regard to university reform, but in all his schemes of reform, which he defended in numerous pamphlets, he sought to perpetuate the predominance of the church of England. After a visit to Ireland in 1842, he, in conjunction with a small body of friends, founded St. Columba's College, Rathfarnham, near Dublin, which was opened on 26 March 1843, to furnish the gentry of Ireland with a school on the model of Eton. Sewell was one of the managers, but he had no capacity for business, and by 1847 had involved the college in a debt of 25,000*l*. This sum Lord J. G. Beresford, archbishop of Armagh, paid on the condition that Sewell relinquished his connection with St. Columba. In 1847 he issued 'Journal of a Residence at the College of St. Columba in Ireland.

On his return to England Sewell helped to found St. Peter's College, Radley, near Oxford, a school for boys, which was opened on 6 March 1847, and was conducted on mediæval principles; the fasts of the church were strictly kept, and full services held in the chapel night and morning. He himself was warden from 1852 to 1862, by which time he had accumulated a debt of 28,000*l*. John Gellibrand Hubbard [q. v.] lent that sum to the college, and under improved management the loan was paid off. He published 'A Year's Sermons to Boys preached in the Chapel of St. Peter's College, Radley,' 2 vols. 1854–69.

Sewell thus involved himself irretrievably in debt. His fellowship at Exeter College

was sequestrated, and in 1862 he went abroad to avoid his creditors. He took up his residence at Deutz on the Rhine, opposite Cologne, and employed himself in examining critically the text of the New Testament. The result was a work published in 1878, after his death, entitled 'The Microscope of the New Testament.' In 1870, by the aid of friends, he was enabled to return to England. Until 1874 he resided chiefly in the Isle of Wight. He died at the residence of his nephew, the Rev. Arthur Sewell, at Litchford Hall, near Manchester, on 14 Nov. 1874, and was buried in St. Andrew's churchyard at Blackley. He was unmarried. A window inscribed to his memory is in Exeter College Chapel.

Apart from controversial pamphlets and many collected volumes of sermons (in 1831, 1832, 1835, and 1850), his chief published works were: 1. 'An Essay on the Cultivation of the Intellect by the Study of Dead Languages,' 1830. 2. 'Hora Philologica; or Conjectures on the Structure of the Greek Language,' 1830. 3. 'A Clergyman's Recreation; or Sacred Thoughts in Verse,' 1831; 2nd edit. 1835. 4. 'An Introduction to the Dialogues of Plato,' 1841. 5. 'Christian Politics,' 1844. 6. 'The Plea of Conscience for seceding from the Catholic Church to the Romish Schism in England,' 1845; 3rd ed. 1845. 7. 'The Nation, the Church, and the University of Oxford,' 1849. 8. 'Christian Vestiges of Creation,' 1861.

Sewell also wrote four novels: 'Uncle Peter's Fairy Tales,' 1844; 'Hawkstone, a Tale of and for England,' 1845; 'Uncle Peter's Tale for the Nineteenth Century,' 1868; and 'The Giant, a Fairy Tale,' 1870. He edited several of the novels written by his sister, Elizabeth Missing Sewell (1844–1850). To the 'Quarterly Review' he contributed fifteen articles, chiefly on theological subjects. He published translations of the 'Agamemnon,' 1846; the 'Georgics,' 1846, another edition, 1854; the 'Odes and Epodes of Horace,' 1850. He left in manuscript 'Lexilogus, a Collection of Greek Words,' 4 vols.; 'Lectures on Inspiration;' 'The Microscope of the Diatessaron;' 'The Diatessaron, arranged,' 2 vols.; 'The Psalms of David in Verse;' 'The Iliad of Homer translated,' 2 vols; 'The Odyssey of Homer translated,' 2 vols.

[The Microscope of the New Testament, 1878, pref. pp. v–xii; Some Last Words of W. Sewell, with a prefatory notice by his sister, 1876; Liddon's Life of E. B. Pusey, 1893–4, i. 293, 305, ii. 204, 287, 289, iii. 137, 174, 248; Mozley's Reminiscences, ii. 23–8 (1882); Letters of J. B. Mozley, 1885, pp. 40, 71; Burgon's Twelve Good Men, 1891, pp. 158, 187; G. D. Boyle's Recollections, 1895, pp. 105–8; Stokes's Life of George Petrie, 1868, pp. 358–60; Quarterly Review, April 1891, pp. 399, 403–4; Reminiscences of Oxford, ed. Couch (Oxford Hist. Soc.), 1892, p. 351; English Churchman, 19 Nov. 1874, p. 560; Guardian, 18 Nov. 1874, p. 1480; Times, 16 Nov. 1874 p. 7, 18 Nov. p. 11; Boase's Rectors and Fellows of Exeter College (Oxford Hist. Soc.), 1894, pp. cxliii–cl, 174; information from the Rev. H. Edmund Sharpe, vicar of Newport, Isle of Wight.] G. C. B.

SEXBURGA, SEAXBURG, or SEXBURH (*d.* 673), queen of the West-Saxons, the wife of King Cenwalh, Kenwealh, or Coinwalch [q. v. for Sexburga's succession], succeeded to the throne after her husband's death, and reigned for one year. William of Malmesbury says that her husband appointed her to succeed him, that she ruled with masculine energy, collecting armies, keeping her troops under control, and defying her enemies, and that her one year's reign was ended by her death. The St. Albans writer, whose work was accepted by Wendover and Paris, relates that at the end of a year she was banished from the kingdom by the nobles, who would not fight under the leadership of a woman. Bishop Stubbs notes that in reading William of Malmesbury's account of her, it should be remembered that the historian had 'a special regard' for her husband Cenwalh, and observes that possibly both Malmesbury and the St. Albans writer represent the ideas of the age of the empress Matilda. There was no reason why in the seventh century it should be thought unseemly that a queen should reign.

[Bede's Hist. Eccl. iv. c. 12; A.-S. Chron. an. 672; Ethelwerd, c. 7, ap. Mon. Hist. Brit. p. 506; Henry of Huntingdon, p. 65 (Rolls Ser.); Will. of Malmesbury's Gesta Regum, i. sect. 32; Flor. Wig. i. 273, Rog. Wend. i. 162 (both in Engl. Hist. Soc.); Dict. Chr. Biogr. art. 'Sexburga' (1), by Bishop Stubbs.] W. H.

SEXBURGA, SAINT (*d.* 699?), queen of Kent and second abbess of Ely, was the eldest daughter of Anna (*d.* 654), king of the East-Angles. Her sisters were St. Etheldreda [q.v.], first abbess of Ely; Ethelburga, abbess of Faremontier in Brie; and St. Witburga, a nun of Ely. Saethryd, abbess of Faremontier, was her half-sister. She married Earconbert, king of Kent, about 640, the year of his succession to his father Eadbald [q. v.], and lived with him twenty-four years until his death in 664, having by him two sons, Egbert (*d.* 673?) and Hlotheri or Lothar (*d.* 685?), both successively kings of Kent, and two daughters, St. Earcongota, a nun of Fare-

montier, and St. Ermenhilda or Eormenhild, queen of Wulfhere, king of Mercia, and abbess of Ely. After her husband's death she is said to have ruled for a time for her son Egbert. She founded a monastery for nuns in the isle of Sheppey, it is said for, or in memory of, her husband, which came to be called Minster, and, having received the veil from Archbishop Theodoric, ruled it as abbess. After a while—about 675—she entered the monastery of Ely, desiring to be instructed by her sister Etheldreda, then abbess there. The Ely historian records a speech that she is supposed to have made to her nuns in Sheppey, bidding them farewell, and appointing her daughter Ermenhilda to succeed her as abbess. On the death of Etheldreda, probably in 679, Sexburga was chosen to succeed her. Sixteen years later, in 695, she built a shrine for Etheldreda's body, which she laid in a white marble coffin, procured from the ruined city of Grantchester. After a long life she died, and was buried near her sister, the supposed year of her death being 699, and her day in the calendar 6 July. Her daughter Ermenhilda succeeded her as abbess, being herself succeeded at Sheppey by her own daughter, St. Werburga or Werburh [q. v.] The life of Sexburga, printed in Capgrave's 'Nova Legenda' and the 'Acta Sanctorum,' is taken from Cotton. MS. Tib. E. 1. There is another Latin life in a twelfth-century manuscript, Cotton MS. Calig. A. viii., and a fragment of an English life of two folios in Lambeth MS. 427.

[Bede's Hist. Eccl. iii. c. 8, iv. cc. 19, 22, Flor. Wig. i. 261 (both in Engl. Hist. Soc.); Liber Elien. i. cc. 18, 25–6, 28, 35 (Angl. Chr. Soc.); A. SS. Bolland. Jul. ii. 346–9; Hardy's Cat. of Mat. i. 360–2 (Rolls Ser.); Montalembert's Monks of the West, iv. 401–4, ed. Gasquet; Dict. Chr. Biogr. art. 'Sexburga' (2), by Bishop Stubbs.] W. H.

SEXBY, EDWARD (*d.* 1658), conspirator, was a native of Suffolk, and entered Cromwell's regiment of horse about 1643. In 1647, being still a private in the same regiment, now commanded by Fairfax, he took a leading part in the movement against disbanding the army, and was one of the three soldiers charged with the letter from the army to their generals which Skippon brought before the House of Commons on 30 April 1647 (Rushworth, vi. 474; *Clarke Papers*, i. 430). He became one of the leaders of the 'agitators,' and acted as their chief spokesman in the debates of the army council in October 1647 (*ib.* i. 83). His speeches were very vigorous and effective, opposing all compromise with the king and demanding the immediate establishment of manhood suffrage (*ib.* i. 227, 322, 329, 377).

Sexby appears to have left the army about the close of 1647, but happening to be present at the battle of Preston, with a letter from John Lilburne to Cromwell, he was entrusted with a despatch from Cromwell to the speaker announcing his victory. The House of Commons voted him 100*l.* as a reward (*ib.* ii. 254; *Commons' Journals*, v. 680). In February 1649 parliament entrusted him with the duty of arresting the Scottish commissioners, for which he was ordered 20*l.* (*ib.* vi. 152). He was also appointed governor of Portland, is henceforth described as Captain Sexby, and was more than once charged with commissions requiring courage and dexterity (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1649-50, pp. 135, 155, 531). In June 1650, at Cromwell's suggestion, he was charged to raise a foot regiment for service in Ireland, but when completed it was ordered to Scotland. Sexby, who held the rank first of lieutenant-colonel and then of colonel, took part with his regiment in the siege of Tantallon Castle in February 1651 (*ib.* 1650, pp. 206, 332, 352; *Mecurius Politicus*, p. 621). In June 1651 he was tried by court-martial for detaining the pay of his soldiers, and lost his commission (*Clarke MSS.*)

A few months later Cromwell and the intelligence committee of the council of state sent Sexby on a mission to France. He was charged to give an account of the political condition and the temper of the people. He negotiated with the Prince de Conti and the Frondeurs of Guienne, to whom he proposed an adaptation of the 'Agreement of the People' as the basis of a republican constitution for France, and with the Huguenots of Languedoc. One of his emissaries was captured, and Sexby had a narrow escape himself, if Ludlow is to be trusted (Ludlow, *Memoirs*, i. 415; *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1654, p. 160; *Journal of Joachim Hane*, 1896, pp. xiv–xvii). He returned to England about August 1653, and on 23 Aug. 1654 was ordered 1,000*l.* for his expenses during his mission.

Sexby was eager for an Anglo-Spanish league against France, and hoped to obtain the command of the levies which it was proposed to send to the support of the Frondeurs. Cromwell's abandonment of the projects against France, and still more his assumption of the protectorate, caused a breach between Sexby and the Protector. The former allied himself with the disaffected republicans, disseminated pamphlets against the Protector, and took a leading part in the schemes for a joint rising of royalists and

levellers in the spring of 1655 (THURLOE, vi. 694, 829). In February 1655 Cromwell's officers in the west of England were in hot pursuit of Sexby, but he succeeded in escaping to Flanders (*ib.* iii. 162, 165, 195). At Antwerp he made the acquaintance of Colonel Robert Phelips (son of Sir Robert Phelips [q. v.]) and other royalists, to whom he described Cromwell as a false, perjured rogue, and affirmed that, if proper security for popular liberties were given, he would be content to see Charles II restored (*Nicholas Papers*, i. 299, 340, 347).

Sexby also sought an interview with Count Fuensaldanha, the governor of the Spanish Netherlands, to whom he revealed all he knew of Cromwell's foreign plans and of the expedition to the West Indies, and from whom he asked a supply of money and the assistance of some of the Irish troops in the Spanish service in order to raise an insurrection in England. Fuensaldanha sent Sexby to Spain that his proposals might be considered by the Spanish council (June 1655), and he returned again about December with supplies of money and conditional promises of support (*Clarendon State Papers*, iii. 271). Father Peter Talbot [q. v.], who acted as interpreter in Sexby's dealings with Fuensaldanha, communicated his proposals to Charles II, urging the king to come to an agreement with Spain, and to utilise Sexby and his party (*ib.* iii. 281). In December 1656 Sexby presented a paper of proposals to Don John of Austria, offering to raise a civil war in England, and requesting a thousand Irish foot and four hundred horses (for which he undertook to provide troopers). The royalists were to assist, but he stipulated 'that no mention be made of the king before such time Cromwell be destroyed, and till then the royalists that shall take arms shall speak of nothing but the liberty of the country, according to the declaration whereof I have spoken with the King of England's ministers' (*ib.* iii. 315).

The Protector's government through its agents abroad was kept well informed of Sexby's negotiations with Spain, and a number of his intercepted letters, written under the assumed names of 'Brookes' and 'Hungerford,' were in its hands (THURLOE, *State Papers*, v. 37, 349, vi. 1, 33, 182). In Cromwell's speech at the opening of his second parliament (17 Sept. 1656), he informed them of Sexby's plot, terming him 'a wretched creature, an apostate from religion and all honesty' (CARLYLE, *Cromwell's Speech*, p. 5). The assassination of Cromwell was an essential preliminary to the success of the rising. Sexby sent over 'strange engines' for the purpose, but his agents missed their opportunities, and in January 1657 an attempt to fire Whitehall led to the arrest of their leader, Miles Sindercombe [q. v.] (*Cromwelliana*, p. 160; *Clarendon State Papers*, iii. 325, 327). Still confident, Sexby devised new plots. 'Be not discouraged, he wrote to Father Talbot, 'for so long as Sexby lives there is no danger but Cromwell shall have his hands full, and I hope his heart ere long, for I have more irons in the fire for Cromwell than one. . . . Either I or Cromwell must perish' (*ib.* iii. 331, 335, 339). Under the name of William Allen he drew up an apology for tyrannicide, entitled 'Killing no Murder,' which he ironically dedicated to Cromwell himself, printed in Holland, and sent over to England about May 1657 (*ib.* iii. 343; THURLOE, vi. 311). In June he followed his pamphlet to England, to concert measures for carrying out its principles, and on 24 July, just as he was embarking for Flanders again, he was arrested 'in a mean habit disguised as a countryman' (*Cromwelliana*, p. 168; *Clarendon State Papers*, iii. 357, 362). He died in the Tower on 13 Jan. 1658, 'having been awhile distracted in his mind and long sick' (*Cromwelliana*, p. 169).

'Killing no Murder' was answered by Michael Hawke of the Inner Temple in 'Killing is Murder and no Murder,' 1657, 4to. Sexby's authorship of the former is proved by internal evidence, and by his own confession made in the Tower (THURLOE, vi. 560). Captain Silas Titus [q. v.], who was intimate with Sexby, and may perhaps have given him some assistance in writing it, was, after the Restoration, reputed its author (WOOD, *Athenæ*, iv. 624). It is reprinted in the 'Harleian Miscellany,' ed. Park, iv. 289, and by Professor Henry Morley in his 'Famous Pamphlets.'

[Authorities given in the article.] C. H. F.

SEXRED or **SEXRÆD** (*d.* 626), king of the East-Saxons, was the son of Sebert (*d.* 616?) [q. v.] the first Christian king of the East-Saxons. He refused to accept Christianity, and when he succeeded his father in 616, reigning conjointly with his two brothers, Sæward and another, said on no good authority to have been named Sigebert (BROMTON, ap. *Decem SS.* col. 743), openly practised paganism and gave permission to his subjects to worship their idols. When he and his brothers saw Mellitus (*d.* 624) [q. v.], bishop of London, giving the eucharist to the people in church, they said to him, so it was commonly believed in Bede's time, 'Why do you not offer us the white bread

that you used to give to our father Saba, for so they called him, and which you still give to the people?' Mellitus answered that if they would be washed in the font they should have it, but that otherwise it would do them no good. But they said that they would not enter the font, for they did not need washing but refreshment. The matter was often explained to them by the bishop, who persisted in refusing their request. At last they grew angry and banished him from their kingdom. Not long afterwards they went out to fight with the West-Saxons, and were slain, their army being almost wholly destroyed (Bede, *Hist. Eccl.* ii. c. 5). This battle was fought against Ceawlin [q. v.] and Cwichelm, the West-Saxon kings who invaded their territory with a larger force than the East-Saxons could muster in or about 626. They were succeeded by Sæward's son Sigebert the Little.

[Mon. Hist. Brit. pp. 629, 637; Henry of Huntingdon, sect. 31, p. 57 (Rolls Ser.); Dict. Chr. Biogr. art. 'Sexred,' by Bishop Stubbs.]

W. H.

SEXTEN, RICHARD (*d.* 1568), physician and divine. [See Argentine, Richard.]

SEYER, SAMUEL (1757–1831), historian of Bristol, born in 1757, was the son of Samuel Seyer (1719?–1776), then master of Bristol grammar school. The elder Seyer, son of a gentleman of Bristol of the same names, was educated at Pembroke College, Oxford, whence he graduated B.A. in 1739 and M.A. in 1742. In 1764 he became rector of St. Michael's, Bristol. He published 'Essays in Scripture Truths' (1771) and other works.

The younger Seyer matriculated at Corpus Christi College, Oxford, on 25 Nov. 1772, and graduated B.A. in 1776 and M.A. in 1780. About 1790 he succeeded John Jones at the Royal Fort school, where for ten years Andrew Crosse [q. v.], the electrician, was among his scholars; Crosse deemed his master narrow-minded and unjust. Other pupils were John Kenyon [q. v.] and William John Broderip [q. v.] In 1813 he became perpetual curate of Horfield, and in 1824 rector of Filton, Gloucestershire.

Following in the footsteps of William Barrett (*d.* 1789) [q. v.], author of the 'History and Antiquities of Bristol,' with whom he was well acquainted, Seyer published in 1812 'Charters and Letters Patent granted to the Town and City of Bristol' (4to). The Latin is printed under an English translation. Seyer was refused access to the originals in the Bristol council-house, and founded his text on a late manuscript in the Bodleian (Rawlinson 247). He used a translation published in 1736 which was not of much value. In 1821–3 appeared Seyer's 'Memoirs, Historical and Topographical, of Bristol and its Neighbourhood,' with plates, by Edward Blore [q. v.] and others (2 vols. 4to). The work, which brings the narrative down to 1760, incorporated the archives of the Berkeley family and the Bristol calendars. Painstaking and learned, it remains a valuable specimen of local history. Seyer's collections for a second part, on the topography of Bristol, are preserved in manuscript in the Museum Library, Bristol (cf. Hunt, *Bristol*, 1887, p. 189; Ricart, *Kalendar*, Camden Soc., vol. ii.)

Seyer died at Bristol on 25 Aug. 1831. A portrait was engraved by Walker from a painting by Branwhite. Another was painted and engraved by Pether.

Besides his archæological works, Seyer published: 1. 'The Principles of Christianity,' 1796; 1806, 12mo. 2. 'The Syntax of Latin Verbs,' 1798, 8vo. 3. 'Observations on the Causes of Clerical Non-residence, and on the Act of Parliament lately passed for its Prevention,' 1808, 8vo. 4. 'Latium Redivivum: a Treatise on the Modern Use of the Latin Language and the Prevalence of the French; to which is added a Specimen, accommodated to Modern Use,' 1808, 8vo. He also translated into English verse the Latin poem of Vida on Chess.

[Annual Register, 1831 (App. to Chron. p. 254); Memorials of Andrew Crosse, ch. i.; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Prefaces to Seyer's Charters and Memorials; Taylor's Book about Bristol, p. 371; Evans's Cat. Engr. Portraits, Nos. 21, 160, and 9404; notes kindly supplied by William George, esq., of Bristol.]

G. Le G. N.

SEYFFARTH, Mrs. LOUISA (1798–1843), watercolour-painter. [See Sharpe.]

SEYMOUR, Mrs. (*fl.* 1717–1723), actress, is first heard of on 22 Aug. 1717, when, with the summer company at Drury Lane, she played Eugenia in Shadwell's 'Scowrers.' On 17 June 1718, still with the summer company, she was the original Leonora in Savage's 'Love in a Veil.' On 11 July she was Mirtilla in 'Love for Money,' and on 15 Aug. Christiana in 'Love in a Wood.' On 16 Oct. she made, as Lucia in 'Cato,' her first recorded appearance at Lincoln's Inn Fields, Decius being played by Bohemia, better known as Boheme, an actor originally from Southwark Fair, whom subsequently she married. She was also Cynthia in the 'Double Dealer,' Rutland in the 'Unhappy Favourite,' Lady Brute in the 'Provoked Wife,' had a part in 'Platonick Love, or

the Innocent Mistress,' by Mrs. Pix, and was on 16 Jan. 1719 the original Lady Raleigh in Sewell's 'Sir Walter Raleigh,' and on 7 Feb. Violetta in the 'Younger Brother, or the Sham Marquis.' On 29 Feb. 1720 she was the first Eudosia in 'Imperial Captives,' an adaptation by Mottley apparently of the 'Genséric, Roi des Vandales,' of Madame Deshoulières. She was also seen as Desdemona to Quin's Othello, and Marcella in 'Don Quixote.' In 1720–1 she was Queen in Dryden's 'Spanish Friar,' Cordelia, Mrs. Page, Lady Touchwood in the 'Double Dealer,' Cressida, Lady Macduff, Elvira in 'Love makes a Man,' Isabella in 'Measure for Measure,' Queen in 'Richard II,' Hero (presumably) in 'Much Ado about Nothing,' Quisara in the 'Island Princess,' Queen in 'Richard III,' Abra-mulé, Arpasia in 'Tamerlane,' Mrs. Winwife in the 'Artful Husband,' Portia in 'Julius Cæsar,' Lady Outside in 'Woman's a Riddle,' and Annabella in the 'Quaker's Wedding.' Her original parts during this season were a character, presumably Mariana, in 'No Fools like Wits' (the 'Female Virtues' with a new title), 10 Jan. 1721; Lady Meanwell in Odell's 'Chimera,' 19 Jan.; Isabella in the 'Fair Captive,' altered by Mrs. Haywood from Captain Hurst, 4 March; Stratonice in Mottley's 'Antiochus,' 13 April; and Louisa in 'Fatal Extravagance,' by Mitchell or Aaron Hill, 21 April. In 1721–2 she was Amanda in 'Love's Last Shift,' Louisa in 'Love makes a Man,' Monimia in the 'Orphan,' Sylvia in the 'Recruiting Officer,' Almeyda in 'Don Sebastian,' Charlot Welldon in 'Oroonoko,' Mrs. Sullen in the 'Beaux' Stratagem,' Belvidera in 'Venice Preserved,' Portia in the 'Jew of Venice,' Widow Richlove in 'Injured Love,' Lady Dunce in the 'Soldier's Fortune,' Lætitia in the 'Old Bachelor,' Arbella in the 'Committee,' Augusta in the 'History and Fall of Domitian'—a version of the 'Roman Actor' of Massinger—and Tamora in 'Titus Andronicus;' and was the first Hypermnestra in Sturmy's 'Love and Duty' on 22 Jan. 1722, in which character she spoke an indecent epilogue; and Sabrina in 'Hibernia Freed,' by William Philips, on 13 Feb. In her last season, 1722–3, she was Corinna in 'Woman's Revenge,' Queen in 'Hamlet,' Calphurnia in 'Julius Cæsar,' Jocasta in 'Œdipus,' Amaranta in the 'Spanish Curate,' Roxana in the 'Rival Queens,' Teresia in the 'Squire of Alsatia,' and Phædra in 'Phædra and Hippolitus.' On 15 Dec. she was the original Isabella in Sturmy's 'Compromise,' and on 22 Feb. 1723 the original Mariamne in Fenton's play so named.

For her benefit she played, on 2 April 1723, some character, probably Mrs. Brittle, in the 'Amorous Wife.' Shortly afterwards, Genest thinks in Passion week, she married Anthony Boheme. Boheme, who had been a sailor, was, in spite of his straddling gait, reputed a good actor in the second rank. He was highly esteemed in Lear, and played parts so widely different as Mahomet, Julius Cæsar, Shylock, Œdipus, Alexander, Wolsey, Cato, Shallow, Don Quixote, Voltore in 'Volpone,' and Mopus in the 'Cheats.' He appears to have been cut off by a fever about 1730.

Mrs. Boheme's name appears—probably in mistake—as Mrs. Seymour to Mariamne on 15 April. On the 16th, as Mrs. Boheme, late Mrs. Seymour, she played Arbella in the 'Committee.' Under her new name she was, on 23 April, the original Jocasta in the 'Fatal Legacy,' adapted from Racine by a young lady. On 7 June 1723, as Mariamne, was made what is said to have been her last appearance on the stage, from which at the close of the season she retired. Her further career is not to be traced.

Mrs. Seymour was tall and well made, with a pleasing and flexible voice, and an expressive face, which she charged with much passion. Davies says that in a revival of 'Don Carlos' at Lincoln's Inn Fields, 'Boheme's action in Philip (Betterton's part), and Mrs. Seymour by her excellence in the Queen, rendered their names celebrated, and contributed to establish a company struggling with difficulties' (*Dramatic Miscellanies*, iii. 179–80). Her reputation was also established as Belvidera. Ryan, says Davies, 'was so strongly prejudiced in the opinion of Mrs. Seymour's merit, that . . . he assured me he thought her superior to all the actresses he had ever seen' (*ib.* iii. 247–8). Davies judges 'too partial' the superiority awarded her over Mrs. Oldfield and Mrs. Porter, but holds that she must have had a large amount of merit to engage so strongly Ryan's judgment. Short as was her career, it was fully occupied, proving that she must have had great variety and range. In her later years she grew bulky in person. Her portrait as Mariamne, by Vertue, with Boheme as Herod, accompanies the second edition of Fenton's tragedy.

[Genest's Account of the English Stage; Davies's Dramatic Miscellanies; Victor's Hist. of the Theatres of London and Dublin; Doran's Annals of the Stage, ed Lowe.] J. K.

SEYMOUR, AARON CROSSLEY HOBART (1789–1870), hymn-writer, elder brother of Michael Hobart Seymour [q. v.],

was the son of John Crossley Seymour, vicar of Caherelly, diocese of Cashel, who married the eldest daughter of Edward Wight, rector of Meelick, co. Limerick, a member of an old Surrey family. He was born in co. Limerick on 19 Dec. 1789, and received most of his education at home. He was drawn in early life into the religious group formed by Selina Hastings, countess of Huntingdon [q. v.], whose biography he afterwards wrote. His first work was 'Vital Christianity,' exhibited in a series of letters on the most important subjects of religion, addressed to young persons; it appeared in 1810; a second edition was published in 1819. This work contains all his hymns, some of which are highly popular. In 1816 Seymour published a memoir of Charlotte Brooke [q. v.], prefixed to an edition of her 'Reliques of Irish Poetry.' His 'Life and Times of Selina, Countess of Huntingdon,' appeared in 1839. About 1850 he went to reside in Italy, and spent many years in Naples. In 1869 he retired to Bristol, and died there in October 1870. He took a deep interest in hymnology, and assisted Joseph Miller in preparing his 'Singers and Songs of the Church.'

[Miller's Singers and Songs of the Church, 2nd edit.; Julian's Dict. of Hymnology; Allibone's Dict. of Engl. Lit.; Brit. Mus. Cat.] D. J. O'D.

SEYMOUR, CATHERINE, Countess of Hertford (1538?–1568), probably born in 1538, was the second of the three daughters of Henry Grey, duke of Suffolk [q. v.], and his wife, Frances Brandon, her elder sister being Lady Jane Grey [see Dudley, Lady Jane], and her younger Lady Mary Keys [q. v.] She was thus great-granddaughter of Henry VII, and after the execution of her sister Jane stood, according to Henry VIII's will, next in succession to the crown after Queen Mary and Queen Elizabeth. Catherine received the same elaborate education as her sister Jane, and shared in her graces and accomplishments. On Whit Sunday, 21 May 1553, she was married to Henry Herbert, afterwards second earl of Pembroke [q. v.], whose father was one of the Duke of Northumberland's chief supporters. The marriage does not seem to have been consummated, and, after the execution of Catherine's sister, Lady Jane Grey, and of her father the Duke of Suffolk, Pembroke found it convenient to dissolve the compromising alliance, and Catherine was divorced. On the accession of Elizabeth she was given a place at court, but her misfortunes were soon renewed by her marriage with Edward Seymour, earl of Hertford [q. v.]

The attachment between her and Seymour had begun during Mary's reign, while Catherine was living under the care of the Duchess of Somerset, and both Catherine and her mother, the Duchess of Suffolk, regarded Seymour with favour (*Harl. MS.* 6286). At first they hoped to obtain Elizabeth's assent to their marriage through the intervention of the Duchess of Suffolk, but the latter died in December 1559, and, despairing probably of the queen's consent, they were secretly married at the bridegroom's house in Cannon Row, Westminster, in November or December 1560. By an act of 1536, it was treason for a person of royal blood to marry without the sovereign's consent. The arrangements for Lady Catherine's marriage were made with the help of the bridegroom's sister, Lady Jane Seymour, and the ceremony was performed by a priest whose identity was never revealed or discovered. During the following summer the countess's condition laid her open to suspicion, and by August the Duchess of Somerset had heard of her marriage with Hertford. In the same month she was sent to the Tower and questioned on the subject, but refused to confess (*Parker Corresp.* p. 149). Hertford was summoned from Paris, and joined his wife in the Tower on 5 Sept. On the 24th she gave birth to her eldest son, Edward, lord Beauchamp [see under Seymour, Edward, Earl of Hertford]. The news roused Elizabeth to fury, and henceforth she pursued the unhappy countess with vindictive hostility. A commission was appointed, with Parker at its head, to 'judge' of her 'infamous conversation' and 'pretended marriage.' The earl and the countess were examined separately in the Tower; their evidence agreed on all essential points, but they were unable to produce the priest who performed the ceremony, or any documentary evidence to support their statements, and on 12 May 1562 the commission declared that there had been no marriage (see a minute account of its proceedings in *Harl. MS.* 6286). According to Dugdale, 'the validity of this marriage being afterwards tried at common law, the minister who married them being present, and other circumstances agreeing, the jury found it a good marriage;' but this statement lacks corroboration, though Catherine was generally styled Countess of Hertford (see Bedford, *Hereditary Right*, p. 197; Luders, *Right of Succession to the Crown in the Reign of Elizabeth*; Bailey, *Succession to the English Crown*, 1879, pp. 179-82; Hallam, *Const. Hist.* i. 127–9, 289–92). Meanwhile the orders to keep the pair separate in the Tower were not strictly carried out, and the birth of a second son, Thomas, on 11 Feb. 1562–3, was followed by further

measures of severity against Hertford. In August, however, the countess was removed from the Tower to the custody of her uncle, Lord John Grey, at Pirgo, Essex, in consequence of the plague; and she would probably have remained in comparatively comfortable seclusion had it not been for a revival of the discussion of her claims to the succession.

Her importance in this regard had been already illustrated in 1560 by a scheme formed by Philip of Spain for carrying off and marrying her, with the object of asserting her claim in preference to Elizabeth's, on the ground that the latter was a bastard (*Cal. Hatfield MSS.* i. 279; Wright, *Elizabeth*, i. 7, 8). In 1563 John Hales (*d.* 1571) [q. v.] wrote a pamphlet (extant in *Harl. MS.* 537) maintaining the validity of the countess's marriage against the decision of the commission; he also procured 'sentences and councils of lawyers from beyond seas' in support of the same opinion. These proceedings came to the knowledge of the government in April 1564, which believed that Hales had been instigated by Francis Newdigate, second husband to the Duchess of Somerset, in whose keeping Hertford then was. The discovery caused some commotion, which became known as the *tempestas Halesiana* (Ellis, *Original Letters*, 2nd ser. ii. 285; *Hatfield MSS.* i. 294–6). As a result, Hertford and the countess were again committed to the Tower before the end of the year. The countess remained in confinement for the rest of her life, but for the benefit of her health was allowed to visit Cockfield Hall, the country house of Sir Owen Hopton, lieutenant of the Tower. Her repeated and pathetic appeals to be allowed to join her husband met with no response, and she died at Cockfield on 27 Jan. 1567–8 (see an account of her death in *Harl. MS.* xxxix. f. 380, printed in Ellis, *Original Letters*, 2nd ser. vol. ii.) She was buried in Salisbury Cathedral, where there is an inscription to her memory (with a wrong date of death, *Epitaphs in Salisbury Cathedral*, 1825, p. 36; cf. *Wilts Archæological Mag.* xv. 153).

[Besides authorities quoted in the text, and under art. Seymour, Edward, Earl of Hertford, see Craik's Romance of the Peerage, ii. 260–300; and Ellis's Original Letters, 2nd ser. vol. ii. passim.] A. F. P.

SEYMOUR, CHARLES, sixth Duke of Somerset (1662–1748), born on 12 Aug. 1662, was youngest son of Charles, second baron Seymour of Trowbridge (*d.* 1665), and fourth son by his father's second wife, Elizabeth, daughter of William Alington, first baron Alington. The father was eldest son and heir of Francis, first baron Seymour of Trowbridge [q. v.], younger brother of William, second duke of Somerset [q.v.] Charles's elder brother Francis, who was born on 17 Jan. 1657, not only succeeded his father as third Baron Seymour of Trowbridge, but became fifth Duke of Somerset on the death, in 1675, of his cousin John, fourth duke; he was murdered at Lerici, near Genoa, on 20 April 1678. He was said to have offered an affront in the church of the Augustinians at Lerici to a lady of rank, whereupon the latter's husband, Horatio Botti, shot the duke at the door of his inn. The murdered man's uncle, Lord Alington, demanded satisfaction of the republic, but Botti escaped, and his effigy only was hung by the Genoese.

Charles, who had recently entered at Trinity College, Cambridge, thus succeeded to the dukedom; but it was to his marriage he owed all his wealth and at least half of his importance. His wife, Elizabeth Percy, born on 26 Jan. 1667, was the only surviving daughter and sole heiress of Josceline, eleventh and last earl of Northumberland. At the age of four she succeeded to the honours and estates of the house of Percy, holding in her own right six of the oldest baronies in the kingdom, namely Percy, Lucy, Poynings, Fitz-Payne, Bryan, and Latimer. She was brought up by her grandmother, the dowager countess [see under Percy, Algernon, tenth Earl], who in February 1679 refused her ward's hand to Charles II for his son, the Duke of Richmond [see Lennox, Charles, first Duke], and a few weeks later bestowed the heiress upon Henry Cavendish, earl of Ogle, a sickly boy of fifteen, heir of Henry, second duke of Newcastle. The victim's great-aunt, 'Sacharissa,' found the bridegroom the ugliest and 'saddest creature.' However, he took the name of Percy, and it was arranged that he should travel for two years. Before a year had elapsed he died, and the old countess lost no time in arranging a fresh match between her ward and (by way of contrast) a well-battered rake, Thomas Thynne [q. v.] of Longleat in Wiltshire, familiarly known as 'Tom of Ten Thousand.' Thynne was formally married to Lady Ogle in the summer of 1681, but immediately after the wedding the bride of fourteen fled for protection to Lady Temple at The Hague, and Thynne was murdered in Pall Mall by hired assassins on 12 Feb. 1681–2, at the instigation of Count Charles Konigsmark, who had been a rival suitor for the Countess of Ogle. Some three months after Thynne's death the countess, who was now fifteen, consented to regard the Duke

of Somerset in the light of a suitor, and on 30 May 1682 they were married, the duke having previously agreed to assume the names and arms of Percy; but from this agreement he was released when his wife came of age. Besides the estates and the territorial influence of the Percys, Somerset thus became master of Alnwick Castle, Petworth, Syon House, and Northampton, better known by its later title of Northumberland House in the Strand.

Somerset was appointed a gentleman of the bedchamber in 1683, was installed K.G. on 8 April 1684, and was second mourner at Charles II's funeral. His handsome figure appeared to advantage in pageants of this character, for which he showed an extraordinary predilection, taking a chief part at the funerals of Mary, William III, Anne, and George I, and bearing the orb at four coronations. His wife was chief mourner at the funeral of Mary. On 2 Aug. 1685 he was appointed colonel of the queen's dragoons (now 3rd hussars), a regiment formed out of some troops specially raised to cope with Monmouth's rebellion. In July 1687 James assigned to Somerset as first lord of the bedchamber the duty of introducing at St. James's the papal nuncio d'Adda, whom James was determined to receive publicly in his official character. Somerset objected to the task on the ground that its performance would subject him to a heavy penalty under the law of the land. 'I would have you fear me as well as the law,' said James. 'I cannot fear you,' was the answer; 'as long as I commit no offence I am secure in your majesty's justice.' He lost his place and his regiment, but his spirited conduct raised him high in the estimation of the people.

Somerset was 'one of those in arms' with the Prince of Orange in 1688, but he took a much less conspicuous part than his kinsman, Sir Edward Seymour [q. v.] In 1689 he was elected chancellor of Cambridge University (he was incorporated D.C.L. at Oxford in August 1702). He succeeded Halifax as speaker of the lords in 1690, and was one of the regents in July to November 1701. William looked coldly upon him, but with Anne he was a prime favourite. When, as princess, she had been summarily ejected from the cockpit in April 1692, and the courtiers were forbidden to countenance her, Somerset had caused her to be warmly welcomed at Syon House (cf. *London Gazette*, No. 2758). By her influence he was made in 1702 master of the horse, and in 1706 one of the commissioners for the union with Scotland. In December 1703 he was sent to Portsmouth to welcome the Archduke Charles as king of Spain, and figured prominently in the magnificent ceremonial devised for the occasion. He supported Marlborough in the ministerial crisis of February 1708; but Marlborough thought that the mastership of the horse was fully commensurate with Somerset's abilities, and ignored his claims to further advancement, being at some pains to explain to his wife that he never dreamed of employing so witless a person 'in anything that is of any consequence' (*Works*, x. 300). Somerset was consequently driven into the arms of Harley, and, though he was dismayed by the extent of the tory reaction in 1710, he retained his place in the council until August 1711. St. John was at last successful in his ruses to get rid of him, but he still had a large share in the confidence of Anne. His wife, too, despite her extreme coolness towards Harley and Mrs. Masham, remained mistress of the robes and groom of the stole, in which she had succeeded the Duchess of Marlborough in January 1711, and the queen was proof against all the efforts made to remove her. No one worked harder for this object than Swift, who, in December 1711, circulated a cruel lampoon upon the duchess, 'The Windsor Prophecy' (which he afterwards tried to recall). In it she was reproached with red hair ('Beware of carrots from Northumberland') and the murder of Thynne. But the confidante continued, in Swift's words, to 'instil venom into the royal ear.' She certainly aided the Hanoverian interests and influenced her husband in the same direction.

When the queen lay dying, Somerset repaired to the council board, where he had been a stranger for three years, and supported Shrewsbury, Somers, and Argyll in the steps taken to ensure the succession of George I. The new king reinstated him as master of the horse. Two years later, however, upon being refused permission to bail his son-in-law, Sir William Wyndham [q. v.], who was suspected of corresponding with the Pretender, Somerset expressed his indignation in terms which procured his dismissal. Henceforth he devoted himself to ruling his family and estates, and Horace Walpole often cites him as the type of aristocratic arrogance and parental despotism. He became known as 'the proud duke,' and the tradition of his pride is kept alive by the anecdote that, when his second duchess once tapped him with her fan, he remarked, 'Madam, my first duchess was a Percy, and *she* never took such a liberty.' He mulcted his daughter Charlotte of 20,000*l.* of her inheritance for having sat down in his presence. His domestics obeyed him by signs, and, when he

travelled, the country roads were scoured by outriders, whose duty it was to protect him from the gaze of the vulgar. He died at his seat of Petworth, Sussex, on 2 Dec. 1748, and he was buried in Salisbury Cathedral, where a statue by Rysbrack surmounts a clumsy Latin epitaph. The following is Macky's description of 1702, the interpolation being Swift's: 'Of a middle stature, well shaped, a very black complexion, a lover of music and poetry, of good judgement [not a grain, hardly common sense], but by reason of a great hesitation in his speech wants expression.' He appears in history as a well-meaning man of slender understanding. He was a member of the Kit-Cat Club, and the portrait by Kneller, in a full-bottomed wig, with the order of the Garter, has been engraved by Simon, and by Holl for Lodge's 'Portraits,' and others. There are two portraits by Lely of the first duchess, which have often been engraved.

Somerset's first wife died on 23 Nov. 1722, leaving Algernon, earl of Hertford, afterwards seventh duke [see below], two other sons, and three daughters: Elizabeth, who married Henry O'Brien, earl of Thomond; Catharine, who married Sir William Wyndham; and Anne, who married Peregrine Osborne, afterwards duke of Leeds. The duke married, secondly, on 4 Feb. 1725-6, Charlotte, third daughter of Daniel Finch, second earl of Nottingham, by whom he had issue: Frances, who married John Manners, marquis of Granby [q. v.], and Charlotte, who married Heneage Finch, earl of Aylesford. The second duchess died at Sutton Court, Chiswick, on 21 Jan. 1773.

The eldest son, Algernon Seymour, seventh Duke (1684–1750), born 11 Nov. 1684, joined the army under Marlborough at Brussels in May 1708, and bore the despatch to the queen after Oudenarde in the following November. Early next year he became colonel of the 15th foot, was promoted captain and colonel of the 2nd troop of horse-guards in 1715, colonel of the regiment in 1740, general of the horse and governor of Minorca from 1737 to 1742. On the death of his mother, in 1722, Lord Hertford wrongly assumed the title of Baron Percy (cf. G. E. C., *Peerage*); and in 1749, a year after his father's death, he was created Earl of Northumberland. He married in 1713 Frances, eldest daughter and coheir of Henry Thynne (only son and heir of Thomas, first viscount Weymouth). She was a lady of the bedchamber to Queen Caroline, and aspired to the patronage of learning. She corresponded with Henrietta Louisa Fermor, countess of Pomfret [q. v.], and Mrs. Elizabeth Rowe [q. v.] (her letters were edited by William Bingley, 1805, 12mo), entertained Thomson and Shenstone at Alnwick, and in March 1728 was instrumental in procuring the pardon for homicide of Richard Savage [q. v.] Thomson dedicated his poem 'Spring' to her in 1727. She was buried beside her husband, in Westminster Abbey, on 20 July 1754.

Upon the death of the seventh duke, on 7 Feb. 1750, without surviving male issue, a great dispersion of his various titles took place. The barony of Percy went to his daughter, Lady Elizabeth Seymour; the earldom of Northumberland to his son-in-law, Sir Hugh Smithson Percy [q. v.]; the earldom of Egremont (cr. 1749) to his nephew, Sir Charles Wyndham; while a remote cousin, Sir Edward Seymour (1695?–1757), grandson of Sir Edward, the speaker and fourth baronet [q.v.], became eighth duke of Somerset [see under Seymour, Edward Adolphus, eleventh Duke].

[Collins's Peerage, 1779, ii. 469; G. E. C[okayne]'s Complete Peerage, s.v. 'Somerset;' De Fonblanque's House of Percy; Luttrell's Brief Hist. Narration; Evelyn's Diary; Reresby's Diary; Dryden's Works, ed. Scott and Saintsbury; Swift's Works, ed. Scott; Memoirs of the Kit-Cat Club, 1821; Boyer's Annals of Queen Anne; Wentworth's Journal, passim; Marlborough Despatches, ed. Murray, iv. passim; Walpole's Correspondence, ed. Cunningham, vols. i. and ii.; Wyon's Hist. of Queen Anne; Lingard's Hist. of England; Aungier's Syon Monastery, p. 113; Jesse's Court of England, 1688–1760; Craik's Romance of the Peerage; Wheatley and Cunningham's London Past and Present; Burke's Romance of the Peerage, i. 12; Collect. Topogr. et Geneal. v. 346.] T. S.

SEYMOUR, EDWARD, first Earl of Hertford and Duke of Somerset (1506?–1552), the Protector, was the eldest surviving son of Sir John Seymour (1476?–1536) of Wolf Hall, Wiltshire. The Seymours claimed descent from a companion of William the Conqueror, who took his name from St. Maur-sur-Loire in Touraine, and was ancestor of William de St. Maur, who in 1240 held the manors of Penhow and Woundy in Monmouthshire (cf. J. R. Planché in *Journ. Archæol. Assoc.* xiii. 327-8). William's great-grandson, Sir Roger de St. Maur, had two sons: John, whose granddaughter conveyed these manors by marriage into the family of Bowlay of Penhow, who bore the Seymour arms; and Sir Roger (*fl.* 1360), who married Cicely, eldest sister and heir of John de Beauchamp, baron Beauchamp de Somerset (*d.* 1361); she brought to the Seymours the manor of Hache, Somerset,

and her grandson, Roger Seymour, by his marriage with Maud, daughter and heir of Sir William Esturmi or Sturmy, acquired Wolf Hall in Wiltshire. The Protector's father, Sir John, was great-great-grandson of this last Roger. Born about 1476, he succeeded his father in 1492, was knighted by Henry VII for his services against the Cornish rebels at Blackheath in 1497, and was sheriff of Wiltshire in 1508. He was present at the sieges of Tournay and Therouenne in 1513, at the two interviews between Henry VIII and Francis in 1520 and 1532, and died on 21 Dec. 1536. He married Margaret (*d.* 1550), eldest daughter of Sir Henry Wentworth of Nettlested, Suffolk; her grandfather, Sir Philip Wentworth, had married Mary, daughter of John, seventh lord Clifford, whose mother Elizabeth was daughter of Henry Percy ('Hotspur') and great-great-granddaughter of Edward III (*Notes and Queries*, 1st ser. viii. 51–2; *Harl. MS.* 6177). Sir John Seymour had ten children, of whom, John, the eldest, died unmarried on 15 July 1520, as did two other sons, John and Anthony, and a daughter Margery; Edward the Protector; Henry, who took no part in politics, was executor to his mother in 1550, and died in 1578, leaving three sons from whom there is no issue remaining, and seven daughters, from one of whom, Jane, are descended the barons Rodney; Thomas, baron Seymour of Sudeley [q. v.]; Jane Seymour [see JANE]; Elizabeth, who married, first, Sir Anthony Ughtred, secondly, in August 1537, Cromwell's son Gregory, and thirdly William Paulet, first marquis of Winchester [q. v.]; and Dorothy who married Sir Clement Smith (inscription in Bedwyn Magna Church printed in AUBREY, pp. 375–6).

From the inscription on an anonymous portrait at Sudeley (*Cat. Tudor Exhib.* No. 196), Edward appears to have been born about 1506, and is said to have been educated first at Oxford, and then at Cambridge (WOOD, *Athenæ Oxon.* i. 210; COOPER, *Athenæ Cant.* i. 107). In 1514 he was retained as 'enfant d'honneur' to Mary Tudor on her marriage with Louis XII of France. On 15 July 1517 he was associated with his father in a grant of the constableship of Bristol. He was probably with his father in attendance upon Charles V on his visit to England in 1522, as Chapuys afterwards mentioned Seymour as having been 'in Charles's service' (*Letters and Papers*, x. 1069). He joined the expedition of the Duke of Suffolk which landed at Calais on 24 Aug. 1523, and was present at the capture of Bray, Roye, and Montdidier, being knighted by Suffolk at Roye on 1 Nov. In the following year he became an esquire of the king's household. On 12 Jan. 1524–5 he was placed on the commission for the peace in Wiltshire, and in the same year became master of the horse to the Duke of Richmond. In July 1527 he accompanied Wolsey on his embassy to the French king (*Chron. of Calais*, p. 37), and in 1528 was granted some lands of the monasteries dissolved in consequence of Wolsey's visitation. On 25 March 1529 he was made steward of the manors of Henstridge, Somerset, and Charlton, Wiltshire, and in 1530 he received with his brother-in-law, Sir Anthony Ughtred, Wolsey's manors of Kexby, Leppington, and Barthorpe, all in Yorkshire. On 12 Sept. following he was appointed esquire of the body to Henry VIII, who showed him much favour, borrowing from, and occasionally lending, him money (see *Letters and Papers*, vols. iv. v. and vi. passim). In 1532, Seymour and his father accompanied Henry to Boulogne to meet Francis I. In the following year he became involved in a dispute with Arthur Plantagenet, viscount Lisle [q. v.], and his stepson, John Dudley, afterwards duke of Northumberland [q. v.], about some lands in Somerset, which lasted many years, and is the subject of innumerable letters in the Record Office (cf. WOOD, *Letters of Illustrious Ladies*, iii. 41; GAIRDNER, *Letters and Papers*, vols. vii–xii.) In March 1534–5 he was granted various lands in Hampshire belonging to the convent of the Holy Trinity, Christchurch, London, and in the following October Henry VIII visited him at his manor of Elvetham in the same county. In March 1535–6 he was made a gentleman of the privy chamber, and a few days later, with his wife Anne and his sister Jane, was installed in the palace at Greenwich in apartments which the king could reach through a private passage (*Letters and Papers*, x. 601). On 5 June, a week after his sister's marriage to the king, Seymour was created Viscount Beauchamp of Hache, Somerset. Two days later he received a grant of numerous manors in Wiltshire, including Ambresbury, Easton Priory, Chippenham, and Maiden Bradley (one of the seats of the present Duke of Somerset). On 7 July he was made governor and captain of Jersey, and in August chancellor of North Wales. He had livery of his father's lands in the following year, was on 30 Jan. granted the manor of Muchelney, Somerset, and on 22 May sworn of the privy council. In the same month he was on the commission appointed to try Lords Darcy and Hussey for their share in the 'pilgrimage of grace.' On 15 Oct. he carried the Princess

Elizabeth at Edward VI's christening (Wriothesley, *Chron.* i. 68), and three days later was created Earl of Hertford.

The death of Queen Jane was naturally a blow to Hertford's influence, and in the following year he was described as 'young and wise,' but 'of small power' (*Letters and Papers*, xiii. ii. 732). In December he was put on commissions for the trial of the Marquis of Exeter, Lord Montagu, Sir Geoffrey Pole, and others; and in March 1539 he was sent to provide for the defence and fortification of Calais and Guisnes. He returned in April, and on the 16th was granted Chester Place, outside Temple Bar, London. In August Henry VIII and Cromwell spent four days (9–12) with him at Wolf Hall (*Wilts Archæol. Mag.* xv. App. No. iv). In the same month he received a grant of the Charterhouse at Sheen (Wriothesley, *Chron.* i. 105). In December he met Anne of Cleves at Calais, and returned with her to London; he wrote to Cromwell that nothing had pleased him so much as this marriage since the birth of Prince Edward (*Letters and Papers*, xiv. i. 1275).

Cromwell's fall—which, according to the Spanish 'Chronicle of Henry VIII,' Hertford instigated—in the following year did not check Hertford's continuous rise in Henry's favour; and Norfolk, now the most powerful member of the council, sought to purchase his friendship by a marriage between his daughter, the Duchess of Richmond, and Hertford's brother Thomas. Throughout 1540 Hertford took an active part in the proceedings of the council, and on 9 Jan. 1540-1 he was elected a knight of the Garter. A few days later he was sent on a fruitless mission to arrange the boundaries of the English Pale in France with the French commissioners (*Corr. de Marillac*, pp. 257, 266–8; *State Papers*, viii. 510, 523–30). He then proceeded in February to inspect and report on the defences at Calais (*Proc. Privy Council*, ed. Nicolas, vii. 130). During Henry's progress in the north from July to November, Hertford, Cranmer, and Audley had the principal management of affairs in London (*State Papers*, i. 660–90), and in November the earl and the archbishop were the recipients of the charges against Catherine Howard (cf. *Chronicle of Henry VIII*, ed. Hume, 1889, pp. 82–4). In September 1542 Hertford was appointed warden of the Scottish marches. He served there for a few weeks (21 Oct. to 7 Dec.) under Norfolk, but in November he requested to be recalled on the ground that 'the country knew not him, nor he them' (*State Papers*, v. 222), and Rutland took his place. In December Hertford resumed attendance on the king (*ib.* ix. 257). On 28 Dec. he appears as lord high admiral, a post which he almost immediately relinquished in favour of John Dudley, viscount Lisle, and in January 1542-3 he was lord great chamberlain. On 1 April he took an active part in procuring the conviction and imprisonment of Norfolk's son, the Earl of Surrey, for eating flesh in Lent and riotous proceedings (Bapst, *Deux Gentilhommes Poètes*, p. 269). During that year Henry again visited Hertford at Wolf Hall.

Meanwhile in December 1543 the Scots formed a new alliance with France, and declared the treaty with England null and void. On 5 March 1543–4 Hertford was appointed lieutenant-general in the north. He was ordered to proclaim Henry guardian of the infant Scots queen and protector of the realm, and to accuse Cardinal Beaton of causing the war between the two nations (proclamations in *Addit. MS.* 32654, ff. 49, 58). In the middle of April a deputation of Scottish protestants waited on Hertford with a proposal to raise a force to aid in the invasion and assassinate the cardinal; but Hertford declined to assent on his own authority, and sent the deputation on to Henry. At the end of the month his army embarked at Berwick, and on 3 May the fleet arrived in the Firth of Forth. Next day ten thousand men landed at Leith, and Blackness Castle was taken. On the 5th Lord Evers, with four thousand English horse, arrived from Berwick. The provost offered Hertford the keys of Edinburgh if he would allow all who desired to depart with their effects; but the earl demanded unconditional surrender, proclaiming that he had come to punish the Scots 'for their detestable falsehood, to declare and show the force of his highness's sword to all such as would resist him.' The Scots replied defiantly. On the following day Sir Christopher Morris [q. v.] blew in Canongate, and for two days the capital was pillaged without resistance. The English then returned to Leith, seizing the ships in the harbour and lading them with spoil. By the 18th they were back at Berwick, having accomplished no permanent result except further exasperating the Scots and strengthening the French alliance (Hertford's correspondence dealing with this expedition is in *Addit. MS.* 32654).

A month later Hertford returned to London, and on 9 July he was appointed lieutenant of the kingdom under the queen-regent during Henry's absence in France (*State Papers*, i. 765; Rymer, xv. 39–40).

On 13 Aug., however, he joined Henry at Hardelot Castle, near Boulogne, and was present at the capture of that town on 14 Sept. Hertford, indeed, is said to have bribed the French commander De Vervins to surrender the town for a large sum of money (*Mémoires du Maréchal de Vieilleville*, ed. 1822, i. 152–3; Nott, *Surrey's Works*, p. lxix). Five days later Charles V secretly concluded the peace of Crêpy with the French, leaving his English allies still at war, and on 18 Oct. a conference was opened at Calais by the three powers to arrange terms. Hertford was the principal English representative, but no results followed, and on the 26th he and Gardiner were despatched to Brussels to endeavour to extract a definite declaration of policy from the emperor (*State Papers*, x. 63–6, 119–36, 147–50; *Addit. MS.* 25114, ff. 312, 315). After much procrastination, Charles granted them three interviews, the last on 17 Nov.; but their efforts to keep him to the terms of his alliance with England were unavailing, and on the 21st they were recalled (*State Papers*, 202–7 et sqq.) England now made preparations to carry on the war single-handed. On 14 Jan. 1544–5 Hertford was sent to survey the fortifications of Guisnes, and a few days later he took command at Boulogne, which the French made a desperate effort to recapture. On 26 Jan. Marshal De Biez encamped before it with fourteen thousand men, while those at Hertford's command were but half that number. Nevertheless, before dawn on 6 Feb. the English sallied out with four thousand foot and seven hundred horse, and took the French by surprise. A panic seized them, and they fled, leaving their stores, ammunition, and artillery in the hands of the English (Herbert, *Life and Reign of Henry VIII*, ed. 1719, p. 250).

This brilliant exploit rendered Boulogne safe for the time, but the defeat at Ancrum Muir, on 17 Feb., decided Henry to send Hertford once more to the Scottish border. On 2 May he was appointed lieutenant-general in the north in succession to Shrewsbury (Rymer, xv. 72), but, owing to the smallness of his force and lack of supplies, Hertford suggested a postponement of the projected invasion until August. Throughout the summer he remained at or near Newcastle, providing against the contingency of a Scots or French invasion. At length, on 6 Sept., he crossed the border; on the 13th he was at Kelso, and a few days later at Jedburgh. A list, which he sent to the government, of monasteries and castles burnt marks his course. He met with no opposition; but his invasion was only a border foray on a large scale, and on the 27th he was back at Newcastle (*State Papers*, v. 448–52; *Hamilton Papers*, vol. i.) On 10 Oct. he received a summons to parliament, which met in November, and on the following day he set out for London. From the 24th until the following March he was in attendance at the council. On 21 March he was appointed lieutenant and captain-general of Boulogne and the Boulonnois in succession to Surrey, who had failed to hold his own against the French. He reached Calais on the 23rd (*State Papers*, xi. 60), and on 4 April was commissioned lieutenant-general of the army in France. In the same month he was appointed to treat for peace, which was concluded on 7 June. On the 31st he was again in London. On 19 Sept. he was once more sent to Boulogne to carry out the terms of the destruction of the fortifications (De Selve, *Corr. Politique*, 1888, pp. 31, 34; *State Papers*, i. 877, 879); but in October he was back at Windsor (*Acts P. C.*, ed. Dasent, i. 535). From that time to the end of Henry's reign Hertford was constant in his attendance at court and council.

These few months witnessed the momentous struggle for the succession to power during the coming minority of Edward VI. The numerous attainders of Henry's reign had left Norfolk and Hertford face to face as the most powerful nobles in the kingdom. The former, with his son Surrey, headed the conservative party, while Hertford, though he was far too cautious to give open expression to his views, was known to favour further steps in the direction of ecclesiastical reform. This divergence of view was accentuated by personal jealousy between Surrey and Hertford, who had recently been called in to retrieve his rival's military blunders. Surrey vowed vengeance, and, hating Hertford as an upstart, he rejected his father's proposals for matrimonial alliances between his children and Hertford's two daughters, as well as between the Duchess of Richmond and Hertford's brother Thomas. The hope of conciliation thus failed, but the struggle between the rivals, which might have led to civil war, was averted by the dramatic fall of the Howards in January 1546–7 [see Howard, Henry, Earl of Surrey, 1517?–1547, and Howard, Thomas II, Earl of Surrey, 1473–1554]. Hertford took an active part in Surrey's trial (Wriothesley, *Chron.* i. 177; Bapst, p. 358); he was commissioned to convey Henry's assent to the bill of attainder against Norfolk, and he acquired a share of the Howards' property; but there is not sufficient evidence to show that their fall was due to his machinations,

and he did nothing to molest Norfolk after Henry's death.

That event took place at 2 A.M. on Friday, 28 Jan. 1546–7; Hertford and Paget had spent the previous day in conversation with the king, they were present at his death, received his last commands, and had possession of his will. But Hertford must have already determined to set aside its provisions, and in an interview with Paget in the gallery immediately before Henry's death, and another an hour afterwards, he persuaded him to abet his bold *coup d'état*, promising to be guided by Paget's advice. They decided to keep the king's death a secret for the present, and to publish only so much of his will as seemed convenient; and then the earl hurried down to Hertford to get possession of the young king. On the way back, at Enfield on the 30th, Sir Anthony Browne (*d.* 1548) [q.v.], though 'inclined to the old religion, gave his frank consent to Hertford being Protector, thinking it to be the surest kind of government' (*Lit. Remains of Edward VI*, p. ccxlvii). On the same day, in a letter to the council, Hertford adopted the style 'we,' and on Monday the 31st he arrived with Edward at the Tower. Henry's death was then made known, and on the same day Paget proposed in the council that Hertford should have the protectorate. The council was divided: the reformers were represented by Cranmer, Hertford, and Lisle; the conservatives by Tunstall, Wriothesley, and Browne. Gardiner was excluded according to the terms of Henry's suspicious will; Browne had already given in his adherence to Hertford, but the chancellor Wriothesley strongly opposed the scheme. Paget's influence, however, prevailed, and the council gave Hertford 'the chief place among them,' with 'the name and title of Protector of all the realms and domains of the king's majesty, and governor of his most royal person,' adding the express condition that he was to act only 'with the advice and consent of the rest of the executors' (*Acts of the Privy Council*, ii. 4–7). On 2 Feb. he was appointed high steward of England for the coronation of Edward; on the 10th he was granted the office of treasurer of the exchequer, and that of earl marshal, which had been forfeited by Norfolk. Five days later he was created Baron Seymour of Hache, and on the 16th Duke of Somerset. On 6 March Wriothesley was removed from the chancellorship on the ground that he had used the great seal without a warrant (*ib.* ii. 48–59). Six days later Somerset rendered his position independent of the council by obtaining a patent as governor and protector, in which he was empowered to act with or without their advice, and 'to do anything which a governor of the king's person or protector of the realm ought to do' (*ib.* ii. 63–4, 67–74). He had now attained to almost royal authority; in a form of prayer which he used, he spoke of himself as 'caused by Providence to rule,' and he went so far as to address the king of France as 'brother.'

As the first protestant ruler of England, Somerset at once set about introducing radical religious reforms. His numerous letters, preserved in the British Museum, throw little light on what convictions he had reached during Henry's reign, or how he had been induced to adopt them, but by Henry's death he had become a 'rank Calvinist' (Nicholas Pocock in *Engl. Hist. Rev.* July 1895, p. 418), and he soon entered into correspondence with the Genevan reformer. 'From the moment of Henry's death there was a systematic attempt made by the men of the new learning, headed at first by Somerset . . . gradually to get rid of catholic doctrine' (*ib.* p. 438). 'There is really no other account to be given of the gradual changes that culminated in the second prayer-book of 1552 . . . than that Somerset was supreme, and exercised for a few years the same arbitrary sway that the late king had brought to bear upon the parliament when the Act of Six Articles was passed' (*Church Quarterly Rev.* October 1892, p. 38). Cranmer, whose leanings were then Lutheran, was a 'mere tool in his hands' (*ib.* pp. 41, 42, 56). The Protector secretly encouraged books of extreme protestant views (cf. *The V Abominable Blasphemies conteined in the Masse*, 1548, anon. printed by H. Powell); and in the preface to the new communion office (March 1547–8), which Somerset almost certainly wrote himself, he hinted plainly at further sweeping reforms. But in his public procedure he was compelled to observe more caution. The first of his ecclesiastical acts was to compel all bishops to exercise their office *durante beneplacito* (6 Feb. 1546–7), and their position as mere state officials was emphasised by an act in the following November, ordering that their appointment should be made by letters patent. An ecclesiastical visitation followed for the removal of images, assertion of the royal supremacy, and the enforcement of the use of English in the church services; for their opposition to this measure Gardiner and Bonner were imprisoned in June. In July appeared the book of homilies, and in November parliament authorised the administration of the communion in both kinds, and granted all colleges, chantries, and free chapels to the king. Early in

1548 a proclamation was issued against ceremonies, and at Easter a new communion office was published; in July an English version of the Psalms and litany followed, and in November began the visitation of the universities of Oxford and Cambridge, of the latter of which Somerset had been elected chancellor in 1547. In January 1549 was passed the Act of Uniformity; tithes were also regulated by parliament, and the marriage of priests allowed.

Meanwhile Somerset turned his attention towards the completion of the marriage between Edward and Mary of Scotland. He had been identified more prominently than any other statesman with this policy during the late reign, and Henry had enforced it upon him during his last moments. Religious even more than political considerations urged Somerset in the same direction. He dreamt of the union of England and Scotland into one state, which under his guidance would become distinctively protestant and act as the protagonist of the Reformation in Europe. But he had lost faith in the combination of diplomacy with abortive expeditions by which Henry had sought his ends, and he determined to revive Edward I's claim to feudal suzerainty over Scotland, and to crush all opposition by an overwhelming display of force. He directed Sir John Mason [q. v.] to search for precedents to justify his claim, and during the summer collected a large army at Berwick. In August the French captured the castle of St. Andrews, where a body of Scots protestants had held out in the English cause, and Somerset's pretensions united all Scotland in opposition. In the last week of August he reached Berwick; a fleet commanded by Clinton accompanied the army, which marched along the coast. On Sunday, 4 Sept., Somerset crossed the Tweed; passing Dumbarton without waiting to attack it, he came in sight of Musselburgh on the evening of the 8th. There the Scots were encamped in numbers greatly superior to the English; on their left was the sea commanded by the English fleet, on their right was a marsh, and in front was the river Esk. The position was almost impregnable, but the Scots did not wait to be attacked. Before dawn on the 10th they crossed the Esk. Four thousand Irish who charged the English right were scattered by the fire from the fleet, but the Scottish right almost succeeded in occupying the heights on the English left. Grey's horse broke against the Scottish infantry and fled, but in their pursuit the Scots came upon the English men-at-arms and Italian musketeers, while the English cavalry formed once more and charged. A panic seized the Scots, they broke and fled, and the rout soon became a massacre; many thousand Scots were killed, the English loss being, it is said, only two hundred (cf. De Selve, p. 203). Decisive as was this battle of Musselburgh or Pinkie Cleugh —the last fought between England and Scotland as independent kingdoms—and greatly though it strengthened Somerset's personal position, it postponed further than ever the attainment of his objects. Leith was burnt on the 11th, but Mary was removed to Stirling; while the English army, provisioned only for a month, was compelled to retreat (Teulet, *Papiers d'Etat relatifs à l'Histoire d'Ecosse*, Bannatyne Club, vol. i.; Knox, *Works*, Bannatyne Club, i. 209, 213; *The Complaynt of Scotland*, Early Engl. Text Soc.; Patten, *Expedicion into Scotland*, 1548).

Somerset reached London on 8 Oct. (Wriothesley, *Chron.* i. 186), and was received with fresh marks of honour. He declined the proposal of the city of London to welcome him with a triumphal procession, but his designation became 'Edward, by the grace of God, duke of Somerset,' &c., and he was allowed a special seat in the House of Lords above the other peers. Parliament met on 4 Nov., and, besides ecclesiastical reforms and other measures for the regeneration of morals, proceeded to embody in statutes Somerset's wishes for a relaxation of Henry's repressive system. All treasons created since 1352 were abolished; the six articles, the acts against lollards, and the severer clauses of the Act of Supremacy were repealed; and the Protector made an ineffectual attempt to repress vagrancy by enabling justices to condemn incurable offenders to two years' slavery, and in the last resort to slavery for life. It was probably in order to find occupation for the unemployed, as well as to afford an asylum for protestant refugees, that he established a colony of foreign weavers on his estates at Glastonbury (cf. *Acts P.C.* iii. 415, 490; Knox, *Works*, iv. 42, 564; Strype, *Eccl. Mem.* II. i. 378). The last act of parliament dealt with the status of the Protector, but seems never to have passed the great seal. The fact that it made his tenure depend upon the king's pleasure instead of the duration of his minority seems to indicate that it was a machination of Somerset's enemies (see *Archæologia*, xxx. 363-89).

But foreign affairs claimed a large share of the Protector's attention, and he retained their management almost exclusively in his own hands, aided by Paget and the two

secretaries of state, Sir Thomas Smith and Sir William Petre. At the beginning of Edward's reign the pope had urged Charles V to support Mary's claims by invasion, and, as a counterpoise, the council opened communications for a league with France and the German princes in March (*Acts P.C.* ii. 47, 60); but the proposal did not prosper (cf. De Selve, *Corr. Politique, 1546–9*, ed. 1888, passim). Somerset's designs on Scotland inevitably offended France, while the irritation was constantly growing through the bickerings about the fortifications of Boulogne. Though war did not formally break out, acts of hostility frequently occurred. The Protector was still sanguine of accomplishing the marriage between Edward and Mary. On 5 Feb. 1547–8 he issued 'An Epistle or Exhortacion to Unitie and Peace, sent from the Lorde Protector . . . to the Nobilitie . . . of Scotlande' (printed by R. Wolfe, 1548, 8vo), pointing out the advantages of the English proposals and attributing the cause of the war to Arran and his advisers. The Scots protestants were naturally on Somerset's side, and by means of bribery he maintained a party among the nobles; but he failed to prevent the conclusion of a marriage treaty between Mary and the dauphin of France, and in June a French force sailed for Scotland from Brest. In order to anticipate it, Somerset had directed William, thirteenth baron Grey de Wilton [q. v.], and Sir Thomas Palmer (*d.* 1553) [q. v.] to cross the border on 18 April. They took and fortified Haddington, where they left a garrison of two thousand five hundred men, and, after wasting the country round Edinburgh, returned to Berwick. In June Somerset sent Sir Thomas Smith to the emperor, and to raise two thousand German mercenaries; but Charles contented himself with fair words, while the French fleet carried off Mary to France, and the Scots recovered Home Castle and closely besieged Haddington in August.

The marriage of Mary with the dauphin completed the failure of Somerset's Scottish policy, and in the following autumn his position was menaced by the intrigues of his brother the admiral [see Seymour, Thomas, Baron Seymour of Sudeley]. The Protector had naturally resented his brother's marriage with Catherine Parr, but he wrote him an affectionate letter on the occasion of his daughter's birth (31 Aug.), and endeavoured to divert him by persuasion from his reckless courses. Failing in this, he sent for him early in January 1548–9, but Thomas was contumacious, and the Protector then left him to his fate. According to the privy council register, he 'desired for natural pity's sake licence at the passing of the bill [of attainder] to be away' (ii. 260), and assented to that measure with the greatest reluctance; while Queen Elizabeth subsequently stated that the admiral's life would have been saved had not the council dissuaded the Protector from granting him an interview. He was present, however, at each reading of the bill of attainder in the House of Lords (see *Lords' Journals*, i. 345 et seq.; cf. Tytler, i. 150–1). In any case, his brother's fall was a fatal blow to Somerset's authority, and involved him in much popular odium (cf. Hayward, *Edward the Sext*).

Troubles now began to gather thickly round the Protector; the Scots took Haddington and all the other castles held by the English except Lauder. Somerset projected another invasion, but the German mercenaries refused to serve without an advance of pay, and the exchequer was not only empty, but deep in debt. The French were pressing hard on Boulogne; the outworks of Blackness, Ballemberg, and Newhaven fell one after another, and on 8 Aug. war with France was declared (De Selve, p. 410; Wriothesley, ii. 20). The religious innovations created a widespread discontent, which was intensified by the economic condition of the country. The depreciation of the currency was growing steadily worse in spite of the Protector's feeble efforts to reform it, and the increase of enclosures and conversion of arable into pasture lands caused widespread distress which Somerset's efforts failed to abate (see *A Discourse of the Common Weal of this Realm of England*, ed. Lamond, 1893). He appointed a commission to inquire into abuses arising out of the decay of tillage and frequency of enclosures, but three bills introduced to remedy the evil were all rejected [see Hales, John, *d.* 1571]. Somerset thereupon issued a proclamation in May, by which all who had enclosed lands were commanded to restore them. This produced no effect except to exasperate the landowners against him, while the commons, getting no redress, rose in revolt in Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire. The rising was soon put down by Lord Grey, but in June a rebellion broke out in Devon and Cornwall, followed by another under Robert Kett [q. v.] in Norfolk. The former was actuated by religious motives, and was suppressed by John Russell, first earl of Bedford [q. v.] The Norfolk rebels laid more stress on social and economic grievances, and their revolt was more serious. Somerset thought of taking the command against them himself, but it was

finally given to Warwick, who crushed the rebellion in August.

This success encouraged Warwick to begin intriguing against the Protector, and he found ready listeners among many of the council. Wriothesley (now Earl of Southampton) had never forgiven Somerset his ejection from the chancellorship, and, like other adherents of the old religion, he thought that nothing but good could come of Somerset's fall. On the other hand many of the reforming party had grievances against the Protector; even his stout adherent, Paget, warned him against his arrogance and ambition, and the folly of 'having so many irons in the fire.' At the same time the rapacity with which he seized on church lands and the fortune he acquired for himself deprived him of popular sympathy, and added to the irritation the council felt at such arbitrary acts as making a stamp of the king's signature and erecting a court of requests in his own house. They knew, moreover, that the authority he enjoyed was usurped contrary to Henry's will. Failure at home and abroad gave Warwick his opportunity. In September he waited on Somerset with two hundred captains who had served in suppressing the late rebellions, and demanded extra pay for their services. Somerset refused, and Warwick then enlisted their support in his attempt to overthrow him (*Chron. of Henry VIII*, pp. 185–6). Secret meetings were held at the houses of the disaffected councillors. Somerset heard of these gatherings while at Hampton Court with Cranmer, Paget, Cecil, Petre, Sir Thomas Smith, and Sir John Thynne, all his devoted adherents. In the first few days of October he issued leaflets urging the people to rise in his defence and that of the king. His enemies, he asserted, wished to depose him because 'we the poore comens being injuried by the extorciouse gentylmen had our pardon this yere by the . . . goodness of the lorde Protector, for whom let us fyght, for he lovith all just and true gentilmen which do no extorcion, and also us the poore commynaltie of Englande' (*Acts P. C.* ii. 330–6). Ten thousand men are said to have responded to this call (*Chron. Henry VIII*, p. 186), and Somerset sent his son, Sir Edward Seymour, to Russell and Herbert, who were then returning from the west with the army that had suppressed the rebellion, entreating them to come to the rescue of the king. On the 6th he despatched Petre to London to inquire the meaning of the council's proceedings. There Warwick's adherents were in session at his residence, Ely House, Holborn. They had drawn up an indictment of Somerset's rule, and were on the point of setting out to lay it before the Protector. On the receipt of Petre's message threatening to arrest them if they proceeded to Hampton Court, they determined to remain in London. On the same day they requested the support of the mayor and aldermen, to whom Rich described the Protector's evil deeds, and sent out letters to various nobles summoning them, with their adherents, to London. Petre remained with the council, and Somerset started that night for Windsor with the king. Next day the council wrote to Cranmer and Paget requiring their adherence. On the 8th the city gave the council its support, the Tower was secured, Russell and Herbert inclined to the same side, and fifteen thousand men gathered in London to support the council (*Chron. Henry VIII*, p. 189). Somerset saw that his cause was lost, and promised submission. On the 10th the council wrote ordering the detention of Sir Thomas Smith, Sir Michael Stanhope (the Protector's brother-in-law), Sir John Thynne (the manager of his estates), and others. On the 12th they went down to Windsor, and on the 14th Somerset was sent to the Tower.

Early in January 1549–50 an account of the proceedings taken against him was presented to parliament, and the charges were embodied in twenty-nine articles. Somerset made a full confession and threw himself on the mercy of the council; on the 14th he was deposed from the protectorate by act of parliament, deprived of all his offices and of lands to the value of 2,000*l*. While in the Tower he solaced himself by reading devotional works, such as Wermueller's 'Spyrytuall and most precyouse Pearle,' translated by Coverdale, which was lent to him in manuscript, and for which he wrote a preface; it was published in the same year (London, 8vo), and subsequently passed through many editions (see *Brit. Mus. Cat.* and Hazlitt, *Collections*). He is also said to have translated out of French a letter written to him by Calvin, and printed in the same year, but no copy is known to be extant. On 6 Feb. he was set at liberty (*Acts P. C.* ii. 383; Wriothesley, ii. 33–4), and on the 18th received a free pardon. On 10 April he was again admitted of the privy council, and on 14 May was made a gentleman of the king's chamber. He resumed his attendances at the council on 24 April, taking precedence of all the other members, and rarely missed a meeting for the next eighteen months. Three days later his property, except what had already been disposed of, was restored to him; and on 3 June his

eldest daughter, Anne, was married to Warwick's eldest son, Viscount Lisle.

Although an opportunity of recovering his position seemed to be thus offered Somerset, the ambition of his rival Warwick rendered his ultimate ruin inevitable. A public slight was put on him when, on the death of his mother on 18 Oct. 1550, the council refused to go into mourning. On 10 May 1551, however, he was made lord-lieutenant of Buckinghamshire and Berkshire, in August he put down an insurrection in Sussex, and in face of the ill success of the new administration the influence of Somerset's party seemed for a moment to revive. As early as February 1550–1 some members of parliament had started the idea of again making him Protector, but a dissolution brought the scheme to nothing. Somerset endeavoured to procure Gardiner's release from the Tower, and to prevent the withdrawal of the Princess Mary's license to practise her own religion. Paget and Arundel gave him their support, and popular feeling was strongly in his favour. With this encouragement, Somerset seems to have meditated seizing his three chief enemies, Warwick, Northampton, and Pembroke, who, on their side, determined to destroy him. During the whole of September 1551 Somerset was prevented from attending the council by sickness in his household, and probably during this period the designs against him were matured. On 4 Oct. he appeared once more by their order at the council; on the same day Warwick became Duke of Northumberland, and his adherents were likewise advanced a step in the peerage. Three days later Sir Thomas Palmer (*d.* 1553) [q. v.] revealed to Warwick and the king a plot, which he described as having been formed in April by Somerset, Arundel, Paget, and himself, with the object of raising the country and murdering Warwick. On the 11th, Northumberland and Palmer again discussed the matter, and on the same day the council ordered an inquiry into the amount of Somerset's debts to the king. This roused Somerset's suspicions, but he attended the council as usual on the 16th. A few hours later he was arrested and sent to the Tower. The duchess, Lord Grey, and others of his adherents, followed him thither next day; and finally, Palmer, who had been left at liberty for ten days after giving his information, was arrested. On the 19th the council communicated to the corporation the baseless story that Somerset had plotted to destroy the city of London, seize the Tower and the Isle of Wight (Wriothesley, ii. 56–7). He was also accused of endeavouring to secure for himself and his heirs the succession to the crown (cf. 'A Tract agaynst Edward, Duke of Somerset,' extant among the Loseley MSS., *Hist MSS. Comm.* 7th Rep. App. p. 607). For six weeks Somerset remained in the Tower while evidence was being collected against him. There can be no doubt that he had meditated supplanting Northumberland, but the plot against the duke's life rests on no satisfactory evidence. Apart from the improbabilities of Palmer's story (see Tytler, ii. 1–70), there is the direct statement of Renard that both Northumberland and Palmer confessed before their death that they had concocted the evidence (Froude, v. 36 *n.*) On Tuesday, 1 Dec., at 5 A.M. Somerset was conveyed by water from the Tower to Westminster Hall, to stand trial by his peers. The charge of treason broke down, but he was condemned for felony, and sentenced to be hanged; the people 'supposing he had been clerely quitt, when they see the axe of the Tower put downe, made such a shryke and castinge up of caps, that it was heard into the Long Acre beyonde Charinge Crosse,' and on his way back to the Tower they 'cried God save him all the way' (Wriothesley, ii. 63; cf. Stow, p. 607). He was beheaded on Tower Hill on Friday, 22 Jan. 1551–2, between 8 and 9 A.M.; to prevent a tumult, orders were given that the people should remain indoors till ten o'clock, but an hour before the execution Tower Hill was crowded. Somerset addressed the people in a few dignified words, rejoicing in the work that he had been able to do in the cause of religion and urging them to follow in the same course. While he was yet speaking a panic seized the crowd, and in the midst of it Sir Anthony Browne rode up. A cry of 'pardon' was raised, but Somerset was not deceived, and, protesting his loyalty to the king, he laid his head on the block, while those nearest the scaffold pressed forward to dip their handkerchiefs in his blood (Ellis, *Orig. Letters*, 2nd ser. ii. 216). He was buried in St. Peter's Chapel in the Tower, on the north side of the aisle, between Anne Boleyn and Catherine Howard. In the Stowe collection (No. 1066) in the British Museum is a manuscript calendar used by Somerset in the Tower, inside one cover of which he wrote some pious reflections the day before his execution; on the other cover is the signature of his daughter-in-law, Catherine Seymour [q. v.], who also used it while in the Tower. As he was attainted for felony and not for treason, his lands and dignities were not thereby affected, but an act of parliament was passed on 12 April following declaring

them forfeited and confirming his attainder (*Lords' Journals*, i. 425).

Somerset occupies an important place in English history. Strength of conviction and purity of morals admirably fitted him to lead a religious movement. He did more than any other man to give practical effect to the protestant revolution, and his immediate successors could only follow on the lines he laid down. Alike in his conception of a union between England and Scotland, in his feeling for the poorer classes of his community, and in his sincere adoption of protestant principles, he gave evidence of lofty aims. As a general he was successful in every military operation he undertook. But he was too little of an opportunist to be a successful ruler, and he failed to carry out his objects because he lacked patience, hated compromise, and consistently underrated the strength of the forces opposed to him. Ambition entered largely into his motives, and his successful usurpation showed him to be capable of prompt and resolute audacity. He had as high a conception of the royal prerogative as any Tudor, but he used it to mitigate the severity of Henry VIII's government. The mildness of his rule earned him a deeply felt popularity, and under his sway there was less persecution than there was again for a century. Naturally warm-hearted and affable, the possession of power rendered him peevish and overbearing; but, like his brother Thomas, he possessed handsome features and many personal graces. A portrait, by Holbein, belongs to the Duke of Northumberland; two anonymous portraits are at Sudeley Castle; another belongs to Mrs. Cunliffe; and two more, also anonymous, belonged in 1867 to William Digby Seymour [q. v.] and Mr. Reginald Cholmondeley respectively (see *Cat. First Loan Exhib.* Nos. 168, 174). The portrait by Holbein has been engraved by Houbraken, R. White, and others (see Bromley, p. 10).

The chief blot on Somerset's career is his rapacity in profiting by the dissolution of monasteries, the abolition of chantries, and sale of church lands. The estates he inherited brought him 2,400*l.* a year, those he acquired between 1540 and 1547 added 2,000*l.* to his income, and between 1547 and 1552 it increased by another 3,000*l.*; the total 7,400*l.* would be worth at least ten times as much in modern currency (*Wilts Archæol. Mag.* xv. 189). The number and extent of his manors can be gathered from a list of the 'Grants of the Forfeited Lands of Edward, Duke of Somerset,' and 'Cartæ Edwardi, Ducis Somerset,' both printed by Sir Thomas Phillipps, London, 1866, fol. His most famous possession was Somerset House in the Strand, which he commenced building very soon after Henry's death; two inns belonging to the sees of Worcester and Lichfield were pulled down to make room for it, and, to furnish materials, the north aisle of St. Paul's Cathedral, containing the 'Dance of Death,' and the priory of St. John of Jerusalem, Clerkenwell, were demolished. Somerset took great interest in its construction, and, as Knox lamented (*Works*, iii. 176), preferred watching the masons to listening to sermons. Somerset House was occupied by Henrietta Maria, who added to it her famous Roman catholic chapel; by Catherine of Braganza, and by Queen Charlotte until 1775, when it was pulled down; the present building was finished in 1786 (Wheatley and Cunningham, *London Past and Present*, iii. 268–73).

Somerset was twice married, first, about 1527, to Catherine (*d.* before 1540), daughter and coheiress of Sir William Fillol of Woodlands in Horton, Dorset, and Fillol's Hall in Langton Wash, Essex. She was divorced soon after 1530 in consequence of her misconduct with Somerset's father (cf. manuscript note in 'Vincent's Baronage' in the College of Arms, quoted by Courthope, *Peerage*, p. 249). By her Seymour had two sons: John, who was sent to the Tower on 16 Oct. 1551 with his father, died there on 19 Dec. 1552, and was buried in Savoy hospital (Machyn, *Diary*, pp. 10, 27, 326); and Edward (1529–1593), who was knighted at the battle of Pinkie on 10 Sept. 1547, was restored in blood by act of parliament, passed on 29 March 1553, before his half-brothers (*Lords' Journals*, i. 441, 442, 445), settled at Berry Pomeroy, Devonshire, and was ancestor of Sir Edward Seymour [q. v.], the speaker, and of the present dukes of Somerset. Somerset's second wife was Anne (1497–1587), daughter of Sir Edward Stanhope of Sudbury, Suffolk, by his wife Elizabeth, great-granddaughter of William Bourchier, earl of Eu, by Anne, sole heiress of Thomas of Woodstock, youngest son of Edward III. She was a woman of great pride, and her disputes as to precedence with Catherine Parr are said to have originally caused the estrangement between the two Seymours and most of the duke's misfortunes and errors (Lodge, *Portraits*). Surrey, in spite of his antipathy to her husband, paid her attention, which she scornfully rejected, and addressed to her his ode 'On a lady who refused to dance with him' (Bapst, pp. 370–1; *Gent. Mag.* 1845, i. 371–81). She was imprisoned with her husband, subsequently married his steward Francis Newdigate, died on 16 April

1587, and was buried in Westminster Abbey. Two anonymous portraits of her belong respectively to the Duke of Northumberland and Earl Stanhope. By her Somerset had four sons: (1) Edward, born on 12 Oct. 1537, died before May 1539; (2) Edward Seymour, earl of Hertford [q. v.]; (3) Henry, born in 1540, who was appointed in 1588 admiral of the squadron of the narrow seas, and kept close watch on the Duke of Parma off the coast of the Netherlands; on 27 July he took an important share in the battle off Gravelines, and subsequently kept guard in the narrow seas; he married Joan, daughter of Thomas Percy, seventh earl of Northumberland [q. v.], but died without issue (*Papers relating to the Defeat of the Spanish Armada*, ed. Laughton, passim); (4) Edward (1548–1574), so named probably because Edward VI stood godfather (*Lit. Rem.* p. 61), died 1574 (Collins; cf. *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1547–1581, p. 238). By his second wife, Somerset also had six daughters: (1) Anne, who married first, on 3 June 1551, John Dudley, commonly called Earl of Warwick, eldest son of the Duke of Northumberland, and, secondly, Sir Edward Unton, and died in February 1587–8 (cf. *A Sermon preached at Faringtон in Barkeshire the Seventeene Daye of Februarie 1587 at the buriall of Anne, Countess of Warwicke, widow of Sir Edward Vmpton*, London, 1591, 8vo); (2) Margaret, died unmarried; (3) Jane (1541–1561), whom Somerset was accused of plotting to marry to Edward VI, became maid of honour to Queen Elizabeth, died unmarried, and was buried on 26 March 1561 (Machyn, pp. 254, 384; Ellis, *Orig. Letters*, 2nd ser. ii. 272). These three ladies won some literary repute by composing, on the death of Margaret of Valois, some verses published as 'Annæ, Margaritæ, Janæ, Sororum Virginum, heroidum Anglarum in mortem Margaritæ Valesiæ Navarrorum Reginæ Hecadistichon,' Paris, 1550, 8vo; a French translation appeared in the following year; (4) Mary, married first Andrew Rogers of Bryanstone, Dorset, and secondly, Sir Henry Peyton; (5) Catherine, died unmarried; (6) Elizabeth, who married Sir Richard Knightley of Fawsley, Northamptonshire.

Owing to the misconduct of Somerset's first wife, her children were excluded from their mother's as well as their father's inheritance, and their claims to Somerset's dignities were postponed by the terms of the patents to those of his issue by his second wife. By act of parliament 5 Edw. VI the duke's dignities were declared forfeited, but his son was created Earl of Hertford in 1559, and his great-grandson William [q. v.] was 'restored' to the dukedom of Somerset in 1660 by the repeal of the said act. The younger line died out with Algernon, the seventh duke [see under Seymour, Charles, sixth Duke of Somerset], in 1750, and the dukedom then reverted, according to the original patent, to the Seymours of Berry Pomeroy, Devonshire, the elder line, in which it still remains. According to the curious doctrine laid down by the 'Third Report of the Lords' Committee on the Dignity of a Peer' (p. 49), the representative of the elder line would have become Duke of Somerset on the failure of the younger, without the 'restoration' of the second duke in 1660, on the ground that the attainder could not touch the right vested in the elder line by the patent (cf. Nicolas, *Peerage*, ed. Courthope, pref. p. lxvii).

[There is no biography of Somerset except a worthless brochure published in 1713 comparing him with the Duke of Marlborough, but the materials for his biography are extensive. Of manuscript sources, most of Somerset's correspondence on public affairs is in the Record Office, but a portion relating to Scottish affairs is preserved among the Addit. MSS. in the British Museum, especially Nos. 5758, 6237, 25114, 32091, 32647, 32648, 32654, 32657 (these papers, originally deposited among the archives of the council of the north, were subsequently moved to Hamilton Palace, Scotland; in 1883 they were acquired by the German government, but repurchased by the British Museum six years later; they have been calendared as the Hamilton Papers, 2 vols. 1890–1892). Many papers, relating principally to his genealogy and family history, are among the Harleian and Cottonian MSS. in the same library. Much information respecting his private affairs is to be found among the Lisle Papers in the Record Office, and the manuscripts preserved at Longleat, their presence there being due to the fact that Sir John Thynne, ancestor of the marquises of Bath, managed Somerset's estates during his protectorate. Many of his letters have been printed at length in the State Papers of Henry VIII (11 vols. 1830–52), and these, with others down to 1540, have been calendared in Brewer and Gairdner's Letters and Papers of Henry VIII (15 vols.); the manuscripts at Longleat were used by Canon Jackson in his paper on the Seymours of Wolf Hall in Wiltshire Archæol. Mag. vol. xv. Other scattered letters have been printed in Ellis's Original Letters. See also Sadleir's State Papers, Haynes's Burghley Papers, and the Calendars of Domestic, Foreign, Venetian, and Spanish State Papers (in the index to the last of which he is consistently confused with his brother the admiral); Hist. MSS. Comm. 1st, 2nd, 4th, 5th, and 7th Rep. passim. Other contemporary authorities are the Lords' Journals; Acts of the Privy Council (ed. Nicolas vol. vii. and ed. Dasent vols. i.–iv.); Rymer's Fœdera; Wriothesley's Chron., Machyn's Diary, Grey-

friars Chron., Narratives of the Reformation, Troubles connected with the Prayer Book, Chron. of Calais, Services of Lord Grey de Wilton (all these published by Camden Soc.); Lit. Remains of Edward VI (Roxburghe Club); Teulet's Papiers d'Etat and John Knox's Works (Bannatyne Club); The Complaynt of Scotland (Early Engl. Text Soc.); The Late Expedicion into Scotlande, 1544, 8vo; Patten's Expedicion into Scotlande, 1548, 4to; Letters of Cardinal Pole; Zürich Letters (Parker Soc.); Mémoires of Du Bellay (Panthéon Littéraire); Mémoires de Vieilleville, ed. 1822; Correspondance de Marillac, ed. Kaulek; Corresp. Politique de Odet de Selve, ed. 1818; Spanish Chron. of Henry VIII, ed. M. A. S. Hume, 1888; Wood's Letters of Royal and Illustrious Ladies; Somerset's Works in Brit. Mus. Libr. See also Hall's, Grafton's, Fabyan's, Baker's, and Holinshed's Chronicles; Stow's and Camden's Annals; Speed's Historie; Hayward's Life and Raigne of Edward the Sext; Herbert's Life and Reign of Henry VIII; Leland's Commentaries; Strype's Works, passim; Wood's Athenæ Oxon.; Lloyd's State Worthies; Foxe's Actes and Mon. and Book of Martyrs; Burnet's Hist. of the Reformation, ed. Pocock; Fuller's Church Hist. ed. Brewer, and Worthies of England; Myles Davies's Athenæ Brit. vol. ii.; Walpole's Royal and Noble Authors; Nott's Works of Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey; Cobbett's State Trials; Lodge's Illustrations; Maitland's Essays on the Reformation; Tytler's, Lingard's, and Froude's Histories; Spelman's Hist. of Sacrilege; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr.; Dixon's Hist. of the Church of England; Gasquet and Bishop's Edward VI and the Common Prayer; Friedmann's Anne Boleyn; Bapst's Deux Gentilshommes Poètes; Hoare's Modern Wiltshire; Collinson's Somersetshire; Lipscomb's Buckinghamshire; Collins's, Courthope's, and G. E. C.'s Peerages; Gent. Mag. 1845, i. 371, 487; Archæologia, i. 10–12, v. 233, xviii. 170, xxx. 463–89; Genealogist, new ser. vol. xii.; Church Quarterly Rev. Oct. 1892; English Hist. Rev. Oct. 1886, and July 1895.]

A. F. P.

SEYMOUR, EDWARD, Earl of Hertford (1539?–1621), was the eldest (surviving) son of Edward Seymour, first duke of Somerset [q. v.], the Protector, by his second wife, Anne. He is always said to have been the son who, born on 12 Oct. 1537, the same day as Edward VI, was styled Lord Beauchamp, and had as his godparents Queen Jane Seymour, the Princess Mary, and Cromwell (*Lisle Papers*, vol. xii. arts. 36, 75). But it seems more probable that this child died in infancy, and that the Earl of Hertford was the Edward who was born on 25 May 1539, and had as godfathers the Dukes of Suffolk and Norfolk (Gairdner, *Letters and Papers*, xiv. i. 1026, 1033); for Thomas Norton (1532–1584) [q. v.], tutor to Somerset's sons, writing to Calvin on 12 Nov. 1552, states that the duke's son and heir was then thirteen years of age (*Lit. Rem. of Edw. VI*, p. lxi), and the inscription on his tomb in Salisbury Cathedral says he was in his eighty-third year at his death in 1621 (*Descr. of Salisbury Cathedral*, 1774, pp. 70–71). He was educated with Prince Edward, and was knighted at his coronation on 20 Feb. 1546–7, being styled Earl of Hertford between 1547 and 1552. On 7 April 1550 he was sent as a hostage to France, returning three weeks later. His father's attainder for felony, December 1551, did not affect his dignities or estates, and on his execution on 21 Jan. 1551–2 the Earl of Hertford became *de jure* Duke of Somerset. Being a minor, he could not take his seat in the House of Lords, and in the following April his father's enemies in wanton malice procured an act of parliament (5 Edward VI) 'for the limitation of the late Duke of Somerset's lands,' wherein a clause was introduced declaring forfeit all the lands, estates, dignities, and titles of the late duke and his heirs by his second wife (Cobbett, *State Trials*, i. 526–7). A few of his father's estates were restored to Seymour by letters patent of Edward VI, but he seems to have been partly dependent for support on Sir John Thynne. He was restored in blood by an act passed in the first session of Mary's reign, and she is said to have desired to make him Earl of Hertford, but was dissuaded by her ministers.

Two months after Elizabeth's accession he was granted the lands which his father had inherited, and created Baron Beauchamp and Earl of Hertford (13 Jan. 1558–9). In November or December 1560 he secretly married Lady Catherine Grey [see Seymour, Catherine]. In June he went to Paris with Thomas Cecil (afterwards Marquis of Exeter) [q. v.], whose dissipations were unjustly attributed to his influence. He returned late in August on hearing that his marriage was known and that his wife had been sent to the Tower, and on 5 Sept. joined her there. On the birth of his second son, Thomas, in the Tower, 10 Feb. 1562–3, he was summoned before the Star-chamber and fined 15,000*l.* This extortionate sum has been the ground of much invective against Elizabeth, but the queen immediately remitted 10,000*l.* Of the rest, she demanded that 1,000*l.* should be found immediately, and the earl finally escaped with the payment of 1,187*l.* (*Wilts Arch. Mag.* xv. 153). On the outbreak of the plague he was removed from the Tower in August 1563, and placed under custody of his mother and her second husband, Francis Newdigate, at Hanworth. But owing to John Hales's published assertion of

his wife's claim to the royal succession [see HALES, JOHN, *d.* 1571, and SEYMOUR, CATHERINE] he was, on 26 May 1564, recommitted to the Tower. The death of his wife on 27 Jan. 1567–8 relieved Hertford to some extent of the royal displeasure; he was released from the Tower late in the same year, but was kept in easy confinement in various country houses until 1571 (*Wilts Arch. Mag.* xv. 153).

Warned by experience, Hertford henceforth lived as quietly as possible. On 30 Aug. 1571 he was created M.A. of Cambridge, and on 2 Feb. 1571–2 was admitted a member of Gray's Inn. In 1578 he was placed on the commission for the peace in Wiltshire, and in the following year was joint commissioner for musters in the same shire. But he again incurred Elizabeth's wrath in November 1595 by renewing the petition to have the declaration of the invalidity of his marriage set aside, and was once more committed to the Tower (cf. *Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1595, p. 121; *ib.* Addenda, 1580–1625, pp. 406–8). He was released on 3 Jan. following. On 29 May 1602 he was made lord lieutenant of Somerset and Wiltshire, and in June 1603 custos rotulorum of the latter shire. On 19 April 1605 he was sent as ambassador-extraordinary to Brussels. On 28 June 1608 he was reappointed lord-lieutenant of Somerset and Wiltshire, and from June 1612 to March 1619 was high steward of the revenues to Queen Anne. In January 1620–1 he attended parliament (D'EWES, *Autobiogr.* p. 170). He died on 6 April 1621, and was buried with his first wife in Salisbury Cathedral, where a magnificent monument was erected to his memory. A portrait engraved from it is given in Doyle's 'Official Baronage.' In person Hertford appears to have been diminutive.

By his first wife, Lady Catherine Grey, Hertford had, besides a daughter Catherine, who died an infant, two sons, Edward (see below) and Thomas. The latter, who was born in the Tower and baptised on 11 Feb. 1562–3, married Isabel (*d.* 1619), daughter of Edward Onley of Catesby, Northamptonshire, and, dying without issue on 8 Aug. 1600, was buried in St. Margaret's, Westminster (WALCOTT, *St. Margaret's*, p. 29). The report of Scaramelli, the Venetian ambassador, that he was secretly engaged to Arabella Stuart in March 1603 must be incorrect (cf. *Edinb. Rev.* October 1896). The earl married secondly, before 1582 (*Wilts Arch. Mag.* xv. 200–1), Frances, daughter of William, lord Howard of Effingham, who died without issue on 14 May 1598 (CHAMBERLAIN, *Letters*, p. 10); and thirdly, in December 1600, Frances, daughter of Thomas, viscount Howard of Bindon, and widow of Henry Pranell (*ib.* pp. 100, 112), by whom he had no issue. For performing the marriage ceremony in the third case clandestinely without banns or license, and not in the parish church, Thomas Montfort was suspended by Whitgift for three years (STRYPE, *Whitgift*, ii. 333, 453). His widow married, after Hertford's death, Ludovick Stewart, second earl of Lennox [q. v.], and died without issue on 8 Oct. 1639, being buried on the 28th in Westminster Abbey.

The eldest son, EDWARD SEYMOUR, LORD BEAUCHAMP (1561–1612), was born in the Tower on 24 Sept. 1561 (the exact date, in Hertford's writing, is given in a bible used by the earl in the Tower, and now at Longleat). He owes his importance to inheriting the Suffolk claim to the royal succession [see SEYMOUR, CATHERINE]. On 22 Dec. 1576 he matriculated from Magdalen College, Oxford, but did not graduate. In June 1582 he married, without his father's consent, Honora, daughter of Sir Richard Rogers of Bryanstone, Dorset. He was, as a matter of course, visited with Elizabeth's displeasure, and confined within his father's house, whence he petitioned Walsingham to be released (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1581–90, pp. 61, 70). Repeated appeals on his behalf were also brought before William Aubrey [q. v.], master of requests, to set aside the declaration of the invalidity of his mother's marriage. Though these appeals were without result, he was always styled Lord Beauchamp, a title to which he had no right unless he were of legitimate birth (cf. *ib.* 1591–4, p. 121). In 1596 he and his brother Thomas were implicated with Sir John Smith (*d.* 1600?) [q. v.] in some treasonable proceedings in Essex; but, beyond a severe examination, no proceedings were taken against him. The leniency with which father and son were treated was attributed to the existence of a considerable party in favour of his claims to the succession, including, it was said, Cecil, Ralegh, Lord Howard of Effingham, and others (*ib.* Addenda, 1580–1625, pp. 406–8). According to Lady Southwell, Beauchamp's name was suggested as successor to Elizabeth on her deathbed, and she replied, 'I will have no rascal's son in my seat, but one worthy to be a king' (cf. *Cornhill Mag.* March 1897). Apart from the doubt of his legitimacy, he was by act of parliament rightful heir to the throne for a year after James I's accession, until that monarch's title was settled by statute; but he was generally considered unfit to be a king, and no voice was raised in his favour. The appeal for a deci-

sion in favour of his legitimacy was again considered soon after James's accession (see Sir Julius Cæsar's report of proceedings in *Cotton MS.* Caligula, C. xvi. f. 412, which is mutilated), but apparently without success; and on 14 May 1608 Beauchamp obtained a patent in which Hertford was not mentioned as his father, to the effect that he and his heirs should become earls of Hertford and barons of parliament immediately on Hertford's death. Beauchamp, however, predeceased his father in July 1612, being buried at Wick on the 21st, and afterwards removed to a tomb in Salisbury Cathedral (*Epitaphs*, p. 37). He had three sons: (1) Edward (1587–1618), who matriculated from Magdalen College, Oxford, on 16 April 1605, graduated B.A. 9 Dec. 1607, married on 1 June 1609 Anne, third daughter of Robert Sackville, second earl of Dorset [q. v.], was made K.B. 3 Nov. 1616, but predeceased his grandfather without issue, and was buried on 15 Sept. 1618; (2) William, afterwards second duke of Somerset [q. v.]; and (3) Francis, baron Seymour of Trowbridge [q. v.]

[Wilts Archæol. Mag. xv. 150 sq. prints various letters of Hertford and his first wife; Ellis's Original Letters, 2nd ser. vol. ii. passim; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1547–1623; Cal. Hatfield MSS.; Lords' Journals; Lit. Remains Edward VI (Roxburghe Club); Machyn's Diary and Chamberlain's Letters (Camden Soc.); Camden's Elizabeth; Naunton's Fragmenta Regalia; Mrs. Murray Smith's Arabella Stuart, 1889; Collins's and G. E. C.'s Peerages; Bloxam's Reg. Magdalen Coll. Oxford; Hallam's Const. Hist.; Froude's Hist.] A. F. P.

SEYMOUR, Sir EDWARD (1633–1708), speaker of the House of Commons, born in 1633, was eldest son of Sir Edward Seymour (1610–1685), third baronet, who was great-grandson of Sir Edward Seymour (1529–1593), second son of the Protector [see Seymour, Edward, first Duke of Somerset]. Henry Seymour (1612–1686) [q. v.] was his uncle. The father's house of Berry Pomeroy, near Totnes, was plundered by the roundheads at the outset of the civil war; he sat in the king's parliament at Oxford in 1643, compounded with the parliament at Westminster for 1,200*l.*, and was discharged on 23 Oct. 1649. He recovered most of his local influence at the Restoration, and represented Totnes in parliament from 1660 until his death in December 1685. He left by his wife Anne, daughter of Sir John Portman, first baronet of Orchard-Portman, and aunt of Sir William Portman (1641?–1690) [q. v.], Edward, the speaker; John, who obtained a commission in 1673, served in Flanders as captain in the first foot-guards in 1694, and rose to be lieutenant-colonel; Hugh, a captain in the navy, 'killed in the Dutch wars;' William, who became a gentleman of the bedchamber to Prince George of Denmark; and Henry, who inherited the Portman estates.

Edward, who entered the House of Commons as member for Gloucester in 1661, was soon known as an apt speaker, and signalised himself by bringing into the house the impeachment of the Earl of Clarendon on 1 Nov. 1667. Seymour's court influence had already obtained for him the post of commissioner of prizes in the navy, and in this capacity he had in 1665 met Pepys, who found him 'very high,' 'proud and saucy.' He was soon afterwards appointed treasurer of the navy with a salary of 3,000*l.* a year. In the meantime, on 18 Feb. 1672–3, upon the serious indisposition of Sir Job Charlton [q. v.], the House of Commons, upon the nomination of Sir William Coventry [q. v.], unanimously elected Seymour as speaker. During the ensuing summer the king created him a privy councillor, an elevation which elicited much unfavourable comment upon the part of independent members. On 27 Oct. 1673 Sir Thomas Littleton gave expression to this feeling. 'You are too big,' he said to the speaker, 'for that chair and for us, and you that are one of the governors of the world, to be our servant, is incongruous.' Clarges maintained the same view, with the rider that no speaker should be permitted to go to court without leave. Seymour declined to vacate the chair while his own behaviour was being debated, and at the close of the debate, which turned in his favour, 'complimented the house to the effect that he held no employment a greater honour to him than that which he had in their service' (*Parl. Hist.* iv. 593). He was still suspected of partisanship with the court when on 4 Nov. the commons hurried him into the chair that he might put to the vote the motions that the French alliance and the evil counsellors about the king were a grievance. Black Rod 'knocked earnestly' at the door before the question could be put, and some spoke of holding the speaker in his chair, but he leapt out 'very nimbly,' says Reresby, and the house rose in confusion. Subsequently by his courage and an assumption of dignity, which frequently amounted to arrogance, he gained the respect of the house. No one probably ever understood the constitution or the mood of the house better than he, and—at a period before parties were so organised as to determine votes—it was said that by merely looking about him he could tell the fate of any question under discussion. On 4 June 1675 he earned much applause by causing Serjeant Pemberton to

be arrested in Westminster Hall for lack of respect and for an alleged breach of privilege [see PEMBERTON, SIR FRANCIS]. On another occasion, it is related that when at Charing Cross his carriage broke down, the beadles, by his orders, stopped the next gentleman's coach they met, and Seymour drove away in it, merely explaining to the ejected owner that it was fitter for him to walk in the streets than the speaker of the House of Commons. In the new parliament of March 1678–9 Seymour was returned for Devonshire, and was again unanimously elected speaker; but he was now somewhat estranged from the court, especially from Danby, and was no longer acceptable to the king. On submitting himself to the chancellor for the royal approval, he was informed that the king 'thought fit to reserve Seymour for other service, and to ease him of this.' Sacheverell and Powle strongly opposed the power of the crown to reject the choice of the commons. To allay the excitement, the king on 13 March prorogued the house for two days, at the end of which a compromise was effected and Serjeant Gregory appointed (cf. *Hist. MSS. Comm.* 12th Rep. app. vii. 157).

Upon becoming once more a private member, Seymour seems for a time to have co-operated with Halifax, and shared his unpopularity. Thus he opposed the Exclusion Bill, and at the same time urged the Duke of York to change his religion. In November 1680 articles of impeachment were exhibited against him for malversation in his office, but the dissolution put an end to the proceedings (cf. *Add. MS.* 9291, f. 1). Later, in March 1681, he seems to have originated a proposal that the crown should descend to James, but that the Prince of Orange should act as his regent. In 1682 he joined with Halifax in trying to bring about Monmouth's restoration to favour. He was, however, drawing nearer to Rochester, through whose influence he hoped, in 1683, to obtain the privy seal, but the prize fell to Halifax. Seymour nevertheless remained at court, generally acting with Rochester's party. His fears for the protestant religion seem to have been genuine, and at the opening of James II's parliament, in which he represented Exeter, he stood almost alone in overt opposition. He spoke of the abrogation of charters and the arbitrary proceedings at recent elections in terms of unguarded candour, with which few dared to sympathise, so numerous and threatening were the nominees of the court. In the same session, in relation to James's force at Hounslow, he raised his voice against standing armies, consisting, as he said, of people whom nobody knew and no one could trust. During the same year (1685) Seymour succeeded to the baronetcy on his father's death.

Surpassed by none as a staunch tory and churchman, he warmly sympathised with the revolution in its earlier phases. In November 1688 he joined William at Exeter, along with Sir William Portman. 'You,' said the prince to him, 'are of the Duke of Somerset's family?' 'Pardon me, sir,' said Sir Edward, who never forgot that he was head of the elder branch of the Seymours, 'the Duke of Somerset is of *my* family.' While at Exeter he suggested and framed the association in favour of the Prince of Orange, the members of which pledged themselves to hold together until religion and the laws and liberties of the country had been established in a free parliament. This action gained him the confidence of William, who, when he proceeded to Axminster on 25 Nov., left Exeter in Sir Edward's charge. As a parliamentary expert and author of the association, he was well qualified for the office of speaker, when the convention met in January 1689, but he had ranged himself with Rochester in opposing an offer of the crown to William, and Powle was elected.

Early in February he proposed that the house should discuss the state of the nation as a grand committee, and he urged that before the throne was filled liberties must be secured. He was against limiting the duration of parliaments to three years. In the hope of an accession of strength to his party upon a fresh election, he strenuously, but in vain, opposed the motion for turning the convention into a parliament. Great satisfaction was felt at court when Seymour took the oath to the new sovereigns on 2 March, while the Jacobites were proportionately depressed. In November 1689, with unseemly alacrity, he headed a deputation praying William to issue a proclamation for the apprehension of Edmund Ludlow. Seymour had enjoyed Ludlow's forfeited estates in Wiltshire since the Restoration, and he lost no time in hounding the former owner out of the kingdom (LUDLOW, *Memoirs*, 1894, ii. 511). In March 1691–2 he was made a lord of the treasury; but the appointment led to considerable strife owing to Seymour's refusal to give precedence to Richard Hampden, the chancellor of the exchequer, until he was mollified by a seat in the cabinet and a special recommendation to the queen. He lost his place on the formation of the whig junto in April 1694, and henceforth took an increasingly active part in the obstructive tactics of the tories. During the same year there seems no reason to doubt that he was heavily bribed by the old East India Company

to oppose the rival establishment, though the transactions were skilfully cloaked, and he escaped any open censure in the house. Shortly afterwards he lost his seat at Exeter, and had to take refuge in the small borough of Totnes. In 1697 he tendered 10,000*l.* for recoinage, and advised, when parliament met, that supply should be postponed to a discussion of the king's speech. In November 1697 he spoke in defence of Sir John Fenwick, citing ancient history and quoting much Latin, but little to the purpose (cf. Oldmixon, iii. 153, 159). Next year, upon being again returned for Exeter, he was for reducing the civil list to the earlier amount of 600,000*l.* He was prominent in the attacks upon Somers and the Dutch favourites, and was the chief manager of the Resumption Bill for the commons during the early months of 1700. When parliament was prorogued on 11 April, he went to Kensington to take leave of the king. William told him that he did not mean to think of the past, he only hoped they would be better friends next session; to which Seymour, in a tone of conscious superiority and anticipating a tory reaction in the constituencies, replied, 'I doubt it not' (Bonnet's Despatch, ap. Ranke, v. 214).

When the new parliament met in December 1701, Seymour was discovered to be infected by the prevailing enthusiasm for William and the Dutch alliance, owing to Louis XIV's recognition of the Pretender, and he was carried away by the popular fervour for war. Both parties at the new year (1702) were vying with each other in their endeavour to put the king in the best possible position for opening a campaign. The succession of Anne seemed to improve Seymour's prospects. He was in April made comptroller of the royal household, and in May ranger of Windsor Forest. Inopportune as were his strictures upon military abuses, Marlborough and Godolphin tolerated him in the council for two years; but in April 1704 he was abruptly dismissed. His political rancour was well illustrated next year, when upon the eve of Blenheim he vowed that Marlborough should be hunted like a hare upon his return to England. The succession of whig triumphs completely extinguished his influence. He died at his seat of Maiden Bradley on 17 Feb. 1708, and was buried in the parish church. If we may credit Rapin, his death was precipitated by the fright he received at the hands of an old beldame, who assaulted him in his study while the household were absent at a neighbouring fair (*Hist.* 1751, iv. 65–6).

According to Burnet, Seymour was the ablest man of his party, a man of great birth, graceful, bold, and quick, of a pride so 'peculiar to himself that,' says he, 'I never saw anything like it.' He certainly did not yield in arrogance to his cousin, 'the proud duke' of Somerset. In friendship he was grudging and insincere, and he cannot be acquitted of sordid meanness. He represented a class rather than a party, but he was loyal to certain narrow conceptions of patriotic duty. Resenting his suspicions of the whig hero, Macaulay drew a very harsh portrait of Seymour; but it can hardly be denied that the cause of parliamentary control benefited by his shrewdness and tenacity.

Seymour married, first, on 7 Dec. 1661, Margaret, daughter of Sir William Wale, kt., of London, and by her had Sir Edward, fifth baronet, and father of Edward, eighth duke of Somerset [see under Seymour, Charles, sixth Duke]; and Sir William, who entered the army, was captured by a French privateer in 1692, obtained Cutts's regiment, which he commanded with distinction at Namur, was wounded at Landen in July 1693, and died a lieutenant-general in 1728 (D'Auvergne, *Campaigns in Flanders, 1693*, pp. 90–1). He married, secondly, Letitia (*d.* 1729), daughter of Francis Popham of Littlecote, by whom he had six sons and one daughter. Of these the eldest, Popham Seymour-Conway, succeeded to the estates (worth 7,000*l.* a year) of his mother's cousin, Edward Conway, earl of Conway. He was just becoming known as the most extravagant young fop about town when he was mortally wounded in a duel by an officer named Captain Kirke. He forgave his adversary on his deathbed on 18 June 1699; but his father, Sir Edward, prosecuted Kirke with the greatest vehemence, and when Kirke was convicted of manslaughter he tried without success to obtain a writ of appeal. Popham's fortune passed to his next brother, Francis (1679–1732), who assumed the name and arms of Conway, and was created Baron Conway in March 1703; he was father of Francis Seymour Conway, marquis of Hertford [q.v.], and of Fieldmarshal Henry Seymour Conway [q.v.]

A portrait of Seymour, by Roth, was engraved by Worthington, and there is an engraving by Harding from the monument at Maiden Bradley.

[Manning's Lives of the Speakers; G. E. C.'s Complete Peerage, s.v. 'Somerset;' Luttrell's Brief Hist. Relation, vols. iii. iv. v.; Reresby's Diary; Evelyn's Diary; Bulstrode Papers, 1 Nov. 1667; Burnet's Own Time; Eachard's Hist. of England; Christie's Life of Shaftesbury; Boyer's Annals of Anne, 1735, pp. 14, 36, 38, 125, 209;

Macaulay's Hist. of England; Ranke's Hist. of England; Wyon's Hist. of Queen Anne, i. 301; Coxe's Life of Marlborough, ii. 307; Cook's Hist. of Parties; Townsend's Hist. of the House of Commons; Dalton's English Army Lists; Hist. MSS. Comm. 7th Rep. App. p. 301, 12th Rep. app. vii. passim.] T. S.

SEYMOUR, EDWARD ADOLPHUS, eleventh DUKE OF SOMERSET (1775–1855), born on 24 Feb. 1775 at Monckton Farley in Wiltshire, was the third but eldest surviving son of Webb Seymour, tenth duke, by his wife Anna Maria, daughter and heir of John Bonnell of Stanton-Harcourt in Oxfordshire. His grandfather, Edward (1695–1757), who came of the elder branch of the Seymour family, succeeded as eighth Duke of Somerset on the failure of the younger line in 1750 [see SEYMOUR, EDWARD, first DUKE OF SOMERSET]. Edward was educated at Eton and matriculated at Christ Church, Oxford, on 31 Jan. 1792. He succeeded to the peerage on the death of his father on 15 Dec. 1793. He was created M.A. at Oxford on 2 July 1794, and received the honorary degree of D.C.L. on 3 July 1810. From an early age he devoted himself to science and mathematics, displaying genuine aptitude for both studies. He was equally well versed in historical and antiquarian knowledge, and Patrick Fraser Tytler [q. v.] the historian valued his judgment in these matters highly. In 1797 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society, in 1816 a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries, and in 1820 a fellow of the Linnean Society. He was also a member of the Royal Asiatic Society. He took an interest in the Royal Institution, of which he was president for some years, and from 1801 to 1838 he was president of the Royal Literary Fund. From 1826 to 1831 he was vice-president of the Zoological Society, and in 1834 he was chosen president of the Linnean Society, and held the office till 1837. He was bearer of the orb at the coronation of William IV in 1831 and of Victoria in 1838. On 19 April 1837 he was elected a knight of the Garter. He was esteemed an excellent landlord, and, unlike most large landowners, supported the repeal of the corn laws. In the period of agricultural depression which followed he showed his confidence in the measure by making large purchases of land. He died in London at Somerset House, Park Lane, on 15 Aug. 1855, and was buried at Kensal Green cemetery.

He was twice married: first, to Charlotte, second daughter of Archibald, ninth duke of Hamilton; she died on 10 June 1837, leaving three surviving sons and four daughters. The sons, Edward Adolphus Seymour, twelfth duke [q. v.], Archibald Henry Algernon, and Algernon Percy Banks (father of the present duke), all succeeded in turn to the title. The second wife of the eleventh duke of Somerset was Margaret, eldest daughter of Sir Michael Shaw-Stewart of Blackhall, Renfrewshire. She died at Somerset House on 18 July 1880.

The duke was the author of: 1. 'The Elementary Properties of the Ellipse deduced from the Properties of the Circle,' London, 1842, 8vo. 2. 'Alternate Circles and their Connexion with the Ellipse,' London, 1850, 12mo.

[Times, 16 Aug. 1855, 1st ed.; Gent. Mag. 1855, ii. 425; Michell's Tour of the Duke of Somerset through parts of England, Wales, and Scotland in 1795, published 1845; Foster's Alumni Oxon., 1715–1886; G. E. C.'s Peerage; Foster's Peerage.] E. I. C.

SEYMOUR, EDWARD ADOLPHUS SEYMOUR, twelfth DUKE OF SOMERSET (1804–1885), statesman and author, born on 20 Dec. 1804, was eldest son of Edward Adolphus Seymour, eleventh duke of Somerset [q. v.], by his first wife, and was educated at Eton and Christ Church, Oxford, matriculating on 11 Oct. 1823, but leaving the university without a degree. He then travelled abroad, visiting Russia among other countries. He married, on 10 June 1830, Jane Georgiana, the youngest of the three beautiful daughters of Thomas, only son of Richard Brinsley Sheridan [q. v.], by his marriage with Miss Linley. Her two elder sisters married respectively Price Blackwood, fourth baron Dufferin, and the Hon. G. C. Norton [see NORTON, CAROLINE ELIZABETH SARAH]. Lord Seymour, as he was commonly called, fought a duel in 1835 with Sir Colquhoun Grant, who challenged him because he would not deny having been privy to the elopement of Sir Colquhoun's only daughter and heiress with his wife's brother, R. B. Sheridan. After shots had been exchanged without injury to either combatant, Seymour avowed his ignorance of the transaction. His wife had helped her brother to obtain the hand of the heiress, and she did so without informing her husband. In August 1839 his wife presided as 'Queen of Beauty' over the tournament at Eglinton Castle [see MONTGOMERIE, ARCHIBALD WILLIAM, thirteenth EARL OF EGLINTON].

Seymour entered the House of Commons as member for Okehampton in 1830, and for twenty-one years, from 1834 to 1855, was member for Totnes. He was a consistent liberal. In 1835 he was appointed a lord of the treasury in Melbourne's administration. In 1839 he was promoted to be secretary to

the board of control, and in 1840 he carried through the house a bill which received the royal assent, for establishing a board of superintendence for railways. He was undersecretary for the home department during two months in 1841. He voted for the repeal of the corn laws. Lord John Russell appointed him first commissioner of works in 1851, with a seat in the cabinet, but he was out of office for several years following the resignation of Lord John Russell in 1852. During the campaign in the Crimea he served on a committee of the house to inquire into the state of the army. When the borough of Totnes was disfranchised in 1855 he ceased to be a member of the House of Commons, but took his seat in the House of Lords, as Duke of Somerset, on his father's death on 15 Aug. in the same year.

When Palmerston formed an administration in 1859, the Duke of Somerset was appointed first lord of the admiralty, an office which he filled till 1866. Although not very popular, he was an efficient administrator. He was created K.G. on 21 May 1862, and Earl St. Maur of Berry Pomeroy on 17 June 1863. After his retirement in 1866 he took an active part, out of office, in supporting most of the liberal measures which came before the house, including the bill for the abolition of purchase in the army. He gave an intermittent support to the other measures of Mr. Gladstone's administration of 1868–74, which he declined to join. Subsequently his liberalism grew lukewarm.

In his younger days he sought recreation in yachting cruises in the Mediterranean. His later life was embittered by the loss of his two sons, after which he sought consolation in a study of the historical aspects of Christianity. In 1872 he published a small book on 'Christian Theology and Modern Scepticism.' Another by him, on 'Monarchy and Democracy,' appeared in 1880. He died at Stover Park, Torquay, on 28 Nov. 1885. His wife had predeceased him on 14 Dec. 1884.

His elder son, Edward Adolphus Ferdinand, Earl St. Maur, died on 30 Sept. 1869, and his younger son, Edward Percy, who was in the diplomatic service, on 20 Dec. 1865. Both were unmarried. The dukedom therefore devolved successively on the twelfth duke's two younger brothers, Archibald Henry Algernon, thirteenth duke (1810–1891), and Algernon Percy Banks, fourteenth duke (1813–1894).

[Ann. Register for 1885; Letters, Remains, and Memorials of E. A. Seymour, twelfth Duke of Somerset, K.G., ed. W. H. Mallock and Lady Guendolen Ramsden, 1893; Spencer Walpole's Life of Earl Russell, ii. 423.] F. R.

SEYMOUR, EDWARD JAMES (1796–1866), physician and medical writer, was the third son of William Seymour of 65 Margaret Street, Cavendish Square, London, by his wife, Thyphena Letithœa, eldest daughter of Daniel Foulston of London. His father, a member of a family settled in Lincolnshire in the middle of the seventeenth century, was an attorney-at-law, who resided at Brighton for thirty years, and was a magistrate and deputy-lieutenant for the county of Sussex, and chairman of the quarter sessions. The son, born on 30 March 1796, was baptised at the church of St. Nicholas, Lower Tooting. He received his education at Richmond School, Surrey, and at Jesus College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in January 1816, M.A. in 1819, and M.D. in 1826. He had a license 'ad practicandum' from his university in 1822. He also studied medicine in London, Edinburgh, and Paris; he was admitted an inceptor candidate of the College of Physicians on 22 Dec. 1823, a candidate on 30 Sept. 1826, and a fellow on 1 Oct. 1827. At the college he subsequently held the posts of Gulstonian lecturer in 1829, censor in 1830, Croonian lecturer in 1831, and consiliarius in 1836.

As the law at that time did not permit physicians to practise in London under the age of twenty-six, the first years of his professional life were passed in Italy, and chiefly at Florence, where he made a large income and formed a connection that was of advantage to him in after life. In 1823 he returned to England, and, establishing himself at 23 George Street, Hanover Square, soon acquired a good practice. On 28 Nov. 1828 he was elected physician to St. George's Hospital; he held the post till 1847, and rose to be senior physician. He was remarkable for his facility in communicating knowledge to the students at the bedside. Soon after settling in London he became physician to the Dreadnought hospital ship at Greenwich, and subsequently consulting physician to the Seamen's Hospital. He was also physician to H.R.H. the Duke of Sussex. From 1 Sept. 1831 to 1839 he was a metropolitan commissioner in lunacy; he latterly devoted much of his attention to insane cases, and was one of the first to use opium freely in the treatment of mental diseases. In 1859 he published a letter, which he addressed to the Earl of Shaftesbury, 'On the Laws which regulate Private Lunatic Asylums, with a comparative View of the process "de lunatico inquirendo" in England and the law of France.' To it are added a few observations on the causes of insanity and on the improvement in the treatment of

mental diseases during the preceding twenty-five years. On 17 June 1841 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society; he was also a fellow of the Royal Medical and Chirurgical Society, and a member of the Royal Medical and Wernerian Society of Edinburgh, and of the Imperial and Royal Academy of Science of Siena.

Seymour died at his residence, 13 Charles Street, Berkeley Square, on 16 April 1866, from organic disease of the stomach and liver. There is a slightly coloured lithograph of him, executed by Slater, about 1830, and a bust in wax, by Foley, which was to have been reproduced in marble. Both portrait and bust are in the possession of the Rev. Edward Seymour at Bratton Clovelly parsonage. On 4 Sept. 1817 he married Maria Searancke of Clapton, and by her had a family of six sons and four daughters. The eldest son, Lieutenant-colonel Charles Frederick Seymour, C.B., of the 84th regiment, was acting adjutant-general at the siege of Lucknow.

Seymour was an accomplished man outside the range of his professional practice. His works possess considerable literary merit. The chief are: 1. 'Diseases of the Ovaria' (with a volume of plates), 1830. 2. 'Observations on the Medical Treatment of Insanity,' 1832. 3. 'Nature and Treatment of Dropsy,' 1837. 4. 'Thoughts on the Treatment of several severe Diseases of the Human Body,' 1847. He also published: 'On Tumours in the Abdomen' ('Trans. Med. Chir. Soc.,' vol. xiii.); 'On some of the Diseases of the Stomach' ('Med. Gaz.,' vol. i.); and a series of papers 'On the specific Effect of Atmospheric Poison in the Production of Fever' ('Med. Gaz.,' vols. iii.–iv.)

[Proceedings of Med. Chirurgical Soc. 1867, v. 251; Munk's Coll. of Phys.; Churchill's Directory; Lancet, 1866; Medical Times and Gazette, 1866; information supplied by his son, the Rev. Edward Seymour, rector of Bratton Clovelly, Devonshire.] W. W. W.

SEYMOUR, FRANCIS, first Baron Seymour of Trowbridge (1590?–1664), born about 1590, was the third son of Edward Seymour, lord Beauchamp (1561–1612), by his wife Honora, daughter of Sir Richard Rogers of Bryanstone, Dorset. Edward Seymour, earl of Hertford [q. v.], was his grandfather. William Seymour, second duke of Somerset [q. v.], was his eldest brother. Francis was knighted by James I at Royston on 23 Oct. 1613. In June 1611 he was accused of abetting the escape of his brother William and Arabella Stuart, but protested his innocence (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1611–1618, p. 39). On 26 Dec. 1620 he entered parliament as member for Wiltshire. In the following May he distinguished himself by the severity of the penalties he proposed to inflict on Edward Floyd [q. v.] During the session of 1624 he made strenuous efforts to bring about a war with Spain, but protested against any extensive military operations on the continent, and opposed the despatch of an army to the Palatinate on the ground of the 'extreme charge' (Gardiner, v. 342, 345; Seeley, *British Policy*, i. 336). On 10 May 1625 he was again returned for Wiltshire, and on 30 July following proposed to limit the grant to one subsidy and one-fifteenth, about a tenth of what Charles required to meet his engagements. Buckingham made overtures to him which were rejected, and in July Seymour refused to join in the attack on Lord-keeper Williams because it was secretly abetted by the duke. In August he attacked the government for engaging in a continental war, inveighing against peculation in high places and the sale of offices at court; on these grounds he dissuaded the house from granting supplies. He was re-elected to the new parliament summoned in February 1625–6, but was made sheriff of Wiltshire to prevent his sitting. In the following July his name was struck off the commission of the peace.

Thenceforth Seymour adhered to Wentworth's policy of moderation. In March 1627–8 he was elected to parliament as member both for Wiltshire and Marlborough. On 29 April he joined Noy and Digges in their attempt to modify the commons' bill of liberties, and supported Wentworth's Habeas Corpus Bill. He also advocated with Wentworth against Eliot a joint-committee of the two houses on the petition of right. The proposal made by the lords was rejected by the commons. In May 1639 he refused to pay ship-money, and in the following March was elected without opposition member for Wiltshire to the Short parliament. He was re-elected for the same constituency to the Long parliament. In April 1640 he spoke against ecclesiastical grievances, and in November he again attacked the government. But he soon began to differ from the popular party, and on 19 Feb. 1640–1 he was created Baron Seymour of Trowbridge, Wiltshire. He insisted on voting against Strafford's attainder in the lords, though the opposite party denied his competence to vote on the ground that he was not a peer when the charges against Strafford were first brought up. In June 1642 he signed the declaration that the king had no intention of war, followed him to York, and offered to raise twenty horse in

his cause; parliament accordingly declared him a delinquent. In the following autumn he accompanied his brother, the Marquis of Hertford, into the west to organise the royalist forces and suppress the parliamentary militia, and in September he crossed from Minehead to Glamorganshire on a similar errand. In December 1643 he signed the letter of the peers to the council in Scotland, protesting against the invitation sent by parliament to the Scots to invade England. Early in 1645 he was on the commission for the defence and government of Oxford and the adjacent counties; in February he was one of the commissioners appointed to treat at Uxbridge, and in May he was made chancellor of the duchy of Lancaster. He was at Oxford when it surrendered on 22 June. He was admitted to composition, and his fine was fixed at 3,725*l.* He attended a council at Hampton Court on 7 Oct. 1647, but took no part in politics during the Commonwealth and Protectorate. At the Restoration he was reappointed chancellor of the duchy of Lancaster. He died on 12 July 1664, and was buried in the chancel of Bedwyn Magna church (Aubrey, *Top. Coll. Wilts*, p. 378). His house at Marlborough, where Aubrey visited him at Christmas 1648, is now an inn (cf. Evelyn, *Diary*, ed. Bray, i. 289).

Seymour married, first, Frances, eldest daughter and coheir of Sir Gilbert Prynne (*d.* 1628) of Chippenham; by her he had issue Charles, second baron Seymour of Trowbridge (*d.* 1665), whose son Francis in 1675 succeeded his cousin as fifth duke of Somerset [see Seymour, Charles, sixth Duke of Somerset]. He married, secondly, Catherine, daughter of Sir Robert Lee, by whom he had no issue.

[Seymour's Correspondence and Family Papers are extant in Addit. MS. 32324; a tract by him on usury is in Egerton MS. 71. See also Addit. MSS. 6411 f. 30, 29315 f. 17; Cal. State Papers, Dom. passim; Cal. Clarendon State Papers, ed. Macray; Journals of the Lords and Commons; Off. Ret. Members of Parliament; Strafford Papers, i. 264; Metcalfe's Book of Knights; Clarendon's Hist. of the Rebellion; Gardiner's Hist. and Civil War; Forster's Eliot; Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. vi. 500, vii. 28.]

A. F. P.

SEYMOUR, FRANCIS (INGRAM), second Marquis of Hertford (1743–1822), born in London on 12 Feb. 1743, was eldest son of Francis Seymour Conway, first marquis of Hertford [q. v.], by Isabella, youngest daughter of Charles Fitzroy, second duke of Grafton. After being educated at Eton he matriculated from Christ Church, Oxford, 2 Feb. 1760, and was created M.A. 15 June 1762. As Viscount Beauchamp he represented Lisburne in the Irish House of Commons, 1761–8. In 1765 he was made a privy councillor for Ireland, and for one year, 1765–6, was chief secretary to the lord-lieutenant of Ireland; on resigning that post he was appointed constable of Dublin Castle (*Grenville Papers*, iii. 325).

In 1766 he entered the English House of Commons, sitting from 1766 to 1768 as member for Lostwithiel, and for Oxford from 1768 to 1794. He was a lord of the treasury in Lord North's administration from 11 March 1774 to 31 Jan. 1780, and was appointed cofferer of the household 1 Feb. 1780, and a privy councillor for Great Britain, 2 Feb. 1780. From 1774 to 1788 he was a frequent speaker in the House of Commons, speaking whenever he addressed the House, 'if not with eloquence, at least with knowledge of the subject' (Wraxall, *Memoirs*, iv. 137). He opposed in April 1774 the motion for the repeal of the American tea duty, declaring himself by no means prepared to cede the mother country's right of taxing colonies (*Parl. Hist.* xviii. 1271), and in December 1777 he moved the previous question on Wilkes's motion to repeal the American Declaratory Act. But although a member of Lord North's administrations, his political sympathies were largely with Fox. In May 1778 he declared himself strongly in favour of the repeal of the penal acts affecting Roman catholics in Ireland (*ib.* xix. 1141), and throughout his parliamentary career showed himself in favour of religious toleration (*ib.* xxvi. 823). He introduced an act for the relief of debtors with respect to the imprisonment of their persons in February 1780, when he was highly complimented by Burke, who supported the bill (*ib.* xx. 1399). On Fox's motion for the repeal of the Irish Declaratory Act (6 Geo. I), on 16 April 1782, he declared that the simple repeal would not satisfy Ireland unless a counter declaratory clause of Irish parliamentary independence was inserted in the repealing act (*Parl. Hist.* xxiii. 31; *Life of the Rt. Hon. Henry Flood*, p. 165; Lecky, *Hist. Eighteenth Cent.* vi. 105). These views he emphasised in a pamphlet, 'A Letter to the First Company of Belfast Volunteers,' published in Dublin, 1782. On 4 Feb. 1784 the House of Lords resolved 'that an attempt in any one branch of the legislature to suspend the execution of law by assuming to itself the direction of discretionary power is unconstitutional.' Beauchamp proposed, a few days later, six counter resolutions, which he carried against the ministers by a majority

of thirty-one (*Parl. Hist.* xxiv. 546). When the subject of commercial union between England and Ireland was before the house in May 1785, Beauchamp unsuccessfully opposed Pitt's fourth proposition, which bound Ireland to adopt such regulations as Great Britain should enact (*ib.* xxv. 738), and expressed himself as opposed to any idea of compulsion of the Irish parliament, his opinion being that 'the only lasting connection between the two countries can be of freedom and common interest, not of power' (*Letter to the First Company of Belfast Volunteers*). Although a warm advocate of the independence of the Irish parliament, he regarded the interests of the two countries as inseparable and their political connection as indissoluble (*Parl. Hist.* xx. 1202).

After 1788 Beauchamp ceased to take so prominent a part in the House of Commons, but in 1793 he gave strong support to Pitt in the matter of the alien bill, and during the debate on the king's message asking for the augmentation of the forces (*ib.* xxx. 197, 291). On his father being created Marquis of Hertford in 1793 he took the title of Earl of Yarmouth, and was employed as ambassador extraordinary and plenipotentiary to Berlin and Vienna, 1793–4. He succeeded to the peerage as second Marquis of Hertford on his father's death, 23 June 1794, but in the debates of the House of Lords on political matters he took no part.

Hertford was appointed master of the horse 11 July 1804, holding that office till 12 Feb. 1806. He was invested knight of the Garter 18 July 1807, and appointed lord chamberlain of the household 7 March 1812, and held that office till 11 Dec. 1821. In February 1822 he was created vice-admiral of Suffolk. He died, 17 June 1822, at Hertford House, Manchester Square, and was buried in the family vault at Ragley in Warwickshire. He married, in February 1768, Alicia Elizabeth, second daughter and coheir of Herbert, first viscount Windsor; she died on 11 Feb. 1772, aged 22. He married, secondly, 20 May 1776, Isabella Anne Ingram Shepherd, daughter and coheir of Charles, ninth and last viscount Irvine (*d.* 1778), by his wife Frances Gibson (born Shepherd). Upon the death of the latter, on 20 Nov. 1807, leaving a 'very large fortune,' Hertford and his wife took the name of Ingram before that of Seymour. The Marchioness of Hertford, who survived her husband until 12 April 1836, was a lady of great wealth and possessed of great personal charms; for many years she exercised considerable influence over the regent (Wraxall, *Memoirs*, iv. 138).

The only son (by the second marriage) was Francis Charles Seymour-Conway, third Marquis of Hertford (1777–1842). Born 11 March 1777, he graduated B.A. from St. Mary Hall, Oxford, 1796, and represented the family boroughs of Orford, Lisburne, and Camelford (1819–1822). He had great influence with the regent, of whose household he was vice-chamberlain, and was created K.G. on 22 Nov. 1822, shortly after succeeding to the peerage. He was in 1827 envoy extraordinary (bearing the order of the Garter) to Nicholas I of Russia, from whom he had in 1821 received the order of St. Anne; but he is best remembered as the original of the Marquis of Steyne in Thackeray's 'Vanity Fair' and Lord Monmouth in Disraeli's 'Coningsby.' He married, 18 May 1798, the great heiress Maria Fagniani [see under Selwyn, George], and died at Dorchester House, Park Lane, on 1 March 1842. His portrait, by Sir Thomas Lawrence, was engraved for Doyle's 'Official Baronage' (cf. *Croker's Corresp.*; G. E. C.'s *Complete Peerage*). He was succeeded as fourth marquis by his son Richard Seymour Conway (1800–1870), known from 1822 until his father's death as Earl of Yarmouth. Like his brother, Lord Henry Seymour [q. v.], he led an epicurean existence in Paris, rarely, if ever, visiting England, and amassing a splendid collection of pictures and articles of vertu, which he left, along with his Irish estates, to Sir Richard Wallace [q. v.] Upon the fourth marquis's death, on 25 Aug. 1870, the peerage passed to Francis George Hugh, son of Sir George Francis Seymour [q. v.]

[Collins's Peerage of Engl. ed. Brydges, ii. 566; Doyle's Official Baronage; Gent. Mag. 1822, i. 561; Wraxall's Memoirs, ed. 1884, iii. 137.]

W. C–R.

SEYMOUR, Sir FRANCIS (1813–1890), general, eldest son of Henry Augustus Seymour, by Margaret, daughter of the Rev. William Williams of Cromlech, co. Anglesey, was born on 2 Aug. 1813, and was commissioned as ensign in the 19th foot on 2 May 1834. He became lieutenant 16 June 1837. In February 1839, at the request of the king of the Belgians, he joined Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg at Florence, and accompanied him during his travels in Italy. In 1840, after Prince Albert's marriage with the queen, he was appointed groom-in-waiting to him, and retained the office till the prince's death.

He was promoted captain on 4 Sept. 1840, and on 21 Jan. 1842 he exchanged into the Scots fusilier guards, in which regiment he obtained a company on 28 June 1850. He

went with the first battalion to the Crimea in 1854, and was present at Alma, Balaclava, and Inkerman. In the course of the latter battle the command of the battalion devolved on him, and he was himself wounded. He was again severely wounded in the latter part of the siege by a fragment of a shell, which struck the back of his head, when he was field officer in command in the trenches of the right attack. He was made brevet-colonel on 28 Nov. 1854, and C.B. on 2 Jan. 1857. He received the Crimean medal with four clasps, and the Turkish medal, the Legion of Honour (fourth class) and Medjidie (fourth class).

He was promoted major in his regiment on 14 June 1858, and lieutenant-colonel on 13 Feb. 1863; he went on half pay on 10 July 1863, and on 25 Nov. 1864 became major-general. He held the command of the troops in Malta from 1 Jan. 1872 to 5 April 1874. He was made lieutenant-general 23 May 1873, colonel of the Devonshire regiment (11th) 7 Feb. 1874, K.C.B. 29 May 1875, and general 1 Oct. 1877. On 1 July 1881 he was placed on the retired list.

After the death of the prince consort, in December 1861, he was appointed groom-in-waiting to the queen. In 1869 he was made a baronet, and in February 1876 he became master of ceremonies and an extra groom-in-waiting. He was à knight grand cross of the Saxe-Ernestine order.

Seymour died at Kensington palace on 10 July 1890. He married, in 1869, Agnes Austin, eldest daughter of the Rev. H. D. Wickham, rector of Horsington, Somerset, by whom he had one son and three daughters.

[Times, 12 July 1890; Annual Reg. 1890; Early Years of the Prince Consort; Kinglake's Invasion of the Crimea.] E. M. L.

SEYMOUR, FREDERICK BEAUCHAMP PAGET, Lord Alcester (1821–1895), admiral, son of Colonel Sir Horace Beauchamp Seymour, grandson of Lord Hugh Seymour [q. v.] and nephew of Sir George Francis Seymour [q. v.], was born in London on 12 April 1821. He received his early education at Eton, and entered the navy in January 1834. He passed his examination in 1840; served as a mate in the Britannia, flagship of Sir John Acworth Ommanney [q. v.] in the Mediterranean, and was promoted to the rank of lieutenant on 7 March 1842. He was then appointed to the Thalia frigate, with Captain George Hope, in the Pacific; and from 1844 to 1847 was flag-lieutenant to his uncle, Sir George Seymour, then commander-in-chief in the Pacific. On 5 June 1847 he was promoted to be commander. In 1852 he served as a volunteer on the staff of General Godwin in Burma, and was four times gazetted for distinguished conduct. In May 1853 he commissioned the Brisk for the North American and West Indian station, whence he was recalled early in 1854 and sent to the White Sea in the squadron under Commodore (afterwards Admiral) Sir Erasmus Ommanney. In May 1855 he was appointed to the Meteor floating battery, which he took out to the Crimea, and brought back to Portsmouth in the early summer of 1856—two feats of seamanship scarcely less dangerous than any war services. In July 1857 he commissioned the Pelorus, which he commanded for nearly six years on the Australian station, where in 1860–1 he commanded the naval brigade in New Zealand during the Maori war; in acknowledgment of this service he was made a C.B. on 16 July 1861.

From 1868 to 1870 he was private secretary to the first lord of the admiralty, Hugh Culling Eardley Childers. On 1 April 1870 he was promoted to the rank of rear-admiral. From December 1870 to May 1872 he commanded the flying squadron, and in 1872–4 was one of the lords of the admiralty. From 1874 to 1877 he commanded the Channel fleet; was made a vice-admiral on 31 Dec. 1876, and a K.C.B. on 2 June 1877. From 1880 to 1883 he was commander-in-chief in the Mediterranean; having thus, in 1880, the command of the European squadron of demonstration on the Albanian coast consequent on the refusal of Turkey to cede Dulcigno to Montenegro. On the dispersal of the fleet after the Porte had yielded the point, Seymour received the thanks of the government and was made a G.C.B., 24 May 1881. In the following year he commanded in the bombardment of Alexandria (11 July 1882), and afterwards in the operations on the coast of Egypt. For this service he was raised to the peerage as Baron Alcester of Alcester in the county of Warwick, and received a parliamentary grant of 25,000*l.*, the freedom of the city of London, and a sword of honour. From March 1883 to June 1885 he was again a lord of the admiralty; and on 12 April 1886, having attained the age of sixty-five, was placed on the retired list. During the following years he lived principally in London, where his genial nature rendered him a favourite in society, while his attention to his dress and personal appearance obtained for him the name of 'The Ocean Swell.' Latterly his eyesight failed and his health was much broken. He died at his chambers

in Ryder Street, St. James's, on 30 March 1895, and was buried at Brookwood on 3 April. He was unmarried, and at his death the title became extinct.

[Times, April 1895; Army and Navy Gazette, 6 April 1895.] J. K. L.

SEYMOUR, Sir GEORGE FRANCIS (1787–1870), admiral of the fleet, eldest son of Vice-admiral Lord Hugh Seymour [q. v.], was born on 17 Sept. 1787. He entered the navy in October 1797 on board the Princess Augusta yacht, with Captain Edward Riou, and from March 1798 to September 1801 was with his father in the Sanspareil and the Prince of Wales in the Channel and the West Indies. In 1802–3 he was in the Endymion, mostly on the home station, with Captain John Larmour, and afterwards with the Hon. Charles Paget [q. v.] Towards the end of 1803 he was sent out to the Victory, flagship of Lord Nelson in the Mediterranean, and in February 1804 was sent to the Madras as acting lieutenant. A few weeks afterwards he was moved into the Donegal with Sir Richard John Strachan [q. v.], who, early in 1805, was succeeded by Pulteney Malcolm [q. v.] On 12 Oct. 1804 Seymour was confirmed as a lieutenant, and, continuing in the Donegal, took part in the chase of the allied fleet to the West Indies and back, and in the capture of the Spanish ship El Rayo immediately after the battle of Trafalgar. Early in 1806 he joined the Northumberland, flagship of Sir Alexander Forrester Inglis Cochrane [q. v.], in the West Indies, and on 6 Feb. took part in the battle of St. Domingo, where he was severely wounded in the jaw by a grape shot. He had already been promoted to the rank of commander on 22 Jan. 1806, and on 9 Feb. was appointed to the Kingfisher sloop, in which, on 14 May, he was in company with Lord Cochrane in the Pallas, and was able to rescue him from a dangerous position in the entrance of the Basque roads [see Cochrane, Thomas, tenth Earl of Dundonald]. On 29 July 1806 he was posted to the command of the Aurora in the Mediterranean, from which, in February 1808, he was moved to the Pallas on the home station. In April 1809 she was attached to the fleet with Lord Gambier off the Basque roads, and on the 12th Seymour made a gallant effort to support Cochrane in his attempt to destroy the French ships. Afterwards, at the court-martial on Lord Gambier, he gave evidence strongly in favour of Cochrane's assertion—that the whole might have been destroyed (Dundonald, *Autobiography of a Seaman*, i. 392, ii. 54–5).

In September 1809 Seymour was appointed to the 36-gun frigate Manilla, which was lost off the Texel in January 1812 during his temporary absence. In June 1812 he was appointed to the Fortunée, and from January 1813 to September 1814 he commanded the Leonidas in the West Indies. On 4 June 1815 he was nominated a C.B., and on 28 May 1816 was awarded a pension of 250*l.* for his wound received in the battle of St. Domingo. From 1818 to 1841 he was sergeant-at-arms to the House of Lords. In 1827 he commanded the Briton for a few months on particular service. He was naval aide-de-camp to William IV from August to November 1830, and from that time till the king's death was master of the robes. In 1831 he was made a K.C.H., and G.C.H. on 9 Dec. 1834. He was promoted to be rear-admiral on 23 Nov. 1841. From September 1841 to May 1844 he was one of the lords of the admiralty; and from 1844 to 1848 was commander-in-chief in the Pacific, where 'the tact, ability, and decision' he showed during the strained relations with France in respect of 'the Pritchard affair' [see Pritchard, George], and the negotiations with the United States about the fisheries, were formally recognised by the government.

On 27 March 1850 he was made a vice-admiral, and on 7 April 1852 a K.C.B. From January 1851 to November 1853 he was commander-in-chief on the North America and West Indies station; and from January 1856 to March 1859 commander-in-chief at Portsmouth. On 14 May 1857 he was promoted to the rank of admiral, was nominated a G.C.B. on 18 May 1860, rear-admiral of the United Kingdom in April 1863, vice-admiral in September 1865, and admiral of the fleet on 30 Nov. 1866. He died of bronchitis on 20 Jan. 1870. He married, in 1811, Georgiana Mary, daughter of Sir George Cranfield Berkeley [q. v.], and had issue four daughters and three sons, the eldest of whom, Francis George Hugh (1812–1884), in August 1870 succeeded his second cousin as fifth marquis of Hertford [see under Seymour, Francis (Ingram)]. He was appointed groom of the robes in 1833, was lord-chamberlain 1874–1879, and died at Ragley on 25 Jan. 1884, from injuries caused by a fall from his horse.

[O'Byrne's Naval Biogr. Dict.; Times, 24 Jan. 1870, 26 Jan. 1884; Navy Lists; Forster's Peerage.] J. K. L.

SEYMOUR, GEORGE HAMILTON (1797–1880), diplomatist, eldest son of Lord George Seymour (seventh son of Francis Seymour Conway, first earl of Hertford

[q. v.]) and Isabella, daughter of the Hon. and Rev. George Hamilton, was born at Harrow in 1797. He was educated at first for the navy, which he soon left, and went to Eton. Thence he proceeded to Merton College, Oxford, where he was a postmaster, and graduated B.A. in 1818 and M.A. in 1823. Previously, on 28 March 1813, he had been appointed gentleman usher in daily waiting at court, and in March 1817 attaché to the legation at The Hague. In December 1819 he returned to London as précis-writer to Lord Castlereagh at the foreign office, and on 29 Jan. 1822 became his private secretary. In October 1822 he was attached to the Duke of Wellington's special mission to Verona. On 18 Aug. 1823 he became secretary of legation at Frankfurt, and was transferred on 6 Sept. 1826 to Stuttgart, on 28 Dec. 1827 to Berlin, and on 30 July 1829 to Constantinople.

On 13 Nov. 1830 Seymour was appointed minister resident at Florence, and on 13 Nov. 1836 envoy-extraordinary and minister-plenipotentiary to the Belgian court, where he took part in the negotiations by which the independence of Belgium was finally secured. On 10 Dec. 1846 he was removed to Lisbon in the same capacity, and represented the British government through the greater part of the period of insurrection when the British power supported the Portuguese crown. On 28 April 1851 he was appointed to St. Petersburg, where his diplomacy was put to a severe test in the strained relations which arose between Russia and the western powers on the eastern question. He was in frequent intercourse with the czar, and his attitude at this time received the approval of the government. In February 1854, on the outbreak of the Crimean war, he was recalled. On 11 Oct. 1854 he was pensioned; but on 23 Nov. 1855, having just been made privy councillor, he became envoy-extraordinary to Austria, and again took a prominent part in the conferences on the eastern question at Vienna. He finally retired on pension in April 1858. He had been made G.C.H. on 16 March 1836 and G.C.B. on 28 Jan. 1847. He died on 2 Feb. 1880 at his residence, 10 Grosvenor Crescent, and was buried at Kensal Green.

Seymour married, in 1831, Gertrude Brand, third daughter of Lord Dacre, by whom he had four sons and three daughters.

[Times, 4 Feb. 1880; Foreign Office List, 1880; Burke's Peerage, s.v. 'Hertford;' Hertslet's State Papers.] C. A. H.

SEYMOUR, HENRY (1612–1686), groom of the bedchamber to Charles II, born in 1612, was second (not fifth) son of Sir Edward Seymour, second baronet of Berry Pomeroy Devonshire, by his wife Dorothy, daughter of Sir Henry Killigrew of Lothbury, Cornwall (pedigree in *Harl. Soc.* vi. 256; Burke's *Extinct Baronetage*). He was in youth page of honour to Charles I. On the outbreak of the civil war he joined the royalist forces under his kinsman William Seymour, marquis of Hertford [q. v.], and in August 1643 was the bearer of the challenge from him to the Earl of Bedford (Clarendon, *Rebellion*, vii. 185). Attaching himself to Prince Charles, he carried the message from him to the earl of Warwick in August 1648 concerning the surrender of the fleet (*ib.* xi. 69), and the last message which the prince sent to his father Charles I before the latter's execution (Ludlow, *Memoirs*, ed. Firth, ii. 286). He was sent by Charles II from Jersey to Ireland in September 1649 (Gardiner, *Commonwealth*, i. 160, 207). He accompanied Charles to Scotland in 1650, was voted away from the king's person by the Scottish committee, and left at Aberdeen after the defeat at Dunbar (*Cal. Clarendon Papers*, ii. 69, 77, 87). In 1651 he is described as of Charles's bedchamber at Paris (Clarendon, ubi supra, xiii. 108), and was frequently despatched by the king to his friends in England (*Cal. Clarendon Papers*, ii. 297). In January 1654 he collected 1,920*l.* for Charles in England, and received a pass on his return to France from Cromwell. He represented that he was solely engaged in his private affairs. He almost immediately returned to England, and would appear to have been arrested in June 1654. He was not released until the end of May 1657, and then upon hard terms (*ib.* iii. 303). At the Restoration he was elected M.P. for East Looe, which he represented until 1681 (*Return of Members*). He is described as of Berry Pomeroy in 1660 and of Westminster in 1661, and is said to have received 40,000*l.* in Duchy leases (Marvell). He was appointed a groom of the bedchamber, comptroller of the customs, and clerk of the hanaper. In 1666 he resided at Langley, Buckinghamshire, and in 1669 bought that estate from the trustees of Sir William Parsons (Burke, ubi supra). During the latter part of his life he lived in retirement there, and died on 9 March 1686. He married, first, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Joseph Killigrew, widow of William Basset of Claverton; she died 1671; secondly, Ursula, daughter of Sir Robert Austen of Bexley, Kent, widow of George Stowel, esq., of Cotherston, Kent. By the second wife he had a daughter and a son Henry, who was created a baronet at seven years of age during the life of his father (4 July 1681).

[Authorities as in text; Hoskins's Charles II in the Channel Islands; Ormonde Letters, passim; Calendars of Clarendon MSS. Bodleian, passim; Andrew Marvell's Seasonable Argument.] W. A. S.

SEYMOUR, HENRY (1729–1805), lover of Madame Du Barry, was the son of Francis Seymour, M.P., of Sherborne, Dorset, brother of the eighth Duke of Somerset, by Elizabeth, daughter of Alexander Popham, and widow of Viscount Hinchinbrook. Born in London in 1729, he married in 1753 Lady Caroline Cowper, only daughter of the second Earl Cowper. Besides his father's estate at Sherborne, he inherited an uncle's property at Knoyle, and also owned Northbrook Lodge, Devonshire, and Redland Court, near Bristol. He became a groom of the bedchamber, was returned for Totnes at a by-election in 1763, and sat for Huntingdon 1768–74, and Evesham 1774–80. He spoke on 29 Feb. 1776 in support of Fox's motion for an inquiry into the miscarriages of the American war. A widower in 1773, he married in 1775 Louise Thérèse, widow of Comte Guillaume de Panthou. In 1778 he settled in Paris, obtained letters of domicile to protect his property from forfeiture to the crown as *aubaine*, in the event of death, and purchased a country house at Prunay, between Versailles and St. Germain. He thus became the neighbour, and may have already been the lover, of Madame Du Barry. He preserved about forty of her letters to him, together with a lock of her hair. The letters are undated, but were probably written in 1780, shortly before his separation from his wife. They show that his jealous temper led to a rupture. These relics, apparently left behind him on his hasty departure from France in August 1792, came into the possession of Barrière, an autograph collector, and, after passing through other hands, were sold in Paris in 1892. All Seymour's property was confiscated, and bundles of his tradesmen's bills and other papers are now in the Archives Nationales, Paris. He remained in England till his death in 1805, and after Waterloo his heirs obtained compensation for his losses out of the fund for indemnifying British subjects. He published anonymously in 1788 a French prose translation of the 'English Garden,' by William Mason [q.v.], with views of Prunay.

By his first wife he had two daughters: Caroline, who married William Danby [q.v.], the bibliophile and mineralogist; and Georgina, who married Comte Louis de Durfort. By his second wife he had a son Henry (1776–1849), high sheriff of Dorset in 1835. He had also an illegitimate daughter, who, born in France, became the mother of the Sir Roger Tichborne personated by Arthur Orton in the famous litigation of 1871.

[Manuscripts in the Archives Nationales, Paris; Goncourt's Madame Du Barry; Vatel's Madame du Barry; Alger's Englishmen in the French Revolution.] J. G. A.

SEYMOUR, Lord HENRY (1805–1859), founder of the Jockey Club at Paris, was the younger son of Francis Charles Seymour Conway, third marquis of Hertford, by Maria Fagniani, adopted daughter of George Augustus Selwyn (1719–1791) [q. v.] His grandfather was Francis (Ingram) Seymour, second marquis of Hertford [q.v.] Lord Henry was born in Paris on 18 Jan. 1805, his father, then Lord Yarmouth, having been detained in France on landing there just after the rupture of the treaty of Amiens. Lord Yarmouth was released in 1806 through Fox's intercession with Talleyrand, but his wife remained in France, and Lord Henry is said, though this is a manifest exaggeration, never to have set foot in England. In 1856 he inherited his mother's large fortune. In 1833 he was one of the eighteen founders of a society for the encouragement of horse-breeding in France, to which was attached the Jockey Club, and his horses repeatedly won prizes at the Bois de Boulogne and Chantilly races. A prominent member of the aristocratic society of Paris, he was noted for his eccentricities, and in the carnivals of 1834 and 1835 he attempted to introduce the Italian custom of throwing comfits and coins among the crowd. He died in Paris, unmarried, on 16 Aug. 1859, and was buried in his mother's vault at Père-Lachaise. He bequeathed money for the support of four favourite horses, which were never again to be saddled, and left the residue of his property, about 36,000*l.* a year, to the Paris hospitals.

[Moniteur, 29 Jan. 1834; Times, 25 Aug. 1859; Ann. Reg. 1859; Gent. Mag. 1859, ii. 432; Revue Britannique, August 1878; Alger's Englishmen in the French Revolution.] J. G. A.

SEYMOUR, Lord HUGH (1759–1801), vice-admiral, fifth son of Francis Seymour Conway, first marquis of Hertford [q. v.] of that creation, was born on 29 April 1759. He entered the navy in 1770 under the care of Captain John Leveson-Gower [q. v.], on board the Pearl on the Newfoundland station. Afterwards he served in the West Indies and in the Mediterranean, and was promoted to be lieutenant on 10 Aug. 1776. He was made commander on 18 June 1778, and captain on 8 Feb. 1779. In 1780 he commanded the Ambuscade in the Channel;

and in 1782 the Latona, which was attached to the fleet under Howe at the relief of Gibraltar. After the peace, he, with his younger brother, George, and 'Jack' Payne [see PAYNE, JOHN WILLETT], took a house in Conduit Street, where, leading an irregular and convivial life, he was admitted to the intimacy of the Prince of Wales; from this fate he was in great measure rescued by his marriage on 3 April 1785 to the Lady Anne Horatia Waldegrave, daughter of the Duchess of Gloucester by her first marriage to James, second earl Waldegrave [q. v.] During the Spanish armament of 1790 he commanded the Canada, and while in her received an accidental blow on the head from the lead, as soundings were being taken. He had in consequence to live for a time in retirement in the country. By February 1793 he was able to undertake active service, and was appointed to the Leviathan, in which he accompanied Lord Hood to the Mediterranean. After the occupation of Toulon he was sent home with despatches, but returned at once and resumed command of the Leviathan, which was shortly afterwards sent home to join the fleet under Lord Howe. He had thus a distinguished part in the actions of 28 and 29 May and 1 June 1794. On the death of his father he dropped the name of Conway, by which he had till then been known, and for the future appeared in the list of captains as Seymour.

Early in 1795 he was moved into the Sanspareil, and on his promotion to flag rank, 1 June 1795, he hoisted his flag on board the same ship, in which he took part in the action off Lorient on 23 June. In March 1795 he was appointed one of the lords of the admiralty, and so he continued till 1798, without, however, taking any active share in the work of the board, as he was at sea, with his flag still in the Sanspareil, for almost the whole time. On 14 Feb. 1799 he became a vice-admiral, and during the spring commanded a detached squadron off Brest. In the summer he was appointed commander-in-chief at Jamaica, where, with his flag in the Prince of Wales, he arrived in August. With the exception of the capture of Surinam in the August of 1800, his command was uneventful, and on 5 Sept. 1801 he died at Jamaica. His body was sent to England. His portrait by Hoppner, which belonged to his grandson, Frederick Beauchamp Paget Seymour, lord Alcester [q. v.], has been engraved. By his wife, the Lady Horatia, he had issue four daughters and three sons, the eldest of whom, Sir George Francis Seymour, is separately noticed.

[Naval Chronicle, ii. 358, vi. 462; Ralfe's Nav. Biogr. ii. 126; James's Naval History; Lists of Sea Officers; Foster's Peerage, s.n. 'Hertford.'] J. K. L.

SEYMOUR, JAMES (1702–1752), animal-painter, son of James Seymour, a banker and amateur artist, who lived on terms of intimacy with Sir Peter Lely and Sir Christopher Wren and died in 1739, was born in 1702. He gained a great reputation for his hunting subjects and portraits of racehorses, many of which were engraved by Thomas Burford [q. v.] and Richard Houston [q. v.] He was employed by Charles Seymour, sixth duke of Somerset [q. v.], to decorate a room at Petworth with portraits of his racehorses, and Walpole tells a curious story of his truculent behaviour to the duke when the latter took offence at Seymour claiming relationship to him. Seymour's picture of the famous carriage match against time at Newmarket in 1750, which was at one time in the collection of Sir Joshua Reynolds, now belongs to Colonel Smith-Barry, M.P. The Duke of Grafton owns his 'Mr. Delmé's Foxhounds,' and several of his hunting and racing works are in the possession of Sir Walter Gilbey, bart. Seymour's sketches of the horse in its various attitudes show extraordinary power, but he never acquired much skill as a painter, his technique being hard and coarse and his colouring unpleasant. He died on 30 June 1752.

[Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting, ed. Dallaway and Wornum; Sports Exhibition Catalogue (Grosvenor Gallery), 1891; Gent. Mag. 1752, p. 336.] F. M. O'D.

SEYMOUR, JANE (1509?–1537), third queen of Henry VIII. [See JANE.]

SEYMOUR, SIR MICHAEL (1768–1834), rear-admiral, second son of the Rev. John Seymour (*d.* 1795), one of a younger branch of the family of the dukes of Somerset which settled in Ireland in the time of Elizabeth, was born at the Glebe House, Pallas, co. Limerick, on 8 Nov. 1768. By his mother, Griselda, daughter and coheiress of William Hobart of High Mount, co. Cork, he was related to the family of the earls of Buckinghamshire. He entered the navy in November 1780 on board the Merlin sloop with Captain James Luttrell [q. v.], whom he followed in March 1781 to the Portland; in April 1782 to the Mediator, and in April 1783 to the Ganges. When Luttrell retired from the navy in September 1783, Seymour was moved into the Europa, going out to Jamaica with the flag of Vice-admiral James Gambier (1723–1789) [q. v.] From the Europa he was transferred to the Antelope,

and afterwards to the Janus with Captain John Pakenham, and in September 1785 returned to England in the Ariel, in bad health. In June 1786 he joined the Pégase, guardship at Portsmouth; and in June 1787 the Magnificent, with Captain George Cranfield Berkeley [q. v.], an intimate friend of Luttrell's. On Luttrell's death in December 1788, Berkeley brought Seymour's name before the Duchess of Gloucester, but it was not till 29 Oct. 1790 that Seymour was promoted to be lieutenant of the Magnificent. In October 1791 the Magnificent was paid off, and the next eighteen months Seymour spent with his family in Ireland. In March 1793 he was appointed to the Marlborough, then commissioned by Berkeley, and was still in her in the battle of 1 June 1794, when he was severely wounded. His arm had to be amputated above the elbow, and Seymour was obliged to go on shore for recovery. In the following February he joined Berkeley in the Formidable, from which he was moved in June to the Commerce de Marseilles, and in August to the Prince. On 11 Aug. 1795 he was promoted to the rank of commander. In June 1796 he was appointed to the Fly, from which in August he was moved to the Spitfire sloop, carrying eighteen 18-pounder carronades and two long six-pounders. In this he was employed for the next four years in the Channel and on the north coast of France, where he made a great number of prizes—privateers and armed vessels, besides small vessels trying to carry on the coasting trade; he is said to have captured eighty-three guns and four hundred seamen brought in as prisoners. On 11 Aug. 1800 he was advanced to post rank.

During the following years he was appointed to the temporary command of a great many different ships, without being able to get a ship of his own. It was not till June 1806 that he was appointed to the 36-gun frigate Amethyst, which was attached to the Channel fleet, but principally employed in independent cruising on the coast of France, with which, during his long service in the Spitfire, Seymour had become well acquainted. On the evening of 10 Nov. 1808, off the Isle Groix, he fell in with the French frigate Thétis which had sailed that afternoon from Lorient with a detachment of troops on board for Martinique. A little after nine he brought her to action, and for three hours one of the most stubborn and well-contested fights of the war was maintained. Crowded as she was with men, the Thétis endeavoured to close with her antagonist and carry her by boarding; but failing to do this, while her men were gathered on deck, she received the Amethyst's broadside of guns loaded to the muzzle with roundshot and grape. The effect was terrible; and a few minutes after midnight, being reduced to a wreck, having 236 killed or wounded out of 436 on board at the beginning of the action, she struck her flag and was taken possession of. The Amethyst's loss of seventy killed or wounded out of 261 testified to the severity of the struggle. Her rigging, too, was cut to pieces, her mizenmast fallen, and her main and fore masts badly wounded. Unfortunately for Seymour, his rockets and the sound of the firing had drawn to the scene of action the 74-gun ship Triumph and the frigate Shannon; and, though they did not come up for almost an hour after the Thétis had been won, they were sufficiently near to share for the capture, and to permit the commanding officer of the Thétis to say that she was taken by a 74-gun ship and two frigates (cf. Troude, iii. 519; James, iv. 379; and art. Broke, Sir Philip Bowes Vere). As soon as the two ships were made safe, the Amethyst returned to Plymouth, accompanied by her prize in tow of the Shannon. Seymour was presented with the gold medal; by the Patriotic Fund, with 100*l.* for a sword or a piece of plate; and by the corporations of Limerick and Cork with the freedom of the cities. The first lieutenant of the Amethyst and one of the midshipmen nominated by Seymour were promoted, and other officers appointed to higher rates.

On 8 Feb. 1809 Seymour, still in the Amethyst, sailed again on a cruise, and in the early morning of 6 April, off Ushant, fell in with, engaged, and captured the French frigate Niémen, which lost 120 men killed and wounded in the action. Again the brilliance of the victory was a little clouded by the arrival of the Arethusa just before the Niémen struck her flag; and though she was clearly beaten before the Arethusa came up, and the captain of the Arethusa disclaimed any part in the action beyond firing a few shots, these few shots had probably the effect of making her surrender a few minutes sooner than she otherwise would have done (cf. Troude, iv. 66; James, v. 17; and the article on Mends, Sir Robert). On his return to England Seymour was created a baronet, Lord Mulgrave writing, on 22 April, that the king highly approved of his distinguished gallantry and conduct, and the two brilliant and successful actions which had added these two frigates of superior force to the British navy. During the summer the Amethyst was attached to the fleet on the coast of Holland,

part of the time with the flag of Sir Richard John Strachan [q. v.] on board; and in October Seymour was appointed to the Niémen, the officers and crew of the Amethyst being at the same time turned over to her. In her he continued on similar service, but without any particular opportunity of distinction, till May 1812, when he was appointed to the 74-gun ship Hannibal, which he commanded in the Channel for the next two years, capturing the French frigate Sultane on 26 March 1814.

In September the Hannibal was paid off, and Seymour settled down for the next few years near Kingsbridge in Devonshire. On 3 Jan. 1815 he was nominated a K.C.B.; and in the following December the pension for the loss of his arm was increased to 300*l.* a year. In September 1818 he was appointed to the Northumberland, guardship at Sheerness; and in August 1819 to the Prince Regent, one of the royal yachts, from which, in 1825, he was moved to the Royal George, the king's own yacht. During this time he lived principally on shore at Blendworth House, which he had bought, within easy distance of Portsmouth. He read much, and occupied himself with gardening. In spite of having only one arm, he was able to dispense with assistance in the ordinary pursuits of life.

In January 1829 he accepted the appointment of commissioner at Portsmouth, which was, by custom, tenable for life; but in 1832 the admiralty abolished the navy board and, with it, the commissionerships at the dockyards. Seymour was offered the choice of holding his office for two years longer and then retiring, or of returning to the active list, taking his flag, and going out to South America as commander-in-chief. This was what he chose to do, his commission as rear-admiral being dated 27 June 1832. With his flag in the Spartiate, he sailed in February 1833 for Rio, where the duties of the station compelled him to remain. In April 1834 he had a severe attack of low fever, and on his partial recovery he was landed for the benefit of his health. On shore, however, he made no satisfactory progress, and died on 9 July 1834. He was buried in the English cemetery at Rio, where there is a monument to his memory. There is also a tablet in the dockyard chapel at Portsmouth. He married, in 1798, Jane, daughter of Captain James Hawker [q. v.] of the royal navy, and had by her a large family. His third son, Michael (1802–1887), is separately noticed. Seymour's portrait, by Northcote, is in the possession of his grandson, Admiral Sir Michael Culme-Seymour.

[The Memoir (privately printed, 8vo, 1878) by his fifth son, the Rev. Richard Seymour, canon of Worcester, is full and accurate; see also Marshall's Roy. Nav. Biogr. iii. (vol. ii. pt. i.) 294; Naval Chronicle, xxi. 89 (with portrait); United Service Journal, 1834, pt. iii.; James's Naval Hist. (cr. 8vo edit.); Troude's Batailles navales de la France.] J. K. L.

SEYMOUR, Sir MICHAEL (1802–1887), admiral, third son of Rear-admiral Sir Michael Seymour (1768–1834) [q. v.], was born on 5 Dec. 1802. He entered the navy in December 1813 on board the Hannibal, with his father; but when she was paid off he was sent back to school, and in March 1816 was entered as a scholar at the Royal Naval College at Portsmouth. On passing out from the college he was appointed, in October 1818, to the Rochefort, going out to the Mediterranean with the flag of Sir Thomas Francis Fremantle [q. v.] In her, and afterwards in the Ganymede, with Captain Robert Cavendish Spencer [q. v.], he continued till his promotion to the rank of lieutenant, 12 Sept. 1822. In July 1823 he was appointed to the Sybille, with Captain (afterwards Sir Samuel John Brooke) Pechell [q. v.], and in her was present at the demonstration against Algiers in 1824. On 6 Dec. 1824 he was promoted to be commander, and in August 1825 was appointed to the Chameleon brig in the Channel, from which he was posted on 5 Aug. 1826. In January 1827 he was appointed to the Menai for the South American station, which then included both the east and west coasts of South America and all the eastern Pacific. In September 1827 he was moved into the Volage, in which he returned to England in the spring of 1829. In 1832 his father, on being appointed to the command of the South American station, wished to have him as his flag-captain. This the admiralty refused, but, in accordance with a promise then given, appointed him in June 1833 to the Challenger, in which he joined his father at Rio. He was afterwards sent round to the Peruvian coast, but returned to Rio on the news of his father's death. Later, on his way back to the Pacific, the Challenger, by an abnormal and previously unknown reversal of the current, was wrecked on the coast of Chili, near Leubu, on 19 May 1835. The men were landed, and encamped for about seven weeks on this desolate shore, till assistance could be brought from Concepcion. Seymour returned to England in the Conway frigate, and, being tried by court-martial for the loss of his ship, was acquitted of all blame and highly commended for his conduct subsequent to the wreck. In 1841 he

commanded the Britannia as flag-captain to Sir John Acworth Ommanney [q. v.], and from her was moved to the Powerful, which he brought home and paid off early in 1842.

From 1845 to 1848 he commanded the Vindictive as flag-captain to Sir Francis William Austen [q. v.] on the North American and West Indies station. In 1849 he made a prolonged tour in France, visiting the dockyards, arsenals, and engineering works, and after his return wrote a very full and careful report to the admiralty. In December 1850 he was appointed superintendent of Sheerness dockyard, from which, in September 1851, he was transferred to Devonport, with the rank of commodore of the first class. On the imminence of the war with Russia in 1854, he was appointed captain of the fleet ordered to the Baltic under the command of Sir Charles Napier, and held that office during the campaign of that year. On 27 May 1854 he was promoted to be rear-admiral, and the following year was again in the Baltic as second in command, with his flag in the Exmouth, a screw ship of ninety-one guns. While examining one of the 'Jacobis' (i.e. small sea mines), which had been picked up off Cronstadt, it exploded, wounding him in the face, and destroying the sight of one eye.

In the spring of 1856 Seymour went out overland to take command of the China station, and, after having visited Japan, had returned to Hong Kong when, early in October, he received news of the seizure of the British lorcha Arrow by the Chinese authorities at Canton. The governor of Hong Kong, Sir John Bowring [q. v.], put the matter into Seymour's hands with a request that he would bring pressure to bear on the Chinese viceroy. Accordingly Seymour seized the forts which covered the approaches to Canton, and, when the viceroy proved unyielding, occupied the Bogue forts. Troops were sent out from England, and Lord Elgin arrived with full powers to negotiate [see Bruce, James, eighth Earl of Elgin]. But the outbreak of the mutiny in India rendered it necessary to change the destination of the troops, and Lord Elgin followed them to Calcutta. Meantime the Chinese junk fleet was destroyed after a sharp action in the Fatshan creek on 1 June 1857; and on the arrival of other troops and the return of Lord Elgin, as the Chinese viceroy still refused all concessions, Seymour pushed up the river, and, after a clever feint, attacked and captured Canton with very little loss on 28–29 Dec. 1857. The viceroy was seized [see Key, Sir Astley Cooper] and sent, a prisoner, to Calcutta; but as the court of Peking refused to negotiate, Lord Elgin considered it necessary to move the scene of action to the north. In the end of April 1858 Seymour in his flagship, the Calcutta, arrived in the Gulf of Pecheli, and, on the request of Elgin, took the forts at the mouth of the Pei-ho on 20 May, and forced the passage up the river as far as Tientsing, where on 26 June a treaty was signed, in which the Chinese government conceded the demands of the English minister. Seymour afterwards escorted Lord Elgin to Japan, and then returned to Hong Kong, reaching England early in the following summer, on the expiration of his term of three years. The invariable success which attended his operations in the war in China was entirely due to his calm foresight and careful attention to the minutest details. On 20 May 1859 he was nominated a G.C.B., and shortly afterwards was presented by the China merchants with a handsome service of plate. On 9 Aug. 1859 he was returned to parliament for Devonport, resigning his seat in February 1863.

On 1 Nov. 1860 he was promoted to the rank of vice-admiral, and on 5 March 1864 to be admiral. From March 1863 to March 1866 he was commander-in-chief at Portsmouth. In 1870 he was put on the retired list, and in 1875 was nominated to the then honorary office of vice-admiral of the United Kingdom. He died on 23 Feb. 1887. He married, in 1829, his first cousin, Dorothea, daughter of Sir William Knighton [q. v.], and left issue two daughters. A good portrait in crayons, by A. de Salome, was engraved by F. Holl the elder.

[Journals, letter-books, &c., and information from the family; The Wreck of His Majesty's Ship Challenger, 1836, 8vo; G. W. Cooke's China; Oliphant's Narrative of the Earl of Elgin's Mission to China and Japan; Parliamentary Papers: Correspondence relative to Operations in the Canton River, 1857; Correspondence between Lord Elgin and the Chinese High Commissioner Yeh, 1857–8; Correspondence respecting insults in China, 1857; Papers relating to the proceedings of Her Majesty's Naval Forces at Canton, 1857; Correspondence relative to the Earl of Elgin's Special Mission to China and Japan, 1859; Correspondence respecting the Affairs of China, 1860; Correspondence relating to the Non-arrival of Gunboats off the Peiho at the time required by the Earl of Elgin, 1860; Navy Lists; Personal knowledge.] J. K. L.

SEYMOUR, MICHAEL HOBART (1800–1874), controversialist, born on 29 Sept. 1800, was sixth son of John Crossley Seymour, vicar of Caherelly (*d.* 19 May 1831), who married in January 1789 Catherine,

eldest daughter and coheiress of Rev. Edward Wight, rector of Meelick in Limerick. He claimed to be the lineal descendant of Sir Henry Seymour, brother of Jane Seymour, wife of Henry VIII. Aaron Crossley Hobart Seymour [q. v.] was his brother. In 1823 he graduated B.A. of Trinity College, Dublin, and proceeded M.A. in 1832. He was admitted *ad eundem* at Oxford on 2 June 1836, and *comitatis causa* on 26 Oct. 1865. Seymour was ordained deacon in 1823 and priest in 1824. The first thirty-four years of his life were passed in Ireland in active clerical work. He was also secretary to the Irish Protestant Association. An untiring opponent of the dogmas and practices of the church of Rome, he became very unpopular in Ireland, and about 1834 migrated to England. For several years he was evening lecturer at St. George the Martyr, Southwark, afternoon lecturer at St. Anne's, Blackfriars, and travelling secretary for the Reformation Society. In January 1844 Seymour married, at Walcot church, Bath, Maria, only daughter of General Thomas of the East India Company's service, and widow of Baron Brownmill, physician to Louis XVIII. From that time he resided, when in England, at Bath, and did not hold any preferment in the church.

In September 1844 Seymour and his wife travelled by easy stages to Rome, and he described his visit in two books, 'A Pilgrimage to Rome,' 1848, 4th edit. 1851, and 'Mornings among the Jesuits at Rome; being Notes of Conversations held with certain Jesuits in that City,' 1849 (3rd edit. 1850; 5th edit. 1852). The first book was criticised in 'A brief Review by A. M.,' Bath, 1849, and the second in 'The Rambler,' iv. 144–9 (1849). Seymour had a rhetorical way of marshalling his facts, and his deductions could not always be relied upon. But he followed up his attack in 'Evenings with the Romanists. With an introductory chapter on the Moral Results of the Romish System,' 1854; 2nd edit. 1855. This was issued at New York in 1855, and in the same year was reissued at Philadelphia in a mutilated form. It was also translated into Spanish, and had a large circulation in Mexico. Seymour died at 27 Marlborough Buildings, Bath, on 19 June 1874, leaving no issue, and was buried at Locksbrook cemetery on 25 June. He possessed the fluency of speech and the racy humour of most Irishmen (cf. Grant, *Metropolitan Pulpit*, pp. 266–81).

Through life Seymour was unwearied in contributing to newspapers, and in publishing pamphlets and lectures against the church of Rome. A lecture on 'Nunneries,' issued in 1852, involved him in a controversy with Cardinal Wiseman, who published a reply. Seymour brought out in 1838 a new edition, with five appendices, of Foxe's 'Acts and Monuments of the Church.' It purported to be 'carefully revised, corrected, and condensed.'

[Gent. Mag. 1844, i. 310; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Foster's Baronetage; Men of the Time, 8th edit.; Todd's Dublin Graduates; Record, 24 June 1874, p. 2; Bath Express, 27 June 1874, p. 8; Keene's Bath Journal, 27 June 1874, p. 4.]

W. P. C.

SEYMOUR, ROBERT, pseudonymous editor of Stow's 'Survey of London.' [See Mottley, John, 1692–1750.]

SEYMOUR, ROBERT (1800?–1836), book illustrator, born about 1800, was the posthumous son of Henry Seymour, a gentleman of Somerset, who, falling on evil times, moved to London, and obtained employment as a cabinet-maker with an upholsterer named Seddon. Robert's mother, Elizabeth Bishop, was a native of Marston, Somerset. A widow in poor circumstances, with two sons and a daughter, she gave her children such education as she could at home, and in due time apprenticed Robert to Vaughan, a pattern-drawer, of Duke Street, Smithfield. She died in 1827. Seymour, notwithstanding the humorous character of his best known works, inherited from her a very serious cast of mind.

During his boyhood, Seymour's spare time was devoted to sketching and painting. Apart from the mere A B C of pencil and water-colour drawing learned in his trade of pattern-drawing, he was indebted to his own exertions alone for his future proficiency. During his apprenticeship he devoted much of his leisure to miniature-painting, whence he derived a facility in catching likenesses. After the determination of his indentures, he entered on the career of a professional artist. At first he occupied himself chiefly in painting, and in 1822 was rewarded by the acceptance of a picture for exhibition by the Royal Academy at Somerset House. This was his first and last appearance there. He offered another, but it was rejected. He was fortunate enough to be brought early into the society of the artist, Joseph Severn [q. v.], whom he may have met at the house of his uncle, Thomas Holmes [see Holmes, Edward]. There also Robert saw much of his cousin Jane Holmes (*b.* April 1801), whom he married in 1827.

Although Seymour never wholly abandoned oil-painting, he mainly confined his energies to preparing illustrations for the publishers of books, journals, and caricatures.

Nothing seemed to come amiss to him. He was as much at home with 'Don Juan' as the 'Book of Martyrs,' and passed with the confidence of youth from the illustrations of Demosthenes and Ovid, to Shakespeare, Wordsworth, Gay, and Southey. He thus spent six busy years, during which all his work was drawn on the wood, or at any rate with a view to the graver. He worked with extraordinary rapidity, and at a very low price. Most of his illustrations were remunerated at half a guinea apiece. In 1827 the firm of Knight & Lacey, by whom he had been largely employed, went bankrupt. This, although pecuniarily a disaster, gave Seymour the opportunity he had long desired of dispensing to a great extent with the middleman, the wood-engraver, by whom his work had been terribly mutilated. In self-defence he directed his attention to etching on copper. His earliest attempt was the rare and badly bitten plate, 'Assisting, Resisting, and Desisting.' McLean, the print-seller, now gave him employment. The earliest work done for McLean was signed 'Shortshanks.' This pseudonym was soon dropped in deference to an objection raised by George Cruikshank. He also did much book illustration for the publishers Maddeley and William Kidd, and to this period belonged 'Snatches from Oblivion,' 1827, and the 'Devil's Progress,' 1830; besides a series of illustrations for Richardson's two series of plays, the 'New Royal Acted Drama' and the 'New Minor Drama,' 1827–30.

Although a keen reader from early days (chiefly of religious and philosophic books), his neglected education was always apparent in the defects of his handwriting and spelling. This (together with his rather serious cast of mind) may account for his abstention from the society to which his talents and professional income would have readily admitted him. He was for a long time a keen sportsman. In 1830 his health was seriously affected by overwork, but complete change of air soon brought about his recovery. From 1831 his artistic output was enormous.

Successful though Seymour was with the etching needle, he soon to a great extent, though not completely, abandoned it for the more expeditious method of lithography. His works on stone are numbered by hundreds. The best known are the 'Humorous Sketches,' first published, at 3*d.* apiece, between 1833 and 1836, and afterwards collected. They have been republished and re-engraved in many forms. Their popularity has, paradoxical though it may sound, gone a long way to damage Seymour's reputation as an artist, for it caused the plates to be printed and reprinted until the impressions were mere smudges. Other successful lithographs included those done for McLean's 'Monthly Sheet of Caricatures, or the Looking-Glass,' from 1830 to 1836, and the twelve illustrations for 'Maxims and Hints for an Angler,' 1833. From 1831 to 1836 his woodcuts were mainly executed for 'Figaro in London.' Of this weekly sheet, Gilbert Abbott à Beckett [q. v.], then a mere youth, was editor. Until 1834 the collaboration continued, during which time all things smug and self-satisfied were mercilessly satirised by their joint pen and pencil. Editor and illustrator then quarrelled. Seymour objected to the careless cutting and printing of his blocks, and to the editorial patronage of his youthful employer. On 16 Aug. the paper appeared unillustrated. A fortnight later Seymour resigned. In a few months the editorship passed into the hands of Henry Mayhew. In January 1835 Seymour again became the illustrator, and so continued until his death. Between 1831 and 1835 were also published, with Seymour's illustrations, Miss Louisa Sheridan's 'Comic Offerings,' Miller's series of the 'Old English Drama,' 'New Readings of Old Authors,' and Hervey's 'Book of Christmas' (1835), in which thirty-six etchings by Seymour proved his best work in that line; these plates were afterwards published separately. During the winter of 1835–6 the publishers, Chapman & Hall, employed Seymour to illustrate a comic publication called 'The Squib Annual.' This led to Seymour's suggesting to Chapman a series of 'Cockney sporting plates,' to be published, with letterpress, in monthly parts. Hall applied to Charles Dickens [q. v.], then an obscure journalist, to write the letterpress. Dickens modified the scheme, and, entitling his work 'The Papers of the Pickwick Club,' quickly became the dominant partner in the undertaking. Seymour could not brook the mere toleration of his designs, and when to this was added something in the nature of dictation from his collaborator (though couched in the kindest terms), his overtaxed nerves magnified the matter until it grew unbearable. The first part of the 'Pickwick Papers' duly appeared and met with a triumphant reception; Seymour, who therein proved beyond all dispute his ability as a graphic humourist, executed the plates for the second part; but before it was published he shot himself with a fowling-piece on 20 April 1836. The often repeated statement that Seymour's suicide was the result of à Beckett's treatment of him is contradicted by chronology. By his wife, who died 4 July 1869,

Seymour had two children: Robert, who survives, and Jane (*d.* 1881).

A few of Seymour's original pencil studies for the Pickwick plates were subsequently sold at Sotheby's for 500*l.* There is a miniature of himself in ivory, the whereabouts of which is not known; it was painted about 1827, and represents him leaning one hand on Paley's 'Moral Philosophy.' An extremely rare lithograph (not a first-rate portrait), published by his widow in 1841, was lately reproduced in facsimile.

[Information kindly supplied by Mr. R. Seymour; the memoir of the artist prefixed to Hotten's edition of Sketches by Seymour, 1866, obl. 4to; Everitt's English Caricaturists; Fitzgerald's History of Pickwick; Forster's Life of Dickens.] G. S. L.

SEYMOUR, THOMAS, Baron Seymour of Sudeley (1508?–1549), born about 1508, was the fourth son of Sir John Seymour (*d.* 1536) of Wolf Hall, Wiltshire, by his wife Margery (*d.* 1551), daughter of Sir Henry Wentworth of Nettlested. Edward Seymour, first duke of Somerset [q. v.], was his elder brother. He must be distinguished from Sir Thomas Seymour who was sheriff of London on 'evil May day' 1516, was lord mayor of London in 1526 and 1530, was mayor of the Staple at Westminster, was employed by Henry VIII on various commercial negotiations, and died on 11 Dec. 1532 (cf. *Letters and Papers*, vol. iv. passim; *Greyfriars' Chron.* pp. 30, 33; Ellis, *Shoreditch*, p. 54). The future lord high admiral first came into notice in 1530 as a servant of Sir Francis Bryan [q. v.], who during his frequent embassies employed Seymour to carry despatches (*Letters and Papers*, v. 323, 325). But the marriage of his sister Jane [see Jane Seymour] to Henry VIII in May 1536, and of another sister, Elizabeth, to Cromwell's son Gregory, opened the way to rapid preferment. On 1 Oct. following he received a grant in survivorship of the stewardship of Chirk and other castles and manors in the Welsh marches, and in the same year he became a gentleman of the privy chamber. In 1537 he was granted the manor of Holt, Cheshire, and on 18 Oct. he was knighted (Wriothesley, *Chron.* i. 69). Grants of Coggeshall, Essex, Romsey, Hampshire, and Coleshull, Berkshire, followed in the next two years (cf. *Addit. MS.* 15553, f. 72), and in July 1538 the Duke of Norfolk suggested a marriage between Seymour and his only daughter Mary, widow of the Duke of Richmond. The suggestion failed, owing probably to the vehement opposition of Norfolk's son, the Earl of Surrey, and in 1543, soon after the death of Lord Latimer, Seymour sought the hand of his widow, Catherine Parr [q. v.]; but Catherine was destined to become Henry VIII's sixth wife.

Meanwhile, in 1538, Seymour accompanied Sir Anthony Browne (*d.* 1548) [q. v.] on his embassy to the French court, and in October was present during the negotiations at Cambray, carrying despatches thence to London on the 21st. On 12 June 1539 a bill, introduced by Cromwell, was passed, securing certain lands to him (*Lords' Journals*, i. 116 *a*, 119 *a*). He was one of those appointed to meet Anne of Cleves at Calais on 13 Dec. 1539 (*Chron. of Calais*, pp. 168, 173), and was one of the six knights selected to challenge all comers at the tournament on 1 May 1540. A few weeks later he was sent to Ferdinand, king of Hungary and brother of Charles V, to enlist support for Henry against France and Scotland. He arrived at Vienna in July, and remained there two years, describing, in his letters to Henry, the progress of the war against the Turks. He was recalled in October 1542, but was sent in December to Nuremberg to engage two thousand horse and three thousand foot for the English service. Failing in this object, he was recalled in January 1542–3, but in the following May was appointed ambassador, with Dr. Nicholas Wotton [q. v.], to the regent of the Netherlands (*State Papers*, Henry VIII, vol. ix. passim). War breaking out between England and Spain on the one side, and France on the other, Seymour was on 26 June made marshal of the English army in the Netherlands, being second in command to Sir John Wallop [q. v.] On 24 July 1543, with a strong detachment, he captured and destroyed the castles of Rinquecen and 'Arbrittayne' [? Ardinghen] (*ib.* ix. 452). At the beginning of August he was sent to the regent to ask for reinforcements; on his return he held for a short time the chief command during Wallop's illness, and besieged Bohaine; he went into winter quarters at Calais in November (*ib.* ix. 460–2 et seq.) As a reward for his services he received further grants of land, and on 17 April 1544 was made master of the ordnance for life. In this capacity he served in France during the campaign of the following summer. He returned to England at its close, conveying large stores of ammunition and ordnance. In October he was appointed admiral of the fleet, and on the 29th was directed to revictual Boulogne, and then await the French fleet in mid-Channel. These plans were frustrated by storms.

During the summer of 1545 Seymour was stationed at Dover, with orders to defend the Kentish coast against the projected French

invasion. In August apparently he joined the main fleet under Lord Lisle at Portsmouth, but on 17 Sept. was directed to proceed with all haste to the narrow seas. On 15 Oct. the French fleet having finally dispersed, he was directed to bring into the Thames all the English ships, with the exception of a few left to guard the narrow seas. On 29 Nov. he was granted Hampton Place, outside Temple Bar, which he seems to have renamed Seymour Place. In the following year Norfolk again sought to disarm the enmity of the Seymours by pressing for the marriage of the Duchess of Richmond with Sir Thomas, but was once more foiled by Surrey (Bapst, *Deux Gentilshommes Poètes*, pp. 338–9; *Cotton MS.* Titus B. i. f. 94). In October 1546 Seymour was named commissioner to arrange terms with France about the frontier of the Boulonnais and the fortifications of Boulogne (*Corr. Politique de Odet de Selve*, 1546–9, ed. 1888, pp. 47, 181; *State Papers*, Henry VIII, xi. 319, 346–8, 355). On 23 Jan. 1546–7, five days before Henry's death, Seymour was sworn of the privy council (*Acts P. C.* ed. Dasent, i. 566).

Henry left him 200*l.* by his will, and, according to Paget, desired that he should be made a peer and lord high admiral. He was accordingly created Baron Seymour of Sudeley in Wiltshire on 16 Feb., and made K.G. and lord high admiral on the following day. He took a prominent part in the tournament at Edward's coronation on 21 Feb., and in the evening entertained the court at his house near Temple Bar. On 4 March he was put on a commission to negotiate a defensive league with France (*Corr. Pol. de Odet de Selve*, pp. 109, 114). On the following day he was sent to take the seal from the chancellor Wriothesley. There seems to have been some intention of making him governor of the king (*Greyfriars' Chron.* p. 54; *Lit. Remains of Edward VI*, p. cxiv), but it was not carried out. Seymour's ambition was not satisfied with his subordination to his brother, the Protector, and he began almost at once to intrigue for a share in his authority. Immediately after Henry's death he sought the hand of the Princess Elizabeth (Wood, *Letters of Royal and Illustr. Ladies*, iii. 191–2), and, according to the French ambassador, De Selve, he also made advances to the Princess Mary and Anne of Cleves (*Corr. Pol.* pp. 154–5); but being refused, he secretly married the queen dowager, Catherine Parr, two or three months later [see Catherine Parr]. When the news leaked out the Protector was 'much offended' (*Lit. Rem. Edward VI*, p. 215), and there were frequent disputes between the two brothers as to the precedence of their respective wives. Seymour now began to examine precedents by which in cases of a royal minority one uncle had had the protectorate of the realm, and the other the governance of the king's person (cf. Haynes, *State Papers*, pp. 74–5); he tampered with the king's attendants, and sought to win Edward's favour by supplying him liberally with pocket money; he endeavoured to stimulate a dislike of the Protector in the king's mind, and urged him to take the government into his own hands. He also tried to persuade Edward to write a letter on his behalf to the parliament, which met on 4 Nov., and he threatened, if parliament refused his demands, to make it 'the blackest parliament that had ever been seen in England.' In the same parliament he seems to have been mainly instrumental in procuring the act which made the duration of the protectorate depend upon the king's pleasure, instead of being fixed until the king should be eighteen years of age. About the same time he formed a project for marrying Edward to Lady Jane Grey, who was then a member of Seymour's household.

Seymour used his position as lord high admiral with the same object. On 5 April 1547 he set out to visit the western ports, and prepare an expedition against one 'Thomessin,' a pirate who had seized on the Scilly Isles and used them as a basis for privateering operations against the trade of all nationalities (*Corr. Pol.* pp. 130, 189). Notwithstanding his superior force, Seymour left the pirate unmolested, and apparently came to an understanding with him to share the spoils and the control of the islands. He made a similar attempt to occupy Lundy Isle, and, in spite of the protests of the French ambassador and the remonstrances of his brother, he systematically connived at privateering, thereby seeking to win over the pirates to his own ends (Oppenheim, *Administration of the Navy*, 1897, pp. 101–2, 104; *Chron. of Henry VIII*, ed. Hume, 1889, pp. 161–2). In August he declined the offer of the command of an army which was to be conveyed by sea to Edinburgh to cooperate in the Protector's invasion of Scotland. He remained behind as lieutenant-general of the south, in order to defend the coast of the Isle of Wight against a possible French invasion. In the Protector's absence he endeavoured to ingratiate himself with the landowners whom Somerset had offended. He urged his personal friends like Dorset and Northampton (Haynes, pp. 78–80) to secure adherents among the young gentlemen and yeomen who had no interest in the

maintenance of the existing state of affairs, while he himself sought to gain influence in various counties by acquiring stewardships and manors. He began to store ammunition in Holt Castle, and to boast of having ten thousand men at his command. To provide funds for the maintenance of this force he obtained, through Sir William Sharington or Sherington [q. v.], control of the mint at Bristol.

Meanwhile, in the summer of 1548, he was despatched with the fleet against Scotland. He made a descent on the coast of Fife at St. Ninian's, but was repulsed. He then sailed northwards to surprise Montrose, but was again defeated. In August he was back at Sudeley, where, on 5 Sept., Catherine Parr died in childbed. Seymour at once renewed his suit for the hand of Elizabeth, whom he had treated with indelicate familiarity during her residence in his house, and who had consequently been removed by Catherine. But his proceedings had become known to the council. Russell and others had repeatedly warned him, and at length the Earl of Rutland brought an accusation against him. After various conferences with the council the Protector summoned Seymour to an interview. He refused to come, and on 17 Jan. 1548–9 the council sent Sir Thomas Smith and Sir John Baker to arrest him at his house near Temple Bar. He was imprisoned in the Tower, whither he was followed on the 18th by his adherents, John Harington [see under Harington, Sir John], Sir William Sharington, Sir Thomas Parry, John Fowler, and Mrs. Ashley, the governess of the Princess Elizabeth. On the 20th the lord privy seal, Southampton, and Petre were deputed to examine him and his confederates. As a result of these examinations (printed in Haynes, pp. 65–107) thirty-three articles of accusation were drawn up (printed in *Acts P. C.* 1547–50, pp. 248–56), and on 23 Feb. the whole council, except Somerset, Cranmer, and Baker, waited on Seymour in the Tower to receive his answer. He refused to reply unless confronted by his accusers in open trial, and on the following day the council reported the result to the king and Protector. A deputation of both houses of parliament failed to obtain from Seymour any answer to the charges other than the first three. The council then unanimously declared that his offences amounted to high treason, and on the 25th framed and introduced into the House of Lords a bill of attainder (printed in *Statutes of the Realm*, iv. i. 61–5). An act of 1547 had swept away all treasons created since the statute of 1352, and the council's decision has been generally regarded as illegal; but Seymour's dealings with pirates and measures for securing adherents might plausibly be construed as 'levying war upon the king,' and his connivance at Sharington's frauds as 'counterfeiting the king's money,' while his general conduct was undoubtedly a menace to the peace of the realm. The bill passed the House of Lords on 27 Feb. without a division, after the evidence against him had been heard, and the judges had agreed that he was guilty of treason. The commons appear to have made some objection, and the question was fully debated in a house of four hundred members; but the bill passed its third reading on 4 March, with ten or twelve dissentients (*Lords' Journals*, i. 345 et seq.) Seymour was executed on Tower Hill on the morning of 20 March, and, according to the doubtful authority of Latimer, his last act was to instruct his servant to convey two letters to the Princesses Mary and Elizabeth, urging them to conspire against the Protector. He was buried within the Tower.

Lingard, Maclean, and others have maintained that Seymour's abilities were superior to those of his brother, but the evidence is not conclusive. He was undoubtedly a capable soldier, of great personal prowess and handsome features, and he won the affections of many of those with whom he was brought into contact (cf. Lady Jane Grey to Seymour, printed in Maclean, p. 71). But these qualities were marred by unscrupulous ambition, an overbearing disposition, and, according to Latimer, moral profligacy. He was accurately described by Elizabeth as 'a man of much wit and very little judgement.' A letter to him from Roger Ascham is extant in Addit. MS. 33271, f. 36.

His portrait, painted by Holbein, belongs to the Marquis of Bath; a miniature, by Holbein, is at Sudeley, in the possession of Mrs. Dent, who has reproduced it in her 'Annals of Winchcombe and Sudeley;' she also possesses an anonymous portrait of Seymour, and two others, also anonymous, are respectively in the Wallace collection and that of Sir G. D. Clerk, bart. (cf. *Cat. Victorian Exhib.* Nos. 185, 209, 443, 1077; *Cat. First Loan Exhib.* No. 181). Seymour's portrait, with some lines, entitled 'The Hospitable Oake,' said to have been written by Harington after Seymour's death, and printed in 'Nugæ Antiquæ,' p. 330, was presented by Harington to Elizabeth after she had become queen.

Seymour's daughter Mary, born on 29 Aug. 1548, was committed to the care of the Duchess of Somerset, and restored in blood by an act passed on 22 Jan. 1549–50

(*Lords' Journals*, i. 381, 383). According to Miss Strickland, she married Sir Edward Bushel, and was ancestress of the Johnson Lawsons of Grove Villa, Clevedon, who possess some personal relics of her mother, Catherine Parr; but the evidence of Wriothesley's 'Chronicle' and the silence of contemporary records as to her subsequent existence establish almost beyond doubt that she died in infancy.

[Sir John Maclean's Life of Sir Thomas Seymour (privately printed in 1869, and not in the Brit. Museum Library) is written mainly from contemporary manuscripts. See also Addit. MSS. 5751 (ff. 295, 307), 5753 (ff. 20, 48, 137), 6705 (f. 62), 19398 (f. 52), authorities mentioned in the text, and under art. SEYMOUR, EDWARD, first DUKE OF SOMERSET.] A. F. P.

SEYMOUR, WILLIAM, first MARQUIS and second EARL OF HERTFORD and second DUKE OF SOMERSET (1588–1660), born in 1588, was second son of Edward Seymour, lord Beauchamp, by Honora, daughter of Sir Richard Rogers of Bryanston, Dorset [see SEYMOUR, EDWARD, EARL OF HERTFORD, 1539?–1621, and SEYMOUR, CATHERINE]. Lord Beauchamp died in 1612, in the lifetime of his father, the Earl of Hertford, but by reason of the doubt affecting his legitimacy, the title by letters patent of 1608 was entailed upon his eldest son Edward, and in the event of his death and failure of his issue upon the second son, William. William Seymour early showed both taste and aptitude for study, and was sent to Oxford, where he matriculated from Magdalen College on 16 April 1605, graduated B.A. on 9 Dec. 1607, was created M.A. on 31 Aug. 1636, and D. Med. on 12 Aug. 1645. He was chancellor of the university from 1643 to 1647, and again in 1660.

About 1602 Arabella Stuart [see ARABELLA] had formed an attachment for a member of the Seymour family, and probably for William, although he was a boy of only fifteen. Antony Rivers [q. v.], the jesuit, wrote on 9 March 1602–3: 'Some say [Arabella] is married to the Earl of Hertford's grandchild, which is most false' (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1601–3, p. 299). According to the improbable account of Scaramelli, the Venetian envoy (*Edinb. Rev.* October 1896), it was one Thomas Seymour who at this period attracted Arabella's favour. This Thomas Seymour has been erroneously identified with William Seymour's uncle, Thomas Seymour, the Earl of Hertford's younger son. The latter died some time before—on 8 Aug. 1600 (cf. DUGDALE, *Baronage*, and COLLINS, *Peerage*), and he was survived by a wife who died on 20 Aug. 1619. In any case, the intrigue was frustrated by the rigour of Queen Elizabeth; and Lady Arabella, having relinquished what was designated by Elizabeth's successor as forbidden fruit, was taken into favour by the new king upon his accession in 1603. In 1610, however, though she had now attained the discreet age of thirty-five, Arabella once more infringed the royal prerogative by seeking a husband for herself from 'her own rank.' This time her lover was undoubtedly William Seymour.

While at Oxford William Seymour had opportunities of visiting Arabella at Woodstock, and on 2 Feb. 1609–10 the pair plighted their troth. The secret was ill-kept, and the lovers were summoned before the council. Seymour made submission in writing (20 Feb.) denying the existence of an engagement or intention of marriage without the king's consent. The explanation was accepted, the lovers continued to meet, and on 22 June were privately married at Greenwich. The affair got wind at once, and while Lady Arabella was committed to the custody of Sir Thomas Parry at Lambeth, Seymour was provided with lodgings in the Tower (8 July). Neither was closely confined; Seymour found means to pay occasional visits to Lambeth, and, after Arabella was removed to Barnet, the Countess of Shrewsbury concerted a plan of escape in order to enable her to join him. On 4 June Arabella rode in man's attire some thirteen miles down to the Thames, where she embarked in a French vessel, which promptly sailed for Calais, but was captured by a boat from an English frigate about a league from that port. Arabella was remitted to the Tower. Meanwhile her husband had sailed in quest of her. He effected his escape from the Tower by the help of his barber, one Batten. Batten, who was well known to the guards, presented himself on 3 June at the Tower, completely disguised, and asked for Mr. Seymour's barber, whom he professed to know to be within. On being admitted he transferred the disguise to Seymour, and then boldly sallied forth with him. The unfortunate barber was taken next day and committed to the dungeon of the Tower. Seymour was met at the Iron Gate by Rodney, and carried by boat down the Thames as far as Lee. There, missing the ship which contained his wife, he boarded a collier bound for Newcastle, induced the master to make for Calais; owing to adverse winds, he was landed at Ostend, and awaited tidings of Arabella at Bruges (COOPER, *Life and Letters of Lady Arabella Stuart*; *Life of Lady Arabella Stuart*, by E. T. Bradley (Mrs. A. Murray-

Smith), 1889). On learning her fate he removed to Paris (September), and soon after her death in October he made his peace with the king and returned to England, 10 Feb. 1615–16.

So complete was his restoration to favour that when the Prince of Wales was created K.B., 3 Nov. 1616, the same honour was conferred upon him. In April 1618 he remarried Frances, eldest daughter of Robert Devereux, second earl of Essex. On the death of his elder brother, Edward (August 1618), he took the courtesy title of Lord Beauchamp. On 22 Dec. 1620 he was returned to parliament for Marlborough, but vacated the seat almost at once on being called to the upper house as Baron Beauchamp, 14 Feb. 1620–1. On the death of his grandfather in the following April he was summoned to the House of Lords 'to take his place according to the new creation of that earldom and not otherwise.' He was a member of the committee of privileges appointed on 15 Feb. 1625–6, and brought in the reports on the petitions of the Earls of Bristol and Arundel, 30 March and 5 April 1626 [see DIGBY, JOHN, first EARL OF BRISTOL; and HOWARD, THOMAS, second EARL OF ARUNDEL].

Though by nature and habit a scholar rather than a man of action, and little in favour at court, Hertford was too influential in the country to be ignored by the king as the prospect of an appeal to arms drew near. He was appointed on 23 March 1638-9 lord-lieutenant of Somerset and the cities of Bristol, Bath, and Wells; in 1640 he was sworn of the privy council, and was created (3 June) Marquis of Hertford. Still dreaming of a peaceful settlement, he joined with the Earls of Essex and Bedford in petitioning for a return to constitutional methods of government (28 Aug. and September 1640), and was selected as one of the commissioners for the abortive treaty of Ripon (October); but the attitude assumed by the Long parliament converted him from a lukewarm into a staunch royalist. On 17 May 1641 he accepted the post of governor to the Prince of Wales, with whom he joined the king at York in April 1642. The insolent demand of the parliament that he should give an undertaking that the prince should not be conveyed out of the kingdom, he met with a dignified and decisive refusal (3 May). Having subscribed the engagement for the defence of the monarchy and protestant religion (13 June), he was appointed (2 Aug.) commissioner of array and lieutenant-general for the western counties, from Oxford to the Land's End, and from Southampton to Radnor and Cardigan, and, attended by his younger brother Francis, lord Seymour of Trowbridge, John, lord Paulet, afterwards fifth marquis of Winchester [q. v.], Sir John Stawel, and Sir Ralph Hopton (afterwards Lord Hopton [q. v.]), made an attempt to put the commission in execution at Wells, but had hardly raised five hundred horse when he was driven out of the city by Sir Edward Hungerford (1596?–1648) [q. v.] He retreated to Sherborne, Dorset; but, finding the place untenable, withdrew to Minehead, and so by ship to Cardiff (September), sending his levies into Cornwall. In Wales he raised some two thousand men, with whom he crossed the marches, and drove the Earl of Stamford out of Hereford (14 Dec.) [see GREY, HENRY, first EARL OF STAMFORD]. Reinforced from Oxford by the royal princes, he reduced Cirencester (2 Feb.); in the summer, after the battle of Stratton (16 May), he marched into Somerset, captured in rapid succession Taunton, Bridgwater, and Dunster Castle; and, having effected a junction with Sir Ralph Hopton, left before Exeter an investing force under Sir John Berkeley (afterwards first Baron Berkeley of Stratton) [q. v.]; and marching upon Bath, the headquarters of Sir William Waller [q. v.], drew him to an engagement, and defeated him after an obstinate struggle at Lansdown (5 July); but, being too weak to improve his advantage, he withdrew with the cavalry to Oxford, leaving Hopton with the infantry at Devizes. From Oxford he despatched Lord Wilmot to Hopton's relief, and marched upon Bristol, which surrendered on 26 July. Upon this success, disputes with the princes as to the disposal of the command of the city caused the king to recall Hertford to Oxford; and in January 1643–4 he was made groom of the stole. He joined in the overtures made by the council in that month to Essex and the Scots; was nominated commissioner for the treaty of Uxbridge on 28 Jan. 1644–5, and of the council left in charge of Oxford on the king's departure in the following May. On the surrender of the city, 24 June 1646, he compounded for his estates on the terms of the articles. He was in attendance on the king during his confinement, was one of his commissioners for the treaty of Newport (September 1648), united during his trial with the Duke of Richmond and the Earl of Southampton in praying the court to lay upon them as his advisers, the exclusive responsibility for his acts, and in procuring upon his execution permission to bury his body at Windsor. During the interregnum, after a brief confinement in his own

house at Netley, Hampshire, Hertford was suffered to go at large. On the Restoration, the dukedom of Somerset and barony of Seymour, which were declared forfeit by act of parliament of 12 April 1552, were revived and conferred upon him by act of parliament passed 13 Sept. 1660. He was among the lords who welcomed Charles II at Dover on 26 May 1660, and on the following day received the Garter from the king at Canterbury, having been elected into the order at Jersey on 13 Jan. 1648–9. He died on 24 Oct. following, and was buried on 1 Nov. at Bedwyn Magna, Wiltshire. An anonymous portrait of Somerset belongs to the Duke of Beaufort; another by Vandyck (in Lord Clarendon's possession at The Grove, Watford) was engraved and prefixed to vol. iii. of Lady Theresa Lewis's 'Lives of the Friends and Contemporaries of Lord Chancellor Clarendon,' 1852.

By his second wife he had, with other issue, two daughters—Mary, who married Heneage Finch, second earl of Winchilsea [q.v.], and Jane, who married Charles Boyle, lord Clifford of Lanesborough, son of Richard Boyle, first earl of Burlington, and second earl of Cork [q. v.]—and two sons, viz.: (1) Henry, lord Beauchamp (*d.* 1654), leaving, with other issue, by his wife Mary, eldest daughter of Arthur, lord Capel of Hadham, a son William, who succeeded as third duke of Somerset (*d.* 26 Sept. 1671, aged 20); (2) John, lord Seymour, who succeeded as fourth duke of Somerset on his nephew's death, and died without issue, 29 April 1675, when the dukedom passed to the grandsons of his father's brother, Francis, first baron Seymour of Trowbridge [see under Seymour, Charles, sixth Duke of Somerset].

[Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Complete Peerage, s. n. 'Hertford;' Collins's Peerage, i. 474 et seq.; Courthope's Hist. Peerage; Hutchins's Dorset, i. 250; Rymer's Fœdera, ed. Sanderson, xvi. 710; Edinb. Rev. July 1896, art. x.; Harl. MS. 7003, ff. 122, 132; Birch's Memoirs of the Reign of Elizabeth, ii. 506; Court and Times of James I, i. 127; Winwood's Mem. iii. 201, 279–81; Nichols's Progresses of James I; Metcalfe's Book of Knights; Clarendon's Rebellion; Parl. Hist. ii. 75, 126, 1212, 1374–5; Lords' Journal, iii. 4, 98, 130, 499, 544, 552, v. 49, xi. 171, 358; Cal. State Papers, Dom. 1611–18, pp. 342, 349, 401, 514–15, 1638–45, and Cal. Comm. for Compounding, and for Advance of Money; Notes of the Treaty of Ripon (Camden Soc.) App. p. 79; Rushworth's Hist. Coll. pt. ii. vol. ii. pp. 1200, 1276, pt. iii. vol. i. pp. 627, 672, 685, 766, vol. ii. 130, 284, 561–573, 792, 805, pt. iv. vol. i. p. 280; Whitelocke's Mem.; Hist. MSS. Comm. 4th Rep. p. 308, 9th Rep. pt. ii., 10th Rep. pts. iv. and vi., 12th Rep. pts. ii. and ix., 13th Rep. pt. i.; Bates's Elenchus Motuum Nuperorum (1685), p. 142; Nicholas Papers (Camden Soc.), ii. 66; Lodge's Portraits of Illustrious Personages, ed. Bohn, v. 99; Disraeli's Curiosities of Literature, 9th ed. iv. 361; Gardiner's Histories of England and of the Great Civil War.] J. M. R.

SEYMOUR, WILLIAM DIGBY (1822–1895), county-court judge, third son of Charles Seymour, vicar of Kilronan, co. Roscommon, by Beata, daughter of Fergus Langley of Lich Finn, Tipperary, was born in Ireland on 22 Sept. 1822. He was educated at Trinity College, Dublin, graduating B.A. in 1844 and LL.D. in 1872. He was called to the bar at the Middle Temple on 12 June 1846, and practised on the northern circuit. By the influence of his father-in-law he was returned to parliament as one of the members for Sunderland in 1852, and his support of the liberal party was rewarded with the recordership of Newcastle in December 1854. On returning to his constituency for re-election he was defeated. In the meantime he had become connected with various commercial undertakings, notably with the Waller Gold-mining Company, of which he was chairman in 1852. His experiences were unfortunate, and in 1858 he had to make an arrangement with his creditors. In 1859 he was called before the benchers of the Middle Temple to answer charges affecting his character as a barrister in connection with some commercial transactions, and on 23 Feb. was censured by the benchers (*Times*, 22, 24, 25 Feb. and 4 April 1859). Seymour disputed the fairness of the decision, but he would not publish the evidence, and he was excluded from the bar mess of the northern circuit. He commenced legal proceedings against Mr. Butterworth, the publisher of the 'Law Magazine,' for giving a statement of the case with comments. The trial was heard by Lord-chief-justice Cockburn on 2–3 Dec. 1862, and resulted in a verdict for the plaintiff of 40*s.* (*ib.* 3 Dec. 1862 p. 10, 4 Dec. pp. 8–9).

In May 1859 Seymour was returned for Southampton, securing conservative support by a pledge not to vote against Derby's government. His failure to observe this promise was commented on by the 'Morning Herald,' and Seymour sought to institute a criminal prosecution of that paper, which was refused by Lord Campbell. Seymour was named a queen's counsel in the county palatine of Lancaster in August 1860, and on 19 Feb. 1861 a queen's counsel for England by Lord Campbell. In the same year he was employed by the government to draw up the Admiralty Reform Act.

His views grew gradually more conservative; he contested unsuccessfully Hull in 1857, Southampton in 1865, Nottingham in 1869 and 1870, Stockton in 1880, and South Shields in 1885. By the influence of his political friends he became judge of the county-court circuit No. 1, with his chief court at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, in August 1889, and held that appointment at his death, which took place at Tynemouth on 16 March 1895. In February 1894 he was presented with his portrait by C. K. Robinson. He married, on 1 Sept. 1847, Emily, second daughter of Joseph John Wright, solicitor, Sunderland.

He was author of: 1. 'How to employ Capital in Western Ireland, being Answers to Questions upon the Manufacture of Beet-sugar, Flax, and Chicory in connection with a Land Investment in the West of Ireland,' 2nd edit. 1851; with an appendix, a letter from M. Leon, 1851. 2. 'The Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, with summary notes and index,' 1855; 2nd edit. 1857. 3. 'The Wail of Montrose; or the Wrongs of Shipping,' 1859; 2nd edit. 1859. 4. 'Waste Land Reclamation and Peasant Proprietorship, with suggestions for the Establishment of a Land Bank in Ireland,' 1881. 5. 'The Hebrew Psalter: a new metrical translation,' 1882.

[Debrett's House of Commons, 1891, p. 337; Times, 18 March 1895, p. 10; Illustrated London News, 1853 xxii. 132, 23 March 1895 p. 350, with portrait; Pall Mall Budget, 21 March 1895, p. 4, with portrait; Law Mag. and Law Rev. 1862 xiii. 158–85, 363–5, 1863, xiv. 181–338, xv. 1–42; W. D. Seymour, The Middle Temple Benchers and the Northern Circuit Committee, 1862.] G. C. B.

SEYMOUR-CONWAY, FRANCIS, first Marquis of Hertford (1719–1794). [See Conway.]

SHAA. [See Shaw.]

SHACKLETON, ABRAHAM (1697–1771), schoolmaster, the youngest of six children, was born at Shackleton House, near Bingley in the West Riding of Yorkshire in 1697. His parents were quakers. He did not begin Latin till he was twenty, but worked so hard that he attained a good Latin prose style. He became a teacher in the school of David Hall of Skipton, Yorkshire, and married Margaret Wilkinson, a relative of the master. He removed to Ireland, and became tutor to the children of John Duckett of Duckett's Grove, co. Carlow, and to those of William Cooper of Cooper Hill in the same district. Both were considerable landowners, and, like himself, members of the Society of Friends. At their suggestion he opened a boarding school at Ballytore, co. Kildare, on 1 March 1726, and continued its headmaster till 1756. During this time he educated four hundred boys of English, Scottish, or French descent, thirty-four of Anglo-Irish families, and thirty-four of original Irish origin. Dr. Richard Brocklesby (1722–1797) [q. v.] was one of his pupils; but the most distinguished was Edmund Burke, who entered on 26 May 1741. Shackleton recognised his ability, and they continued firm friends throughout life. In 1769 he went to the yearly meeting of the Society of Friends in London, and afterwards paid Burke a visit at Beaconsfield. His house in Ballytore was called Griesmount, but the present building of that name, though begun in his time, was completed after he had resigned the mastership in 1756. He died on 24 June 1771, and was buried at Ballytore; he left one son, Richard (see below), and one daughter, Elizabeth, who married Maurice Raynor, and had one son, William. Burke says of him: 'He was indeed a man of singular piety, rectitude, and virtue, and he had, along with these qualities, a native elegance of manners which nothing but genuine good nature and unaffected simplicity of heart can give.'

Richard Shackleton (1728–1792), schoolmaster, son of the above, was born at Ballytore, co. Kildare, in 1728. He was educated at his father's school, where he was a contemporary of Edmund Burke, and they became lifelong friends. He continued his studies at Trinity College, Dublin, and in 1756 succeeded his father as master of Ballytore school. He paid a visit to Burke nearly every year, and sixty-four letters from Burke to him are printed in 'The Leadbeater Papers.' Their only difference was in 1770, when a short account of Burke's family and education, written by Shackleton, accidentally found its way into the newspapers. Burke says: 'I am sure I have nothing in my family, my circumstances, or my conduct that an honest man ought to be ashamed of. But the more circumstances of all these that are brought out, the more materials are furnished for malice to work upon.' Shackleton explained how the accident had occurred, and how much he regretted the publication. Burke wrote a kind letter in reply, and their friendship was uninterrupted. In 1779 he was succeeded as master by his son Abraham. On 21 Aug. he was taken ill on his way from Ballytore to Mount Mellick, Queen's County, and there died of fever on 20 Aug. 1792. Burke, in a letter written on 8 Sept. 1792, says: 'Indeed we have had a loss. I console my-

self under it by going over the virtues of my old friend, of which I believe I am one of the earliest witnesses and the most warm admirers and lovers.' He married, first, Elizabeth Fuller, and had four children, and two years after her death married, secondly, Elizabeth Carleton, who also bore children, among them Mary Leadbeater [q. v.] In the latter's 'Poems' are seven short poems by her father. Burke had Shackleton's portrait painted by Richard Sesson.

[Poems by Mary Leadbeater, London, 1808; Devonshire House Portraits; Annals of Ballytore, London, 1862; Prior's Life of Burke.]

N. M.

SHACKLETON, JOHN (*d.* 1767), portrait-painter, is principally known as a painter of several portraits of George II, Queen Caroline, and other members of the royal family from 1730 onwards. In April 1749 he succeeded William Kent (1684–1748) [q.v.] as court painter. The portraits are stiff and uninteresting, usually in official robes, but they are by no means bad likenesses. In 1755 Shackleton was one of the original committee who drew up the first proposal for a royal academy of London for the improvement of painting, sculpture, and architecture. He exhibited portraits at the Free Society of Artists in 1766, and died on 16 March 1767. There are portraits by him in the National Portrait Gallery, the Foundling Hospital, Fishmongers' Hall, and most of the royal palaces.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting; Pye's Patronage of British Art.]

L. C.

SHACKLOCK, RICHARD (*fl.* 1575), catholic divine, was possibly of Lancashire extraction, and descended from the Shacklock family of Mostyn (Booker, *Hist. of Blackley*, p. 183). He was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. 1555–6, M.A. 1559, and was elected fellow of his college in the latter year. Shortly after Elizabeth's accession his devotion to the catholic faith led him to retire to Louvain, where he devoted himself to the study of civil law. The date of his death has not been ascertained.

He published: A translation of the letter of Osorio de Fonseca to Queen Elizabeth, Antwerp, 1565, 8vo (running title, 'A Pearle for a Prince'), answered by Hartwell (see Strype, *Annals*, I. ii. 84); and Cardinal Hosius's treatise, 'De Heresibus' under the title, 'A most excellent treatise of the begynning of heresyes in oure tyme,' Antwerp, 1565. He was also author of 'Epitaphium in mortem Cuthberti Scoti quondam episcopi Cestrensis,' which was translated into English and answered by Thomas Drant [q. v.]

[Fulke's Answer, ii. 4 (Parker Soc.); Strype's Annals, II. ii. 710; Cooper's Athenæ Cant.; Dodd's Church Hist.; Tanner's Bibl. Brit.; Warton's Engl. Poet. iii. 347; Ames's Typogr. Antiq. ed. Herbert, p. 871, 1610, 1612.]

W. A. S.

SHADRACH, AZARIAH (1774–1844), Welsh evangelical writer, was born on 24 June 1774 at Garn Deilo fach in the parish of Llanfair, near Fishguard, Pembrokeshire, being the fifth son of Henry and Ann Shadrach, natives of the neighbouring parish of Nevern. He had scarcely any educational opportunities, but when grown up he engaged himself as a farm servant to a local independent minister, who was reputed to possess a good library, on the condition that he should be allowed access to his employer's books after his day's work. At his master's suggestion he decided to enter the independent ministry, and in 1798 he went, as was then usual, on a preaching tour to North Wales, where he was induced by Dr. George Lewis [q. v.] to remain, undertaking the duties of schoolmaster, first at Hirnant, near Bala, and then at Pennal and Derwenlas, near Machynlleth. Towards the end of 1802 he was ordained pastor of the independent church at Llanrwst, at a salary of 5*l.* a year. Here he was largely instrumental in suppressing the wakes or 'mabsantau' which then flourished in the district. In November 1806 he removed to North Cardiganshire, where he had charge of the churches of Talybont and Llanbadarn. To these he added in 1819 the charge of a new church which he then formed at Aberystwyth, and for which, two years later, he built a chapel, becoming himself responsible for its cost. Owing to ill health he resigned his charges in August 1835, but continued to preach until his death on 18 Jan. 1844. He was buried at St. Michael's Church, Aberystwyth.

Shadrach was the author of no less than twenty-seven works, all, with one exception, written in Welsh. Some of them ran into several editions, and it is estimated that sixty thousand copies of his various books were sold altogether. They were mostly homiletic in character, being sketches of sermons he had previously delivered. Owing to his liberal use of allegory he has been styled, somewhat extravagantly, 'the Bunyan of Wales.' Perhaps his best work was 'A Looking Glass; neu Ddrych y Gwrthgiliwr,' &c. (Carmarthen, 1807, and numerous reprints), which was translated into English by Edward S. Byam, sometime chief magistrate of

Mauritius, under the title 'The Backslider's Mirror: a popular Welsh treatise, translated from the ancient British Language,' London, 1845.

Shadrach was credited with the possession of a prophetic faculty, and is specially remembered about Aberdovey on account of a curious ballad which he wrote in 1836, foretelling many unforeseen events which have since come to pass in the district. To his last work, 'Cerbyd o Goed Libanus' (Aberystwyth, 1840), are appended some autobiographical notes.

[A full biography by the Rev. Josiah Jones of Machynlleth was published, first in Y Beirniad, and subsequently in 1863 in book form. See also Rees and Thomas, Hanes Eglwysi Annibynol Cymru, iv. 134–8; Jones's Geiriadur Bywgraffyddol, ii. 542–4.] D. Ll. T.

SHADWELL, Sir CHARLES FREDERICK ALEXANDER (1814–1886), admiral, born in 1814, fourth son of Sir Lancelot Shadwell [q. v.], was in 1827 entered as a scholar at the Royal Naval College at Portsmouth, and from it passed into the navy in 1829. In 1833 he passed his examination, and was made lieutenant on 28 June 1838. He was then appointed to the 36-gun frigate Castor, going out to the Mediterranean, where in 1840 he was present at the operations on the coast of Syria, including the capture of St. Jean d'Acre. In December 1841 he was appointed first lieutenant of the Fly, employed for more than four years in surveying in Torres Straits and on the northern coast of Australia [see Jukes, Joseph Beete]. On the Fly being paid out of commission, he was promoted to the rank of commander, 27 June 1846. He then studied for some time at the Royal Naval College, taking a certificate in 'steam,' and devoting himself more especially to nautical astronomy. In February 1850 he was appointed to the Sphinx, which he took out to the East Indies, and in her had an active share in the Burma war of 1852, for which he twice received the thanks of the governor-general in council; on 7 Feb. 1853 was advanced to the rank of captain, and on 5 Dec. 1853 was nominated a C.B.

In August 1856 he commissioned the Highflyer for the China station, where in 1857 he took part in the operations in the Canton river, leading up to the capture of Canton in December [see Seymour, Sir Michael, 1802–1887], and in the disastrous attack on the Taku forts on 25 June 1859 [see Hope, Sir James, 1808–1881], when, in leading the landing party across the mud flat, he received a severe wound in the ankle, which rendered him permanently lame. In January 1860 he was relieved from the command of the Highflyer, and returned to England.

From February 1861 to August 1862 he commanded the Aboukir of 90 guns in the Mediterranean and West Indies; from October 1862 to June 1864, the Hastings flagship of Sir Lewis Jones at Queenstown; and from June 1864 till his promotion to the rank of rear-admiral on 15 Jan. 1869 was captain-superintendent of the Gosport victualling-yard and of Haslar Hospital. From August 1871 to May 1875 he was commander-in-chief in China, and was made K.C.B. on 24 May 1873. From 1878 to 1881 he was president of the Royal Naval College at Greenwich, after which he lived in retirement at Melksham in Wiltshire, where he died, unmarried, on 1 March 1886.

Despite his long, and in some instances brilliant, service, Shadwell had rather the temperament of a student than of a warrior. He was deeply attached to the study of nautical astronomy, on different details of which he published a large number of pamphlets. For many years he was engaged on a work on the subject, which gradually assumed almost encyclopædic proportions without ever reaching his high ideal of completeness; and it was still unfinished at his death. He was elected F.R.S. on 6 June 1861, and was a fellow of the Royal Astronomical and Royal Geographical societies.

[O'Byrne's Nav. Biogr. Dict.; Times, 4 March 1886; Navy Lists; personal knowledge.] J. K. L.

SHADWELL, Sir JOHN (1671–1747), physician, son of Thomas Shadwell [q. v.] and Anne, daughter of Thomas Gibbs of Norwich, was born in Middlesex, probably at Chelsea, in 1671. On 15 May 1685 he matriculated at Oxford from University College, whence he migrated to All Souls' College. He graduated B.A. on 1 June 1689 (3 Nov. 1688, according to the register at All Souls' College), M.A. on 26 April 1693, M.B. on 19 April 1697, and M.D. on 5 June 1700. As physician in ordinary to Queen Anne he was admitted a fellow of the College of Physicians on 22 Dec. 1712. On 30 Nov. 1701 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society, and he was admitted on 3 Dec. He read one paper before the society, an 'Account of an Extraordinary Skeleton' (*Philosophical Transactions*, 1741, xli. 820). He was appointed physician-extraordinary to Queen Anne on 9 Nov. 1709, and on 9 Feb. 1712 was sworn one of the physicians in ordinary, in the room of Dr. Martin Lister [q. v.], being succeeded in his former office by Dr. Hans Sloane [q. v.] The accounts of the

queen's illness in December 1713–14 in Boyer's 'History of the Reign of Queen Anne' are derived from Shadwell's letters to the Duke and Duchess of Shrewsbury. Boyer recorded Shadwell's opinion that the queen died of 'gouty humour translating itself upon the brain.' He continued to be physician in ordinary to George I and George II, and was knighted on 12 June 1715. He long resided in Windmill Street, and in 1735 withdrew from practice and retired to France, where he remained until 1740. He died at Windmill Street on 4 Jan. 1747. He was buried on 8 Jan. at Bath Abbey, where there is a tomb with an elaborate epitaph to his memory.

Sir John Shadwell was twice married; by his first wife, who died on 14 April 1722, he had issued one son and three daughters. He married, secondly, Ann Binns, at Somerset House chapel, on 12 March 1725; and on 29 June 1731 he made his will in her favour. Lady Shadwell survived until 1777.

[Munk's Coll. of Phys.; Gent. Mag.; Genealogist, new ser. vi. 98; Foster's Alumni Oxon.; Historical Reg. 1722; Malcolm's Londinium Redivivum, iv. 295.] W. W. W.

SHADWELL, Sir LANCELOT (1779–1850), last vice-chancellor of England, eldest son of Lancelot Shadwell of Lincoln's Inn, barrister-at-law, an eminent conveyancer, by his wife Elizabeth, third daughter of Charles Whitmore of Southampton, was born on 3 May 1779. He was educated at Eton, and subsequently went to St. John's College, Cambridge, where, in 1800, he became seventh wrangler, obtained the second chancellor's medal, and graduated B.A. He was elected a fellow of his college on 23 March 1801, graduated M.A. in 1803, and received the honorary degree of LL.D. in 1842. Shadwell was admitted a member of Lincoln's Inn on 30 June 1797, and was called to the bar on 10 Feb. 1803. After practising eighteen years with much success as a junior in the court of chancery, he was appointed a king's counsel on 8 Dec. 1821, and took his seat within the bar on the first day of Hilary term 1822 (J. B. Moore, *Reports of Cases in the Common Pleas and Exchequer Chamber*, 1824, vi. 441). In spite of much pecuniary loss, he refused to follow the practice then prevalent of taking briefs in more than one equity court, and honourably confined himself to practising before the lord chancellor, not being able, as he said, 'to induce himself to think that it is consistent with justice, much less with honour, to undertake to lead a cause and either forsake it altogether or give it an imperfect, hasty, and divided attention—consequences that inevitably result from the attempt to conduct causes before two judges sitting at the same time in different places' (*Gent. Mag.* 1850, ii. 545). At the general election in June 1826 Shadwell obtained a seat in the House of Commons for the borough of Ripon through the influence of Miss Elizabeth Sophia Lawrence [see Aislabie, John], under whose will he subsequently received a handsome bequest. On 14 Feb. 1827 he introduced a bill for the limitation of a writ of right and for the amendment of the law of dower, but it did not get beyond the committee stage (*Parliamentary Debates*, 2nd ser. xvi. 471–3, 474–5, xvii. 94, 174). His parliamentary career was short, for on 31 Oct. 1827 he was appointed vice-chancellor of England in the place of Sir Anthony Hart (*London Gazette*, 1827, ii. 2250). On 16 Nov. following he was sworn a member of the privy council and knighted (*ib.* 1827, ii. 2385, 2386). He presided in the vice-chancellor's court for nearly twenty-three years. During this period he twice filled the office of a commissioner of the great seal: from 23 April 1835 to 16 Jan. 1836 in conjunction with Sir C. C. Pepys (afterwards Lord Cottenham) and Sir J. B. Bosanquet, and again from 19 June to 15 July 1850 in conjunction with Lord Langdale and Sir R. M. Rolfe (afterwards Lord Cranworth). On 24 June he was seized with a sudden illness, which prevented him from sitting again during the continuance of the second commission. He died at his residence, Barn Elms, Surrey, on 10 Aug. 1850, aged 71, and was buried in Barnes churchyard.

Shadwell married, first, on 8 Jan. 1805, Harriet, daughter of Anthony Richardson of Powis Place, Great Ormond Street, a London merchant, and sister of Sir John Richardson, some time a justice of the common pleas, by whom he had Sir Charles Frederick Alexander Shadwell [q. v.], and five other sons. His first wife died on 25 May 1814, and on 4 Jan. 1816 he married, secondly, Frances, third and youngest daughter of Captain Locke, by whom he had six sons and five daughters. Shadwell's second wife died on 27 Oct. 1854, aged 66.

Shadwell, who was the last 'vice-chancellor of England,' was a learned and able judge, with a handsome presence and courteous manners. Of his complete subjection to Bethell, the leader of his court, many stories are told (see Nash, *Life of Richard, Lord Westbury*, 1888, i. 69, 84–5, 95). He was president of the Society of Psychrolutes, the qualification for the membership of that body being the daily practice of bathing out

of doors from November to March (Roget, *History of the 'Old Water Colour' Society*, 1891, ii. 210–11). He was in the habit of bathing every day, whatever the weather, in one of the creeks of the Thames near Barn Elms, and while thus engaged is said to have granted an injunction on one occasion in the long vacation. In his early days he was an active pedestrian (see Arnould, *Memoir of Lord Denman*, 1873, i. 17, 25), and in 1797 he served as a member of the light-horse volunteers (Lord Colchester, *Diary and Correspondence*, 1861, i. 114). He was elected a bencher of Lincoln's Inn on 30 Jan. 1822, and acted as treasurer in 1833.

His portrait, painted in 1842 by Thomas Phillips, R.A., is in the possession of his inn. His decisions will be found in the 'Reports' of Nicholas Simons (ii. 41 to xvii. 166).

The vice-chancellor's eighth son, Lawrence Shadwell (1823–1887), born in July 1823, was educated at Eton, and entered the army as ensign in the 98th foot on 26 April 1841. He served in the China expedition of 1842, the Punjab campaign of 1848–9, and in the Crimean war of 1854–6. He held the appointment of assistant quartermaster-general in the Crimea during the greater part of the war. After his return to England, he was assistant quartermaster-general to the troops in the northern district from April 1857 to September 1861, in Nova Scotia from January to August 1862, and in the south-western district of England from April 1864 to February 1866. From 1866 to 1871 he was military assistant at the war office. He was promoted to the rank of major-general on 6 March 1868, and was created a companion of the Bath on 2 June 1869. He was granted a reward for distinguished and meritorious services in January 1874, and was advanced to the rank of lieutenant-general on 27 April 1879, and to that of general on 1 July 1881. He retired from the army on 25 July 1881, and died at Reading on 16 Aug. 1887, aged 64. Lawrence Shadwell married, on 2 Aug. 1853, Helen Frances, daughter of the Rev. Edward Coleridge, vicar of Mapledurham, Oxfordshire, and fellow of Eton College.

[Foss's Judges of England, 1864, ix. 261–4; Hardy's Memoirs of Lord Langdale, 1852, ii. 258–68; Georgian Era, 1833, ii. 552; Law Times, xv. 467; Legal Observer, xl. 305; De Gex and Smale's Reports, vol. iv. pp. ix–xi; Illustrated London News, 17 Aug. 1850 (with portrait); Brayley and Britton's Surrey, 1850, iii. 437, 438; Ann. Reg. 1850, app. to chron. pp. 251–2; Gent. Mag. 1805, i. 83, 1814 i. 628, 1845 ii. 423, 1854 ii. 644; Baker's History of St. John's College, Cambridge, 1869, pt. i. pp. 311, 312; Grad. Cantabr. 1856, p. 341; Stapylton's Eton School Lists, 1864, pp. 14, 21, 172; Official Return of Lists of Members of Parliament, pt. ii. p. 309; Haydn's Book of Dignities, 1890; Lincoln's Inn Registers; Army Lists.] G. F. R. B.

SHADWELL, THOMAS (1642?–1692), dramatist and poet-laureate, was grandson of George Shadwell, and son of John Shadwell of the parish of Broomhill, Norfolk. He claimed descent from the family of Shadwell of Lyndowne, Staffordshire. John Shadwell, who had eleven children, was of the Middle Temple, and lost much of his property at the civil war. He was a justice of the peace for Middlesex, Norfolk, and Suffolk, and after the Restoration was appointed recorder of Galway and receiver there to the Duke of York, and subsequently was attorney-general at Tangier under William O'Brien, second earl of Inchiquin [q.v.] He was buried at Oxburgh, Norfolk, on 2 March 1684 (Blomefield, *Norfolk*, vi. 197; *Oxburgh Register*).

Shadwell was born in 1640 or 1642 at Broomhill House in the parish of Weeting (cf. *Caius College Register*; *Notes and Queries*, 8th ser. iv. 109). He was educated at home for five years, and afterwards for a year at the school of Bury St. Edmunds. On 17 Dec. 1656 he was admitted a pensioner to Caius College, Cambridge, 'then aged 14,' but he left without taking any degree, and entered the Middle Temple. After studying there for some time, he travelled abroad, and on his return turned his attention to literature.

Shadwell's first play, 'The Sullen Lovers,' based on Molière's 'Les Fâcheux,' was brought out at Lincoln's Inn Fields on 5 May 1668. It was acted twelve days (Shadwell's wife taking the part of the heroine, Emilia), and was revived when the court was at Dover in 1670 (Downes, *Roscius Anglicanus*, 1708, p. 29). In the preface Shadwell avowed himself a disciple of Ben Jonson, his endeavour being to represent variety of humours, as was the practice of his master. In September 1668 Pepys asked Shadwell to dinner; but when Shadwell's second play, 'The Royal Shepherdess,' which was adapted from Fountain's 'The Rewards of Virtue,' was produced before a crowded house in February 1669, Pepys said it was 'the silliest for words and design and everything that ever I saw in my whole life.' A much better play, 'The Humourists,' produced at the Theatre Royal in 1670, is said by Gildon to have met with many enemies on its first appearance. 'The Miser,' 1671, is an adaptation from Molière, but contains

eight characters not to be found in 'L'Avare.' In the preface, Shadwell says that Molière's part in the play had not suffered in his hands: '"Tis not barrenness of wit or invention that makes us borrow from the French, but laziness.' 'The Miser' was dedicated to the Earl of Dorset. Nell Gwyn wrote: 'My Lord of Dorset . . . drinks ale with Shadwell and Mr. Harris at the Duke's House all day long' (*Notes and Queries*, 4th ser. vii. 3).

'Epsom Wells,' one of Shadwell's best plays in spite of its coarseness, was acted at Dorset Garden in 1672. Shadwell says, in the dedication to his patron the Duke of Newcastle, that the town was 'extremely kind to it.' Sir Charles Sedley wrote a prologue, and, according to Dryden, gave the author help in writing the play. In 1673 Shadwell constructed an opera out of Shakespeare's 'Tempest,' with the sub-title of 'The Enchanted Island,' which was given at Dorset Garden with much success, and printed in 4to (Downes; cf. Genest, i. 155). In the dedication (to Monmouth) of 'Psyche,' produced at Dorset Garden in February 1674, Shadwell alludes to the charge that others wrote the best parts of his plays. This opera, which is in rhymed verse, was based on Molière, and was played for about eight nights. The scenery cost 800*l*. 'The Libertine,' a tragedy with Don Juan as hero, and 'The Virtuoso' were brought out in 1676. In the dedication to the former, Shadwell replied to the charge of hasty writing preferred against him by Elkanah Settle [q. v.] in a postscript to 'Love and Revenge,' 1675; in 'The Virtuoso' he regretted that want of means prevented him devoting his whole time to the leisurely writing of 'correct' comedies. In 'Timon of Athens,' 1678, Shadwell spoke of the inimitable hand of Shakespeare, but added, 'Yet I can truly say I have made it into a play.' 'The True Widow,' produced in 1679 or perhaps 1678, and dedicated to Sedley, was not popular, though Shadwell was well satisfied with it. 'The Woman Captain,' 1680, was followed by 'The Lancashire Witches,' 1681, which was successful in spite of the efforts of a party who said that the character of the chaplain, Smerk, was an insult to the church of England. Much of the play was struck out by the licenser before it was acted, but it was afterwards printed in full (on its coarseness, cf. *Spectator*, No. 141).

In 1671 Shadwell referred to Dryden, in the preface to 'The Humourists,' as his 'particular friend;' he joined Crowne and Dryden in an attack on Settle's 'Empress of Morocco' in 1674, and in 1679 Dryden contributed a prologue to Shadwell's 'True Widow.' But in the preface to his first play (1668) Shadwell had written in opposition to views recently expressed in Dryden's 'Essay of Dramatic Poesy,' while in 'The Virtuoso' (1676) he sneered at contemporary dramatists, and Dryden must have felt that some of the remarks related to his writings and to 'Aureng-Zebe' in particular. There was, however, no open feud until 1682, when Dryden produced his second satire on Shaftesbury, 'The Medal,' prefaced by an epistle to the whigs. Shadwell replied with 'The Medal of John Bayes: a Satire against Folly and Knavery,' and with a prose 'Epistle to the Tories,' in which, as well as in the verse, he grossly libelled his opponent, both as poet and man, calling him an 'abandoned rascal,' 'half wit, half fool.' Shadwell is supposed also to have been the author of a rather less offensive satire, 'The Tory Poets,' 1682, in which Dryden is attacked, in company with Otway and others. Dryden took his revenge in 'MacFlecknoe, or a Satire on the True Blue Protestant Poet, T. S.,' published in October 1682, where Shadwell is represented as the literary son and successor of the poetaster Richard Flecknoe [q. v.] In this savage attack it was alleged that Shadwell was void of wit, and 'never deviates into sense,' and there were allusions to Shadwell's 'mountain belly,' slowness of composition, comparison of himself with Jonson, and the help he obtained from Sedley. A month later Dryden wrote another bitter attack in Nahum Tate's second part of 'Absalom and Achitophel,' where, under the name of Og, he described Shadwell as a drunken 'mass of foul corrupted matter,' and ridiculed his poverty and his habit of taking opium.

In the following year Shadwell and Thomas Hunt (1627?–1688) [q. v.] attacked Dryden in 'Some Reflections upon the pretended Parallel in the play called the Duke of Guise,' 1683, and Dryden retorted in the 'Vindication of the Duke of Guise,' in which reference was made especially to Shadwell's drinking habits and to his ignorance of the classics. Shadwell was again attacked in a scarce eulogy on Dryden, 'The Laurel,' 1685. It was not until 1687 that Shadwell, in a translation of the 'Tenth Satire of Juvenal,' dedicated to Sir Charles Sedley, and written as a counterblast to a translation by Dryden's friend, Henry Higden [q. v.], replied to 'Mac Flecknoe.' In this he rather proved his dulness by taking literally Dryden's reference to him as an Irishman. In conclusion he alleged that Dryden, when taxed with the authorship of the satire, 'denied it with all the execrations he could think

of.' There is, however, abundant proof that Dryden made no secret of the authorship.

After an interval of seven years Shadwell produced one of his best plays, 'The Squire of Alsatia' (May 1688), in which the rogues make free use of their cant language. The play ran for thirteen nights, and the author's third night brought him in 130*l.*, '16*l.* more than any other poet ever did.' The title first proposed seems to have been the 'Alsatia Bully' (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 5th Rep. p. 198, 12th Rep. pt. v. p. 119).

At the Revolution Dryden lost the laureateship, and was succeeded by Shadwell, as poet-laureate and historiographer royal. The salary of 300*l.* a year was sometimes in arrear (*ib.* 13th Rep. v. 373, 14th Rep. vi. 166). The lord chamberlain, on being asked why he did not give the laureateship to a better poet, is reported to have said, 'I do not pretend to say how great a poet Shadwell may be, but I am sure he is an honest man.' Besides some loyal poems Shadwell produced in 1689 the comedy 'Bury Fair,' based partly on the Duke of Newcastle's 'Triumphant Widow' and Molière's 'Les Précieuses Ridicules.' In the dedication to Lord Dorset Shadwell says that it was written during an eight months' illness, and that for nearly ten years his ruin had been designed, and he had been kept from the exercise of a profession which would have afforded him a competent living. After the 'Amorous Bigot' in 1690, Shadwell brought out 'The Scowrers' (1691), an excellent but coarse comedy, which gives an interesting picture of the times.

Shadwell died suddenly on 19 Nov. 1692, and was buried at Chelsea on the 24th. An article upon him appeared in Peter Motteux's 'Gentleman's Journal' for November; and in a funeral sermon, by Dr. Nicholas Brady, printed in 1693, Shadwell is highly praised as a complete gentleman and an unalterable friend, with a deep sense of religion. The report that he died of an overdose of opium is rendered probable by Brady's remark that 'he never took his dose of opium but he solemnly recommended himself to God by prayer, as if he were then about to resign up his soul.' Shadwell's will (P. C. C. 231 Fane) is without date, but on 13 Dec. 1692 Ellinor Leigh, wife of Anthony Leigh, of St. Bride's parish, gentleman, made affidavit that she had been present at the execution of the will in 1690. Probate was granted to the widow, Anne, daughter of Thomas Gibbs, late of Norwich, proctor and public notary. Shadwell left rings to the Earl of Dorset, Sir Charles Sedley, William Jephson, and Colonel Edmund Ashton, 'my most dear friends by whom I have been extremely obliged.' He wished to be buried in flannel. To his son John he left 5*l.* for mourning, together with his books, including Hobbes's 'Works,' with a warning of 'some ill opinions' of Hobbes concerning government. He left his property, including his interest in the Dorset Garden Theatre, to his 'diligent, careful, and provident' wife, commending to her the interests of his children, especially his little daughter Anne (afterwards Mrs. Oldfield). Mrs. Shadwell, as we have seen, was an actress; she appeared in Otway's 'Don Carlos' in 1676, in 'Timon of Athens' in 1678, and was living at Chelsea in 1696.

Estimates of Shadwell's literary powers differ widely. Rochester said that 'if Shadwell had burnt all he wrote, and printed all he spoke, he would have had more wit and humour than any other poet.' Elsewhere, Rochester praised 'Hasty Shadwell and slow Wycherley,' while Addison, in the 'Spectator,' applauds his humour (No. 35). Shadwell depended, like Jonson—whom he vainly tried to imitate—for the amusement of his hearers on the 'humours' of his characters; he had little wit, though it is not fair to bracket him, as Dryden did, with Settle. His comedies are useful for the vivid account they give of the life of his time. Although no poet, he was, as Scott says, an acute observer of nature, and he showed considerable skill in invention. He seems to have been naturally coarse, and was grossly indecent without designing to corrupt.

The dates of publication of Shadwell's plays were as follows: 1. 'The Sullen Lovers,' 1668. 2. 'The Royal Shepherdess,' 1669. 3. 'The Humourists,' 1671. 4. 'The Miser,' 1672. 5. 'Epsom Wells,' 1673. 6. 'Psyche,' 1675. 7. 'The Virtuoso, 1676. 8. 'The Libertine,' 1676. 9. 'Timon of Athens,' 1678. 10. 'A True Widow,' 1679. 11. 'The Woman Captain,' 1680. 12. 'The Lancashire Witches,' 1681. 13. 'The Squire of Alsatia,' 1688. 14. 'Bury Fair,' 1689. 15. 'The Amorous Bigot,' 1690. 16. 'The Scowrers,' 1691. 17. 'The Volunteers,' 1693 (posthumous, with a dedication to the queen, signed by the widow, and a prologue by D'Urfey). A play called 'The Innocent Impostors' is also referred to Shadwell, but cannot be traced (*Hist. MSS. Comm.* 4th Rep. App. pp. 280–1). Shadwell published also the following occasional verses, in folio form, besides the translation from Juvenal and 'Medal of John Bayes' already noticed: 1. 'A Lenten Prologue refused by the Players' (in reply to the 'Medal'), 1683. 2. 'A Congratulatory Poem on His Highness the Prince

of Orange's Coming into England,' 1689. 3. 'A Congratulatory Poem to the most Illustrious Queen Mary, upon her arrival into England,' 1689. 4. 'Ode to the King on his Return from Ireland,' 1690. 5. 'Ode on the Anniversary of the King's Birth,' 1690. 6. 'Votum Perenne: a Poem to the King on New Year's Day,' 1692. Other verses are in Gildon's 'Poetical Remains of . . . Mr. Shadwell,' &c., 1698. A 'Song for St. Cecilia's Day,' 1690, is given in Nichols's 'Select Collection of Poems,' v. 298–301.

Shadwell's eldest son (afterwards Sir John Shadwell [q. v.]) placed a small white marble monument in the Poet's Corner in Westminster Abbey, the inscription upon which is incorrect (cf. STANLEY, *Westminster Abbey*, 1868, p. 278), and in 1720 brought out a collected edition of his father's dramatic works, in four volumes, with a dedication to George I. A portrait by S. Gribelin is prefixed to this edition; an anonymous mezzotint by W. Faithorne, jun., after a painting of Kerseboom's, is also said to represent Shadwell (NOBLE, *Continuation of Granger*, 1806, i. 255). George Clint [q. v.] painted a portrait (which now belongs to Mr. J. J. Coleman of Carrow Abbey, Norwich) from Faithorne's engraving; it shows a resemblance in person between Shadwell and his master, Ben Jonson. Clint's painting was engraved by Duvean.

CHARLES SHADWELL (*fl.* 1710–1720), a younger son of Thomas Shadwell, wrote plays which were published at Dublin in two volumes in 1720. In the dedication of this collection to Lady Newtown, to whom he owed many obligations, Shadwell refers to his father, and says that it was reduced circumstances that led him to be a poet. He seems to have served in the army in Portugal, and in 1710 was supervisor of the excise in Kent. His first piece, 'The Fair Quaker of Deal' (1710), was dedicated to his friends in Kent. It was produced at the Theatre Royal, Drury Lane, with great success; thanks partly to the acting of Miss Santlow as the heroine. The 'Humours of the Army' appeared in 1713, with a dedication to Major-general Newton, governor of Londonderry, under whom Shadwell had served in Portugal. Shadwell's other plays, acted at the Smock Alley Theatre, Dublin, and printed in 1720, were: (1) 'Irish Hospitality;' (2) 'The Plotting Lovers;' (3) 'The Hasty Wedding;' (4) 'The Sham Prince;' (5) 'Rotherich O'Connor.'

[A short life was prefixed to the collected edition of Shadwell's Works, 1720. See also Biogr. Dramatica; Biogr. Britannica; Genest, vol. i.; Langbaine's Lives; Whincop's Dramatic Lists; Jacob's Poetical Register; Gent. Mag. 1738 p. 235, 1745 p. 99, 1819 ii. 120; Malone's Dryden; Austin and Ralph's Lives of the Poets-Laureate; Dryden's Works, ed. Scott; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. i. 5, 385, viii. 353; Elwin's Pope, iii. 354, iv. 316, 340; Ward's Dramatic Literature, ii. 572–7; Notes and Queries, passim; Faulkner's Chelsea; Hist. MSS. Comm. 6th Rep. pp. 749, 764, 7th Rep. p. 805. Criticism upon Shadwell's writings will be found in the Retrospective Review, xvi. 55–96; Colburn's New Monthly Magazine, new ser. iii. 292, 353; Blackwood's Magazine, ix. 280–2; information kindly supplied by James Hooper, esq., Norwich.]

G. A. A.

SHAFTESBURY, EARLS OF. [See COOPER, ANTHONY ASHLEY, first EARL, 1621–1683; COOPER, ANTHONY ASHLEY, third EARL, 1671–1713; COOPER, ANTHONY ASHLEY, seventh EARL, 1801–1885.]

SHAIRP, JOHN CAMPBELL (1819–1885), professor of poetry at Oxford, was born at Houstoun, West Lothian, on 30 July 1819. His father, Major Norman Shairp, served in India, and his mother was Elizabeth Binning Campbell, daughter of John Campbell of Kildalloig, Argyllshire. Through his great-grandmother, Anne Scott of Harden, Shairp was a lineal descendant of 'the flower of Yarrow' [see under SCOTT, WALTER, 1550?–1629?]. He thus claimed kinship both with Celt and borderer (*Principal Shairp and his Friends*, p. 323). After preliminary training by a tutor, he was educated at Edinburgh academy, and at the end of his school-days made his first acquaintance with Wordsworth's poetry. From 1836 to 1839 he was at Glasgow University, where he stood first in logic and moral philosophy. As an active member of the Peel Club, which discussed public questions, and as member of a literary coterie that included his senior Norman Macleod, Henry Douglas (afterwards bishop of Bombay), whose sister he married, and others, he rapidly became a good speaker and a skilled critic and expositor of poetry. In his holidays he began adventurous rambles in the highlands and on the borders, which he continued late in life.

In 1840 Shairp passed as Snell exhibitioner from Glasgow to Balliol College, Oxford, somewhat vaguely designing to take orders. With Arthur Hugh Clough [q. v.], John Duke Coleridge (afterwards Lord Coleridge), and others, he formed at Balliol lasting friendships, chronicling his impressions in his graceful 'Balliol Scholars' ('Glen Desseray and other Poems'). He was much impressed by Newman, for whom he retained a lasting respect. In 1842 he won the Newdigate prize for a poem on Charles XII; it gained the favourable notice of Charles John (Bernadotte),

king of Sweden. Failing to secure an Oriel fellowship, Shairp became in 1846 an assistant-master at Rugby under Tait. He proved a good teacher, and, according to a colleague, his literary enthusiasm and high moral tone made him 'a missionary to the masters.' In 1847, when on a holiday tour in Scotland, he found Clough with a reading party in Inverness-shire, and it is believed that Philip in 'The Bothy of Tober-na-Vuolich' (then in progress) embodies characteristics of Shairp (*Principal Shairp and his Friends*, p. 110). In 1852 he was an unsuccessful candidate for the moral philosophy chair at Edinburgh. In 1856 he retired from Rugby to conduct for a time Professor Lushington's Greek classes at Glasgow, and in 1857 he was appointed assistant to Dr. Pyper, the Latin professor at St. Andrews. He succeeded Pyper on his death in 1861, and delivered a striking inaugural address on Latin literature. As a professor he was earnest and stimulating, never overlooking the importance of sound scholarship, but grappling also with the thought of his author, and expounding comparative literature. He advocated a higher standard for entrants to the universities, and warmly encouraged a residential college hall at St. Andrews, which, however, had only a brief existence. In 1868 Shairp succeeded James David Forbes as principal of the United College, St. Andrews, occupying the Latin chair at the same time till 1872. He was a vigorous head, and interested himself in university extension, specially favouring a union of interests between St. Andrews and Dundee. In 1872 he built near Aberfeldy, Perthshire, a villa which he named Cuil-Aluinn (bonnie nook).

In June 1877 Shairp succeeded Sir Francis Hastings Charles Doyle as professor of poetry at Oxford, delivering his first lecture ('On the Province of Poetry') in the following Michaelmas term. Although he was somewhat out of sympathy with the prevalent taste of the university, he made an impression by his manifest sincerity. He was reappointed, according to usage, in 1882. In 1884 the degree of LL.D. was conferred on him at the tercentenary celebration of Edinburgh University. Owing to failing health at the end of this year, he spent several months in the north of Italy. He died, while on a visit to Ormsary, Argyllshire, on 18 Sept. 1885. He was buried in the Houstoun vault, within the church of his native parish. Memorial windows in the chapel of St. Salvator's College, St. Andrews, and the Balliol library, Oxford, chronicle his connection with the two universities. A characteristic portrait, by Robert Herdman, R.S.A., hangs in the hall of the United College, St. Andrews.

On 23 June 1853 Shairp married Eliza Douglas, daughter of Henry Alexander Douglas, and granddaughter of Sir William Douglas, bart., of Kilhead, Dumfriesshire. The death of their first son in the spring of 1855 prompted some graceful and pathetic verses. Shairp was survived by his wife and one son, Mr. Campbell Shairp, advocate, who became sheriff-substitute of Argyllshire.

From his youth Shairp was a writer, but he did not publish early. In 1856 he issued a vigorous pamphlet on 'The Wants of Scottish Universities and some of the Remedies.' After settling at St. Andrews, he contributed frequently to periodicals. In 1864 he published 'Kilmahoe: a Highland Pastoral, and other Poems,' in which he revealed his love of nature and of Scottish scenes and interests, and displayed a strong and original, if somewhat irregular, lyrical gift. Among the miscellaneous pieces in the volume, the tender and haunting 'Bush aboon Traquair' easily won and retained popularity. 'Studies in Poetry and Philosophy' appeared in 1868 (4th edit. 1886). It comprises essays on Wordsworth, Coleridge, and Keble, displaying the author's critical and expository powers at their best, and a suggestive article on 'The Moral Motive power.' 'Culture and Religion,' which was published in 1870 and speedily went into several editions, skilfully elaborates the thesis that man's spiritual nature must be postulated in any adequate philosophy of life. In 1873 Shairp collaborated, with Professor Tait, in the 'Life and Letters of J. D. Forbes;' and in 1874 he edited, with knowledge and enthusiasm, Dorothy Wordsworth's 'Journal.' In 1877 he published 'Poetic Interpretation of Nature,' a careful delineation of a congenial theme. In 1879 appeared his monograph on Burns in the series 'English Men of Letters.' Outspoken and uncompromising in its treatment of the man, the work is sane and convincing in its criticism of the poet. The Oxford lectures, dealing with poetry and various poets, from Burns to Cardinal Newman, were published in 1881 as 'Aspects of Poetry.' Professor Veitch collected in a volume in 1887 a number of articles by Shairp, under the title 'Sketches in History and Poetry.' In 1888 Mr. Francis Turner Palgrave edited 'Glen Desseray, and other Poems,' a collection which includes, besides the Jacobite title-piece, various effective lyrics, such as 'The Mountain Walk' and 'The Wilderness,' and the memorial poem 'Balliol Scholars.' Shairp's sketches of departed friends are invariably charged with fine feeling. He paid

tributes, in biographies or prefatory introductions, to (among others) Norman Macleod, Clough, Professor Ferrier, Dean Stanley, and Erskine of Linlathen.

[Professor Knight's Principal Shairp and his Friends; Dean Boyle's Preface to Studies in Poetry and Philosophy, ed. 1886, and his article in the Guardian, 30 Sept. 1885; Merrie England, October 1885; Macleod's Memorials of John Macintosh; Memoir of Norman Macleod; personal knowledge.] T. B.

SHAKERLEY, JEREMY (*fl.* 1650), astronomer and mathematician, was author of 'The Anatomy of Urania Practica, or a short Mathematical Discourse; laying open the errors and impertinences delivered in a Treatise lately published by Mr. Vincent Wing and Mr. William Leybourne, under the title of Urania Practica,' London, 1649. Leybourne retorted in 'Ens fixum Shakerlæi, or the annihilation of Mr. Jeremie Shakerley,' 1649.

Shakerley's chief claim to distinction is as the second observer of the transit of Mercury. The first transit was observed in 1631 (Chambers, *Astronomy*, 1889, p. 341). According to Vincent Wing [q. v.] (*Astronomia Britannica*, London, 1669, p. 312), Shakerley foretold the transit of 1651 in a colloquy or disputation entitled 'De Mercurio in sole videndo.' No trace of this tract seems extant. Wing asserts that Shakerley went to India to observe the phenomenon, and that he made his observations by means of a telescope at Surat on the morning of 24 Oct. 1651.

While still absent, apparently in India, there appeared in London Shakerley's 'Tabulæ Britannicæ, the British Tables; wherein is contained Logistical Arithmetick, the Doctrine of the Sphere, astronomicall chronologie, the ecclesiasticall accompt, the Equation and Reduction of Time, together with the Calculation of the Motions of the Fixed and Wandering Stars, and the Eclipses of the Luminaries. Calculated for the Meridian of London from the hypothesis of Bullialdus and the Observations of Mr. Horrox' (pp. 92 and tables), London, 1653, R. & W. Leybourn. Wallis wrote to Collins on 13 Feb. 1671–2, 'What Shakerley's tables are I know not;' but Flamsteed, addressing the same correspondent on 13 Aug. 1672, seemed to be better informed. 'The precepts,' Flamsteed wrote, 'I found translated by the ingenuous (*sic*) Mr. Shakerley, which I transcribed from him because I thought them clearer expressed than the English ones in Crabtree's letter, though they are in substance the very same' (Rigaud, *Corresp. of Scientific Men*, ii. 157, 351).

[Authorities cited.] H. F. B.

SHAKESPEAR, JOHN (1774–1858), orientalist, born at Lount, near Ashby, Leicestershire, in August 1774, was the son of a small farmer. He was educated at the parish school at Staunton Herald, and afterwards at a school kept by a clergyman, who brought him to the notice of Francis Rawdon-Hastings, lord Rawdon (afterwards Marquis of Hastings) [q. v.], the lord of the manor. Lord Rawdon, who was contemplating a mission to North Africa, sent Shakespear to learn Arabic in London, where he studied the language under Richardson and James Golius. In 1793 Lord Rawdon obtained for him a post in the commissariat of a force under his command, which it was proposed to send in aid of the insurgents in Brittany. About 1805 he was appointed to an oriental professorship at the Royal Military College, Marlow. When the East India Company, in 1809, opened a training college for cadets at Addiscombe, he was appointed professor of Hindustani there on 200*l.* a year, his salary rising in 1811 to 400*l.* and in 1822 to 600*l.* While at Addiscombe he compiled a Hindustani grammar and dictionary, and various text-books. Of the first edition of his dictionary he said that it was little more than a revision of one published in Calcutta by Dr. William Hunter, who died at Java in 1812; but subsequent editions contained the results of his own researches. In 1829 he retired from the East India Company's service with a pension of 300*l.* a year. Being a man of singularly frugal and self-denying habits, he put by a considerable proportion of his salary as a professor, in addition to which he made large sums by the sale of his books. He was thus enabled on his retirement to purchase Langley Priory in Leicestershire, thereby fulfilling, it was said, the ambition of his boyhood (Vibart, *Addiscombe*).

In 1856 he gave 2,500*l.* to the trustees of the fund for preserving William Shakespeare's house at Stratford-on-Avon, this munificent offer being prompted apparently by the idea that he might have been descended from a branch of the dramatist's family. In his will he bequeathed a further sum to the fund (*Athenæum*, 1858, ii. 85); but the court of chancery pronounced the bequest invalid. He died at Langley Priory on 10 June 1858 unmarried, the estate passing to his nephew, Charles Bowles, who took the surname of Shakespear.

There is a portrait by H. P. Briggs, painted in 1835, and two others by artists unnamed, all at Langley Priory.

He was author of: 1. 'Hindustani Grammar,' 1813; 6th edit. 1855. 2. 'Dictionary

of Hindustani and English,' 1817; to the fourth edition of 1849 was added an English-Hindustani Dictionary. 3. 'Muntakhabat-i-Hindi, Selections in Hindustani,' 1817–18. 4. 'Introduction to the Hindustani Language,' 1845.

[Royal Asiatic Society's Journal, vol. xvii. old ser.; Vibart's Addiscombe; information supplied by Charles Shakespear, esq., J.P.]

S. W.

SHAKESPEAR, SIR RICHMOND CAMPBELL (1812–1861), soldier and administrator, youngest son of John Talbot Shakespear, of the Bengal civil service, by Emily (eldest daughter of William Makepeace Thackeray of the Bengal civil service and his wife, Amelia Richmond Webb), was born in India on 11 May 1812. He came to England with his first cousin, William Makepeace Thackeray [q. v.], and was with him at a preparatory school, 'governed,' says Thackeray, 'by a horrible little tyrant.' Both boys afterwards passed to the Charterhouse school. In Colonel Newcome, Thackeray embodied some traits in the character of Richmond's eldest brother, Colonel John Dowdeswell Shakespear. Shakespear entered the military college of the East India Company at Addiscombe in 1827, obtaining a commission as second lieutenant in the Bengal artillery on 12 June 1828. He arrived in India on 10 Feb. 1829, and served at various stations in Bengal until 19 Jan. 1837, when he was appointed assistant in the revenue department and stationed at Gorakhpur.

On 25 Sept. 1838, having returned to military duty, he joined at Delhi the 6th light field (camel) battery of nine-pounders under the command of Captain Augustus Abbott, and, leaving Delhi on 4 Nov., marched in the army of the Indus under Major-general Sir Willoughby Cotton and Lieutenant-general Sir John (afterwards Lord) Keane, to the Indus, and on through the Bolan pass to Kandahar, where he arrived in April 1839. He took part in the expedition to Girishk under Sir Robert Henry Sale [q. v.] against the Kandahar chiefs, returning to Kandahar on 29 May.

On 21 June he was appointed political assistant in the mission to Herat of Major d'Arcy Todd [q. v.], the newly appointed envoy to Shah Kamran. Shakespear's special duty was to instruct the soldiery of Herat in gunnery and drill. On the advance of the Russians on Khiva, Todd sent Shakespear to the khan of Khiva to aid in the negotiation for the surrender of the Russian captives, whose detention had led to the Russian advance. Shakespear left Herat with an escort on 14 May 1840, reached Merv (265 miles) on 23 May, and Khiva, 433 miles further, on 12 June. He induced the khan to make a treaty with the Russian general, who was within three days' march of his capital. The prominent conditions of the treaty were that the Russian force should withdraw within Russian territory, and that the Khivans should restore all Russian captives who had been taken into slavery by them. Shakespear undertook to collect all Russian captives within the Khivan dominions, and march them in safety to Russia. By 14 Aug. he succeeded in collecting 416 captives, believed to be all that there were. He carried them successfully across the Turkestan desert in defiance of the wild tribes by which it was infested, and on 1 Oct. delivered the grateful captives to the Russian authorities of Orenburg. From Orenburg he posted to Moscow by way of Lanbeersk, and continued his journey by diligence to St. Petersburg, where he arrived on 3 Nov. He was much fêted and was cordially received by the czar. From St. Petersburg Shakespear carried despatches to London. On 31 Aug. 1841 he was knighted by the queen. He contributed to 'Blackwood's Magazine,' June 1842, a paper entitled 'A Journey from Herat to Orenburg,' which was republished by Blackwood in the series of 'Travel, Adventure, and Sport.'

Shakespear returned to India the same year. On 3 Jan. 1842 he was appointed military secretary to Major-general (afterwards Field-marshal Sir) George Pollock [q. v.], commanding the force assembled at Peshawar for the relief of Sir Robert Sale at Jalalabad. He reached Peshawar on 5 Feb., and remained there for two months while the column was organised and reinforcements were brought up. On 31 March he accompanied Pollock to Jamrud, and on 5 April entered the Khaibar pass. He volunteered to accompany Lieutenant-colonel Taylor as his aide-de-camp in his attack on the heights on the right, and took command of the men lately comprising the garrison of Ali-Masjid. In his despatch Pollock mentioned that Shakespear's exertions throughout the day were conspicuous and unceasing (*London Gazette*, 7 June 1842). He again distinguished himself at Mamu Khel on 24 Aug., at Jagdalak on 8 Sept. and at Tezin on 12 and 13 Sept. On each occasion he was mentioned by Pollock in despatches. On arrival at Kabul on 15 Sept. he volunteered to accompany six hundred Kazlbach horsemen to rescue the British captives detained by the Afghans at Bamian. The captives, by the exertions of Eldred Pottinger [q. v.] and by liberal bribery,

had already effected their own release, but Shakespear, meeting them on the 17th at the foot of the Kalu pass, was of assistance in escorting them through the disturbed country until, on the 20th, they met Sir Robert Sale coming up in support with a brigade. Shakespear arrived at Kabul with the captives on 22 Sept. (*ib.* 6 Dec. 1842). On 12 Oct. he accompanied Pollock on his return march to India. Meeting with little opposition, he reached Peshawar on 12 Nov. and crossed the Satlaj by the bridge of boats at Firozpur on 19 Dec., when the army was received by the viceroy and commander-in-chief with every demonstration of honour. Shakespear received the war medal with clasp for Kabul.

On 28 March 1843 Shakespear was appointed deputy commissioner of Sagar. He was promoted to be brevet captain on 12 June of the same year. In October he was transferred to Gwalior as assistant to Lieutenant-colonel Sleeman, political agent for affairs in Scindia's dominions, and took part in the war against the Mahratta forces, which was needed to establish the government at Gwalior on a firm foundation. He was aide-de-camp to Sir Hugh (afterwards Lord) Gough at the battle of Maharajpur on 29 Dec. 1843, and received the best thanks of the commander-in-chief of the army in his despatch of 4 Jan. 1844 (*ib.* 8 March 1845), as well as the war medal. After this he was employed in getting possession of Gwalior fort and in disbanding the Darbar troops. On return to civil duties he remained in political charge of Gwalior until June 1848. During this time it was not found necessary to employ the contingent on active service. On 1 May 1846 he was promoted to be regimental captain.

In 1848 sickness compelled Shakespear to go to the hills on leave; but, on the outbreak of the second Sīkh war, he returned to military duty on 20 Oct. Joining at Firozpur the army of the Panjab, under Sir Hugh Gough, he was present at the action of Ramnagar on 22 Nov. On 1 Dec. he received promotion to a brevet majority for his previous services. On 3 Dec. he was in the action of Sadulapur or passage of the Chenab, and on 13 Jan. 1849 he commanded his battery of six heavy guns at the battle of Chillianwalla, and was mentioned in despatches (*ib.* 3 and 7 March 1849). At the battle of Gujerat on 21 Feb. 1849, Shakespear again commanded his heavy-gun battery. The battle opened with a three hours' artillery cannonade by the British at a range of 1,500 yards and at the rate of forty rounds per gun per hour. Lord Gough pronounced this cannonade to be the most magnificent he had ever witnessed and terrible in its effects. After the cannonade the artillery advanced with extraordinary celerity, taking up successive forward positions and steadily driving the enemy back. Shakespear was wounded, and was obliged to return to the hills upon sick certificate. He was thanked in despatches for his exertions (*ib.* 19 April 1849). He received the war medal with two clasps, one for Chillianwalla and the other for Gujerat, and on 7 June he was promoted to be brevet lieutenant-colonel for his services.

Shakespear returned to civil employment at Gwalior towards the end of 1849. In 1851 he was transferred to the political agency at Jodpur. He was gazetted to be resident at Nipal in 1853, but did not take up the appointment, as it did not actually become vacant. He was promoted to be brevet colonel in the army on 28 Nov. 1854. In 1857 he was appointed resident at Baroda, and, in February 1858, political commissioner of the district, and received acting command of the northern division of the Bombay army, in addition to his political duties, with the rank of brigadier-general. He was promoted to be regimental lieutenant-colonel on 27 Aug. 1858.

In July 1859 Shakespear became agent to the governor-general for Central India, residing at Indur. He conducted that year the negotiations with the Begums of Bhopal and installed Sikander Begum as rani of Bhopal. For his tact in extricating the government from an embarrassing position, he was highly commended by the governor-general in council in a despatch dated 31 Dec. He was made a companion of the Bath, civil division, in 1860, and later in the same year (30 Dec.) Lord Canning, in a despatch to the home government, expressed his high appreciation of Shakespear's conduct of the negotiations with Scindia. Scindia had been induced to concede territory to the maharaja of Gwalior in acknowledgment of the latter's services to the government during the mutiny. Scindia also consented to receive a subsidiary force composed of troops of the line in lieu of the contingent. Shakespear had accepted the post of chief commissioner of Maisur and Kurg, and was preparing to take up the appointment, when he died of bronchitis at Indur on 29 Oct. 1861.

In 1841, when Shakespear was knighted, the only occasion during his whole service on which he visited England, he met his cousin, William Makepeace Thackeray, who, on the announcement of Shakespear's death, paid, in 'Roundabout Papers' ('Letts's Diary'), a tribute to his memory and referred to this

meeting. 'His kind hand,' wrote Thackeray, 'was always open. It was a gracious fate which sent him to rescue widows and captives. Where could they have had a champion more chivalrous, a protector more loving and tender?'

Shakespear married at Agra, India, on 5 March 1844, Marian Sophia, third daughter of George Powney Thompson, of the Bengal civil service, by Harriet, second daughter of John Fendall, governor of Java at the time of its restoration to the Dutch. Lady Shakespear and a family of three sons and six daughters survived him.

A sketch of Shakespear made by Prince Soltykoff when on a visit to the Gwalior residency was afterwards lithographed. There is in Lady Shakespear's possession a fine crayon portrait in colour of her husband, by Henry Fanner.

[Despatches; India Office Records; War Office Records; Vibart's Addiscombe: its Heroes and Men of Note, 1894; Lady Sale's Journal of the Disasters in Afghanistan, 1843; Kaye's Lives of Indian Officers, 1867, vol. ii.; Stocqueler's Memorials of Afghanistan, 1843; Eyre's Military Operations at Cabul, with a Journal of Imprisonment in Afghanistan, 1843; Thackeray's Roundabout Papers; Sir William Hunter's Thackerays in India, 1897, pp. 147 sq.; Low's Life of Field Marshal Sir George Pollock, 1873; Kaye's History of the War in Afghanistan; Low's Journal and Correspondence of the late Major-General Augustus Abbott, 1879; Abbott's Khiva, 1856; Ann. Register, 1861; Times, 6 and 12 Dec. 1861; private sources.] R. H. V.

SHAKESPEARE, WILLIAM (1564–1616), dramatist and poet, came of a family whose surname was borne through the middle ages by residents in very many parts of England—at Penrith in Cumberland, at Kirkland and Doncaster in Yorkshire, as well as in nearly all the midland counties. The surname had originally a martial significance, implying capacity in the wielding of the spear (Camden, *Remains*, ed. 1605, p. 111; Verstegan, *Restitution*, 1605). Its first recorded holder is John Shakespeare, who in 1279 was living at 'Freyndon,' perhaps Frittenden, Kent (*Plac. Cor.* 7 Edw. I, Kanc.; cf. *Notes and Queries*, 1st ser. xi. 122). The great mediæval guild of St. Anne at Knowle, whose members included the leading inhabitants of Warwickshire, was joined by many Shakespeares in the fifteenth century (cf. *Reg.* ed. Bickley, 1894). In the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries the surname is found far more frequently in Warwickshire than elsewhere. The archives of no less than twenty-four towns and villages there contain notices of Shakespeare families in the sixteenth century, and as many as thirty-four Warwickshire towns or villages were inhabited by Shakespeare families in the seventeenth century. Among them all William was a common christian name. At Rowington, twelve miles to the north of Stratford, and in the same hundred of Barlichway, one of the most prolific Shakespeare families of Warwickshire resided in the sixteenth century, and no less than three Richard Shakespeares of Rowington, whose extant wills were proved respectively in 1560, 1591, and 1614, were fathers of sons called William. At least one other William Shakespeare was during the period a resident in Rowington. As a consequence, the poet has been more than once credited with achievements which rightly belong to one or other of his numerous contemporaries who were identically named.

Distribution of the name.

The poet's ancestry cannot be traced with certainty beyond his grandfather. The poet's father, when applying for a grant of arms in 1596, claimed that his grandfather and the poet's great-grandfather received for services rendered in war a grant of land in Warwickshire from Henry VII. No precise confirmation of this pretension has been discovered, and it may be, after the manner of heraldic genealogy, fictitious. But the poet undoubtedly came of good yeoman stock, and there is every probability that his ancestors to the fourth or fifth generation were fairly substantial landowners (cf. *Times*, 14 Oct. 1895; *Notes and Queries*, 8th ser. viii. 501; *Genealog. Mag.* May 1897). Adam Shakespeare, a tenant by military service of land at Baddesley Clinton in 1389, was great-grandfather of one Richard Shakespeare, who held land at Wroxhall in Warwickshire in 1525. The latter is hesitatingly conjectured to have migrated soon after that date to Snitterfield, a village four miles to the north of Stratford-on-Avon. At Snitterfield a yeoman of the name was settled in 1535 (cf. Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 207), and there is no doubt that he was the poet's grandfather. In 1550 he was renting a messuage and land at Snitterfield of Robert Arden; he was alive in 1560, and may be assumed to have died before the opening of the next year, when the Snitterfield parish registers, in which no mention is made of him, came into being. Richard of Snitterfield had at least two sons, Henry and John; the parentage of a Thomas Shakespeare, a considerable landholder at Snitterfield between 1563 and 1583, is undetermined, but he may have been a third son. The son Henry remained at Snitter-

field all his life, and died a prosperous farmer in December 1596. John, the younger son of Richard, was the poet's father.

The poet's father.

About 1551 John Shakespeare left Snitterfield, which was probably his birthplace, for the neighbouring borough of Stratford-on-Avon. There he set up as a trader in all manner of agricultural produce. Corn, wool, malt, meat, skins, and leather were soon among the commodities in which he dealt. Contemporary documents often describe him as a glover. Aubrey, Shakespeare's first biographer, reported the tradition that he was a butcher. But though both designations doubtless indicated important branches of his business, neither can be regarded as disclosing its full extent. In April 1552 he was living in Henley Street, a thoroughfare leading to the market town of Henley-in-Arden, and he is first mentioned in the borough records as paying in that month a fine of twelvepence for having a dirt-heap in front of his house. His frequent appearances in the years that follow as either plaintiff or defendant in suits heard in the local court of record for the recovery of small debts suggest that he was a keen man of business. In early life he prospered in trade, and in October 1556 purchased two freehold tenements at Stratford—one in Henley Street with a garden (it adjoins that now known as the poet's birthplace), and the other in Greenhill Street with a garden and croft. Thenceforth he played a prominent part in municipal affairs. In 1557 he was elected an ale-taster, whose duty it was to test the quality of malt liquors and bread. About the same time he was elected a burgess or town councillor, and in September 1558, and again on 6 Oct. 1559, he was appointed one of the four petty constables by a vote of the jury of the court-leet. Twice—in 1559 and 1561—he was chosen one of the affeerors—officers appointed to determine the fines for those offences which were punishable arbitrarily, and for which no express penalties were prescribed by statute. In 1561 he was elected one of the two chamberlains of the borough, an office of responsibility which he held for two years. He delivered his second statement of account to the corporation in January 1564. When attesting documents he made his mark, and there is no evidence that he could write; but he was credited with financial aptitude. The municipal accounts, which were checked by tallies and counters, were audited by him after he ceased to be chamberlain, and he more than once advanced small sums of money to the corporation.

The poet's mother.

With characteristic shrewdness he chose a wife of assured fortune—Mary, youngest daughter of Robert Arden, a wealthy farmer of Wilmcote in the parish of Aston Cantlowe, near Stratford. The Arden family in its eldest branch ranked among the most influential of the county. Robert's great-grandfather has been identified with Robert Arden (*d.* 1452), who was sheriff of Warwickshire and Leicestershire in 1438 (16 Hen. VI), and the latter's descendant, Edward Arden [q. v.], who was high sheriff of Warwickshire in 1575, was executed in 1583 for alleged complicity in a Roman catholic plot against the life of Queen Elizabeth (French, *Genealogica Shakespeareana*, pp. 458 seq.) John Shakespeare's wife belonged to a younger branch of the family (*ib.* pp. 465 seq.) Her grandfather, Thomas Arden, purchased in 1501 an estate at Snitterfield, which passed, with other property, to her father Robert, and John Shakespeare's father, Richard, was one of Robert Arden's Snitterfield tenants. By his first wife, whose name is not known, Robert Arden had seven daughters, of whom all but two married; John Shakespeare's wife seems to have been the youngest. Robert Arden's second wife, Agnes or Anne, widow of John Hill (*d.* 1545), a substantial farmer of Bearley, survived him; but by her he had no issue. When he died at the end of 1556 he owned a farmhouse at Wilmcote and many acres of land, besides some hundred acres of land at Snitterfield, with two farmhouses which he let out to tenants. The post-mortem inventory of his goods, which was made on 9 Dec. 1556, shows that he had lived in comfort; his house was adorned by as many as eleven 'painted cloths,' which then did duty for tapestries among the middle classes. The exordium of his will, which was drawn up on 24 Nov. 1556, and proved on 16 Dec. following, indicates that he was an observant catholic. For his two youngest daughters, Alice and Mary, he showed especial affection by nominating them his executors. Mary received not only 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* in money, but the fee-simple of Asbies, his chief property at Wilmcote, which consisted of a house with some fifty acres of land. She also acquired, under an earlier settlement, an interest in two messuages at Snitterfield (Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 179). But however well she was provided for, she was only able, like her husband, to make her mark in lieu of signing her name.

John Shakespeare's marriage with Mary Arden doubtless took place at Aston Cantlowe, the parish church of Wilmcote, in the autumn of 1557 (the church registers begin

at a later date). On 15 Sept. 1558 his first child, a daughter, Joan, was baptised in the church of Stratford. A second child, another daughter, Margaret, was baptised on 2 Dec. 1562; but both these children died in infancy. The poet William, the first son and third child, was born on 22 or 23 April 1564. The latter date is generally accepted as his birthday, mainly (it would appear) on the ground that it was the day of his death. There is no positive evidence on the subject, but the Stratford parish registers attest that he was baptised on 26 April.

The poet's birth and baptism.

Some doubt is justifiable as to the ordinarily accepted scene of his birth. Of two adjoining houses forming a detached building on the north side of Henley Street, that to the east was purchased by John Shakespeare in 1556, but there is no evidence that he owned or occupied the house to the west before 1575. Yet this western house has been known since 1759 as the poet's birthplace, and a room on the first floor is claimed as that in which he was born (cf. Halliwell-Phillips, *Letter to Elze*, 1888). The two houses subsequently came by bequest of the poet's granddaughter to the family of the poet's sister, Joan Hart, and while the eastern tenement was let out to strangers for more than two centuries, and by them converted into an inn, the so-called birthplace was until 1806 occupied by the Harts, who latterly carried on there the trade of butcher. The fact of its long occupancy by the poet's collateral descendants accounts for the identification of the western rather than the eastern tenement with his birthplace. Both houses were purchased in behalf of subscribers to a public fund in 1846, and, after extensive restoration, were converted into a single domicile for the purposes of a public museum. They were presented under a deed of trust to the corporation of Stratford in 1866. Much of the Elizabethan timber and stone work survives, but a cellar under the so-called birthplace is the only portion which remains as it was at the date of the poet's birth (cf. documents and sketches in Halliwell-Phillipps, i. 377–94).

Alleged birthplace.

In July 1564, when William was three months old, the plague raged with unwonted vehemence at Stratford, and his father liberally contributed to the relief of its poverty-stricken victims. Fortune still favoured him. On 4 July 1565 he reached the dignity of an alderman. From 1567 onwards he was accorded in the corporation archives the honourable prefix of 'Mr.' At Michaelmas 1568 he attained the highest office in the corporation gift, that of bailiff, and during his year of office the corporation for the first time entertained actors at Stratford. The queen's company and the Earl of Worcester's company each received from John Shakespeare an official welcome. On 5 Sept. 1571 he was chief alderman, a post which he retained till 3 Sept. of the following year. In 1573 Alexander Webbe, the husband of his wife's sister Agnes, made him overseer of his will; in 1575 he bought two houses in Stratford, one of them doubtless the alleged birthplace in Henley Street; in 1576 he contributed twelve pence to the beadle's salary. But after Michaelmas 1572 he took a less active part in municipal affairs; he grew irregular in his attendance at the council meetings, and signs were soon apparent that his luck had turned. In 1578 he was unable to pay, with his colleagues, either the sum of fourpence for the relief of the poor, or his contribution 'towards the furniture of three pikemen, two bellmen, and one archer,' who were sent by the corporation to attend a muster of the trained bands of the county. Meanwhile his family was increasing. A daughter Ann (bapt. 28 Sept. 1571) was buried on 4 April 1579; but four children besides the poet—three sons, Gilbert (bapt. 13 Oct. 1566), Richard (bapt. 11 March 1574), and Edmund (bapt. 3 May 1580), with a daughter Joan (bapt. 15 April 1569)—reached maturity. To meet his growing liabilities, the father borrowed money from his wife's kinsfolk, and he and his wife mortgaged, on 14 Nov. 1578, Asbies, her valuable property at Wilmcote, for 40*l.* to Edmund Lambert of Barton-on-the-Heath, who had married her sister, Joan Arden. Lambert was to receive no interest on his loan, but was to take the 'rents and profits' of the estate. Asbies was thereby alienated for ever. Next year, on 15 Oct. 1579, John and his wife made over to Robert Webbe, doubtless a relative of Alexander Webbe, for the sum of 4*l.*, his wife's property at Snitterfield (Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 407–8). John Shakespeare obviously chafed under the humiliation of having parted, although as he hoped only temporarily, with his wife's property of Asbies, and in the autumn of 1580 offered to pay off the mortgage; but his brother-in-law, Lambert, retorted that other sums were owing, and he would accept all or none. The negotiation, which proved the beginning of much litigation, thus proved abortive. Through 1585 and 1586 a creditor, John Brown, was embarrassingly importunate, and, after obtaining a writ of distraint, Brown informed the local court that the debtor had nothing on

Brothers and sisters.

The father's financial difficulties.

which distraint could be levied (*ib.* ii. 238). On 6 Sept. 1586 John was deprived of his alderman's gown, on the ground of his long absence from the council meetings.

Education.

Happily John Shakespeare was at no expense for the education of his four sons. They were entitled to free tuition at the free grammar school of Stratford, which was reconstituted on a mediæval foundation by Edward VI. The eldest son, William, probably entered the school in 1571, when Walter Roche was master, and perhaps he knew something of Thomas Hunt, who succeeded Roche in 1577. The instruction that he received was mainly confined to the Latin language and literature. From the Latin accidence, boys of the period, at schools of the type of that at Stratford, were led, through conversation books like the 'Sententiæ Pueriles' and Lily's grammar, to the perusal of such authors as Seneca, Terence, Cicero, Virgil, Plautus, Ovid, and Horace. The eclogues of the popular mediæval poet, Mantuanus, were often preferred to Virgil's for beginners. The rudiments of Greek were occasionally taught in Elizabethan grammar schools to very promising pupils; but such coincidences as have been detected between expressions in Greek plays and those in Shakespeare's plays seem due to accident, and not to any study by Shakespeare while at school or elsewhere of the Athenian drama. With the Latin language and with many Latin poets of the school curriculum, on the other hand, Shakespeare openly acknowledged his acquaintance. In the mouth of his schoolmasters, Holofernes in 'Love's Labour's Lost' and Sir Hugh Evans in 'Merry Wives of Windsor,' he placed phrases drawn directly from Lily's grammar, from the 'Sententiæ Pueriles,' and from 'the good old Mantuan;' Plautus was the source of his 'Comedy of Errors,' and the influence of Ovid, especially the 'Metamorphoses,' was apparent throughout his earliest literary work, both poetic and dramatic. In the Bodleian Library is a copy of the Aldine edition of Ovid's 'Metamorphoses' (1502), and on the title is the signature 'W^{m}. Sh^{e}.,' which experts have declared—not quite conclusively—to be a genuine autograph of the poet (Macray, *Annals of the Bodleian*, 1890, pp. 379 seq.) Dr. Farmer enunciated in his 'Essay on Shakespeare's Learning' (1767) the theory that Shakespeare knew no language but his own, and owed whatever knowledge he displayed of the classics and of Italian and French literature to English translations. But by no means all the books in French and Italian whence Shakespeare is positively known to have derived the plots of his dramas—Belleforest's 'Histoires Tragiques' and Cinthio's 'Hecatommithi,' for example—were accessible to him in English translations; and on more general grounds the theory of his ignorance is adequately confuted. A boy with Shakespeare's exceptional alertness of intellect, during whose schooldays a training in the Latin classics lay within reach, could hardly lack in future years all means of access to the literature of Rome, France, and modern Italy. He had no title to rank as a classical scholar, and his lack of exact scholarship fully accounts for the 'small Latin and less Greek' with which he was credited by his scholarly friend, Ben Jonson. But Aubrey's report that 'he understood Latin pretty well' cannot be reasonably contested (cf. Spencer Baynes, 'What Shakespeare learnt at School' in *Shakespeare Studies*, 1894, pp. 147 seq.)

The poet's classical equipment.

His father's financial difficulties doubtless caused Shakespeare's removal from school at an unusually early age. Probably in 1577, when he was thirteen, he was enlisted by his father in an effort to restore his decaying fortunes. 'I have been told heretofore,' wrote Aubrey, 'by some of the neighbours that when he was a boy he exercised his father's trade,' which, according to the writer, was that of a butcher. It is possible that John's ill-luck at the period compelled him to confine himself to this occupation, which in happier days formed only one branch of his business. His son may have been formally apprenticed to him. An early Stratford tradition describes him as 'a butcher's apprentice' (Dowdall). 'When he kill'd a calf,' Aubrey proceeds less convincingly, 'he would doe it in a high style and make a speech. There was at that time another butcher's son in this towne, that was held not at all inferior to him for a naturall witt, his acquaintance, and coetanean, but dyed young.'

The poet's marriage.

At the end of 1582 Shakespeare, when little more than eighteen and a half years old, took a step which was little calculated to lighten his father's anxieties. He married. His wife, according to the inscription on her tombstone, was his senior by eight years. Rowe states that she 'was the daughter of one Hathaway, said to have been a substantial yeoman in the neighbourhood of Stratford.'

On 1 Sept. 1581 Richard Hathaway, 'husbandman' of Shottery, a hamlet in the parish of Old Stratford, made his will, which was proved on 9 July 1582, and is preserved in the prerogative court of Canterbury. His house and land, 'two and a half virgates,' had been long held in copyhold by his family, and he died in fairly prosperous circum-

stances. His wife Joan, the chief legatee, was directed to carry on the farm with the aid of her eldest son, Bartholomew, to whom a share in its proceeds was assigned. Six other children—three sons and three daughters—received sums of money; Agnes, the eldest daughter, and Catherine, the second daughter, were each allotted 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, 'to be paid at the day of her marriage,' a phrase common in wills of the period.

Anne Hathaway.

Anne and Agnes were in the sixteenth century alternative spellings of the same christian name; and there is little doubt that the daughter 'Agnes' of Richard Hathaway's will became, within a few months of his death, Shakespeare's wife.

The house at Shottery, now known as Anne Hathaway's cottage, and reached from Stratford by field-paths, undoubtedly once formed part of Richard Hathaway's farmhouse, and, despite numerous alterations and renovations, still preserves many features of a thatched farmhouse of the Elizabethan period. The house remained in the Hathaway family till 1838, although the male line became extinct in 1746. It was purchased in behalf of the public by the Birthplace trustees in 1892.

No record of Shakespeare's marriage survives. Although the parish of Stratford included Shottery, and thus both bride and bridegroom were parishioners, the Stratford parish register is silent on the subject. A baseless tradition assigns the ceremony to the village of Luddington, of which neither the church nor parish registers exist. But in the registry of the bishop of the diocese (Worcester) a deed is extant by which Fulk Sandells and John Richardson, 'husbandmen of Stratford,' bound themselves in the bishop's consistory court, on 28 Nov. 1582, in sureties of 40*l.* each, to disclose any lawful impediment—'by reason of any precontract' [i.e. with a third party] or consanguinity—to the marriage of William Shakespeare with Anne Hathaway. In the absence of such impediment (the deed continued), and provided that Anne obtained the consent of her friends, the marriage might proceed 'with once asking of the bannes of matrimony betwene them.' The effect of the deed would be to expedite the ceremony, while protecting the clergy from the consequences of any possible breach of canonical law. The two sureties, Sandells and Richardson, were farmers of Shottery. Sandells was a 'supervisor' of the will of Anne's father, who there describes him as 'my trustie friende and neighbour.' He and Richardson, representing the lady's family, doubtless secured the deed on their own initiative, so that Shakespeare might have small opportunity of evading a step which his intimacy with their friends' daughter had rendered essential to her reputation. The wedding probably took place a few weeks after the signing of the deed. Within six months, in May 1583, a daughter was born to the poet, and was baptised in the name of Susanna at Stratford parish church on the 26th.

Shakespeare's apologists have endeavoured to show that the formal betrothal or 'troth-plight' which was at the time a common prelude to a wedding carried with it all the privileges of marriage. But neither Shakespeare's detailed description of a betrothal (*Twelfth Night*, act v. sc. i. ll. 160–4) nor his frequent notices of the solemn verbal contract that usually preceded marriage lend the contention much support (*Measure for Measure*, act i. sc. ii. l. 155, act iv. sc. i. l. 73); while the exceptional circumstance that the lady's friends alone were parties to the bond renders it improbable that Shakespeare had previously observed any of the more ordinary formalities.

A difficulty has been imported into the narration of the poet's matrimonial affairs by the assumption of his identity with one 'William Shakespeare,' to whom, according to an entry in the bishop of Worcester's register, a license was issued on 27 Nov. 1582 (the day before the signing of the Hathaway bond), authorising his marriage with Anne Whateley of Temple Grafton. The husband of Anne Whateley cannot reasonably be identified with the poet. He may well have been one of the numerous William Shakespeares who abounded in the parishes in the neighbourhood of Stratford. The theory that the maiden name of Shakespeare's wife was Whateley is quite untenable, and it is unsafe to assume that the bishop's clerk, when making out a license, erred so extensively as to write 'Anne Whateley of Temple Grafton' for 'Anne Hathaway of Shottery.' Had a license for the poet's marriage been secured on 27 Nov., it is unlikely that the Shottery husbandmen would have entered next day into a bond 'against impediments.'

Anne Hathaway's seniority and the likelihood that the poet was forced into marrying her by her friends were not circumstances of happy augury. Although it is dangerous to read into Shakespeare's dramatic utterances allusions to his personal experience, the emphasis with which he insists that a woman should take in marriage an 'elder than herself' ('Twelfth Night,' act ii. sc. iv. l. 29), and that prenuptial intimacy is productive of 'barren hate, sour-eyed disdain, and discord,' suggest a personal interpretation ('Tempest,'

act iv. sc. i. ll. 15–22). To both these unpromising features was added, in the poet's case, the absence of a means of livelihood, and his course of life in the years that immediately followed implies that he bore his domestic ties with impatience. Early in 1585 twins were born to him, a son (Hamnet) and a daughter (Judith); both were baptised on 2 Feb. All the extant evidence points to the conclusion, which the fact that he had no more children confirms, that in the later months of the year (1585) he left Stratford, and that, although he was never wholly estranged from his family, he saw little of wife or children for eleven years. Between the winter of 1585 and the autumn of 1596—an interval which synchronises with his first literary triumphs—there is only one shadowy mention of his name in Stratford records. In April 1587 there died Edmund Lambert, who held Asbies under the mortgage of 1578, and a few months later Shakespeare's name, as owner of a contingent interest, was joined to that of his father and mother in a formal assent given to an abortive proposal to confer on Edmund's son and heir, John Lambert, an absolute title to the estate on condition of his cancelling the mortgage and paying 20*l*. But the deed does not indicate that Shakespeare personally assisted at the transaction (Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 11–13).

Shakespeare's early literary work proves that while in the country he eagerly studied birds, flowers, and trees, and gained a detailed knowledge of horses and dogs. All his kinsfolk were farmers, and with them he doubtless as a youth practised many field-sports. Sympathetic references to hawking, hunting, coursing, and angling abound in his early plays and poems (cf. Ellacombe, *Shakespeare as an Angler*, 1883; J. E. Harting, *Ornithology of Shakespeare*, 1872). But his sporting experiences passed at times beyond orthodox limits. A poaching adventure, according to a credible tradition, was the immediate cause of his long severance from his native place. 'He had,' wrote Rowe, 'by a misfortune common enough to young fellows, fallen into ill company, and, among them, some, that made a frequent practice of deer-stealing, engaged him with them more than once in robbing a park that belonged to Sir Thomas Lucy of Charlecote near Stratford. For this he was prosecuted by that gentleman, as he thought, somewhat too severely; and, in order to revenge that ill-usage, he made a ballad upon him, and though this, probably the first essay of his poetry, be lost, yet it is said to have been so very bitter that it redoubled the prosecution against him to that degree that he was obliged to leave his business and family in Warwickshire and shelter himself in London.' The independent testimony of Archdeacon Davies, who was vicar of Saperton, Gloucestershire, late in the seventeenth century, is to the effect that Shakespeare 'was much given to all unluckiness in stealing venison and rabbits, particularly from Sir Thomas Lucy, who had him oft whipt, and sometimes imprisoned, and at last made him fly his native county to his great advancement.' The law of Shakespeare's day (5 Eliz. cap. 21) punished deer-stealers with three months' imprisonment and the payment of thrice the amount of the damage done.

Poaching at Charlecote.

The tradition has been challenged on the ground that the Charlecote deer-park was of later date than the sixteenth century. But Sir Thomas Lucy was an extensive game-preserver, and owned at Charlecote a warren in which a few hares or does doubtless found an occasional home. Samuel Ireland [q. v.] was informed in 1794 that Shakespeare stole the deer, not from Charlecote, but from Fulbroke Park, a few miles off, and Ireland supplied in his 'Views on the Warwickshire Avon,' 1795, an engraving of an old farmhouse in the hamlet of Fulbroke, where he asserted Shakespeare was temporarily imprisoned after his arrest. An adjoining hovel was locally known for some years as Shakespeare's 'deer-barn,' but no portion of Fulbroke Park, which included the site of these buildings (now removed), was Lucy's property in Elizabeth's reign, and the amended legend, which was solemnly confided to Sir Walter Scott in 1828 by the owner of Charlecote, seems pure invention (cf. C. Holte Bracebridge, *Shakespeare no Poacher*, 1862; Lockhart, *Life of Scott*, vii. 123).

The ballad which Shakespeare is reported to have fastened on the park gates of Charlecote does not, as Rowe acknowledged, survive. No authenticity can be allowed the worthless lines beginning 'A parliament member, a justice of peace,' which were represented to be Shakespeare's on the authority of an old man who lived near Stratford and died in 1703. But such an incident as the tradition reveals has left a distinct impress on Shakespearean drama. Justice Shallow is beyond doubt a reminiscence of the owner of Charlecote. According to Davies of Saperton, Shakespeare's 'revenge was so great that' he caricatured Lucy as 'Justice Clodpate,' who was (Davies adds) represented on the stage as 'a great man,' and as bearing, in allusion to Lucy's name, 'three louses rampant for his arms.' Justice Shallow, who came

Justice Shallow.

to birth in the 'Second Part of Henry IV,' is represented in the opening scene of the 'Merry Wives of Windsor' as having come from Gloucestershire to Windsor to make a Star-chamber matter of a poaching raid on his estate. The 'three luces hauriant argent' were the arms borne by the Charlecote Lucys, and the dramatist's prolonged reference in this scene to the 'dozen white luces' on Shallow's 'old coat' finally establishes Shallow's identity with Lucy.

The poaching episode is best assigned to 1585, but it may be questioned whether Shakespeare, on fleeing from Lucy's persecution, at once sought an asylum in London. William Beeston, a seventeenth-century actor, remembered hearing that he had been for a time a country schoolmaster 'in his younger years,' and it seems possible that on first leaving Stratford he found some such employment in a neighbouring village. The suggestion that he joined, at the end of 1585, some youths of the district in serving in the Low Countries under the Earl of Leicester, whose castle of Kenilworth was within easy reach of Stratford, is based on an obvious confusion between him and others of his name (cf. W. J. Thoms, *Three Notelets on Shakespeare*, 1865, pp. 116 sq.) The knowledge of a soldier's life which Shakespeare exhibited in his plays is no greater and no less than that which he displayed of almost all other spheres of human activity, and to assume that he wrote of all or of any from practical experience, unless the evidence be conclusive, is to underrate his intuitive power of realising life in almost every aspect by force of his imagination.

The flight from Stratford.

To London Shakespeare naturally drifted, doubtless trudging thither on foot during 1586, by way of Oxford and High Wycombe (cf. Hales, *Notes on Shakespeare*, 1884, pp. 1–24). Tradition points to that as Shakespeare's favourite route, rather than to the road by Banbury and Aylesbury. Aubrey asserts that at Grendon, near Oxford, 'he happened to take the humour of the constable in "Midsummer Night's Dream"'—by which he meant, we may suppose, 'Much Ado about Nothing'—but there were watchmen of the Dogberry type all over England, and probably at Stratford itself. The Crown Inn (formerly 3 Cornmarket Street) near Carfax, at Oxford, was long pointed out as one of his resting-places.

The journey to London.

To only one resident in London is Shakespeare likely to have been known previously. Richard Field, a native of Stratford, and son of a friend of Shakespeare's father, had left Stratford in 1579 to serve an apprenticeship with Thomas Vautrollier [q. v.], the London printer. Shakespeare and Field, who was made free of the Stationers' Company in 1587, were soon associated as author and publisher, but the theory that Field found work for Shakespeare in Vautrollier's printing-office is fanciful (Blades, *Shakspeare and Typography*). No more can be said for the attempt to prove that Shakespeare obtained employment as a lawyer's clerk. In view of his general quickness of apprehension, his accurate use of legal terms, which deserves all the attention that has been paid it, may be attributable in part to his observation of the many legal processes in which his father was involved, and in part to early intercourse with members of the inns of court (cf. Lord Campbell, *Shakespeare's Legal Acquirements*, 1859; W. L. Rushton, *Shakespeare as a Lawyer*, 1858, and *Shakespeare's Testamentary Language*, 1869).

Tradition and common-sense alike point to one of the only two theatres (The Theatre or The Curtain) that existed in London at the date of his arrival as an early scene of his regular occupation. The compiler of 'Lives of the Poets' (1753), assigned to Theophilus Cibber [q. v.], was the first to relate the story that his original connection with the playhouse was as holder of the horses of visitors outside the doors. According to the compiler, the story was related by D'Avenant to Betterton; but Rowe, to whom Betterton communicated it, made no use of it. The two regular theatres of the time were both reached on horseback by men of fashion, and the owner of the Theatre, James Burbage, kept a livery stable at Smithfield. There is no inherent improbability in the tale. Dr. Johnson's amplified version, in which Shakespeare was represented as organising a service of boys for the purpose of tending visitors' horses, sounds apocryphal.

Theatrical employment.

There is every indication that Shakespeare was speedily offered employment inside the playhouse. In 1587 the two chief companies of actors, the queen's and Lord Leicester's, returned to London from a provincial tour, during which they visited Stratford. Two subordinate companies, who claimed the patronage of the Earl of Essex and Lord Stafford, also performed in the town during the same year. From such incidents doubtless sprang the opportunity which offered Shakespeare fame and fortune. According to Rowe's vague statement, 'he was received into the company then in being at first in a very mean rank.' William Castle, the parish clerk of Stratford at the end of the seventeenth century, was in the habit of telling visitors that he entered the playhouse as a servitor. Malone recorded in 1780 a stage

tradition 'that his first office in the theatre was that of prompter's attendant' or call-boy. His intellectual capacity and the amiability with which he turned to account his versatile powers, were probably soon recognised, and thenceforth his promotion was assured.

Joins the Lord Chamberlain's company.

Shakespeare's earliest reputation was made as an actor, and although his work as a dramatist soon eclipsed his histrionic fame, he remained a prominent member of the actor's profession till near the end of his life. In 1587 and following years, besides three companies of boy-actors formed from the choristers of St. Paul's Cathedral and the Chapel Royal and from Westminster scholars, there were at least six companies of adult London actors; five of these were called after noble patrons (the Earls of Leicester, Oxford, Sussex, and Worcester, and the lord admiral, Charles Howard), and one of them was called after the queen. Constant alterations of name, owing to the death or change from other causes of the patrons, render it difficult to trace with certainty each company's history. But there seems no doubt that the most influential of the companies named—that under the patronage of the Earl of Leicester—passed on his death in September 1588 under the patronage of Ferdinando Stanley, lord Strange, who became Earl of Derby on 25 Sept. 1592. When the Earl of Derby died on 16 April 1594, his place as patron was successively filled by Henry Carey, first lord Hunsdon, lord chamberlain (*d.* 23 July 1596), and by his son and heir, George Carey, second lord Hunsdon, who himself became lord chamberlain in March 1597. After King James's succession in May 1603 the company was promoted to be the king's players, and, thus advanced in dignity, it fully maintained the supremacy which, under successive titles, it had already long enjoyed.

It is fair to infer that this was the company that Shakespeare originally joined. Documentary evidence proves that he was a member of it in December 1594; in May 1603 he was one of its leaders. Four of its chief members—Richard Burbage [q. v.], the greatest tragic actor of the day, John Heming [q. v.], Henry Condell [q. v.], and Augustine Phillips—were among Shakespeare's lifelong friends. Under the same company's auspices, moreover, Shakespeare's plays first saw the light. Only two of the plays claimed for him, 'Titus Andronicus' and '3 Henry VI,' seem to have been performed by other companies (the Earl of Sussex's men in the one case and the Earl of Pembroke's in the other).

The company, while known as Lord Strange's men, opened on 19 Feb. 1592, when under the temporary management of the great actor, Edward Alleyn (of the Admiral's company), a new theatre, called the Rose, which Philip Henslowe had erected on the Bankside, Southwark. The Rose was doubtless the earliest scene of Shakespeare's successes alike as actor and dramatist. Subsequently he frequented the older stage of the Curtain in Shoreditch. Early in 1599 Richard Burbage and his brother Cuthbert built on the Bankside a theatre called the Globe. It was octagonal in shape, and built of wood, and doubtless Shakespeare described it (rather than the Curtain) as 'this wooden O,' in the opening chorus of 'Henry V' (l. 13). After 1599 the Globe was mainly occupied by Shakespeare's company, and in its profits he acquired a share. The Blackfriars Theatre, which was created out of a dwelling-house by James Burbage [q. v.], the actor's father, at the end of 1596, was for many years afterwards leased out to the company of boy actors, known as 'the queen's children of the chapel;' it was not occupied by Shakespeare's company until December 1609 or January 1610, when his acting days were nearing their end.

In London Shakespeare resided near the theatres. According to a memorandum by Alleyn (which Malone quoted), he lodged in 1596 near 'the Bear Garden in Southwark.' In 1598 one William Shakespeare, who was assessed by the collectors of a subsidy in the sum of 13*s.* 4*d.* upon goods valued at 5*l.*, was a resident in St. Helen's parish, Bishopsgate, but it is not certain that this tax-payer was the dramatist (cf. *Exchequer Lay Subsidies City of London*, 146/369, Public Record Office; *Notes and Queries*, 8th ser. viii. 418).

Shakespeare's alleged travels.

Elizabethan actors performed not only in London but in the provinces, and a few occasionally extended their professional tours to foreign courts. In Denmark, Germany, Austria, Holland, and possibly in France, many dramatic performances were given by English actors between 1580 and 1630 (cf. Cohn, *Shakespeare in Germany*, 1865; Meissner, *Die englischen Comödianten zur Zeit Shakespeare in Oesterreich*, Vienna, 1884; Jon Stefansson on 'Shakespeare at Elsinore' in *Contemporary Review*, January 1896; *Notes and Queries*, 5th ser. ix. 43, xi. 520). Shakespeare may be credited with faithfully fulfilling all his professional functions. The many references to travel in his sonnets were doubtless reminiscences of acting tours through English country towns, and it has been repeatedly urged that he

visited Scotland with his company (cf. KNIGHT; FLEAY, *Stage*, pp. 135–6). In November 1599 English actors went to Scotland under the leadership of Lawrence Fletcher and one Martin. The former was a colleague of Shakespeare in 1603, but is not known to have been one earlier. Shakespeare's company never included an actor named Martin. Fletcher repeated the visit in October 1601 (*MS. State Papers* Dom. Scotland; P. R. O. vol. lxv. No. 64; FLEAY, *Stage*, pp. 126–44). There is nothing to indicate that any of his companions belonged to Shakespeare's company. That Shakespeare visited any part of the continent is even less probable. He repeatedly ridicules the craze for foreign travel (cf. *As you like it*, IV. i. 22–40). His name appears in no extant list of English actors who paid professional visits abroad.

In Italy.

To Italy, it is true, and especially to the northern towns of Venice, Padua, Verona, Mantua, and Milan, he makes frequent and familiar reference, and he supplied many a realistic portrayal of Italian life and sentiment. But the fact that he represents Valentine in the 'Two Gentlemen of Verona' (I. i. 71) as travelling from Verona to Milan by sea, and Prospero in 'The Tempest' as embarking on a ship at the gates of Milan (I. ii. 129–44), renders it almost impossible that he could have gathered his knowledge of northern Italy from personal observation (cf. ELZE, *Essays*, 1874, pp. 254 seq.) He doubtless owed all to the verbal reports of travelled friends or to books, the contents of which he had a rare power of assimilating and vitalising.

Although the old actor William Beeston asserted that Shakespeare 'did act exceedingly well' (AUBREY), the rôles in which he distinguished himself are very imperfectly recorded. Few surviving documents directly refer to performances by him. At Christmas 1594 he joined the popular actors William Kemp, the chief comedian of the day, and Richard Burbage in 'two several comedies or interludes' which were acted on St. Stephen's day and on Innocents' day (27 and 28 Dec.) at Greenwich Palace before the queen. The three players received 'xiii*li.* vj*s.* viii*d.* and by waye of her Majesties rewarde vi*li.* xiii*s.* iiij*d.*, in all xx*li.*' (HALLIWELL-PHILLIPPS, i. 121; *Jahrbuch d. deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft*, 1896, xxxii. 182 seq.) Neither plays nor parts are named. Shakespeare's name stands first on the list of those who took part in the original performances of Ben Jonson's 'Every Man in his Humour' (1598) and of his 'Sejanus' (1603), but the character allotted to each actor is not stated. Rowe identified only one of Shakespeare's parts, 'the Ghost in his own "Hamlet,"' which Rowe asserted to be 'the top of his performance.' John Davies noted that he 'played some kingly parts in sport' (*Scourge of Folly*, 1610, epigr. 159). One of Shakespeare's younger brothers, assumably Gilbert, often came, wrote Oldys, to London in his younger days to see his brother act in his own plays, and in his old age, when his memory was failing, he recalled his brother's performance of Adam in 'As you like it.' In the 1623 folio edition of Shakespeare's 'Works' his name heads the prefatory list 'of the principall actors in all these playes.'

Shakespeare's rôles.

That Shakespeare chafed under some of the conditions of the actor's calling appears from the sonnets. He reproaches himself with making himself 'a motley to the view' (cx. 2), and chides fortune for having provided for his livelihood nothing better than 'public means that public manners breed,' whence his name received a brand (cxi. 4–5). His ambitions lay elsewhere, and at an early period of his theatrical career he was dividing his labours as an actor with those of a playwright.

Dramatic work.

The whole of Shakespeare's dramatic work was probably begun and ended within two decades (1591–1611), between his twenty-seventh and forty-seventh year. If, on the one hand, the works traditionally assigned to him include some contributions from other pens, he was perhaps responsible, on the other hand, for portions of a few plays that are traditionally claimed for others. When the account is balanced, Shakespeare must be credited with the production, during these twenty years, of an annual average of two plays, nearly all of which belong to the supreme rank of literature. Three volumes of poems must be added to the total. Ben Jonson was often told by the players that 'whatsoever he penned he never blotted out (i.e. erased) a line.' The editors of the first folio attested that 'what he thought he uttered with that easinesse that we have scarce received from him a blot in his papers.' Signs of hasty workmanship are not lacking, but they are few and unimportant when it is considered how rapidly his numerous compositions came from his pen.

His borrowed plots.

By borrowing his plots he to some extent economised his energy, but he transformed most of them, and it was not probably with the object of conserving his strength that he systematically levied loans on popular current literature like Holinshed's 'Chronicles,' North's translation of 'Plutarch,' widely read romances, and successful plays. In this

regard he betrayed something of the practical temperament which is traceable in the conduct of the affairs of his later life. It was doubtless with the calculated aim of exploiting public taste to the utmost that he unceasingly adapted, as his genius dictated, themes which had already, in the hands of inferior writers or dramatists, proved capable of arresting public attention.

The professional playwrights retained no legal interest in their plays after disposing of the manuscript to a theatrical manager, and it was customary for the manager to invite extensive revision at the hands of others before a play was produced on the stage, and again whenever it was revived. Shakespeare doubtless gained his earliest experience as a dramatist by revising or rewriting behind the scenes plays that his manager had purchased. Possibly not all his labours in this direction have been identified. In a few cases his alterations were slight, but as a rule his fund of originality was too abundant to restrict him, when working as an adapter, to mere recension, and the results of most of his labours in that capacity are entitled to rank among original compositions.

The revision of plays.

The exact order in which Shakespeare's plays were written depends largely on conjecture. External evidence is accessible in only a few cases, and, although always worthy of the utmost consideration, is not invariably conclusive. The date of publication rarely indicates the date of composition. Only sixteen of the thirty-seven plays commonly assigned to Shakespeare were published in his lifetime, and it is questionable whether any were published under his supervision. But subject-matter and metre both afford rough clues to the period in his career to which each play may be referred. In his early plays the spirit of comedy or tragedy appears in all its simplicity, but as his powers grew to maturity he depicted life in its complexity, and portrayed with masterly insight all the gradations of human sentiment, and the mysterious workings of human passion. Comedy and tragedy are gradually blended; and his work finally developed a pathos such as could only have come of ripe experience. Similarly the metre undergoes emancipation from established rule and becomes flexible and irregular enough to respond to every phase of human feeling. In the blank verse of the early plays a pause is strictly observed at the close of each line, and rhyming couplets are frequent. Gradually the verse overrides such artificial restrictions; rhyme largely disappears; the pause is varied indefinitely; extra syllables are, contrary to strict metrical law, introduced at the end of lines, and at times in the middle; recourse is more frequently made to prose (cf. W. S. Walker, *Shakespeare's Versification*, 1854; Charles Bathurst, *Difference in Shakespeare's Versification at different Periods of his Life*, 1857). Fantastic and punning conceits which abound in early work are rarely accorded admission to later work. At the same time allowance must be made for ebb and flow in Shakespeare's artistic progress. Early work occasionally anticipates features that become habitual to late work, and late work at times embodies traits that are mainly identified with early work. No exclusive reliance in determining the precise chronology can be placed on the merely mechanical tests afforded by tables of metrical statistics. The chronological order can only be deduced with any confidence from a consideration of all the internal characteristics as well as the known external history of each play. The premisses are often vague and conflicting, and no chronology hitherto suggested receives at all points universal assent.

Chronology of the plays.

There is no external evidence that any piece in which he had a hand was produced before the spring of 1592. No play by him was published before 1597, and none bore his name on the title-page till 1598. But his first essays have been with confidence allotted to 1591. To 'Love's Labour's Lost' may reasonably be assigned priority in point of time of all Shakespeare's dramatic productions. Internal evidence alone indicates the date of composition, and proves that it was an early effort, but the subject-matter suggests that its author had already enjoyed extended opportunities of surveying London life and manners, such as were hardly open to him in the very first years of his settlement. 'Love's Labour's Lost' embodies keen observation of contemporary life in many ranks of society, both in town and country, while the speeches of the hero Biron clothe much sound philosophy in masterly rhetoric. Its slender plot stands almost alone among Shakespeare's plots in that it is not known to have been borrowed. The names of the chief characters are drawn from those of the leaders in the civil war in France, which was in progress between 1589 and 1594, and was anxiously watched by the English public. Contemporary projects of academies for disciplining young men; fashions of speech and dress current in fashionable circles; recent attempts on the part of Elizabeth's government to negotiate with the czar of Russia; the inefficiency of rural constables and the pedantry of

'Love's Labour's Lost.'

village schoolmasters and curates are all satirised with good humour (cf. 'A New Study of "Love's Labour's Lost,"' by the present writer in *Gent. Mag.* October 1880; *Transactions of the New Shakspere Society*, pt. iii. p. 80*). The play was revised in 1597, probably for a performance at court. It was first published next year, and on the title-page, which described the piece as 'newly corrected and augmented,' Shakespeare's name first appeared in print as that of author of a play.

'Two Gentlemen of Verona.'

Less gaiety characterised another comedy of the same date, 'The Two Gentlemen of Verona,' which dramatises a romantic story of love and friendship. There is every likelihood that it was an adaptation—amounting to a re-formation—of a lost 'History of Felix and Philomena,' which had been acted at court in 1584. The story is the same as that of 'The Shepardess Felismena' in the Spanish pastoral romance of 'Diana' by George de Montemayor. No English translation of 'Diana' was published before that of Bartholomew Yonge in 1598, but manuscript versions may have been accessible. Barnabe Rich's story of 'Apollonius and Silla,' which Shakespeare employed again in 'Twelfth Night,' doubtless gave him some hints. Trifling and irritating conceits abound in the 'Two Gentlemen,' but passages of high poetic spirit are not wanting, and the speeches of the clowns, Launce and Speed, overflow with farcical drollery. The 'Two Gentlemen' was not published in Shakespeare's lifetime; it first appeared in the folio of 1623, after having, in all probability, undergone some revision (cf. FLEAY, *Life*, pp. 188 seq.)

'Comedy of Errors.'

Shakespeare next tried his hand, in the 'Comedy of Errors' (commonly known at the time as 'Errors'), at boisterous farce. It was probably founded on a play, no longer extant, called 'The Historie of Error,' which was acted in 1576 at Hampton Court. In subject-matter it resembles the 'Menæchmi' of Plautus, and treats of mistakes of identity arising from the likeness of twin-born children. The scene (act iii. sc. i.) in which Antipholus of Ephesus is shut out from his own house, while his brother and wife are at dinner within, recalls one in the 'Amphitruo' of Plautus. It is possible that Shakespeare had direct recourse to Plautus as well as to the old play; no English translation of Plautus was published before 1595. In the 'Comedy of Errors' (which was first published in 1623) allusion is made, as in 'Love's Labour's Lost,' to the civil war in France. France is described as 'making war against her heir' (act v. sc. ii. 125).

'Romeo and Juliet.'

To more effective account did Shakespeare in 'Romeo and Juliet' (his first tragedy) turn a tragic romance of Italian origin, which was already popular in the English versions of Arthur Broke in verse (1562) and William Painter in prose (in his 'Palace of Pleasure,' 1567). Shakespeare made little change in the plot, but he impregnated it with poetic fervour, and relieved the tragic intensity by developing the humour of Mercutio, and by grafting on the story the new comic character of the Nurse (cf. *Originals and Analogues*, pt. i. ed. P. A. Daniel, New Shakspere Society). The fineness of insight which Shakespeare here brought to the portrayal of youthful emotion is as noticeable as the lyric beauty and exuberance of the language. If the Nurse's remark, 'Tis since the earthquake now eleven years' (i. iii. 23), be taken literally, the composition of the play must be referred to 1591, for no earthquake in the sixteenth century was experienced in England after 1580. There are some parallelisms with Daniel's 'Complainte of Rosamond,' published in 1592, and it is probable that Shakespeare completed the piece in that year. It was first anonymously and surreptitiously printed by John Danter in 1597 from an imperfect acting copy. A second quarto of 1599 (by T. Creede for Cuthbert Burbie) was printed from an authentic version which had undergone much revision (cf. 'Parallel Texts,' ed. P. A. Daniel, New Shakspere Society; FLEAY, *Life*, pp. 191 seq.)

'Henry VI.'

Three other pieces of the period, of the first production of which we have direct information, reveal Shakespeare undisguisedly as an adapter of plays by other hands. On 3 March 1592 a new piece, called 'Henry VI,' was acted at the Rose Theatre by Lord Strange's men. It was no doubt the play which was subsequently known as Shakespeare's '1 Henry VI.' On its first production it won a popular triumph. 'How would it have joyed brave Talbot (the terror of the French),' wrote Nash in his 'Pierce Pennilesse' (1592, licensed 8 Aug.), in reference to the striking scenes of Talbot's death (act iv. sc. vi. and vii.), 'to thinke that after he had lyne two hundred yeares in his Tombe, hee should triumphe againe on the Stage, and have his bones newe embalmed with the teares of ten thousand spectators at least (at severall times) who, in the Tragedian that represents his person, imagine they behold him fresh bleeding!' There is no record of the production of a second piece in continuation

of the theme, but it quickly followed, for a third piece, treating of the concluding incidents of Henry VI's reign, attracted much attention on the stage early in the following autumn.

Greene's attack.

The applause attending this effort drew from one rival dramatist a rancorous protest. Robert Greene, who died on 3 Sept. 1592, wrote on his deathbed an ill-natured farewell to life, entitled 'Groats-worth of Wit bought with a Million of Repentance.' Addressing three brother dramatists—Marlowe, Nash, and Peele or Lodge—he bade them beware of puppets 'that speak from our mouths,' and of 'antics garnished in our colours.' 'There is,' he continued, 'an upstart Crow, beautified with our feathers, that with his *Tygers heart wrapt in a players hide* supposes he is as well able to bumbast out a blanke verse as the best of you; and being an absolute *Johannes factotum* is in his owne conceit the only Shake-scene in a countrie. . . . Never more acquaint [those apes] with your admired inventions, for it is pity men of such rare wits should be subject to the pleasures of such rude groomes.' The 'only Shake-scene' is a punning denunciation of Shakespeare. The tirade was probably inspired by an author's resentment of the energy of the actor—the theatre's factotum—in revising professional dramatic work. The quotation travesties a line from the third piece in the trilogy of Shakespeare's 'Henry VI:'

Oh Tiger's heart wrapt in a woman's hide.

Chettle's apology.

But Shakespeare's amiability of character and versatile ability had already won him admirers. In December 1592 Greene's publisher, Henry Chettle, prefixed to his 'Kind Hartes Dreame' an apology for Greene's attack on the young actor. 'I am as sory,' he wrote, 'as if the originall fault had beene my fault because myselfe have seene his (i.e. Shakespeare's) demeanour no lesse civill than he [is] exelent in the qualitie he professes, besides divers of worship have reported his uprightnes of dealing, which argues his honesty, and his facetious grace in writing that aprooves his art.'

Divided authorship of 'Henry VI.'

The first of the three plays dealing with the reign of Henry VI was first published in the collected edition of Shakespeare's works; the second and third plays were previously printed in a form very different from that which they assumed when they followed it in the folio. Criticism has proved beyond doubt that in these plays Shakespeare did no more than add, revise, and correct other men's work. In pt. i. the scene in the Temple Gardens, where white and red roses are plucked as emblems by the rival political parties (act ii. sc. iv.), the dying speech of Mortimer, and perhaps the wooing of Margaret by Suffolk, alone bear the impress of his style. A play dealing with the second part of Henry VI's reign was published anonymously from a rough stage copy in 1594, with the title 'The first part of the Contention betwixt the two famous houses of Yorke and Lancaster.' A play dealing with the third part was published with greater care next year under the title 'The True Tragedie of Richard, Duke of Yorke, and the death of good King Henry the Sixt, as it was sundrie times acted by the Earl of Pembroke his servants.' In both these plays Shakespeare's hand can be traced. The humours of Jack Cade in 'The Contention' can only owe their savour to him. After he had hastily revised them, perhaps with another's aid, they were doubtless put on the stage in 1592, the first two parts by his own company (Lord Strange's men), and the third, under some exceptional arrangement, by Lord Pembroke's men. But Shakespeare was not content to leave them thus. Within a brief interval, possibly for a revival, he undertook a more thorough revision, still in conjunction with another writer. The first part of 'The Contention' was thoroughly overhauled, and was converted into what was entitled in the folio '2 Henry VI;' there more than half the lines are new. 'The True Tragedie,' which became '3 Henry VI,' was less drastically handled; two-thirds of it was left practically untouched; only a third was completely recast (cf. Fleay, *Life*, pp. 235 seq.; *Trans. New Shakspere Soc.*, 1876, pt. ii. by Miss Jane Lee; Swinburne, *Study*, pp. 51 seq.)

Who Shakespeare's coadjutors were in the two revisions of 'Henry VI' cannot be determined. The theory that Greene and Peele produced the original draft of the three parts of 'Henry VI' may help to account for Greene's indignation. Much can be said, too, in behalf of the suggestion that Shakespeare joined Marlowe, the greatest of his predecessors, in the first revision which resulted in 'The Contention' and the 'True Tragedie,' and that Marlowe returned the compliment by adding a few touches to the final revision, for which Shakespeare was mainly responsible.

Many of Shakespeare's comedies—notably 'Midsummer Night's Dream' and 'Much Ado about Nothing'—exhibit familiarity with the

dramatic work of John Lyly. Elsewhere traces may be found of an appreciative study of the writings of Samuel Daniel, Sir Philip Sidney, and Thomas Lodge. But Marlowe alone of Shakespeare's contemporaries can be credited with exerting on him any substantial influence. Marlowe was in 1592 and 1593 at the zenith of his fame, and two of Shakespeare's earliest historical tragedies, 'Richard III' and 'Richard II,' which formed the natural sequel of his labours on 'Henry VI,' betray an ambition to follow in Marlowe's footsteps. In 'Richard III' Shakespeare takes up the history of England near the point at which the third part of 'Henry VI' left it. The subject was already familiar to dramatists, but Shakespeare sought his materials in Holinshed. A Latin piece, by Dr. Thomas Legge, had been in favour with academic audiences since 1579, and in 1594 the 'True Tragedie of Richard III' was published anonymously; but Shakespeare's piece bears little resemblance to either. Throughout Shakespeare's 'Richard III' the effort to emulate Marlowe is undeniable. It is, says Mr. Swinburne, 'as fiery in passion, as single in purpose, as rhetorical often, though never so inflated in expression, as "Tamburlaine" itself.' The turbulent piece was naturally popular. Burbage's impersonation of the hero was one of his most effective performances, and his vigorous enunciation of 'A horse, a horse! my kingdom for a horse!' gave the line proverbial currency.

Marlowe's influence.

'Richard III.'

'Richard II' seems to have followed 'Richard III' without delay. Subsequently both were published anonymously in the same year (1597) as they had 'been publikely acted by the right Honorable the Lorde Chamberlaine his servants;' but the deposition scene in 'Richard II,' which dealt with a topic distasteful to the queen, was omitted from the early impressions. Though 'Richard II' was in style and treatment far less deeply indebted to Marlowe than its predecessor, it was clearly suggested by Marlowe's 'Edward II,' which it imitates at many points in the development and collapse of the weak king's character—the leading theme. Shakespeare drew the facts from Holinshed, but his embellishments are numerous and include the magnificently eloquent eulogy of England which is set in the mouth of John of Gaunt. Prose is avoided throughout the play, a certain sign of early work. The piece was probably composed very early in 1593. The 'Merchant of Venice,' which is of later date, bears a somewhat similar relation to Marlowe's 'Jew of Malta.'

'Richard II.'

In 'As you like it' (iii. 5, 80) Shakespeare parenthetically commemorated his acquaintance with, and his general indebtedness to, the elder dramatist by apostrophising him in the lines

> Dead Shepherd! now I find thy saw of might:
> 'Who ever loved that loved not at first sight?'

The second line is a quotation from Marlowe's poem 'Hero and Leander.'

Between February 1593 and the end of the year the London theatres were closed, owing to the prevalence of the plague. But Shakespeare was busily employed, and before the close of 1594 gave marvellous proofs of his rapid powers of production.

'Titus Andronicus' was in his own lifetime claimed for Shakespeare, but Edward Ravenscroft [q. v.], who prepared a new version in 1678, wrote of it: 'I have been told by some anciently conversant with the stage that it was not originally his, but brought by a private author to be acted, and he only gave some master-touches to one or two of the principal parts or characters.' Ravenscroft's assertion deserves acceptance. The tragedy contains powerful lines and situations, but is far too repulsive in plot and treatment, and too ostentatious in classical allusions to connect it with Shakespeare's acknowledged work. Ben Jonson credits 'Titus Andronicus' with a popularity equalling Kyd's 'Spanish Tragedy,' and internal evidence shows that Kyd was capable of writing much of 'Titus.' It was suggested by a piece called 'Titus and Vespasian,' which Lord Strange's men played on 11 April 1592 (Henslowe, p. 24); this is only extant in a German version acted by English players in Germany, and published in 1620 (cf. Cohn, *Shakespeare in Germany*, pp. 155 et seq.) 'Titus Andronicus' was doubtless taken in hand soon after the production of 'Titus and Vespasian' in order to exploit popular interest in the topic. It was acted by the Earl of Sussex's men on 23 Jan. 1593–4, when it was described as a new piece; but that it was also acted subsequently by Shakespeare's company is shown by the title-page of the first extant edition of 1600, which describes it as having been performed by the Earl of Derby's and the lord chamberlain's servants (successive titles of Shakespeare's company), as well as by those of the Earls of Pembroke and Sussex. It was entered on the 'Stationers' Register' to John Danter on 26 Feb. 1594 (Arber, ii. 644). Langbaine claims to have seen an edition of this date, but none earlier than that of 1600 is now known.

'Titus Andronicus.'

'Merchant of Venice.'

For part of the plot of 'The Merchant of Venice' Shakespeare seems to have had recourse to 'Il Pecorone,' a collection of Italian novels by Ser Giovanni Fiorentino. There a Jewish creditor demands a pound of flesh of a defaulting Christian debtor, and the latter is rescued through the advocacy of 'the lady of Belmont.' A similar story figures in the 'Gesta Romanorum,' while the tale of the caskets is told independently in another portion of the same work. But Shakespeare's 'Merchant' owes much to other sources, including more than one old play. Stephen Gosson describes in his 'Schoole of Abuse' (1579) a lost play called 'the Jew . . . . showne at the Bull [inn] . . . . representing the greedinesse of worldly chusers and bloody mindes of usurers.' This description suggests that the two stories of the pound of flesh and the caskets had been combined before. The scenes in Shakespeare's play in which Antonio negotiates with Shylock are roughly anticipated, too, by dialogues between a Jewish creditor Gerontus and a Christian debtor in the extant play of 'The Three Ladies of London,' by R[obert] W[ilson] 1584.

Above all is it of interest to note that Shakespeare in 'The Merchant of Venice' betrayed for the last time his discipleship to Marlowe. Although the delicate comedy which lightens the serious interest of Shakespeare's play sets it in a different category from that of Marlowe's 'Jew of Malta,' the humanised portrait of the Jew Shylock embodies reminiscences of Marlowe's caricature of the Jew Barabbas. Doubtless the popular interest aroused by the trial in February 1594 and the execution in June of the queen's Jewish physician, Roderigo Lopez [q.v.], incited Shakespeare to a new and subtler study of Jewish character (cf. 'The Original of Shylock,' by the present writer, in *Gent. Mag.* February 1880; Dr. H. Graetz, *Shylock in den Sagen, in den Dramen und in der Geschichte*, Krotoschin, 1880; and *New Shakspere Soc. Trans.* 1887-92, pt. ii. pp. 158-92). The main interest of the 'Merchant' culminates in the trial scene and Shylock's discomfiture, but there is an ease in the transition to the gently poetic and humorous incidents of the concluding act which attests a rare mastery of stagecraft. The 'Venesyon Comedy,' which Henslowe, the manager, produced at the Rose on 25 Aug. 1594, was probably the earliest version of the 'Merchant of Venice.' It was not published till 1600, when two editions appeared, each printed from a different stage-copy.

To 1594 must also be assigned 'King John,' which, like the 'Comedy of Errors' and 'Richard II,' altogether eschews prose; it was not printed till 1623. The piece was directly adapted from a worthless play called 'The Troublesome Raigne of King John' (1591), which was fraudulently reissued in 1611 as 'written by W. Sh.,' and in 1622 as by 'W. Shakespeare.' There is very small ground for associating Marlowe's name with the old play. Into the adaptation Shakespeare flung all his energy, and the theme grew under his hand into genuine tragedy. The three chief characters—the king, Constance, and Faulconbridge—are in all essentials of his own invention, and are portrayed with a sureness of touch that leaves no doubt of his developing strength.

King John.

At the close of 1594 a performance of Shakespeare's early farce, 'The Comedy of Errors,' gave him a passing notoriety that he could well have spared. The piece was played on the evening of Innocents' day (28 Dec.) 1594, in the hall of Gray's Inn, before a crowded audience of benchers, students, and their friends. There was some disturbance during the evening on the part of guests from the Inner Temple, who, dissatisfied with the accommodation afforded them, retired in dudgeon. 'So that night,' the contemporary chronicler states, 'was begun and continued to the end in nothing but confusion and errors, whereupon it was ever afterwards called the "Night of Errors"' (*Gesta Grayorum*, printed in 1688 from a contemporary manuscript). Next day a commission of oyer and terminer inquired into the causes of the tumult, which was attributed to a sorcerer having 'foisted a company of base and common fellows to make up our disorders with a play of errors and confusions.' (A second performance at Gray's Inn Hall was given by the Elizabethan Stage Society 6 Dec. 1895.)

The performance of 'Comedy of Errors' in Gray's Inn Hall.

Two other plays attracted much public attention during the period under review (1591-4)—'Arden of Feversham' (licensed 3 April 1592, and published in 1592) and 'Edward III' (licensed for publication 1 Dec. 1595, and published in 1596). Shakespeare's hand has been traced in both, mainly on the ground that their dramatic energy is of superior quality to that found in the extant efforts of any contemporary. There is no external evidence in favour of Shakespeare's authorship in either case. 'Arden of Feversham' dramatises with intensity and insight a sordid story of the murder of a husband by a wife which took place in 1551, and was fully reported by Holinshed. The subject is of a different type from any which Shakespeare

Early plays doubtfully assigned to Shakespeare.

is known to have treated, and although the play may be, as Mr. Swinburne insists, 'a young man's work,' it bears no relation either in topic or style to the work on which young Shakespeare was engaged at a period so early as 1591 or 1592. A play in Marlowe's vein, 'Edward III,' which Capell reprinted in his 'Prolusions' in 1760 and described as 'thought to be writ by Shakespeare,' has been assigned to him on even more shadowy grounds. Many speeches scattered through the drama, and one whole scene—that in which the Countess of Salisbury repulses the advances of Edward III—show the hand of a master (act ii. sc. 2). But there is even in the style of these contributions much to dissociate them from Shakespeare's accredited productions, and justify their ascription to some less efficient disciple of Marlowe (cf. SWINBURNE, *Study of Shakspere*, pp. 231–274). A line in act ii. sc. i. ('Lilies that fester smell far worse than weeds') reappears in Shakespeare's 'Sonnets' (xciv. l. 14). It was contrary to his practice to literally plagiarise himself. The line was doubtless borrowed from a manuscript copy of the 'Sonnets.'

During these busy years (1591–4) Shakespeare came before the public in yet another literary capacity. On 18 April 1593 his friend Richard Field, the printer, who was his fellow-townsman, obtained a license for the publication of 'Venus and Adonis,' a love poem, written with a license which stamps it as a product of youth. It was published a month or two later, without an author's name on the title-page, but Shakespeare appended his full name to the dedication, which he addressed in conventional style to Henry Wriothesley, earl of Southampton. 'I know not how I shall offend,' he wrote, 'in dedicating my unpolished lines to your lordship, nor how the world will censure me for choosing so strong a prop for supporting so weak a burden. . . . But if the first heir of my invention prove deformed, I shall be sorry it had so noble a godfather.' 'The first heir of my invention' implies that the poem was written before Shakespeare's dramatic work. The title-page bears a Latin motto from Ovid's 'Amores.' Lodge's 'Scillas Metamorphosis,' which appeared in 1589, is not only written in the same metre (six-line stanzas rhyming *a b a b c c*), but opens with the same incidents, and deals with them in the same spirit. There is little doubt that Shakespeare drew from Lodge some of his inspiration (*Shakespeare's Venus and Adonis and Lodge's Scillas Metamorphosis*, by James P. Reardon, in 'Shakespeare Society's Papers,' iii. 143–6).

Publication of 'Venus and Adonis.'

A year later, in 1594, Shakespeare published another poem in like style, but in seven-line (Chaucer's rhyme royal, *a b a b b c c*) instead of six-line stanzas. It was entered in the 'Stationers' Registers' on 9 May 1594 under the title of 'A Booke intitled the Ravyshement of Lucrece,' and was published in the same year under the title 'Lucrece.' Richard Field printed it, and John Harrison published it and sold it at the sign of the White Greyhound in St. Paul's Churchyard. Samuel Daniel's 'Complaint of Rosamond' (1592) stood to 'Lucrece' in something of the same relation as Lodge's 'Scilla' to 'Venus and Adonis.' Again, Shakespeare dedicated the volume to the Earl of Southampton, but instead of addressing him in the frigid compliment that was habitual to dedications, he employs the outspoken language of devoted friendship: 'The love I dedicate to your lordship is without end, whereof this pamphlet without beginning is but a superfluous moiety. . . . What I have done is yours; what I have to do is yours; being part in all I have, devoted yours.'

'Lucrece.'

Both the poems were widely read and appreciated. They drew upon Shakespeare a far larger share of public notice than his early dramatic productions. No less than seven editions of 'Venus' appeared between 1594 and 1602, and an eighth followed in 1617. 'Lucrece' reached a fifth edition a year earlier. 'Lucrece,' wrote Michael Drayton in his 'Legend of Matilda' (1594), was 'revived to live another age.' In 1595 William Clerke [q. v.] in his 'Polimanteia' gave 'all praise' to 'Sweet Shakespeare' for his 'Lucrecia.' John Weever, in a sonnet addressed to 'Honey-tongued Shakespeare' in his 'Epigrammes' (1595), eulogised the two poems as his main achievement, although he mentioned Romeo and Richard and 'more whose names I know not.' Richard Carew at the same time classed him with Marlowe as deserving the praises of an English Catullus ('Excellencie of the English Tongue' in CAMDEN'S *Remaines*, p. 43). There is a likelihood, too, that Spenser was drawn by the poems into the ranks of Shakespeare's admirers. There is little doubt that Spenser referred to Shakespeare in 'Colin Clouts come home againe' (completed in 1594), under the name of 'Aetion' (a familiar Greek proper name derived from Ἀετός, an eagle)

Enthusiastic reception of the poems.

Shakespeare and Spenser.

And there, though last not least is Aetion;
A gentler Shepheard may no where be found,
Whose muse, full of high thought's invention,
Doth, like himselfe, heroically sound.

The last line seems to allude to Shakespeare's surname. The admiration was doubtless mutual. That Shakespeare knew Spenser's work appears from a plain reference to his 'Teares of the Muses' (1591) in 'Midsummer Night's Dream' (v. i. 52–3). But there is no ground for assuming that Spenser in the 'Teares of the Muses' referred to Shakespeare when deploring the recent death of 'Our pleasant Willy.' A comic actor, 'dead of late' in a literal sense, is clearly intended [see under TARLETON, RICHARD]. The 'gentle spirit' who is described in a later stanza as sitting 'in idle cell' rather than turn his pen to base uses cannot be more reasonably identified with Shakespeare.

Meanwhile Shakespeare was gaining personal esteem outside the circles of actors and men of letters. His genius and 'civil demeanour' of which Chettle wrote arrested the notice of noble patrons of literature and the drama. His summons to act at court with the most famous actors of the day at the Christmas of 1594 was possibly due in part to personal interest in himself. Elizabeth quickly showed him special favour. Until the end of her reign his plays were repeatedly acted in her presence. The revised version of 'Love's Labour's Lost' was given at Whitehall at Christmas 1597, and tradition credits the queen with unconcealed enthusiasm for Falstaff, who came into being a little later. Under Elizabeth's successor he greatly strengthened his hold on royal favour, but Ben Jonson claimed that the queen's appreciation equalled that of James I. Jonson wrote of

Patrons of the court.

> Those flights upon the banks of Thames,
> That so did take Eliza and our James.

Shakespeare's personal relations with men and women of the court involved him at the outset in emotional conflicts, which form the subject-matter of his 'Sonnets.' The 'Sonnets' consequently bear to his biography a relation wholly different from that borne by the rest of his literary work. Attempts have been made to represent them as purely literary exercises, mainly on the ground that a personal interpretation seriously reflects on Shakespeare's moral character (cf. HALLIWELL-PHILLIPS). But only the two concluding sonnets (cliii. and cliv.) can be regarded by the unbiassed reader as the artificial product of a poet's fancy. Whether by accident or design, these recall an apologue illustrating the potency of love which figures in the Greek anthology (*Palatine Anthology*, ix. 627). In the rest of the 'Sonnets' Shakespeare avows, although in phraseology that is often cryptic, the experiences of his own heart (cf. C. ARMITAGE BROWN, *Shakespeare's Autobiographical Poems*, 1838; RICHARD SIMPSON, *Philosophy of Shakespeare's Sonnets*, 1868). Their uncontrolled ardour suggests that they came from a youthful pen—from a man not more than thirty. Probably a few dated from 1591, and the bulk of them were composed within a brief period of the publication of his two narrative poems in 1594. The rhythm and metre display in the best examples—for the inequalities are conspicuous—a more mellowed sweetness than is found in those works. The thought is usually more condensed, and obscure conceits are more numerous. But these results may be assigned in part to the conditions imposed by the sonnet-form and in part to the sonnets' complex theme. External evidence confirms the theory of their early date. Shakespeare's early proficiency as a sonnetteer and his enthusiasm for the sonnet-form are both attested by his introduction of two admirably turned sonnets into the dramatic dialogue of 'Love's Labour's Lost'—probably his earliest play. It has, too, been argued—ingeniously, if on slender grounds—that he was author of the sonnet, 'Phæton, to his friend Florio,' which prefaced in 1591 'Florio's Second Frutes' (MINTO, *Characteristics of English Poetry*, 1885, pp. 371–382). A line from a fully accredited sonnet (xciv.) was quoted in 'Edward III,' which was probably written before 1595. Meres, writing in 1598, mentions Shakespeare's 'sugred sonnets among his private friends' in close conjunction with his two narrative poems. That all the sonnets were in existence before Meres wrote is rendered probable by the fact that William Jaggard piratically inserted in 1599 two of the most mature of the series (Nos. cxxxviii and cxliv) in his 'Passionate Pilgrim.' Shakespeare speaks of himself in the first of these two sonnets as feeling the incidents of age ('my days are past the best'). But when the two poems fell into Jaggard's predatory hands in 1599, the poet was only thirty-five. Hence there is no ground for the assumption that the many references to his growing years demand a literal interpretation and prove a far later date of composition (cf. xxx. lxii. lxxiii.) The 'Sonnets' were first published in 1609, but Shakespeare cannot be credited with any responsibility for the publication. There was appended a previously unpublished poem of forty-nine seven-line stanzas (the metre of 'Lucrece'), entitled 'A Lover's Complaint,' in which a girl laments her betrayal by a deceitful youth. If, as is possible, it be by Shake-

The 'Sonnets.'

Their early date.

speare, it must have been written in very early days.

Shakespeare's 'Sonnets' ignore the somewhat complex scheme of rhyme adopted by Petrarch and followed by nearly all the great English sonneteers. Seeking greater metrical simplicity, they consist of three decasyllabic quatrains with a concluding couplet, and the quatrains rhyme alternately. It is rarely that a single sonnet forms an independent poem. As in the sonnets of Spenser, Sidney, and Drayton, the same train of thought is pursued continuously through two or more. The collection, numbering 154 sonnets in all, thus presents the appearance of a series of poems, each in a varying number of fourteen-line stanzas. It seems doubtful if the order in which the sequences are printed preserves that in which they were penned. Here and there a single sonnet or a short sequence of sonnets betrays little logical connection with those that precede or follow (cf. cxlv. cxlvi. and cli.)

Their form.

But when all allowance is made for internal difficulties, the story the poems tell is, in its general outline, unmistakable. Sonnet cxliv. (published by Jaggard in 1599) supplies the key:

Two loves I had of comfort and despair,
Which like two spirits do suggest [i.e. tempt] me still;
The better angel is a man right fair,
The worser spirit a woman coloured ill.

A young man and a woman, both of whom are proved by a variety of touches to be of superior rank to his own, crossed the poet's path. To the former he became devotedly attached; the latter excited in him an overmastering passion. To the sentiments thus evoked of love and friendship he abandoned himself unrestrainedly. The sonnets divide themselves into two main groups, corresponding with the twofold influence. In the first group (i.–cxxvi.), Shakespeare addresses the young man and traces the fluctuations of an affection which was three years old (civ.) In the opening sequence, the right of which to priority seems questionable, the youth is urged to marry that his beauty may survive in children (i.–xvii.) Elsewhere the poet insists, with an emphasis that sounds presumptuous, that his verse will perpetuate his friend's memory (xviii. xix. liv. lv. lx. lxiii. lxv. lxxxi. cvii.) In four sequences (xxvii.–xxxii. xliii.–lvi. xcvii.–xcix. cxiii.–cxiv.) the poet dwells on the effects of absence in intensifying his devotion. At times the youth is rebuked for sensuality; he has made advances to the poet's mistress in the poet's absence, but the poet is forgiving (xxxii.–xxxv. xl.–xlii. lxix.–lxx. xcix.–xcvi.) At times melancholy overwhelms the writer; he despairs of the corruptions of the age, and longs for death (lxvi.–lxviii. lxxi.–lxxiv.) At one period the friendship is seriously menaced by the favour bestowed by the young man on a rival poet (lxxviii.–lxxxvi.) The first group concludes with a series of sequences in which the poet declares his constancy in friendship with somewhat greater calmness and coherence than are elsewhere perceptible.

The story.

The second group (cxxvi.–cli.) narrates the course of the poet's maddening passion for a disdainful and accomplished siren with raven-black hair and eyes, who might have sat for Shakespeare's later portrait of Cleopatra. To her wiles he falls a victim, in spite of his better nature, and he suffers the added mortification of seeing his friend yield himself to her seductions (cxxxiii.–cxxxvi.)

Many attempts have been made to identify among Shakespeare's contemporaries the anonymous actors in the poet's narrative, but no result hitherto reached rests on sure foundations. The sole clue the text offers lies in the plain avowal that the young man was a patron of the poet's verse, which had derived from him 'fair assistance' (Sonnet lxxviii.) Shakespeare is not known to have formally acknowledged any literary patron except Southampton, and some of the phrases in the dedication to 'Lucrece' so closely resemble expressions that were addressed in the sonnets to the young friend as to identify the latter with Southampton. Southampton, Shakespeare's junior by nine years, was a patron of literature and of the drama. On 11 Oct. 1599 he was spoken of as passing 'away the tyme in London merely in going to plaies every day' (*Sidney Papers*, ii. 132), and when Queen Anne of Denmark visited him in London in January 1604–5, Shakespeare's 'Love's Labour's Lost' was performed ((*Hatfield MSS.*; Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 83, 167). John Florio [q. v.] may be reasonably included among Shakespeare's early London friends, although there is little ground for regarding him as the original of Holofernes in 'Love's Labour's Lost,' and he was long in Southampton's 'pay and patronage.' An independent tradition confirms the closeness of Shakespeare's intimacy with Southampton. According to Rowe, 'there is one instance so singular in its magnificence of this patron of Shakespeare's that if I had not been assured that the story was handed down by Sir William D'Avenant, who was probably

Identification of the persons noticed.

Lord Southampton.

very well acquainted with his affairs, I should not have ventured to have inserted; that my Lord Southampton at one time gave him a thousand pounds to enable him to go through with a purchase which he heard he had a mind to.'

Shakespeare's description of the rival poet, 'of tall building and goodly pride,' and the references to 'the proud full sail of his great verse,' would well apply to George Chapman, and allusions have been detected in Sonnets lxxxii. and lxxxvi. to Chapman's devotion to Homer, and to phraseology employed by Chapman in his 'Shadow of Night,' 1594 (cf. MINTO, *Characteristics*, p. 291; Leopold Shakspere, ed. Furnivall, lxv.) If there is no direct proof, there is at least no improbability in Chapman having been another protégé of Southampton. Southampton married in 1598, against the queen's wish, Elizabeth, daughter of John Vernon, a lady of the court, but there is no ground for identifying her with the mysterious lady of the 'Sonnets' (cf. GERALD MASSEY, *Secret Drama of Shakespeare's Sonnets*, 1888).

George Chapman.

Other theories of identification rest on wholly erroneous premisses. Shakespeare undoubtedly plays more than once on his own Christian name, Will (cxxxv.–vi., cxliii.); but there is nothing in the wording of these punning passages to warrant the assumption that his friend bore the same appellation (this misinterpretation is attributable to the misprinting in the early editions of the second 'will' as '*Will*' in cxxxv. l. 1). No more importance can be attached to the fantastic suggestion that the line describing the youth as

A man in hue all hues in his controlling

(xx. 7), and other applications of the word 'hue,' imply that his surname was Hughes. There is no other pretence of argument for the conclusion that the friend's name was William Hughes. There was a contemporary musician, called William Hughes, but no known contemporary of the name answers either in age or position in life the requirements of the problem (*Notes and Queries*, 5th ser. v. 443).

Baseless theories.

A third theory has received wide acceptance. When the sonnets were published in 1609 they appeared with the following dedication: 'To. the. onlie. begetter. of. | these. insving. sonnets. | Mr. W. H. all. happinesse. | and. that. eternitie. | promised. | by. | ovr. ever-liuing. poet. | wisheth. | the. well-wishing. | adventvrer. in. | setting. | forth. | T. T.' T. T. are the initials of Thomas Thorpe, who procured the manuscript for publication. He belonged to a class of men well known at the time in the book trade who neither printed books nor sold them, but procured manuscripts how they could, and, in the absence of any copyright law, the means they employed were not keenly scanned. Having procured the manuscript, they commissioned others to print and sell the book, and in the case of Shakespeare's 'Sonnets' Thorpe commissioned George Eld to print them, and the function of distribution he divided between John Wright and William Aspley. Some title-pages give Wright's name as the seller, others give Aspley's. Thorpe stood in no need of Shakespeare's assent before publishing his 'Sonnets,' and there is no ground for supposing that it was given or even invited. The volume's tradesmanlike entry as 'Shakespeare's Sonnets,' not only in the 'Stationers' Register' but also on the title-page, practically confers on the speculator in the manuscript—'the well-wishing adventurer in setting forth'—sole responsibility for the enterprise.

Thomas Thorpe's position.

As proprietor of the 'copy' Thorpe was entitled to supply the dedication. In 1600 he dedicated Marlowe's edition of 'Lucan,' the manuscript of which he had somehow acquired, to a friend in the trade, Edward Blount [q. v.] Oblivious of Thorpe's position, writers on Shakespeare have assumed that he was in Shakespeare's confidence, that Shakespeare inspired or even wrote the dedication, and that the Mr. W. H. in Thorpe's inscription concealed the initials of the Sonnets' youthful hero. The perplexing phrase 'the only begetter of these ensuing sonnets,' with the words that follow, was doubtless a high-flown compliment which in a dedication cannot be taken literally. No single person begot the sonnets in the sense of inspiring them; at least two persons, the youth and the dark lady, were in an equal degree sources of the poet's inspiration. 'Beget' was often used in the sense of 'get' or 'procure' (cf. 'beget . . . the reversion,' DEKKER, *Satiromastix*, 1602; 'acquire and beget a temperance,' *Hamlet*, iii. sc. 2; see MURRAY, *New English Dict.*) It is therefore probable that the object of the dedication was some friend of Thorpe through whose good offices the manuscript of the poems had reached his hands.

'Mr. W. H.'

But since 1832, when James Boaden first propounded the theory in the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' Mr. W. H. has not only been regarded as the friend commemorated in the 'Sonnets,' but he has been confidently identified with William Herbert, third earl of

Pembroke [q. v.] (cf. Boaden, *On the Sonnets of Shakespeare*, 1837). Pembroke doubtless belonged to the same court circle as Southampton. His father was patron of a company of actors. He himself was a munificent patron of letters; to him and his brother the first collected edition of Shakespeare's works was dedicated seven years after his death in language that suggests that he had shown appreciation of them in the poet's lifetime. But there is no evidence that he was in his youth acquainted with the poet, or that he was at any time closely associated with him. In 1594, when the 'Sonnets' seem to have been completed, Pembroke was fourteen years old, and, although his father made an abortive effort to negotiate a marriage for him in 1598, it is unlikely that Shakespeare should have urged him at an earlier age, as he urges the youth of the 'Sonnets,' to marry. Late in 1600 Pembroke involved himself in a discreditable intrigue with a lady of the court, Mary Fitton, and the supporters of the Pembroke theory have identified Mary Fitton with the 'dark' lady (cf. *Sonnets*, ed. T. Tyler, 1890, passim). But the intrigue which forms the subject of Shakespeare's 'Sonnets' was of far earlier date, for one of the 'Sonnets' surreptitiously published by Jaggard in 1599 describes it in full tide. The identification of 'Mr. W. H.' with Pembroke seems, moreover, directly confuted by Thorpe's form of address. In 1601 William Herbert succeeded his father as Earl of Pembroke; by 1609 he was knight of the Garter and holder of many court offices. Thorpe dedicated several books to him by name, and on every occasion not only gave him the full benefit of his numerous titles, but solicited his patronage in an abject tone of subservience. He approached all his noble patrons in like terms. That he should have deserted his constant practice in the case of Shakespeare's 'Sonnets,' and should have curtly and compromisingly dubbed the influential Earl of Pembroke 'Mr. W. H.,' is an inadmissible inference.

The Pembroke theory inadmissible.

The emotional storms which the 'Sonnets' reflect doubtless subsided quickly. At the end of 1594 there was published a poem entitled 'Willobie his Avisa' (licensed 3 Sept. 1594), in which the writer described the progress of a profound passion [see Willoughby or Willobie, Henry]. Some anonymous prefatory verses commend Shakespeare's 'Lucrece,' and by way of argument to canto xliv. the writer relates how, in search of a cure for the disastrous effects of love, he appealed to 'his familiar friend W. S., who not long before had tried the courtesy of the like passion and was now newly recovered of the like infection.' But 'W. S.' offered a remedy which aggravated the disease, 'because,' the narrator suggests, 'he [i.e. W. S.] would see whether another could play his jest better than himself, and, in viewing afar off the course of this loving comedy, he determined to see whether it would sort to a happier end for the new actor than it did for the old player.' In cantos xliv.–xlviii. Willobie engages in an imaginary dialogue with W. S., who, in some pedestrian verse, offers him chilling comfort. Shakespeare is the only claimant that has been put forward to the initials of 'the old player,' W. S., and although it is hazardous to hang a theory on the identity of initials (cf. Elze, p. 115), there seems ground for the assumption that Shakespeare's recent experiences prompted Willobie's references to W. S. and to the latter's recovery from love's 'infection' (Willobie, *Avisa*, ed. Grosart, 1880; *Shakspere Allusion Books*, 1592–8, ed. Ingleby, New Shakspere Soc. pt. i.; *Notes and Queries*, 2nd ser. ix. 59–60).

The 'W.S.' of 'Willobie his Avisa.'

Meanwhile, despite distraction, Shakespeare's dramatic work steadily advanced. To the winter season of 1595 probably belongs 'Midsummer Night's Dream' (two editions appeared in 1600). It may well have been written to celebrate a marriage—perhaps the marriage of Lucy Harington to Edward Russell, third earl of Bedford, on 12 Dec. 1594; or that of William Stanley, earl of Derby, at Greenwich on 24 Jan. 1594–5. The elaborate compliment to the queen, 'a fair vestal throned by the west,' was at once an acknowledgment of past marks of royal favour, and an invitation for their extension to the future. The whole is in the airiest and most graceful vein of comedy. Hints for the story can be traced to a variety of sources (Chaucer's 'Knight's Tale,' Plutarch's 'Life of Theseus,' Ovid's 'Metamorphoses,' bk. iv.), and the influence of John Lyly is traceable, but the final scheme of the piece is of the author's invention. In the humorous presentation of Pyramus and Thisbe by the village clowns, Shakespeare improved upon a theme which he had already employed in 'Love's Labour's Lost.'

'Midsummer Night's Dream.'

More sombre topics engaged him in the comedy of 'All's well that ends well,' which may be tentatively assigned to 1595. The plot, like that of 'Romeo and Juliet,' was drawn from Painter's 'Palace of Pleasure' (No. xxxviii.) The original source is Boccaccio's 'Decamerone' (giorn. iii. nov. 9). Shakespeare,

'All's Well.'

after his wont, grafted on the touching story of Helena's love for the unworthy Bertram the comic characters of the braggart Parolles, the pompous Lafeu, and a clown less witty than his compeers. Another original creation, Bertram's mother, Countess of Rousillon, is a charming portrait of old age. In frequency of rhyme and other metrical characteristics the piece closely resembles 'The Two Gentlemen,' but the characterisation betrays far greater power, and there are fewer conceits or crudities of style. The pathetic element predominates. Meres attributed to Shakespeare, in 1598, a piece called 'Love's Labour's Won.' This title, which is not otherwise known, may well be applied to 'All's Well.' 'The Taming of the Shrew,' which has also been identified with 'Love's Labour's Won,' has far slighter claim to the designation.

'The Taming of the Shrew'—which, like 'All's Well,' was first printed in the folio—was probably of a little later date. It is a revision of an old play on lines somewhat differing from those which Shakespeare had followed previously. From 'The Taming of a Shrew,' a comedy first published in 1594 (repr. Shakespeare Soc. 1844), Shakespeare drew the induction and the scenes, in which hero Petruchio conquers Catherine the Shrew. He first infused into them the genuine spirit of comedy, and introduced into the induction reminiscences of Stratford which may be due to his renewal in 1596 of personal relations with the town. The tinker, Christopher Sly, describes himself as 'Old Sly's son of Burton Heath,' who has run up a score with the fat alewife of Wincot. Burton Heath is Barton-on-the-Heath, the home of Shakespeare's aunt, Edmund Lambert's wife, and of her sons. Wincot is Wilmcote, his mother's native place. But while following the old play in its general outlines, the revised version added an entirely new underplot—the story of Bianca and her lovers, which owes something to the 'Supposes' of George Gascoigne [q. v.], an adaptation of Ariosto's 'Suppositi.' Evidence of styles makes it difficult to allot the Bianca scenes to Shakespeare; as in the case of 'Henry VI,' those scenes were probably due to a coadjutor.

'Taming of the Shrew.'

In 1597 Shakespeare turned once more to English history. From Holinshed's 'Chronicle,' and from a valueless but very popular piece, 'The Famous Victories of Henry V,' which was repeatedly acted between 1588 and 1595 (licensed 1594, and published 1598), he worked up with splendid energy two plays on the reign of Henry IV. They form one continuous whole, but are known respectively as parts i. and ii. of 'Henry IV.' The kingly hero had figured as a spirited young man in 'Richard II;' he was now represented as weighed down by care and age. With him are contrasted (in part i.) his impetuous and ambitious subject Hotspur and (in both parts) his son and heir Prince Hal, whose boisterous disposition drives him from court to seek adventures among the haunters of taverns. Shakespeare, in both parts, originally named the chief of the prince's riotous companions after Sir John Oldcastle, a character in the old play. But Henry Brooke, eighth lord Cobham, who succeeded to the title early in 1597, and claimed descent from the historical Sir John Oldcastle [q. v.], the lollard leader, raised objection; and when the first part of the play was printed by the acting-company's authority in 1598 ('newly corrected' in 1599), Shakespeare bestowed on Prince Hal's tunbellied follower the new name of Falstaff. The latter designation was doubtless a hazy reminiscence of Sir John Fastolf [q. v.], an historical warrior who had already figured in 'Henry VI,' and was owner at one time of the Boar's Head tavern in Eastcheap, which the prince and his companions frequent in 'Henry IV,' according to traditional stage directions (first adopted by Theobald in 1733; cf. HALLIWELL-PHILLIPS, ii. 257). A trustworthy edition of the second part also appeared with Oldcastle's name corrected to Falstaff in 1600. There the epilogue emphatically denied that Falstaff had any characteristic in common with the martyr Oldcastle. Meanwhile humbler dramatists (Munday, Wilson, Drayton, and Hathaway), seeking to profit by the attention thus drawn to the historical Oldcastle, produced a poor dramatic version of his genuine history; and of two editions published in 1600, one printed for T[homas] P[avier] was impudently described on the title-page as by Shakespeare. Shakespeare's purely comic power culminated in Falstaff, who may be claimed as the most humorous figure in literature. The Elizabethan public recognised the triumphant success of the effort, and many of Falstaff's telling phrases, with the names of his associates, Justice Shallow and Silence, at once took root in popular speech.

'Henry IV.'

Falstaff.

In all probability 'The Merry Wives of Windsor,' a comedy inclining to farce, followed close upon 'Henry IV.' Rowe asserts that 'Queen Elizabeth was so well pleased with that admirable character of Falstaff in the two parts of "Henry IV" that she commanded him to continue it for one play more, and to show him in love.' Dennis, in the dedica-

'Merry Wives of Windsor.'

tion of 'The Comical Gallant' (1702), noted that the 'Merry Wives' was written at the queen's 'command and by her direction; and she was so eager to see it acted that she commanded it to be finished in fourteen days, and was afterwards, as tradition tells us, very well pleased with the representation.' In his 'Letters' (1721, p. 232) Dennis reduces the period of composition to ten days—'a prodigious thing,' added Gildon (*Remarks*, p. 291), 'where all is so well contrived and carried on without the least confusion.' The localisation of the scene at Windsor, and the complimentary references to Windsor Castle, corroborate the tradition that it was prepared to meet a royal command. An imperfect draft of the play was printed by Thomas Creede in 1602 (cf. Shakespeare Society's reprint, 1842, ed. Halliwell); the folio of 1623 first supplied a complete version. The plot was probably suggested by an Italian novel. A tale from Strapparola's 'Notti' (ii. 2), of which an adaptation figured in Tarleton's 'Newes out of Purgatorie' (1590), another tale from the 'Pecorone' of Ser Giovanni Fiorentino (ii. 2), and a third, the Fishwife's tale of Brainford in 'Westward for Smelts' (said to have been published in 1603, although no edition earlier than 1620 is known), supply incidents distantly resembling episodes in the play (cf. *Shakespeare's Library*, ed. Hazlitt, I. ii. 1–80). The buoyant country life was the unaided outcome of Shakespeare's own experience.

The character of Prince Hal offered to its creator as many attractions as Falstaff offered to the queen, and in 'Henry V.' 'Henry V' Shakespeare, during 1598, brought his career to its close. The play was performed early in 1599, probably in the newly built Globe Theatre. Again Thomas Creede printed, in 1600, an imperfect draft, which was thrice reissued before a complete version was supplied in the first folio of 1623. The dramatic interest of 'Henry V' is slender. The piece presents a series of episodes in which the hero's manliness is advantageously displayed as soldier, ruler, and lover. The topic appealed to patriotic sentiment. Besides the 'Famous Victories,' there was another piece on the subject, which Henslowe produced for the first time on 28 Nov. 1595 (*Diary*, p. 61). 'Henry V' may be regarded as Shakespeare's final experiment in the dramatisation of English history. For 'Henry VIII,' which was produced very late in his career, he was only in part responsible.

In the prologue to act v. of 'Henry V' Shakespeare foretold for Robert Devereux, second earl of Essex, 'the general of our gracious empress,' an enthusiastic reception by the people of London when he should have 'broached' rebellion in Ireland. He had set out on that disastrous mission on 27 March 1599. The fact that Southampton went with him probably accounted for Shakespeare's avowal of sympathy. But Essex's effort failed, and when he sought in 1601, again with the support of Southampton, to recover his position by stirring up rebellion in London, the friends of the rebel leaders sought the dramatist's countenance. They paid 40*s.* to Augustine Phillips, a leading member of Shakespeare's company, for reviving at the Globe 'Richard II' (beyond doubt Shakespeare's play), in the hope that its scene of the deposition of a king might encourage a popular outbreak. The performance took place on Saturday (7 Feb. 1601), the day preceding that fixed for the rising. The queen, in a conversation with William Lambarde [q. v.] on 4 Aug. 1601, complained that 'this tragedie' had been played with seditious intent 'forty times in open streets and houses' (Nichols, *Progresses of Elizabeth*, iii. 552). Phillips gave evidence against Essex and his friends, and Southampton was imprisoned until the queen's death. But no proceedings were taken against the players.

Essex and the rebellion of 1601.

For several years Shakespeare's genius as dramatist and poet had been acknowledged by critics and playgoers alike, and his social and professional position had become considerable. Inside the theatre his influence was supreme. When, in 1598, the manager of the company rejected Ben Jonson's 'Every Man in his Humour,' Shakespeare intervened, according to a credible tradition (reported by Rowe but denounced by Gifford), and procured a reversal of the decision. He took a part when the piece was performed. Jonson, despite his difficult and jealous temper, which may have led to an occasional coolness, cherished esteem and affection for his benefactor till death (cf. Gilchrist, *Examination of the Charges . . . of Jonson's Enmity towards Shakspeare*, 1808).

Shakespeare's popularity and influence.

Tradition reports that Shakespeare joined, at the Mermaid Tavern in Bread Street, those meetings of Jonson and his associates which Beaumont described in his poetical 'Letter' to Jonson. 'Many were the wit-combats,' wrote Fuller of Shakespeare in his 'Worthies' (1662), 'betwixt him and Ben Johnson, which two I behold like a Spanish great gallion and an English man of war; Master Johnson (like the former) was built far higher

The Mermaid meetings.

in learning, solid but slow in his performances. Shakespear, with the English man of war, lesser in bulk, but lighter in sailing, could turn with all tides, tack about, and take advantage of all winds by the quickness of his wit and invention.'

Meres's eulogy, 1598.

Of the many testimonies paid to Shakespeare's literary reputation at this period of his career, the most striking was that of Francis Meres [q. v.] In a survey of contemporary literary effort in England (*Palladis Tamia*, 1598), Meres asserted that 'the Muses would speak Shakespeare's fine filed phrase if they could speak English.' 'Among the English,' Meres declared, 'he was the most excellent in both kinds for the stage' (i.e. tragedy and comedy). The titles of six comedies ('Two Gentlemen of Verona,' 'Errors,' 'Love's Labour's Lost,' 'Love's Labour's Won,' 'Midsummer Night's Dream,' and 'Merchant of Venice') and of six tragedies ('Richard II,' 'Richard III,' 'Henry IV,' 'King John,' 'Titus,' and 'Romeo and Juliet') were enumerated, and mention followed of his 'Venus and Adonis,' his 'Lucrece,' and his 'sugred sonnets among his private friends.' These were cited as proof 'that the sweet witty soul of Ovid lives in mellifluous and honey-tongued Shakespeare.' In the same year, and in the same strain, Richard Barnfield, in 'Poems in divers Humors,' predicted immortality for Shakespeare, whose 'honey-flowing vein had pleased the world.'

Value of his name to publishers.

His name was thenceforth of value to unprincipled publishers. Already, in 1595, Thomas Creede, the surreptitious printer of 'Henry V' and the 'Merry Wives,' had issued the 'Tragedie of Locrine,' as 'newly set foorth, overseene and corrected by W. S.' The like initials figured on the title-pages of 'The Puritaine, or the Widdow of Watling-streete' (printed by G. Eld in 1607), and of 'The True Chronicle Historie of Thomas, Lord Cromwell' (licensed 11 Aug. 1602, and printed by Thomas Snodham in 1613). 'The Life of Oldcastle' in 1600 (printed by T[homas] P[avier]), 'The London Prodigall' in 1605 (printed by T. C. for Nathaniel Butter), and 'The Yorkshire Tragedy' in 1608 (by R. B. for Thomas Pavier) were all published under the fraudulent pretence that they were by Shakespeare, whose name, in full, appeared on their title-pages. None of these six plays have any internal claim to Shakespeare's authorship, but all were included in the third folio of his collected works (1664). Schlegel and a few other critics have, on no grounds that merit acceptance, detected signs of Shakespeare's work in 'The Yorkshire Tragedy;' it is 'a coarse, crude, and vigorous impromptu,' which is clearly by a far less experienced hand. With even smaller justification, the worthless old play on the subject of King John was attributed to Shakespeare in the re-issues of 1611 and 1622. But poems as well as plays in which Shakespeare had no hand were deceptively placed to his credit. In 1599 William Jaggard, another piratical publisher, issued a volume which he entitled 'The Passionate Pilgrim, by W. Shakespeare.' Jaggard included two sonnets by Shakespeare which were not previously in print, and three poems drawn from the already published 'Love's Labour's Lost;' but the bulk of the volume was by Richard Barnfield and others (cf. HALLIWELL-PHILLIPS, i. 401–4, for analysis of volume). When a third edition of the 'Passionate Pilgrim' was printed in 1612, Shakespeare gently raised objection, according to Heywood's 'Apology for Actors' (1612), to the unwarranted use ('altogether unknown to him') of his name, and it was apparently removed from the title-page of some copies. In 1601 Shakespeare's full name was appended to 'a poetical essaie on the Turtle and the Phœnix,' which was published in Robert Chester's 'Love's Martyr,' a collection of poems by Marston, Chapman, Jonson, and others. This obscure allegory may be from Shakespeare's pen; happily he wrote nothing else of like character.

Shakespeare's practical temperament.

Shakespeare, in middle life, brought to practical affairs a singularly sane and sober temperament. The anonymous author of 'Ratseis Ghost' (1605) [see RATSEY, GAMALIEL] cynically urged an unnamed actor of repute, who has been identified with Shakespeare, to practise the utmost frugality in London. 'When thou feelest thy purse well lined (the counsellor proceeded), buy thee some place or lordship in the country that, growing weary of playing, thy money may there bring thee to dignitie and reputation.' It was this prosaic course of conduct that Shakespeare followed. As soon as his position in his profession was assured, he devoted his energies to re-establishing the fallen fortunes of his family in his native place, and to acquiring for himself and his successors the status of gentlefolk.

His father's difficulties.

His father's pecuniary embarrassments had steadily increased since his son's departure. Creditors harassed him unceasingly. In 1587 one Nicholas Lane pursued him for a debt for which he had become liable as surety for his brother Henry. Through 1588 and

1589 he retaliated with pertinacity on a debtor named John Tompson. But in 1591 a creditor, Adrian Quiney, obtained a writ of distraint against him, and although in 1592 he attested inventories taken on the death of two neighbours, Ralph Shaw and Henry Field, father of the printer, he was on 25 Dec. of the same year 'presented' as a recusant for absenting himself from church. The commissioners reported that his absence was probably due to 'fear of process for debt.' He figures for the last time in the proceedings of the local court, in his customary rôle of defendant, in March 1595, and there is every indication that in that year he retired from trade, vanquished at every point. In January 1596–7 he conveyed a slip of land attached to his dwelling in Henley Street to one George Badger. There is a likelihood that the poet's wife fared, in the poet's absence, no better. The only contemporary mention made of her between her marriage in 1582 and her husband's death in 1616 is as the borrower at an unascertained date (doubtless before 1595) of forty shillings from Thomas Whittington, who had formerly been her father's shepherd. The money was unpaid when Whittington died in 1601, and he directed his executor to recover the sum from the poet and distribute it among the poor of Stratford (Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 186).

His wife's debt.

It was probably in 1596 that Shakespeare returned, after nearly eleven years' absence, to his native town, and worked a revolution in the affairs of his family. The prosecutions of his father in the local court then ceased. Thenceforth the poet's relations with Stratford were uninterrupted. He still resided in London for most of the year; but until the close of his professional career he paid the town at least one annual visit, and he was always formally described as 'of Stratford-on-Avon, gentleman.' He was no doubt there on 11 Aug. 1596, when his only son, Hamnet, was buried in the parish church; the boy was eleven and a half years old.

Two months later the bankrupt father, took a step, by way of regaining his prestige which must be assigned to his son's intervention. On 20 Oct. 1596 John Shakespeare applied for a coat-of-arms in consideration, it was stated in the first draft-grant, of the services of his ancestors to Henry VII, and of his having married Mary Arden. A second copy of the draft altered 'ancestors' to 'grandfather.' The application does not seem to have been persisted in (cf. *Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica*, 2nd ser. 1886, i. 109).

The coat-of-arms.

A new grant was drafted by the college of arms three years later, when it was alleged that a coat-of-arms had been assigned to John while he was bailiff of Stratford. In the draft of 1599 greater emphasis was laid on the gentle descent of Shakespeare's mother, the arms of whose family her children were authorised to quarter with their own. But this draft, like the first, remained unconfirmed. The father's arms were described as 'gold on a bend sable a spear of the first, the point steeled proper, and for his crest or cognisance, a falcon his wings displayed argent standing on a wreath of his colours supporting a spear gold steeled as aforesaid: set upon a helmet with mantels and tassels.' In the margin of the first draft a pen sketch is given, with the motto 'Non sanz droict;' in the draft of 1599 the arms both of Shakespeare and of the Arden family are very roughly tricked (*Herald and Genealogist*, i. 510; Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 56, 60). Two copies of the draft of 1596 and one of that of 1599 are at the college of arms. Although no evidence survives to show that the poet used the arms personally, they are prominently displayed on his tomb; they appear on the seal and tomb of his elder daughter Susanna, impaled with those of her husband; and they were quartered by Thomas Nash, the first husband of the poet's granddaughter, Elizabeth Hall (French, *Genealogica Shakespeareana*, p. 413).

In 1597 the poet took in his own person a more effective step in the way of rehabilitating himself and his family in the eyes of his fellow townsmen. On 4 May he purchased the largest house in the town, known as New Place. It had been built by Sir Hugh Clopton [q. v.] more than a century before, and seems to have fallen into a ruinous condition. But Shakespeare paid for it, with two barns and two gardens, the then substantial sum of 60*l*. Owing to the sudden death of the vendor, William Underhill, on 7 July 1597, the original transfer of the property was left at the time incomplete. Underhill's son Fulk died a felon, and he was succeeded in the family estates by his brother Hercules, who on coming of age, May 1602, completed in a new deed the transfer of New Place to Shakespeare (*Notes and Queries*, 8th ser. v. 478). On 4 Feb. 1597–8 Shakespeare was described as a householder in Chapel Street ward, in which New Place was situated, and as the owner of ten quarters of corn. The inventory was made owing to the presence of famine in the town, and very few inhabitants were credited with a larger holding. In the same year (1598) he procured stone for the repair

Purchase of New Place.

of the house, and before 1602 had planted a fruit orchard. He is traditionally said to have interested himself in the garden, and to have planted (after 1609) with his own hands a mulberry tree, which was long a prominent feature of it. When this was cut down, in 1758, numerous relics were made from it, and were treated with an almost superstitious veneration (Halliwell-Phillips, i. 411–16). Shakespeare does not appear to have permanently settled at New Place till 1611. In 1609 the house, or part of it, was occupied by the town clerk, Thomas Greene, 'alias Shakespeare,' who claimed to be the poet's cousin. His grandmother seems to have been a Shakespeare. He often acted as the poet's legal adviser.

It was doubtless under Shakespeare's guidance that his father and mother set on foot in November 1597—six months after the acquisition of New Place—a lawsuit against John Lambert for the recovery of the mortgaged estate of Asbies in Wilmcote. The litigation dragged on for some years without result. Three letters written during 1598 by leading men at Stratford are still extant among the corporation's archives, and leave no doubt of the reputation for wealth and influence with which the purchase of New Place invested the poet in his fellow-townsmen's eyes. Abraham Sturley, who was once bailiff, writing early in 1598, apparently to a brother in London, says: 'This is one special remembrance from our father's motion. It seemeth by him that our countryman, Mr. Shakspere, is willing to disburse some money upon some odd yardland or other at Shottery, or near about us: he thinketh it a very fit pattern to move him to deal in the matter of our tithes. By the instructions you can give him thereof, and by the friends he can make therefor, we think it a fair mark for him to shoot at, and would do us much good.' Richard Quiney, another townsman, father of Thomas (afterwards one of Shakespeare's two sons-in-law), was, in the autumn of the same year, harassed by debt, and on 25 Oct. appealed to Shakespeare for a loan of money. 'Loving countryman,' the application ran, 'I am bold of you as of a friend craving your help with xxx*li.*' Quiney was staying at the Bell in Carter Lane, London, and his main business in the metropolis was to procure exemption for the town of Stratford from the payment of a subsidy. Abraham Sturley pointed out to him in a letter dated 4 Nov. 1598 that since the town was wholly unable, in consequence of the dearth of corn, to pay the tax, he hoped 'that our countryman, Mr. Wm. Shak., would procure us money, which I will like of, as I shall hear when, and where, and how.'

Appeals for aid from his fellow-townsmen.

The financial prosperity, to which this correspondence and the transactions immediately preceding it point, has been treated as one of the chief mysteries of Shakespeare's career, but the difficulties have been exaggerated. It was not until 1599, when the Globe Theatre was built, that he acquired any share in the profits of a playhouse. But his revenues as a successful dramatist and actor were by no means contemptible at an earlier date. His gains in the capacity of dramatist were certainly small. The highest price known to have been paid to an author for a play by an acting company was 10*l.*; 6*l.* was the ordinary rate. (In order to compare the sums mentioned here with the present currency, they should be multiplied by ten.) The publication of a play produced no profit for the author. The nineteen plays which may be set to Shakespeare's credit between 1591 and 1599 cannot consequently have brought him more than 150*l.*, or some 17*l.* a year. But as an actor his income was far larger. An efficient actor received in 1635 as large a regular salary as 180*l.* The lowest known valuation set an actor's wages at 3*s.* a day, or about 45*l.* a year. Shakespeare's emoluments as an actor in 1599 are not likely to have fallen below 100*l.*; while the remuneration due to performances at court or in noblemen's houses, if the accounts of 1594 be accepted as the basis of reckoning, added some 15*l.* Shakespeare's friendly relations, too, with the printer Field, secured him, despite the absence of any copyright law, some part of the profits in the large and continuous sale of his poems. Thus over 130*l.* (equal to 1,300*l.* of to-day) would be Shakespeare's average annual revenue before 1599. Such a sum would be regarded as a substantial income in a country town. According to the author of 'Ratseis Ghost,' Shakespeare practised in London a strict frugality, and there seems no reason why he should not have been able in 1597 to draw from his savings 60*l.* wherewith to buy New Place. Whether his income or savings wholly justified his fellow-townsmen's opinion of his wealth in 1598, or sufficed between 1597 and 1599 to meet his expenses, in rebuilding the house, stocking the barns with grain, and in various legal proceedings, may be questioned. According to tradition, Southampton gave him a large gift of money to enable him 'to go through with' a purchase to which he had a mind. A munificent gift, added to professional gains, would amply account

Financial position before 1599.

for Shakespeare's financial position before 1599.

Financial position after 1599.

After 1599 his sources of income from the theatre greatly increased. In 1635 the heirs of the actor Richard Burbage were engaged in litigation respecting their proprietary rights in the two playhouses, the Globe and the Blackfriars theatres. The documents relating to this litigation supply authentic, although not very detailed, information of Shakespeare's interest in theatrical property. Richard Burbage, with his brother Cuthbert, erected at their sole cost the Globe Theatre in the winter of 1598–9, and the Blackfriars, which their father was building at the time of his death in 1597, was also their property. After completing the Globe they leased out, for twenty-one years, shares in the receipts to 'those deserving men Shakespeare, Hemings, Condell, Philips, and others.' All the shareholders named were, like Burbage, active members of Shakespeare's company of players. The shares, which numbered sixteen in all, carried with them the obligation of providing for the expenses of the playhouse, and were doubtless in the first instance freely bestowed. Hamlet claims, in the play scene (III. ii. 293), that the success of his improvised tragedy would 'get him a fellowship in a cry of players'—a proof that a successful dramatist might reasonably expect such a reward for a conspicuous effort. How many shares originally fell to Shakespeare there is no means of determining. Records of later subdivisions suggest that they did not exceed two. But the Globe was an exceptionally popular playhouse, and its receipts were large. In 'Hamlet' both a share and a half-share of 'a fellowship in a cry of players' are described as assets of enviable value (III. ii. 294–6). According to the documents of 1635, an actor-sharer at the Globe received above 200*l.* a year on each share, besides his actor's salary of 180*l.* Thus Shakespeare drew from the Globe Theatre, at the lowest estimate, more than 500*l.* a year in all. His interest in the Blackfriars Theatre was comparatively unimportant, and is less easy to estimate. The often quoted documents on which Collier depended to prove him a substantial shareholder in that playhouse have been long proved to be forgeries. The pleas in the lawsuit of 1635 show that the Burbages, the owners, leased the Blackfriars Theatre after its establishment in 1597 for a long term of years to the master of the children of the chapel, but bought out the lessee at the end of 1609, and then 'placed' in it 'men-players which were Hemings, Condell, Shakespeare, &c.' To these and other actors they allotted shares in the receipts, the shares numbering eight in all. The profits were far smaller than at the Globe, and if Shakespeare held one share (certainty on the point is impossible), it added not more than 100*l.* a year to his income, and that not until 1610.

Later income.

His remuneration as dramatist for the seventeen plays completed between 1599 and 1611 may be estimated, in consideration of their exceptional popularity, at 170*l.* or some 15*l.* a year, while the increase in the number of court performances under James I, and the additional favour bestowed on Shakespeare's company, may well have given that source of income the enhanced value of 20*l.* a year. With an annual professional income reaching near 600*l.* a year, Shakespeare could easily, with good management, have completed those purchases of houses and land at Stratford on which he laid out a total sum of 970*l.* between 1599 and 1613, or an annual average of 70*l.* These properties, it must be remembered, represented investments, and he drew rent from most of them. He traded, too, in agricultural produce. There is nothing inherently improbable in the statement of John Ward, the seventeenth-century vicar of Stratford, that in his last years 'he spent at the rate of a thousand a year, as I have heard,' although we may reasonably make allowance for exaggeration in the round figures. Shakespeare realised his theatrical shares several years before his death in 1616, when he left, according to his will, 350*l.* in money in addition to his real estate and personal belongings. His friends and fellow-actors, Heming and Condell, amassed equally large, if not larger, fortunes, while a contemporary theatrical proprietor, Edward Alleyn, purchased the manor of Dulwich for 10,000*l.* (in money of his own day), and devoted it, with much other property, to public uses, at the same time as he made ample provision for his family out of the residue of his estate. Gifts from patrons may have continued to occasionally augment Shakespeare's resources, but his wealth can be satisfactorily assigned to better attested agencies. There is no ground for treating it as of mysterious origin (cf. HALLIWELL-PHILLIPPS, i. 312–19; FLEAY, *Stage*, pp. 324–8).

Between 1599 and 1611, while London remained Shakespeare's chief home, he built up his estate at Stratford. In 1601 his father died, being buried on 8 Sept. He apparently left no will, and the poet, as the eldest son, inherited the houses in Henley Street, the only portion of the elder Shakespeare's or his wife's property which had not been

alienated to creditors. Shakespeare permitted his mother to reside in one of the Henley Street houses till her death (she was buried 9 Sept. 1608), and he derived a modest rent from the other. On 1 May 1602 he purchased of the rich landowners William and John Combe of Stratford, for 320*l.*, 107 acres of arable land near the town. The conveyance was delivered, in the poet's absence, to his brother Gilbert, 'to the use of the within named William Shakespere' (Halliwell-Phillips, ii. 17–19). A third purchase quickly followed. On 28 Sept. 1602, at a court baron of the manor of Rowington, one Walter Getley transferred to the poet a cottage and garden which were situated at Chapel Lane, opposite the lower grounds of New Place. They were held practically in fee-simple at the annual rental of 2*s.* 6*d.* It appears from the roll that Shakespeare did not attend the manorial court then held at Rowington, and it was stipulated that the estate should remain in the hands of the lady of the manor until he completed the purchase in person. At a later period he was admitted to the copyhold, and he settled the remainder on his two daughters in fee. In April 1610 he purchased from the Combes 20 acres of pasture land, to add to the 107 of arable land that he had acquired of the same owners in 1602.

Formation of the estate at Stratford, 1601–10.

As early as 1598 Abraham Sturley had suggested that Shakespeare should purchase the tithes of Stratford. Seven years later he became their part owner, and thus conspicuously extended his local influence. On 24 July 1605 he bought for 440*l.* of Ralph Huband an unexpired term of thirty-one years of a ninety-two years' lease of a moiety of the tithes of Stratford, Old Stratford, Bishopton, and Welcombe. The moiety was subject to a rent of 17*l.* to the corporation, who were the reversionary owners on the lease's expiration, and of 5*l.* to John Barker, the heir of a former proprietor. The investment brought Shakespeare, under the most favourable circumstances, a net income of 38*l.* a year, and the refusal of persons who claimed an interest in the other moiety to acknowledge the full extent of their liability to the corporation led that body to demand from the poet payments justly due from others. After 1609 he joined with two interested persons, Richard Lane of Awston and Thomas Greene, the town clerk of Stratford, in a suit in chancery to determine the exact responsibilities of all the tithe-owners, and in 1612 they presented a bill of complaint to Lord-chancellor Ellesmere, with what result is unknown.

The Stratford tithes.

Shakespeare inherited his father's love of litigation, and stood rigorously by his rights. In March 1600 he recovered in London a debt of 7*l.* from one John Clayton. In July 1604, in the local court at Stratford, he sued one Philip Rogers, to whom he had supplied since the preceding March malt to the value of 1*l.* 19*s.* 10*d.*, and had on 25 June lent 2*s.* in cash. Rogers paid back 6*s.*, and Shakespeare sought the balance of the account, 1*l.* 15*s.* 10*d.* During 1608 and 1609 he was at law with another fellow-townsman, John Addenbroke. On 15 Feb. 1609 Shakespeare, who was apparently represented by Thomas Greene, obtained judgment from a jury against Addenbroke for the payment of 6*l.*, and 1*l.* 5*s.* costs, but Addenbroke left the town, and the triumph proved barren. Shakespeare avenged himself by proceeding against one Thomas Horneby, who had acted as the absconding debtor's bail (Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 77–80).

Recovery of small debts.

With an inconsistency that is more apparent than real, the astute business transactions of these years (1597–1611) synchronise with the production of Shakespeare's noblest literary work—of his most sustained and serious efforts in comedy, tragedy, and romance. In 1599, after abandoning English history in 'Henry V,' he produced in rapid succession his three most perfect essays in comedy—'Much Ado about Nothing,' 'As you like it,' and 'Twelfth Night.' Their good-humoured tone seems to reveal their author in his happiest frame of mind; in each the gaiety and tenderness of youthful womanhood are exhibited in fascinating union; while Shakespeare rarely put his lyric gift to better advantage than in the songs with which the three plays are interspersed. The first two were entered on the 'Stationers' Registers' before 4 Aug. 1600, on which day a prohibition was set on their publication, as well as on the publication of 'Henry V' and Jonson's 'Every Man in his Humour.' Probably the acting company found the publication of plays injurious to their rights in them, and sought to stop the practice. Nevertheless, 'Much Ado,' like 'Henry V,' was published before the close of the year. 'As you like it,' like 'Twelfth Night,' was not printed till it appeared in the folio.

Literary work in 1599.

In 'Much Ado,' which appears to have been written in 1599, the brilliant comedy of Benedick and Beatrice, and of the blundering

watchmen Dogberry and Verges, is wholly original; but the sombre story of Hero and Claudio with which it is entwined is drawn from an Italian source, either from Bandello (*Novel.* xxii.) through Belleforest's 'Histoires Tragiques,' or from Ariosto's 'Orlando Furioso' through Sir John Harington's translation (canto v.) 'As you like it,' which quickly followed, is a dramatic adaptation of Lodge's romance, 'Rosalynde, Euphues Golden Legacie' (1590), but Shakespeare added three new characters of first-rate interest—Jaques the meditative cynic, the fool Touchstone, and the hoyden Audrey. The date of 'Twelfth Night' is probably 1600. Steevens supposed that 'the new map with the augmentation of the Indies,' spoken of by Maria (act iii. sc. ii. l. 86), had reference to the map in Linschoten's 'Voyages,' 1598. Like the 'Comedy of Errors,' 'Twelfth Night' first achieved general notice through a presentation before barristers. It was produced at Middle Temple Hall on 2 Feb. 1601–2, and Manningham, a barrister who was present, described the performance (*Diary*, Camden Soc. p. 18; the Elizabethan Stage Society repeated the play on the same stage on 10, 11, and 12 Feb. 1897). Manningham wrote that the piece was 'much like the "Comedy of Errors" or "Menechmi" in Plautus, but most like and neere to that in Italian called "Inganni."' Two Italian plays entitled 'Gl' Inganni' ('The Cheats'), and a third called 'Gl' Ingannati,' present resemblances to 'Twelfth Night;' but it is doubtful if Shakespeare had recourse to any of them. Shakespeare drew the story from the 'Historie of Apolonius and Silla' in 'Riche his Farewell to Militarie Profession' (1581), an English rendering of a tale in Cinthio's 'Hecatommithi.' The characters of Malvolio, Sir Toby Belch, Sir Andrew Aguecheek, Fabian, the clown Feste, and Maria, who lighten the romantic pathos with their mirth, are Shakespeare's own creations. The ludicrous gravity of Malvolio proved exceptionally popular on the stage.

'Much Ado.'

'As you like it.'

'Twelfth Night.'

In 1601 Shakespeare made a new departure. He first drew a plot from North's translation of 'Plutarch's Lives' (1579; 2nd edit. 1595). On Plutarch's lives of Julius Cæsar, Brutus, and Antony he based his historical tragedy of 'Julius Cæsar.' Weever, in 1601, in his 'Mirror of Martyrs,' plainly refers to the masterly speech allotted by Shakespeare to Antony, of which there is no suggestion in Plutarch; hence the date cannot be questioned. The general topic was already familiar on the stage (cf. *Hamlet*, act iii. sc. ii. l. 108). A play of the same title was known as early as 1589, and was acted in 1594 by Shakespeare's company. Shakespeare's piece, which is a penetrating study of political life, is exceptionally well planned and balanced. The characters of Brutus, Antony, and Cassius are exhibited with faultless art.

'Julius Cæsar,' 1601.

Meanwhile, Shakespeare's friend Ben Jonson was engaged in bitter warfare with his fellow-dramatists, Marston and Dekker, and in 1601 Jonson, in his 'Poetaster' (acted by the children of the chapel at the Blackfriars Theatre), effectively held his opponents up to ridicule, while they retorted in like fashion (cf. Feis, *Shakespeare and Montaigne*, 1884). Jonson figures personally in the 'Poetaster' under the name of Horace. Episodically he expresses approval of the work of another character, Virgil, in terms so closely resembling those which he is known to have applied to Shakespeare that they may be regarded as intended to apply to him (act v. sc. i.) Jonson points out that Virgil, by his penetrating intuition, achieved the great effects which others laboriously sought to reach through rules of art.

Ben Jonson's quarrels.

> His learning labours not the school-like gloss
> That most consists of echoing words and terms . . .
> Nor any long or far-fetched circumstance—
> Wrapt in the curious generalities of arts—
> But a direct and analytic sum
> Of all the worth and first effects of arts.
> And for his poesy, 'tis so rammed with life
> That it shall gather strength of life with being,
> And live hereafter, more admired than now.

Shakespeare's attitude to Jonson's quarrel has given rise to various conjectures. In the same year (1601) 'The Return from Parnassus'—a third piece in a trilogy of plays—was 'acted by the students in St. John's College, Cambridge.' In this piece, as in its two predecessors, Shakespeare received, both as a playwright and a poet, high commendation, although his poems were judged to reflect somewhat too largely 'love's lazy foolish languishment.' In a prose dialogue between Shakespeare's fellow-actors Burbage and Kempe, which is a prominent feature of the 'Return,' Kempe remarks of university dramatists, 'Why, here's our fellow Shakespeare puts them all down; aye, and Ben Johnson, too. O! that Ben Johnson is a pestilent fellow. He brought up Horace, giving the poets a pill; but our fellow Shakespeare hath given him a purge that made him bewray his credit.' Burbage adds: 'He is a shrewd fellow, indeed.' A literal interpretation of this perplexing passage implies that Shakespeare took part against Jon-

son in his controversy with Dekker and his friends. But such a conclusion is otherwise uncorroborated. The general references subsequently made by Shakespeare (*Hamlet*, act ii. sc. ii. l. 354 seq.) to the interest taken by the public in a pending controversy between poets and players, and to the jealousy existing between men-actors and boy-actors, were doubtless suggested by Jonson's quarrel, but indicate that their author maintained a neutral attitude. Probably the 'purge' that Shakespeare was alleged to have given Jonson, who was perhaps in this instance credited with a jealousy in excess of the fact, meant no more than that Shakespeare had signally outstripped Jonson in popular esteem, possibly as the author of 'Julius Cæsar,' a subject peculiarly in Jonson's vein.

Shakespeare's alleged participation.

At any rate in 1602 Shakespeare finally left Jonson and all friends and foes lagging far behind. In that year he produced 'Hamlet,' with Burbage in the title-rôle. The story of the prince of Denmark had been popular on the stage in a lost dramatic version by another writer as early as 1589, and to that version Shakespeare's tragedy doubtless owed much. But the story was also accessible in the 'Histoires Tragiques' of Belleforest, who adapted it from the 'Historia Danica' of Saxo Grammaticus. An English translation of Belleforest's 'Hystorie of Hamblet' appeared in 1608 (cf. Gericke und Max Moltke, *Hamlet-Quellen*, Leipzig, 1881).

'Hamlet,' 1602.

The bibliography of 'Hamlet' offers a puzzling problem. On 26 July 1602 'A Book called the Revenge of Hamlet, Prince of Denmark, as it was lately acted by the Lord Chamberlain his Servants,' was entered on the 'Stationers' Registers,' and it was published in quarto next year (for N[icholas] L[ing] and John Trundell). The title-page stated that it had been 'acted divers times in the city of London, as also in the two universities of Cambridge and Oxford and elsewhere.' In all probability this crude production was a piratical and carelessly transcribed copy of Shakespeare's first draft of the play, in which he drew largely on the older piece. A revised version appeared with the company's assent in 1604 as 'The Tragical History of Hamlet, Prince of Denmark, by William Shakespeare, newly imprinted and enlarged to almost as much again as it was, according to the true and perfect copy' (by I[ames] R[oberts] for N[icholas] L[ing]). The concluding words—'according to the true and perfect copy'—of the title-page of the second quarto stamp its predecessor as surreptitious. But the second quarto was itself printed from a copy which had been curtailed for acting purposes. A third version (long the *textus receptus*) figured in the folio of 1623. Here some passages, not to be found in the quartos, appear for the first time, but a few others that appear in the quartos are omitted. The folio text probably followed an acting copy which had been curtailed in a different fashion from that adopted in the second quarto (cf. *Hamlet*—parallel texts of the first and second quarto, and first folio —ed. Wilhelm Vietor, Marburg, 1891; *The Devonshire Hamlets*, 1860, parallel texts of the two quartos; *Hamlet*, ed. George Macdonald, 1885, a study with the text of the folio).

The problem of its publication.

Humorous relief is supplied to the tragic theme by Polonius and the gravediggers, and if the topical references to contemporary theatrical history (II. ii. 350–89) could only count on an appreciative reception from an Elizabethan audience, the pungent censure of actors' perennial defects is calculated to catch the ear of the average playgoer of all ages. But 'Hamlet' is mainly a philosophical effort, a masterly study of the reflective temperament in excess. The action develops slowly; at times there is no movement at all. Except 'Antony and Cleopatra,' which exceeds it by sixty lines, the piece is the longest of Shakespeare's plays, while the total length of Hamlet's speeches far exceeds that of those allotted by Shakespeare to any others of his characters. Yet the interest excited by the character of the hero carries all before it, and amply accounts for the position of the play in popular esteem. 'Hamlet' was the only drama by Shakespeare that was acted in his lifetime at the two universities. Its popularity on the stage from its author's day to our own, when it is as warmly welcomed in the theatres of France and Germany as in those of England and America, lends signal testimony to the eminence of Shakespeare's dramatic instinct.

Popularity of 'Hamlet.'

Although the difficulties of determining the date of 'Troilus and Cressida' are very great, there are many grounds for assigning its composition to the early days of 1603. In 1599 Dekker and Chettle were engaged by Henslowe to prepare for the Earl of Nottingham's company—a rival of Shakespeare's company —a play of 'Troilus and Cressida,' of which no trace survives. On 7 Feb. 1602–3 James Roberts obtained a license for 'the booke of Troilus and Cresseda as yt is acted by my lord chamberlens men,' i.e. Shakespeare's company (Arber, iii. 226). Roberts printed the second quarto of 'Hamlet' and others of

'Troilus and Cressida.'

Shakespeare's plays; but his effort to publish 'Troilus' proved abortive owing to the interposition of the players. The metrical characteristics—the regularity of the blank verse—powerfully confirm the date of composition which Roberts's license suggests. Six years later, however, on 28 Jan. 1608–9, a new license for the issue of 'a booke called the history of Troylus and Cressida' was granted to Richard Bonian and Henry Walley (*ib.* p. 400), and these publishers, more fortunate than Roberts, soon printed a quarto with Shakespeare's full name as author. In a bombastic advertisement, in which they paid high-flown compliments to the author as a writer of comedies, they defiantly boasted that the 'grand possessors'—i.e. the owners—of the play deprecated the publication, and they asserted, by way of enhancing the value of what were obviously stolen wares, that the piece was new and unacted. This statement was probably a commercial trick, rendered safe from immediate detection by the fact that the play had not been produced for six years. Perhaps, too, it was speciously justified by recent revisions which their edition embodied. At the time of publication a revival was in contemplation. Later in 1609 a second quarto appeared without the preliminary address, and bearing on the title-page the additional words, 'As it was acted by the king's majesty's servants at the Globe.'

The story was mainly drawn from Chaucer's 'Troilus and Cresseide,' but Shakespeare seems also to have consulted Lydgate's 'Troy Book' and Chapman's translation of Homer's 'Iliad.' In defiance of his authorities, he invested with contemptible characteristics nearly all the Greek heroes who fought against Troy. Helen and Cressida are presented as heartless coquettes. In style the work is unequal, but in the speeches of Ulysses Shakespeare concentrates a mass of pithily expressed worldly wisdom, much of which has obtained proverbial currency.

Despite the association of Shakespeare's company with the rebellion of 1601, it retained its hold on court favour till the close of Elizabeth's reign, and as late as 2 Feb. 1603 entertained the dying queen at Richmond. Her death on 26 March 1603 drew from Shakespeare's early eulogist, Chettle, a vain appeal to him, under the fanciful name of Melicert, to

Queen Elizabeth's death, 26 March 1603.

> Drop from his honied muse one sable teare,
> To mourne her death that graced his desert,
> And to his laies opened her royall eare

(*England's Mourning Garment*, 1603, sign. D. 3). But the withdrawal of one royal patron only supplied Shakespeare and his friends with another, who proved even more liberal and appreciative. On 19 May 1603, very soon after James I's accession, a royal license was granted to Shakespeare and other actors 'freely to use and exercise the arte and facultie of playing comedies, tragedies, histories, enterludes, moralls, pastoralles, stageplaies, and such other like as they have already studied, or hereafter shall use or studie as well for the recreation of our loving subjectes as for our solace and pleasure, when we shall thinke good to see them during our pleasure.' The Globe Theatre was noted as the customary scene of their labours, but permission was granted to them to perform in the town-hall or moot-hall of any country town. Ten actors are named. Lawrence Fletcher stands first on the list; he had already performed before James in Scotland in 1599 and 1601. Shakespeare comes second and Burbage third; the rest were doubtless all members of the lord chamberlain's company. The company was thenceforth styled the king's company, while its members became 'the king's servants.' Shakespeare's plays were repeatedly performed at court, and Oldys related that James wrote Shakespeare a letter in his own hand, which was at one time in the possession of Sir William D'Avenant, and afterwards, according to Lintot, in that of John Sheffield, duke of Buckingham. In December 1603 the company performed at Wilton while the king was on a visit to William Herbert, third earl of Pembroke. At the time the prevalence of the plague had led to the closing of the theatres in London, and James sent the king's players a gift of 30*l.* On 15 March 1604 the company walked from the Tower of London to Westminster in the procession which accompanied the king on his formal entry into London, and in August they were all summoned to attend at Somerset House on the occasion of the arrival there of the new Spanish ambassador, Juan de Taxis, Conde de Villa Mediana.

James I's patronage.

Under the incentive of such exalted patronage, Shakespeare's activity redoubled. To other causes must be assigned his absorption during the next six years in the highest themes of tragedy, and the intensity and energy which thenceforth illumined every scene that he contrived. To 1604 the composition of two of his greatest plays can be confidently assigned. 'Othello' was doubtless the first new piece by Shakespeare that was acted before James. It was produced at Whitehall on 1 Nov. 'Measure for Mea-

'Othello' and 'Measure for Measure.'

sure' followed on 26 Dec. Neither was printed in Shakespeare's lifetime. 'Othello' was re-created from a painful story found in Cinthio's 'Hecatommithi' (decad iii. nov. 3), and not known to have been translated into English. The tragedy displays to magnificent advantage the dramatist's fully matured powers. An unfaltering equilibrium is maintained in the treatment of both plot and characters. The perilous story of 'Measure for Measure' also comes from Cinthio, who made it the subject not only of a romance, but of a tragedy called 'Epitia.' There is a likelihood that Shakespeare knew Cinthio's play, which was untranslated. The romance had been twice rendered into English by George Whetstone [q. v.]—in his play of 'Promos and Cassandra' (1578), and in his collection of prose tales, 'Heptameron of Civil Discources' (1582). In 'Measure for Measure' Shakespeare treated with a solemnity that seems at times tinged by cynicism the corruption with which unchecked sexual passion threatens society. The duke's reference to his dislike of mobs, despite his love of his people, was perhaps penned in deference to James I, whose horror of crowds was notorious (act i. sc. i. 67–72).

'Macbeth.'

In 'Macbeth,' which Shakespeare began in 1605 and completed next year, he employed a setting wholly in harmony with the accession of a Scottish king. The story was drawn from Holinshed's 'Chronicle of Scottish History,' with occasional reference, perhaps, to earlier Scottish sources (cf. *Athenæum*, 25 July 1896). The supernatural machinery of the three witches accorded with the king's superstitious faith in demonology; the dramatist lavished full sympathy on Banquo, James's ancestor; while Macbeth's vision of kings carrying 'twofold balls and treble sceptres' (iv. i. 20) plainly alludes to the union of Scotland with England and Ireland under James's sway. The allusion by the porter (act ii. sc. iii. 9) to the 'equivocator . . . who committed treason' was perhaps suggested by the defence of the doctrine of equivocation made by the jesuit Henry Garnett [q.v.], who was executed early in 1606 for his share in the 'gunpowder plot.' Much scenic elaboration characterised the production. Dr. Simon Forman [q. v.] witnessed a performance of the tragedy at the Globe in April 1611, and noted that Macbeth and Banquo entered the stage on horseback, and that Banquo's ghost was materially represented (act iii. sc. iv. 40 seq.) The characters of Macbeth and his wife are depicted with the utmost subtlety and concentrated insight. Nowhere, moreover, has Shakespeare introduced comic relief into a tragedy with bolder effect than in the porter's speech after the murder of Duncan (act ii. sc. iii. 1 seq.) The theory that this and a few other passages were from another hand does not merit acceptance (cf. *Macbeth*, ed. Clark and Wright, Clarendon Press Ser.) The resemblances between Thomas Middleton's 'Witch' and portions of 'Macbeth' may safely be ascribed to plagiarism on Middleton's part. Of two songs which, according to the stage directions, were to be sung in 'Macbeth' (act iii. sc. v. and act iv. sc. i.), only the first line of each is noted there, but songs beginning with the same lines are set out in full in Middleton's play; they were probably by Middleton, and were interpolated by actors in a stage version of 'Macbeth;' the piece was first printed in 1623.

'King Lear.'

'King Lear' was written during 1606, and was produced before the court at Whitehall on the night of 26 Dec. of that year. It was entered on the 'Stationers' Registers' on 26 Nov. 1607, and two editions, published by Nathaniel Butter, appeared in the following year; neither exactly corresponds with the other or with the accepted text of the folio. Like 'Macbeth,' it was mainly founded on Holinshed's 'Chronicle.' The leading theme had been dramatised as early as 1593, but Shakespeare's attention was no doubt directed to it by the publication of an adaptation of Holinshed's version in 1605 under the title of 'The True Chronicle History of King Leir and his three Daughters—Gonorill, Ragan, and Cordelia.' Shakespeare did not adhere closely to his original. He invested the tale of Lear with a hopelessly tragic conclusion, and on it he grafted the equally distressing tale of Gloucester and his two sons, which he drew from Sidney's 'Arcadia.' Hints for the speeches of Edgar when feigning madness were drawn from Harsnet's 'Declaration of Popish Impostures,' 1603. In 'Lear' the pity and terror of which tragedy is capable reach their climax. The agony—'the living martyrdom'—springing from filial ingratitude is unrelieved at any point. The faithful fool who attends the king jests sadly, and serves to intensify the pathos.

'Timon of Athens.'

Although Shakespeare's powers showed no sign of exhaustion, he reverted next year (1607) to his earlier habit of collaboration, and with another's aid composed two dramas—'Timon of Athens' and 'Pericles.' An extant play on the subject of 'Timon of Athens' was composed in 1600 (edited from the manuscript by Dyce in 1842), but there is nothing to show that Shakespeare and his coadjutor were acquainted with it. They doubtless

derived a part of their story from Painter's 'Palace of Pleasure,' and the rest from Plutarch's 'Life of Marc Antony' and perhaps a dialogue of Lucian entitled 'Timon,' which Boiardo had previously converted into a comedy under the name of 'Il Timone.' Internal evidence makes it clear that Shakespeare's coadjutor was responsible for nearly the whole of acts iii. and v. But the character of Timon himself and all the scenes which he dominates are from Shakespeare's pen. Timon is cast in the mould of Lear.

There seems some ground for the belief that Shakespeare's coadjutor in 'Timon' was George Wilkins [q. v.], who, in 'The Miseries of Enforced Marriage' (1607), first treated the story that afterwards served for the plot of 'The Yorkshire Tragedy.' At any rate, Wilkins may safely be credited with portions of 'Pericles,' a romantic play which can be referred to the same year as 'Timon.' Shakespeare contributed only acts iii. and v. and parts of iv., which together form a self-contained whole, and do not combine satisfactorily with the remaining scenes. The presence of a third hand, of even inferior merit to Wilkins, has been suspected, and to this collaborator (perhaps William Rowley) may be best assigned the three scenes of purposeless coarseness which take place in or before a brothel (iv. 2, 5, and 6). From so distributed a responsibility the piece naturally suffers. It lacks continuity, and the story is helped out by dumb shows and prologues. But a matured felicity of expression characterises Shakespeare's own contributions, which charmingly narrate the romantic quest of Pericles for his daughter Marina, who was born and abandoned in a shipwreck. At many points he here anticipated his latest dramatic effects. The shipwreck is depicted (act iv. 1) as impressively as in the 'Tempest,' and Marina and her mother Thaisa enjoy many experiences in common with Perdita and Hermione in the 'Winter's Tale.' The prologues, which were not by Shakespeare, were spoken by an actor representing the mediæval poet John Gower, who versified the story under the title of 'Apollonius of Tyre' in his 'Confessio Amantis.' It is also found in a prose translation (from the French), which was printed in Lawrence Twyne's 'Patterne of Painfull Adventures' in 1576, and again in 1607. After the play was produced George Wilkins, one of the alleged coadjutors, based on it a novel called 'The Painful Adventures of Pericles, Prynce of Tyre, being the True History of the Play of Pericles as it was lately presented by the worthy and ancient Poet, John Gower' (1608). The play was issued as by William Shakespeare in a mangled form in 1608, and again in 1611, 1619, 1630, and 1635. It was not included in Shakespeare's collected works till 1664.

'Pericles.'

In May 1608 Edward Blount [q. v.] entered in the 'Stationers' Registers,' by the authority of Sir George Buc, the licenser of plays, 'a booke called "Anthony and Cleopatra."' No copy of this date is known, and once again the company probably hindered the publication. It was first printed in the folio of 1623. The source of the play is the life of Antonius in North's 'Plutarch,' and Shakespeare closely followed the historical narrative. But he breathed into the characters even more than his wonted fire, and invested the whole theme with a dramatic grandeur which lifts even Cleopatra's moral worthlessness into sublimity. The 'happy valiancy' of the style, too—to use Coleridge's admirable phrase—sets the tragedy very near the zenith of his achievement.

'Antony and Cleopatra.'

'Coriolanus' (first printed in 1623) similarly owes its origin to North's 'Plutarch,' although Shakespeare may have read the story in Painter's 'Palace of Pleasure' (No. iv.) He adhered to the text of Plutarch with the utmost literalness. The metrical characteristics prove the play to have been written at the same period, probably in the same year as 'Antony and Cleopatra' (1608). In its austere temper it contrasts at all points with its predecessor. The courageous self-reliance of Coriolanus's mother, Volumnia, is severely contrasted with the submissive gentleness of Virgilia, Coriolanus's wife. The hero falls a victim to unchecked pride of caste, but for the rabble, who procure Coriolanus's overthrow, Shakespeare shows ironical contempt.

'Coriolanus.'

In 'Cymbeline,' 'Winter's Tale,' and 'Tempest,' the three latest plays that came from Shakespeare's unaided pen, he dealt with romantic themes which all end happily, but he instilled into them a pathos which sets them in a category of their own apart alike from comedy and tragedy. The placidity of tone conspicuous in these three plays has been often contrasted with the storm and stress of the great tragedies that preceded them. But the commonly accepted theory that traces in this change of tone a corresponding development in the author's own emotions ignores the objectivity of Shakespeare's dramatic work. Every phase of feeling lay within the scope of his intuition, and the successive order in which he approached them bore no explicable relation to the course of his private life or experience.

The latest plays.

In 'Cymbeline' he freely adapted a fragment of British history taken from Holinshed, interweaving with it a story from Boccaccio's 'Decameron' (Novel ix. Day 2). The Ginevra of the Italian novel corresponds to Shakespeare's Imogen. Her story is also told in a tract called 'Westward for Smelts,' no edition of which earlier than 1620 is now known, although Steevens and Malone doubtfully assume that it was first published in 1603, and that it had been already laid under contribution by Shakespeare in the 'Merry Wives.' Dr. Forman saw 'Cymbeline' acted either in 1610 or 1611. On Imogen Shakespeare lavished all the fascination of his genius. The play contains the splendid lyric 'Fear no more the heat of the sun' (act iv. sc. ii. 258 seq.) The poor verse of the vision of Posthumus (act v. sc. iv. lines 30 seq.) must have been supplied by another hand.

'Cymbeline.'

'A Winter's Tale' was seen by Dr. Forman at the Globe on 15 May 1611. It is based upon Greene's popular romance which was called 'Pandosto' in the first edition of 1588, and subsequently 'Dorastus and Fawnia.' Shakespeare followed Greene in allotting a seashore to Bohemia—an error over which Ben Jonson, like many later critics, made merry (*Conversations with Drummond*, p. 16). But Shakespeare created the thievish pedlar Autolycus and the high-spirited Paulina, and invented the reconciliation of Leontes with Hermione. In Perdita, Florizel, and the boy Mamilius, he depicted youth in its most attractive guise. The freshness of the pastoral incident, too, surpasses that of all his presentations of country life.

'A Winter's Tale.'

'The Tempest' was probably the latest drama that he completed. In the summer of 1609, when a fleet, under the command of Sir George Somers [q. v.], had been overtaken by a storm off the West Indies, the admiral's ship, the 'Sea-Venture,' was driven on the Bermuda coast. The crew, escaping in two boats of cedar to Virginia, reached England in 1610. An account of the wreck, entitled 'A Discovery of the Bermudas, otherwise called the Ile of Divels,' was written by Sylvester Jourdain or Jourdan [q. v.], one of the survivors, and published in October 1610. Shakespeare, who mentions the 'still vexed Bermoothes' (act i. sc. i. l. 229), incorporated in 'The Tempest' many hints from Jourdain. No source for the complete plot has been discovered, but the German writer, Jacob Ayrer, who died in 1605, dramatised a somewhat similar story in 'Die schöne Sidea,' where the adventures of Prospero, Ferdinand, Ariel, and Miranda are roughly anticipated (printed in Cohn). English actors were performing at Nuremberg, where Ayrer lived, in 1604 and 1606, and may have brought reports of the piece to Shakespeare. Or perhaps both English and German plays had a common origin in some novel that has not yet been traced. Gonzalo's description of an ideal commonwealth is derived from Florio's translation of Montaigne's essays (1603). A highly ingenious theory represents 'The Tempest' (which, excepting 'Macbeth' and the 'Two Gentlemen,' is the shortest of Shakespeare's plays) as a masque written to celebrate the marriage of Princess Elizabeth (like Miranda, an island-princess) with the Elector Frederick. This marriage took place on 14 Feb. 1612–13, a very late date to which to assign the composition of the piece. The plot, which revolves about the forcible expulsion of a ruler from his dominions, and his daughter's wooing by the son of the usurper's chief ally, is hardly one that a shrewd playwright would have chosen as the setting of an official epithalamium in honour of the daughter of a monarch so sensitive about his title to the crown as James I (cf. *Universal Review*, April 1889, by Dr. R. Garnett).

'Tempest.'

Although Shakespeare gives as free a rein to his imagination in the 'Tempest' as in 'Midsummer Night's Dream,' and magical or supernatural agencies are the mainsprings of the plot, the tone is so solemn and impressive that critics may be forgiven if they detect in it something more than the irresponsible play of poetic fancy. Many of the characters seem the outcome of speculation respecting the least soluble problems of human existence. Ariel appears to suggest the capabilities of human intellect when detached from physical attributes. Caliban seems to typify human nature before the evolution of moral sentiment (cf. Daniel Wilson, *Caliban, or the Missing Link*; Renan, *Caliban: a Drama*; Browning, *Caliban upon Setebos*). In Prospero, the guiding providence of the romance, who resigns his magic power in the closing scene, traces have been sought without much reason of the lineaments of the dramatist himself, who in this play probably bade farewell to the enchanted work of his life.

But if in 1611 Shakespeare finally abandoned dramatic composition, there seems little doubt that he left with the manager of his company unfinished drafts of more than one play which others were summoned at a later date to complete. His place at the head of the active dramatists was at once filled by John Fletcher (1579–1625) [q. v.], and

Unfinished plays.

Fletcher, with some aid possibly from his friend Philip Massinger [q. v.], probably undertook the working up of Shakespeare's unfinished sketches. On 9 Sept. 1653 the publisher Humphrey Moseley [q. v.] obtained a license for the publication of a play which he described as 'History of Cardenio, by Fletcher and Shakespeare.' It was probably identical with the lost play, 'Cardano,' which was acted at court in 1613. Moseley, whose description may have been fraudulent, failed to publish the piece, and nothing is otherwise known of it. Two other pieces, 'The Two Noble Kinsmen' and 'Henry VIII,' which are attributed to similar authorship, survive. 'The Two Noble Kinsmen' was first printed in 1634, and was written, according to the title-page, 'by the memorable worthies of their time, Mr. John Fletcher and Mr. William Shakespeare, gentlemen.' It was included in the folio of Beaumont and Fletcher of 1679. On grounds alike of æsthetic criticism and metrical tests, a substantial portion of the play was assigned to Shakespeare by Charles Lamb, Coleridge, and Dyce. The last included it in his edition of Shakespeare. Coleridge detected Shakespeare's hand in act i., act ii. sc. i., and act iii. sc. i. and ii. Act iv. sc. iii., and act v. (except sc. ii.) were subsequently set to his credit (Spalding, *Shakespeare's Authorship of Two Noble Kinsmen*, 1833, reprinted in 'Two Noble Kinsmen,' ed. Littledale, New Shakspere Society, 1876; Spalding in 'Edinburgh Review,' 1847; 'Transactions' New Shakspere Soc. 1874). All these passages develop the main plot, which is drawn from Chaucer's 'Knight's Tale of Palamon and Arcite,' and seems to have been twice dramatised previously—in a lost play, 'Palæmon and Arcyte,' by Richard Edwardes [q. v.], which was acted at court in 1566, and in a second piece, called 'Palamon and Arsett' (also lost), which was purchased by Henslowe in 1594. The residue is disfigured by indecency and triviality, and is of no literary value. Some recent critics assign much of the alleged Shakespearean work to Massinger, and they narrow Shakespeare's contribution to the first scene (with the opening song) and act v. sc i. and iv. (cf. Mr. Robert Boyle in 'Transactions' of the New Shakspere Soc. 1882). Certainty is impossible, but frequent signs of Shakespeare's workmanship are unmistakable.

'Two Noble Kinsmen.'

Similar perplexity attends an examination of 'Henry VIII.' It was in course of performance at the Globe Theatre on 29 June 1613, when the firing of some cannon incidental to the performance set fire to the playhouse, which was burned down; it was rebuilt next year (cf. *Court and Times of James I*). Sir Henry Wotton, describing the disaster on 6 July, entitled the piece 'All is True representing some principal pieces in the Reign of Henry VIII.' The play is loosely constructed, and the last act ill coheres with its predecessors. The whole resembles an 'historical masque.' It was first printed in the folio of Shakespeare's works in 1623, but shows traces of more hands than one. The three chief characters—the king, Queen Katharine of Arragon, and Cardinal Wolsey—bear clear marks of Shakespeare's best workmanship; but only act i. sc. i., act ii. sc. iii. and iv. (Katharine's trial), act iii. sc. ii. (except ll. 204–460), act v. sc. i., can on either æsthetic or metrical grounds be assigned to him. These portions may, according to their metrical characteristics, be dated, like the 'Winter's Tale,' about 1611. The remaining thirteen scenes are from the pen of Fletcher, perhaps with occasional aid from Massinger. Wolsey's familiar farewell to Cromwell (act iii. sc. ii. ll. 204–460) is undoubtedly by Fletcher. James Spedding's theory that Fletcher hastily completed Shakespeare's unfinished draft for the special purpose of enabling the company to celebrate the marriage of Princess Elizabeth and Elector Palatine, which took place on 14 Feb. 1612–13, seems fanciful. During May 1613, according to an extant list, twenty plays were produced at court in honour of the event, but 'Henry VIII' is not among them (*Bodl. MS.* Rawl. A 239; cf. Spedding in *Gent. Mag.* 1850, reprinted in New Shakspere Soc. 'Transactions,' 1874). The conjecture that Massinger and Fletcher alone collaborated in 'Henry VIII' (to the exclusion of Shakespeare altogether) rests on equally doubtful premisses (cf. Mr. Robert Boyle in New Shakspere Society 'Transactions,' 1884).

'Henry VIII.'

The concluding years of Shakespeare's life (1611–1616) were mainly passed at Stratford, and probably in 1611 he disposed of his shares in the Globe and Blackfriars theatres. He owned none at the date of his death. But until 1614 he paid frequent visits to London, where friends in sympathy with his work were alone to be found. His plays continued to form the staple of court performances. In May 1613, during the Princess Elizabeth's marriage festivities, Heming, Shakespeare's former colleague, produced at Whitehall no less than seven of his plays, viz. 'Much Ado,' 'Tempest,' 'Winter's Tale,' 'Sir John Falstaff' (i.e. 'Merry Wives'), 'Othello,'

Plays at court in 1613.

'Julius Cæsar,' and 'Hotspur' (doubtless '1 Henry IV') (Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 87). Of his actor-friends, one of the chief, Augustine Phillips, died in 1605, leaving by will 'to my fellowe, William Shakespeare, a thirty-shillings piece of gold.' With Burbage, Heming, and Condell his relations remained close to the end. Burbage and he were credited with having engaged together in many sportive adventures. The sole anecdote of Shakespeare recorded in his lifetime relates that Burbage, when playing Richard III, agreed with a lady in the audience to visit her after the performance; Shakespeare, overhearing the conversation, anticipated the actor's visit, and met Burbage on his arrival with the quip that 'William the Conqueror was before Richard the Third' (Manningham, *Diary*, 13 March 1601, Camd. Soc. p. 39). Such gossip deserves little more acceptance than the later story, in the same key, which credits Shakespeare with the paternity of Sir William D'Avenant [q. v.] The latter was baptised at Oxford on 3 March 1605, as the son of John D'Avenant, the landlord of the Crown Inn, where Shakespeare lodged in his journeys to and from Stratford. The story was long current in Oxford, and was at times complacently accepted by the reputed son. But it is safer to adopt the less compromising version which makes Shakespeare the boy's godfather. He was a welcome guest at John D'Avenant's house, and another son, Robert, reported the kindly notice which the poet took of him as a child (cf. Aubrey, *Lives*; Halliwell-Phillipps, ii. 43; art. D'Avenant, Sir William). Ben Jonson and Drayton—the latter a Warwickshire man—seem to have been Shakespeare's chief literary friends in his latest years.

Actor-friends.

At Stratford Shakespeare in his declining days took a full share of social and civic responsibilities. On 16 Oct. 1608 he stood chief godfather to William, son of Henry Walker, a mercer and alderman. On 11 Sept. 1611, when he had finally settled in New Place, his name appeared in the margin of a folio page of donors (including all the principal inhabitants of Stratford) to a fund that was raised 'towards the charge of prosecuting the bill in Parliament for the better repair of the highways.'

Final settlement at Stratford.

Meanwhile, domestic affairs engaged some of his attention. Of his two surviving children—both daughters—the eldest, Susanna, had married, on 5 June 1607, John Hall (1575–1635) [q. v.], a rising physician of puritan leanings, and in the following February was born the poet's only granddaughter, Elizabeth Hall. On 9 Sept. 1608 the poet's mother was buried in the parish church, and on 4 Feb. 1613 his third brother Richard. On 15 July 1613 Mrs. Hall preferred, with her father's assistance, a charge of slander against one Lane in the ecclesiastical court at Worcester; the defendant, who had apparently charged the lady with illicit relations with one Ralph Smith, did not appear, and was excommunicated.

Domestic affairs.

In the same year (1613), when on a short visit to London, he invested a small sum of money in a new property—his last investment in real estate. He purchased a house, the ground-floor of which was a haberdasher's shop, with a yard attached. It was situated within six hundred feet of the Blackfriars Theatre—on the west side of St. Andrew's Hill, formerly termed Puddle Hill or Puddle Dock Hill, in the near neighbourhood of what is now known as Ireland Yard. The former owner, Henry Walker, a musician, had bought the property for 100*l.* in 1604. Shakespeare in 1613 agreed to pay him 140*l.* The deeds of conveyance bear the date of 10 March in that year. The indenture prepared for the purchaser is in the Halliwell-Phillipps collection, which was sold to Mr. Marsden J. Perry of Providence, Rhode Island, U.S.A., in January 1897. That held by the vendor is in the Guildhall Library. Next day, on 11 March, Shakespeare executed another deed (now in the British Museum) which stipulated that 60*l.* of the purchase-money was to remain on mortgage until the following Michaelmas, but the money was unpaid at Shakespeare's death. In all three documents—the two indentures and the mortgage deed—Shakespeare is described as 'of Stratford-on-Avon, in the Countie of Warwick, Gentleman.' There is no reason to suppose that he acquired the house for his own residence. He at once leased the property to John Robinson, already a resident in the neighbourhood.

Purchase of a house in Blackfriars.

In the spring of 1614 a preacher at Stratford, doubtless of puritan proclivities, was entertained at New Place after delivering a sermon. Shakespeare's son-in-law Hall was probably responsible for the civility. In July John Combe, a rich inhabitant of Stratford, died and left 5*l.* to Shakespeare. The legend that Shakespeare alienated him by composing some doggerel on his practice of lending money at ten per cent. seems apocryphal, although it is accepted by Rowe. Combe's death involved Shakespeare more conspicuously than before in civic affairs. Combe's heir Wil-

liam no sooner succeeded to his father's lands than he, with a neighbouring owner, Arthur Mannering, steward of Lord-chancellor Ellesmere (who was ex-officio lord of the manor) attempted to enclose the common fields, which belonged to the corporation of Stratford, about his estate at Welcombe. The corporation resolved to offer the scheme a stout resistance. Shakespeare had a twofold interest in the matter by virtue of his owning 106 acres at Welcombe and Old Stratford, and as joint owner—now with Thomas Greene, the town clerk—of the tithes of Old Stratford, Welcombe, and Bishopton. His interest in his freeholds could not have been prejudicially affected, but his interest in the tithes might be depreciated by the proposed enclosure. Shakespeare consequently joined with his fellow-owner Greene in obtaining from Combe's agent Replingham in October 1614 a deed indemnifying both against any injury they might suffer from the enclosure. But having secured himself against loss, Shakespeare threw his influence into Combe's scale. In November 1614 he was on a last visit to London, and Greene, whose official position as town clerk compelled him to support the corporation, visited him there to discuss the position of affairs. On 23 Dec. 1614 the corporation in formal meeting drew up a letter to Shakespeare imploring him to aid them. Greene himself sent to the dramatist 'a note of inconveniences [to the corporation that] would happen by the enclosure.' But although an ambiguous entry of a later date (September 1615) in the few extant pages of Greene's ungrammatical diary has been unjustifiably tortured into an expression of disgust on Shakespeare's part at Combe's conduct, it may be inferred that, in the spirit of his agreement with Combe's agent, he continued to lend Combe his countenance. Happily Combe's efforts failed, and the common lands remained unenclosed (*Shakespeare and the Enclosure of Common Fields at Welcombe*, a facsimile of Greene's diary, now at Stratford, with a transcript by Mr. E. J. L. Scott, edited by Dr. C. M. Ingleby, 1885).

Attempt to enclose the Stratford common fields.

At the beginning of 1616 Shakespeare's health was failing. He directed Francis Collins, a solicitor of Warwick, to draft his will, but, though it was prepared for signature on 25 Jan., it was for the time laid aside. On 10 Feb. 1616 Shakespeare's younger daughter, Judith, married, at the parish church, Thomas Quiney, son of an old friend of the poet, four years her junior. The ceremony took place before a license was procured, and the irregularity led to the summons of the bride and bridegroom before the ecclesiastical court at Worcester and the imposition of a fine. According to the testimony of John Ward, the vicar, Shakespeare entertained at New Place his two friends, Michael Drayton and Ben Jonson, in the spring of 1616, and 'had a merry meeting,' but 'itt seems drank too hard, for Shakespeare died of a feavour there contracted.' A popular local legend, which was not recorded till 1762 (*Brit. Mag.* June 1762), credited Shakespeare with engaging at an earlier date in a prolonged and violent drinking bout at Bidford, a neighbouring village (cf. Malone, *Shakespeare*, 1821, ii. 500–2; Ireland, *Confessions*, 1805, p. 34; Green, *Legend of the Crab Tree*, 1857), but his achievements as a hard drinker may be dismissed as unproven. The cause of his death is undetermined, but probably a recurrence of illness led him in March to sign the will that had been drafted in the previous January. On Tuesday, 23 April, he died at the age of fifty-two. (The date is in the old style, and is equivalent to 3 May in the new; Cervantes, whose death is often described as simultaneous, died at Madrid ten days earlier—on 13 April in the old style, i.e. 23 April 1616 in the new.)

Death.

On Thursday, 25 April (O.S.), the poet was buried inside Stratford church, near the northern wall of the chancel, in which, as one of the lay-rectors, he had a right of interment. Hard by was the charnel-house, where bones dug up from the churchyard were deposited. Over the poet's grave were inscribed the lines:

> Good friend, for Jesus' sake forbeare
> To dig the dust enclosed heare:
> Bleste be the man that spares these stones,
> And curst be he that moves my bones.

Burial.

According to one William Hall, who described a visit to Stratford in 1694 (London, 1884, 4to), these verses were penned by Shakespeare to suit 'the capacity of clerks and sextons, for the most part a very ignorant set of people.' Had this curse not threatened them, Hall proceeds, they would not have hesitated in course of time to remove Shakespeare's dust to 'the bone-house;' the grave was made seventeen feet deep, and was never opened, even to receive his wife, although she expressed a desire to be buried with her husband.

Shakespeare's will, the first draft of which was drawn up before 25 Jan. 1616, received many interlineations and erasures before it was signed in the ensuing March. Francis Collins, the solicitor of Warwick, and Thomas Russell, 'esquier,' of Stratford, were the overseers; it was

The will.

proved by John Hall, the poet's son-in-law and joint-executor with Mrs. Hall, in London on 22 June following. The religious exordium is in conventional phraseology, and gives no clue to Shakespeare's personal religious opinions. What those opinions were, we have neither the means nor the warrant for discussing. But while it is possible to quote from the plays many contemptuous references to the puritans and their doctrines, we may dismiss as idle gossip Davies's irresponsible report that 'he dyed a papist.' The name of Shakespeare's wife was omitted from the original draft of the will, but by an interlineation in the final draft she received his second best bed with its furniture. No other bequest was made her. Her right to a widow's dower—i.e. to a third share for life in freehold estate—was not subject to testamentary disposition, but Shakespeare seems to have barred her dower, at any rate in the case of his Blackfriars purchase. The precision with which the will accounts for and disposes of every known item of his property refutes, too, the conjecture that he had provided for his wife under a previous settlement or jointure. But however plausible the theory that his relations with her, especially in early life, were wanting in sympathy, it is improbable that the slender mention of her in the will was a deliberate mark of his indifference or dislike. Local tradition subsequently credited her with a wish to be buried in his grave; and her epitaph proves that she inspired her daughters with genuine affection. Probably her ignorance of affairs and the infirmities of age (she was past sixty) combined to unfit her in the poet's eyes for the control of property, and he committed her to the care of his elder daughter, who inherited, according to such information as is accessible, some of his own shrewdness, and had a capable adviser in her husband. This elder daughter, Susannah Hall, was, according to the will, to become mistress of New Place, and practically of all the poet's estate. She received (with remainder to her issue in strict entail) New Place, all the land, barns, and gardens at and near Stratford (except the tenement in Chapel Lane), and the house in Blackfriars, London, while she and her husband were appointed executors and residuary legatees, with full rights over nearly all the poet's household furniture and personal belongings. To the granddaughter, or 'niece,' Elizabeth Hall, was bequeathed the poet's plate, with the exception of his broad silver and gilt bowl, which was reserved for his younger daughter, Judith. To his younger daughter he also left, with the tenement in Chapel Lane (in remainder to the elder daughter), 150*l.* in money, of which 100*l.*, her marriage portion, was to be paid within a year, and another 150*l.* to be paid to her if alive three years after the date of the will. (150*l.* is described as a substantial jointure in 'Merry Wives,' act iii. sc. iii. l. 49). To the poet's sister, Joan Hart, whose husband, William Hart, predeceased the testator by only six days, he left, besides a contingent reversionary interest in Judith's pecuniary legacy, his wearing apparel, 20*l.* in money, a life interest in the Henley Street property, with 5*l.* for each of her three sons, William, Thomas, and Michael. To the poor of Stratford he gave 10*l.*, and to Mr. Thomas Combe (apparently a brother of William, of the enclosure controversy) his sword. To each of his Stratford friends, Hamlett Sadler, William Reynoldes, Anthony Nash, and John Nash, and to each of his 'fellows' (i.e. theatrical colleagues), John Heming, Richard Burbage, and Henry Condell, he left xxvj*s.* viij*d.*, with which to buy memorial rings. His godson, William Walker, received 'xx' shillings in gold.

Bequest to his wife.

Before 1623 an elaborate monument, by a London sculptor, Gerard Johnson, was erected to Shakespeare's memory in the chancel of the parish church (cf. DUGDALE, *Diary*, 1827, p. 99; see under JANSSEN, BERNARD). It includes a half-length bust, and a pen is in the right hand. The inscription, which was apparently written by a London friend, runs:

The tomb.

Judicio Pylium, genio Socratem, arte Maronem,
Terra tegit, populus mæret, Olympus habet.

Stay passenger, why goest thou by so fast?
Read if thou canst, whom envious death hath plast
Within this monument; Shakspeare with whome
Quick nature dide; whose name doth deck ys tombe
Far more than cost; sith all yt he hath writt
Leaves living art but page to serve his witt.

Obiit ano. doi 1616 Ætatis 53 Die 23 Ap.

At the opening of Shakespeare's career Chettle wrote of his 'civil demeanour' and of the reports of 'his uprightness of dealing which argues his honesty.' After the close of his career Jonson wrote of him: 'I loved the man and do honour his memory, on this side idolatry as much as any. He was, indeed, honest and of an open and free nature' ('Timber,' in *Works*, 1641). No other contemporary left on record any impression of Shakespeare's personal character. But the references in his will to his fellow-actors,

Personal character.

and the spirit in which (as they announce in the first folio) they approached the task of collecting his works after his death, corroborate the description of him as a sympathetic friend. The later traditions brought together by Aubrey depict him as 'very good company, and of a very ready and pleasant smooth wit,' and there is much in other early references to suggest a genial, if not a convivial, temperament, with a turn for good-humoured satire. Pope had just warrant for his surmise that Shakespeare

> For gain not glory winged his roving flight,
> And grew immortal in his own despite.

With his literary power and sociability there clearly went the shrewd capacity of a man of business. His literary attainments and successes were chiefly valued as serving the prosaic end of providing permanently for himself and his children. His highest ambition was to restore among his fellow-townsmen the family repute which his father's misfortunes had imperilled. Ideals so homely are reckoned rare among poets, but Chaucer and Sir Walter Scott, among writers of exalted genius, vie with Shakespeare in the sobriety of their personal aims and the sanity of their mental attitude towards life's ordinary incidents.

Shakespeare's widow died on 6 Aug. 1623, at the age of sixty-seven, and was buried near her husband inside the chancel two days later. Some affectionately phrased Latin elegiacs —doubtless from Dr. Hall's pen— were inscribed on a brass plate fastened to the stone above her grave. The younger daughter, Judith, resided with her husband, Thomas Quiney, at The Cage, a house which he leased in Bridge Street from 1616 till 1652. There he carried on the trade of a vintner, and took part in municipal affairs, acting as a councillor from 1617 and as chamberlain in 1621–2 and 1622–3, but after 1630 his affairs grew embarrassed, and he left Stratford late in 1652 for London, where he seems to have died a few months later. Of his three sons by Judith, the eldest, Shakespeare (bapt. 23 Nov. 1616), was buried in Stratford churchyard on 8 May 1617; Richard (bapt. 9 Feb. 1617–8) was buried on 28 Jan. 1638–9; and Thomas (bapt. 23 Jan. 1619–20) was buried on 26 Feb. 1638–9. Judith survived her husband, sons, and sister, dying at Stratford on 9 Feb. 1661–1662, in her seventy-seventh year.

The survivors.

The elder daughter, Susannah Hall, resided at New Place till her death. Her sister Judith alienated to her the Chapel Place tenement before 1633, but that, with the interest in the Stratford tithes, she soon disposed of. Her husband John Hall died on 25 Nov. 1635. In 1642 James Cooke, a surgeon in attendance on some royalist troops stationed at Stratford, visited Mrs. Hall and examined manuscripts in her possession, but they were apparently of her husband's, not of her father's, composition (cf. Hall, *Select Observations*, ed. Cooke, 1657). From 11 to 13 July 1643 Queen Henrietta Maria, while journeying from Newark, was billeted on Mrs. Hall at New Place for three days. She was buried beside her husband in Stratford churchyard on 11 July 1649, and a rhyming inscription, describing her as 'witty above her sex,' was engraved on her tombstone.

Mrs. Hall's only child, Elizabeth, was the last surviving descendant of the poet. In April 1626 she married her first husband, Thomas Nash of Stratford (*b.* 1593), who studied at Lincoln's Inn, was a man of property, and, dying childless at New Place on 4 April 1647, was buried in Stratford church next day. Mrs. Nash married at Billesley, a village four miles from Stratford, on 5 June 1649, a widower, John Bernard or Barnard of Abington, Northamptonshire, who was knighted by Charles II in 1661. About the same date she seems to have abandoned New Place for her husband's residence at Abington. Dying without issue, she was buried there on 17 Feb. 1669–70. Her husband survived her four years, and was buried beside her (Baker, *Northamptonshire*, i. 10; *New Shaksp. Soc. Trans.* 1880–5, pt. ii. pp. 13†–15†). Lady Barnard inherited under the poet's will (on her mother's death in 1649) the land near Stratford, New Place, the house at Blackfriars, and (on the death of the poet's sister Joan in 1646) the houses in Henley Street, while her father left her in 1635 a house at Acton with a meadow. She sold the Blackfriars house, and apparently the Stratford land, before 1667. By her will, dated January 1669–70, and proved in the following March, she left small bequests to the daughters of Thomas Hathaway, of the family of her grandmother, the poet's wife. The houses in Henley Street passed to her cousin, Thomas Hart, the grandson of the poet's sister Joan, and they remained in the possession of Thomas's direct descendants till 1806 (the male line expired on the death of John Hart in 1800). By her will Lady Barnard ordered New Place to be sold, and it was purchased on 18 May 1675 by Sir Edward Walker, through whose daughter Barbara, wife of Sir John Clopton, it reverted to the Clopton family. Sir John rebuilt it in 1702. On the death of his son Hugh in 1752 it was bought by the Rev. Francis Gastrell (*d.* 1768), who demolished

The last descendant.

the new building in 1759 (HALLIWELL-PHILLIPPS, *Hist. of New Place*, 1864, fol.)

Of Shakespeare's three brothers, only one, Gilbert, seems to have survived him. Edmund, the youngest brother, 'a player,' was buried at St. Saviour's Church, Southwark, 'with a forenoone knell of the great bell,' on 31 Dec. 1607; he was in his twenty-eighth year. Richard, John Shakespeare's third son, died at Stratford, in February 1613, aged 39. 'Gilbert Shakespeare adolescens,' who was buried at Stratford on 3 Feb. 1611-12, was doubtless son of the poet's next brother, Gilbert; the latter, having nearly completed his forty-sixth year, could scarcely be described as 'adolescens;' his death is not recorded, but according to Oldys he survived to a patriarchal age.

Shakespeare's brothers.

Much controversy has arisen over the spelling of the poet's surname. It has been proved capable of four thousand variations (WISE, *Autograph of William Shakespeare . . . together with 4,000 ways of spelling the name*, Philadelphia, 1869). The name of the poet's father is entered sixty-six times in the council books of Stratford, and is spelt in sixteen ways. The commonest form is 'Shaxpeare.' Five autographs of the poet of undisputed authenticity are extant: his signature to the indenture relating to the purchase of the property in Blackfriars, dated 10 March 1612–13 (since 1841 in the Guildhall Library); his signature to the mortgage deed relating to the same purchase, dated 11 March 1612–13 (since 1858 in the British Museum); and the three signatures on the three sheets of his will, dated 25 March 1615–16 (now at Somerset House). In all the signatures some of the letters are represented by recognised signs of abbreviation. The signature to the first document is 'William Shakspere,' though in all other portions of the deeds the name is spelt 'Shakespeare.' The signature to the second document has been interpreted both as Shakspere and Shakspeare. The ink of the first signature in the will has now faded almost beyond decipherment, but that it was 'Shakspere' may be inferred from the facsimile made by Steevens in 1776. The second and third signatures to the will, which are difficult to decipher, have been read both as Shakspere and Shakspeare; but a close examination suggests that, whatever the second signature may be, the third is 'Shakespeare.' Shakspere is the spelling of the alleged autograph in the British Museum copy of Florio's 'Montaigne,' but the genuineness of that signature is disputable (see art. FLORIO, JOHN; and MADDEN'S *Observations on an Autograph of Shakspere*, 1838). Shakespeare was the form adopted in the full signature appended to the dedicatory epistles of the 'Venus and Adonis' of 1593 and the 'Lucrece' of 1594, volumes which were produced under the poet's supervision. It is the spelling adopted on the title-pages of the majority of contemporary editions of his works, whether or not produced under his supervision. It is adopted in almost all the published references to the poet during the seventeenth century. It appears in the grant of arms in 1596, in the licence to the players of 1603, and in the text of all the legal documents relating to the poet's property. The poet, like most of his contemporaries, acknowledged no finality on the subject. According to the best authority, he spelt his surname in two ways when signing his will. There is consequently no good ground for abandoning the form which is sanctioned by legal and literary custom (cf. HALLIWELL-PHILLIPS, *New Lamps or Old*, 1880; MALONE, *Inquiry*, 1796).

Spelling of the poet's surname.

Autograph signatures.

PORTRAITS AND MEMORIALS.

Aubrey reported that Shakespeare was 'a handsome, well-shap't man.' Only two extant portraits can be regarded as fully authenticated: the bust in Stratford church and the frontispiece to the folio of 1623. There is considerable discrepancy between the two; their main point of resemblance is the baldness on the top of the head. The bust, attributed to Gerard Johnson, is a rudely carved specimen of mortuary sculpture; the round face and eyes present a heavy, unintellectual expression, and it has no apparent claim to be regarded as an accurate likeness. It was originally coloured, but in 1793 Malone caused it to be whitewashed. In 1861 the whitewash was removed, and the colours, as far as traceable, restored. The eyes are hazel. There have been numberless reproductions, both engraved and photographic. It was first engraved—very imperfectly—for Rowe's edition in 1709; then by Vertue for Pope's edition of 1725; and by Gravelot for Hanmer's edition in 1744. A good engraving by William Ward appeared in 1816. A phototype and a chromo-phototype, issued by the New Shakspere Society, are the best reproductions for the purposes of study. The painting known as the 'Stratford' portrait, and presented in 1867 by W. O. Hunt, town clerk of Stratford, to the Birthplace Museum, was probably painted from the bust in the

The Stratford bust.

The Stratford portrait.

seventeenth century; the picture belonged at one time to the Clopton family.

The engraved portrait—nearly a half-length—which was prefixed to the folio of 1623, was by Martin Droeshout [q. v.] On the opposite page lines by Ben Jonson congratulate 'the graver' on having satisfactorily 'hit' the poet's 'face.' Jonson's testimony must be accepted, but the expression of countenance is very crudely rendered. The face is long and the forehead high; the top of the head is bald, but the hair falls in abundance over the ears. There is a scanty moustache and a thin tuft under the lower lip. A stiff and wide collar, projecting horizontally, conceals the neck. The coat is closely buttoned and elaborately bordered, especially at the shoulders. In the unique proof copy which belonged to Halliwell-Phillipps (now with his collection in America), the tone is clearer than in the ordinary copies, and the shadows are less darkened by cross-hatching and coarse dotting. A copy of the Droeshout engraving, by William Marshall, was prefixed to Shakespeare's 'Poems' in 1640, and Faithorne made another copy for separate issue in 1655. A portrait painted on a panel, with 'Will Shakespeare 1609' in the upper left-hand corner (since 1892 in the Shakespeare Memorial Gallery at Stratford), bears close resemblance to the engraving, and was doubtless executed in the seventeenth century, but the contention that it was the original painting whence the engraving was made has not been established; it was more probably painted from the engraving. The same remark applies to a somewhat similar picture, the 'Ely House' portrait (now the property of the Birthplace Trustees at Stratford), which formerly belonged to Thomas Turton [q. v.], bishop of Ely; it is inscribed 'Æ. 39 x. 1603' (*Harper's Mag.*, May 1897).

Droeshout's engraving.

Of the numerous extant paintings which have been described as portraits of Shakespeare, only the three at Stratford already mentioned resemble either the bust or the folio engraving. Of those presenting other features of interest, the most famous is the Chandos portrait. It is now in the National Portrait Gallery, and may possibly have been painted by Janssens or Van Somer. Its pedigree suggests that it was designed to represent the poet, but some conspicuous divergences from the two authenticated likenesses show that it was painted from fanciful descriptions of him after his death. The face is bearded, and rings adorn the ears. Oldys reported that it was from the brush of Burbage and had belonged to Joseph Taylor, an actor contemporary with Shakespeare. Later owners are said to have been D'Avenant, Betterton, and Mrs. Barry the actress. In 1693 Sir Godfrey Kneller made a copy as a gift for Dryden. At length it reached the hands of James Brydges, third duke of Chandos, through his father-in-law, John Nichols, and it subsequently passed, through Chandos's daughter, to her husband, the Duke of Buckingham, at the sale of whose heir's effects at Stowe in 1848 it was purchased by the Earl of Ellesmere. The latter presented it to the nation. Edward Capell presented an anonymous copy to Trinity College, Cambridge, and other copies are assigned to Sir Joshua Reynolds and Ozias Humphrey (1783). It was engraved for Pope's edition (1725), and often later, one of the best engravings being by Vandergucht. The Baroness Burdett-Coutts purchased in 1874 a portrait of similar type, which had at one time belonged to John, lord Lumley (1534?–1609) [q. v.]; it was chromolithographed by Vincent Brooks. At Hampton Court is a wholly unauthentic portrait of the same type, which was at one time at Penshurst; it bears the legend 'Ætatis suæ 34' (Law, *Cat. of Hampton Court*, p. 234).

The Chandos portrait.

The so-called 'Jansen' or Janssens portrait, which belongs to the Duke of Somerset, was first doubtfully identified about 1770, when in the possession of Charles Jennens [q. v.] Janssens did not come to England before Shakespeare's death. A fine mezzotint by R. Earlom was issued in 1811.

The 'Felton' portrait (now belonging to the Baroness Burdett-Coutts) was purchased by S. Felton of Drayton, Shropshire, in 1794 of J. Wilson, the owner of the Shakespeare Museum in Pall Mall; it bears a late inscription, 'Gul. Shakespear 1597, R. B.' [i.e. Richard Burbage]. It was engraved by Josiah Boydell for George Steevens in 1797, and by J. Neagle for Isaac Reed's edition in 1803.

Three portraits are assigned to Zucchero, who left England in 1580, and cannot have had any relations with Shakespeare. One is in the Art Museum, Boston, U.S.A.; another, formerly the property of Richard Cosway, R.A., and afterwards of Mr. J. A. Langford of Birmingham, was engraved in mezzotint by H. Green; a third belongs to the Baroness Burdett-Coutts.

The 'Soest' or 'Zoust' portrait—in the possession of Sir John Lister-Kaye of the Grange, Wakefield—was in the collection of T. Wright, painter, of Covent Garden in 1725, when I. Simon engraved it. Soest was born twenty-one years after Shake-

speare's death, and the portrait is only on fanciful grounds identified with the poet. A chalk drawing by Joseph Michael Wright [q. v.], obviously inspired by the Soest portrait, is the property of Sir Arthur Hodgson of Clopton House, and is on loan at the Memorial Gallery, Stratford.

A portrait inscribed 'ætatis suæ 47, 1611,' belonging to Clement Kingston of Ashbourne, Derbyshire, was engraved in mezzotint by G. F. Storm in 1846.

A miniature by Hilliard, at one time in the possession of William Somerville [q. v.] the poet, and now the property of Sir Stafford Northcote, bart., was engraved by Agar for vol. ii. of the 'Variorum Shakespeare' of 1821, and in Wivell's 'Inquiry,' 1827. Another miniature (called the 'Auriol' portrait), of doubtful authenticity, formerly belonged to Mr. Lumsden Propert, and a third is at Warwick Castle.

A bust, said to be of Shakespeare, was discovered in 1845 bricked up in a wall in Spode & Copeland's china warehouse in Lincoln's Inn Fields. The warehouse had been erected on the site of the Duke's Theatre, which was built by D'Avenant in 1660. The bust, which was believed to have adorned the proscenium of the Duke's Theatre, was acquired by William Clift [q. v.], from whom it passed to his son-in-law, Richard (afterwards Sir Richard) Owen. The latter sold it to the Duke of Devonshire, who presented it in 1851 to the Garrick Club, after having two copies made.

The Garrick Club bust.

The Kesselstadt death-mask was discovered by Dr. Ludwig Becker in a rag-shop at Mayence in 1849. The features resemble those of an alleged portrait of Shakespeare (dated 1637) which Dr. Becker purchased in 1847. This picture had long been in the possession of the family of Count Francis von Kesselstadt of Mayence, who died in 1843. Dr. Becker brought the mask and the picture to England in 1849, and Richard Owen supported the theory that the mask was taken from Shakespeare's face after death, and was the foundation of the bust in Stratford church. The mask is now the property of Dr. Ernest Becker (the discoverer's brother), and is at the ducal palace, Darmstadt. The features are singularly attractive; but the chain of evidence which would identify them with Shakespeare is incomplete.

Alleged death-mask.

In 1885 Mr. Walter Rogers Furness issued, at Philadelphia, a volume of composite portraits, combining the Droeshout engraving and the Stratford bust with the Chandos, Jansen, Felton, and Stratford portraits (James Boaden, *Inquiry into various Pictures and Prints of Shakespeare*, 1824; Abraham Wivell, *Inquiry into Shakespeare's Portraits*, 1827, with engravings by B. and W. Holl; George Scharf, *Principal Portraits of Shakespeare*, 1864; J. Hain Friswell, *Life-portraits of Shakespeare*, 1864; William Page, *Study of Shakespeare's Portraits*, 1876; Ingleby, *Man and Book*, 1877, pp. 84 seq.; J. Parker Norris, *Portraits of Shakespeare*, Philadelphia, 1885, with numerous plates; *Illustrated Cat. of Portraits in Shakespeare's Memorial at Stratford*, 1896).

A monument, the expenses of which were defrayed by public subscription, was set up in the Poets' Corner in Westminster Abbey in 1741. Pope and the Earl of Burlington were among the promoters. The design was by William Kent [q. v.], and the statue of Shakespeare was executed by Peter Scheemakers [q. v.] (cf. *Gent. Mag.* 1741, p. 105). Another statue was executed by Roubiliac for Garrick, who bequeathed it to the British Museum in 1779. A third statue (by Mr. J. A. Q. Ward) was placed in 1882 in the Central Park, New York, and a fourth, by M. Paul Fournier, was erected in Paris in 1888 at the expense of an English resident, Mr. W. Knighton; it stands at the point where the Avenue de Messina meets the Boulevard Haussmann.

Later memorials.

At Stratford, the Birthplace, which was acquired by the public in 1846 and converted into a museum, is, with Anne Hathaway's cottage (acquired by the Birthplace trustees in 1892), a place of pilgrimage for tourists from all parts of the globe. The 27,038 persons who visited it in 1896 represented over forty nationalities. The site of the demolished New Place, with the gardens, was also purchased by public subscription in 1861. Of a new memorial building on the river-bank at Stratford, consisting of a theatre, picture-gallery, and library, the foundation-stone was laid on 23 April 1877. The theatre was opened exactly two years later, when 'Much Ado about Nothing' was performed, with Helen Faucit (Lady Martin) as Beatrice and Barry Sullivan as Benedick. Performances of Shakespeare's plays have since been given annually during April. The library and picture-gallery were opened in 1881 (*A History of the Shakespeare Memorial, Stratford-on-Avon*, 1882; *Illustrated Cat. of Pictures in the Shakespeare Memorial*, 1896). A memorial Shakespeare library was opened at Birmingham on 23 April 1868 to commemorate the tercentenary of 1864, and, although destroyed by fire in 1879, was

restored in 1882, and now possesses 9,640 volumes relating to Shakespeare.

Bibliography.

At the time of Shakespeare's death in 1616 there had been printed in quarto seven editions of his 'Venus and Adonis' (1593, 1594, 1596, 1599, 1600, and two in 1602); five editions of his 'Lucrece' (1594, 1598, 1600, 1607, 1616); one edition of the 'Sonnets' (1609, facsimiled in 1862), and three editions of the piratical 'Passionate Pilgrim,' containing a few poems by him (1599, 1600 unknown, 1612). A sixth edition of 'Lucrece' (1624) and six later editions of 'Venus' (1617, 1620, 1627, two in 1630, and 1636) preceded the issue of the first collected edition of the 'Poems' in 1640 (London, by T. Cotes for I. Benson). Marshall's copy of the Droeshout engraving of 1623 formed the frontispiece. There are prefatory poems by Leonard Digges and John Warren, as well as an address 'to the reader' signed by the initials of the publisher. To the volume is appended 'an addition of some excellent poems to those precedent by other Gentlemen,' which are mainly from Thomas Heywood's 'General History of Women.' An exact reprint was published in 1885.

Quartos of the poems.

Of Shakespeare's plays there were in print in 1616 only sixteen (all in quarto), or eighteen if we include the 'Contention,' the first draft of '2 Henry VI' (1594 and 1600), and 'The True Tragedy,' the first draft of '3 Henry VI' (1595 and 1600). Of the sixteen fully authenticated quartos, two plays reached five editions before 1616, viz. 'Richard III' (1597, 1598, 1602, 1605, 1612) and '1 Henry IV' (1598, 1599, 1604, 1608, 1615). Three reached four editions, viz. 'Richard II' (1597, 1598, 1608 supplying the deposition scene for the first time, 1615), 'Hamlet' (1603 imperfect, 1604, 1605, 1611), and 'Romeo and Juliet' (1597 imperfect, 1599, two in 1609). Two reached three editions, viz. 'Henry V' (1600 imperfect, 1602, and 1608) and 'Pericles' (two in 1609, 1611). Five reached two editions, viz. 'Midsummer Night's Dream' (both in 1600), 'Merchant of Venice' (both in 1600), 'Lear' (both in 1608), and 'Troilus and Cressida' (both in 1609). Five achieved only one edition, viz. 'Love's Labour's Lost' (1598), '2 Henry IV' (1600), 'Much Ado' (1600), 'Titus' (1600), 'Merry Wives' (1602 imperfect).

Quartos of the plays.

A second edition of 'Merry Wives' (again imperfect) and a fourth of 'Pericles' are both dated 1619. 'Othello' was first printed in 1622 (4to), and in the same year sixth editions of both 'Richard III' and '1 Henry IV' appeared. Lithographed facsimiles of most of these volumes, with some of the quarto editions of the poems (forty-eight volumes in all), were prepared by Mr. E. W. Ashbee, and issued to subscribers by Halliwell-Phillipps between 1862 and 1871. A cheaper set of quarto facsimiles, undertaken by Mr. W. Griggs, and issued under the supervision of Dr. F. J. Furnivall, appeared in forty-three volumes between 1880 and 1889. The largest collection of the original quartos—each of which only survives in four, five, or six copies—are in the libraries of the Duke of Devonshire, the British Museum, the Bodleian, and Trinity College, Cambridge. Perfect copies range in price, according to their rarity, from 200*l.* to 300*l.* In 1864, at the sale of George Daniel's library, quarto copies of 'Love's Labour's Lost' and of 'Merry Wives' (first edition) each fetched 346*l.* 10*s.* On 14 May 1897 a copy of the quarto of 'The Merchant of Venice' (printed by James Roberts in 1600) was sold at Sotheby's for 315*l.* All the quartos were issued in Shakespeare's day at sixpence each.

On 8 Nov. 1623 Edward Blount and Isaac (son of William) Jaggard obtained license to publish sixteen hitherto unprinted plays, viz. 'The Tempest,' 'The Two Gentlemen,' 'Measure for Measure,' 'Comedy of Errors,' 'As you like it,' 'All's Well,' 'Twelfth Night,' 'Winter's Tale,' '3 Henry VI,' 'Henry VIII,' 'Coriolanus,' 'Timon,' 'Julius Cæsar,' 'Macbeth,' 'Antony and Cleopatra,' and 'Cymbeline.' In the same year Blount and Jaggard produced a folio volume of nearly a thousand pages containing all the plays mentioned, with the exception of 'Pericles,' and with the addition of 'King John,' '1 and 2 Henry VI,' and the 'Taming of the Shrew' (none of the latter pieces received a license). Thirty-six pieces in all were thus brought together. The volume was sold at a pound a copy, and was described in the colophon as printed at the charges of W. Jaggard, I. Smithweeke, and W. Aspley, as well as of Blount. The latter doubtless saw it through the press (cf. *Bibliographica*, i. 489 seq.) The plays are arranged under three headings—'Comedies,' 'Histories,' and 'Tragedies'—and each division is separately paged. 'Troilus and Cressida,' which is absent from the list of contents, was inserted hastily after the volume was printed off; it is placed at the end of the 'Histories,' and is unpaged. Doubtless the large work was long in printing. A unique copy in the Lenox Library, New York, bears the date 1622, and includes two cancelled leaves of sheet R ('As you like it').

The First Folio.

On the title-page is engraved the Droeshout portrait. Commendatory verses are supplied by Ben Jonson, Hugh Holland, Leonard Digges [q. v.], and I. M., perhaps Jasper Maine [q. v.] The dedication to the brothers William Herbert, earl of Pembroke, and Philip Herbert, earl of Montgomery, as well as an address 'to the great variety of readers,' is signed by Shakespeare's friends and fellow-actors, Heming and Condell, who accept a large responsibility for the enterprise. They disclaim 'ambition either of selfe-profit or fame,' being solely moved by anxiety to 'keepe the memory of so worthy a friend and fellow alive as was our Shakespeare.' 'It had bene a thing we confesse worthie to haue bene wished,' they inform the reader, 'that the author himselfe had liued to haue set forth and ouerseen his owne writings.... As where (before) we were abus'd with diuerse stolne and surreptitious copies, maimed and deformed by the frauds and stealthes of incurious impostors that expos'd them; even those are now offer'd to your view cur'd and perfect in their limbes, and all the rest absolute in their numbers as he conceived them.' The title-page states, too, that all the plays were printed 'according to the true originall copies.' But the first-folio text is not in every case superior to that of the sixteen pre-existent quartos, from which it differs invariably, although in varying degrees. The quarto texts of 'Love's Labour's Lost,' 'Midsummer Night's Dream,' and 'Richard II' are, for example, of higher value than the folio texts. On the other hand, the folio first supplies the glaring defects of the quarto versions of 'The Merry Wives of Windsor' and of 'Henry V.'

About twenty perfect copies and the same number of imperfect copies of the first folio seem now known. One of the finest copies was purchased by the Baroness Burdett-Coutts for 716*l.* 2*s.* at the sale of George Daniel's library in 1864. Excellent copies are also at the British Museum and in the libraries of the Duke of Devonshire and Mr. A. H. Huth.

A reprint unwarrantably purporting to be exact was published in 1807-8 (cf. *Notes and Queries*, 1st ser. vii. 47). The best reprint was issued in three parts by Lionel Booth in 1861, 1863, 1864. The valuable photo-zincographic reproduction undertaken by Sir Henry James, under the direction of Howard Staunton, was issued in sixteen folio parts between February 1864 and October 1865. A reduced photographic facsimile, too small to be legible, appeared in 1876, with a preface by Halliwell-Phillipps.

The second folio edition was printed in 1632 by Thomas Cotes for Robert Allot and William Aspley, each of whose names figures as publisher on different copies. To Allot Blount had transferred, on 16 Nov. 1630, his rights in the sixteen plays which were first licensed for publication in 1623 (Arber, iii. 242-3). The second folio is identical with the first. Charles I's copy is at Windsor, and Charles II's at the British Museum. The 'Perkins folio,' now in the Duke of Devonshire's possession, in which Collier introduced forged emendations, was a copy of that of 1632 [see for the controversy, Collier, John Payne]. The third folio was first published in 1663 by Peter Chetwynde, who reissued it next year with the addition of seven plays, six of which have no claim to admission among Shakespeare's works. 'Unto this Impression,' runs the title-page of 1664, 'is added seven Playes never before printed in folio, viz.: Pericles, Prince of Tyre. The London Prodigall. The History of Thomas Ld. Cromwell. Sir John Oldcastle, Lord Cobham. The Puritan Widow. A Yorkshire Tragedy. The Tragedy of Locrine.' The six spurious pieces were attributed by unprincipled publishers to Shakespeare in his lifetime. The fourth folio, printed in 1685 'for H. Herringman, E. Brewster, R. Chiswell, and R. Bentley,' reprints the folio of 1664 with the spurious appendix.

The Second Folio.

The Third Folio.

The Fourth Folio.

Since 1685 some two hundred independent editions of the collected works have been published in Great Britain and Ireland, and many thousand editions of separate plays. The chief eighteenth-century editors of the collected works were: 1. Nicholas Rowe [q. v.], the earliest critical editor (1709-10, 7 vols.; 2nd edit. 1714). 2. Alexander Pope (1725, 6 vols.; imperfectly 'collated and corrected.' Reprints are dated 1728, with contributions by George Sewell [q. v.], 1731, 1735, 1766; by Foulis of Glasgow, 1768; by Baskerville of Birmingham). 3. Lewis Theobald [q. v.], who made some brilliant emendations (1733, 7 vols; eight reprints to 1777). 4. Sir Thomas Hanmer (1744, 6 vols. with glossary and various readings, Oxford, 4to; 2nd edit. 1770-1). 5. Bishop Warburton, who re-edited Pope's version in 1747 in 8 vols. and was severely criticised among others by Thomas Edwards (1699-1757) [q. v.] 6. Dr. Johnson (1765, 8 vols., with his well-known preface and notes; 2nd edit. 1768). 7. Edward Capell [q. v.] (1768, 10 vols., with 'Notes, various readings, and the School of Shakespeare,' in 3 vols. 1783). 8. 'Edmund Malone [q. v.] (1790, 10 vols.) 9. Meanwhile, George

Eighteenth-century editors.

Steevens, who reprinted twenty of the quartos in 1766, joined with Johnson in producing the first attempt at a variorum edition in 1773 (10 vols. 8vo). Contributions by Dr. Farmer and Malone were incorporated. This long remained the standard edition. A second issue is dated 1778 (10 vols.); a third, revised by Isaac Reed [q. v.], in 1785; and a fourth, somewhat recklessly revised by Steevens himself, in 15 vols. in 1793. A fifth edition, undertaken by Reed in 1803, in 21 vols., is known among booksellers as the 'First Variorum' edition. A sixth edition (1813, 21 vols.) embodied prefatory essays and notes by Edmund Malone, and is known as 'the Second Variorum.' The seventh edition, on which Malone was long engaged, was prepared for the press by James Boswell the younger [q. v.], and appeared in 1821. It is known as 'the Third Variorum,' or 'Boswell's Malone,' and is the best of its kind. A new 'Variorum' edition, on an exhaustive scale, was undertaken by Mr. H. Howard Furness of Philadelphia, and ten volumes have appeared since 1871 ('Romeo and Juliet,' 'Macbeth,' 'Hamlet,' 2 vols., 'King Lear,' 'Othello,' 'Merchant of Venice,' 'As you like it,' 'Tempest,' and 'Midsummer Night's Dream').

The Variorum Editions.

Among nineteenth-century editors of repute are William Harness (1825, 8 vols.); Samuel Weller Singer (1826, 10 vols., printed in the Chiswick Press for William Pickering, illustrated by Stothard and others, and in 1856 with essays by William Watkins Lloyd); Thomas Campbell, 1838; Charles Knight (1791–1873) [q. v.], with interesting if discursive notes ('Pictorial edition,' 1838–43, often reissued under different designations); Bryan Waller Procter, i.e. Barry Cornwall (1839–43, 3 vols.); John Payne Collier (1841–4, 8 vols.); Samuel Phelps (1851–4); J. O. Halliwell (1853–61, 15 vols. folio); Nikolaus Delius (Elberfeld, 1854–61, 7 vols.; 5th edit. 1882, 2 vols.); Alexander Dyce (1857, 9 vols., a useful edition, with full glossary); Richard Grant White (Boston, 1857–65, 12 vols.); Howard Staunton (1858–60, 3 vols.); W. G. Clark, J. Glover, and Dr. Aldis Wright ('Cambridge edition,' 1863–6, 9 vols., exhaustively noting textual variations; new edit. 1887, and in 40 vols. 1893); the Rev. H. N. Hudson (the Harvard edition, Boston, 1881, 20 vols.) The latest complete annotated editions published in this country are 'The Henry Irving Shakespeare,' edited by F. A. Marshall and others—especially useful for notes on stage history (8 vols. 1888–90)—and 'The Temple Shakespeare,' concisely edited by Mr. Israel Gollancz (38 vols. 12mo, 1894–6).

Nineteenth-century editors.

Of one-volume editions the best are the Globe, edited by W. G. Clark and Dr. Aldis Wright (1864, and constantly reprinted); the Leopold (1876, from the text of Delius, with preface by Dr. Furnivall); and the Oxford, edited by Mr. W. J. Craig, 1894.

Shakespeare's Reputation.

The highest estimate was formed of Shakespeare's work by his contemporaries, by critics as well as playgoers. Anticipating the final verdict, the editors of the first folio wrote: 'These plays have had their trial already and stood out all appeals.' Ben Jonson, as a champion of classical canons, noted that Shakespeare 'wanted art,' but he allowed him, in verses prefixed to the earliest folio, the first place among all dramatists, including those of Greece and Rome, and claimed that all Europe owed him homage. In 1630 Milton penned in like strains an epitaph on 'the great heir of fame' (cf. *L'Allegro*); and Milton was followed within ten years by critics of tastes so varied as Thomas Heywood, Sir John Suckling, the 'ever-memorable' John Hales of Eton, and Sir William D'Avenant. Leonard Digges (in the first edition of the 'Poems,' 1640) asserted that every revival of his plays drew crowds to pit, boxes, and galleries alike. At a little later date Shakespeare's plays were the 'closet companions' of Charles I's 'solitudes' (Milton, *Iconoclastes*, 1690, pp. 9–10).

Ben Jonson's tribute.

After the Restoration public taste in English veered towards the French and classical dramatic models (cf. Evelyn, *Diary*, i. 342). Shakespeare's work was subjected to some unfavourable criticism as the product of nature to the exclusion of art, but the eclipse proved more partial and temporary than is commonly admitted. The pedantic censure of Thomas Rymer [q. v.] on the score of Shakespeare's indifference to the classical laws attracted attention, but awoke in England no substantial echo. In Pepys's eyes 'The Tempest' had 'no great wit,' and 'Midsummer Night's Dream' was 'the most insipid and ridiculous play;' yet this exacting critic witnessed thirty-six performances of twelve of Shakespeare's plays between 11 Oct. 1660 and 6 Feb. 1668–9, seeing 'Hamlet' four times, and 'Macbeth,' which he admitted to be 'a most excellent play for variety,' nine times. Dryden, the literary dictator of the day, repeatedly complained of Shakespeare's inequalities—'he is the very Janus of poets' (*Conquest of Granada*, 1672).

1660–1702.

Dryden's view.

But in almost the same breath Dryden declared that Shakespeare was held in as much veneration as Æschylus among the Athenians, and that 'he was the man who of all modern and perhaps ancient poets had the largest and most comprehensive soul.... When he describes anything, you more than see it—you feel it too' (*Essay on Dramatic Poesie*, 1668). Writers of such opposite temperaments as Margaret Cavendish, duchess of Newcastle (1664), and Sir Charles Sedley (1693) vigorously argued for Shakespeare's supremacy, and the many adaptations of his plays that were contrived to meet Restoration sentiment failed to supersede their originals. Dryden and D'Avenant converted 'The Tempest' into an opera (1670); D'Avenant singlehanded adapted 'The Two Noble Kinsmen' (1668) and 'Macbeth' (1674); Dryden dealt similarly with 'Troilus' (1679); Thomas Duffett with 'The Tempest' (1675); Shadwell with 'Timon' (1678); Nahum Tate with 'Richard II' (1681), 'Lear' (1681), and 'Coriolanus' (1682); John Crowne with 'Henry VI' (1681); D'Urfey with 'Cymbeline' (1682); Ravenscroft with 'Titus' (1687); Otway with 'Romeo and Juliet' (1692), and John Sheffield, duke of Buckingham, with 'Julius Cæsar' (1692). But during the same period the chief actor of the day, Thomas Betterton, won his spurs as the interpreter of Shakespeare's chief tragic parts, mainly in unrevised versions. 'Hamlet' was accounted that actor's masterpiece (cf. *Shakspere's Century of Praise*, 1591–1693, New Shakspere Soc., ed. Ingleby and Toulmin Smith, 1879; and *Fresh Allusions*, ed. Furnivall, 1886).

Restoration adaptations.

From the accession of Queen Anne to the present day the tide of Shakespeare's reputation, both on the stage and among critics, has flowed onward almost uninterruptedly. The censorious critic, John Dennis, in his 'Letters' on Shakespeare's 'genius,' gave his work in 1711 whole-hearted commendation, and two of the greatest men of letters of the eighteenth century, Pope and Johnson, although they did not withhold all censure, paid him the homage of becoming his editor. Through the middle and late years of the century many critics, of whom Theobald and Capell were the most acute, concentrated their energies on textual emendation of difficult and corrupt passages, and they founded a school of textual criticism, which has never ceased its activity (cf. W. Sidney Walker, *Critical Examination of the Text of Shakespeare*, 1859). At the end of the eighteenth century Edmund Malone [q.v.] devoted himself with unprecedented zeal to the biography of the poet and the contemporary history of the stage, and he secured later disciples in Francis Douce, Joseph Hunter, J. P. Collier, and J. O. Halliwell-Phillipps. Meanwhile a third school arose to expound exclusively the æsthetic excellence of the plays. Coleridge in his 'Notes and Lectures' (which was written partly under German influences), and Hazlitt in his 'Characters of Shakespeare's Plays' (1817), are the chief representatives of the æsthetic school, and, although Professor Dowden, in his 'Shakespeare, his Mind and Art' (1874), and Mr. Swinburne in his 'Study of Shakespeare' (1880), are worthy successors, Coleridge and Hazlitt remain as æsthetic critics unsurpassed. In the effort to supply a fuller interpretation of Shakespeare's works—textual, historical, and æsthetic—two publishing societies have done much valuable work. 'The Shakespeare Society' was founded in 1841 by J. P. Collier, J. O. Halliwell, and their friends, and published some forty-eight volumes before its dissolution in 1853. The New Shakspere Society, which was founded by Dr. Furnivall in 1874, issued during the ensuing twenty years twenty-seven publications, illustrative mainly of the text and of contemporary life and literature.

From 1702 onwards.

In 1769 Shakespeare's 'jubilee' was celebrated for three days (6–8 Sept.) at Stratford, under the direction of Garrick, Dr. Arne, and Boswell. The festivities were repeated on a small scale in April 1827 and April 1830; while 'the Shakespeare tercentenary festival,' which was held at Stratford from 23 April to 4 May 1864, claimed to be a national movement (R. E. Hunter, *Shakespeare and the Tercentenary Celebration*, 1864).

Stratford festivals.

On the English stage the name of every eminent actor since Betterton has been chiefly identified with Shakespearean parts. Robert Wilks and Charles Macklin were in the middle of the eighteenth century eclipsed by David Garrick [q.v.] The latter's enthusiasm for the poet and histrionic genius did much to strengthen Shakespeare's hold on public taste, but Garrick did not scrupulously adhere to the authorised text. To Garrick, who was ably seconded by Mrs. Cibber and Mrs. Pritchard, soon succeeded John Philip Kemble and his sister, Mrs. Siddons; and during the present century the torch has been kept alive by Edmund Kean, by Macready, by Samuel Phelps, by Helen Faucit (now Lady Martin), by C. A. Calvert, by Miss Ellen Terry, and Sir Henry Irving.

On the English stage.

Music and art in England also owe much to Shakespeare's influence. From Thomas Morley [q. v.], Purcell, Matthew Locke, and Arne to William Linley, Sir Henry Bishop, and Sir Arthur Sullivan, every distinguished musician has sought to improve on his predecessor's setting of one or more of Shakespeare's songs, or has composed concerted music in illustration of some of his dramatic themes (cf. Alfred Roffe, *Shakspere Music*, 1878; *Songs in Shakspere . . . set to Music*, 1884, New Shakspere Soc.) In art, John Boydell [q. v.] organised between 1790 and 1800 a scheme for illustrating Shakespeare's work by the greatest living English artists, and some fine pictures were the result. Few great artists of later date, from Sir Daniel Maclise to Sir John Millais, have lacked the ambition to interpret some scene or character of Shakespearean drama.

In music and art.

In America no less enthusiasm for Shakespeare has been manifested. Editors and critics are hardly less numerous there than in England, and some criticism from American pens, like that of James Russell Lowell, has reached the highest literary level. Nowhere, probably, has more labour been devoted to the study of his works than that devoted by Mr. H. H. Furness of Philadelphia to the preparation of his 'New Variorum' edition. The Barton collection of Shakespeareana in the Boston Public Library is one of the most valuable extant: the elaborate catalogue (1878–80) contains some 2,500 entries. First of Shakespeare's plays to be represented in America, 'Richard III' was performed in New York in March 1750. More recently Edwin Forrest (1806–1872), Junius Brutus Booth, Edwin Booth, Charlotte Cushman, and Miss Ada Rehan have maintained on the American stage the great traditions of Shakespearean acting; while Mr. E. A. Abbey has devoted high artistic gifts to pictorial representation of scenes from the plays.

In America.

The bible, alone of all literary compositions, has been translated more frequently or into a greater number of languages than the works of Shakespeare. The progress of his reputation in Germany, France, Italy, and Russia was somewhat slow at the outset. But in Germany the poet has received for nearly a century and a half a recognition scarcely less pronounced than that accorded him in America and in his own country. Three of Shakespeare's plays, now in the Zurich Library, were brought thither by J. R. Hess from England in 1614. As early as 1626 'Hamlet,' 'King Lear,' and 'Romeo and Juliet' were acted at Dresden, and a version of the 'Taming of the Shrew' was played there and elsewhere at the end of the seventeenth century. But such mention of Shakespeare as is found in German literature between 1640 and 1740 only indicates a knowledge on the part of German readers either of Dryden's criticisms or of the accounts of him printed in English encyclopædias (cf. D. G. Morhoff, *Unterricht von der teutschen Sprache und Poesie*, Kiel, 1682, p. 250). The earliest sign of a direct acquaintance with the plays is a poor translation into German of 'Julius Cæsar' by Baron C. W. von Borck, formerly Prussian minister in London, which was published at Berlin in 1741. A worse rendering of 'Romeo and Juliet' followed in 1758. Meanwhile J. C. Gottsched (1700–66), an influential man of letters, warmly denounced Shakespeare in a review of Von Borch's effort in 'Beiträge zur deutschen Sprache' and elsewhere. Lessing came without delay to Shakespeare's rescue, and set his reputation, in the estimation of the German public, on that exalted pedestal which it has not ceased to occupy. It was in 1759, in a journal entitled 'Litteraturbriefe,' that Lessing first claimed for Shakespeare superiority, not only to the French dramatists Racine and Corneille, who hitherto had dominated European taste, but to all ancient or modern poets. Lessing's doctrine, which he developed in his 'Hamburgische Dramaturgie' (Hamburg, 1767, 2 vols. 8vo), was at once accepted by the poet Johann Gottfried Herder in the 'Blätter von deutschen Art und Kunst,' 1771. Christopher Martin Wieland (1733–1813) in 1762 began a prose translation which Johann Joachim Eschenburg (1743–1820) completed (Zurich, 13 vols., 1775–84). Between 1797 and 1833 appeared at intervals the classical German rendering by August Wilhelm von Schlegel and Ludwig Tieck, leaders of the romantic school of German literature, whose creed embodied, as one of its first articles, an unwavering veneration for Shakespeare. Schlegel translated only seventeen plays, and his workmanship excels that of the rest of the translation. Tieck's part in the undertaking was mainly confined to editing translations by various hands. Many other German translations followed—by J. H. Voss and his sons (Leipzig, 1818–1829), by J. W. O. Benda (Leipzig, 1825–6), by A. Böttger (Leipzig, 1836–7) and others. Most of these have been many times reissued, but Schlegel and Tieck's achievement still holds the field. Schlegel's lectures on 'Shakespeare and the Drama,' which were delivered at Vienna in 1808, and were translated into English in 1815, are worthy of comparison with those of Coleridge, who acknowledged

In Germany.

their influence. Goethe poured forth, in his voluminous writings, a mass of equally illuminating and appreciative criticism (cf. *Wilhelm Meister*); and, although he deemed Shakespeare's works unsuited to the stage, he adapted 'Romeo and Juliet' for the Weimar Theatre, while Schiller prepared 'Macbeth' (Stuttgart, 1801). Heine published in 1838 charming studies of Shakespeare's heroines (English transl. 1895).

During the last half-century textual, æsthetic, and biographical criticism has been pursued in Germany with unflagging industry and energy; and although laboured and supersubtle theorising characterises much German æsthetic criticism, its mass and variety testify to the impressiveness of the appeal that Shakespeare's work has made to the German intellect. The vain effort to stem the current of Shakespearean worship made by the dramatist, J. R. Benedix in 'Die Shakespearomanie' (Stuttgart, 1873, 8vo), stands practically alone. In studies of the text and metre Nikolaus Delius (1813–1888) should, among recent German writers, perhaps be accorded the first place; in studies of the biography and stage history Friedrich Karl Elze (1821–1889); in æsthetic studies Friedrich Alexander Theodor Kreyssig (1818–1879), author of 'Vorlesungen über Shakespeare' (Berlin, 1858 and 1874), and 'Shakespeare-Fragen' (Leipzig, 1871). Ulrici's 'Shakespeare's Dramatic Art' (first published at Halle in 1839) and Gervinus's Commentaries (first published at Leipzig in 1848–9), both of which are familiar in English translations, are suggestive but unconvincing æsthetic interpretations. The German Shakespeare Society, which was founded at Weimar in 1865, has published thirty-three year-books (edited successively by von Bodenstedt, Delius, Elze, and F. A. Leo), which contain many useful contributions to Shakespearean study.

Shakespeare has been no less effectually nationalised on the German stage. The three great actors—Friedrich Ulrich Ludwig Schroeder (1744–1816) of Hamburg, Ludwig Devrient (1784–1832), and his nephew Gustav Emil Devrient (1803–1872)—largely derived their fame from their successful assumptions of Shakespearean characters. Another of Ludwig Devrient's nephews, Eduard (1801–1877), also an actor, prepared, with his son Otto, an acting German edition (Leipzig, 1873, and following years). An acting edition by Wilhelm Oechelhaeuser, appeared previously at Berlin in 1871. As many as twenty-eight of the thirty-seven plays assigned to Shakespeare are now on recognised lists of German acting plays (cf. *Jahrbuch der Deutsche Shakespeare-Gesellschaft* for 1894). In 1895 as many as 706 performances of twenty-five of Shakespeare's plays were given in German theatres (*ib.* for 1896, p. 438). 'Othello,' 'Hamlet,' and 'The Taming of the Shrew' usually prove most popular. Of the many German composers who have worked on Shakespearean themes, Mendelssohn (in 'Midsummer Night's Dream'), Schumann, and Franz Schubert have achieved the greatest success.

On the German stage.

In France Shakespeare won recognition after a longer struggle than in Germany. Cyrano de Bergerac (1619–1655) plagiarised 'Cymbeline,' 'Hamlet,' and 'The Merchant of Venice' in his 'Agrippina.' About 1680 Nicolas Clement, Louis XIV's librarian, allowed Shakespeare imagination, natural thoughts, and ingenious expression, but deplored his obscenity (Jusserand, *A French Ambassador*, p. 56). Half a century elapsed before French public attention was again directed to Shakespeare (cf. Al. Schmidt, *Voltaire's Verdienst von der Einführung Shakespeares in Frankreich*, Königsberg, 1864). The Abbé Prévost, in his periodical 'Le Pour et Contre' (1733, et seq.), acknowledged his power. But it is to Voltaire that his countrymen owe, as he himself boasted, their first effective introduction. Voltaire studied Shakespeare thoroughly on his visit to England between 1726 and 1729, and his influence is visible in his own dramas. In his 'Lettres Philosophiques' (1731), afterwards reissued as 'Lettres sur les Anglais,' 1734 (Nos. xviii. and xix.), and in his 'Lettre sur la Tragédie' (1731), he expressed admiration for Shakespeare's genius, but attacked his want of taste and art. He described him as 'le Corneille de Londres, grand fou d'ailleurs, mais il a des morceaux admirables.' Writing to the Abbé des Fontaines in November 1735, Voltaire admitted many merits in 'Julius Cæsar,' on which he published 'Observations' in 1764. Johnson replied to Voltaire's general criticism in the preface to his edition (1765), and Mrs. Elizabeth Montagu [q. v.] in 1769 in a separate volume, which was translated into French in 1777. Diderot made, in his 'Encylopédie,' the first stand in France against the Voltairean position, and increased opportunities of studying Shakespeare's works increased the poet's vogue. Twelve plays were translated in De La Place's 'Théâtre Anglais' (1745–8). Jean-François Ducis (1733–1816) adapted without much insight six plays for the French stage, beginning in 1769 with 'Hamlet,' which was acted with applause. In 1776 Pierre Le Tourneur began

In France.

Voltaire.

a bad prose translation (completed in 1782) of all Shakespeare's plays and declared him to be 'the god of the theatre.' Voltaire protested against this estimate in a new remonstrance consisting of two letters, of which the first was read before the French Academy on 25 Aug. 1776. Here Shakespeare was described as a barbarian, whose works—'a huge dunghill'—concealed some pearls. Although Voltaire's censure was rejected by the majority of later French critics, it expressed a sentiment born of the genius of the nation, and made an impression that was only gradually effaced. Marmontel, La Harpe, Marie-Joseph Chénier, and Chateaubriand, in his 'Essai sur Shakespeare,' 1801, inclined to Voltaire's view; but Madame de Staël wrote effectively on the other side in her 'De la Littérature' 1804 (i. caps. 13, 14, ii. 5). The revision of Le Tourneur's translation by François Guizot and A. Pichot in 1821 gave Shakespeare a fresh advantage. Paul Duport, in 'Essais Littéraires sur Shakespeare' (Paris, 1828, 2 vols.), was the last French critic of repute to repeat Voltaire's censure unreservedly. Guizot, in his 'Sur la Vie et les Œuvres de Shakespeare' (reprinted separately from the translation of 1821), as well as in his 'Shakespeare et son Temps' (1852); Villemain in a general essay (*Mélanges Historiques*, 1827, iii. 141–87), and Barante in a study of 'Hamlet' (*ib.* 1824, iii. 217–34), acknowledge the mightiness of Shakespeare's genius with comparatively few qualifications. Other translations followed—by Francisque Michel (1839), by Benjamin Laroche (1851), and by Emil Montégut (1867), but the best is that in prose by François Victor Hugo (1859–66), whose father, Victor Hugo, published a rhapsodical eulogy in 1864. Alfred Mézières's 'Shakespeare, ses Œuvres et ses Critiques' (Paris, 1860), is a saner appreciation. Meanwhile 'Hamlet' and 'Macbeth,' 'Othello' and a few other Shakespearean plays, became stock-pieces on the French stage. Alfred de Vigny prepared a version of 'Othello' for the Théâtre-Français in 1829 with eminent success. An adaptation of 'Hamlet' by Alexandre Dumas was first performed in 1847, and a rendering by De Chatelain (1864) was often repeated. George Sand translated 'As you like it' (Paris, 1856) for representation by the Comédie Française' on 12 April 1856. 'Lady Macbeth' has been represented in recent years by Madame Sarah Bernhardt, and 'Hamlet' by M. Mounet Sully of the Théâtre-Français (cf. Lacroix, *Histoire de l'Influence de Shakespeare sur le Théâtre Français*, 1867; *Edinb. Rev.* 1849, pp. 39–77; Elze, *Essays*, pp. 193 sq.; M. Jusserand, 'Shakespeare en France sous l'Ancien Régime,' in *Cosmopolis*, Nov.–Dec. 1896, Jan.–Feb. 1897).

On the French stage.

In Italy Shakespeare was little known before the present century. Such references as eighteenth-century Italian writers made to him were based on remarks by Voltaire (cf. Giovanni Andres, *Dell' Origine, Progressi e Stato attuale d'ogni Letteratura*, 1782). The French adaptation of 'Hamlet' by Ducis was issued in Italian blank verse (Venice, 1774, 8vo). Complete translations of all the plays made direct from the English were issued by Michele Leoni (in verse) at Verona 1819–22, and by Carlo Rusconi in prose at Padua in 1831 (new edit. Turin, 1858–9). 'Othello' and 'Romeo and Juliet' have been most often translated into Italian separately. The Italian actors, Madame Ristori (as Lady Macbeth), Salvini (as Othello), and Rossi rank among Shakespeare's most effective interpreters. Verdi's operas on Macbeth, Othello, and Falstaff (the last two with libretti by Boito), betray a close and appreciative study of Shakespeare.

In Italy.

In Eastern Europe, Shakespeare first became known through French and German translations. Into Russian 'Romeo and Juliet' was translated in 1772, 'Richard III' in 1783, and 'Julius Cæsar' in 1786. Sumarakow translated Ducis' version of 'Hamlet' in 1784 for stage purposes, while the Empress Catherine II adapted the 'Merry Wives' and 'King John.' Numerous versions of all the chief plays followed; and in 1865 there appeared at St. Petersburg the best translation in verse (direct from the English), by Nekrasow and Gerbel. A prose translation, by N. Ketzcher, begun in 1862, was completed in 1879. Gerbel issued a Russian translation of the 'Sonnets' in 1880, and many critical essays in the language, original or translated, have been published. Almost every play has been represented in Russian on the Russian stage (cf. *New Shaksp. Soc. Trans.* 1880-5, pt. ii. 431 seq.) A Polish version of 'Hamlet' was acted at Lemberg in 1797; and as many as sixteen plays now hold a recognised place among Polish acting plays. The standard Polish translation of Shakespeare's collected works appeared at Warsaw in 1875 (edited by the Polish poet Kraszewski), and is reckoned among the most successful renderings in a foreign tongue.

In Russia.

Other complete translations have been published in Hungarian (Kaschau, 1824), in Bohemian (Prague, 1874), in Swedish (Lund, 1847–51), in Dutch, and in Danish (1845–

1850). In Spanish a complete translation is in course of publication (Madrid, 1885 et seq.), and the eminent Spanish critic Menéndez y Pelayo has placed Shakespeare above Calderon. In Armenian, although only three plays ('Hamlet,' 'Romeo and Juliet,' and 'As you like it') have been issued, the translation of the whole is ready for the press. Separate plays only have appeared in Welsh, Portuguese, Friesic, Flemish, Servian, Roumanian, Ukrainian, Wallachian, Croatian, Finnish, modern Greek, Latin, and Hebrew; while a few have been rendered into Bengali, Hindustani, Marathí (cf. *Macmillan's Mag.* May 1880), Kanarése, and other languages of India, and have been acted in native theatres.

General estimate.

No estimate of Shakespeare's genius can be adequate. In knowledge of human character, in wealth of humour, in depth of passion, in fertility of fancy, in soundness of judgment, and in mastery of language he has no rival. His language and versification adapt themselves to every phase of sentiment, and sound almost every note in the scale of felicity. Although sudden transitions, elliptical expressions, mixed metaphors, obsolete words, indefensible verbal quibbles, and a few hopelessly corrupt readings disturb the modern reader's equanimity, the glow of the author's imagination leaves few passages wholly unillumined. It is the versatile working of Shakespeare's intellect that renders his supremacy unassailable. His mind, as Hazlitt suggested, contained within itself the germs of every faculty and feeling. He knew intuitively how every faculty and feeling would develop in every conceivable change of fortune. Men and women—good or bad, old or young, wise or foolish, merry or sad, rich or poor—yielded their secrets to him, and his genius illumined in turn every aspect of humanity that presents itself on the highway of life. Each of his characters gives voice to thought or passion with an individuality and a naturalness that rouse in the intelligent playgoer and reader the illusion that they are overhearing men and women speak unpremeditatingly among themselves, rather than that they are reading speeches or hearing written speeches recited. The more closely the words are studied, the completer the illusion grows. Creatures of the imagination—fairies, ghosts, witches—are delineated with a like potency, and the reader or spectator feels instinctively that these supernatural entities could not speak, feel, or act otherwise than Shakespeare represents them. So mighty a faculty sets at naught the common limitations of nationality, and in every quarter of the globe to which civilised life has penetrated Shakespeare's power is recognised. All the world over, language is applied to his creations that ordinarily applies to beings of flesh and blood. Hamlet and Othello, Lear and Macbeth, Falstaff, Brutus, Romeo, and Shylock are studied in almost every civilised tongue as if they were historic personalities, and the chief of the impressive phrases that fall from their lips are rooted in the speech of civilised humanity.

[The scantiness of contemporary records of Shakespeare's career has been much exaggerated. An investigation extending over two centuries has brought together a mass of detail which far exceeds that accessible in the case of any other contemporary professional writer. Nevertheless many important links are missing, and at many critical points appeal to conjecture is inevitable. But if the general outline suggested by the fully ascertained facts be scrupulously respected, the result may be confidently regarded as true. Fuller, in his Worthies (1662), attempted the first biographical notice of Shakespeare, with poor results. Aubrey, in his gossiping Lives of Eminent Men (compiled before 1680; first printed in 'Letters from the Bodleian,' 1813, and now being re-edited for the Oxford Hist. Soc. by the Rev. Andrew Clark), based his ampler information on reports communicated to him by William Beeston (*d.* 1682), an aged actor, whom Dryden called 'the chronicle of the stage,' and who was doubtless in the main a trustworthy witness. A few additional details were recorded in the seventeenth century by the Rev. John Ward (1629–1681), vicar of Stratford-on-Avon from 1662 to 1668, in a diary and memorandum-book written between 1661 and 1663 (ed. C. A. Severn, 1839); by the Rev. William Fulman, whose manuscripts are at Corpus Christi College, Oxford (with interpolations made before 1708 by the Rev. Richard Davies, vicar of Saperton, Gloucestershire); by John Dowdall, who travelled through Warwickshire in 1693 (London, 1838); and by William Hall, who visited Stratford in 1694 (London, 1884, from Bodleian MS.) Phillips in his Theatrum Poetarum (1675), and Langbaine in his English Dramatick Poets (1691), confined themselves to criticism. In 1709 Nicholas Rowe prefixed a more ambitious memoir than had yet been attempted to his edition of the plays, and embodied some new local Stratford and London traditions with which the actor Thomas Betterton supplied him. A little fresh gossip was collected by William Oldys [q. v.], and was printed from his manuscript 'adversaria' (now in the British Museum) as an appendix to Yeowell's 'Memoir of Oldys,' 1862. Pope, Johnson, and Steevens, in biographical prefaces to their editions, mainly repeated the narratives of their predecessors. In the Prolegomena to the Variorum edition of 1821 there was embodied

a mass of fresh information derived by Edmund Malone [q.v.] from systematic researches among official papers at Stratford, at Dulwich (the Alleyn MSS.), or in the Public Record Office, and the available knowledge of Elizabethan stage history, as well as of Shakespeare's biography, was thus greatly extended. Francis Douce in his Illustrations of Shakespeare (1807), and Joseph Hunter [q. v.] in New Illustrations of Shakespeare (1845), occasionally supplemented Malone's researches. John Payne Collier [q.v.], in his History of English Dramatic Poetry (1831), in his 'New Facts' about Shakespeare (1835), his 'New Particulars' (1836), and his 'Further Particulars' (1839), and in his editions of Henslowe's Diary and the Alleyn Papers for the Shakespeare Society, while throwing some light on obscure places, foisted on Shakespeare's biography a series of ingeniously forged documents which have greatly perplexed succeeding biographers. Dyce specified the chief of Collier's forgeries in the second issue of his edition of Shakespeare (cf. G. F. Warner's Cat. of Dulwich MSS.) James Orchard Halliwell (afterwards Halliwell-Phillipps) [q. v.] printed separately, between 1850 and 1884, in various privately issued publications, all the Stratford archives and extant legal documents bearing on Shakespeare's career, many of them for the first time, and in 1887 he published massive materials for a full biography in his Outlines of the Life of Shakespeare (4th edit.) Mr. F. G. Fleay, in his Shakespeare Manual (1876), in his Life of Shakespeare (1886), in his History of the Stage (1890), and his Biographical Chronicle of the English Drama (1891), adds some useful information respecting Shakespeare's relations with his fellow-dramatists, mainly derived from a study of the original editions of the plays of Shakespeare and of his contemporaries; but many of his statements and conjectures are unauthenticated. A full epitome of the information accessible at date of publication is supplied in Karl Elze's Life of Shakespeare (Halle, 1876; English translation, 1888), with which Elze's Essays from the publications of the German Shakespeare Society (English translation, 1874) are worth studying. A less ambitious effort of the same kind, by Samuel Neil (1861), is injured by the writer's acceptance of some of Collier's forgeries. Professor Dowden's Shakespeare Primer (1877) and his Introduction to Shakespeare (1893), and Dr. Furnivall's Introduction to the Leopold Shakespeare, are all useful. Shakespeare's Library (ed. J. P. Collier and W. C. Hazlitt), Shakespeare's Plutarch (ed. Skeat), and Shakespeare's Holinshed (ed. W. G. Boswell-Stone, 1896), are of service in tracing the sources of Shakespeare's plots. Useful concordances to the Plays have been prepared by Mrs. Cowden Clarke (1845), to the Poems by Mrs. H. H. Furness (Philadelphia, 1852), and to Plays and Poems, in one volume, with references to numbered lines, by John Bartlett (London and New York, 1895). An unprinted glossary prepared by Richard Warner between 1750 and 1770 is at the British Museum (Addit. MSS. 10472–10542). Extensive bibliographies are given in Lowndes's Libr. Manual (ed. Bohn), in Franz Thimm's Shakespeariana (1864 and 1871), in the Encyclopædia Britannica, 9th edit. (skilfully classified by Mr. H. R. Tedder), and in the Brit. Mus. Cat. (the Shakespearean entries, comprising 3,680 titles, are separately published). For notices of Stratford, R. B. Wheler's History and Antiquities (1806), John R. Wise's Shakespere, his Birthplace and its Neighbourhood (1861), and the present writer's Stratford-on-Avon to the death of Shakespeare (1890), may be consulted. Wise appends to his volume a tentative 'glossary of words still used in Warwickshire to be found in Shakspere.' Nathan Drake's Shakespeare and his Times (1817) and G. W. Thornbury's Shakespeare's England (1856) collect much materials respecting Shakespeare's social environment. The valuable publications of the Shakespeare Society, the New Shakspere Society, and of the Deutsche Shakespeare-Gesellschaft, are noticed in the text, together with many other works of service on special points in Shakespeare's biography and the more important critical studies. To these books may be added the essays on Shakespeare's Heroines respectively by Mrs. Jameson in 1833 and Lady Martin in 1885; Dr. Ward's English Dramatic Literature (1875); Richard G. Moulton's Shakespeare as a Dramatic Artist (1885); Shakespeare Studies, by Thomas Spencer Baynes, 1893; F. S. Boas's Shakspere and his Predecessors, 1895, and Georg Brandes' William Shakespeare, in Danish (Copenhagen, 1895, 8vo), in German (Leipzig, 1895) and in English (London, 1897, 8vo).]

The Bacon-Shakespeare Controversy.—The apparent contrast between the homeliness of Shakespeare's Stratford career and the breadth of observation and knowledge displayed in his literary work has evoked the fantastic theory that Shakespeare was not the author of the literature that passes under his name, and perverse attempts have been made to assign his works to his contemporary, Bacon. It is argued that Shakespeare's plays embody a general omniscience (especially a knowledge of law) which was possessed by no contemporary except Bacon; that there are many close parallelisms between passages in Shakespeare's and passages in Bacon's works, and that Bacon makes enigmatic references in his correspondence to secret 'recreations' and 'alphabets' which his alleged employment as a concealed dramatist can alone explain. Toby Matthew [q. v.] wrote to Bacon (as Viscount St. Albans) at an uncertain date after January 1621: 'The most prodigious wit that ever I knew of my nation and of this side of the sea is of your Lordship's name, though he be known by another' (cf. Birch, *Letters of Bacon*, 1763, p. 392). This unpretending sentence is distorted into conclusive evidence that Bacon wrote works of commanding excellence under another's name, and among them probably Shakespeare's plays. According to the natural interpretation of Matthew's

words, his 'most prodigious wit' was some Englishman named Bacon whom he had met abroad —probably a pseudonymous jesuit like most of Matthew's friends. Joseph C. Hart (U. S. Consul at Santa Cruz, *d.* 1855), in his 'Romance of Yachting' (1848), first raised doubts of Shakespeare's authorship, and there followed 'Who wrote Shakespeare?' in Chambers's 'Journal,' 7 Aug. 1852, and an article by Miss Delia Bacon in 'Putnams' Monthly,' January 1856. On the latter was based 'The Philosophy of the Plays of Shakespeare unfolded by Delia Bacon,' with a neutral preface by Nathaniel Hawthorne, London and Boston, 1857. Miss Delia Bacon died insane on 2 Sept. 1859 (cf. Life by Theodore Bacon, London, 1888). Mr. William Henry Smith seems first to have suggested the Baconian hypothesis in 'Was Lord Bacon the author of Shakespeare's plays? A letter to Lord Ellesmere,' 1856, which was republished as 'Bacon and Shakespeare,' 1857. The most learned exponent of this strange theory was Nathaniel Holmes, an American lawyer, who published at New York in 1866 'The Authorship of the Plays attributed to Shakespeare,' a monument of misapplied ingenuity (4th edit. 1886, 2 vols.) Bacon's 'Promus of Formularies and Elegancies' (London, 1883), edited by Mrs. Henry Pott, a voluminous advocate of the Baconian theory, presses the argument of parallelisms between Bacon and Shakespeare. A Bacon Society was founded in London in 1885 to develop and promulgate the theory, and it inaugurated a magazine (named since May 1893 'Baconiana'). A quarterly periodical also called 'Baconiana,' and issued in the same interest, was established at Chicago in 1892. 'The Bibliography of the Shakespeare-Bacon Controversy' by W. H. Wyman, Cincinnati, 1884, gives the titles of 255 books or pamphlets on both sides of the subject, published since 1848; the list was continued during 1886 in 'Shakespeariana,' a monthly journal published at Philadelphia. The Baconian theory has found its widest acceptance in America. There it was pressed to the most extravagant limit it has yet reached by Mr. Ignatius Donnelly of Hastings, Minnesota, in 'The Great Cryptogram: Francis Bacon's Cypher in the so-called Shakespeare Plays' (Chicago and London, 1887, 2 vols.) The author pretended to have discovered among Bacon's papers a numerical cypher which enabled him to pick out letters appearing at certain intervals in the pages of Shakespeare's first folio, and the selected letters formed words and sentences categorically stating that Bacon was author of the plays. Many refutations have been published of Mr. Donnelly's baseless contention (cf. *Nineteenth Century*, May 1888).]

S. L.

SHALDERS, GEORGE (1825?–1873), watercolour painter, born about 1825, began to exhibit in 1848, when he was resident at Portsmouth, contributing in that and subsequent years to both the Royal Academy and the Suffolk Street gallery. In 1863 he became an associate, and in 1865 a full member of the New Watercolour Society, at the exhibitions of which all his later works were shown. Shalders painted landscapes, chiefly views in Hampshire, Surrey, Yorkshire, Wales, and Ireland, which gained considerable admiration; he usually introduced cattle or sheep, which he painted with much skill. He died of paralysis, induced by overwork, on 27 Jan. 1873, at the age of forty-seven.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Art Journal, 1873; exhibition catalogues.] F. M. O'D.

SHANK, JOHN (1740–1823), admiral. [See SCHANCK.]

SHANKS, JOHN (*d.* 1636), actor, was long a resident in St. Giles's, Cripplegate, in the parish registers of which are recorded the births and deaths of various children. He speaks of himself in 1635 as an old man, and affirms that he was originally in the company of Lord Pembroke, and afterwards in the companies of Queen Elizabeth, James I, and Charles I. This would place his first appearance in the sixteenth century. In a list of players transferred from Charles Howard, earl of Nottingham, to Prince Henry, in 1603 according to Collier, 'more probably' 1608 according to Fleay, he stands thirteenth on the list. When most of the men were taken, 4 Jan. 1613, into the service of the prince palatine of the Rhine, he remains thirteenth among fourteen players. When, presumably about 1619, he joined the king's company, shortly before the confirmation of their patent, his name is last. Shanks was one of the players who in 1624 made 'humble submission' to the master of the revels on account of having without permission acted in the 'Spanish Viceroy.' His name appears twelfth of some twenty-seven players to whom on 27 March 1625 a grant was made for cloaks in which to attend the king's funeral. In the 1623 Shakespeare folio list of the principal players it is last but one. Wright (*Historia Histrionica*) asserts that Shanks used to act Sir Roger (the Chaplain) in the 'Scornful Lady' of Beaumont and Fletcher, played at Blackfriars Theatre subsequently to 1609. He had a small part in the 'Wild Goose Chace' of Beaumont and Fletcher, and a second in the 'Prophetess' of the same authors. In 1629 he was Hilario in Massinger's 'Picture.' In Sir Henry Herbert's 'Register' is an entry of a fee of 1*l.* from the king's company for Shanks's 'Ordinary.' On the strength of this, Malone mentions him as a dramatist. Collier reasonably holds that the piece was no more than the entertainment called a jig, in the

delivery of which Shanks seems to have won some reputation. In a ballad dated 1662, and supposed to belong to 1625–30, called 'Turner's Dish of Stuff, or a Gallimaufry,' are the lines:

> That's the fat fool of the Curtain,
> And the lean fool of the Bull:
> Since Schanke did learn to sing his rhimes,
> He is counted but a gull.

This suggests that he was a successor of Tarleton, Kempe, Armin, and others. From the Ashmolean Museum Collier quotes a manuscript entitled 'Shanke's Song,' intended to ridicule Irish catholics, and having a burden, 'O hone!' Shanks lived in Golden Lane, in which Henslowe's playhouse stood. After the death of John Heming [q. v.], one of the 'housekeepers' of the Globe, his shares in that theatre and the Blackfriars were sold in 1633 surreptitiously by his son William. From this William Shanks bought, according to his own statement, 'one part hee had in the Blackfriers for about six years then to come at the yearly rent of 6*l.* 5*s.*, and another part hee then had in the Globe for about two years to come, and payd him for the same two partes 156*l.*' A year subsequently he bought for 35*l.* one further part in the Blackfriars and two in the Globe, his entire purchase costing him 506*l.* Benfield, Swanston, and Pollard petitioned the lord chamberlain, Pembroke, for a compulsory sale to them of one share each from the largest shareholders, Shanks and the Burbages. In spite of the counter petitions of Shanks—in one of which he complains that his fellows not only refused him satisfaction, but restrained him from the stage, and in another declared that in his long time he had made no provision for himself in his old age, nor for his wife, children, and grandchild—the application was granted, and the shares of Shanks in the Globe were reduced to two instead of three, and in the Blackfriars to one instead of two. According to the registers of St. Giles, a John Shancke married Elizabeth Martin on 26 Jan. 1630, while 'John Schanke, player,' was buried on 27 Jan. 1635 [i.e. 1636]. According to the 'Perfect Diurnal,' 24 Oct. 1642, another Shanke, a player, was one of three officers of the lord general (Essex) who, having run away from the army at the beginning of a fight, were sent to the gatehouse for punishment according to martial law. Shanks's name is spelt seven different ways.

[Collier's English Dramatic Poetry always open to some mistrust; Fleay's Chronicle History of the London Stage; Halliwell-Phillipps's Outlines; Wright's Historia Histrionica; Malone's Historical Account of the English Stage; the 1623 folio of Shakespeare and the 1679 folio of Beaumont and Fletcher. The documents respecting Shanks's litigation are given in Halliwell-Phillipps's Outlines of the Life of Shakespeare (ed. 1886, i. 286 et seq.), and are well summarised in Fleay's Chronicle History of the London Stage.] J. K.

SHANNON, Earl of. [See Boyle, Henry, 1682–1764.]

SHARDELOWE or SCHERDELOW, Sir JOHN de (*d.* 1344?), judge, appears as an advocate in the reign of Edward II (Foss), and on 28 Jan. 1332 was appointed a judge of the court of common pleas and received knighthood. Dugdale says that in 1339 he exchanged courts with a justice of the king's bench, but this must have been only some temporary arrangement, for he was sitting in the common pleas in 1340 (*ib.*; *Year Book, Edward III*, Mich. 1340). In December of that year he, in common with other judges, was arrested and committed to custody (see Stubbs, *Constitutional History*, vol. ii. c. 16). He was afterwards restored to office, and sat in his court in 1342. He was a trier of petitions in the parliament of 28 April 1343, and died either in that or the following year. During his lifetime he settled his manor of Thompson, Norfolk, upon his elder son, Sir John de Shardelowe, and, in addition, died seised of the manor of Fulbourn and of lands in Leverington and Wisbeach in Cambridgeshire, of the manors of Barrow and Cowlinge or Cooling, and of lands in Brandon, Cavenham, and elsewhere in Suffolk, and of land in Downham in Norfolk. He and his wife Agnes were buried in the parish church of Thompson. His younger son, Sir Thomas de Shardelowe, who appears to have been attorney-general in 1366, became heir to his elder brother, Sir John, was a commissioner of array in 1376 (*Fœdera*, iii. 1045), and was buried at Thompson. The two brothers founded a perpetual chantry or college, of a master and five clerks, in the church of Thompson in honour of St. Martin, the Virgin, and All Saints, and for the souls of their father and mother, and also joined in giving the advowson of the church of Cooling to the master and scholars of Trinity Hall, Cambridge. The elder brother, Sir John, appears to have died about 1369, for on 28 April of that year his widow Joan took a vow of chastity before Thomas Percy, bishop of Norwich, and remained until her death attached to the college at Thompson. The arms of Shardelowe, adopted by the college of Thompson, and represented in the church,

were argent, a chevron between three cross crosslets fitchée azure. The male line of Sir John de Shardelowe failed in 1433.

[Foss's Judges, iii. 500; Dugdale's Orig. Jurid. pp. 39, 45, 102, and Chron. Ser.; Blomefield's Norfolk, ii. 367–9, 372, viii. 268–9, x. 136, ed. 1805; Chron. Angliæ, p. 10 (Rolls Ser.); Rot. Parl. ii. 135; Cal. Inquis. post mortem, ii. 117 (Record publ.)] W. H.

SHARESHULL, WILLIAM DE (*fl.* 1360), judge, is mentioned among the advocates in the 'Year Book' of Edward II, and also as receiving a commission of oyer and terminer on 22 Feb. 1327, and the two following years. In 1331, when he had risen to the rank of king's serjeant, he was appointed with others to assess a tallage in the counties of Oxford, Gloucester, and Berks (25 June). In the following year he was one of the council selected by the king to advise him, was ordered on 11 Oct. to attend the approaching parliament in Scotland for the confirmation of the treaty with Edward Balliol, and was made a knight of the Bath.

On 20 March 1333 he was made a judge of the king's bench, but was removed to the common pleas on 30 May following. In 1340 (30 Nov.) Edward III suddenly returned from the Low Countries, and removed the chancellor and treasurer and other prominent officials, among them Shareshull, on a charge of maladministration. He was reinstated, however, on 10 May 1342, and on 2 July 1344 he was made chief baron of the exchequer. On 10 Nov. 1345 he was moved back to the common pleas, with the title of second justice. He was also appointed one of the guardians of the principality of Wales during the minority of the king's son. On 26 Oct. 1350 he was advanced to the headship of the court of king's bench, and presided in it until 5 July 1357. While holding that office he declared the causes of the meeting of five parliaments, from 25 to 29 Edward III (1351–1355), and his functions seem to have more resembled those of a political and parliamentary official than those of a judge (Foss). In the last year of his chief-justiceship he was excommunicated by the pope for refusing to appear when summoned to answer for a sentence he had delivered against the bishop of Ely for harbouring a man who had slain a servant of Lady Wake.

According to Clarke's 'Ipswich' (p. 14), in 1344 some sailors, thinking Shareshull (he is there called Sharford) stayed too long at dinner, when he was holding assizes in that town, one of them mounted the bench and fined the judge for non-attendance. He took such offence at the joke that he induced the king to take away the assizes from the town and seize the liberties of the corporation into his own hands for about a year. Though retired from the bench, he occupied confidential positions as late as 1361. He lived beyond 1364, in which year he granted his manor of Alurynton in Shropshire to the Augustinian priory in Osney, in addition to lands at Sandford in Oxfordshire, which he had given seven years before. He was a benefactor also to the priories of Bruera, near Chester, and Dudley. He left a son of the same name, who died in 1 Henry IV (1399–1400).

[Foss's Judges of England, iii. 504; Cal. Pat. Rolls, Edward III, 1327–38 passim; Rymer's Fœdera, ii. 991, iii. 126, 230, 457, 469; G. Le Baker, ed. Thompson, p. 72; Barnes's Edward III, pp. 212, 551.] W. E. R.

SHARINGTON or **SHERINGTON, SIR WILLIAM** (1495?–1553), vice-treasurer of the mint at Bristol, born about 1495, came of an old Norfolk family, and was the eldest son of Thomas Sherington (*d.* 1527?) and his wife Catherine, daughter of William Pirton of Little Bentley, Essex (BLOMEFIELD, *Norfolk*, x. 201–3). He entered the service of Sir Francis Bryan [q. v.], and subsequently became page of the king's robes. In 1540 he bought the dissolved Lacock Abbey, Wiltshire, for 783*l.*, and on 3 May 1546 he became vice-treasurer of the mint at Bristol (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1547–1581, p. 3). He was made knight of the Bath at the coronation of Edward VI on 19 Feb. 1546–7. His position at the mint he used to perpetrate extensive frauds. In April 1547 the council forbad the coining of any more 'testons' or shillings, two-thirds of which were alloy. Sharington nevertheless bought up large quantities of church plate from the Somerset villagers, and during May, June, and July, coined it into testons. He also made over 4,000*l.* in three years by shearing and clipping coins, and to conceal his frauds he made false copies of the books of the mint and destroyed the originals. Fearing discovery, he entered into the plots of Thomas Seymour, baron Seymour of Sudeley [q. v.], who promised to protect him. Sharington in return lent Seymour money and put the mint at Bristol at his disposal; he also undertook to coin 10,000*l.* to be devoted to raising adherents for the admiral. With part of his ill-gotten fortune he purchased of the king Winterbourne, Aubrey, Charlton, and other manors, chiefly in Wiltshire, for 2,808*l.* But his frauds and Seymour's plots soon came to the knowledge of the government. On 6 Jan. 1548–9 Lacock Abbey was searched by the council's agents,

and on 19 Jan. Sharington was arrested. He was examined several times in the Tower during January and February; at first he denied his frauds and all knowledge of Seymour's designs, but made full confessions on 2, 11, and 16 Feb. A bill for his attainder passed all its stages in both houses of parliament between 11 Feb. and 7 March. Seymour's connivance at Sharington's frauds was made one of the counts in his indictment (Cobbett, *State Trials*, i. 501–2); but Sharington, who threw himself on the king's mercy, was pardoned, and an act restoring him in blood was passed, 30 Dec. 1549–13 Jan. 1550.

In the following April he was again in employment, being commissioned to go to Calais and receive an instalment of the French purchase-money for Boulogne. He was also able to buy back his forfeited estates for 12,000*l.*; he seems in addition to have made a voluntary restitution of some property to the king, and Latimer, in a sermon preached before the king in the same year, extolled his example and described him as 'an honest gentilman and one that God loveth' (*Frutefull Sermons*, 1575, f. 115*b*). In 1552 he served as sheriff of Wiltshire. He died in 1553 (*Acts of the Privy Council*, 1552–4, p. 370). His portrait among the Holbein drawings in the royal library, Windsor Castle (*Cat. Tudor Exhib.* p. 148), has been engraved by Dalton (Bromley, p. 11). He married (1) Ursula, natural daughter of John Bourchier, second baron Berners [q.v.]; (2) Eleanor, daughter of William Walsingham; (3) Grace, daughter of one Farington of Devonshire, and widow of Robert Paget, alderman of London. He left no issue, and was succeeded in his estates by his brother Henry.

[Letters and Papers of Henry VIII, ed Gairdner, vols. xi–xv.; Haynes's Burleigh Papers; Cal. Hatfield MSS. pt. i.; Cat. Harl. MSS.; Acts of the Privy Council, ed. Dasent; Lords' Journals, vol. i. passim; Lit. Remains of Edward VI (Roxburghe Club); Strype's Eccl. Mem. vol. ii. pts. i–ii.; Ruding's Annals of the Coinage, i. 313–4; Burnet's Hist. of the Reformation, ed. Pocock; Spelman's Hist. of Sacrilege; Tytler's Edward VI and Mary, i. 139; Froude's Hist. vol. iv.; Common Weal of England, ed. E. Lamond, 1893, xxiii. 117, 191; Wilts Archæol. Mag. xviii. 260; Visitation of Wiltshire, 1623, printed by Sir T. Phillips, 1828; Bowles and Nichols's Annals of Lacock Abbey, pp. 297–8.]

A. F. P.

SHARMAN-CRAWFORD, WILLIAM (1781–1861), politician. [See Crawford.]

SHARP. [See also Sharpe.]

SHARP, ABRAHAM (1651–1742), mathematician, younger son of John Sharp of Little Horton, by Mary, daughter of Robert Clarkson of Bradford (married 12 Dec. 1632), was born in 1651 at Little Horton, near Bradford (pedigree in Thoresby's *Leeds*, 1816, p. 37). He was apprenticed to a merchant at Manchester, but he gave up his business and moved to Liverpool, where he taught and devoted himself to mathematics. Here he met John Flamsteed [q. v.], by whom he was recommended to a post in Chatham dockyard. From 1676 he seems to have been employed by Flamsteed in the newly founded Greenwich observatory. In 1688 he was employed to make a mural arc, the first of Flamsteed's instruments that proved satisfactory (cf. Baily, *Flamsteed*, 1835, p. 55; Flamsteed's *Prolegomena* to vol. iii. of the *Historia Celestis*, 1725, p. 108). The mural was finished in fourteen months, costing Flamsteed 120*l.*; it was 79 inches in radius, and contained 140 degrees on the limb. Sharp left the observatory in August 1690, so that he might teach mathematics in London (cf. *Flamsteed MSS.* vol. iv. 4 Nov. 1690). He eventually lived in retirement at Little Horton, calculating and making astronomical instruments and models, and in correspondence with scientific men (cf. *Gent. Mag.* 1781, p. 461). In a report on astronomical instruments (*Phil. Trans.* lxxvi. 1786) John Smeaton says: 'I look upon Mr. Sharp as having been the first person that cut accurate and delicate divisions upon astronomical instruments.' He calculated π to 72 places of decimals (Hutton, *Diction.*) His book, 'Geometry Improved (1) by a Table of Segments of Circles, (2) a Concise Treatise of Polyedra, by A. S. Philomath,' London, 1717, is remarkable for the great number of its calculations, among other things the logarithms of the numbers from 1 to 100, and of all the primes up to 1100, each calculated to 61 figures of decimals; and for the plates of solid figures cut by his own hand, which are very clear. From his correspondence, beginning 6 Feb. 1701 (noticed in Baily's *Flamsteed*) it appears that he continued to help Flamsteed. It was to Sharp and Crosthwait that the world was indebted for the final publication of the 'British Catalogue' (*l. c.* p. 410). On 31 Aug. 1714 Flamsteed wrote to Sharp: 'I would desire you to calculate the eclipses of the [Jupiter's] satellites for the next year.' On 11 Oct. 1715 Flamsteed wrote him: 'Yours brought the eclipses of 2*d* satellites for the next year, 1716. I thank you heartily for them.' After Flamsteed's death (4 June 1720), Crosthwait wrote to Sharp: 'Yours of the 20th May

brought the most acceptable news of your kind offer to lay down the stars and draw the lines and divisions of all the maps of the constellations of the zodiac. When the world shall know that these were done by the hands of Mr. Sharp, it will make Mr. Flamsteed's works more valuable as well as more useful.' Others of Flamsteed's letters to Sharp are full of his complaints of Newton's double dealing. Sharp died near Bradford, Yorkshire, on 15 July 1742, aged 91 (*Gent. Mag.* 1742, p. 387).

[Authorities cited.] H. F. B.

SHARP, SIR CUTHBERT (1781–1849), antiquary, son of Cuthbert Sharp, shipowner, and of Susannah, sister of Brass Crosby [q.v.], lord mayor of London, was born at Sunderland in 1781, and received his education at Greenwich under Dr. Burney. There he formed a lasting friendship with Lord Lake and with Sir Edward Blakeney [q.v.] When he was eighteen years of age he served in Ireland during the rebellion as an officer in the fencible cavalry. When his regiment was disbanded, Sharp proceeded to Edinburgh, and in 1803 visited Paris, where he was surprised by the resumption of hostilities (at the conclusion of the peace of Amiens), and detained, with other English visitors, as a prisoner of war. But by the influence of Regnier, the minister of justice, whose friendship he had acquired, he was released on parole, and after a few years was allowed to pass into England.

Sharp settled at Hartlepool and devoted himself to the study of local antiquities. In 1816 he acted as mayor, and was knighted on the occasion of a visit of the prince regent. In the same year appeared his first book, 'The History of Hartlepool' (2nd ed. 1851), by which his reputation as an antiquary was established. Sharp came to know Surtees, the historian of Durham, and rendered him valuable assistance in compiling local genealogies. His contributions to Surtees's 'History of Durham' were distinguished by the initials C. S. surmounted by a rose.

In 1823 Sharp was appointed collector of customs at Sunderland, but continued his study of local antiquities. In 1840 appeared his 'Memorials of the Rebellion of 1569,' based on the Bowes MSS. In 1845 he was promoted to the post of collector of customs at Newcastle-on-Tyne, where he resided until his death on 17 Aug. 1849.

His other works include: 1. 'A Brief Summary of a Manuscript formerly belonging to Lord William Howard,' 1819, 8vo. 2. 'Excerpta Memorabilia e Registris Parochialibus Com. Pal. Dunelm.' 8vo, in three parts, 1819, 1825, 1841; published in one volume in 1841. 3. 'A List of the Knights and Burgesses who have represented the County and City of Durham in Parliament,' Durham 1826, 4to; 2nd ed. Sunderland, 1833. 4. 'Poems,' Sunderland, 1828, 12mo. 5. 'The Life of Ambrose Barnes, sometime Alderman of Newcastle,' 1828, 8vo. 6. 'The Worme of Lambton,' a legend, 1830, 4to. He also compiled a 'Catalogue' of his manuscripts, 1829, 8vo.

[Gent. Mag. 1816 i. 534, 1841 ii. 61, 1849 ii. 428–30; Athenæum, 1849, p. 913; Allibone's Dictionary of English Lit.] E. I. C.

SHARP, GRANVILLE (1735–1813), philanthropist, pamphleteer, and scholar, born at Durham on 10 Nov. 1735 (old style), was ninth and youngest son of Thomas Sharp (1693–1758) [q. v.] and grandson of John Sharp [q. v.], archbishop of York. He was educated at Durham grammar school, but his father, though archdeacon of Northumberland, was possessed of small means and a large family, and in May 1750 Granville was apprenticed to one Halsey, a quaker linendraper of Tower Hill, London. He served successively under a quaker, a presbyterian, an Irish Roman catholic, and an atheist. During his scanty leisure he taught himself Greek and Hebrew, and in August 1757 he became a freeman of the city of London as a member of the Fishmongers' Company. In June 1758 he obtained a post in the ordnance department, and in 1764 was appointed a clerk in ordinary, being removed to the minuting branch. In the following year he published 'Remarks' on Benjamin Kennicott's 'Catalogue of the Sacred Vessels restored by Cyrus,' &c., defending 'the present text of the old Testament' against the charge of corruption in the matter of proper names and numbers; a second edition of Sharp's work was published in 1775. This was followed in 1767 by a 'Short Treatise on the English Tongue' (two editions), and in 1768 by 'Remarks on several very important Prophecies, in five parts' (2nd ed. 1775). In 1767 his uncle, Granville Wheler, offered him the living of Great Leek, Nottinghamshire, but Sharp refused to take orders.

Meanwhile he had become involved in the struggle for the liberation of slaves in England. In 1765 he befriended a negro, Jonathan Strong, whom he found in a destitute condition in the streets, where he had been abandoned by his master, one David Lisle. Two years later Lisle threw Strong into prison as a runaway slave, but Sharp procured his release and prosecuted Lisle for assault and battery. An action

was then brought against Sharp for unlawfully detaining the property of another; his legal advisers said they were not prepared to resist it in face of the declaration of Yorke and Talbot in 1729, affirming that masters had property in their slaves even when in England. Mansfield also declared against him, and Blackstone lent the weight of his authority to the same opinion. For the next two years Sharp devoted his leisure to researches into the law of personal liberty in England. His results were published in 1769 as 'A Representation of the Injustice . . . of tolerating Slavery,' to which he added an 'Appendix' in 1772. Meanwhile Sharp interested himself in other cases similar to Strong's, and the struggle was fought out in the law courts with varying success for three years longer. It was finally decided by the famous case of James Sommersett (see HARGRAVE, *An Argument in the Case of J. Sommersett*, 1772; CLARKSON, *Hist. of the Rise . . . of the Movement for the Abolition of Slavery*, 1808, i. 66–78; and tracts in British Museum Library catalogued under 'Sommersett, James'). After three hearings the judges laid down the momentous principle 'that as soon as any slave sets his foot upon English territory, he becomes free.' This first great victory in the struggle for the emancipation of slaves was entirely due to Sharp, who, 'though poor and dependent and immersed in the duties of a toilsome calling, supplied the money, the leisure, the perseverance, and the learning required for this great controversy' (SIR JAMES STEPHEN, *Essays in Eccl. Biogr.* 1860, p. 540).

This question did not exhaust Sharp's benevolent energies. In addition to his researches in early English constitutional history and other studies, he spent much time and labour in searching for documents to prove the claim of Henry Willoughby, then a tradesman, to the barony of Willoughby of Parham, a claim which was established by resolution of the House of Lords on 27 March 1767. He took part in the opposition to the attempt to rob the Duke of Portland of the forest of Inglewood and castle of Carlisle, and published in 1779 a tract 'Concerning the Doctrine of Nullum tempus occurrit Regi,' on which the crown proceedings were based [see LOWTHER, JAMES, EARL OF LONSDALE; BENTINCK, WILLIAM HENRY CAVENDISH, third DUKE OF PORTLAND]. He also agitated vehemently against the reported determination of the government to extirpate the aboriginal Carribees in the West Indies, pressing his views in person on Lord Dartmouth, the secretary of state. His sympathies were easily enlisted on behalf of the American colonies, and in 1774 he published 'A Declaration of the People's Natural Right to a Share in the Legislature.' When the rupture became complete, he resigned his office in the ordnance department (31 July 1776) rather than assist in despatching war material to the colonies. He was now left without means, having spent his small patrimony in the cause of emancipation; but his brothers, William and James, who were then in a prosperous position, made provision for him.

Sharp's philanthropic activity now redoubled; in October General James Edward Oglethorpe [q. v.] sought his acquaintance, and Sharp joined in Oglethorpe's crusade against the press-gang. He wrote an introduction to the general's 'Sailor's Advocate,' and 'moved all the powers of his age, political and intellectual, to abolish the impressment of seamen' (*ib.* pp. 538–9; HOARE, pp. 168–70). In 1778 he published an 'Address to the People,' denouncing the arbitrary conduct of Lord North's ministry, and he vigorously supported the cause of political reform in England and legislative freedom in Ireland. On the close of the American war he started a movement for the introduction of episcopacy into the now independent states, in the course of which he corresponded with Franklin, Jay, and Adams. He was aided by Thomas Secker [q. v.], archbishop of Canterbury, and his efforts were crowned with success by the consecration of the bishops of New York and Pennsylvania by Secker in 1787. For his efforts in this cause he was made an honorary LL.D. by Harvard University, Providence College, Rhode Island, and William and Mary College, Williamsburg.

But the abolition of slavery was still the main object of Sharp's life. In 1776 he published no less than five tracts on the subject, and in 1779 he began corresponding with many bishops with a view to establishing a society for the abolition of slavery. It was founded in 1787, the original members being all quakers except two, and Sharp as 'father of the movement in England' was appointed chairman. He took an active part in the movement, frequently interviewing Pitt, and after the French revolution broke out corresponded with La Fayette and Brissot, the leaders of a similar movement in France. Meanwhile the number of liberated slaves in England became a source of serious embarrassment, and as early as 1783 Sharp had conceived the idea of establishing a colony of freed slaves on the coast of Africa; Sierra Leone was finally selected as the site, and in 1786 Sharp published a 'Short Sketch of the Temporary

Regulations for the intended Settlement near Sierra Leona' [*sic*], which reached a third edition in 1788; after some assistance had been obtained from the government, the first cargo of freed slaves sailed on 8 April 1787. In 1789 a company called the St. George's company was formed to manage the settlement, and Sharp was one of the original directors, but after experiencing many difficulties it surrendered to the crown on 1 Jan. 1808 [see MACAULAY, ZACHARY].

During the last years of his life Sharp took a prominent part in founding the British and Foreign Bible Society [see SHORE, JOHN, LORD TEIGNMOUTH], and was chosen chairman at the inaugural meetings in May 1804 (OWEN, *Hist. Brit. and For. Bible Soc.*) He helped to found the African institution in 1807 and the Society for the Conversion of the Jews in 1808. He had been since 1785 a member of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, and in 1813 was first chairman of the Protestant Union designed to oppose catholic emancipation. But his chief work in later years was an important contribution to New Testament scholarship in the shape of 'Remarks on the Uses of the Definitive Article in the Greek Text of the New Testament,' Durham, 1798 (2nd ed. 1802; 3rd ed. 1803). 'Granville Sharp's canon,' as the rule here laid down has since been known, is that 'when two personal nouns of the same case are connected by the copulate *καὶ*, if the former has the definite article and the latter has not, they both belong to the same person,' e.g. in *τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν καὶ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ*, 'our God and Lord Jesus Christ,' 'God' and 'Jesus' are one and the same person. The canon is a crucial one in connection with the unitarian controversy; it was attacked by Gregory Blunt in 1803, and Calvin Winstanley in 1805, and defended by Christopher Wordsworth (1774–1846) [q. v.] in 'Six Letters to Granville Sharp,' 1802, by Thomas Burgess [q. v.], bishop of St. Davids, in 1810, and by Thomas Fanshaw Middleton [q. v.], afterwards bishop of Calcutta, in his 'Doctrine of the Greek Article,' 1808 (cf. ALFORD, *Greek Testament*, iii. 419–20).

Sharp's irrepressible enthusiasm led him into many eccentric opinions. During his latter years he wrote a number of tracts to prove the approaching fulfilment of scripture prophecies. On one occasion he attempted to convince Fox that Napoleon was the 'Little Horn' mentioned by Daniel. At a public meeting presided over by the Duke of Gloucester, he proposed to cure all ills in Sierra Leone by introducing King Alfred's system of frankpledge, and suggested that the soldiers in the Peninsula should be provided with portable bales of wool, which would form an impregnable rampart against the enemy in case of attack. Nevertheless Sir James Stephen attributes to Sharp 'the most inflexible of human wills united to the gentlest of human hearts,' and declares that 'as long as Granville Sharp survived it was too soon to proclaim that the age of chivalry was gone' (*Eccl. Biogr.* 1860, p. 538).

Sharp, who was unmarried, chiefly lived in rooms in Garden Court, Temple. He died at Fulham on 6 July 1813, at the house of his sister-in-law, Mrs. William Sharp. He was buried in the family vault in Fulham churchyard, where there is an inscription to his memory; another memorial, with an inscription and medallion portrait to him, was placed by the African Institution in the Poets' Corner, Westminster Abbey (engraved in the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' 1820, ii. 489). A portrait drawn by George Dance, R.A., and engraved by Henry Meyer, is prefixed to Prince Hoare's 'Memoirs of Granville Sharp,' 1820.

Hoare's 'Memoirs' (pp. 487–96) contains a complete list of Sharp's works, numbering sixty-one. The more important, besides those already mentioned, are: 1. 'Remarks on the Opinions of the most celebrated Writers on Crown Law . . .,' 1773. 2. 'The Law of Retribution, or a Serious Warning to Great Britain and her Colonies . . . of God's Temporal Vengeance against Tyrants, Slaveholders, and Oppressors,' 1776. 3. 'The just Limitation of Slavery in the Laws of God,' 1776, in reply to Thomas Thompson (*fl.* 1758–1772) [q. v.] 4. 'An Essay on Slavery,' 1776. 5. 'The Law of Liberty or Royal Law,' 1776. 6. 'The Law of Passive Obedience,' 1776. 7. 'A Defence . . . of the Right of the People to elect Representatives for every Session of Parliament,' 1780 (5th ed. same year). 8. 'An Account of the Ancient Division of the English People into Hundreds and Tithings,' 1784. 9. 'An Account of the Constitutional English Polity of Congregational Courts, and more particularly of . . . the View of Frankpledge,' 1786. 10. 'An English Alphabet for the Use of Foreigners,' 1786. 11. 'A General Plan for laying out Towns and Townships on the new-acquired Lands in the East Indies, America, or elsewhere,' 1794 (2nd ed. 1804). 12. 'Serious Reflections on the Slave Trade and Slavery,' 1805. 13. 'Extract of a Letter on the proposed Catholic Emancipation,' 1805. 14. 'A Dissertation on the Supreme Divine Right of the Messiah,' 1806. 15. 'A Letter in Answer to some of the leading Principles of the People called Quakers,' 1807. The following tracts are of some note: 'On the

Law of Nature' (1777; 2nd ed. 1809); 'The Ancient and only True Legal Means of National Defence by a free Militia' (3rd ed. 1782); 'On Duelling' (1790); 'Three Tracts on the Syntax and Pronunciation of the Hebrew Tongue' (1804), and on 'The System of Colonial Law' (1807).

[The Memoirs of Granville Sharp by Prince Hoare, 1820, 4to, were compiled from Sharp's manuscripts; the publication of a selection of his letters was projected but not carried out; see also Gent. Mag. 1813 ii. 89–90, 1814 ii. 431, 1818 ii. 489; Georgian Era, iii. 552; Nichols's Lit. Anecdotes of the Eighteenth Century; Sir James Stephen's Essays in Eccl. Biogr.; Faulkner's Fulham; Stanley's Memorials of Westminster Abbey, pp. 248, 280, 316; Clarkson's History of the Abolition of Slavery, i. 66–78; Catalogue of Devonshire House Portraits; Trevelyan's Life of Macaulay, i. 11; works in British Museum Library.] A. F. P.

SHARP, JACK (*d.* 1431), lollard rebel, was a weaver of Abingdon. His real name is given in the official documents as William Perkins (*Ordinances of Privy Council*, iv. 100, 107), but some of the chronicles call him Mandeville (Leland, *Collectanea*, i. 491; Fabyan, p. 602; 'ganeo trino nomine nominatus'—Amundesham, i. 63). In the spring of 1431, when he was bailiff of Abingdon, Perkins placed himself at the head of a movement among the lollards of the southern midlands against the stern repression to which they had for many years been subjected. Under the assumed name of 'Jack Sharp of Wigmoresland' he began to circulate handbills reviving the scheme of 1410 for the diversion of church endowments to useful purposes (*ib.* i. 453). The proposal took the form of a petition to the sitting parliament, but the reference to Wigmore, the centre of the Duke of York's influence in the Welsh march, contained a veiled menace to the Lancastrian government. Rumour perhaps exaggerated their designs. Sharp was afterwards reported to have confessed 'that he would have made priests' heads as cheap as sheeps' heads, so that he would have sold three for a penny' (Fabyan).

The council empowered the Duke of Gloucester, who was acting as regent during the king's absence in France, to suppress the movement, and a reward of twenty pounds was offered to any who should bring to justice Sharp and the 'bill casters and keepers' (*Ordinances*, iv. 88, 99, 107). On Thursday, 17 May, William Warberton (or Warbleton), who claimed to have denounced Perkins before the proclamation, was informed that he had taken refuge in Oxford, and secured his arrest (*ib.*; *Issues*, p. 415). The mayor of Salisbury also obtained a reward for assisting in establishing the identity of Sharp by arresting bill-distributors from Abingdon (*Ordinances*, iv. 99). Sharp was tried and condemned at Oxford before the Duke of Gloucester, and five days after his capture executed at Oxford or Abingdon (*Chron.* ed. Davies; Fabyan, p. 602; Leland, i. 491). His head was set up on London Bridge, and his quarters distributed between Oxford, Abingdon, and other towns (Gregory, p. 172).

[Ordinances of the Privy Council, ed. Nicolas; Devon's Issues of the Exchequer; Leland's Collectanea, ed. Hearne; Amundesham's Annals in Rolls Ser.; Chron. ed. Davies, and Gregory's Chron. ed. Camden Soc.; Fabyan and Hall, ed. Ellis; Chron. ed. Giles, p. 18; Chron. of London, p. 119; Ellis's Original Letters, 2nd ser. i. 103; Ramsay's Lancaster and York.] J. T–r.

SHARP, JAMES (1613–1679), archbishop of St. Andrews, son of William Sharp, factor of the Earl of Findlater, by Isabel Lesley, daughter of Lesley of Kininvy, a relative of the Earl of Rothes, was born at Banff Castle, where his father then resided, on 4 May 1613. Sharp's grandfather, David Sharp, a native of Perthshire, has been sneered at as 'a piper' (*Life of Mr. James Sharpe*, printed in 1719), but if he played the bagpipes (which was by the strict covenanters accounted sinful), this was not his profession, for he became a successful merchant in Aberdeen, and took to wife a lady of good family, that of the Haliburtons of Pitcur. Being intended for the church, Sharp entered King's College, Aberdeen, where he graduated M.A. in 1637. He is said to have been expelled from the college in 1638 for refusing to take the covenant; at any rate he went south to Oxford, where, according to his biographer, Thomas Stephen, he would have taken episcopal orders but for a serious illness, which made it advisable for him to return to Scotland. Not long after his return he was—on the recommendation, it is said, of Alexander Henderson [q. v.]—appointed professor of philosophy in the university of St. Andrews; and in 1648 he was presented by the Earl of Crawford to the church of Crail, where he was admitted on 27 Jan. 1648–9. In 1650 he was elected one of the ministers of Edinburgh by the town council, but his translation was refused by the presbytery, and, although agreed to by the general assembly, of which he was that year a member, the invasion under Cromwell prevented his acceptance of the call.

The proposal to translate Sharp to Edinburgh is evidence that he was already

regarded as one of the leaders of the kirk. On the division of the kirk into resolutioners and protesters, he adhered to the resolutioners—that is, the more liberal and loyal party, who supported the proposal or resolution that those who had made defection from the covenanting cause should, on professing repentance, be admitted to serve in defence of the country against Cromwell. Of this party—which, though avowedly presbyterian, numbered many sympathisers with episcopacy—Sharp came to be regarded as the head.

In 1651 Sharp was seized by Cromwell's forces while attending a committee of the estates at Alyth, Forfarshire, on 28 Aug., and carried to London (Balfour, *Annals*, iv. 315). He remained a prisoner in the Tower until 10 April 1652, when he was admitted to bail on security not to go out of the city, nor beyond the late lines of communication, and to be of 'good behaviour' (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1651–2, p. 213), and on 17 June he was permitted to return to Scotland on condition that he rendered himself to Major-general Deane (*ib.* p. 296). In the absence of Deane he, by another order of 1 July, delivered himself up to the governor of Edinburgh Castle (*ib.* p. 312). When he was set at full liberty is not stated, but in 1657 he was sent by the resolutioners to London to advocate their cause with Cromwell. Burnet affirms that the idea of sending him (or of choosing him) was suggested by the fact that 'he had some acquaintance with the presbyterian ministers whom Cromwell was then courting much' (*Own Time*, ed. 1838, p. 42). His mission was unsuccessful, but it is said he so impressed the Protector with his abilities that he remarked 'that gentleman after the Scotch way ought to be called Sharp of that ilk' (*True and Impartial Account*, p. 34).

When he began scheming for the Restoration in 1659, Monck bethought him of Sharp's political influence, and sent for him from Coldstream on his way south; Sharp immediately responded to the invitation, and on his arrival prepared the declaration in Monck's name which was read next day at the head of the army, and, being afterwards distributed throughout the country, caused more than half of Lambert's forces to desert to Monck. On parting with the English general, Sharp seems to have returned to Edinburgh to consult with the leaders of the kirk. To the rule of Cromwell neither party in the kirk had ever become reconciled. Charles II continued to be regarded throughout Scotland as the only rightful sovereign, and Cromwell was deemed but an English usurper. Monck was anxious to obtain the confidence of the kirk leaders, though he knew that they cherished aims which could never be realised. It was necessary to temporise; and that delicate and morally dubious work he committed to Sharp, who, it is plain, from the beginning was perfectly aware of the part he was expected to play. He was too able and acute to be gulled by Monck, too little of a bigot or visionary to cherish any real attachment to the covenant, and too ambitious to allow such an opportunity for advancement to pass unutilised. That Monck had made sure of his man is clear from a letter of Sir John Grenville to the lord chancellor, 4 May 1660, in which Grenville, on the recommendation of Monck, asks the lord chancellor to give Sharp credit 'because he looks on him as a very honest man, and as one that may be very useful to his majesty several ways, both here and in Scotland, especially in moderating the affairs of the kirk and our church, being a person very moderate in his opinion, and who hath a very good reputation with the ministers of both kingdoms, who must have some countenance for reasons I shall acquaint you with at our meeting' (*Clarendon State Papers*, iii. 741). Before the letter was written Sharp had been for some time in London, for in January 1660 he had been despatched thither with five ministers of Edinburgh to represent the views of the resolutioners. On 4 May he was sent by Monck to communicate directly with Charles at Breda, being further recommended through the Earl of Glencairn as a man entirely an episcopalian in principles and the fittest person whom he could trust to give him correct information regarding both church and state in Scotland.

According to Burnet, whose attitude is very hostile and depreciatory, Sharp 'stuck neither at solemn protestation, both by word of mouth and letters, nor at appeals to God of his sincerity in acting for the presbytery, both in prayers and on other occasions, joining with these many dreadful imprecations on himself if he did prevaricate' (*Own Time*, ed. 1838, p. 60). In order the better to mask his designs, and also to effect the king's purpose, Sharp induced the king to write confirming the 'public resolutions,' and also 'presbyterian government as by law established.' While the letter tended to allay for the time the special anxieties of the kirk, it was calculated indirectly to pave the way for the introduction of episcopacy, since by the confirmation of the 'resolutions' it bade fair to revive in an acute form the old quarrel between the two parties, and to pre-

vent the possibility of their common action. At the same time, the letter, as Sharp explained to the episcopalian nobles, bound the king to nothing, 'for his confirming their government as it was established by law could bind him no longer than while that legal establishment was in force' (*ib.* p. 75).

For a considerable time Sharp continued to act ostensibly as the representative of the resolutioners, while the main work given him to perform by the king was that of lulling presbyterian suspicion. Thus, when, by the act declaring illegal all leagues with any other nation made without the king's authority, the league and covenant made with England in 1643 was set aside as of no force for the future, Sharp explained to those whom he professed to represent that for the presbyterians to submit quietly to the act was the best way to gain their ends, as they would thus extinguish the jealousy which, on account of the covenant, the king might entertain towards them. By plausible and dexterous manœuvring he succeeded in preventing any representation being made to the king on behalf of the preservation of presbyterianism, and while assuring the king that it was only from the protesters that serious opposition to episcopacy was to be expected—the great body of the resolutioners being either lukewarm or really episcopalians—he afterwards excused himself for betraying his trust on the ground that no effort of his could have prevented the introduction of episcopacy. This, no doubt, was true; and it is also true that he occasionally in his letters dropped hints as to the king's preference, but these were mainly made with a view of showing the necessity of acting with prudence and forbearance. No doubt also Sharp, like many others who changed at this time to episcopacy, never was a zealous presbyterian. He had previously, it may be, merely submitted to it, and longed for an opportunity to cast it off. At any rate, believing that it was now doomed, he resolved to do the best for himself he could under the new *régime*; and, apparently acting on the maxim that all is fair in ecclesiastical politics, he seems to have had no scruples in playing what was beyond doubt a double part. The important service he had rendered to Monck and the king, and not less his diplomatic skill and strong personality, marked him out for high promotion. Meanwhile he was named his majesty's chaplain in Scotland, with a salary of 200*l.* per annum, and on 16 Jan. 1661 he was appointed professor of divinity in St. Mary's College, St. Andrews. After the rising of the parliament of 1661, by which episcopacy was established, he was nominated archbishop of St. Andrews, and on 15 Dec. he and three other Scottish bishops were solemnly consecrated at Westminster. In May 1662 ten other bishops were consecrated, the framework of the new ecclesiastical system being thus finally completed. Leighton, the mild and saintly bishop of Dunblane, told Burnet that he made to Sharp a proposal for uniting the presbyterians and episcopalians, according to the scheme of Archbishop Ussher, and was 'amazed when he observed that Sharp had neither formed any scheme nor seemed so much as willing to talk of any' (*Own Time*, p. 93). Indeed, instead of this, he began to prepare the way for the extinction of presbyterianism by issuing a proclamation forbidding clergymen to meet as a presbytery or other judicatory until the bishops should settle a method of proceeding in them (*ib.*) Having gone to London in 1664 to complain of the want of vigour and spirit in the administration, he returned, invested with 'the title and style of primate of Scotland,' the first place being also assigned him at the privy council. No doubt he was convinced, and rightly so, that the scheme proposed by the amiable Leighton could never be more than a dream. It was quite impossible that in Scotland episcopalians and presbyterians could now dwell together in unity; and episcopacy, he clearly realised, could never be regarded as secure while presbytery was even tolerated. Thus, partly from the determination to discharge to the best of his ability the duties of the office he had undertaken, partly from the knowledge that only thus could he establish himself in power and in the king's favour, partly probably from a sincere contempt for the peculiar fanaticism of the kirk, he hesitated at no severity in enforcing the annihilation of covenanting principles.

Such extreme zeal in one who had not merely been a prominent leader in the kirk, but who, having been entrusted with the special mission of representing its views to the king, had been the main agent in betraying it, naturally aroused against him, among the extreme covenanters, an almost unspeakable hate. On 9 July 1668 he was shot at with a pistol in the High Street, Edinburgh, by James Mitchell, who, after escaping capture for several years, was ultimately executed in 1678 [see MITCHELL or MITCHEL, JAMES]. Mitchell's execution intensified the antipathy to Sharp; and moreover the covenanters had gradually been roused into resistance and into acts of repri-

sal. On 3 May 1679 a number of Fife lairds and farmers had assembled on horseback on Magus Muir, between St. Andrews and Cupar, in the hope of capturing or killing Carmichael, sheriff-substitute of Fifeshire, the main agent in the persecution of the covenanters in the shire, when the carriage of the archbishop himself was unexpectedly seen approaching. In part influenced by the superstitious conviction that God meant to deliver him into their hands, and by the consideration that it would be more effectual to remove the principal than the subordinate, but chiefly inspired by an overpowering passion of hate, they at once resolved on the archbishop's death. David Hackston [q. v.], laird of Rathillet, was in command of the party; but having a private cause of quarrel against the archbishop, he resolved to hold aloof, and the duties of leader were undertaken by Balfour of Burleigh [see BALFOUR, JOHN]. Two separate accounts of the murder, differing considerably in details, have been published, the one being probably supplied by the daughter of Sharp, who was with him in the carriage, the other by one of the covenanters; but both agree in regard to the substantial facts: viz. that he was shot at while sitting beside his daughter Isabella in the carriage; that, finding he was not slain, the assassins, in the belief that he was proof against bullets, compelled him to come out of the carriage; and that they then fell upon him in a most ferocious manner with their swords until he received his deathblow. The escape of the assassins to the west of Scotland and the consequent insurrection form the subject of Scott's 'Old Mortality,' in which the main historic facts are closely adhered to (see notes c and p; cf. *Tales of a Grandfather*, ch. li.; and art. GRAHAM, JOHN, OF CLAVERHOUSE). Sharp was buried in the parish church of St. Andrews, where an elaborate marble monument, with a long inscription, was erected to his memory. His portrait, painted by Lely, belonged in 1866 to the Rev. F. G. Sandys Lumsdaine, and a copy is in the National Portrait Gallery, Edinburgh; it has been engraved by T. Dudley, D. Loggan (1675), and Vertue (1710).

By his wife Helen, daughter of Moncrieff of Randerston, he had two sons and five daughters: Sir William, who succeeded him in the barony of Scotscraig; John; Isabella, married to John Cunningham of Barns; Catherine; Margaret, married to William, lord Saltoun; and another, married to Erskine of Cambo.

[Ravillac Redivivus, being a Narrative of the Late Tryal of Mr. J. Mitchell for an Attempt on the Person of the Archbishop of St. Andrews; Barbarous Murder of Archbishop Sharp, 3 May 1679 (in verse), 1679; Some Account of the Horrid Murder committed on the late Lord Archbishop of St. Andrews, 1679; Some Account of what is discovered concerning the Murder of Archbishop Sharp, and of what appeurs to have been the Occasion thereof, 1679; Fanatical Moderation, or Unparalleled Villainy displayed: being a Faithful Narrative of the Barbarous Murder, &c., 1679 and 1711; Life of Archbishop Sharp, first printed in 1678, to which is added an Account of his Death, by an Eye-Witness, 1719; True Account of the Life of James Sharp, 1723; Stephen's Life and Times of Archbishop Sharp, 1839; Wodrow's History of the Kirk of Scotland; Kirkton's History of the Kirk of Scotland; Burnet's Own Time; Nicoll's Diary and Robert Baillie's Letters and Journals in the Bannatyne Club; Keith's Scottish Bishops; Hew Scott's Fasti Eccles. Scot. A number of Sharp's letters are included in the Addit. MSS. in the British Museum; and thirty-four letters, witten to him by the Duke and Duchess of Lauderdale, &c., were published in the Miscellany of the Scottish History Society, 1893.] T. F. H.

SHARP, JOHN (1572?–1648?), Scottish theologian, was born about 1572. He studied at the university of St. Andrews, and received the degree of M.A. in 1592. In 1601 he became minister of Kilmany in Fife, a parish in the gift of St. Salvator's College, St. Andrews. He was appointed clerk to the assembly which met at Aberdeen on 2 July 1605 in opposition to the commands of James VI, who was taking decisive steps to repress the independence of the Scottish church (*Scottish P. C. Reg.* 1604–7, p. 472). In consequence Sharp and those present at the assembly were ordered to appear before the privy council on 24 Oct. When they presented themselves they declared the authority of the privy council incompetent to judge a purely ecclesiastical question. For this conduct Sharp and five other ministers were confined in Blackness Castle and served with an indictment to stand their trial for high treason before the court of justiciary at Linlithgow. There they were found guilty in January 1606, and on 23 Oct. banished for life (*ib.* pp. 83–5, 101–5, 112, 123–5, 134, 199; CALDERWOOD, *Hist. of the Kirk*, vi. 292–332). Sharp went to France, where in 1608 he was appointed professor of theology in the college of Die in Dauphiné. In 1618 Archbishop Spotiswood asserted that Sharp had written to him beseeching him to obtain his recall and promising submission. This statement was vehemently denied by Sharp's friends, and the letter itself was never produced. There is no doubt, however, that he would

have welcomed a reconciliation on honourable terms, and he dedicated his 'Cursus Theologicus' to King James in the same year. In 1630 Cardinal Richelieu ordered him to leave France, where he had acquired considerable renown as a protestant theologian, and he came over to London. In the same year he became professor of divinity in the university of Edinburgh, and died about 1648, when Alexander Colvill succeeded him.

He published: 1. 'Tractatus de Justificatione hominis coram Deo,' Geneva, 1609 and 1612, 8vo. 2. 'Tractatus de misero hominis statu sub peccato,' Geneva, 1610, 8vo. 3. 'Cursus Theologicus,' Geneva, 1618, 4to; Geneva, 1622, 4to. 4. 'Symphonia Prophetarum et Apostolorum,' Geneva, 1625 and 1639, 4to.

[Scott's Fasti Eccl. Scot. II. ii. 497; M'Crie's Life of Melville, 1st ed. ii. 253; Young's Life of Welsh, p. 169; Pitcairn's Criminal Trials, ii. 494.] E. I. C.

SHARP, JOHN (1645–1714), archbishop of York, born at Bradford on 16 Feb. 1644–5, was the eldest son of Thomas Sharp, wet and dry salter, by Dorothy, eldest daughter of John Weddal of Widdington, Yorkshire. The family had long been settled in Bradfordale. Sharp's youngest brother, Sir Joshua (*d.* 1718), an eminent stationer, was sheriff of London in 1713 (NICHOLS, *Lit. Anecd.* viii. 354). His father, a puritan who enjoyed the favour of Fairfax, inculcated in him Calvinistic doctrines, but his mother, a strong royalist, instructed him in the liturgy. On 26 April 1660 he was admitted at Christ's College, Cambridge, and in the fourth year of his residence was made 'scholar of the house.' He attended the lectures of Thomas Burnet (1635?–1715) [q. v.] in natural philosophy, and gave much attention to chemistry and botany. In 1663 he graduated B.A., and began to study divinity. He also 'kept to hard study of the Greek authors' till 1667, when he 'commenced master.' Soon after, on the recommendation of Henry More (1614–1687) [q. v.], the Platonist, who had been pleased with his reading of the lessons in the college chapel, Sharp became domestic chaplain and tutor at Kensington House, in the family of Sir Heneage Finch [q. v.], then solicitor-general. He was ordained deacon and priest on 12 Aug. 1667 at St. Mary's, Westminster, by special faculty from Archbishop Sheldon. On 12 July 1669, together with other Cambridge men, he was incorporated at Oxford, on the occasion of the opening of the Sheldonian Theatre (WOOD, *Fasti*, ii. 311). Sharp remained in Finch's house till his marriage in 1676. In 1673 he was appointed, on Finch's nomination, archdeacon of Berkshire. Through the same influence Sharp became in 1675 prebendary of Norwich and incumbent of St. Bartholomew's, Exchange, London. The latter post he resigned the same year for the rectory of St. Giles's-in-the-Fields. When Finch became lord keeper and lord chancellor, Sharp acted as his adviser in the bestowal of ecclesiastical patronage.

After his marriage Sharp lived for four years in Chancery Lane with William Rawlinson, who had married his wife's sister. He soon gained the reputation of being one of the best preachers of the day. In 1679 he was made lecturer at St. Lawrence Jewry, where the Friday sermons had been much frequented since Tillotson delivered them. In the same year he was created D.D. at Cambridge by proxy. In 1680 he delivered sermons at the Yorkshire feast and at the election of lord mayor of London. He now removed to Great Russell Street, where he remained till he became archbishop. On 8 July 1681, 'at the intercession of the Duke of York and Lord Arlington,' he was named dean of Norwich; he retained the rectory of St. Giles.

In 1674 he printed a sermon attacking the dissenters. Dodwell defended it, and Baxter replied to Dodwell. In 1683–4, in two 'Discourses concerning Conscience,' Sharp amplified his argument, and maintained the necessity of dissenters' communion with the church (cf. BENNET, *Abridgment of the London Cases*, Cambridge, 1700). Sharp's argument was employed in 1704 by a writer in favour of reunion with Rome, and a fresh controversy followed.

In 1685 Sharp drew up for the grand jury of London their address of congratulation on the accession of James II. On 20 April 1686 he became chaplain in ordinary to the king. But, provoked by the tampering of Roman catholics with his parishioners, he preached two sermons at St. Giles's on 2 and 9 May, which were held to reflect on the king. Sharp assured Burnet that nothing of the kind was intended, and, to refute the charge, went to court to show the notes he had used. He was not admitted, and on 14 June Compton, bishop of London, was ordered to suspend him. He refused, but in an interview at Doctors' Commons on the 18th instant privately advised Sharp to 'forbear the pulpit' for the present (BURNET, *Hist. Own Time*, iii. 100 et seq.; cf. EVELYN, *Diary*, pp. 255, 257). His appeals to Sunderland and Middleton for full reinstatement met with no response. On 1 July, by the advice of Jeffreys, he left London for Norwich; but

when he returned to London in December his petition, revised by Jeffreys, was received, and in January 1687 he was reinstated.

In August 1688 Sharp was summoned before the ecclesiastical commission for refusing to read the declaration of indulgence. He argued that though obedience was due to the king in preference to the archbishop, yet that obedience went no further than things *licita et honesta*. After the Revolution he visited Jeffreys (who had befriended him in the Tower) and 'freely expostulated with him upon his public actions, and particularly the affairs in the west.'

On 27 Jan. 1689 Sharp preached before the Prince of Orange, and three days later before the convention. On each occasion he prayed for King James, on the ground that the lords had not yet concurred in the abdication vote. The speaker of the House of Commons complained of the second sermon as an affront, and a hot debate took place; but, notwithstanding Evelyn's statement to the contrary (*Diary*, ii. 291), the preacher received the thanks of the house on 1 Feb. (*Life of Sharp*; MACAULAY, ii. 639). Nor was the court displeased. Sharp preached before Queen Mary on the first Friday in Lent, and 'was taken into no small favour.' On 7 Sept. 1689 he was named dean of Canterbury, in succession to Tillotson, and was appointed a commissioner for reform of the liturgy and the ecclesiastical courts. In 1690 he was offered his choice of the sees vacated by the nonjurors, but declined to accept any of them during the life of the deprived prelates, among whom were personal friends. William III was 'not a little disgusted' by his refusal; but Tillotson, now primate, who was Sharp's lifelong friend, intervened and induced him to give a promise to accept the see of York when it should fall vacant. A fortnight later Archbishop Thomas Lamplugh [q. v.] died, and on 5 July 1691 Sharp was consecrated by Tillotson. On 5 Oct. he took the tests in the House of Lords. He held the archiepiscopal see longer than any of his predecessors since the Reformation. He made elaborate inquiries into its rights and revenues, and drew up a manuscript account in four folios, which he bequeathed to his successors. It included the lives and acts of the archbishops from Paulinus to Lamplugh. Le Neve and Willis benefited by his labours. In 1693 he visited and regulated the chapter of Southwell, which had fallen into some disorder. When, in 1711, a great part of York minster was burnt, he raised almost a third of the sum necessary for the repairs. In dealing with his clergy he was firm but considerate. He consistently refused to be influenced in the distribution of his patronage by political motives, and declined to interfere in the conduct of parliamentary elections, even when applied to by Lady Russell and the Duke of Leeds. He attended York minster thrice a week, and himself preached about once a fortnight. He would not allow in the pulpit 'railing at dissenters,' and approved useful rather than showy preaching. He discouraged in his diocese the societies 'for the reformation of manners' which began to spring up about 1697, thinking their methods of doubtful legality. He interested himself in the condition of the distressed Scottish episcopal clergy both under William and Anne. He was often applied to in cases of conscience, and made converts among both nonjurors and dissenters, including William Higden [q. v.] and Robert Nelson [q. v.], Bishop Bull's biographer. Baxter was intimate with him, and attended not only his sermons but his sacraments (SILVESTER, *Life*, p. 437).

With politics, when not affecting the church, Sharp rarely concerned himself. In April 1694 he took charge successfully, for Stillingfleet, of a bill dealing with small tithes. In 1692 he opposed the bill for annual parliaments as prejudicial to the prerogative. He was opposed to bills of attainder, and voted against that in the case of Sir John Fenwick (1645?–1697) [q. v.], notwithstanding an interview with the king at Kensington on 8 Dec. 1696. He signed the 'association' to protect William's life, but caused a definition of the word 'revenging' to be entered on the journals of the House of Lords. At the coronation of Anne, on 23 April 1702, Sharp delivered a short and impressive discourse (STRICKLAND, *Queens of England*, viii. 150). According to the Duchess of Marlborough, he was selected as 'being a warm and zealous man for the church, and reckoned a tory' (*Account of her Conduct*, p. 134). He was appointed the queen's almoner, and was sworn of the privy council. He was also appointed a commissioner for the Scottish union, but took no part in the proceedings. Under Anne, Sharp occupied a very important position, which he never abused. In the words of his biographer, 'in church matters he was her principal guide, in matters of state her confident' (*sic*). In one of their numerous private conferences (December 1706), Sharp noted in his diary that Anne said 'I should be her confessor, and she would be mine.' Although they were in general agreement, the archbishop occasionally gave votes against the queen's wishes. As her ecclesiastical adviser, he induced her to give back the

revenues of the Savoy chapel, supported the bounty scheme and its extension to the Irish church, and acted as mediator in the disputes between the two houses of convocation. He was active in advocating the interests of foreign protestants at the time of the negotiations for peace. He gave a hospitable reception to the Armenian bishops, who came over in 1706 to raise money for printing bibles in their language; and to Arsenius, bishop of Thebaïs, who came from Egypt in 1713 (*Lit. Anecd.* viii. 250). From 1710 onwards he carried on a correspondence with Jablonski, chaplain to Frederick I of Prussia, with the object of solving the disputes there between Lutherans and Calvinists by means of the introduction of the English liturgy. The death of the king of Prussia put an end to the negotiations. The correspondence, collected by Thomas Sharp, son of the archbishop, and translated into French by J. T. Muysson, minister of the French protestant chapel at St. James's, was published in 1757 for presentation to Frederick the Great (see *Relation des mesures . . . pour introduire la Liturgie Anglicane dans le Roiaume de Prusse et dans l'Electorat de Hanovre. Eclaircie par des lettres et autres Pièces originales,*' &c., with preface by Granville Sharp [q. v.] in Append. III. to *Life of Archbishop Sharp*).

Sharp procured the promotion of Beveridge, Potter, Prideaux, and Bull. Swift credited him and the Duchess of Somerset with helping to prevent his obtaining the see of Hereford, but hints that he regretted his action (vide 'The Author upon himself' in Swift's *Works*, ed. Scott, 2nd edit. xii. 315–18; cf. Schutz to Robethon, February 1714, in Macpherson's *Original Papers*, ii. 562; Strickland, *Queens of England*, viii. 483; and art. Seymour, Charles, sixth Duke of Somerset). The cause of offence was supposed to be Sharp's dislike of the 'Tale of a Tub.' It has been plausibly argued that Swift borrowed the plan of his satire from Sharp's own 'Refutation of a Popish Argument handed about in Manuscript in 1686' (see letter by 'Indagator' [Charles Clarke] in *Gent. Mag.* 1814, ii. 20–22).

On 10 May 1713 Sharp had his last interview with Anne, and obtained from her a promise to nominate as his successor at York Sir William Dawes, bishop of Chester. In December he fell ill, and on the 9th made the last entry in his diary, in which he had written weekly from 1691 till 1702 and daily since. He died at Bath on 2 Feb. 1714. He was buried in St. Mary's Chapel, York minster, where an elaborate Latin inscription was placed on his monument by Smalridge, bishop of Bristol. The epitaph is given in Willis's 'Survey of Cathedrals' (i. 60–3), and, with translation, in Wilford's 'Memorials of Eminent Persons' (Appendix).

Sharp was married, by Tillotson, at Clerkenwell in 1676 to Elizabeth Palmer of Winthorp, Lincolnshire. Of his fourteen children, only four survived him. Of these, John Sharp (1678–1727) of Grafton Park represented Ripon from 1701 to 1714; he was a commissioner of trade from 15 Sept. 1713 to September 1714 (Haydn), and died on 9 March 1726–7; in Wicken church, Northamptonshire, there is a monument to him and his wife Anna Maria, daughter of Charles Hosier of Wicken Park. Thomas (1693–1758), the youngest son and biographer of the archbishop, is separately noticed.

Macky in 1702 described Sharp as 'a black man, one of the greatest ornaments of the Church of England.' All authorities agree in praising him as a preacher and divine. His tastes were liberal. 'He loved poetry all his life,' writes his son; and Onslow, in a note to Burnet, says that he was wont to say that the Bible and Shakespeare made him archbishop of York (*Hist. of his own Time*, iii. 100). He is also said to have 'admitted and admired the new philosophy of Sir Isaac Newton, of which he used frequently to discourse.' His hobby was the collection of coins. These he left to his friend Ralph Thoresby [q. v.], together with a manuscript treatise, 'Observations on the Coinage of England.' This is said to have been of great use to Thoresby and succeeding writers, such as Stephen Martin Leake [q. v.] The manuscript, purchased by Gough in 1764 at the sale of Thoresby's museum, was printed in Nichols's 'Bibliotheca Topographica Britannica' (vol. vi.; cf. *Lit. Anecdotes*, ix. 97). Part of it also appeared in Ives's 'Select Papers' (1773).

As a controversialist Sharp was strenuous, but candid and urbane. Several of his sermons appeared in his lifetime. 'Fifteen Sermons on several Occasions' reached a seventh edition in 1738. Some sermons were contained in 'Protestant Writers' (vol. ix. 1762, 'Family Lectures' (vol. ii. 1791), Cochrane's 'Protestant Manual' (1839), Brogden's 'Illustrations of the Liturgy' (iii. 1842). Felton, in his 'Dissertations upon reading the Classics,' held them up as models of style. Evelyn, who heard him preach at the Temple in April 1696, notes that 'his prayer before the sermon was one of the most excellently composed I ever heard' (*Diary*, ii. 341). As compared with Tillotson, Burnet found him wanting in

knowledge of the world. Of his general theological position Macaulay wrote that he was 'the highest churchman that had been zealous for comprehension and the lowest that felt a scruple about succeeding a deprived prelate' (*Hist.* iv. 43). The first collective edition of his works was published in seven volumes in 1754. An edition in five volumes appeared at Oxford in 1829.

A portrait, engraved by Scriven, representing Sharp in his robes, is prefixed to vol. i. of his 'Life.' Three others, engraved by E. Cooper, White (1691, prefixed to 'Sermons,' 1709), and F. Kyte, are mentioned in Bromley's 'Catalogue.'

[The Life of John Sharp, with three appendices containing 'select, original, and copies of original papers,' was written by his son Thomas Sharp, archdeacon of Northumberland. It remained in manuscript until 1825, when it appeared in two volumes edited by Thomas Newcome, rector of Shenley and vicar of Tottenham, who obtained access to it through his friendship with a great-granddaughter of the archbishop. The third appendix, added by the editor, contains letters of Granville Sharp. The Life, founded chiefly on the archbishop's shorthand diary, is supplemented by other contemporary sources, of which a detailed list copied from Cole (Addit. MS. 5880, f. 75) is given in the editor's appendix. The chief are Birch's Life of Tillotson; Whiston's Memoirs of himself and of Dr. Clarke, and his Historical Preface to Primitive Christianity Revived. The compiler of the article in the Biographia Britannica, 1760, had the help of Archdeacon Sharp. The article in Chalmers's Biogr. Dict. is founded also on Le Neve's Protestant Bishops, 1720, and Todd's Deans of Canterbury. Thoresby's Ducatus Leodiensis, ed. Whitaker, p. 37, gives the Sharp pedigree. Macaulay makes much use of the Life of Sharp. For a full statement of his theological position, see Abbey's English Church and its Bishops in the Eighteenth Century, i. 103–5.] G. Le G. N.

SHARP or SHARPE, LEONEL (1559–1631), royal chaplain, second son of Robert Sharpe, a merchant, of London, and of Julian, eldest daughter of Sir Richard Mallorie, lord mayor, was born in 1559 (*Harl. Soc. Publ.* vi. 259). He entered Eton College in 1576, and proceeded as fellow to King's College, Cambridge. He graduated B.A. in 1581, M.A. in 1584, and received from the university the degree of D.D. before 1603. In 1588 he was present at Tilbury camp in the capacity of chaplain to the Earl of Essex, and was chosen, as he states, to repeat Elizabeth's celebrated oration to the whole army assembled there (Letter to Buckingham in *Cabala sive Scrinia Sacra*, p. 259). In 1589 and in 1596 he accompanied Essex in his expeditions to Cadiz and Portugal, and his share in these exploits fostered his strong anti-papal and anti-Spanish tendencies (*ib.* p. 259; Birch, *Mem. of Elizabeth*, ii. 17). In 1590 Sharp became rector of Malpas in Cheshire, and in 1597 of Tiverton and Stoke-in-Teignhead in Devonshire. When Essex was executed for treason, Sharp was banished to his Devonshire parishes. In May 1601, in a letter to Cecil, he professed the strongest personal affection for Essex, but asserted that when he became aware of his patron's disloyalty he had not hesitated for a moment to espouse the queen's cause (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1601–3, p. 27). He was soon after appointed a royal chaplain. True to his policy of ingratiating himself with those in authority, Sharp celebrated the commencement of James I's reign by a laudatory sermon on Solomon and the queen of Sheba, preached before the university of Cambridge at St. Mary's. He also succeeded in obtaining the patronage of the Earl of Northampton, whom the new reign brought into prominence. In 1605 he became archdeacon of Berkshire and rector of North Moreton in that county. He was also about this time appointed chaplain to Henry, prince of Wales, in which capacity he addressed a congratulatory epistle to him on his escape from the gunpowder plot (Birch, *Life of Prince Henry*, pp. 62, 415).

But his career at court soon terminated after Prince Henry's death in 1612. Already, in 1606, he had been summoned to clear himself to the council of the suspicion of endeavouring to stir up strife between the English and the Scottish factions at court (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. Add. 1580–1625, p. 482). In 1614 John Hoskins (1566–1638) [q. v.], speaking in parliament concerning Scottish favourites, made an allusion to the Sicilian Vespers. On being called to account he pleaded that he did not understand the nature of his threat, but that it had been suggested to him by Sharp. Both Hoskins and Sharp, together with Sir Charles Cornwallis, who was also implicated, were committed to the Tower on 22 June. Sharp's health suffered from confinement, but he was not released till 15 June of the following year (*ib.* 1611–1618, pp. 237, 289, 344).

Sharp made several attempts to regain favour by means of obsequious sermons. He also wrote several letters to the king and to various ministers, in which he advocated the adoption of Elizabeth's domestic policy, and magnified the part which he had formerly played in state affairs (*ib.* 1628–9, pp. 96, 541; *Cabala*, pp. 285–7). In 1618, according to Chamberlain, he penned the defence

of Sir Lewis Stukeley [q. v.] against the charge of betraying Sir Walter Ralegh (*Cal. State Papers*, Dom. 1611–18, p. 600). In the same year the university of Oxford conferred on him the honorary degree of D.D. In his later years he resided at Boughton Malherb in Kent, one of his parishes. There he died on 1 Jan. 1630–1, and was buried in the church, a marble monument marking his grave. About 1597 he married Ann, daughter of John Chichester of Hall in Devonshire.

He was the author of: 1. 'Dialogus inter Angliam et Scotiam,' Cambridge, 1603, 8vo. 2. 'Oratio Funebris in honorem Henrici Wall. Prin.,' 1612, London, 4to, with verses by his brothers Edward, Andrew, and William, prefixed; translated into English by Edward Sharp, 1616, 4to. 3. 'Novum Fidei Symbolum,' 1612, London, 4to. 4. 'Speculum Papæ,' 1612, London, 4to. The last two were jointly translated into English under the title 'A Looking-glass for the Pope,' 1623, 4to.

[Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ed. Bliss, iv. 625; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714; Harwood's Alumni Eton. p. 187; Wood's Fasti, ed. Bliss, i. 385; Lansdowne MS. 984, f. 92; Gardiner's Hist. of Engl. ii. 250; Birch's Court and Times of James I, i. 326; Reliquiæ Wottonianæ, p. 34; Hasted's Kent, ii. 437; Gent. Mag. 1820, ii. 16; Le Neve's Fasti, ii. 636; Hazlitt's Handbook, p. 552.] E. I. C.

SHARP, MICHAEL WILLIAM (*d.* 1840), painter, appears to have been born in London, and was a pupil of Sir William Beechey, R.A. He also studied in the schools of the Royal Academy. In 1813 he was settled at Norwich, where he appears to have been a pupil of John Crome [q. v.], with whom he lodged, and of whom he painted a small portrait, besides being godfather to one of his sons. Afterwards he became one of the prominent painters of the Norwich school, with whom he exhibited for some years. Sharp appears as a portrait-painter at the Royal Academy in 1801, but he attained his greatest success as a painter of small domestic scenes, usually of a humorous character. One of these, 'The Music Master,' exhibited at the British Institution in 1809, gained a premium of fifty guineas and was purchased by Mr. Thomas Hope. He obtained many commissions, and his pictures were usually quickly sold at the exhibitions. Many of them also were engraved, such as 'Sunday Morning' (R.A. 1820), 'The Sailor's Wedding' (R.A. 1828), 'The Black Draught,' and 'The Spoilt Child.' Sharp also executed for theatrical patrons several groups, containing portraits of the principal performers on the stage at that date, such as 'Queen Constance before the Tents of the English and Foreign Sovereigns,' painted in 1819; 'An Author reading his Drama to an Assemblage of the Performers in the Green Room of Drury Lane Theatre;' 'The Shakespeare Jubilee, with Portraits of the principal Covent Garden Performers,' &c. Sharp's works, despite a tendency to vulgarity, were very popular in his day. Sharp appears to have returned to London in 1820, and died at Boulogne in 1840. A lecture by him, delivered in 1820 to the Philosophical Society at Norwich, is printed in Elmes's 'Annals of the Fine Arts,' vols. iv. and v., as 'An Essay on Gesture.'

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Graves's Dict. of Artists, 1760–1893; Annals of the Fine Arts, vols. iv. and v. passim.] L. C.

SHARP, PATRICK (*d.* 1615), Scottish theologian, was made master of Glasgow grammar school in 1574. While in this position he was brought much into contact with Andrew Melville (1545-1622) [q. v.], to whom he acknowledged many obligations (James Melville, *Diary*, ed. Pitcairn, p. 50). Soon after 1575 he was appointed one of a commission of classical scholars to draw up a new Latin grammar for use in the Scottish schools (*Reg. of Scottish Privy Council*, ed. Masson, ii. 475, v. 110, xxv). In 1585 James VI appointed him principal of the university of Glasgow. From this time he took an important part in the government and controversies of the Scottish church. He seems to have wished to preserve a position of neutrality between the two parties which divided the kirk, but he gradually inclined to the king's party. In 1586 he was placed on a commission charged by the general assembly to control the proceedings of the bishops (Calderwood, *History of the Kirk*, ed. Thomson, iv. 570). In 1596 the general assembly appointed him and fifteen others to organise the church in opposition to the government. In consequence he was ordered by the privy council to return to Glasgow (*Reg. of Scottish Privy Council*, v. 333). But in the same year he took part in the reactionary general assembly at Perth, and in 1597 he formed part of the commission to whom were delegated the powers of the general assembly when that body was not in session, and whose appointment paved the way for the re-establishment of episcopacy (*ib.* p. 385; Calderwood, v. 420, 609, 645, 701). In 1606 Sharp was summoned to Hampton Court, with seven other divines, to support the king's side in a debate with Andrew Melville and seven ultra-presbyte-

rians on the general questions at issue between king and kirk (Melville, *Diary*, pp. 659, 684, 724, 754, 760). In the same year he was appointed constant moderator to the Glasgow presbytery in the absence of the bishop, and encountered such opposition that the privy council were obliged to order the presbytery to receive him under pain of rebellion. Yet in the following year he was rebuked for endeavouring to extend the judicial powers of the presbytery to the decision of criminal cases (*Reg. of Privy Council*, vii. 379). In 1609 Sharp took part in the Falkland conference, which was intended to render matters easy for the bishops at the general assembly (Melville, *Diary*, p. 770). On 15 May 1610 he was appointed to the Scottish court of high commission, and held the office till 11 Aug. 1614 (*ib.* pp. 788, 797; *Reg. of Privy Council*, viii. 481). He died in May 1615, having been twice married: first, to Mary Fowlls, widow of John Houlden of Balwill, on 1 Sept. 1593, by whom he had two sons, David and Christian, and two daughters; and, secondly, to Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Gale of Eastwood, by whom he had a son James.

Sharp was a distinguished scholar and the teacher of John Cameron (1579?–1625) [q. v.] But only one of his works survives, viz. 'Doctrinæ Christianæ brevis explicatio,' printed by Robert Waldegrave in Edinburgh in 1599.

[Scott's Fasti Ecclesiæ Scot. II. i. 66; Baillie's Letters, iii. 577; M'Ure's Glasgow, p. 224; M'Crie's Life of Andrew Melville, i. 77, 136, ii. 311; Munimenta Universitatis Glasguensis (Maitland Soc.), index.] E. I. C.

SHARP, RICHARD (1759–1835), known as 'Conversation Sharp,' the son of an English officer, was born in the British garrison at Newfoundland in 1759. He adopted a commercial life, and for many years was a partner in the West India house of Boddington, Sharp, & Phillips in Fish Street Hill, London. Afterwards he was a member of the firm of Richard Sharp & Co., hat manufacturers, at the same address, and in 1806 was described as of Mark Lane. In business he amassed a considerable fortune.

Through life Sharp took a keen interest in politics and in literature. In his early years he knew Johnson and Burke. His friendship with Rogers began in the spring of 1792, and in the following July they made a tour together in the south of England. They became the 'closest and most intimate friends.' He made the acquaintance of Sir James Mackintosh about 1788 at a meeting of the Society for obtaining Constitutional Information. Mackintosh said that Sharp was the best critic he had ever known, and discussed metaphysics with him for hours in the chambers of Rogers in the Temple. In the winter of 1791–2 Sharp co-operated with the leading members of the whig party in forming a society for obtaining a reform of parliament, which was known as 'Friends of the People.' He was a man of many clubs and societies, both literary and political. As a friend of Isaac Reed [q. v.], he belonged to the Unincreasable Club in Holborn, of which Reed was president, and he joined the Eumelean Club at the Blenheim tavern in Bond Street (Nichols, *Lit. Anecdotes*, ii. 638, 672). He was one of the original members of the Literary Society founded in 1806 (M. E. Grant Duff, *Notes*, 1897, ii. 289). He also attended, with Canning and Mackintosh, a debating society held at the Clifford Street coffee-house at the corner of Bond Street, and when the King of Clubs was instituted by 'Bobus' Smith about 1801 at the Crown and Anchor tavern in the Strand, three of the earliest members were Erskine, Curran, and Sharp (Cunningham, *London*, ed. Wheatley, i. 425, 480). He was elected F.S.A. on 19 April 1787, and F.R.S. on 12 June 1806.

From 1806 to 1812 Sharp sat in parliament as a consistent whig for the pocket borough of Castle Rising in Norfolk. At a by-election in March 1816 he was returned for the Irish constituency of Portarlington, and he was re-elected at the general election in 1818, but resigned early in 1819, and his friend David Ricardo [q. v.] took his place. He was returned for Ilchester at the general election of 1826, but by an order of the House of Commons on 22 Feb. 1827 his name was erased from the list and the seat given to another. For a time he was a member of the finance committee, and a high compliment was paid to him by Henry Bankes [q. v.] for his services; but his name was not included in the renewed committee of June 1807 (*Hansard*, ix. 692–715). He was also a member of Horner's bullion committee (*ib.* xix. 1061). His chief speech was made on 21 March 1808 in introducing a motion condemning the expedition to Copenhagen (*ib.* x. 1185–1215), but this success was not followed up by later speeches. He was, however, on the testimony of Samuel Rogers, 'very active in the background.'

Sharp, when in London, lived in Park Lane, and in the country his 'cottage-home' was at Fredley Farm in Mickleham, near Dorking (Thorne, *Environs of London*, ii. 430). At these houses he gathered around him the chief persons of the day, and he knew their characters so well that he could

hit them off in a moment. His conversational talents gave him his nickname. Some notes of his talk are given in the 'Merivale Family Memorials,' pp. 210–11, and Henry Mill said in 1840, 'it was a fine thing for me to hear Conversation Sharp and my father [James Mill] converse' (C. Fox, *Journals*, i. 146–7). A list of the visitors at Fredley between 1797 and 1835 is given in 'Maria Drummond,' 1891, pp. 30–2. They included Horner (cf. *Memoirs*, ii. 355–6), Grattan, and Sydney Smith, who was so often there that he was dubbed 'the bishop of Mickleham.' Sharp was very friendly with Tom Moore, and was very kind to Macaulay at his entrance into life. Hallam introduces him as 'my late friend, Richard Sharp, whose good taste is well known' (*Lit. Hist. Europe*, pt. iv. chap. vii. *n.*) He was a friend of John Horne Tooke, and a familiar guest at Holland House. In the autumn of 1816 Sharp, while on the lake of Geneva, visited Byron, who preserved some of his anecdotes (Moore, *Byron*, 1847 ed., pp. 205, 231, 323, 475).

Sharp often travelled on the continent, particularly in France, Switzerland, and Italy, and he was a frequent visitor to the English lakes, where he made the acquaintance of their poets. Wordsworth used to say that Sharp knew Italy better than any one he ever met (Knight, *Life of Wordsworth*, iii. 250–1). In the spring of 1804 he entertained Coleridge very generously in London. His health began to decline about 1832; he spent the winter of 1834–5 at Torquay. He died unmarried at Dorchester, while on the journey to London, on 30 March 1835. His ward and adopted child, Maria Kinnaird, married Thomas Drummond (1797–1840) [q. v.] She inherited the bulk of Sharp's property, including the estate at Fredley and a house at Hyde Park Gardens, in which was the Reynolds portrait of Dr. Johnson, that had been bought at the Thrale sale in 1816. Mrs. Drummond died at Fredley on 15 Jan. 1891.

In 1828 Sharp issued to his friends an anonymous volume of 'Epistles in Verse,' which were composed abroad between 1816 and 1823. They were reproduced, with the addition of an 'Epistle to Lord Holland, Windermere, 1829,' in his volume of 'Letters and Essays in Prose and Verse' (anon.), 1834; 2nd ed. by Richard Sharp, 1834; 3rd ed., 1834. These were noticed in the 'Quarterly Review,' li. 285–304, and were pronounced remarkable 'for wisdom, wit, knowledge of the world, and sound criticism.' He had contributed in 1784 a preface to the 'Essay towards an English Grammar,' by his old schoolmaster, John Fell (1735–1797) [q. v.], and a paper by him, 'On the Nature and Utility of Eloquence,' was read before the Literary and Philosophical Society of Manchester on 2 Nov. 1787, and printed in its 'Memoirs' (iii. 307–29). A 'Letter to the Public Meeting of the Friends to the Repeal of the Test and Corporation Acts from a Lay Dissenter, 1790,' is attributed to him (Halkett and Laing, *Dict. of Anon. Lit.* ii. 1403–4).

Sharp at one time contemplated writing a history of the establishment of American independence, a scheme which was encouraged by his intimate friend, John Adams, afterwards president of the United States. Sharp assisted in the 'Memoirs of Mackintosh.' Numerous letters to him are in that work, i. 128 et seq.; Parr's 'Works,' vii. 322–4; Knight's 'Wordsworth,' i. 377–8, ii. 9–118, iii. 61–2, 77; and Mr. Clayden's volumes on Samuel Rogers.

[Gent. Mag. 1835 ii. 96–7; (Marsh) Clubs of London, ii. 161–2; Timbs's Clubs, i. 165–6, 169; Clayden's Early Life of Rogers, p. 253 to end; Clayden's Rogers and Contemporaries, passim; Wilson's House of Commons, 1808, p. 133; Dyce's Table Talk of Rogers, pp. 18, 132–3, 197; Notes and Queries, 7th ser. ix. 419, 513; Paul's Maria Drummond, 1891; Times, 17 Jan. 1891, p. 10; Bright's Dorking, pp. 137–44; Lady Holland's Sydney Smith, i. 129, ii. 364–6; Horner's Memoirs, i. 183–5, 253–4; Walpole's Lord John Russell, i. 229–20; Cowper's Works, ed. Bruce, i. p. cvii; Memoirs of Mackintosh, i. pp. iv. 169, 433.] W. P. C.

SHARP, SAMUEL (1700?–1778), surgeon, son of Henry Sharp of the island of Jamaica, was born about 1700. He was bound apprentice for seven years to William Cheselden [q. v.], the great surgeon at St. Thomas's Hospital, on 2 March 1724. He paid 300*l.* when his indentures were signed, the money being found by Elizabeth Sale, a widow living at Hertford. Sharp appears to have spent a part of his apprenticeship in France, where he made the acquaintance of Voltaire, and acquired that knowledge of French surgery which afterwards stood him in good stead. He was admitted a freeman of the Barber-Surgeons' Company on 7 March 1731, obtained his diploma on 4 April 1732, and on 6 June, when he was living in Ingram Court, Fenchurch Street, he 'was admitted into the livery and clothing of the Company.' He was elected surgeon to Guy's Hospital on 9 Aug. 1733, the year in which Cheselden published his 'Osteographia.' Sharp is said to have assisted his former master in the preparation of this great work, and Cheselden introduced a portrait of Belchier and Sharp

into the frontispiece. Sharp rapidly acquired an extensive practice. In 1746 want of leisure, probably combined with frequent attacks of asthma, led him to resign to William Hunter the 'course of anatomical lectures, to which were added the operations of surgery, with the application of bandages,' He had been in the habit of delivering the lectures in Covent Garden on winter afternoons to a society of navy surgeons. Out of these lectures grew Hunter's Great Windmill Street school of medicine, which laid the foundations of modern medical teaching. Sharp paid a second visit to Paris in 1749, and was elected a member of the Paris Royal Society, having been made a fellow of the Royal Society of London on 13 April 1749. The direct outcome of this journey was 'A Critical Enquiry into the Present State of Surgery,' published in 1754, a work which gives an interesting account of the contemporary practice of surgery, especially in French schools.

Sharp resigned his appointment at Guy's Hospital on 23 Sept. 1757 on the ground of ill-health; but he continued to practise until 1765, when he set out on a winter tour through Italy. The results were published in his plain-speaking 'Letters from Italy,' which appeared in August 1766. Dr. Johnson thought 'there was a great deal of matter in them.' The publication of a second edition in 1767 called forth Baretti's 'Account of the Manners and Customs of Italy,' an acrid criticism of Sharp's views. It was answered by Sharp in 'A View of the Customs, Manners, Drama, &c., of Italy, as they are described in the "Frusta Litteraria,"' London, 8vo, 1768. Sharp died on 24 March 1778.

'Sharp,' says Sir James Paget, 'was a thoroughly informed surgeon, well-read, observant, judicious, a lover of simplicity, wisely doubtful. I think, too, he must have been an eminently safe man, who might be relied on for knowing or doing whatever, in his time, could be known or done for the good of his patients. In this view, I believe he was as good a surgeon as Hunter; but there is nothing in his books that can justly be called pathology, nor any sign of a really scientific method of study. They contain the practice, not the principles, of surgery.' Sharp's work attracted much notice upon the continent, and he is interesting as the immediate link connecting the old with modern surgery. Cheselden was his master; Hunter, if not actually his pupil, learnt from him by tradition. Among other improvements in surgical instruments introduced by Sharp, he is said to have been the first to suggest that the barrel of a trephine should be conical.

Besides the 'Letters from Italy,' Sharp published: 1. 'A Treatise on the Operations of Surgery,' London, 1739; 2nd edit. 1739; 3rd edit. 1740; 4th edit. 1743; 6th edit. 1751; 8th edit. 1761; 10th edit. 1782; French translation by A. F. Jault, Paris, 1741. 2. 'A Critical Enquiry into the Present State of Surgery,' London, 8vo, 1750; 2nd edit. 1750; 3rd edit. 1754; 4th edit. 1761; translated into French 1751, into Spanish 1753, into German 1756, and Italian 1774. This book, written clearly and in good English, contains thirteen short chapters upon hernia, lithotomy, amputations, concussion of the brain, tumours of the gall-bladder, extirpation of the tonsils, hydrocele, and a few other matters. To the 'Philosophical Transactions' Sharp contributed two papers in 1753 on 'A New Method of Opening the Cornea in order to Extract the Crystalline Humour,' and in 1754 a paper 'On the Styptic Powers of Agaric.'

[The manuscript records at the Barber-Surgeons' Hall, by the kind permission of the master, Sidney Young, esq., F.S.A.; Wilks and Bettany's Biographical Dictionary of Guy's Hospital; Boswell's Life of Johnson, ed. G. B. Hill; additional facts kindly given to the author by Dr. Wilks, F.R.S.; Paget's Hunterian Oration, 1877; Hutchinson's Address in Surgery in the British Medical Journal, 1895, ii. 273.] D'A. P.

SHARP, SAMUEL (1814–1882), geologist and antiquary, son of Stephen Sharp and Anna Maria Bloor of Uppingham, was born on 18 July 1814 at Romsey in Hampshire. While still young he lost his father; his mother then removed to Stamford in Lincolnshire, and married the proprietor and editor of the 'Stamford Mercury.' Sharp, who for a considerable time aided his stepfather in conducting this newspaper, soon began to study geology. In 1857 he went to live near Northampton, where he continued his scientific work and increased his collection of fossils. He published two very valuable papers on the Northamptonshire oolites in the 'Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society' (xxvi. 354, xxix. 225), besides a few of minor interest, and a useful textbook, 'Rudiments of Geology' (1875), a second and enlarged edition being published in the following year. He was also a diligent student of local antiquities, formed a valuable collection of the coins minted at Stamford, and described them in the 'Journal of the Numismatic Society.' He was a fellow of that society, of the Society of Antiquaries, and from 1862 of the Geological Society. He married, in 1846, Caroline Ann Weldon, and died without issue on 28 Jan.

1882, at Great Harrowden Hall, near Wellingborough, where the later years of his life were spent.

[Obituary Notices, Geol. Mag. 1882, p. 144, and Quart. Journ. of the Geol. Soc. xxxviii., Proc. p. 53; information from Prof. J. W. Judd.] T. G. B.

SHARP, THOMAS, D.D. (1693–1758), biographer and theological writer, younger son of John Sharp [q. v.], archbishop of York, was born on 12 Dec. 1693. At the age of fifteen he was admitted of Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1712, M.A. in 1716, and was elected to a fellowship. He became chaplain to Archbishop Dawes; prebendary of Southwell; a member of the Gentlemen's Society at Spalding; prebendary of Wistow in the church of York on 29 April 1719; rector of Rothbury, Northumberland, and archdeacon of Northumberland on 27 Feb. 1722–3 (Hutchinson, *Durham*, ii. 225). He was created D.D. at Cambridge in 1729. On 1 Dec. 1732 he was installed in the tenth prebend of the cathedral at Durham, and in 1755 he succeeded Dr. Mangey as official to the dean and chapter of that cathedral. He died at Durham on 16 March 1758, and was buried at the west end of the cathedral in the chapel called the Galilee. Portraits of Sharp are prefixed to his collected 'Works,' 1763, and his life of his father, 1825 (cf. Bromley).

He married, on 19 June 1722, Judith, daughter of Sir George Wheler [q. v.] (she died on 2 July 1757), and had fourteen children. His eldest son, John Sharp, D.D., was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, became a prebendary of Durham, archdeacon of Northumberland, vicar of Hartborne, perpetual curate of Bamburgh, and senior trustee of the estates of Nathaniel, lord Crewe, bishop of Durham, whose charities he was indefatigable in promoting; and died on 28 April 1792. His ninth son was Granville Sharp [q. v.], and another son, William, was a surgeon at Fulham.

His chief works are: 1. 'A Vindication of Bishop Taylor from the injurious misrepresentation of him by the Author of the Letter to the Clergy of the Church of England in the county of Northumberland,' 1733. 2. 'An Enquiry about the Lawfulness of Eating Blood. Occasion'd by Revelation examin'd with Candour. . . . By a Prebendary of York,' London, 1733, 8vo. 3. 'A Defence of the Enquiry about the Lawfulness of Eating Blood,' London, 1734, 8vo. 4. 'Opinion on a Proposal for instituting a Protestant Convent,' 1737; printed in his 'Life' of Archbishop Sharp, ii. 281. 5. 'Two Dissertations concerning the Etymology and Scripture-Meaning of the Hebrew words Elohim and Berith. Occasioned by some Notions lately advanced [by J. Hutchinson and A. S. Catcott] in relation to them,' London, 1751, 8vo. This elicited replies from J. Bate and B. Holloway, and these two writers were answered by G. Kalmár, who defended Sharp. The latter issued a 'review and defence' of the dissertations (pt. i. 1754, pt. ii. and iii. 1755). 6. 'The Rubric in the Book of Common Prayer and the Canons of the Church of England, so far as they relate to the Parochial Clergy, considered,' London, 1753, 8vo; 1787, 8vo; Oxford, 1834 and 1853, 8vo. 7. 'Discourses touching the antiquity of the Hebrew Tongue and Character,' London, 1755, 8vo. 8. 'Mr. Hutchinson's Exposition of Cherubim, and his Hypothesis concerning them examined,' London, 1755. W. Hodges published a reply. 9. 'Sermons on several occasions,' 1763, 8vo. 10. 'Discourses on Preaching; or, directions towards attaining the best manner of discharging the duties of the Pulpit,' 3rd edit. London, 1787, 8vo. 11. 'The Life of John Sharp, D.D., Lord Archbishop of York. . . . Edited by Thomas Newcome, M.A.,' 2 vols., London, 1825, 8vo. A collected edition of Sharp's 'Works' appeared, with a portrait prefixed, in 1763; his correspondence with Mrs. Catherine Cockburn on moral virtue and moral obligation was published in 1743, and he left in manuscript 'Catalogus Episcoporum, Priorum, Decanorum, Canonicorum Ecclesiæ Dunelmensis. Cui præmittitur Series Episcoporum Lindisfarnensium. Subjiciuntur Catalogi Archidiaconorum Dunelmensium et Northumbriæ, et Cancellariorum Temporalium et Spiritualium Dunelmensium,' and 'An Account of Hexham' (Nichols, *Lit. Anecd.* i. 437, viii. 373).

[Addit. MS. 5880 f. 194; Bromley's Cat. of Engraved Portraits, p. 280; Byrom's Journal, i. 206, 361, 368, 399, 422, 630; Mrs. Catherine Cockburn's Life prefixed to her Works, p. xliv, vol. ii. pp. 311, 312, 353; Collinson's Somerset, iii. 563; Cooke's Preacher's Assistant, ii. 300; Hutchinson's Durham, ii. 211; Jones's Life of Bishop Horne, pp. 81 seq.; Prince Hoare's Memoirs of Granville Sharp, 1820; Lowndes's Bibl. Man. (Bohn); Nichols's Illustr. of Lit. iv. 352; Nichols's Lit. Anecd. i. 437, vi. 111, x. 674; Stukeley's Carausius, pp. 96, 116.] T. C.

SHARP, THOMAS (1770–1841), antiquary, only son of Thomas Sharp of Coventry, hatter, was born on 7 Nov. 1770, in a house in Smithford Street, Coventry, distinguished by the effigy of 'Peeping Tom.' He was educated at the free grammar school,

and on his father's death, in 1784, carried on the business.

From youth Sharp devoted himself to the study of local antiquities. About 1798 Sharp, with two friends, employed a drawing-master to take views of all the buildings of interest in the county, which they caused to be engraved and inserted in their copies of Dugdale's 'Warwickshire.' In 1820 Sharp procured rubbings of all the brasses in the county for insertion in the same work. In 1804 he retired from the retail trade, and devoted his additional leisure to antiquarian research. In 1824 appeared his 'Guide to Coventry,' and in 1825 he published his chief work, 'A Dissertation on the Pageants, or Dramatic Mysteries, anciently performed at Coventry by the Trading Companies of that City,' a treatise of great interest from its bearing on the early history of the stage. The research which it displayed elicited the praise of Sir Walter Scott.

In 1834 Sharp relinquished his business altogether and removed to Leamington, where he was in constant communication with fellow antiquaries, such as Palgrave, Dawson Turner, Douce, William Salt, and John Britton. In his later years he was an intimate friend and correspondent of William Hamper [q. v.], for whom he acted as executor. In 1837 he took a principal part in founding the Coventry and Warwick hospital. He died on 12 Aug. 1841 at Leamington, and was interred at St. Michael's burying-ground, Coventry. He married, in 1804, Charlotte Turland of Barnwell, Cambridgeshire, and had nine children, of whom seven survived him.

At the time of his death Sharp was engaged on a history of Coventry, which appeared posthumously under the title of 'A Concise History of Coventry.' A collection of Sharp's papers on the Coventry churches, illustrating the history of the city, was published in 1871, as 'Coventry Antiquities,' with a memoir by William George Fretton. Prefixed is a portrait of Sharp etched by Mrs. Dawson Turner, after a drawing made by J. S. Cotman in 1823.

Apart from his topographical collections relating to Warwickshire (the majority of which, in manuscript form, were purchased in 1834 by William Staunton of Longbridge House, near Warwick), Sharp was an assiduous collector of coins, and he was an authority on provincial coins and tokens. He drew up a valuable 'Catalogue of Provincial Copper Coins, Tokens, Tickets, and Medalets' of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, from the collection of Sir George Chetwynd at Grendon Hall; of this sixty copies were printed in quarto in 1834. One of Sharp's coins, a gold half-florin of Edward III, of which only two specimens are known, is now in the British Museum.

Sharp also published: 1. 'The Pageant of the Company of Sheremen and Tailors in Coventry,' 1817, 4to. 2. 'An Account of the Fraternity of the Grey Friars in Coventry,' 1818, 4to. 3. 'History of Bablake Church, Coventry,' 1818, 4to. 4. 'Illustrations of the History of the Church of the Holy Trinity, Coventry,' 1818, 4to. 5. 'Illustrations of the History of St. Michael's Church, Coventry,' 1818, 4to. 6. 'Kenilworth Illustrated,' 1821, 4to. 7. 'Ancient Mysteries and Moralities,' edited from the Digby MSS., 1835, 4to. 8. 'An Epitome of the County of Warwickshire,' London, 1835, 4to.

[Memoir in Coventry Antiquities, 1871; Colvile's Warwickshire Worthies, p. 676; Gent. Mag. 1800 ii. 945, 1841 ii. 436; Notes and Queries, 5th ser. vi. 465.] E. I. C.

SHARP, WILLIAM (1749–1824), engraver, son of a gunmaker residing in Haydon Yard, Minories, London, was born on 29 Jan. 1749. His father apprenticed him to Barak Longmate [q. v.], an engraver and genealogist. Shortly after the expiry of his indentures he married a Frenchwoman, and opened a shop as a writing engraver in Bartholomew Lane. His first noteworthy production was an engraving of Hector, the old lion at the Tower, on a small quarto plate, which he exposed for sale in his shop window. About 1782 he sold his shop and removed to Vauxhall, where he devoted himself to the superior branches of his art. His merit showed itself in some plates from the designs of Stothard, executed for the 'Novelist's Magazine.' He also completed the plate of West's 'Landing of Charles II,' which Woollett had left unfinished at his death, and engraved some of the illustrations for 'Captain Cook's Voyages' and Benwell's 'Children in the Wood.' His circumstances improving, he left Vauxhall and finally settled at Chiswick, where he spent the latter part of his life. Among his best works are—after Guido, 'The Doctors of the Church disputing,' and 'Ecce Homo;' after West, 'King Lear in the Storm' and 'The Witch of Endor;' after Trumbull, 'The Sortie from Gibraltar;' after Sir Joshua Reynolds, the portrait of John Hunter and 'The Holy Family.' 'Sharp's style of engraving is masterly and entirely original; the half-tints of his best works rich and full; the play of his lines marked by taste and genius; the colour and character of the master excellently rendered.' His reputation as an engraver was very great on the continent, and he was elected

honorary member of the Imperial Academy at Vienna and of the Royal Academy at Munich.

In his younger days Sharp was a republican and a friend of Thomas Paine and Horne Tooke. He became a member of the Society for Constitutional Information, and in consequence was involved in the proceedings taken against Horne Tooke. He was examined on treasonable charges before the privy council, but dismissed without punishment as a harmless enthusiast. After becoming a convert to the views of Mesmer and Swedenborg, the religious opinions of Jacob Bryan and Richard Brothers engaged his attention, and he engraved Brothers as 'Prince of the Hebrews,' with rays of light descending on his head. When Brothers was confined at Islington as a lunatic, Sharp became a staunch adherent of Joanna Southcott, whom he brought from Exeter to London and maintained at his own expense for a considerable time. He was the last of her followers to admit the reality of her death, and he never lost faith in her divine mission nor expectation of her reappearance. Sharp died at Chiswick on 25 July 1824, and was buried in the parish churchyard. His portrait was painted by George Francis Joseph, and engraved by himself. Another portrait, engraved by Thomson, is prefixed to his memoir in the 'European Magazine.'

Sharp was the author of 'An Answer to the World for putting in print a book called Copies and Parts of Copies of Letters and Communications written from Joanna Southcote,' London, 1806, 8vo. There is a large collection of his engravings in the British Museum.

A three-quarter length portrait, in oils, by James Lonsdale [q. v.], is in the National Portrait Gallery, London.

[Baker's Life of Sharp, 1875; European Mag. 1824, ii. 191, 357; Annual Biogr. and Obituary, 1825, p. 216; Gent. Mag. 1824, ii. 469; Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Bryan's Dict. of Painters and Engravers; Dodd's Memoirs of English Engravers, Brit. Mus. Add. MS. 33404, f. 201.]

E. I. C.

SHARP, WILLIAM (1805–1896), physician, third son and fifth child of Richard Sharp, merchant, and Mary Turton, his wife, was born at Armley, near Leeds, on 21 Jan. 1805. His family had lived in that neighbourhood and at Horton, near Bradford, for several generations. One member of it was John Sharp [q. v.], the archbishop of York; another was Abraham Sharp [q. v.], the astronomer and mathematician. William Sharp was educated at Wakefield grammar school from 1813 to 1816, under the supervision of his uncle, Samuel Sharp, vicar of the parish, and he was afterwards sent to Westminster school, where he remained from 1817 to 1820. He was articled in 1821 to his uncle, William Sharp, a leading surgeon at Bradford, and he subsequently served a part of his apprenticeship to his uncle's cousin, the second William Hey of Leeds. He went to London on the completion of his indentures to attend the lectures and the practice at the united borough hospitals. In 1826 he obtained the license of the Society of Apothecaries, and in 1827 he was admitted a member of the College of Surgeons of England. He proceeded to Paris, as was then the fashion for the better class of newly qualified medical men. After a year he returned to Bradford to assist his uncle, the surgeon, to whose practice he succeeded in 1833. He was elected a surgeon to the Bradford infirmary in 1829, and became its senior surgeon in 1837; at the same time he conducted for many years the largest general practice in the West Riding of Yorkshire.

A natural bent for science, fostered by his education at the Sorbonne, led him to establish the Bradford Philosophical Society, of which he was the first president. In 1839 he read an important paper at the Birmingham meeting of the British Association, in which he advocated the formation of local museums, each collection being limited to objects of interest belonging to the town in which it was formed. This paper led to his election as fellow of the Royal Society on 7 May 1840.

He left Bradford in 1843 and lived at Hull for the succeeding four years, practising his profession, and giving two winter courses of lectures on chemistry at the Hull and East Riding school of medicine. After spending some time in travel, he removed to Rugby, so that his sons might attend the school there. Dr. Tait was then headmaster. At Rugby Sharp's energy in the promotion of science led to the establishment of science teaching as an integral part of the curriculum of the Rugby school, and Sharp was appointed in 1849 its 'reader in natural philosophy.' He resigned the post in 1850, to devote himself more exclusively to medical investigations. At the suggestion of his friend, Dr. Ramsbotham of Leeds, he studied homœopathy, and two years later adopted the methods of homœopathists. He acted in 1873 as president of the British homœopathic congress at Leamington, but further experimental researches carried him to a point of view accepted by few of Hahneman's disciples. In his discovery at last of the opposite actions of large and small doses of the same drug, he

believed that he had taken the first steps towards a more scientific basis for therapeutics; and he also saw in it a principle of reconciliation between two theories of medicine hitherto regarded as antagonistic. The progress of pharmacology, of experimental physiology, and of bacteriology has shown that some of the facts upon which he based his theory are capable of an explanation widely different from his own.

In 1856 the degree of M.D. was conferred upon him by the archbishop of Canterbury. He retired from practice in 1877, but continued his medical researches for some years longer. He died while on a visit to Llandudno, 10 April 1896. His body lies in the graveyard of Llanrhos. A portrait, painted in 1840 by Thomas Richmond, is now in the possession of Mrs. Sharp at Horton House, Rugby. Sharp married, on 10 March 1836, Emma, sixth daughter of John Scott, vicar of St. Mary's, Hull [see under Scott, Thomas, 1747–1821].

Sharp's claim to recognition rests on his practical suggestions for encouraging the study of natural science. It is owing to his initiative that every public school in England now has its science teacher, and every town its local museum. The value of his medical researches remains for future estimate. Allying himself to no school and wedding himself to no theory, his sole object in life appears to have been to advance physic along the lines of therapeutics.

He published: 1. 'Practical Observations on Injuries of the Head,' 8vo, London, 1841. 2. 'Therapeutics founded upon Organopathy and Antipraxy,' London, 8vo, 1886. He also wrote sixty tracts on homœopathy and the action of drugs in varying doses, published at different times between 1851 and 1892. The first twenty-six were collected in 1874 in a volume entitled 'Essays on Medicine, being an Investigation of Homœopathy and other Medical Systems.'

[Men and Women of the Time, 13th edit. p. 817; additional information kindly given by Miss Sharp, his daughter.] D'A. P.

SHARPE. [See also Sharp.]

SHARPE, BARTHOLOMEW (*fl.* 1679–1682), buccaneer, was, apparently, one of the party of buccaneers, French and English, which in 1679 captured and sacked Porto Bello on the Spanish main. He was certainly with the Englishmen who, after separating from the French, assembled at Golden Island, to the east of the Samballas. They had proposed to cross the isthmus and sack Panama, but their numbers, through the defection of the French, being too few, they resolved to cross over, descend the river Santa Maria, take the town of Santa Maria on the way, cruise in the Bay of Panama, and afterwards on the coast of Peru. At Santa Maria the booty was small. On reaching the sea they found a barque of thirty tons, which they seized, and, putting Sharpe in command, sent her to water and provision at the Pearl Islands, while the rest of the party, under the command of one Coxon, went in the canoes towards Panama. A quarrel soon split this party into two; Coxon, with seventy men, recrossed the isthmus, while one Richard Sawkins, taking command of the rest of the men, demanded a ransom from the town of Panama.

Soon afterwards Sharpe rejoined Sawkins, and on 22 May 1680 they landed to attack Pueblo Nuevo, where Sawkins, while leading on his men, was shot dead. On this the buccaneers retired to the island of Quibo, and, after a fresh dispute, Sharpe was elected to the command, about a hundred men seceding and returning across the isthmus to the West Indies. In June Sharpe went south, meaning to attack Guayaquil; but, finding that impracticable, he went to the Isle of Plate, where the buccaneers killed and salted down a great number of goats. Going along the coast, making sundry prizes as they went, on 26 Oct. they were off Arica. The whole country awaited them under arms; they could not venture to land, and bore away for Islay, being very short of water, the daily allowance being reduced to half a pint. It is said that a pint was sold on board for twenty dollars. At Islay they filled up with water; and as the Spaniards refused to ransom the town, they burnt it. They then went on to the southward, and on 3 Dec. landed and occupied the town of Serena. The Spaniards agreed to ransom the town for ninety-five thousand dollars; but instead of paying made an ingenious attempt to burn the ship. With some difficulty the fire was put out, and the buccaneers departed with less than a tenth of what they had demanded. At Juan Fernandez, Sharpe, who had got together about 1,000*l.* as his share of the booty, wished to go back to the West Indies through the Straits of Magellan; but the majority, who by gambling had lost everything, were determined to stay, and deposed Sharpe from the command, electing in his room one John Watling, 'an old privateer and esteemed a stout seaman.' At Arica, however, on 30 Jan. 1680–1, they sustained a disastrous repulse, Watling being killed, some twenty-eight others killed or prisoners—who met with scant mercy—and eighteen wounded. Sharpe was now reinstated in

the command, he 'being esteemed a safer leader than any other.' The general voice was to return to the West Indies across the isthmus. At the Isle of Plate, however, in the middle of April, things looked brighter, and they resolved to cruise for some time longer. This led to a further secession, and the dissenting party, including William Dampier [q. v.] and Lionel Wafer [q. v.], returned to the West Indies by the isthmus, while Sharpe went for a cruise to the northward, and captured a Spanish ship named the Rosario, having on board a large quantity of silver in pigs, to the value of about 150,000*l.* At the time the silver was mistaken for tin, and Sharpe took only one pig on board. Most of this was cast into bullets; it was only when the small residue was afterwards disposed of in the West Indies, that the buccaneers learnt what a prize had escaped them. They found also in the Rosario 'a great book of sea charts and maps' of the South Sea and the coasts of Spanish America, which was afterwards presented to the king. The volume now in the British Museum (*Sloane MS.* 44), drawn by William Hack, is presumably a copy of this.

On 16 Aug. Sharpe and his followers resolved to return to the West Indies. Making their way to the southward, they passed round Cape Horn in November, and reached Barbados on 28 Jan. 1681–2. Learning, however, that the Richmond frigate was there, and fearing that they might be seized as pirates, they went to Antigua, but the governor would not allow them into the harbour. At Nevis the authorities were more complacent, and there the party broke up, the ship being assigned to some of the men who had lost all their money in gaming. On his return to England, Sharpe was arrested at the instance of the Spanish ambassador, and tried for piracy; but in the absence of legal evidence was acquitted. His journals and 'waggoners,' carefully written and drawn (*Sloane MSS.* 44, 46*a* and *b*, and 47), suggest that he was permitted to live in peace and comfort.

[Ringrose's Dangerous Voyage and Bold Attempts of Captain Bartholomew Sharp and others, in History of the Buccaniers, vol. ii.; Dampier's Voyages, vol. i.; Wafer's New Voyage; Burney's Voyages and Discoveries in the South Sea, iv. 91–124.] J. K. L.

SHARPE, CHARLES KIRKPATRICK (1781?–1851), antiquary and artist, was the second son of Charles Sharpe of Hoddam, Dumfriesshire, by Eleonora, youngest daughter of John Renton of Lamerton. His mother was granddaughter of Susanna, countess of Eglinton, third wife of the ninth earl, Alexander Montgomerie [q. v.] He was born about 1781. The father, Charles Sharpe, was the son of William Kirkpatrick of Ailsland (brother of Sir Thomas Kirkpatrick, second baronet of Closeburn), who changed his name to Sharpe on inheriting the estate of Hoddam from his uncle, Matthew Sharpe. To Charles Sharpe, Burns, under the signature 'Johnny Faa,' addressed a curious letter, humorously claiming to belong to 'the same family,' not on the ground of relationship, but on the score of being 'a fiddler and a poet;' and enclosing some stanzas to a tune of his which he said 'a brither catgut' gave him 'the other day.' Sharpe's grand-uncle, Charles Sharpe, a Jacobite who fought at Preston, also possessed literary tastes, and was a correspondent of David Hume. Further, the family claimed kinship with the noted Grierson of Lag. Thus, while Sharpe could claim an ancestry of some distinction, intellectual and other, he was also from his infancy nourished on Jacobite story and tradition; and this phase of Scottish sentiment occupied most of his interest, and mainly directed the bent of his artistic studies and his antiquarian research.

With the view of taking episcopal orders, Sharpe entered Christ Church, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. 17 June 1802, and M.A. 28 June 1806. But, although he made several friendships, the social life and special studies of the university were uncongenial to him. In truth his attitude towards his fellows was always more or less repellent; he was unsympathetic and depreciatory, and from first to last he was accustomed to emphasise and magnify the frailties of his acquaintances, and all but ignore their good points. At the university he devoted himself chiefly to antiquarian research and to practice with his pencil, making some reputation by his sketches of heads. Either before or soon after leaving the university he gave up all thoughts of entering the church, and finally, about his thirtieth year, he took up his residence in Edinburgh, where, although he maintained friendly relations with many distinguished persons, including especially clever and sprightly aristocratic ladies, and was a welcome guest in many country houses, he lived mainly the life of a literary recluse. With advancing years his peculiarities became more pronounced, and they were emphasised by the fact that till the close of his life he retained the style of dress which was in fashion at the period of his early manhood.

The appearance of the first volume of Scott's 'Border Minstrelsy,' in 1802 naturally aroused Sharpe's special enthusiasm. Though unacquainted with Scott, he sent him a

warm letter of congratulation, which led to a lifelong friendship; and to the second volume of the 'Minstrelsy' he contributed two ballads of his own. In 1807 he also published at Oxford 'Metrical Legends and other Poems;' but, as Scott remarks, 'as a poet he has not a strong touch.' As an artist he showed much greater talent. Scott affirmed 'that had he made drawing a resource it might have raised him a large income;' but he can scarcely be reckoned more than a skilful amateur. In drawing, his main forte was apparently satirical, or rather perhaps grotesque, caricature. His efforts were described by Scott as the 'most fanciful and droll imaginable, a mixture between Hogarth and some of those foreign masters who painted temptations of St. Anthony and other grotesque subjects.' Sharpe's frontispieces and other illustrations in the Bannatyne Club and similar antiquarian publications evince much antiquarian knowledge. He possessed an unrivalled collection of Scottish curios and antiques; and Sir Walter was frequently and much indebted to his proficiency in this and kindred branches of antiquarian lore. He was moreover specially learned in Scottish genealogy, especially in its scandalous aspect, having carefully gleaned and preserved every fact or anecdote of this character that he could discover in books, manuscripts, or tradition.

In 1817 Sharpe edited Kirkton's 'Secret and True History of the Church of Scotland from the Restoration to the Year 1678, with an Account of the Murder of Archbishop Sharpe, by James Russell, an Actor therein.' To the volume he supplied a large number of notes which, if they breathe rather the spirit of the partisan than the conscientious historian, display much learning. This was followed in 1820 by an edition of Law's 'Memorialls; or the considerable Things that fell out within the Island of Great Britain from 1638 to 1684,' containing much curious information regarding witchcraft and kindred subjects. In 1823 he published his 'Ballad Book,' which in 1880 was re-edited by David Laing, with some additions from Sharpe's manuscripts; the majority of the added ballads were of more or less questionable authenticity. Sharpe, though he dabbled a good deal in this species of literature, and collected printed chaps and broadsides, as well as manuscripts from 'recitation,' only possessed a fragmentary knowledge of the subject. To Laing's edition of Stenhouse's notes to Johnson's 'Musical Museum,' 1853, he made some contributions. In 1827 he edited 'A Part of the Life of Lady Margaret Cunninghame, daughter of the Earl of Glencairn, that she had with her first Husband, the Earl of Evandale;' in 1828 (for the Bannatyne Club), 'The Letters of Archibald, Earl of Argyle;' and in 1837, 'Surgundo, or the Valiant Christian,' a romanist ode of triumph for the victory of Glanrinnes in 1594; and the same year, 'Minuets and Songs of Thomas, sixth Earl of Kellie.' In 1833 he published a volume of etchings, under the title 'Portraits of an Amateur,' and his 'Etchings, with Photographs from Original Drawings, Poetical and Prose Fragments,' appeared posthumously at Edinburgh in 1869. The 'Letters to and from C. K. Sharpe,' edited by Alexander Allardyce, 1888, tend to corroborate the estimate of Scott, that 'Charles Kirkpatrick Sharpe, with his oddities, tastes, satire, and high aristocratic feelings, resembles Horace Walpole—perhaps in his person, perhaps in a general way.' Sharpe died unmarried, 17 March 1851. Two portraits, by John Irvine and Thomas Fraser respectively, are in the National Portrait Gallery, Edinburgh; the latter was engraved in mezzotint by Thomas Dick in 1851.

[Gent. Mag. 1851, i. 557; Memoir prefixed to Sharpe's Etchings, 1869; Memoir by Rev. W. K. R. Bedford, prefixed to Letters, 1888; Lockhart's Life of Scott; Scott's Journal.]

T. F. H.

SHARPE, DANIEL (1806–1856), geologist, son of Sutton Sharpe (1756–1806), brewer, by his second wife, Maria, sister of the poet, Samuel Rogers [q. v.] Samuel Sharpe [q. v.] was an elder brother. Daniel was born at Nottingham Place, Marylebone, 6 April 1806. His mother died 22 April, and his father 26 Sept. 1806. But a half-sister took the place of a parent to the child, as well as to a sister and four brothers, and his early days were spent with her at Stoke Newington. He was educated, first there, then at Mr. Cogan's school, Walthamstow. At the age of sixteen he was placed with a Portuguese merchant named Van Zeller, and about 1830 lived for a year in Portugal. Then he became partner with his elder brother, Henry Sharpe, in the same line of business, and again resided in Portugal from 1835 to 1838. Fond of natural history as a boy, he devoted himself, on joining the Geological Society in 1827, to that science. In 1832, 1839, 1848, and 1849 he read papers to this society on the geology of Portugal, which were for a considerable time almost the only authorities on that subject. The second of these contains some important remarks on the way in which the effect of an earthquake shock is modified by the constitution of the strata; and the

third notices some remarkable coal-beds at Vallongo.

After his return to England in 1838, he took a special interest in palæozoic geology, reading four papers between 1842 and 1844—the first dealing with the south of Westmoreland; the second with the Bala limestone, in which he affirmed its identity with the Caradoc of Sir Roderick Impey Murchison [q. v.]; the third on the silurian rocks of south Westmoreland and north Lancashire; and the fourth on the geology of North Wales (*Geol. Soc. Proc.* iii. 602, iv. 10, 23, *Journ.* i. 147). Afterwards he wrote an important paper on the palæozoic fossils of North America collected by Sir Charles Lyell [q. v.] His work in Wales and the Lake District turned his attention to the subject of slaty cleavage, and he showed, in two important papers (*Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc.* iii. 74, v. 111), that this structure must be a result of pressure. He returned to the subject in 1852 (*Phil. Trans.* 1852, p. 445), when he discussed cleavage and foliation in southern Scotland; and in 1855, after visiting the Alps (*Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc.* xi. 11), on the structure of Mont Blanc and its environs. In these papers he attributed cleavage and foliation to the same cause, but fell into some errors, as was not surprising, in regard to Alpine geology. A subsequent paper (*Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc.* xii. 102), 'On the last Elevation of the Alps, with notices of the heights at which the sea has left traces of its action on their sides,' was even then contested, and would be now replaced by the words 'there are no traces.' But in such a difficult subject a careful and sound geologist might be, at that epoch, easily misled. Much of his work is of a high order. He also paid much attention to fossils, especially those of the neocomian and cretaceous systems. In the Royal Society's 'Catalogue of Scientific Papers' he appears as author of twenty-six and joint author of two papers, and was engaged at the time of his death on a memoir for the Palæontographical Society on the mollusca of the chalk (three parts published, stopping in cephalopoda).

His work as a geologist was combined with activity in business, but he was also a student of philology and archæology, and employed himself in deciphering the inscriptions brought from Lycia by Sir Charles Fellows [q. v.], Edward Forbes [q. v.], and Thomas Abel Brimage Spratt [q. v.] In debate he is described as 'severely critical and somewhat sarcastic;' but he was also known as a kind-hearted, benevolent man, much interested in the education of the poor. He was a Fellow of the Linnean and Zoological societies, was elected F.R.S. in 1850, became treasurer of the Geological Society in 1853, and its president early in 1856. But on 20 May of that year, while riding near Norwood, he was thrown from his horse; and he died at his lodgings in Soho Square from fracture of the skull, 31 May, being buried in the churchyard of St. John's (the parish) Church, Hampstead. He was unmarried.

[Obituary Notices in the Literary Gaz., Journal of Archæology, Science and Art, 7 June 1856, p. 351; Proc. Linnean Soc. 1857, vol. xxxi.; Proc. Roy. Soc. viii. 275; Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc. vol. xiii. Proc. p. xlv (the last contains an unusually full critical account of Sharpe's geological work. There are references to his part in the Cambrian-Silurian controversy in Geikie's Life of Murchison); a critical summary of his views on cleavage is given by J. Phillips, Brit. Assoc. Report, 1856, pp. 376–83; information from W. Arthur Sharpe, esq. (nephew).] T. G. B.

SHARPE, EDMUND (1809–1877), architect, only son of Francis Sharpe, of Heathfield, Knutsford, Cheshire, was born there on 31 Oct. 1809. He was educated at Dr. Burney's school at Greenwich and at Sedbergh, whence he proceeded to St. John's College, Cambridge, graduating B.A. in 1833 and M.A. in 1836 (*Graduati Cantabr.* 1880–1884, p. 467). In 1832 he was elected travelling bachelor of arts for the university, and, selecting architecture as his thesis, devoted three years to the study of the subject in France and Germany. He then became a pupil of John Rickman [q. v.], and in 1836 established himself at Lancaster, where he practised as an architect for fifteen years, erecting during that time about forty churches, chiefly in the romanesque style, besides mansions and other buildings. During his residence at Lancaster, Sharpe took a leading part in the execution of various projects for improving the sanitary condition of the town, of which he was elected mayor in 1848. In 1851 he withdrew from the practice of architecture, having taken up engineering work, especially the construction of railways, in which he was largely engaged for many years. In 1857 he went to reside on a property he had purchased near Bettws-y-coed, North Wales. In 1859 he was appointed J.P. for Lancashire, and also for Denbighshire. From 1863 to 1866 Sharpe resided on the continent, being occupied with the construction of tramways at Geneva and a railway at Perpignan; in 1867 he returned to Lancaster, where he afterwards chiefly resided.

Throughout his life Sharpe was an enthusiastic and profound student of mediæval

architecture, and he published several highly valuable works on the subject, of which the first and most important was 'Architectural Parallels, or the Progress of Ecclesiastical Architecture in England during the Twelfth and Thirteenth Centuries,' 1848; this was followed by 'Decorated Windows, a series of Illustrations of the Window Tracing of the decorated Style,' 1849; 'The Seven Periods of Architecture,' 1851, in which he advocated a new system of nomenclature for the successive styles of mediæval work; 'The Mouldings of the Six Periods of British Architecture,' 1874; 'The Architecture of the Cistercians,' 1874; and several others. His minor publications were numerous. In 1875 Sharpe received the gold medal of the Institute of British Architects, of which he had been elected a fellow in 1848; he was also a fellow of the Archæological Institute, and contributed many papers to the proceedings of both societies. In 1869 he joined the Architectural Association, which, during the next few years at his suggestion and under his guidance, made annual excursions for the study of Gothic architecture in England and France. An account of the last of these, 'A Visit to the Domed Churches of Charente in 1875,' with a memoir of Sharpe and a complete list of his publications, was drawn up and printed by the association after his death, as a memorial to him. Sharpe died at Milan, after a brief illness, on 8 May 1877, and was buried at Lancaster. By his wife, Elizabeth Fletcher, to whom he was married in 1843, and who died in 1876, he had three sons and two daughters. A woodcut portrait of him appeared in the 'Builder' for 1870, p. 1026.

[A Visit to the Domed Churches of Charente; Builder, 1877, pp. 491, 562; Dict. of Architecture.] F. M. O'D.

SHARPE, GREGORY (1713–1771), theologian, a native of Yorkshire, born in 1713, was for some time educated at Hull grammar school, and then at Westminster school under Dr. Freind. At Westminster he committed some irregularity, and from the summer of 1731 he lived for four years at Aberdeen with Thomas Blackwell the younger. On 2 June 1735 he was admitted fellow commoner at Trinity College, Cambridge, graduating LL.B. in 1738. He was again entered at Trinity College on 8 June 1747, and then proceeded LL.D. On 4 July 1751 he was incorporated at Oxford.

Sharpe took orders in the English church, and was for some time minister of Broadway Chapel, Westminster. From 1743 to 1756 he was vicar of All Saints, Birling, near Maidstone. He was installed as prebendary of Yetminster secunda in Salisbury Cathedral on 18 March 1757, and held it until his death. He was chaplain to Frederick, Prince of Wales, and to George III. On the death of Dr. Samuel Nicolls in 1763, he was elected to the mastership of the Temple, where William Maxwell, D.D. (1732–1818) [q. v.], was his assistant. An account of his prayer for liberty and of Johnson's commentary on it is given in Boswell (ed. Hill), ii. 130. He died at the master's house in the Temple on 8 Jan. 1771. He was elected F.R.S. 9 May 1754, and at the time of his death was the director of the Society of Antiquaries (Nichols, *Lit. Anecdotes*, vi. 271). A mezzotint portrait of him by Valentine Green, from a painting by R. Crosse, was published in 1777.

Sharpe was a good classical and oriental scholar. His library was sold on 8 April 1771 and ten following days, and a priced catalogue is at the British Museum. It included 'a fine collection of oriental manuscripts,' and many valuable prints and drawings; the whole fetched 577*l.* 14*s.* His publications comprised: 1. 'A Review of the Controversy on the meaning of Demoniacks in the New Testament, by a Lover of Truth,' 1739; criticised in 'A Short State of the Controversy on Demoniacks,' 1739, and by Thomas Hutchinson in a volume of 'Remarks.' 2. 'A Defence of Dr. Samuel Clarke against Lewis Philip Thummig in favour of Leibnitz' (anon.), 1744. 3. 'A Short Dissertation on the Misgovernment called an Oligarchy' (anon.), 1748. 4. 'A Dissertation on the Latin Tongue,' 1751. 5. 'Two Dissertations: I. upon the Origin of Language; II, upon the original powers of Letters with second edition of a Hebrew Grammar and Lexicon, without Points,' 1751; from this were derived the 'greatest part of the Directions and the whole of the Dictionary' in an anonymous 'Manual for the Hebrew Psalter,' Glasgow, 1781. 6. 'Introduction to Universal History, translated from the Latin of Baron Holberg,' 1755; 2nd ed. 1758; 3rd ed. by William Radcliffe, B.A. of Oriel College, Oxford, 1787. 7. 'Argument in Defence of Christianity, from the Concessions of the most antient Adversaries,' 1755. It was followed by 8. 'A second Argument, taken from the Ancient Prophesies,' 1762. 9. 'A Short Review of Mr. Hooke's Observations on the Roman Senate and Dionysius of Halicarnassus,' 1758. 10. 'Origin and Structure of the Greek Tongue,' 1767; new ed. 1777.

Sharpe translated the 'Frogs' in the third volume of Father Brumoy's work on

the 'Greek Theatre,' which was edited by Mrs. Charlotte Lennox in 1759. He published in 1766 John Locke's 'Observations on Vines and Olives,' from the original manuscript, with the fourth Earl of Shaftesbury, and about the same date revised Martyn's life of the first earl, which was edited by Kippis about 1790. In 1767 he collected and edited the dissertations of Thomas Hyde [q. v.]

A volume of Sharpe's 'Sermons on various Subjects' was published under the editorship of the Rev. Joseph Robertson in 1772. Letters by him are printed in the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' 1773, pp. 545–6, Seward's 'Supplement to the Anecdotes' (1797), v. 177–82, and in Nichols's 'Illustrations of Literature,' iii. 692, and two volumes of his unpublished correspondence are mentioned by Chalmers in his 'Biographical Dictionary.' He was a frequent contributor to the 'Monthly Review.'

[Gent. Mag. 1771 p. 47, 1796 i. 5; Le Neve's Fasti, ii. 673–5; Nichols's Lit. Anecdotes, iii. 501; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1715–1886; Fielding's Malling, p. 164; Halkett and Laing's Anon. Lit. pp. 590, 1418, 1472, 2198, 2365, 2373; information from Mr. W. Aldis Wright, Trinity College, Cambridge; Cooke's Benchers of the Inner Temple, p. 136.] W. P. C.

SHARPE, JAMES (1577?–1630), Roman catholic divine, born in Yorkshire about 1577, was perhaps connected with the family of Sharp of Little Horton. He became a convert to Roman catholicism, and, entering St. Alban's College at Valladolid on 21 June 1602, was ordained priest on 14 April 1604. He was admitted a member of the Society of Jesus in 1607–8, and for a time was professor of sacred scripture and Hebrew at the English Jesuit College at Louvain. In 1611 he was sent to England, where he made it his first endeavour to bring about the conversion of his parents. They, however, refused to listen to him, and kept him in strict confinement, seeking to reconvert him to protestantism. He obtained his liberty by proclaiming himself a priest, but thereby incurred the penalty of banishment. After a brief sojourn in Belgium he returned to England under the name of Francis Pollard, and was serving in the Yorkshire district in 1621. On 12 May 1622 he was professed of the four vows, and in 1625 he was labouring in Lincolnshire. In 1628 he had removed to Leicestershire; but he died in Lincolnshire, at the residence of St. Dominic, on 11 Nov. 1630.

He was the author of 'The Examination of the Private Spirit of Protestants.' The only edition of the complete work now extant is dated 1640. There was an earlier edition, for a second part, entitled 'The Triall of the Protestant Private Spirit, the Second Part, which is Doctrinal,' is dated 1635. Sharpe also left a manuscript endorsed 'Annals of F. Polla[rd]. Divers examples of cruelty and persecution in England, especially about York, and of the constancy of Catholics in the time of King James, 1610, 14 Oct.,' which is now at Stonyhurst College, and which has been printed in Morris's 'Troubles of our Catholic Forefathers,' 3rd ser.

[Foley's Records of the English Province of the Society of Jesus, ii. 617–25, v. 767, vii. 702, 1451; More's Hist. Prov. Angl. p. 359; De Backer's Bibliothèque de la Compagnie de Jésus, 1869, iii. 778.] E. I. C.

SHARPE, LEWIS (*fl.* 1640), dramatist, lived in the reign of Charles I. He is known as the author of the 'Noble Stranger,' a comedy which was first acted 'at the Private House in Salisbury Court, by Her Majestie's servants,' and was printed, in 4to, for James Becket, of the Inner Temple Gate, Fleet Street. It is dedicated to 'the Worthy Knight, Sir Edmund Williams,' and is prefaced with eulogistic verses by Richard Woolfall. From these it appears to have been a popular piece, frequently acted. Langbaine speaks highly of the play, especially commending the parts of Pupillus and Mercutio. The British Museum contains two copies.

A younger contemporary, ROGER SHARPE (*fl.* 1610), poet, is known as the author of 'More Fooles yet. Written by R. S.—At London. Printed by Thomas Castleton' (1610, 4to). An address to the reader is signed Roger Sharpe. The work, which consists of a collection of epigrams, is of extreme rarity. A copy is in the Malone collection in the Bodleian, which formerly belonged to Narcissus Luttrell [q. v.] (COLLIER, *Bibliogr. Catalogue*, pp. 340–2; ARBER, *Transcript of the Stationers' Register*, iv. 196; HAZLITT, *Handbook*, p. 552).

[Langbaine's Account of the English Dramatic Poets, p. 335; Baker's Biographia Dramatica, i. 649, iii. 85; Fleay's Biogr. Chronicle of the British Drama, ii. 232.] E. I. C.

SHARPE, LOUISA, afterwards Mrs. SEYFFARTH (1798–1843), watercolour-painter born in 1798, was the third daughter of William Sharpe, a Birmingham engraver. Her father brought her and her three sisters, who all practised art, to London about 1816.

Louisa, the most gifted of the four sisters, commenced as a miniature-painter, exhibiting portraits at the Royal Academy from 1817 to 1829, when she was elected a mem-

ber of the 'Old' Watercolour Society. She then turned to costume subjects, and her domestic and sentimental scenes and illustrations to the poets were much admired for their graceful treatment and exquisite finish. Many of these were engraved for the 'Keepsake' and 'Forget-me-not' annuals and Heath's 'Book of Beauty' between 1829 and 1839. In 1834 Miss Sharpe married Professor Woldemar Seyffarth of Dresden, and thenceforth resided in that city, continuing to exhibit in Pall Mall until her death at Dresden on 28 Jan. 1843. Her daughter Agnes exhibited drawings occasionally at the Royal Academy and the Suffolk Street gallery between 1850 and 1859.

Charlotte Sharpe (*d.* 1849), the eldest of the family, painted portraits, beginning to exhibit in 1817. On her early marriage with a Captain Morris, she for a time gave up painting, but domestic troubles compelled her to resume the profession, at which she worked for the support of her family until her death in 1849.

Eliza Sharpe (1796–1874), the second sister, began her career as a miniaturist, and was elected in 1829 of the 'Old' Watercolour Society, to the exhibitions of which she contributed at intervals for forty years. Her drawings were of the same class as those of her sister Louisa, but inferior in composition and execution; some of them were engraved for the same publications. She retired from membership of the 'Old' Watercolour Society in 1872. Towards the end of her life Eliza Sharpe was employed in making watercolour copies of pictures in the South Kensington Museum, her last work being a set of copies of Raphael's cartoons. She died unmarried on 11 June 1874 at the residence of her nephew, Mr. C. W. Sharpe the engraver, at Burnham, Maidenhead. A humorous drawing by her of herself and two of her sisters is in the print-room of the British Museum.

Mary Anne Sharpe (*d.* 1867), the youngest of the sisters, exhibited portraits and domestic subjects first at the Royal Academy and afterwards with the Society of British Artists, of which she was elected an honorary member in 1830.

[Roget's Hist. of the Old Watercolour Society; Clayton's English Female Artists, 1876; Art Journal, 1874; Graves's Dict. of Artists, 1760–1893; private information.]

F. M. O'D.

SHARPE, SAMUEL (1799–1881), Egyptologist and translator of the Bible, second son of Sutton Sharpe (1756–1806), brewer, by his second wife, Maria (*d.* 1806), third daughter of Thomas Rogers, banker, was born in King Street, Golden Square, London, on 8 March 1799, and baptised at St. James's, Piccadilly. His mother, a descendant of Philip Henry [q. v.], was sister of Samuel Rogers [q. v.] the poet. On her death, followed by his father's failure, he found a second mother in his half-sister Catherine. Daniel Sharpe [q. v.] was his younger brother. At midsummer 1807 Samuel became a boarder in the school of Eliezer Cogan [q. v.] at Higham Hill, Walthamstow; at Christmas 1814 he was taken into the banking-house of his uncles Samuel and Henry Rogers, at 29 Clement's Lane, Lombard Street; and remained connected with the firm till 1861, having been made partner in 1824. Punctuality and caution made him a successful man of business. Brought up in the creed of the established church, he came gradually to adopt the unitarian views held by his mother's relatives; in 1821 he joined the congregation of William Johnson Fox [q. v.] at South Place, Finsbury. For many years Sharpe and his brothers taught classes, before office hours, in the Lancasterian school, Harp Alley, Farringdon Street. He was elected a fellow of the Geological Society about 1827, but took a greater interest in mathematical science and archæological research, as his contributions (1828–31) to the 'Philosophical Magazine' show.

His interest in Egyptology was excited by the labours of Thomas Young, M.D. (1773–1829) [q. v.] He studied the works of Champollion and all that had been then published by Sir John Gardner Wilkinson [q. v.], learned Coptic, and formed a hieroglyphical vocabulary. Before publishing his first book, 'The Early History of Egypt' (1836), he consulted his uncle, Samuel Rogers, who said, 'Why, surely you can do it if Wilkinson can; his only thought is where to buy his kid gloves.' The first part (spring of 1837) of his 'Egyptian Inscriptions,' chiefly from the British Museum, contained 'the largest body of hieroglyphical writing that had yet been published,' and was followed by additional series in 1841 and 1855. His 'Vocabulary of Hieroglyphics' was published in the autumn of 1837; in the introduction he thus states his general method of investigation: 'Granted a sentence in which most of the words are already known, required the meaning of others;' he allows that the results are often tentative, and admits that the problem cannot always be thus set. In addition to his extreme patience, he had for this kind of verbal divination a natural gift; often amusing his friends by the facility with which in a few

minutes he would read off a difficult cryptogram. In the autumn of 1838 appeared his 'History of Egypt under the Ptolemies;' in 1842 his 'History of Egypt under the Romans;' these were incorporated with the 'Early History' in 'The History of Egypt,' 1846. Other publications followed in the same line of research, but on these his reputation as an Egyptologist must rest. The pains and skill of his workmanship are unquestioned; but he worked very much on his own lines, and on many points his conclusions have not won acceptance. He said of himself, 'I am a heretic in everything, even among unitarians.'

Sharpe's labours as a translator of the Bible began with a revision (1840) of the authorised version of the New Testament. His Greek text was that of Griesbach, and to this he always adhered, taking little interest in the progress of purely textual studies. His revision of the authorised version of the Old Testament was first issued in 1865. In eight editions of his New Testament, and four of his Old, he devoted incessant and minute care to the improvement of his work. As a translator he was distinguished less by originality of scholarship than by excellence of judgment; he is successful beyond others in the difficult experiment of removing the archaisms without impairing the venerable dignity of the English Bible. Among the last advocates of unpointed Hebrew, he published manuals for instruction in this system; his plan of printing his Hebrew extracts with capital letters, for the proper names and the beginnings of sentences, seems unique, and convenient for the learner. His 'History of the Hebrew Nation and its Literature,' 1869, and his exegetical works have merits akin to those of his Egyptian studies, and bear the same individual stamp. When, in 1870, the project of a revised version was undertaken by the convocation of Canterbury, Sharpe was one of four scholars of his denomination invited to select a member of their body to co-operate with the New Testament company.

In purely theological controversy he took little part, though he was a zealous propagandist in directions tending in his judgment to promote the union of knowledge and piety. His various benefactions to University College and School, London, considerably exceeded 15,000*l*. To his own denomination he was an unobtrusive and munificent benefactor. For its weekly organ, 'The Inquirer,' founded in 1842 by Edward Hill, he wrote constantly for some years, though he thought newspaper writing 'a bad employment.' He resumed it, however, in 1876 when the 'Christian Life' was started by his friend Robert Spears, writing a weekly article till his death. He had contributed papers, chiefly biblical, to the 'Christian Reformer' (1834–63) with the signature 'S. S.,' and to many minor periodicals. He was a trustee of Dr. Daniel Williams's foundations, 1853–1857; president of the British and Foreign Unitarian Association in 1869–70, and president of Manchester College (now at Oxford) in 1876–8.

Simple in his habits, plain in his tastes, methodical in all his ways, quaint and terse in conversation, uniformly gentle in his demeanour, Sharpe spent his later days in tranquil retirement. His house was the resort of his literary friends, and of younger men whom he delighted to imbue with his own enthusiasm for his favourite pursuits. He died at 32 Highbury Place on 28 July 1881, and was buried at Abney Park cemetery on 3 Aug. He married (1827) his first cousin Sarah (*b.* 1796, *d.* 3 June 1851), daughter of Joseph Sharpe, and had six children, of whom two daughters survived him.

He published, besides a few doctrinal tracts: 1. 'The Early History of Egypt,' 1836, 4to. 2. 'Egyptian Inscriptions,' 1837, fol.; part ii. 1841, fol.; 2nd ser. 1855, fol. 3. 'Rudiments of a Vocabulary of Egyptian Hieroglyphics,' 1837, 4to. 4. 'The History of Egypt under the Ptolemies,' 1838, 4to. 5. 'The New Testament, translated,' 1840, 12mo; 8th edit. 1881, 8vo. 6. 'The History of Egypt under the Romans,' 1842, 8vo. 7. 'Notes on the Hieroglyphics of Horapello Nilous,' 1845 (Syro-Egyptian Society). 8. 'The History of Egypt from the earliest Times till A.D. 640,' 1846, 8vo; 6th edit. 1876, 8vo, 2 vols.; in German from the 3rd edit. (1852) by Jolowicz, revised by Von Gutschmid, Leipzig, 1862, 8vo, 2 vols. 9. 'The Chronology and Geography of Ancient Egypt,' 1849, 8vo (in co-operation with Joseph Bonomi, the younger [q. v.]) 10. 'Fragments of Orations in Accusation and Defence of Demosthenes . . . translated,' 1849, 8vo. 11. 'Sketch of Assyrian History,' in Bonomi's 'Nineveh and its Palaces,' 2nd edit. 1853, 8vo. 12. 'The Triple Mummy Case of Aro-eri Ao,' 1858. 13. 'Historical Notice of the Monuments of Egypt' in Owen Jones and Bonomi's 'Description of the Egyptian Court in the Crystal Palace,' 1854, 8vo. 14. 'Historic Notes on the . . . Old and New Testaments,' 1854, 12mo; 3rd edit. 1858, 8vo. 15. 'Critical Notes on the . . . New Testament,' 1856, 8vo; 1867, 8vo. 16. 'Alexandrian Chronology,' 1857, 4to.

17. 'Some Particulars of the Life of Samuel Rogers,' 1859, 4to; 1860, 4to. 18. 'Egyptian Hieroglyphics,' 1861, 8vo. 19. 'Egyptian Antiquities in the British Museum, described,' 1862, 8vo. 20. 'Notes' in Bonomi's 'Egypt, Nubia, and Ethiopia,' 1862, 4to. 21. 'Egyptian Mythology and Egyptian Christianity,' 1863, 12mo. 22. 'Sketch of the Arguments for . . . authorship . . . of the Pentateuch,' [1863], 12mo. 23. 'The Alabaster Sarcophagus of Oimenepthah,' 1864, 4to. 24. 'The Hebrew Scriptures, translated,' 1865, 8vo, 3 vols.; 4th edit. 1881, 8vo in one volume with New Testament. 25. 'The Chronology of the Bible,' &c., 1868, 8vo. 26. 'Texts from the Bible explained by . . . Ancient Monuments,' 1866, 8vo; 1869, 1880 (drawings by Bonomi). 27. 'The History of the Hebrew Nation and its Literature,' 1869, 8vo; 5th edit. 1892, 8vo. 28. 'The Decree of Canopus; in Hieroglyphics and Greek, with translations,' 1870, 8vo. 29. 'The Rosetta Stone; in Hieroglyphics and Greek, with translations,' 1871, 8vo. 30. 'Short Notes to . . . translation of the Hebrew Scriptures,' 1874, 8vo. 31. 'Hebrew Inscriptions from the valleys between Egypt and Mount Sinai,' 1875, 8vo; part ii. 1876, 8vo. 32. 'The Journeys and Epistles of St. Paul,' 1876, 16mo; 3rd edit. [1880], 8vo. 33. 'The Book of Isaiah arranged chronologically in a revised translation . . . with . . . Notes,' 1877, 8vo. 34. 'A Short Hebrew Grammar without Points,' 1877, 8vo. 35. 'The Book of Genesis . . . without Points,' 1879, 8vo (selections). 36. 'An Inquiry into the Age of the Moabite Stone,' &c., 1879, 12mo. 37. 'Βαρνάβα Ἐπιστολή. The Epistle of Barnabas . . . with a translation,' 1880, 8vo.

[Clayden's Samuel Sharpe, 1883; Christian Life, 7 Oct. 1876 (portrait), 6 and 13 Aug. 1881; Athenæum, 6 Aug. 1881; Lawrence's Descendants of Philip Henry, 1844, p. 51; Jeremy's Presbyterian Fund, 1885, p. 213.]

A. G.

SHARPEIGH, ALEXANDER (*fl.* 1607–1613), merchant and sea-captain, seems to have been in the opening years of the seventeenth century a factor of the Levant company at Constantinople (*Lansdowne MS.* 241, f. 188), in which capacity he probably acquired some knowledge of Arabic. Early in 1608 he was appointed by the East India Company to be captain of their ship Ascension, and general of the fourth voyage to the East Indies. The two ships, Ascension and Union, sailed from Woolwich on 14 March 1607–8, and from Plymouth on the 31st. Touching at Grand Canary and at the Cape Verd Islands, they arrived on 14 July in Saldanha, or, as it is now called, Table Bay. There they remained till 20 Sept., when they sailed to the eastward; but the night coming on stormy and dark, the two ships lost sight of each other and did not again meet. Touching on the way at the Comorro Islands, at Pemba, where her men had a severe conflict with the natives and some white Moors, and at Almirante, the Ascension came to Socotra on 29 March 1609, and on 10 April crossed over to Aden, where the governor, having invited Sharpeigh on shore, as though to a conference, kept him and his attendants close prisoners for six weeks, and released them only on payment of goods to the value of two thousand five hundred dollars. Getting away from Aden without further attempt to trade, Sharpeigh went to Mocha, where there was 'a good market for English commodities.' Thence he returned to Socotra in August and sailed for Surat. On 28 Aug. the ship arrived at Mowa, where they could have got a pilot for Surat for twenty dollars. The master, however, refused, saying that he was able to take the ship in himself. On the 29th he tried it, missed the channel, and stuck the ship on the bar, where in three days she broke up. With some difficulty the men got on shore to Gandavi, where they were kindly received by the governor. On 9 Sept. they reached Surat, but were not allowed into the town. They remained in a neighbouring village till the end of the month, and then set out for Agra, which Sharpeigh, deserted by most of his men, reached almost alone after a tedious journey, and was well received by William Hawkyns, then residing in that place [see HAWKINS or HAWKYNS, WILLIAM, *fl.* 1595]. In October 1611 he embarked on board the Trade's Increase at Surat, with Sir Henry Middleton. It would seem that in 1613 he was agent for the company at Bantam (*Calendar of State Papers*, East Indies, 1513–1616, No. 646), but the notice is vague, and his name does not occur again.

[Purchas his Pilgrimes, vol. i. bk. iii. ch. ix.; Kerr's Collection of Voyages, viii. 314; Markham's Voyages of Sir James Lancaster (Hakluyt Soc.); Calendar of State Papers, East Indies, 1513–1616; Notes kindly supplied by William Foster, esq., of the India Office.]

J. K. L.

SHARPEY, WILLIAM (1802–1880), physiologist, posthumous son of Henry Sharpy (as he spelt the name) and Mary Balfour his wife, was born on 1 April 1802 at Arbroath in Forfarshire, whither his father, a shipowner and a native of Folkestone in Kent, had migrated some years previously. He was educated at the public school in his

native town until he entered the university of Edinburgh, in November 1817, to study the humanities and to attend the class of natural philosophy. He commenced his medical studies in 1818, learning anatomy from Dr. John Barclay, who then lectured in the extra-academical school. He was admitted a member of the Edinburgh College of Surgeons in 1821, when he came to London to continue his anatomical work in the private school of Joshua Brookes in Blenheim Street. He proceeded to Paris in the autumn, and remained there for nearly a year, learning clinical surgery from Dupuytren in the wards of the Hôtel Dieu, and operative surgery from Lisfranc. Here he made the acquaintance of James Syme [q. v.], with whom he kept up an active correspondence until Syme's death in 1870. In August 1823 he graduated M.D. at Edinburgh with the inaugural thesis 'De Ventriculi Carcinomate,' and he afterwards returned to Paris, where he spent the greater part of 1824. He then appears to have settled for a time in Arbroath, where he began to practise under his step-father, Dr. Arrott; but, finding himself unsuited for private practice, he from the end of 1826 devoted himself to pure science. Setting out for the continent with knapsack on back and staff in hand, he trudged through France to Switzerland, and thence to Rome and Naples. He turned his steps northward again in the spring of 1828, and, passing through Bologna, he stayed at Padua to work under Panizza, and came by way of Venice to Innspruck. The summer was spent in Austria, and he reached Berlin in August. He dissected here for nine months under Professor Rudolphi, and went thence to Heidelberg, to be under Tiedemann, and afterwards to Vienna. Having thus acquired a thorough acquaintance with the best methods of continental teaching, he established himself in Edinburgh in 1829, and in the following year he obtained the fellowship of the College of Surgeons of Edinburgh, presenting a probationary essay 'On the Pathology and Treatment of False Joints.' The diploma of fellow qualified him to become a teacher in Edinburgh; but in 1831 he again spent three months in Berlin, and it was not until 1831–2 that, in conjunction with Dr. Allen Thomson [q. v.], who taught physiology, he gave a first course of lectures upon systematic anatomy in the extra-mural school in Edinburgh. The association of Sharpey with Thomson lasted during the remainder of Sharpey's stay in Edinburgh.

From 1829 till 1836 Sharpey was actively engaged in scientific work, of which the earliest outcome was his paper on ciliary motion, published in 1830. He was elected a fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh in 1834, and in July 1836 he was appointed to the chair of anatomy and physiology in the university of London (now University College), in succession to Jones Quain [q.v.] In this capacity Sharpey gave the first complete course of lectures upon physiology and minute anatomy, as these terms are now understood; for physiology had been hitherto regarded as an appendage to anatomy. His lectures proved of the greatest importance; they were models both in matter and form. They were continued for the long period of thirty-eight years, and were always largely attended.

Sharpey was appointed in 1840 one of the examiners in anatomy at the university of London, a post he occupied for many years, and he was also a member of the senate of the London University. He was elected a fellow of the Royal Society on 9 May 1839. He was made a member of its council in 1844, and was appointed one of the secretaries in place of Thomas Bell (1792-1880) [q. v.] in November 1853, an office which he held until his retirement, owing to the failure of his eyesight in 1872. He was also for fifteen years, from April 1861, one of the members appointed by the crown on the general council of medical education and registration. He acted as one of the treasurers of this council, and took a deep interest in the various subjects connected with medical education and the polity of the medical profession. Sharpey was also one of the trustees of the Hunterian Museum, which is maintained by the Royal College of Surgeons of England, and in 1859 he received the degree of honorary LL.D. from the university of Edinburgh.

About 1871 he retired from the post of secretary of the Royal Society, and in 1874 from his professorship at University College, but he continued to haunt the scene of his former labours until he died. Mr. Gladstone's government in 1874 accorded him an annual pension of 150*l.*, in recognition of his services as a teacher and a man of science. He died of bronchitis at 50 Torrington Square, London, on Sunday, 11 April 1880, and was buried in the abbey graveyard at Arbroath.

The qualities which chiefly distinguished Sharpey were the variety of his knowledge, the accuracy of his memory, and his sound discrimination in all matters of doubt or controversy. Among his pupils were Professor Michael Foster and Professor Burdon Sanderson, by whose efforts the Cambridge,

Oxford, and London schools of physiology have been remodelled. Great as were Sharpey's services to physiology, his guidance of the Royal Society during a period when changes were taking place in its administration was no less important, not only to the society itself, but to science in this country. Like every great teacher, Sharpey possessed the power of attaching his pupils by ties of personal affection as well as those of common scientific interests.

Sharpey wrote comparatively little; he preferred to act as editor and referee rather than author. His few papers are of lasting value. They are: 1. 'De Ventriculi Carcinomate,' 8vo, Edinburgh, 1823. 2. 'A Probationary Essay on the Pathology and Treatment of False Joints,' Edinburgh, 1830. 3. 'On a Peculiar Motion excited in Fluids of the Surfaces of Certain Animals' ('Edinburgh Medical and Surgical Journal,' 1830, xxxiv. 113). 4. 'Remarks on a supposed Spontaneous Motion of the Blood' ('Edinburgh Journal of Nat. and Geographical Science,' 1831). 5. 'An Account of Professor Ehrenberg's Researches on the Infusoria' ('Edinburgh Nat. Philosophical Journal,' 1833, vol. xv.) 6. 'Account of the Discovery by Purkinje and Valentin of Ciliary Motions in Reptiles and Warm-blooded Animals, with Remarks and Additional Experiments' ('Edinburgh Nat. Philosophical Journal,' 1835, vol. xix.) The information contained in articles 5 and 6 is embodied in his contribution on 'Cilia' to Todd and Bowman's 'Cyclopædia of Anatomy and Physiology,' published in 1836. Sharpey also wrote the valuable article on 'Echinodermata' in this 'Cyclopædia.' He edited the fifth, sixth, seventh, and eighth editions of Jones Quain's 'Elements of Anatomy;' and contributed important information to Baly's translation of Müller's 'Physiology,' 1837 and 1840.

As a memorial of Sharpey's services to University College, an excellent bust by W. H. Thorneycroft was placed in the museum there at the expense of his pupils and friends. There is also a full-length oil painting by John Prescott Knight, R.A. [q. v.], in the council room of University College. The bust is the happier likeness.

[Obituary notices in the Proceedings of the Royal Society, 1880, vol. xxxi. pp. x–xix, and in Nature, 1880, xxi. 567; letters in Paterson's Life of James Syme, Edinburgh, 1874; Arbroath Parish Register, in the office of the registrar-general for Scotland.] D'A. P.

SHARPHAM, EDWARD (*fl.* 1607), dramatist, third son of Richard Sharpham of 'Colehanger,' Devonshire, was admitted a member of the Middle Temple on 9 Oct. 1594. He was author of two plays, 'The Fleire' and 'Cupid's Whirligig.' The former was acted at Blackfriars in 1605–6, and on several other occasions, by the children of the revels after they had lost their right to the name of the queen's revels. Four editions were published respectively in 1607, 1610, 1615, and 1631. The play itself strongly resembles Marston's 'Parasitaster.' 'Cupid's Whirligig' was likewise acted at Blackfriars by the children of his majesty's revels in 1607. Four editions were published respectively in 1607, 1611, 1616, 1630. It is prefaced by dedicatory verses to Robert Hayman. The plot is borrowed in part from Boccaccio (*Decameron*, vii. 6).

Some verses, signed E. S., prefixed to Henry Peacham's 'Minerva Britanna,' have been ascribed to Sharpham without much probability; but a sonnet 'To my beloved master, John Davies,' which serves as preface to Davies's 'Humours Heav'n on Earth,' is signed Edward Sharphell, and may have been written by Sharpham.

[Baker's Biogr. Dram. i. 649, ii. 146, 241; Fleay's Chronicle of the English Drama, ii. 232; Hunter's Chorus Vatum, ii. 218; note from J. Hutchinson, esq., librarian, Middle Temple; Waldron's Continuation of Ben Jonson's Sad Shepherd, p. 145.] E. I. C.

SHARPLES or SHARPLESS, JAMES (1750?–1811), portrait-painter, born about 1750 in England, belonged to a Roman catholic family, and was sent to France to be educated for the priesthood. Having no inclination for the church, he adopted painting as a profession. From 1779 to 1785 he was an occasional exhibitor of portraits at the Royal Academy in London, and appears to have been then residing in Cambridge. After marriage and the birth of a family he decided to remove to America. On the voyage his ship was taken by the French, and Sharples and his family were detained as prisoners for some months. Eventually, about 1796, he landed in New York, where he seems to have been known as Sharpless. Sharples usually painted small portraits in profile, mostly executed in pastels. Soon after his arrival he drew at Philadelphia in 1796 a small profile portrait of George Washington from the life. This he copied several times over, and other copies were made by his wife; one of these latter copies is now in the National Portrait Gallery with a similar portrait of Dr. Priestley. Sharples used to travel about the country with his wife and family in a caravan of his own construction and design. He died at New York on 6 Feb. 1811, aged about sixty, and was buried in the Roman catholic cemetery there.

He left a widow, two sons, and a daughter. His elder son, Felix Sharples, remained in America, where he practised as an artist, and died in North Carolina. His widow, Mrs. Ellen Sharples (*d.* 1849), after her husband's death, returned with her younger son, James Sharples (*d.* 1839), and her daughter, Rolinda Sharples (see below), to England. They resided for some little time in London, and all three occasionally exhibited portraits at the Royal Academy. Eventually they settled at Bristol Hot-Wells, where they continued to practise their art. Mrs. Sharples, who survived her whole family, in 1845 gave 2,000*l.* towards the foundation of an academy for the promotion of the fine arts at Bristol, which, after her death in March 1849, was supplemented by a bequest of 3,465*l.* From these sums was erected the present Bristol Academy, which contains samples of paintings by various members of the Sharples family.

Rolinda Sharples (*d.* 1838), who was an honorary member of the Society of British Artists, painted some works on a larger scale, such as 'The Trial of the Bristol Rioters' (1832) and 'Clifton Racecourse' (1836), each picture containing a number of small portraits. She died at Bristol on 10 Feb. 1838.

[Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Dunlap's Hist. of the Arts of Design in the United States; Baker's Engraved Portraits of Washington; Graves's Dict. of Artists, 1760–1893; information from Robert Hall Warren, esq.] L. C.

SHARPLES, JAMES (1825–1893), blacksmith and artist, born at Wakefield in Yorkshire in 1825, was one of the thirteen children of a working ironfounder, and began work at Bury in his father's calling from an early age. He got but scanty education, but obtained practice in drawing from drawing designs of boilers on the floor of the workshop in which he was employed. He was encouraged at home to practise drawing, and became expert in copying lithographs and engravings. When aged 16 he entered the Bury Mechanics' Institution in order to attend a drawing class held there. With the help of Burnet's 'Practical Treatise on Painting' he made further progress during his leisure hours, and even tried painting in oils. Undeterred by failures, he continued to try and teach himself, making his own easel, palette, &c., and buying brushes and canvas with money which he earned by working overtime. Then, by studying Flaxman's 'Anatomical Principles,' given him by his brother, and Brook Taylor's 'Principles of Perspective,' he acquired sufficient skill to complete a picture of 'The Forge,' besides painting portraits. He soon found himself able to give up his work at the foundry, but returned to it on finding how uncertain the profession of an artist was. It being suggested that 'The Forge' should be engraved, Sharples set to work and engraved it himself by a process of his own, without ever having seen a plate engraved by anybody else. Another picture by Sharples, 'The Smithy,' has also been reproduced. He died in 1893 after a life of great industry.

[Smiles's Self-Help; Times, 15 June 1893.] L. C.

SHARROCK, ROBERT (1630–1684), archdeacon of Winchester, baptised at Drayton Parslow, Buckinghamshire, on 29 June 1630 (parish reg.), was son of Robert Sharrock, rector of Drayton Parslow from 1639 to 1642, and of Adstock, Buckinghamshire, from March 1640 till his death in September 1671. His wife's name was Judith. The son Robert was admitted a scholar of Winchester school in 1643, whence he was elected fellow of New College, Oxford, on 5 March 1648–9 by the parliamentary visitors. He matriculated on 16 Nov. 1650, graduated B.C.L. on 12 Oct. 1654, and D.C.L. on 24 May 1661. He was presented to the college rectory of Horwood Magna in Buckinghamshire on 29 June 1665, and was installed prebendary of Winchester on 13 Sept. 1665. In 1668 he exchanged Horwood for the rectory of East Woodhay in Hampshire, which was nearer Winchester, succeeding his younger brother, Edmund (*b.* 1635), fellow of New College 1658–70. He became rector of Bishop-Waltham in Hampshire in 1669, and archdeacon of Winchester on 18 April 1684 (installed 21 April). He died on 11 July 1684. He married Frances, daughter of Edmund West, who survived him, and, dying on 29 Jan. 1691–2, was buried on 31 Jan. at Bishop-Waltham. His son Robert (1680?–1708) bequeathed to the bishopric of Lincoln the advowson of the rectory of Adstock, which had been purchased by his grandfather.

Wood says of Sharrock that he was 'accounted learned in divinity, in the civil and common law, and very knowing in vegetables, and all pertaining thereunto.' Historic interest attaches to his 'History of the Propagation and Improvement of Vegetables,' Oxford, 1660, 1666, 1672, his first published book, as the results of the researches of an early student of natural science, especially botany. It reappeared in London in 1694 with the title 'An Improvement to the Art of Gardening, or an exact History of Plants.' He also supplied prefaces to three of the physical treatises of Robert Boyle [q.v.] viz.: 'Some Considerations touching the Useful-

ness of Experimental Philosophy' (1663); 'New Experiments Physico-Mechanical' (1665); and 'A Defence of the Doctrine touching the Spring and Weight of the Air' (1669).

Sharrock's work on political philosophy, "Υπόθεσις ἠθική, De Officiis secundum Naturæ Jus,' was directed against Hobbes's views of ethics and politics (Oxford, 1660; Gotha, 1667; Oxford, 1682). It was quoted as of authority by Richard Cumberland (1631–1718) [q. v.] in his 'De Legibus Naturæ,' and by other philosophical writers.

Sharrock also published: 1. 'Judicia (seu Legum Censuræ) de variis Incontinentiæ speciebus,' Oxford, 1662; Tübingen, 1668. 2. 'Provinciale vetus Provinciæ Cantuariensis,' Oxford, 1663, 1664 (a collection of constitutions and statutes of the archbishops of Canterbury from 1222 to 1415, and of the cardinal legates Otho and Othobonus). 3. 'De Finibus Virtutis Christianæ,' Oxford, 1673. 4. 'Royal Table of the Laws of Humane Nature,' London, 1682 (a skeleton plan of his 'Υπόθεσις ἠθική).

[Wood's Athenæ, ed. Bliss, iv. 147–8; Wood's Fasti, ed. Bliss, vol. ii. cols. 182, 250; Foster's Alumni; Kirby's Winchester Scholars, pp. 181, 185, 209; Le Neve's Fasti, ed. Hardy, iii. 27; Burrows's Reg. of Visitors of Oxford, pp. 169, 534; Lipscomb's Buckinghamshire, ii. 514, iii. 340; Hyde and Gale's Winchester, pp. 125–6; P. C. C. 27 Canna, 73 Barrett; Britten and Boulger's English Botanists; information from Rev. James P. Nash of Bishop-Waltham and Rev. C. F. Clark of Drayton Parslow.] B. P.

SHAW, ALEXANDER (1804–1890), surgeon, born 6 Feb. 1804, was the sixth son of Charles Shaw, clerk of the county of Ayr, and Barbara Wright his wife, daughter of a collector of customs at Greenock. John Shaw (1792–1827) [q. v.], Sir Charles Shaw [q. v.], and Patrick Shaw [q. v.], were elder brothers. While one sister, Marion, married Sir Charles Bell [q. v.], another sister became the wife of Professor George Joseph Bell [q. v.] Alexander was educated at the Edinburgh high school, and afterwards went to the university of Glasgow, where he matriculated in 1819 and graduated M.A. 11 April 1822. Shaw was connected with the Middlesex Hospital for more than half a century. He entered there as a pupil in 1822; was made assistant surgeon in 1836, and surgeon in 1842. On his retirement in 1872 he was appointed consulting surgeon. He joined the medical school of the hospital at its first formation, and at the time of his death was the sole survivor of the original members of the staff. Meanwhile, with the idea of obtaining an M.D. degree, he was admitted as a pensioner at Downing College, Cambridge, 28 June 1826. In 1827, on the death of his brother John, Alexander left Cambridge to take up his work at the Great Windmill Street school. From this time all his energies were devoted to his professional work, and he abandoned the idea of taking his Cambridge degree. He passed the examination required to obtain the license of the Society of Apothecaries in 1827, and in the following year obtained the membership of the Royal College of Surgeons of England. On the institution of the fellowship of the college, Shaw was elected one of the first batch of fellows on 11 Dec. 1843. He served on the college council from 1858 to 1865.

Shaw took an active part in the work of the London medical societies. At the Royal Medical and Chirurgical Society he served the offices of hon. secretary, vice-president, and treasurer, and in the 'Transactions' of that society he published some valuable papers on rickets. Sir Charles Bell married Marion, Shaw's sister, on 3 June 1811. After the death of her husband in 1842 Lady Bell lived with her brother, and their house became a centre for the literary and scientific society of the period. In 1869 he republished Sir Charles Bell's 'New Idea of the Anatomy of the Brain' (originally published in a limited edition in 1811) with additions, consisting chiefly of selected passages bearing on the same subject written by Bell before the publication of the 'New Idea' (see *Journ. of Anat. and Physiol.*, 1869, iii. 147, and Bell, Sir Charles).

Shaw was a surgeon of repute, and, though incapacitated from work for some years before his death, never lost interest in his profession. He died 18 Jan. 1890, at the age of eighty-six. In 1856 Shaw married Susan Turner, the widow of Mr. J. Randall; the only issue of the marriage was a son who died in infancy. Mrs. Shaw died 18 March 1891.

His principal works are: 1. 'Narrative of the Discoveries of Sir Charles Bell in the Nervous System,' 1839. 2. 'Account of Sir Charles Bell's Classification of the Nervous System,' 1844. 3. 'On Sir Charles Bell's Researches in the Nervous System,' 1847. 4. 'An Account of Sir Charles Bell's Discoveries in the Nervous System,' prefixed to the sixth edition of Bell 'On the Hand,' and also published separately. Shaw wrote the articles on 'Injuries of the Back,' 'Diseases of the Spine,' and 'Distortion' in Holmes's 'System of Surgery.'

[Med. Chir. Trans. lxxiii. 23; Brit. Med. Journ. 1890, i. 393; Lancet, 1890, i. 327.] J. B. B.

SHAW, Sir CHARLES (1795–1871), soldier, third son of Charles Shaw of Ayr, by his wife Barbara Wright, was born at Ayr in 1795. Alexander Shaw [q. v.], John Shaw (1792–1827) [q. v.], and Patrick Shaw [q. v.], were his brothers. He was educated in his native town and at the universities of St. Andrews and Edinburgh. He entered the army by purchase as ensign in the 52nd light infantry on 23 Jan. 1813, and joined the second battalion at Shorncliffe in March. From Shorncliffe Shaw went to Hythe, and at the end of November he accompanied his regiment to Ramsgate, where they embarked for Holland, landing at Tholenland on 19 Dec. He was engaged in the attack on, and capture of, the village of Merxem, near Antwerp, on 31 Jan. 1814, and, after serving through the campaign, was employed with his regiment to do garrison duty at Antwerp. On the escape of Napoleon from Elba, Shaw was sent to Courtrai towards the end of March and to Ath in April, in the middle of which month he was drafted into the first battalion of his regiment, commanded by Sir John Colborne (afterwards first baron Seaton) [q. v.] During the battle of Waterloo Shaw was on baggage-guard duty at Brussels. He took part in the march to Paris and occupation of that city.

In March 1816 Shaw joined the second battalion of his regiment at Canterbury, and on its disbandment in July he was placed upon half-pay. After spending six months in Scotland, Shaw travelled in Holland in 1817. In July he was brought back to full pay in the 90th regiment. Obtaining leave of absence, he made a tour in the Hartz mountains, and in September entered as a student in the military department of the Carolinum College at Brunswick to improve his qualifications for a military career. He left Brunswick in January 1818 for Berlin to see something of the Prussian army, and, after a tour in Prussia, joined the 90th regiment at Plymouth on 10 March 1818. From Plymouth the regiment went to Chatham, and, on a reduction of the army taking place shortly after, Shaw again found himself on half-pay.

After attending a course of lectures at the Edinburgh University, he accepted an offer of partnership in an old-established wine business in Leith. He became captain and commander of the volunteer corps of Leith sharpshooters, and brought them into a high state of efficiency. On the disbandment of this corps Shaw was presented by its members, on 19 July 1822, with a handsome piece of plate. He established the first military club in Edinburgh, called the Caledonian United Service Club, for which he acted as honorary secretary until 1830. In that year, finding that he had no taste for mercantile pursuits, he disposed of his business and travelled on the continent. Shaw returned to England in September 1831.

In November, after some negotiations, he was appointed captain of a light company of marines in the liberating army of Portugal against Don Miguel. He embarked with recruits on 15 Dec., joined the fleet of Admiral (afterwards Sir) George Sartorius [q. v.] at Belleisle, arrived at the rendezvous at Terceira in the Azores towards the end of February 1832, and in May proceeded to Fayal and St. Michael's. In June the expedition left the Azores for Portugal and disembarked on the morning of 5 July at Mindella, about ten miles from Oporto, which city was entered the same afternoon, the Miguelites having evacuated it.

Shaw, who in August was made a major of one of the battalions of British volunteers, saw a good deal of fighting around Oporto, and was in every action and sortie during the siege of the city by Dom Miguel. He was twice wounded in the attack on his position on 29 Sept., when after a severe fight the Miguelites were repulsed. He was also severely wounded in the sortie of 17 Nov. He was made a knight of the Tower and Sword of Portugal.

In 1833 he commanded the Scottish contingent at Lordello, an outpost of the defences of Oporto. In July 1833 he was appointed colonel and given the command of an English battalion. He took part at the head of his battalion in the repulse of Bourmont's attack on 25 July. At the end of September he embarked with his battalion for Lisbon, landing at St. Martinho and marching thence to Torres Vedras to operate on the rear of the Miguelite army on its withdrawal from the attack on Lisbon. Shaw and his battalion did a great deal of marching during the next eight months, but not much fighting. On 26 May 1834, two days after Shaw entered Estremoz, the war ended.

On 1 June Shaw marched to Lisbon in command of a brigade of 2,500 men, which he there handed over to a Portuguese officer. From this time to February 1835 Shaw's time was mainly occupied in attempts to effect a pecuniary settlement between the officers and men of the British contingent under his command and the Portuguese government in accordance with the latter's engagement, but his efforts were only partially successful. Shaw left Portugal in June and arrived at Falmouth on 12 July 1835.

He did not remain long idle. On 17 July he was gazetted a brigadier-general to command a Scottish brigade of the auxiliary legion then being raised in England by Sir George de Lacy Evans [q. v.] for service in Spain against the Carlists, and at once went to Glasgow to assist in raising recruits. He went to Spain in September, landing on the 10th at Santander and marching with some sixteen hundred men, whom he brought out with him, to Portugalette. Here he was disappointed to find that his rank would only be that of colonel in command of a brigade of two regiments. In February 1836 he was given command of a brigade of three fine Irish regiments, but not the rank of brigadier-general. Until April 1836 he was quartered principally at Vittoria or in its neighbourhood. On 13 April he marched for San Sebastian, embarking at Santander and arriving on the 24th at San Sebastian, which was then besieged by Don Carlos. On 5 May an attack was made on the Carlist position on the heights above San Sebastian, and after a protracted fight the day was won. Shaw was struck by a spent ball, and another struck his watch. He was now made a brigadier-general and decorated with the third class of the order of San Fernando. On 31 May Shaw repulsed an attack on his lines with great success. At the end of August, owing to a misunderstanding with Evans, Shaw sent in his resignation, which Evans accepted, regretting that the legion thereby lost the services of so efficient, gallant, and zealous an officer.

Shaw arrived in England at the end of September 1836, and for a time resided at Richmond, Surrey. In September 1839 he was appointed chief commissioner of police at Manchester, a post which he held until September 1842. During the latter part of his life he lived at Homburg-von-der-Hohe, where he died in February 1871, and was buried with military honours.

Shaw married, in 1841, Louisa Hannah, only daughter of Major Martin Curry of the 67th regiment, by whom he had a son Charles Martin, who with his mother survived him. Shaw published his rambling and egotistical 'Personal Memoirs and Correspondence. . . . Comprising a Narrative of the War for Constitutional Liberty in Portugal and in Spain from its Commencement in 1831 to the Dissolution of the British Legion in 1837,' 2 vols. 8vo, London, 1837.

[Times, 28 Feb. 1871; Annual Register, 1871; Shaw's Personal Memoirs, 1837; Badcock's Journal in Spain and Portugal, 1832–4; Bacon's Six Years in Biscay, 1830–7; Duncan's English in Spain, 1834–40; A Concise Review of the Campaigns of the British Legion in Spain, by Colonel J. H. Humfrey, with plan, London, 8vo, 1838.] R. H. V.

SHAW, CUTHBERT (1739–1771), poet, the son of a shoemaker of the same names, was born at Ravensworth, near Richmond in Yorkshire, early in 1739. A younger brother, John, was baptised at the parish church of Kirby Hill on 6 Sept. 1741. After schooling at Kirby Hill and Scorton, both near Richmond, he proceeded usher, first at Scorton and then at Darlington grammar school. There he published his first poem, 'Liberty,' inscribed to the Earl of Darlington (1756, 4to). Meeting with scant appreciation in Yorkshire, he joined a company of comedians in the eastern counties, and was in 1760 at Bury St. Edmunds, where he published, under the pseudonym of W. Seymour, 'Odes on the Four Seasons.' In 1760, under the name of Smith, he appeared in Foote's comedy of 'The Minor,' but he had nothing to recommend him as an actor save his good looks, which were prematurely dulled by his excesses. On 19 Oct. 1761 he was Osman in 'Zara' at Covent Garden, and on 14 May 1762 Pierre in 'Venice Preserved,' for his own benefit. This seems to have been his last appearance on the stage. He was attracted to satire by the success of Churchill, whom he assaulted with vigour, along with Lloyd, Colman, and Shirley, in 'The Four Farthing Candles' (London, 1762, 4to); this was followed by his more ambitious 'The Race. By Mercurius Spur, esq.' (1766, 4to), in which the living poets are made to contend for pre-eminence in fame by running. The portrait of Johnson in this poem is the best thing that Shaw wrote (republished in 'The Repository,' 1790, ii. 227; and quoted in Boswell's 'Johnson,' ed. Hill, ii. 31). Shaw now descended to puff a quack medicine, the 'Beaume de Vie,' in the proprietorship of which he was made a partner. On this he married, and was next, for a short time, tutor to the young Philip Stanhope (afterwards fifth earl of Chesterfield) in succession to the notorious Dr. William Dodd [q. v.] His young wife died in 1768, and he published a 'Monody to the Memory of a Young Lady who died in Childbed, with a poetical dedication to Lord Lyttelton,' which caught the taste of the day, and of which a fourth edition appeared (London, 1779, 4to). Next year he found utterance in 'Corruption, a Satire,' inscribed to Richard Grenville, earl Temple, and subsequently (1770) in 'An Elegy on the Death of Charles Yorke, the Lord Chancellor,' which was generally suspected to have been suppressed on the family paying a sum of money to the author.

'It is to be feared,' says his biographer, 'that the morals of the author would not discountenance the opinion.' During the last years of his life he contributed much to 'The Freeholder's Magazine' and other periodicals, showing some gift for caustic annotation upon contemporary personalities and events. He died, 'overwhelmed with complicated distress,' at his house in Titchfield Street, Oxford Market, on 1 Sept. 1771. A selection of his work was printed in Anderson's 'British Poets' (1794, xi. 557), and also in Park's 'British Poets' (1808, xxxiii.), Whittingham's 'British Poets' (1822, lxiv. 47, with memoir by R. A. Davenport), and Sandford's 'British Poets' (1822, xxxi. 233).

[All that seems known of Shaw was communicated by an anonymous writer to the European Magazine, 1786, i. 14; cf. Gent. Mag. 1771, 456; Chalmers's Biogr. Dict.; Boswell's Life of Johnson, ed. Hill, iii. 140 *n.*; Pearch's Collection of Poems, ii. 219; Allibone's Dict.; Brit. Mus. Cat.] T. S.

SHAW, DUNCAN (1725–1795), Scottish divine, son of Lachlan Shaw [q. v.], minister of the parish church, Elgin, was born at Cawdor in 1725. He was educated at the Elgin Academy, and afterwards at King's College, Aberdeen, where he graduated in 1747. Continuing his theological studies, under a bursary won at Aberdeen, he went to Edinburgh University in 1749, and was licensed to preach three years later. In 1753 he was appointed minister to the parish of Rafford, Elginshire. There he remained for thirty years, until, in November 1783, he went to Aberdeen, as third of the ministers attached to the parish church. He filled this place until his death, on 23 June 1795. In 1774 Marischal College, Aberdeen, conferred upon him the title of doctor of divinity, and in 1786 the general assembly of the church elected him moderator. He married, in 1754, Jean, daughter of George Gordon, minister of Alves, Elgin, and she survived him one year. By her he had three sons and four daughters.

Shaw was 'a sensible and learned man' (Nichols, *Lit. Illustr.* iv. 823), and it was largely owing to his interest that Alexander Adam [q. v.] was able to rise from a Rafford croft to the rectorship of the high school, Edinburgh. His learning was in historical theology, and his chief works were: 1. 'A Comparative View of the Several Methods of promoting Religious Instruction, from the earliest down to the Present Time,' London, 1776, 2 vols. 2. 'The Philosophy and History of Judaism,' Edinburgh, 1787, a defence of the Mosaic system against Hume. 3. 'The Centurion,' Edinburgh, 1793.

[Hew Scott's Fasti, iii. 187, 472; New Statistical Account (Elginshire), p. 245; Stevens's Hist. of the High School of Edinburgh, p. 109.] J. R. M.

SHAW or SHAA, Sir EDMUND (*d.* 1487?), lord mayor of London, was the son of John Shaa of Dunkerfield in Cheshire. He was a wealthy goldsmith and prominent member of the Goldsmiths' Company, of which he served the office of master. He was elected sheriff in 1474, and on his presentation the members of his company escorted him to Westminster (Herbert, *Twelve Great Livery Companies*, ii. 219). Shaa became alderman, and in 1485 migrated to the ward of Cheap, on the death of Sir Thomas Hill through the 'sweating sickness.' He was elected mayor in 1482, and towards the close of his mayoralty he took an active part in influencing the succession to the crown on the death of Edward IV. Shaa probably had financial dealings with the crown, and his intimacy with Edward IV appears from a bequest in his will for an obit for the soul of that 'excellent prince' and his sister, the Duchess of Exeter. He became nevertheless a strong supporter of Richard III, who made him a privy councillor, and whose claims to the throne he and his brother (see below) were doubtless largely instrumental in inducing the citizens to adopt. Shaa appears to have resided in Foster Lane, where, and in the neighbouring West Chepe, the goldsmiths kept their shops. He possessed, and probably occupied, the great mansion, with its adjoining tenements, in Foster Lane, in which Sir Bartholomew Reid had lived (*ib.* ii. 253).

He died about 1487, and was buried in the church of St. Thomas of Acon, where he founded a chantry for the souls of his wife Juliana (who died in 1493), his son Hugh, and others (Sharpe, *Calendar of Husting Wills*, ii. 612). This trust, with many singular injunctions attached, he placed under the charge of the Mercers' Company (Watney, *Account of the Hospital of St. Thomas of Acon*, pp. 51–3). His will, dated 20 March 1487, was proved in the P. C. C. (Milles 12). Full effect was given to his intentions under the will of Stephen Kelk, goldsmith, who administered Shaa's bequest under an agreement with his executors (Watney, p. 53; Prideaux, *Goldsmiths' Company*, i. 33–4). One of these executors, John Shaa, goldsmith, may have been the Sir John Shaa (knighted on Bosworth Field and made a banneret by Henry VII) who was lord mayor in 1501, or a near relative. By another will, not enrolled, Shaa left four hundred marks for rebuilding Cripplegate, which was carried out by his executors in 1491. He also left

property in charge of the Goldsmiths' Company, producing an annual sum of 17*l.*, to found a school 'for all boys of the town of Stockport and its neighbourhood,' in which place his parents were buried. This school was considerably developed and its advantages extended by the Goldsmiths' Company (HERBERT, ii. 252–3). Shaa also directed by his will that sixteen gold rings should be made as amulets or charms against disease, chiefly cramp. One of these rings, found in 1895 during excavations in Daubeney Road, Hackney, is now in the British Museum. On the outside are figures of the crucifixion, the Madonna, and St. John, with a mystical inscription in English; the inside contains another mystical inscription in Latin.

The lord mayor's brother, RALPH or JOHN SHAW (*d.* 1484), styled John by More and Holinshed, and Raffe by Hall and Fabyan, may without much doubt be identified with Ralph Shaw, S. T. B., who was appointed prebendary of Cadington Minor in the diocese of London on 14 March 1476–7, and was esteemed a man of learning and ability. He was chosen by the Protector (afterwards Richard III) to preach a sermon at St. Paul's Cross on 22 June 1483, when he impugned the validity of Edward IV's marriage with Elizabeth Woodville, and even asserted, according to More, that Edward IV and his brother Clarence were bastards. Fabyan states that he 'lived in little prosperity afterwards,' and died before 21 Aug. 1484 (GAIRDNER, *Life of Richard III*, 1878, pp. 100–4; FABYAN, *Chronicle*, 1811, p. 669; MORE, *Life of Richard III*, ed. Lumby, pp. 57, 70; HOLINSHED, *Chronicles*, ed. Hooker, iii. 725, 729; HALL, *Chronicle*, 1809, p. 365; LE NEVE, *Fasti Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ*, ii. 372).

[Orridge's Citizens of London and their Rulers, pp. 116–20; Sharpe's London and the Kingdom, i. 320–2; Price's Historical Account of the Guildhall, p. 186; Watney's Hospital of St. Thomas of Acon, pp. 51–3; Sharpe's Calendar of Husting Wills, ii. 612–17; Prideaux's Memorials of the Goldsmiths' Company, 1896, passim.]

C. W–H.

SHAW, SIR FREDERICK (1799–1876), Irish politician, born at Bushy Park, co. Dublin, on 11 Dec. 1799, was second son of Sir Robert Shaw, bart., by his wife Maria, daughter and heiress of Abraham Wilkinson of Bushy Park. The father, a Dublin banker, sat in the Grattan parliament (1798–1800) for Bannow Borough, co. Wexford, voting against the union, and was afterwards for twenty-two years (1804–26) member for Dublin city in the imperial parliament. He also served the office of lord mayor of Dublin, and was created a baronet in 1821.

Frederick, the second son, entered Trinity College, Dublin, in 1816, but shortly afterwards removed to Brasenose College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. in 1819. In 1822 he was called to the Irish bar and quickly attained a considerable practice. In 1826 he was appointed recorder of Dundalk, an office which he vacated two years later on his nomination to the recordership of Dublin.

His father's influence, combined with his own abilities, soon led to his selection as one of the tory candidates for the representation of Dublin. In 1830 he successfully contested the city, defeating Henry Grattan's son. At the general election of 1831 he was unsuccessful, but was awarded the seat on petition, and held it for the brief remainder of the unreformed parliament. Each of his elections for the unreformed constituency of Dublin cost him 10,000*l.* At the election which followed the Reform Act he was returned in conjunction with Serjeant (afterwards Chief-justice) Lefroy for the university of Dublin; and between 1830 and his retirement from parliament in 1848 he was four times re-elected for the same constituency.

In the House of Commons Shaw rapidly acquired a reputation. Possessing debating talents of a high order, he became the recognised leader of the Irish conservatives, and was regarded as the most capable opponent of O'Connell, though he did not take the extreme tory view of any question, and had been a supporter of catholic emancipation before that measure was passed. His most considerable parliamentary achievement was in the debate on the charges brought by O'Connell against Sir William Cusack Smith [q. v.], one of the Irish judges. O'Connell had on 13 Feb. 1834 carried by a majority of ninety-three a motion for the appointment of a select committee to inquire into the conduct of Baron Smith in introducing political topics in his judicial charges. A week later a motion to rescind this resolution was carried, notwithstanding ministerial opposition, as a result mainly of Shaw's eloquent vindication of the accused judge.

On the accession to office of Sir Robert Peel in 1834 Shaw declined on professional grounds all preferment beyond a seat in the Irish privy council. During this short administration he was, however, the chief adviser of Lord Haddington's Irish government, which was called by opponents the Shaw viceroyalty (OWEN MADDYN, *Ireland and its Rulers*, ii. 245–65). On the return of the whigs to office Shaw became one of Peel's most active colleagues in opposition, being in the opinion of Mr. Gladstone 'a ready, bold, and vigorous debater, able to hold his

own against whatever antagonist, and possessed as I think of the entire confidence of Sir Robert Peel' (*Letter from Mr. Gladstone*, 14 March 1896). He took an active but not extreme part in the opposition to Lord John Russell's Municipal Corporations Bill of 1835. Although he had entered parliament as the accredited representative of conservative and protestant principles, Shaw's opinion and conduct had by 1847 become too liberal for some of his old supporters, and at the elections in that year he only retained his seat for the university after a very severe contest with Sir Joseph Napier [q. v.], afterwards lord chancellor.

In 1848 broken health obliged him to resign his seat and retire from political life. On the death of his elder brother Robert, unmarried, on 19 Feb. 1869, he succeeded to the baronetcy. Early in 1876 he resigned his office of recorder of Dublin, receiving an address from the bar. He had been made a bencher of the King's Inns in 1835. He died on 30 June 1876. Shaw married in his twentieth year, on 16 March 1819, Thomasine Emily (*d.* 1859), daughter of the Hon. George Jocelyn, and granddaughter of Robert, first earl of Roden, and left issue five sons and three daughters.

[O'Connell's Corresp. ii. 270, 302, 399; Shiel's Sketches, ii. 332; Thomas Lefroy's Memoir of Chief Justice Lefroy, 1871; Burke's Peerage; private information.] C. L. F.

SHAW, GEORGE (1751–1813), naturalist, the younger of two sons of Timothy Shaw, was born on 10 Dec. 1751 at Bierton, Buckinghamshire, where his father was vicar. He was educated at home by his father till 1765, when he entered Magdalen Hall, Oxford. He graduated B.A. on 16 May 1769, and M.A. on 16 May 1772. He was ordained deacon in 1774 at Buckden, and performed duty at Stoke and Buckland, chapels-of-ease to Bierton.

His love for natural history, which showed itself in infancy, led him to abandon the church as a profession and he went to Edinburgh to study medicine for three years. Returning to Oxford, he was appointed deputy botanical lecturer. On 17 Oct. 1787 he was admitted to the degrees of bachelor and doctor of medicine (being then a member of Magdalen College), and the same year he set up in practice in London.

In 1788 he took part in founding the Linnean Society of London, and became one of its vice-presidents. In the following year he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society. In 1791 he was appointed assistant-keeper of the natural history section of the British Museum, and was made keeper in 1807, on the death of Dr. Edward Whitaker Gray [q.v.] He retained the post till his death, in the residence attached to the museum, on 22 July 1813.

Shaw had a tenacious memory, wrote Latin with facility, elegance, and purity, and sometimes lapsed into poetry. He delivered lectures on zoology at the Royal Institution in 1806 and 1807, and repeated them at the Surrey Institution in 1809. He was an indefatigable worker, and in his 'Philosophical Transactions Abridged' (18 vols. 4to, London, 1809) dealt with all the papers on natural history, nearly fifteen hundred in number, inserting the Linnean names of the species and adding references to later works.

He was author of: 1. 'Speculum Linnæanum' (describing eight coloured plates of James Sowerby [q. v.]), 4to, London, 1790. 2. 'Museum Leverianum,' 2 pts. 4to, London, 1792–96. 3. 'Zoology of New Holland,' vol. i. (being descriptions of plates by J. Sowerby), 4to, London, 1794. 4. 'Cimelia Physica' (of which he wrote the descriptions to the series of plates by J. F. Miller), fol. London, 1796. 5. 'General Zoology,' vols. i.–viii. 8vo, London, 1800–1812; the remainder, vols. ix.–xiv. (birds), was by James Francis Stephens [q. v.] 6. 'The Naturalists' Miscellany' (also entitled 'Vivarium Naturæ'), 24 vols., with coloured plates by Frederick P. Nodder [q. v.] (and afterwards E. and R. P. Nodder), 4to, London, 1789–1813 (this work was subsequently continued by William Elford Leach [q. v.] and Nodder as the 'Zoological Miscellany').

Shaw also wrote an account of the animals for J. White's 'Journal of a Voyage to New South Wales' (4to, 1790), and the descriptions of the plates in part ii. of 'Select Specimens of British Plants,' edited by S. Freeman (fol. 1797), as well as the descriptions of plates xvi–xviii in James Sowerby's 'English Botany' (*Mag. Nat. Hist.* i. 304). Seven papers by him on zoological subjects appeared in the 'Transactions' of the Linnean Society of London between 1791 and 1800.

An engraved portrait by Holl, from a painting by Russell, is included in Thornton's 'New Illustrations of the Sexual System of Linnæus.'

[Gent. Mag. 1813, ii. 290–2; Brit. Mus. Cat.; Royal. Soc. Cat.] B. B. W.

SHAW, HENRY (1800–1873), architectural draughtsman, engraver, illuminator, and antiquary, was born in London on 4 July 1800. Having early developed a talent for drawing, he was employed by John Britton

to assist him in his 'Cathedral Antiquities of England,' and supplied most of the illustrations of Wells Cathedral and many of that of Gloucester. In 1823 he published 'A Series of Details of Gothic Architecture,' and in 1829, with plates drawn and engraved by himself, 'The History and Antiquities of the Chapel at Luton Park,' an exquisite specimen of the most florid style of Gothic architecture, destroyed by fire in 1843. These were followed by other antiquarian works of great interest, such as 'Illuminated Ornaments of the Middle Ages, selected from Manuscripts and early printed Books,' with descriptive text by Sir Frederic Madden, 1833; 'Examples of Ornamental Metal Work,' 1836; 'Specimens of Ancient Furniture,' with descriptions by Sir Samuel Rush Meyrick [q. v.], 1836; 'Ancient Plate and Furniture from the Colleges of Oxford and the Ashmolean Museum,' also with descriptive text by Sir S. R. Meyrick, 1837; 'Specimens of the Details of Elizabethan Architecture,' with descriptions by Thomas Moule, 1839; 'The Encyclopædia of Ornament,' 1842; 'Dresses and Decorations of the Middle Ages,' 1843; 'The Fishmongers' Pageant, on Lord Mayor's Day, 1616: Chrysanaleia, the Golden Fishing, devised by Anthony Munday,' with introduction by John Gough Nichols, 1844; 'Alphabets, Numerals, and Devices of the Middle Ages,' 1845; 'Decorative Arts, ecclesiastical and civil, of the Middle Ages,' 1851; 'The Hand Book of Mediæval Alphabets and Devices,' 1853; 'The Arms of the Colleges of Oxford,' 1855; 'Specimens of Tile Pavements,' 1858; and 'Handbook of the Art of Illumination as practised during the Middle Ages,' 1866. Most of these are rendered of permanent value by the knowledge and taste displayed in the selection of the examples by which they are illustrated, and by the careful drawing and colouring of the plates.

Shaw was elected a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries in 1833, and contributed a few papers to its 'Proceedings,' of which the most important was an 'Account of the Remains of a Tile Pavement recently found within the precincts of Chertsey Abbey, Surrey' (*Proceedings*, 1856, iii. 269–77). He edited in 1848 a reproduction of Walter Gidde's 'Booke of sundry Draughtes principally seruing for Glaziers, and not impertinent for Plasterers and Gardeners,' originally published in 1615. He also designed or adapted, and drew on the wood, the initial letters and all the decorative portions of Longman's edition of the New Testament, published in 1864. He likewise executed some excellent work in the form of illuminated addresses and testimonials.

Shaw died at Broxbourne, Hertfordshire, on 12 June 1873. His copy of 'Illuminated Ornaments,' highly finished by his own hand, is in the library of the British Museum.

[Redgrave's Dictionary of Artists, 1878; Athenæum, 1873, i. 798; Lowndes's Bibliographer's Manual, ed. Bohn, iv. 2371; Brit. Mus. Cat.]

R. E. G.

SHAW, Sir JAMES (1764–1843), lord mayor of London, son of John Shaw, an Ayrshire farmer, whose ancestors had occupied the property of Mosshead for three centuries, and of Helen, daughter of David Sellars of the Mains, Craigie, Ayrshire, was born at Mosshead in the parish of Riccarton in 1764. On his father's death, about five years later, the family moved to Kilmarnock, where James Shaw was educated at the grammar school. When seventeen years old he went to America to join his brother David, who held a position in the commissariat service, and by his interest was placed in the commercial house of Messrs. George and Samuel Douglass at New York. Three years later he returned to Britain, and was made a junior member of the firm in London. In 1798 he was elected alderman for the ward of Portsoken, in 1803 became sheriff of London and Middlesex, and in 1805 was chosen lord mayor. He distinguished himself in this office by reviving the right of the city to precedence on public occasions, and exercised his privilege at the funeral of Lord Nelson, when many of the royal family took part in the procession.

From 1806 to 1818 Shaw sat in parliament as member for the city of London as an independent tory (*Official Returns of Members of Parliament*, ii. 233, 247, 261). Having been created a baronet in September 1809, Sir James continued an alderman till 1831, when he was elected chamberlain of London. In this position he was threatened with a serious misfortune. He inadvertently invested 40,000*l.* held by him as banker to the corporation in the spurious exchequer bills with which the market at that time was flooded. On discovering his error he made immediate preparations to sacrifice almost his entire private fortune to make good the loss. A government commission, however, completely exonerated him, and he was repaid the full amount. In May 1843 he resigned the office of chamberlain, and on 22 Oct. of the same year he died, unmarried, at his house in America Square.

Sir James was peculiarly zealous in aiding his fellow-countrymen. Among other kindnesses he succeeded in procuring a provision for the widow of Robert Burns and commissions for her sons. In 1848 a statue

of him, by Fillans, was erected at the Kilmarnock Cross. A portrait also, by James Tannock, was presented to the borough.

The baronetcy, by a special patent granted in 1813, descended to his sister's son, John MacGee, who took the name of Shaw. On his death, without issue, in November 1868, it became extinct.

[Times, 25 Oct. 1843; Gent. Mag. 1843, ii. 654; M'Kay's Hist. of Kilmarnock, p. 230; Lodge's Peerage and Baronetage, 1859, p. 816.] E. I. C.

SHAW, JOHN (1559–1625), divine, born in Westmoreland in 1559, matriculated from Queen's College, Oxford, on 17 Nov. 1581, and graduated B.A. on 29 Feb. 1583–4. He was instituted vicar of Woking, Surrey, on 11 Sept. 1588, was deprived in 1596 for nonconformity, but appears from a distich formerly to be seen in a window of the church to have considered himself still vicar, nearly thirty years later. He lived at Woking until his death in 1625, and was buried there on 15 Sept. He was married, and left issue two sons, John and Tobias (see FOSTER, *Alumni Oxon.* 1500–1714, p. 1351).

Wood says he was 'esteemed by some for his preaching, and by others for his verses.' The latter were published in 'The Blessedness of Marie, the Mother of Jesus,' London, 1618, 8vo; 2nd edit. 1618, 12mo, and in 'Bibliorum Svmmvla . . . alphabetice distichis comprehensa,' 1621, 8vo; 2nd edit. 1623, 8vo. This has gratulatory verses by D. Featley, Thomas Goad, and Stephen Denison. Shaw also wrote 'The Divine Art of Memory, or the Svm of the Holy Scriptures delivered in acrostick verses.' This he composed in Latin, but it was translated into English by Shaw's schoolfellow, Simon Wastell [q. v.], and published posthumously, London, 1688, 12mo.

[Wood's Athenæ Oxon. ii. 354; Manning and Bray's Hist. and Antiq. of Surrey, i. 138, 310, 144 *n.*; Aubrey's Antiq. of Surrey, iii. 218; Foster's Alumni, 1500–1714, p. 1340.] C. F. S.

SHAW or **SHAWE**, JOHN (1608–1672), puritan divine, only child of John Shawe (*d.* December 1634, aged 63) by his second wife, was born at Sick-House in the chapelry of Bradfield, parish of Ecclesfield, West Riding of Yorkshire, on 23 June 1608. His mother was Emot, daughter of Nicholas Stead of Onesacre in the same chapelry. In 1623 he was admitted pensioner at Christ's College, Cambridge, his tutor being William Chappell [q. v.] Two sermons by Thomas Weld [q. v.], at a village near Cambridge, made him a puritan before he had taken his degree. Driven from Cambridge by the plague in 1629, he was ordained deacon and priest (28 Dec.) by Thomas Dove [q. v.], bishop of Peterborough. He commenced M.A. in 1630. His first charge was a lectureship in the then chapelry of Brampton, Derbyshire, hitherto supplied only by a 'reader.' His diocesan Thomas Morton (1564–1659), then bishop of Coventry and Lichfield, thought him young for a preaching license, and 'set himself to pose' Shawe in a scholastic examination. 'When he had done,' says Shawe, 'he gave me my hand full of money, and, laying his hand on my head said, "Your licence shall be this (without demanding any subscription of me), that you shall preach in any part of my diocese, when and where you will.' He remained at Brampton three years (1630–3), occasionally visiting London, where his preaching attracted 'some merchants in the city that were natives of Devonshire.' By their means, Shawe, who was now married, and held the post of chaplain to Philip Herbert, earl of Montgomery and fourth earl of Pembroke [q. v.], was transferred in 1633 to a lectureship to be maintained by London puritans for a term of three years at Chumleigh, Devonshire. His term was not quite expired when the lectureship was suppressed. It is probable that the suppression was due to Laud's interference with the evangelising schemes of the city merchants, but the statement connecting it with the judgment of the court of exchequer (13 Feb. 1633) against the feoffees for buying up impropriations cannot be true [see GOUGE, WILLIAM, D.D.] In 1636 Shawe retired to Sick-House, of which he had become possessed on his father's death. At the instance of Vaux, the lord mayor of York, he was soon appointed lecturer at Allhallows-on-the-Pavement, York. Having preached his first sermon there, he was summoned by the archbishop, Richard Neile [q. v.], who regarded Vaux as his enemy, but moderated his tone on learning that Shawe was Pembroke's chaplain.

On 17 April 1639 Shawe was instituted to the vicarage of Rotherham on Pembroke's presentation, and the earl took him to Berwick as his chaplain. At the pacification of Berwick (28 May) Shawe made the acquaintance of Alexander Henderson (1584?–1646) [q. v.], and improved it in the following year at Ripon, where he acted (October 1640) as chaplain to the English commissioners. He acted as chaplain at Doncaster to Henry Rich, earl of Holland [q. v.], in 1641, when Holland was engaged in disbanding the army raised against the Scots. Shawe's ministry at Rotherham was disturbed by the outbreak of the civil war. On Sunday, 22 Jan. 1643, while Shawe was

in the midst of his sermon, Rotherham was attacked by an armed force. Shawe with his 'man, Robert Gee, lay hid in the steeple of the church.' He fled to Hull, but, having preached there once, he was excluded by the governor, Sir John Hotham [q. v.], as an extreme man. Subsequently he preached before Ferdinando Fairfax, second baron Fairfax [q. v.], at Selby. Returning to Rotherham, he was proclaimed a traitor and fined a thousand marks. On the taking of the town (4 May 1643) his wife was imprisoned, but Shawe, after hiding in cellars for three weeks, escaped to Manchester. Here he preached every Friday without pay. He accepted from Sir William Brereton (1604–1661) [q. v.] the rectory of Lymm, Cheshire, but continued to reside in Manchester. He was invited (April 1644) to Cartmel, Lancashire, on a preaching mission, and tells strange stories of the ignorance of the district. On the approach of Rupert (June 1644), Shawe fled to Yorkshire. He was chaplain to the standing committee established after the surrender of York (16 July) for the government of the northern counties, preached in York minster at the taking of the 'league and covenant' (20 Sept. 1644), and was scribe to the 'assembly of ministers,' which met weekly in the chapter-house at York to assist Fairfax in the work of 'casting out ignorant and scandalous ministers.' All the records of this 'assembly' were kept by Shawe, and burned by him 'upon the turn of the times.' Fairfax gave him the rich rectory of Scrayingham, East Riding; he preached there but a short time, and accepted a call to Hull, lecturing first at the low church (St. Mary's), then at the high church (Holy Trinity), with a stipend from the corporation of 150*l.* and a house. He lectured on Wednesdays and Sundays, and preached to the garrison. It appears that he was a congregationalist in his ideas of church government, for his parishioners petitioned parliament about his gathering a particular church. In 1646 he was at Newcastle-on-Tyne, as chaplain of the parliamentary commissioners to Charles I. In 1651, through the interest of Sir William Strickland, he was appointed master of the Charter House at Hull with an income of 10*l.* During the protectorate he preached frequently at Whitehall and Hampton Court. Cromwell admired his preaching, and gave him an augmentation of 100*l.* a year. He once preached before Richard Cromwell at Whitehall.

When the Restoration came, Shawe was sworn a royal chaplain (25 July 1660). By the end of the year complaints of his services from the officers and garrison of Hull reached Charles II through Sheldon. Shawe was present at the coronation (23 April 1661). On 9 June Sir Edward Nicholas [q. v.] despatched a royal mandate (dated 8 June) inhibiting him from preaching at Holy Trinity, Hull. Shawe went up to London and was introduced to the king by Edward Montagu, second earl of Manchester [q. v.] Charles declined to remove the inhibition, but allowed him to retain his mastership, and promised to provide for him as his chaplain. Shawe then saw Sheldon, who explained that he was looked upon as a clerical leader in the north, and as 'no great friend to episcopacy or common prayer.' Shawe declared that he had never in his life said a word against either, but owned that 'if they had never come in, he would never have fetched them.' Returning to Hull, he preached every Sunday at the Charter House, and drew crowds, in spite of obstructions by the garrison. Finding the situation hopeless, the Uniformity Act being now passed (19 May 1662), he resigned the Charter House, closed his accounts with the corporation, whom he left nearly 1,000*l.* in his debt, and removed on 20 June to Rotherham. Here, till the act came into force (24 Aug.), he conducted services in the parish church alternately with the vicar, Luke Clayton (*d.* 1674).

Henceforth he preached only in private houses. His means were ample. Calamy notes his 'brave presence' and 'stupendious [*sic*] memory;' he had the 'Book of Martyrs' at his fingers' ends. He died on 19 April 1672, and was buried in Rotherham parish church, where a brass (now missing) bore a Latin inscription to his memory, describing him as a Barnabas and a Boanerges. He married, first, on 13 Dec. 1632, Dorothy Heathcote (*d.* 10 Dec. 1657) of Cutthorpe Hall, Derbyshire, by whom he had six daughters, and a son who died in infancy; secondly, on 19 Dec. 1659, Margaret, daughter of John Stillington of Kelfield, a lady of high family, by whom he had one daughter, and a son John, born 9 Feb. 1663, died unmarried December 1682.

He published, besides quarto sermons, 'Mistris Shawe's Tomb-stone, or the Saint's Remains,' &c. [June] 1658, 8vo, a memoir of his first wife. His autobiography, written for his son, was edited by John Broadley (from a transcript by Ralph Thoresby) as 'Memoirs of the Life of John Shawe,' &c., Hull, 1824, 12mo, re-edited for the Surtees Society, 1875; and again re-edited by the Rev. J. R. Boyle, Hull, 1882, 4to. A manuscript volume of his sermons was (1868) in the vestry library of Park Street chapel, Hull.

[Memoirs, ed. Boyle, 1882; Shawe's publications; Calamy's Abridgment, 1702, p. 451; Calamy's Account, 1713, pp. 823 sq. (chiefly condensed from the manuscript autobiography); Hunter's Oliver Heywood, 1842, p. 316; Miall's Congregationalism in Yorkshire, 1868, pp. 290 sq.; Blazeby's An Old Vicar of Rotherham, [1894]; information from Rev. W. Blazeby, Rotherham, and Mr. Donald Wilson, Hull.] A. G.

SHAW, JOHN (1614–1689), divine, son of a minister, was born at Bedlington, Durham, in 1614, and matriculated at Queen's College, Oxford, on 21 Nov. 1628, but removed to Brasenose on 2 April 1629. On graduating B.A., 24 March 1631–2, he returned to the north, and was ordained by the bishop of Durham. He seems to have been vicar of Alnham, Northumberland, from 1636, and in 1645 was presented to Whalton rectory in the same county, but was never admitted because of his strong royalist views. Probably he went abroad for a time; but he afterwards received the rectory of Bolton in Craven, which Wood says 'he was permitted to keep because it was only worth 50*l.* a year.' Walker says he was imprisoned for four years during the Commonwealth. After the Restoration, Shaw was admitted to Whalton by John Cosin [q. v.], the new bishop of Durham, and on 27 Aug. 1662 he was appointed lecturer at St. John's Church, Newcastle-on-Tyne, and afternoon lecturer at All Saints' in the same town. The corporation of Newcastle printed some of his writings against popery at their own expense. Shaw died at Newcastle on 22 May 1689. He was buried in St. John's Church.

Shaw's works, all of them rare, are: 1. 'The Portraictvre of the Primitive Saints in their Actings and Sufferings, according to St. Paul's Canon,' Newcastle, 1652, 4to. 2. 'The Catalogue of the Hebrew Saincts canonized by St. Paul further explained and applied,' Newcastle, 1659, 4to. 3. 'Origo Protestantium, or an Answer to a Popish manuscript,' by 'N. N.' (Bodleian Catalogue), London, 1677, 4to. 4. 'No Reformation of the Established Reformation,' London, 1685, 8vo.

[Works above named; Mackenzie's Hist. of Newcastle, i. 347, 355; Brand's Hist. of Newcastle, i. 113, 118, 119, 387; Walker's Sufferings, ii. 368; Whitaker's Hist. of Craven, ed. Morant, p. 131; Foster's Alumni, 1500–1714; Kennett's Register, pp. 544, 916; Wood's Athenæ Oxon. iv. 256, and Fasti, i. 459; Mackenzie's View of Northumberland, p. 392.] C. F. S.

SHAW, JOHN (1792–1827), surgeon and anatomist, born 2 April 1792, was the son of Charles Shaw, clerk of the county of Ayr, and brother of Alexander Shaw [q. v.], of Sir Charles Shaw [q. v.], and of Patrick Shaw [q. v.] At the age of fifteen he was sent to London to be a pupil of Charles (afterwards Sir Charles) Bell [q. v.], who became his brother-in-law. The connection thus formed lasted until Shaw's death. At the Great Windmill Street school he acted as superintendent of the dissecting-room, and on the death of Wilson became co-lecturer with Bell. The greater part of the experiments which led to Bell's discoveries on the nervous system were performed by Shaw, and he also took a large share in the work of forming Bell's anatomical museum. Bell's 'Letters' show in what affectionate regard he held him. Shaw accompanied Bell to Brussels immediately after Waterloo to study the effect of gunshot wounds. In 1821 he went to Paris to explain to the profession there Bell's methods of investigating the functions of the nervous system. In 1825 he was by a large majority elected surgeon to the Middlesex Hospital. This office he held until his death from fever on 19 July 1827. Bell wrote to his friend John Richardson on 21 July 1827: 'I have lost my dear and best friend, John Shaw. He was the happiest creature in his death, laughing to see my exertions to relieve him.'

Shaw accomplished much good work during a short life. His principal works are: 1. 'A Manual of Anatomy,' 1821; 2nd edit. 1822; 3rd edit. 2 vols. 1822. This book was republished in America, and was also translated into German; it was mainly intended for medical students, and was founded on the demonstrations given by Shaw at Great Windmill Street. 2. 'On the Effects on the Human Countenance of Paralysis of the Facial Nerves,' 1822. 3. 'On the Nature and Treatment of the Distortions to which the Spine and the Bones of the Chest are subject,' 1823–4. This is illustrated by a fine series of plates, mostly engraved by Thomas Landseer; it is a book of considerable merit, and is quoted at the present day as an authority on orthopædic surgery. In 1825 a supplement was issued, with the title 'Further Observations on the Lateral or Serpentine Curvature of the Spine.' Both the book itself and the supplement were translated into German. Shaw also edited the third edition of Bell's 'Diseases of the Urethra.' In the preface Bell pays a high tribute to Shaw's abilities as an anatomist.

[Med. Chir. Rev. new ser. 1827, vii. 581; Letters of Sir Charles Bell.] J. B. B.

SHAW, JOHN (1776–1832), architect, was born at Bexley, Kent, on 10 March 1776. He was articled to George Gwilt the

elder [q. v.], and commenced practice in 1798. He built many country houses, including Clifden, Buckinghamshire; Blendon Hall, Kent; Rooks' Nest, Surrey; Ham Hall, Staffordshire; and Cresswell Hall, Northumberland. In 1819 he restored Newstead Abbey for Colonel Wildman, and designed the new church of St. Dunstan, Fleet Street, London, which was completed in 1833. In 1816 he was appointed architect and surveyor to Christ's Hospital, to which he made extensive additions. He was also architect to the Ramsgate harbour trust, and the clock-tower there, as well as the obelisk erected to commemorate the visit of George IV in 1821, was his work. He was largely engaged in the valuation of property in London for compensation, on account of the extensive street improvements effected in his time. Shaw was a fellow of the Royal and Linnean societies, of the Society of Antiquaries and the Institute of British Architects. He died suddenly at Ramsgate on 30 July 1832, and was buried at Bexley, leaving six sons and two daughters. His widow died in 1864. His seventh son, Thomas Budge Shaw, is noticed separately.

His son, JOHN SHAW (1803–1870), born in London on 17 May 1803, was a pupil of his father, whom he succeeded as architect to Christ's Hospital. He built Holy Trinity Church, Great New Street, Fetter Lane, 1838; the Royal Naval School at New Cross, 1844; and Wellington College, Sandhurst, 1855–9. Shaw was one of the official referees of metropolitan buildings from 1844 to 1855, when the duties of that office were transferred to the metropolitan board of works. He died on 9 July 1870, and was buried in Kensal Green cemetery.

[Dictionary of Architecture; Redgrave's Dictionary of Artists; information from John Hebb, esq.] F. M. O'D.

SHAW, JOSEPH (1671–1733), legal writer, son of John Shaw of London, was born in 1671. He matriculated from Trinity College, Oxford, on 10 June 1687, and in 1695 entered the Middle Temple. About 1700 he made a tour through Holland, Flanders, and part of France, and embodied his observations in a series of letters to Anthony Ashley Cooper, third earl of Shaftesbury [q. v.], whose friendship and patronage he enjoyed. The letters were published in 1709. They are full of interesting details of the state of those countries during the brief interval of peace which followed the treaty of Ryswick. In later life Shaw settled at Epsom in Surrey, and devoted himself to legal study. In 1728 he published 'The Practical Justice of the Peace,' which attained its sixth edition in 1756. Shortly before his death he published a companion volume entitled 'Parish Law,' which has remained the standard work on that subject. The latest edition was published in 1881. Shaw died at Clapham on 24 Oct. 1733, leaving a son Joseph, who afterwards resided at Epsom.

[Gent. Mag. 1733, p. 551; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714; Shaw's Letters to a Nobleman; Allibone's Dict.; and for a singularly incorrect account which attributes his works to his grandson, Gent. Mag. 1806, ii. 672.] E. I. C.

SHAW, LACHLAN (1692–1777), Scottish divine, son of Donald Shaw, a Rothiemurcus farmer, was born in 1692, and educated at Ruthven and King's College, Aberdeen, where he graduated in 1711. After being schoolmaster at Abernethy, he went to the Edinburgh University to study theology, and was licensed to preach on 24 April 1716. That year he was appointed to the parish church, Kingussie; in 1719 he went to Cawdor, Nairnshire; and in 1734 he took the collegiate charge at Elgin. This he resigned in April 1774, and he died in Elgin on 23 Feb. 1777. He was twice married—first, to a daughter of Collector Stewart of Inverness, and, secondly, to Anne, daughter of Bailie Duncan Grant, Inverness, on 14 March 1727—and had, with other issue, Duncan Shaw [q. v.]

Shaw's reputation as an antiquary and scholar was not merely local. His knowledge of Gaelic was profound, and his information regarding the history of the parts of Scotland where he had lived was unique. His correspondents were numerous, and included members of the leading literary and scientific circles of his time. His 'History of the Province of Moray' remains a standard work. It was originally published in Edinburgh in 1775, and republished in Elgin in 1827. The last edition, brought up to date by J. F. S. Gordon, was issued in three volumes in London in 1882.

His other works are: 1. 'Description of Elgin and the Shire of Murray,' in Pennant's 'Tour,' London, 1774. 2. 'Continuation of Rose's Genealogy of the family of Kilravock' (Spalding Club), Aberdeen, 1848. He also edited with notes and additions the Rev. Dr. Macpherson's 'Critical Dissertations,' London, 1768.

[Hew Scott's Fasti, iii. 235, 249, 154.] J. R. M.

SHAW, MARY (1814–1876), vocalist, daughter of John Postans, messman at the guard-room, St. James's Palace, was born in 1814. From September 1828 to June 1831

she was a student at the Royal Academy of Music, and afterwards became a pupil of Sir George Smart. She made her first appearance in public as a contralto singer in 1834. At the amateur musical festival at Exeter Hall in the November of that year she attracted attention, and in 1835 she was engaged at the concert of ancient music and at the York festival. About the end of the year she married Alfred Shaw, an artist. In 1836 she sang at the Norwich and Liverpool festivals, at the latter taking the contralto part of Mendelssohn's 'St. Paul' on its first performance in England. In 1837 she appeared at the Philharmonic and Sacred Harmonic societies, and at the Birmingham festival. After singing at the Gloucester festival in 1838 she took part in the Gewandhaus concerts at Leipzig under Mendelssohn's direction. In a letter to the directors of the Philharmonic Society, dated 19 Jan. 1839, Mendelssohn speaks of Clara Novello [q. v.] and Mrs. Shaw as 'the best concert singers we have had in this country for a long time.' She next appeared at La Scala in Milan on 17 Nov. 1839 in Verdi's opera 'Oberto.' In 1842 she returned to England, and took part in operatic music at Covent Garden with Adelaide Kemble. In 1843 she sang at the Sacred Harmonic Society and at the Birmingham festival. Soon afterwards her husband became insane, and her distress of mind deranged her vocal organs so that she was unable to sing in tune. For three or four years she resorted to teaching, only appearing in public at an annual benefit concert. Eventually she married a second husband, John Frederick Robinson, a country solicitor, and retired from the profession. She died on 9 Sept. 1876 at her husband's residence, Hadleigh Hall, Suffolk.

[Grove's Dictionary of Music, iii. 485; Men of the Reign, p. 805; Athenæum, 1876, ii. 411.] E. I. C.

SHAW, PATRICK (1796–1872), legal writer, born at Ayr in 1796, was grandson of David Shaw, D.D., moderator of the general assembly in 1775, who is referred to by Burns in the 'Twa Herds' (Burns, *Poetical Works*, ed. Chambers, 1836, p. 56). His father was Charles Shaw, clerk of the county of Ayr. Alexander Shaw [q. v.], Sir Charles Shaw [q. v.], and John Shaw (1792–1827) [q. v.] were his brothers. In boyhood he lost his leg through an accident. In 1819 he was called to the Scottish bar, and in 1821 he commenced with his friend James Ballantine, and afterwards with Alexander Dunlop, a series of reports of the decisions in the court of session. In 1824 he commenced a similar series of reports of decisions in the House of Lords on appeal from the Scottish courts. These reports have been of great value to Scottish lawyers, and Shaw enhanced their usefulness by publishing supplementary digests of the decisions.

In 1848 Shaw was appointed sheriff of chancery, and he held the post till 1869, when he resigned owing to failing health. He died at 36 Charlotte Square, Edinburgh, on 12 Feb. 1872. In 1860 he married the fourth daughter of William Fullarton of Skeldon, Ayrshire.

His publications are: 1. 'Cases decided in the Court of Session,' Edinburgh, 1821–1827, 5 vols. 8vo; new edition with notes, 1834, continued to 1838, vols. vi.–xvi., 1838–52. 2. 'Cases decided in the House of Lords on Appeal from the Courts of Scotland,' 1821–4, 2 vols. 8vo, 1824-6; from 1825 to 1834, 7 vols. 8vo, 1829–39; from 1835 to 1838, 3 vols. 8vo, 1836–9. 3. 'Cases decided in the Court of Teinds from 1821 to 1831,' Edinburgh, 1831, 8vo. 4. 'Digests of Cases decided in the Courts of Session, Teinds, and Judiciary, and in the House of Lords from 1821 to 1833, and in the Jury Courts from 1815 to 1833,' Edinburgh, 1834, 8vo; from 1832 to 1837, 2 vols. 1838, 8vo. 5. 'Digest of Cases decided in the Supreme Courts of Scotland from 1800 to 1842,' 2 vols. 1843–4, royal 8vo; from 1842 to 1852, royal 8vo, 1852; new edition, 1868–9, 8vo. 6. 'Forms of Process in the House of Lords, Court of Session, Privy Court, Court of Teinds, and Sheriff Court,' Edinburgh, 1843, 2 vols. 8vo. 7. 'Treatise on the Law of Obligation and Contracts in Scotland,' 1847, 8vo. 8. 'Principles of the Law of Scotland' contained in Lord Stair's 'Institutions,' Edinburgh, 1863, 8vo. He also edited the sixth edition of Bell's 'Commentaries on the Laws of Scotland,' Edinburgh, 1858, 4to, and the fifth edition of Bell's 'Principles of the Law of Scotland,' Edinburgh, 1860, 8vo.

[Private information; Scotsman, 16 Feb. 1872; Scott's Eccl. Fasti Scot. vol. ii. pt. i. p. 100; Allibone's Dict. of Authors.] E. I. C.

SHAW, PETER (1694–1763), physician and author, born in 1694, presumably at Lichfield, was the son of Robert Shaw, A.M., master of the grammar school at Lichfield, and the descendant of an old Berkshire family. After passing some years of professional life at Scarborough, he was practising physic in London in 1726, apparently without a degree or the licence of the College of Physicians, but did not permanently settle there until some years later. Meanwhile he was 'usefully employed in facilitating the study of chemistry in England by his excellent

translations of the works of Stahl and of Boerhaave, as well as by his own writings and lectures.' On 25 June 1740 he was admitted a licentiate of the Royal College of Physicians, London, being then a doctor of medicine, but of what university is not recorded. In London he attained popularity as a physician. He was warmly patronised by Sir Edward Hulse, bart., one of the court physicians, then gradually withdrawing himself from practice. He was admitted a candidate at the College of Physicians on 16 April 1753, and was made a fellow on 8 April of the following year. In 1752 he was appointed physician-extraordinary to George II, and the same year was created doctor of medicine at Cambridge by royal mandate. Two years later he was promoted to be physician-in-ordinary to the king, and he was the usual medical attendant upon George II in his journeys to Hanover. He was nominated to the same office on the accession of George III. He died on 15 March 1763, aged 69 years, and was buried in the nave of Wimbledon church, where there is an inscription to his memory. A portrait of Dr. Shaw was presented to the Royal College of Physicians by Mrs. Pelham Warren in 1836. He married Frances, daughter of John Hyde, esq., of Quorndon in Leicestershire. His daughter Elizabeth became the wife of Dr. Richard Warren [q. v.] The latter feelingly portrayed his father-in-law's services to literature and science in his 'Harveian Oration' of 1768.

Shaw wrote largely, and in some instances hastily. His most valuable literary work was done as editor of the works of Bacon and Boyle. His edition of 'The Philosophical Works of the Hon. Robert Boyle, abridged, methodised, and disposed under the general heads of Physics, Statics, Pneumatics, Natural History, Chemistry, and Medicine' (with notes), appeared in 3 vols. 4to, London, 1725; and he published his abridgment of the 'Philosophical Works of Francis Bacon, Baron of Verulam,' in 3 vols. 4to, London, in 1733; French edit. 1765, 12mo.

Shaw's translations or adaptations included 'The Dispensatory of the Royal College of Physicians of Edinburgh, from the Latin,' 8vo, London, 1727; 'A New Method of Chemistry, including the Theory and Practice of the Art,' a translation of Boerhaave's 'Institutiones Chemiæ,' 4to, London, 1727; 'Philosophical Principles of Universal Chemistry,' from the 'Collegium Jenense' of G. E. Stahl, 8vo, London, 1730; 'New Experiments and Observations upon Mineral Waters, by Dr. F. Hoffman, extracted from his works, with notes, &c.;' 'Pharmacopœia Edinburgensis,' translated 1746–8, 8vo; 'Novum Organum Scientiarum' (Bacon), translated 1802, 8vo (another edition 1818, 12mo.

His original publications were: 1. 'The Dispensatory of the Royal College of Physicians,' 8vo, London, 1721. 2. 'A Treatise of Incurable Diseases,' 4to, London, 1723. 3. 'Prælectiones Pharmaceuticæ,' or a course of lectures in pharmacy, 1723, 4to. 4. 'The Juice of the Grape, or Wine preferable to Water,' 1724, 8vo. 5. 'A New Practice of Physic,' 8vo, London, 1726; 2nd edit. 1728; the 7th edit. appeared in 1753. 6. 'Three Essays in Artificial Philosophy, or Universal Chemistry,' 8vo, London, 1731. 7. 'An Essay for introducing a Portable Laboratory, by means whereof all the Chemical Operations are commodiously performed for the purposes of Philosophy, Medicinal Metalurgy, and Family; with sculptures,' 8vo, London, 1731 (in conjunction with Francis Hauksbee). 8. 'Chemical Lectures read in London in 1731 and 1732, and at Scarborough in 1733, for the Improvement of Arts, Trades, and Natural Philosophy,' 8vo, London, 1734. 9. 'An Inquiry into the Contents and Virtues of the Scarborough Spa,' 8vo, London, 1734. 10. 'Examination of the Reasons for and against the Subscription for a Medicament for the Stone,' 8vo, London, 1738. 11. 'Inquiries on the Nature of Miss Stephens's Medicaments,' 8vo, London, 1738. 12. 'Essays for the Improvement of Arts, Manufactures, and Commerce, by means of Chemistry,' 8vo, London, 1761. 13. 'Proposals for a Course of Chemical Experiments, with a view to Practical Philosophy, Arts, Trade, and Business,' 8vo, London, 1761 (with Francis Hauksbee).

[Munk's Coll. of Phys.; Thomson's Life, Lectures, and Writings of William Cullen, M.D.; Catalogue of Brit. Mus. Library.] W. W. W.

SHAW, ROBERT BARKLEY (1839–1879), traveller, son of Robert Grant Shaw, and his wife, Martha Barkley, was born at Upper Clapton on 12 July 1839, and was educated at schools on the continent, at Marlborough College, and at Trinity College, Cambridge. Unable to recover his health after an attack of rheumatic fever, he gave up the idea of entering the army, and in 1859 he went to Kangra in the Himalayas, where he settled as a tea-planter. An adventurous spirit, stimulated by study and unabated by the delicacy of his constitution, inspired him with a desire to penetrate the then almost unknown country north of the Karakoram; and, after one or two tentative excursions, he started in May 1868 for Eastern Turkestan, travel-

ling as a merchant, but taking with him, besides such goods as seemed likely to find purchasers in Central Asia, a prismatic compass and Rawlinson's 'Herodotus.' He reached Yarkund on 8 Dec., Kashgar on 11 Jan. 1869; being the first Englishman to visit those places. At Kashgar, though not allowed to enter the city, he was treated with marked civility by Yakub Beg, the ruler of the country who, mainly in consequence of the advice given him by Shaw, despatched an envoy to India asking that a British officer might be sent to arrange a treaty. Shaw returned by the Karakoram Pass, and proceeded to England. While preparing an account of his journey for the press, he heard that Lord Mayo had decided to send an official mission to Eastern Turkestan. He at once telegraphed an offer of his services, which being accepted, he accompanied Mr. (afterward Sir Douglas) Forsyth on his first mission. Yakub Beg, when they arrived at Yarkund (3 Aug. 1870), was in another part of his dominions, and the mission came back with its principal object unachieved. Shaw returned to England, where in 1872 the Royal Geographical Society awarded him the patron's gold medal, Sir Henry Rawlinson stating that this distinction was given him 'for the services he had rendered to the cause of geography in exploring Eastern Turkestan; and above all for his very valuable astronomical observations.' In recognition of his service to government, Lord Mayo appointed him to the political department, and he was made British joint commissioner in Ladak. In 1875 he went to Yarkund in charge of the ratified treaty made by Sir Douglas Forsyth in 1874. In 1878 he was appointed resident at Mandalay in Upper Burma. During the troubles that ensued on the death of the king Mengdun (October 1878), his position at the residency was one of great danger; but throughout the crisis he acted with courage and discretion. He wrote to the king Thebaw, who was massacring kinsfolk and rivals wholesale, that if any further murders took place he should, without waiting for orders from Calcutta, at once haul down the British flag; and he sent at the same time his assistant to explain the consequences such a measure would involve. He died at Mandalay on 15 June 1879.

He published: 1. 'A Visit to High Tartary, Yarkund, and Kashgar,' London, 1871. 2. 'A Sketch of the Turki Language as spoken in Eastern Turkestan,' Lahore, 1875, 8vo. 3. 'The Ghalchah Languages,' Calcutta, 1876. He contributed to the Royal Geographical Society's 'Proceedings' 'The Position of Pein, Charchand, and Lob Nor' (xvi. 242); and 'A Prince of Kashgar (Mirza Haidar, Doghlat) on the Geography of Turkistan' (xx. 482); and to the Royal Asiatic Society's 'Transactions' 'On the Hill Canton of Salar, the most easterly Settlement of the Turki Race' (x. 305, new series).

[Obituary notice by Lord Northbrook in R.G.S. Proceedings (new series), i. 523; Parliamentary Papers, Burma, 1886; information supplied by Shaw's nephew, Major G. J. Younghusband, Queen's own corps of Guides.] S. W.

SHAW, SAMUEL (1635–1696), nonconformist divine, son of Thomas Shaw, blacksmith, was born at Repton, Derbyshire, in 1635. From Repton grammar school he went to St. John's College, Cambridge, where he was admitted sizar, 23 Dec. 1650, and graduated B.A. In 1656 he was appointed master of the grammar school at Tamworth, Warwickshire. His first publication was a funeral oration (1657) for Thomas Blake [q. v.], vicar of Tamworth. Before 15 Sept. 1657 he was called to be curate of the chapelry of Moseley, under John Hall, vicar of Bromsgrove, Worcestershire [see HALL, THOMAS, 1610–1665]. There being no classis in Worcestershire, he was ordained by the presbyterian classis of Wirksworth, Derbyshire, on 12 Jan. 1658. Some months later he was presented by Cromwell to the sequestered rectory of Long Whatton, Leicestershire (a crown living). His approbation and admission by the 'Triers' are dated 28 May 1658, and he took possession on 5 June. Walker errs in affirming that the sequestered rector, Henry Robinson (half-cousin of Archbishop Laud), regained the living at the Restoration. His death enabled Shaw to obtain a crown presentation under the great seal (1 Sept. 1660), and the act of the Convention parliament passed in the same month made good his title without institution. Next year, however, Shaw was removed (1661) from the living at the instance of Sir John Pretyman; he obtained no other, and the Uniformity Act (1662) disqualified him, as he refused to submit to reordination. He removed to Coates, in the parish of Prestwould, Leicestershire. Some relatives brought the plague thither from London in 1665, and Shaw lost two children. At the end of 1666 he removed to Ashby-de-la-Zouche, Leicestershire, and was appointed master of the grammar school there in 1668. Through Edward Conway, earl of Conway, he obtained a license (26 Dec. 1670) from Archbishop Sheldon, on a modified subscription, namely to the first, third, and first half of the second article, specified in

the thirty-sixth canon. William Fuller [q. v.], bishop of Lincoln, who admired Shaw's book on the plague, added his own license, on a subscription 'dictated and inserted' by Shaw himself. Thomas Barlow [q. v.], who succeeded Fuller as bishop of Lincoln, was his correspondent. His school was very successful, and his house was full of boarders, including several who became divines in the established church. He wrote comedies for his scholars, 'which they acted for the entertainment of the town and neighbourhood at Christmas time.' He rebuilt the schoolhouse, and erected a gallery in the parish church for his scholars. On the passing of the Toleration Act (1689), he licensed his schoolhouse for nonconformist worship, preaching only between church hours (at noon), and attending the parish church with his scholars.

Shaw was of medium height and poor presence, with a sparkling eye, and brilliant conversational powers. He 'would droll innocently,' and could pour forth extempore prayer for two or three hours together 'without tautology.' He died on 22 Jan. 1696. He married a daughter of Ferdinando Pool (*d.* 1676), ejected from Thrumpton, Nottinghamshire. His son, Ferdinando Shaw, M.A., was ordained 14 April 1698, became minister of Friar Gate chapel, Derby, on 25 March 1699, published several sermons, as well as 'A Summary of the Bible,' 1730, 12mo, and died in 1744.

He published, besides sermons: 1. 'The Voice of One crying in the Wilderness,' 1666, 12mo; 1674, 12mo (includes 'A Welcome to the Plague' and two other pieces). 2. 'Immanuel,' 1667, 12mo (supplementary to No. 2); 4th edit. Leeds, 1804, 12mo (with memoir from Calamy). 3. 'The Great Commandment . . . annex'd the Spiritual Man in a Carnal Fit,' 1679, 12mo. 4. 'Words made Visible, or Grammar and Rhetoric,' a comedy, 1679, 8vo. 5. 'The True Christian's Test,' 1682, 8vo (consists of 149 meditations in two parts). 6. 'Grammatica Anglo-Romana,' 1687, 8vo. 7. 'Ποικιλοφρόνησις: or, The Different Humours of Men represented at an Interlude in a Country School,' 1692, 8vo. 8. 'An Epitome of the Latin Grammar,' 1693 (Calamy). His farewell sermon at Long Whatton is the eighth in 'England's Remembrancer,' 1663, 12mo.

[Calamy's Account, 1713, pp. 426 sq. 538; Calamy's Continuation, 1727, ii. 592 sq. 699; Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy, 1714, ii. 345; Unitarian Herald, 2 Aug. 1878, p. 281; Minutes of Wirksworth Classis, in Journal of Derbyshire Archæol. and Nat. Hist. Soc. January 1880, pp. 211 sq.; Mayor's Admissions to St. John's College, 1882, i. 28; Evans's List of Congregations (manuscript in Dr. Williams's Library).]

A. G.

SHAW, STEBBING (1762–1802), topographer, son of Stebbing Shaw (*d.* 1799), rector of Hartshorn in Derbyshire, was born near Stone in Staffordshire, probably in the spring of 1762. His mother's maiden name was Hyatt, and she owned a small estate in Staffordshire, which passed to her son. He was educated at Repton school, and on 24 May 1780 was admitted as pensioner at Queens' College, Cambridge, where he made the acquaintance of Sir Egerton Brydges, who came up at the same time. He graduated B.A. 1784, M.A. 1787, and B.D. 1796, was elected scholar on 4 Feb. 1784, fellow on 13 Jan. 1786, and took orders in the English church.

About 1785 Shaw went to live at the house of (Sir) Robert Burdett at Ealing, to superintend the education of his son, the future Sir Francis Burdett [q. v.] In the autumn of 1787 tutor and pupil made a tour together 'from London to the western highlands of Scotland;' Shaw kept a private diary of their proceedings, which he published anonymously in 1788. It was received with little favour. He made a 'tour to the west of England in 1788,' and published an account of his travels in the following year. On this occasion he had studied the history of the places which he purposed visiting, and had made a careful investigation into the working of the mines in Cornwall. The book soon became popular, and was reprinted in Pinkerton's 'Voyages' and in Mavor's 'British Tourists' (1798 and 1809).

Brydges and he spent the autumn of 1789 in visiting the counties of Derby and Leicester, and in the summer of 1790 Shaw was in Sussex. In every parish he sought for information on the church and its leading families, and supplemented his collections by researches at the British Museum. The results of his investigations were embodied in the four volumes of the 'Topographer for 1789 to 1791' which were edited by Brydges and himself, and the magazine contained many of his illustrations. A continuation, called 'Topographical Miscellanies,' appeared in 1792, but only seven numbers, forming one volume, were issued.

Shaw retired to his father's rectory at Hartshorn in the summer of 1791, and while there conceived the idea of compiling the history of his native county of Staffordshire. With great industry and ambition for authorship, he was possessed of good general knowledge and of considerable skill in drawing. The first volume of the 'His-

tory and Antiquities of Staffordshire' came out in 1798, and the first part of the second volume was published in 1801; a few pages only of the second volume passed through the press. It contained many of his own illustrations, some of which had already appeared in the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' and many unpublished plates are at the Salt Library, Stafford, and the British Museum (cf. SIMMS, *Bibliotheca Staffordiensis*, p. 397). A large-paper copy, with copious additions and corrections by S. P. Wolferstan, is at the British Museum. Copies on large paper have fetched 68*l*.

Shaw was elected F.S.A. on 5 March 1795, and on 27 April 1799 he succeeded his father in the rectory of Hartshorn. In the beginning of 1801 he offered his services in examining the topographical and genealogical manuscripts at the British Museum, and the librarian 'by permission of the trustees engaged him at his own expense,' but his early death in London on 28 Oct. 1802 put an end to his labours (*Harl. MSS.*, second preface, pp. 31–2). His death was a 'happy release;' he is said to have died insane, partly from application and partly from vexation about his history (POLWHELE, *Traditions*, ii. 549).

A letter by Shaw is printed in Pinkerton's 'Correspondence,' i. 396–8, and he assisted Nichols in his 'History of Leicestershire.' He was passionately fond of music, and was a proficient in playing the violin. A portrait of him was published in January 1844.

[Gent. Mag. 1802 ii. 1074, 1803 i. 9–11 (signed L. N. S., i.e. Samuel Egerton Brydges), 129; Upcott's English Topogr. iii. 1176–85; Nichols's Lit. Anecdotes, ix. 202–3; Nichols's Illustr. of Lit. iv. 712, v. 581, 662; Cox's Derbyshire Churches, iii. 381–2; Erdeswick's Staff. (ed. Harwood), pp. xlvii–viii; Nichols's Leicestershire, iii. 693, 998; Brydges's Recollections, i. 58; Brydges's Autobiogr. i. 54–5, 234; information from Dr. Ryle, Queens' College, Cambridge.] W. P. C.

SHAW, THOMAS (1694–1751), African traveller, the son of Gabriel Shaw, a shearman dyer of Kendal, Westmoreland, was born on 4 June and baptised at Kendal on 18 June 1694. He was educated at Kendal grammar school, where he gained an exhibition, and matriculated from Queen's College, Oxford, on 5 Dec. 1711, aged seventeen, graduating B.A. in 1716 and M.A. on 16 Jan. 1720. Later in 1720 he went out as chaplain to the English factory at Algiers. During his thirteen years' residence there he made a series of expeditions to Egypt, the Sinaitic peninsula and Cyprus (1721), Jerusalem, the Jordan, and Mount Carmel (1722), Tunis, and the ruins of Carthage (1727), in addition to various excursions 'in the interior of Barbary,' or in other words in Algeria, Tripoli, and Morocco. In Barbary he relates that travelling was comparatively safe, but in the Holy Land the 'wild Arabs' were very numerous, and his caravan was insufficiently protected by four companies of Turkish infantry and four hundred 'spahees,' while his personal danger was enhanced by his practice of loitering to inspect curiosities. Having married Joanna, widow of Edward Holden, at one time consul in Algiers, who had given him every assistance in his travels in Africa, Shaw returned to England in 1733. He had in his absence been elected a fellow of Queen's College (1727). He proceeded B.D. and D.D. in the year after his return, and was presented to the vicarage of Godshill in the Isle of Wight. He was also elected a fellow of the Royal Society (13 June 1734), having contributed to the 'Philosophical Transactions' of 1729 'A Geographical Description of the Kingdom of Tunis.' Four years later appeared his 'Travels or Observations relating to several parts of Barbary and the Levant,' Oxford, 1738, fol., a noble example of typography, illustrated by maps and plates, catalogues of animals, plants, fossils, coins and inscriptions, and a copious index. It was dedicated to George II, with a reference to the generous patronage of Queen Caroline. A plate of coins was dedicated to Dr. Richard Mead [q. v.] Dibdin calls the work 'a safe inmate' of a well-chosen collection. 'Fly, fly,' he says, 'to secure it' (*Libr. Comp.* 1824, ii. 48); it was especially esteemed on account of its illustrations of natural history, of classic authors, and of the scriptures. Shaw was no political observer, but a scholar, antiquary, and natural historian. He probably owed some botanical instruction to John Wilson (*d.* 1751) [q. v.] No less than 640 species of plants are described in his book. He also gives interesting descriptions of many mammals, of insects (especially of the locust swarms), and even of fishes. For his time his geological views are enlightened, while his conjectures on the subject of the pyramids have been fully confirmed by Belzoni and other investigators. Gibbon, in the 'Decline and Fall' (chap. xxiv.), honourably excepts him from the crowd of 'blind' travellers; his scrupulous fidelity was vindicated by James Bruce and by later African explorers (cf. KITTO, *Palestine*, pref. and SUMNER, *White Slavery in the Barbary States*). His accuracy was, however, impugned by Richard Pococke [q. v.] in his 'Description of the East' (vol. ii. 1745), and Shaw issued in 1746 'A Supplement . . . wherein some objections

lately made are fully considered and answered,' and, in the following year, 'A further Vindication in a Letter to R. Clayton, bishop of Clogher.' Both these supplements were incorporated in the second and most valued edition, London, 1757, 4to, and in the third edition, Edinburgh, 1808, 2 vols. 8vo (cf. LOWNDES, *Bibl. Man.* ed. Bohn). The work was translated into German, Dutch (Amsterdam, 1780, 4to), and French (The Hague, 1743, 4to; reissued, with additions, Paris, 1830, 8vo).

On the death of Dr. Henry Felton, Shaw became, on 18 Aug. 1740, principal of Edmund Hall. He 'raised the hall from a ruinous condition by his munificence,' and was termed its 'instaurator.' Next year (7 Nov.) Shaw was appointed regius professor of Greek, in succession to Dr. John Fanshaw, and in 1742 he was presented by his college to the vicarage of Bramley in Hampshire. He died on 15 Aug. 1751, and was buried in Bramley church, where a monument was erected to his memory with a long Latin inscription by his friend, Dr. Joseph Browne, fellow (and afterwards provost) of Queen's College. A commemorative tablet was erected in the English church at Algiers; and a botanical species received the name *Shawia* in his honour. He left to the university several natural curiosities, the manuscript of his travels with corrections, and some antique coins and busts, three of which were engraved in the 'Marmora Oxoniensia.' In politics he was an almost bigoted Hanoverian (cf. WORDSWORTH, *Social Life in the English Universities*, p. 615). A portrait of Shaw 'from an original etching taken from life, in the possession of Sir William Musgrave, bart.,' is prefixed to the memoir in the 'European Magazine' (1791, i. 83); there are also portraits in oils in the common-room gallery at Queen's and at Edmund Hall. These represent 'a stout and fierce, but not ill-tempered, looking man' (note from Provost Magrath). His countenance is described as 'grotesque, but marked most strongly with jocularity and good humour.'

[Gent. Mag. 1751, p. 381; Foster's Alumni Oxon. 1500–1714; Nichols's Literary Anecdotes, ii. 288 (with epitaph); Nicholson's Annals of Kendal, 1861, p. 346; W. W.'s Westmoreland Worthies, No. xxxvii.; Works of the Learned, iv. 1, 79; Thomson's Hist. of Royal Society, App. p. xxxix; Notes and Queries, 7th ser. x. 28, 294; Macray's Annals of the Bodleian, 1890, p. 224; North American Rev. xxii. 409; Chalmers's Biogr. Dict.; Georgian Era, iii. 13; English Cyclopædia; Allibone's Dict. of English Lit.; Stevenson's Cat. of Voyages and Travels, No. 597; Richarderie's Bibl. Univ. des Voyages, iv. 18–37 (giving an excellent summary of Shaw's results); Shaw's Travels are also published in Pinkerton's Voyages and Travels, vol. xv., and portions of them as an appendix to Maundrell's Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem (1750), in Mooré's Collection of Voyages (1785), and in The World Displayed, 1774, vols. xi. xvii. and xviii.] T. S.

SHAW, THOMAS BUDGE (1813–1862), author, seventh son of John Shaw (1776–1832) [q. v.], was born at Gower Street, London, on 12 Oct. 1813. In 1822 he accompanied his uncle, the Rev. Francis Whitfield, to Berbice in the West Indies, and on his return in 1827 entered the free school, Shrewsbury, where he became a favourite pupil of Dr. Samuel Butler [q. v.], afterwards bishop of Lichfield. In 1833 he went to Trinity College, Cambridge, and graduated B.A. in 1836. After acting as a private tutor, he in 1840 visited Russia and settled at St. Petersburg next year. There he made the acquaintance of M. Warrand, a professor at the university, and by his influence was in 1842 appointed professor of English literature at the Imperial Alexander Lyceum. In the same year he married M. Warrand's daughter Annette. In 1846, at the request of the authorities of the Lyceum, Shaw undertook to write a textbook of English literature. It was published in 1848 as 'Outlines of English Literature,' and went into a second edition the following year. He visited England in 1851, and proceeded M.A. On his return to Russia he was made lector of English literature at the university of St. Petersburg. His lectures were much appreciated and well attended. From 1853 until his death he was tutor and professor of English to the grand dukes of Russia. He died suddenly of an aneurism on 14 Nov. 1862. His funeral was attended by a large concourse of past and present pupils, and a monument was erected to his memory by subscription at the Lyceum.

Although the impossibility of consulting at St. Petersburg the latest English authorities on the subject made some inaccurate statements and conclusions inevitable, Shaw's manual sets before the student the characteristics of the great writers in a way that arrests his attention and guides his taste. Since the author's death the book has been enlarged, many times reprinted, and incorporated in the series known as 'Murray's Students' Manuals.' Shaw contributed the article on St. Petersburg to the 'Encyclopædia Britannica,' 1859, and published 'The Heretic,' translated from the Russian of Lajetchnikoff, 3 vols. 1844, besides excellent translations

from the Russian, Latin, Italian, and German in 'Blackwood's,' 'Fraser's,' and other magazines.

[Allibone's Dict. ii. 2062; Sir William Smith's Memoir to the 1864 edition of the Manual of English Literature.] E. L.

SHAW, WILLIAM (1550–1602), master of works to James VI of Scotland. [See SCHAW.]

SHAW, WILLIAM (1749–1831), Gaelic scholar, was born on 3 Feb. 1749 at Clachaig in the parish of Kilmorie in the island of Arran (*New Statistical Account of Scotland*, 1845, vol. v. pt. ii. p. 51). He was educated at Ayr and at King's College, Glasgow, where he graduated M.A. in 1772. On leaving the university he came to London, where he was employed by a merchant in the tuition of his children. He became acquainted with Dr. Johnson, and was one of the literary coterie which met at Bolt Court and Streatham Park. His first work, published by subscription, was 'An Analysis of the Gaelic Language,' London, 1778, 4to (2nd edit. Edinburgh, 1778, 8vo). A portion of the 'Proposals' for this work was written by Johnson. Shaw also formed the design of making a collection of all the vocables in the Gaelic language. He communicated the plan in 1778 to Johnson, who approved it. But an application for aid made to the Highland Club met with no success. Shaw, out of his own property, mustered between 200*l.* and 300*l.*, and started for the highlands. Johnson, in bidding him farewell, said: 'Sir, if you give the world a vocabulary of that language, while the island of Great Britain stands in the Atlantic ocean your name will be mentioned' (SHAW, *Memoirs of Dr. Johnson*, p. 152).

Entering the ministry of the church of Scotland, he was presented by the Duke of Gordon, in July 1779, to the parish of Ardelach in the presbytery of Nairn, of about 50*l.* yearly value; but, being dissatisfied, he resigned the charge 1 Aug. 1780 (HEW SCOTT, *Fasti*, iii. 242). After having travelled three thousand miles in Scotland and Ireland he completed his vocabulary, and published it under the title of 'A Galic and English [and an English and Galic] Dictionary, containing all the Words in the Scottish and Irish Dialects of the Celtic that could be collected from the Voice and Old Books and MSS.,' 2 vols. London, 1780, 4to. On 20 Jan. 1786 he won an action in the court of session against some of the subscribers, who contended that they were not bound to accept the book because it was defective. It was admitted that he 'had not fulfilled the terms of his printed proposals.' The highlanders had refused to give him information unless he paid them for it. Thereupon Shaw proceeded to Ireland, where the peasantry received him with more urbanity, the result being that the work contained an undue proportion of strictly Irish words (REID, *Bibliotheca Scoto-Celtica*, p. 56).

Shaw was elected a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries on 17 May 1781. In the controversy with James Macpherson (1736–1796) [q. v.] respecting the authenticity of his Ossian, he sided with Dr. Johnson, and published 'An Enquiry into the Authenticity of the Poems ascribed to Ossian,' London, 1781, 8vo (Dublin, 1782); a second edition, with a reply to Dr. John Clark's answer, was published at London in 1782, and also at Dublin, part of the reply being from Johnson's pen. This was followed, in 1784, by 'A Rejoinder to an Answer from Mr. Clark on the subject of Ossian's Poems.' He next published 'Memoirs of the Life and Writings of . . . Dr. Samuel Johnson, containing many valuable Original Letters, and several interesting anecdotes, both of his literary and social connections. The whole authenticated by living evidence' (anon.), London, 1785, 8vo, an extremely rare work.

He had been induced by Johnson to renounce presbyterianism and to take holy orders in the church of England. He subsequently graduated B.D. from Emmanuel College, Cambridge, in 1800. On 1 May 1795 he was presented by Sir Charles Kemeys Tynte, bart., to the rectory of Chelvey, Somerset. In 1801 he published at Bath 'Suggestions respecting a Plan of National Education, with Conjectures on the probable Consequences of non-descript Methodism and Sunday Schools;' and 'The Life of Hannah More, with a Critical Review of her Writings. By the Rev. Sir Archibald MacSarcasm, bart.,' appeared in London in 1802. He died at Chelvey on 16 Sept. 1831, aged 83 (*Bristol Mirror*, 24 Sept. 1831).

[Biogr. Dict. of Living Authors, 1816; Boswell's Life of Johnson; European Mag. 1782, i. 38; Gent. Mag. 1781 pp. 251, 621, 1801 ii. 1116, 1117, 1831 ii. 378; Halkett and Laing's Dict. of Anon. Lit. ii. 1473; Lit. Memoirs of Living Authors, 1798, p. 247; O'Donovan's Irish Grammar, Introd. p. lviii; Notes and Queries, 2nd ser. v. 377, 5th ser. xi. 486, xii. 78, 7th ser. ix. 230, 307, 391, 498; Reid's Bibl. Scoto-Celtica, pp. 51, 55.] T. C.

SHAW, WILLIAM (1797–1853), agricultural writer, eldest son of John Shaw of Bath, was born there in 1797. He spent two years (June 1813 to June 1815) at Wadham

College, Oxford (GARDINER, *Reg.* ii. 261), and was admitted to the Inner Temple on 20 June 1828, being called to the bar on 22 Nov. 1833. He first came into public prominence in connection with his efforts towards the establishment of the Royal Agricultural Society (MARTINEAU, *Thirty Years' Peace*, iv. 448, ed. 1878). He took a leading part in the preliminary work of forming this society, and at the inaugural meeting held on 9 May 1838 [see under SPENCER, JOHN CHARLES, third EARL SPENCER] he was chosen the first secretary, a position which he resigned in the following year, when he was elected (7 Aug. 1839) a member of the council. He was at this time editor of the 'Mark Lane Express' and of the 'Farmer's Magazine,' and his pen was busy for many years in advocating agricultural reforms and improvements. In 1838 he started with his lifelong friend, Cuthbert William Johnson [q. v.], the 'Farmers' Almanack and Calendar,' which continued to be issued annually in their joint names, notwithstanding Shaw's death in 1853, until 1872. In 1844 Shaw and Johnson brought out an English edition of Von Thaer's 'Principles of Agriculture.'

Shaw was a great supporter of farmers' clubs, and a frequent speaker and reader of papers at them. The establishment of the (London) Farmers' Club in 1840 was greatly owing to his efforts, and he was honorary secretary from 1840 to 1843. He read before this body six papers on tenant right and two on agricultural statistics. He took up enthusiastically the then novel but soon burning question of tenant right. In 1849 Shaw, with Henry Corbet (who subsequently succeeded him as editor of the 'Mark Lane Express'), published a digest of the evidence on tenant right given in the previous year before the famous committee of the House of Commons presided over by Philip Pusey [q. v.] This digest was very popular, and is still useful for reference; a second edition appeared in 1854. On 1 April 1850 Shaw was presented with a service of silver plate by the tenant farmers for his advocacy of their cause, when he was described by the chairman who made the presentation as 'the Cobden of Agriculture' (*Farmer's Mag.* 1850, xxi. 407). He was one of the chief founders of the Farmers' Insurance Company (established in 1840, and amalgamated in 1888 with the Alliance Insurance Company), of which he was managing director. He was managing director also of a less successful venture, the Farmers' and Graziers' Mutual Cattle Insurance Association, established 1844, which fell into difficulties in 1849.

Other financial ventures of his proved unsuccessful, and during the time of the railway mania he became pecuniarily embarrassed. In November 1852 he fled to Australia, where, some time in 1853, he died very miserably in the gold diggings far up the country, with only a few pence in his pocket. He was married, but lived apart from his wife. Shaw was of commanding presence and had fine features. There is a small portrait of him by Richard Ansdell (1842) in the rooms of the Royal Agricultural Society at 13 Hanover Square. This was reproduced in the engraving of the society subsequently published in 1843.

[Mark Lane Express and Farmer's Magazine, passim; Minute-Books of the Royal Agricultural Society; Journal of Farmers' Club, February 1877 and December 1892; private information.]

E. C–E.

SHAW, WILLIAM (1823–1895), Irish politician, was born in Moy, co. Tyrone, on 4 May 1823. His father, Samuel Shaw, was a congregational minister. He received his education privately, and spent some time at Trinity College, Dublin, but never proceeded to a degree. Being intended for the congregational ministry, he studied at a theological seminary at Highbury, and in 1846 was inducted into the independent church in George's Street, Cork. Shaw remained for four years in this position; but in 1850 definitely abandoned the clerical profession for a mercantile career on his marriage to Charlotte Clear, daughter of a wealthy corn merchant in Cork.

Shaw made his first attempt to enter political life in 1859. At the general election of that year he stood as a liberal for the old borough of Bandon, but was defeated by a small majority. He suffered a second defeat in the same constituency in 1865, but in 1868 he was successful by three votes, and sat through the whole of the 1868–74 parliament, strenuously supporting the church and land legislation of Mr. Gladstone. When Isaac Butt [q. v.] formulated his home-rule proposals in 1871, Shaw, who in his youth had had some connection with the young Ireland movement, accepted the new policy, and his position in the movement was so conspicuous that he was called on to preside at a home-rule convention held at the Rotunda in November 1873. At the general election of 1874 Shaw was returned for the county of Cork without opposition as an avowed home-ruler. In 1877 he was selected as the spokesman of his party on a motion for a select committee of the House of Commons to inquire into the demand for an Irish parliament. Until the death of Butt

in May 1879 he was a steadfast supporter of that politician. By that time, in virtue of the moderation of his views and the prudence and sagacity of his political conduct, he had earned a considerable position in the House of Commons, and his extensive business connections gave him a certain weight with the English liberal party beyond that possessed by most of his colleagues. Shaw was accordingly selected to succeed Butt as chairman of the Irish party, and held the post until the dissolution of parliament in 1880. Perhaps the most important part of Shaw's political career was his appointment in 1880 to a seat on the Bessborough commission, which was appointed to inquire into the tenure of Irish land [see PONSONBY, FREDERICK GEORGE, fourth EARL OF BESSBOROUGH]. It was upon the report of this commission that Mr. Gladstone mainly based the provisions of the Land Act of 1881. On the passing of that measure Shaw is understood to have declined an offer of the post of land commissioner.

Meanwhile his relations with his own party had grown unsatisfactory. An active section of the party, led by Charles Stewart Parnell [q. v.], disapproved his moderation. After the general election of 1880, when he was again returned for co. Cork by a very large majority, Parnell and his followers disowned his leadership, and when he was proposed for re-election as chairman (17 May), Parnell was chosen by twenty votes to eighteen. Thenceforward, though he made some attempt in one or two rather violent speeches to recover his position, Shaw and his friends, who had little sympathy with the land league movement and were opposed to the creation of a peasant proprietary in Ireland, ceased to act with the advanced section, and on 12 Jan. 1881 they finally and formally seceded from the Irish party. From that time Shaw gave a general support to Mr. Gladstone, and the votes of himself and those with whom he acted saved the liberal government from defeat on at least one occasion.

Though possessing a reputation for prudence and judgment which in the political world earned him the sobriquet of 'Sensible Shaw,' Shaw was unfortunate in later life in his commercial undertakings. In 1885 the Munster Bank, which he had practically founded and of which he was chairman, was obliged to close its doors. Shaw, being unable to meet his personal liabilities, was in 1886 declared a bankrupt. He had previously, on the dissolution o. parliament in 1885, retired from public lifef Shaw's last years were spent in seclusion and in the shadow of commercial and domestic misfortune. He died on 19 Sept. 1895.

[Lucy's Diary of Two Parliaments; McCarthy's Ireland since the Union; private information.]

C. L. F.

SHAW-KENNEDY, SIR JAMES (1788–1865), general. [See KENNEDY.]

SHAW-LEFEVRE, CHARLES, VISCOUNT EVERSLEY (1794–1888), born on 22 Feb. 1794, was the eldest son of Charles Shaw, a barrister, of a Yorkshire family, and M.P. for Reading from 1802 to 1820. His father on his marriage with Helena, only daughter of John Lefevre, a member of a Normandy family long settled at Heckfield Place, Hartfordbridge, Hampshire, assumed the additional name of Lefevre. Sir John Shaw-Lefevre [q. v.] was his younger brother. The son was at school at St. Mary's, Winchester, then went to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1815 and M.A. in 1819, and was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn in 1819, but practised very little. He at once took to politics and was active in his brother-in-law Samuel Whitbread's contest for Middlesex in 1820, but from his father's death in 1823 resided principally in Hampshire, interesting himself in county business and in the yeomanry drill. In 1830 he entered parliament for Lord Radnor's pocket borough of Downton in Wiltshire, and in 1831, after a severe contest, was returned for the county of Hampshire. The county was divided into two portions by the act of 1832, and thenceforward, till his elevation to the peerage, he sat for the northern division. He was a steady supporter of the whig government, but, though he moved the address in 1834, he spoke rarely. For some years he was chairman of a committee on petitions for private bills, and in 1835 was chairman of a committee on agricultural distress. He was chairman of the select committee on procedure in 1838, and carried his report almost unanimously. By attending closely to the work of these committees and to the forms of the house, and by his natural fair-mindedness and temper, he gained a reputation which led to his selection in 1839, in spite of Spring-Rice's claims as the government candidate, to succeed Abercromby in the chair. He was in fact rather the choice of the party than of its leaders. He was elected in a full house on 27 May by a majority of 317 to 299 votes for Goulburn. He was re-elected in 1841, in spite of Peel's possession of a majority, which could easily have ousted him, and again in 1847 and 1852, on each occasion unanimously. He proved

himself a speaker of distinction. He set himself to reform procedure, and during the stormy debates on Irish questions in O'Connell's time, and afterwards on free trade, maintained order firmly and impartially. He was very dignified, strong, and tactful, and the business of the house benefited greatly by his election (Walpole, *Life of Lord John Russell*, i. 323). A volume of his decisions was published by the Hon. Robert Bourke in 1857, and to him is due the removal of many unsuitable forms now forgotten. In 1857, having served longer than any other speaker except Onslow, he decided to retire, and withdrew on 11 March. He was then raised to the peerage on 11 April as Viscount Eversley of Heckfield, and received a pension. He was nominated a church estates commissioner, which office he resigned in 1859 on becoming an ecclesiastical commissioner, and was a trustee of the British Museum. Though often present, he rarely spoke in the House of Lords, but he busied himself in the public affairs of his county, where he resided at Heckfield; he was high steward of Winchester, governor and lord-lieutenant of the Isle of Wight, colonel of the Hampshire yeomanry, and even down to July 1879 was chairman of quarter sessions. He was made a G.C.B. in 1885. He took a keen interest in sport and in agriculture, and preserved his faculties and bodily activity almost till the day of his death, 28 Dec. 1888. He died at his house in Hampshire, but was buried beside his wife at Kensal Green cemetery, London, on 2 Jan. 1889. He married, 24 June 1817, Emma Laura, daughter of Samuel Whitbread, M.P. for Bedford, who predeceased him in 1857, and by her had three sons, who all died young, and three daughters; the title became extinct on his death.

[Manning's Lives of the Speakers; Walpole's Hist. of England, iii. 480; McCullagh Torrens's Life of Lord Melbourne, ii. 295; Annual Register, 1888; Times, 29 Dec. 1888.] J. A. H.

SHAW-LEFEVRE, Sir JOHN GEORGE (1797–1879), public official, younger brother of Charles Shaw-Lefevre, viscount Eversley [q. v.], was second son of Charles Shaw, who assumed the additional name of Lefevre on his marriage with Helena, daughter and heiress of John Lefevre of Heckfield Place, Hampshire, a gentleman of Huguenot descent. John George was born at 11 Bedford Square, London, on 24 Jan. 1797, and educated at Eton, whence he proceeded to Trinity College, Cambridge, graduating as a senior wrangler in 1818, and becoming a fellow of Trinity in 1819. He then spent some months abroad and made a tour in Italy, devoting himself to acquiring French and Italian. In 1822 he entered at the Inner Temple, was called to the bar in 1825, and before long met with some success as a conveyancer.

In 1832 Shaw-Lefevre was selected by government to settle the divisions of the counties for the purposes of the Reform Act of that year. His recommendations were embodied in a series of reports and maps which were the result of great labour; they were almost all accepted by parliament, and gave general satisfaction. In October 1833 he was elected to parliament as a liberal for Petersfield by a majority of one vote, but lost his seat on petition. Shortly afterwards he was specially selected by Edward Smith Stanley (afterwards thirteenth earl of Derby) [q. v.] to be his under-secretary at the colonial office. Here he at once became a member of the slave compensation commission. At the end of 1834 he was appointed one of the three commissioners to carry into effect the new Poor-law Amendment Act, and one of the commissioners under whose auspices the colony of South Australia was founded. He was also prominently connected at this period with the founding of the London University, of which for twenty years, from 1842 to 1862, he was annually elected vice-chancellor.

The severe work of reorganising the poor-law system told upon Shaw-Lefevre's health, and in 1841 he was transferred to the board of trade as joint-assistant secretary. He was almost immediately appointed one of the committee to inquire into the losses on exchequer bills, and in 1845 of the South Australia committee. In 1843 he became a member of the emigration commission. In 1846 he was requested to mediate as to differences which had arisen between the Royal Scottish Academy, the Edinburgh Royal Institute, and the board of manufactures; in the result he recommended the foundation of the National Academy at Edinburgh. In the same year he was offered but declined the governorship of Ceylon. In 1847, having unsuccessfully contested the representation of the university of Cambridge, he was placed on the ecclesiastical commission. In this new capacity he devoted special attention to the questions of leases of church lands and the patronage of the bishops.

In 1848 Shaw-Lefevre was appointed deputy-clerk of the parliaments, but he still continued his work on commissions. In 1850 he proceeded to Edinburgh for the double purpose of reporting on the fishery board and making arrangements as to the unpopular annuity tax. He became a com-

missioner, with Lord Hatherley, for settling the claims of the church lessees; and when parliament reconstituted the ecclesiastical commission, he became the unpaid church estates commissioner. Later in the same year he successfully adjusted certain disputes as to pecuniary claims between the New Zealand Company and the colonial office. In 1851 he served with Lord Macaulay and others on the inquiry into the Indian civil service, which resulted in the adoption of open competition. In 1853 he served on the commission of inquiry into the inns of court and legal education.

In 1855 Shaw-Lefevre succeeded Sir George Henry Rose [q. v.] as clerk of the parliaments, and in the same year he and Sir Edward Ryan [q. v.] became the first two civil service commissioners, performing the functions which were afterwards vested in a paid commission. Although his multifarious duties told upon his health, it was only in 1862 that he resigned the office of civil service commissioner and the vice-chancellorship of the London University. He further served, with other specialists, as a member of the commissions on the digest of law (1866–70), restored standards (1868–70), and endowed schools (1869–71). As a member of the digest of law commission he took a share in the work of the 'Revised Edition of the Statutes' and the 'Analytical Index to the Statutes Revised.' He prepared an analysis of the standing orders of the House of Lords. He retired from office, on a pension, on 6 March 1875, and died on 20 Aug. 1879.

Shaw-Lefevre became F.R.S. in 1820, a K.C.B. in 1857, and D.C.L. of Oxford in 1858. In 1850 he was elected a bencher of the Inner Temple. He was one of the founders of the Athenæum and Political Economy clubs. In 1871 he presided over the education department of the social science congress at Dublin.

He had a passion for acquiring languages, reading easily fourteen in all, including Hebrew. He began Russian after he was sixty-five. He translated and published 'The Burgomaster's Family' (1873) from the Dutch; other translations into verse from different languages have not been published. In this, as in his official work, his patience in inquiry and quickness of insight were conspicuous.

Shaw-Lefevre married, in 1824, Rachel Emily, daughter of Ichabod Wright of Mapperley, Nottingham. His only son is the Right Hon. George John Shaw-Lefevre.

[Times, 22 Aug. 1879; Proceedings of Royal Society, 1879, No. 198; private information.]

C. A. H.

SHAWE. [See SHAW.]

SHAXTON, NICHOLAS (1485?–1556), bishop of Salisbury, born probably about 1485, was a native of the diocese of Norwich. He may have been a younger brother of one Thomas Shaxton of Batheley (or Bale) in Norfolk who, according to one pedigree (*Add. MS.* 5533, f. 195, Brit. Mus.), died in April 1537. Nicholas studied at Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1506. Soon after he was elected a fellow of Gonville Hall, and commenced M.A. in 1510. In 1520 he was appointed a university preacher, and next year proceeded B.D. He is mentioned among those propagators of new views who used to frequent the 'White Horse' (STRYPE, *Parker*, p. 12). He became ultimately president or vice-master of Gonville Hall—not master, as he is sometimes called.

In February 1530 he was one of the committee of divines at Cambridge to whom, at Gardiner's instigation, the question of the king's marriage with Catherine of Arragon was referred by the university, and his name was marked by Gardiner as favourable to the king's views. In May following he was one of the twelve Cambridge divines appointed to serve on a joint committee with twelve of Oxford in examining English books likely to disturb the faith of the people. But his own orthodoxy was called in question not long afterwards; and in May next year, when he was admitted inceptor in divinity, though one of the regents wrote asking Richard Nix [q.v.], bishop of Norwich, to give him a license to preach in his diocese, the bishop was not so easily satisfied. From inquiries made at Cambridge he learned that the vice-chancellor had censured two points in a sermon which Shaxton had preached *ad clerum* on Ash Wednesday: first, that it was wrong to assert publicly that there was no purgatory, but not damnable to think so; and, secondly, that no man could be chaste by prayers or fasting unless God made him so. He had also confessed that he had prayed at mass that the clergy might be relieved of celibacy. These points he had been persuaded to give up so as to avoid open abjuration; but the vice-chancellor had compelled him and others who proceeded that year in divinity to take a special oath to renounce the errors of Wiclif, Huss, and Luther. The bishop, however, still insisted on a formal act of abjuration, because he had purchased heretical books and conveyed them into his diocese. And when Bilney was burned shortly afterwards at Norwich, recanting at the stake heresies much the same as Shaxton's, the bishop is reported to have said,

'Christ's mother! I fear I have burned Abel and let Cain go.'

In 1533, however, being then S.T.P., Shaxton was presented by the king to the parish church of Fuggleston (called Foulestone in the letters of presentation) in Wiltshire, and in the same year (3 Oct.) he was made treasurer of Salisbury Cathedral (Le Neve, ed. Hardy, ii. 647). His promotion was clearly due to Anne Boleyn, now queen, who appointed him her almoner; and next year Dr. Richard Sampson [q. v.], dean of the Chapel Royal, cordially conceded Cranmer's request that Shaxton should preach before the king the third Sunday in Lent, although other arrangements had already been made. On 27 April 1534 he was promoted to a canonry in St. Stephen's, Westminster, which he gave up early next year on obtaining the bishopric of Salisbury. He was elected to that see on 22 Feb. 1535, and consecrated by Cranmer and two other bishops at St. Stephen's Chapel, Westminster, on 11 April, the temporalities having been already restored to him on the 1st. He desired Cromwell to write to the canons of his cathedral to exact no oath of him for his bishopric, as he received it only from the king. A paper of this date speaks of a 'book,' apparently on political matters, which he had submitted to the king, and on which various judgments were passed by those to whom it was shown. On 4 June he wrote to Cromwell, cordially approving the king's letters directing the bishops to set forth his royal supremacy. On 8 July the liberties of his bishopric were restored, which were declared to have been forfeited by his predecessor, Cardinal Campeggio.

Early in 1536 Shaxton and Latimer were assessors, with Archbishop Cranmer, in examining a fanatic who said he had seen a vision of the Trinity and Our Lady, and had a message from the latter to preach that she insisted on being honoured as of old. Shortly after the same three bishops examined one Lambert (apparently the future martyr), who had said it was sin to pray to saints. His examiners were so far in sympathy with him that they all considered the practice unnecessary, but said it was not to be denounced as sin.

Shaxton owed his patroness, Anne Boleyn, at her death 200*l.*, which became a debt to the king. Cromwell also assisted him in his promotion, and received favours in return, such as the reversion of the chantership of Shaxton's cathedral and the promise of a prebend for a friend. On Anne Boleyn's death he wrote to Cromwell, piously hoping that he would be no less diligent in setting forth God's word than when she was alive, although her conduct had unfortunately dishonoured the good cause which she had promoted. Shortly afterwards, as a member of convocation, he signed not only the 'articles about religion' drawn up in 1536, but also the declaration 'touching the sacrament of holy orders,' and the reasons why general councils should be summoned by princes, and not by the sole authority of the pope. When the Lincolnshire rebellion broke out in October, he was called on to furnish two hundred men out of his bishopric to serve the king, and he was one of the six bishops 'of the king's late promotion' whom the rebels complained of as subverting the faith. Nor was he much more respected in his own cathedral city, where the king's proclamations as head of the church were torn down. His own chaplain, a Scot, who had been a friar, was put in prison by the mayor and aldermen for a sermon in which he threatened to inform the king's council of such matters. Shaxton indeed had other disputes with the municipal authorities, who claimed that the city was the king's city, while he maintained that by a grant of Edward IV it was the bishop's. This was an old controversy, but complicated by the Reformation changes, which the city did not love. The mayor and aldermen wrote earnestly to Cromwell against Shaxton having a confirmation of the liberties granted to his predecessors, and ultimately imprisoned his under-bailiff Goodall, notwithstanding that Cromwell had shown him favour for his zeal against popish observances.

In 1537 he took part in the discussion among the bishops as to the number of the sacraments, opposing John Stokesley [q. v.], bishop of London, who maintained that there were seven. Along with John Capon *alias* Salcot [q. v.], bishop of Bangor, he gave an opinion in favour of confirmation as being a sacrament of the New Testament, though not instituted by Christ himself. He also signed 'the bishops' book,' entitled 'The Institution of a Christian Man.' In 1538 he issued injunctions to his clergy, which were printed at the time by John Byddell (Ames, *Typogr Antiq.*, ed. Herbert, p. 487). Like other bishops of that day, however, he exercised his episcopal functions subject to the control of Cromwell, the king's vicegerent, who, tired of the numerous complaints preferred against him, said once that Shaxton had 'a stomach [i. e. temper] more meet for an emperor than for a bishop.'

Shaxton under-estimated the complete subservience required of him by the king and Cromwell. Writing to Cromwell in Decem-

ber 1537, he apologised by reason of debt for not sending the king a greater new year's gift than 20*l.* In 1538 he was told that the king considered him ungrateful for hesitating to grant him an advowson, on the plea that he had already given it away. To satisfy the king, he was compelled to re-demand it of the grantee, and wrote that he was 'in an hell' at the rebuke. Next year he was one of the bishops who opposed the six articles in parliament, till the king, as one of the lords present remarked, 'confounded them all with God's learning.' When the act was passed he and Latimer resigned their bishoprics. He was desired, when he gave in his resignation, to keep it secret; but it soon became known, and he wrote to ask Cromwell whether he should dress like a priest or like a bishop. Early in July he was seen in company with the archbishop of Canterbury in a priest's gown, 'and a sarcenet tippet about his neck.' A *congé d'élire* was issued for Salisbury on the 7th. Shaxton was committed to the custody of Clerk, bishop of Bath and Wells. On 9 Nov. he wrote from his confinement at Chew desiring liberty and a pension. He and Latimer seem each to have been allowed a pension of one hundred marks; but the first half-yearly payment was only made to him on 6 Dec. In the spring of 1540 he, like Latimer, had the benefit of the general pardon, but was released only with a prohibition from preaching or coming near London or either of the universities, or returning to his former diocese (*Zurich Letters*, i. 215, Parker Soc.) For some years he lived in obscurity, during which time the prohibition against preaching must have been relaxed, for he seems to have held a parochial charge at Hadleigh in Suffolk, whence in the spring of 1546 he was summoned to London to answer for maintaining false doctrine on the sacrament. He said when he left that he should either have to burn or to forsake the truth, and on 18 June he, with Anne Askew [q. v.] and two others, was arraigned for heresy at the Guildhall. All four were condemned to the flames; but the king sent Bishops Bonner and Heath, and his chaplains, Dr. Robinson and Dr. Redman, to confer with Shaxton and his fellow prisoner, Nicholas White, and they succeeded in persuading both of them to repudiate their heresy. On 9 July Shaxton signed a recantation in thirteen articles, which was published at the time with a prefatory epistle to Henry VIII, acknowledging the king's mercy to him in his old age. He was then sent to Anne Askew to urge her to do likewise; but Bonner had already tried in vain to persuade her, and she told Shaxton it would have been better for him that he had never been born. He was appointed to preach the sermon at her burning on 16 July. On Sunday, 1 Aug.—the day the London sheriffs were to be elected—he preached again at Paul's Cross, declaring 'with weeping eyes' how he fell into erroneous opinion, and urged his hearers to beware of heretical books.

In September he prevailed on Dr. John Taylor (*d.* 1554) [q. v.], afterwards bishop of Lincoln, who had been suspected of similar heresies, to sign the same articles as he had done. At his request the king gave him the mastership of St. Giles's Hospital at Norwich. Possibly it was in going down to Norwich that he revisited Hadleigh, and declared his recantation there also. He was taxed with insincerity; but from this time his life was at least consistent, and he expressed great grief for what he called his former errors, even during the protestant reaction under Edward VI. He was already married, but now put away his wife, giving her a pious exhortation in verse to live chaste and single. At the beginning of Edward's reign, on 6 March 1547, he was obliged to surrender to the king the Norwich hospital (*Dep.-Keeper of Public Records*, 8th Rep. App. i. 49). Under Mary he became suffragan to Thomas Thirlby [q. v.], bishop of Ely. Sitting at Ely on 9 Oct. 1555, along with the bishop's chancellor, he passed sentence on two protestant martyrs, Wolsey and Pygot. Next year (1556) he was the chief of a body of divines and lawyers at Cambridge before whom, on Palm Sunday eve (28 March), another heretic, John Hullier, was examined. He made his will on 5 Aug. following, and died immediately after; the will was proved on the 9th. He desired to be buried in Gonville Hall chapel, and left to that hall his house in St. Andrew's parish, Cambridge, his books, and some moneys.

[Letters and Papers of Henry VIII, vols. iv. and onwards; Crowley's Confutation of Shaxton's Articles; Foxe's Actes and Monuments; Wriothesley's Chron., Greyfriars Chron., Narratives of the Days of the Reformation (the last three Camden Soc.); Stowe's Annals, p. 592; Cooper's Athenæ Cantabr.; Cooper's Annals of Cambridge; Collett's Cat. of Caius Coll. Library, i. 49; Nasmith's Cat. of Corpus Christi MSS. p. 495; Lansdowne MS. 979, ff. 176–7; Addit. MS. 5829, f. 63 *b* (Brit. Mus.); Burnet's Hist. of the Reformation; Strype's Works.] J. G.

SHEA, DAVID (1777–1836), orientalist, son of Daniel Shea, a farmer, was born in the county of Limerick in 1777. He entered Dublin University on 3 June 1793, and in 1797 obtained a scholarship in classics. Un-

fortunately several of his friends belonged to the Society of United Irishmen, and through them he acquired a knowledge of some of the secrets of that association. In April 1798 the Earl of Clare, vice-chancellor of the university, held a visitation, at which he required the students severally to take an oath that they would inform against any whom they knew to be connected with the society. Shea, refusing to comply, was expelled from the university. He came to England, and obtained a mastership in a private school. But his knowledge of Italian soon procured him the post of chief clerk in a large mercantile establishment at Malta. While there he mastered Arabic, acquiring a knowledge not only of the classical language, but also of the chief current dialects. A project on the part of his employers to open a factory on the east coast of the Black Sea induced him to study Persian also. But the firm being compelled to withdraw from the Levant altogether, he was recalled to England. There he made the acquaintance of Dr. Adam Clarke [q. v.], who found him employment as a private tutor in the house of Dr. Laurell, and afterwards by his interest procured him an assistant professorship in the oriental department of the East India Company's College at Haileybury. On the institution of the Oriental Translation Fund, Shea was made a member of committee, and applied himself to translating Mirkhond's 'History of the Early Kings of Persia,' which was published in London in 1832. He next essayed a more important task, the translation of 'the Dabistán.' Before its conclusion, however, he died at Haileybury College on 11 May 1836. The translation of the 'Dabistán' was completed by Anthony Troyer, and published in Paris in 1843, and in London in 1844.

[Private information; Athenæum, 1836, p. 346; Troyer's Introduction to the Dabistán, p. 91; Journal of Royal Asiatic Society, 1837, App. p. 18; Webb's Compendium of Irish Biography, p. 470.] E. I. C.

SHEAFFE, Sir ROGER HALE (1763–1851), general, born in Boston, North America, on 15 July 1763, was the third son of William Sheaffe, deputy collector of his majesty's customs at Boston, by Susannah, eldest daughter of Thomas Child of Boston. On 1 May 1778, through the influence of Earl Percy, he received an ensigncy, and on 27 Dec. 1780 a lieutenancy in the 5th foot. He served in Ireland from January 1781 to May 1787, and in Canada from July 1787 to September 1797. Under the orders of Sir Guy Carleton, first baron Dorchester [q. v.], instructed by Lieutenant-governor John Graves Simcoe [q. v.], he was employed on a public mission in 1794 to protest against certain settlements made by the Americans on the south shore of Lake Ontario. On 5 May 1795 he obtained his company in the 5th foot, on 13 Dec. 1797 a majority in the 81st foot, and on 22 March 1798 a lieutenant-colonelcy in the 49th. He served in Holland from August to November 1799, in the expedition to the Baltic from March to July 1801, and in Canada from September 1802 to October 1811. The rank of brevet colonel was conferred on him on 25 April 1808, and that of major-general on 4 June 1811. He again served in Canada from 29 July 1812 to November 1813. On 13 Oct. 1812 the troops of the United States took Queenstown on the Niagara, but on the same day Sheaffe, on the death of General Sir Isaac Brock, assuming the command of the British forces, recaptured the town, the Americans losing heavily in killed, wounded, and prisoners. In the following year, on 27 April, he defended the town of York (now known as Toronto), when the losses of the Americans in taking the place exceeded the total numbers of those opposed to them. Sheaffe continued to command in the upper province and to administer its government until June 1813, and on his retirement received flattering testimonials from the executive council. For his services he was, on 16 Jan. 1813, created a baronet of Great Britain, and further rewarded by the colonelcy of the 36th foot on 20 Dec. 1829, and his nomination as a general on 28 June 1838. He had a residence at Edswale, co. Clare, but died in Edinburgh on 17 July 1851, when his title became extinct. He married, in 1810, Margaret daughter of John Coffin of Quebec; she died at Bath on 1 May 1855.

[Royal Military Cal. 1820, iii. 166–8; Dod's Peerage, 1851, p. 426; Gent. Mag. June, 1855, p. 661; Annual Register, 1812 p. 202, 1813 p. 180; Appleton's American Biogr. 1888, v. 489, with portrait.] G. C. B.

SHEARES, JOHN (1766–1798), United Irishman, fourth son of Henry Sheares, esq. of Cork, and Jane Anne, daughter of Robert Bettesworth of Whiterock, sister of Sergeant Bettesworth and a relative of the Earl of Shannon, was born at Cork in 1766. His father was a partner in the banking concern of Rogers, Travers, & Sheares, latterly generally known as Sheares's bank; he was an occasional contributor to the 'Modern Monitor,' the chief literary journal of Cork at the time. From 1761 to 1767 he represented the borough of Clonakilty in parliament, and

in 1765 assisted Dr. Charles Lucas (1713–1771) [q. v.] in passing a bill (Act 5, Geo. III) for the better regulation of trials in cases of treason, whereby a copy of the indictment was to be furnished to prisoners and counsel assigned them. For his services he received a pension of 200*l.*, which he vacated on his appointment to the lucrative post of weigh-master of Cork. In 1774 he established a charitable institution in the city for the relief of persons confined for small debts. He died in the spring of 1776, bequeathing the bulk of his property to his eldest son, Henry (see below). Two other sons, Christopher and Richard, died in the king's service, the former as a soldier, of yellow fever, in the West Indies, the latter as lieutenant in the navy, while on board his majesty's ship Thunderer, lost on the West Indian station in the great hurricane of October 1779. A fifth son, Robert, was drowned in saving the life of John when as boys they were bathing together.

John, whose youth was passed at Glasheen, on the outskirts of Cork, inherited from his father a small fortune of 3,000*l.* Intended from the first for the legal profession, he received a liberal education at home and at Trinity College, Dublin, where he graduated B.A. in 1787. He was called to the Irish bar in the following year, and in 1792 he accompanied his brother Henry on a visit to his family in France. Here he became imbued with the political principles of the Revolution, though at first not so deeply as to prevent him, it is said, when paying a visit to Versailles, from falling on his knees and vowing to plunge a dagger in the heart of every Frenchman he met if a hair of the head of Marie-Antoinette were touched. He was, however, present at the execution of Louis XVI in January 1793, and, returning to England in the same packet-boat as Daniel O'Connell, he disgusted him by exhibiting a handkerchief which he exultingly declared to have been steeped in the murdered monarch's blood. Having established himself in Dublin, and being of frugal habits, buying hardly anything except books, he not merely managed to retain his fortune intact, but was making a fair income at the bar when he was drawn within the vortex of Irish politics.

It is doubtful when precisely he became a United Irishman; but in a speech in the House of Lords in July 1793, Lord Clare alluded to him and his brother as 'members of the French Jacobin Club . . . in the pay of that society to foment sedition in this country.' The statement was wide of the truth, but Sheares occupied the chair at a meeting on 16 Aug. when an address was voted to the Hon. Simon Butler and Oliver Bond [q. v.] on their release from prison, and was with difficulty restrained from carrying a message from the former to the lord chancellor. He showed his sympathy with the revolutionists by attending the funeral of the Rev. William Jackson [q. v.] in May 1795, and when the 'Press,' a violent anti-government newspaper, was started by Arthur O'Connor [q. v.] in October 1797, Sheares became a frequent contributor to it. Owing to the editor's acceptance of an article by Sheares signed 'Dion,' and addressed to Lord Clare, as 'the Author of Coercion,' the paper was suppressed on 6 March 1798, the day on which the article was to have appeared. The article was subsequently published in a volume called 'The Beauties of the Press,' London, 1800, pp. 566–74, and is reprinted by Madden in 'United Irishmen,' 1st ser. ii. 92–103. In the society itself Sheares possessed little influence, and apparently took only a languid interest in its affairs, being, it is said, mainly responsible for the unorganised state of county Cork, which had been assigned to him and his brother. His practice at the bar, owing to the hostility of Lord Clare, did not prosper, and about Christmas 1797 he spoke of going to America. But his conduct was governed by his affection for a young lady of the name of Steele, to whom he had become greatly attached in 1794, but whose marriage with him was opposed by her mother on the ground of the laxity of his morals.

After the arrests at Bond's house on 12 March 1798, when Sheares and his brother were elected to vacant places in the directory, his whole nature seemed to undergo a change. He was indefatigable in his exertions to repair the loss the society had suffered. The rising was fixed for 23 May. On the 10th of that month he made the acquaintance of John Warneford Armstrong, a captain in the King's County militia, who afterwards informed against him. Sheares revealed to him his plan for corrupting the army. Armstrong's professions of sympathy completely deceived Sheares. The brothers were arrested on 21 May, and confined in Kilmainham gaol. On 4 July they were arraigned on a charge of high treason before Chief-justice Carleton, but the trial was postponed till the 12th. On the eve of his trial Sheares wrote to his sister Julia that, while he had no doubt about his own fate, he believed that Henry would escape. They were defended by Curran, Plunket, and McNally, but there is little doubt that the prosecution were beforehand fully acquainted with the line of defence adopted by them (through

McNally). The only witness against them was Armstrong, but additional evidence was furnished in the shape of an inflammatory proclamation, intended to be published when the revolt was announced, written avowedly by John, but found in Henry's possession. In the existing state of the law of treason in Ireland (1 & 2 Philip & Mary, cap. 10, unmodified by 7 & 8 Will. III, cap. 3), one accuser was held to be sufficient.

The trial had proceeded for fifteen hours when Curran, sinking with exhaustion, moved for an adjournment. The motion was opposed by the attorney-general, John Toler (subsequently fourth Earl of Norbury) [q. v.], and at eight o'clock on the following morning a verdict of 'guilty' against both the prisoners was returned. A painful scene followed (cf. Lady Wilde's poem, *The Brothers*). Desperate efforts were made to save the life of Henry, whom the fear of death and the fate awaiting his family completely unmanned. John's only thought was for his brother, for whose fate he felt he was responsible (cf. Barrington, *Rise and Fall of the Irish Nation*, p. 365). After the trial the brothers were removed to Newgate. None of their friends or relatives were admitted to see them, and on the following day (14 July) they were publicly executed before the prison. Their heads were cut off and, with their bodies, laid in the crypt of St. Michan's.

Henry Sheares (1753–1798), John's senior by thirteen years, born at Cork in 1753, was educated at Trinity College, Dublin. He entered the army, but three years afterwards resigned his commission in the 51st regiment of foot, and, adopting the legal profession, was called to the bar in Michaelmas term 1789. He married, in April 1782, Alicia Swete, a lady who for his sake had rejected the hand of John Fitzgibbon (subsequently Earl of Clare) [q. v.] She was reputed an heiress, but, owing to her father's failure, brought no dowry to her husband. She was the mother of four children, and died on 11 Dec. 1791, being buried in the churchyard of St. Peter's, Aungier Street. The children were taken charge of by her parents, who were living in France, and it was while visiting them there that Henry imbibed his notions of republicanism. He had inherited the bulk of his father's property, amounting to about 1,200*l.* a year, but his extravagance compelled him more than once to draw on the slender resources of his brother. He married, secondly, in 1795, Sarah Neville, of Mary Mount, co. Kilkenny, by whom he had two children. As a barrister he was not very successful. In his political action he was wholly governed by the stronger will of his brother.

[Madden's United Irishmen, 1st ser. vol. ii.; Dublin Mag. 1798; Doran's Lough of Cork in Journal of the Cork Hist. Archæol. Soc. 1st ser. ii. 237–42; Tenison's Private Bankers of Cork, *ib.* 1st ser. i. 245, and Cork M.P.s, *ib.* 2nd ser. ii. 276; Castlereagh Corresp. i. 148, 150, 227, 258; Fitzpatrick's Secret Service under Pitt, 2nd edit.; Howell's State Trials, xxvii. 255–398; O'Keeffe's Life and Times of O'Connell, i. 37; Lecky's England in the Eighteenth Century, viii. 33, 48, 189–91; Froude's English in Ireland, ed. 1887, iii. 319, 390, 396, 397, 403, 511, 528.]

R. D.

INDEX

TO

THE FIFTY-FIRST VOLUME.

PAGE

Scoffin, William (1655 ?–1732) . . . 1
Scogan or Scoggin, Henry (1361 ?–1407) . 1
Scogan, John (*fl.* 1480). See under Scogan or Scoggin, Henry.
Scoles, Joseph John (1798–1863) . . . 3
Scoloker, Anthony (*fl.* 1548) 4
Scoloker, Anthony (*fl.* 1604). See under Scoloker, Anthony (*fl.* 1548).
Scorburgh, Sir Robert de (*d.* 1340) . . . 5
Scoresby, William (1760–1829) . . . 5
Scoresby, William (1789–1857) . . . 6
Scoresby-Jackson, Robert Edmund (1835–1867). See Jackson.
Scory, John (*d.* 1585) 8
Scot. See also Scott.
Scot, David (1770 ?–1834) 9
Scot or Scott, Thomas (*fl.* 1605). See under Scott, Thomas (1580 ?–1626).
Scotland, Henry of (1114 ?–1152). See Henry.
Scotstarvet, Sir John of (1586–1670). See Scott, Sir John.
Scott. See also Scot.
Scott, Alexander (1525 ?–1584) . . . 10
Scott, Alexander John (1768–1840). . . 10
Scott, Alexander John (1805–1866) . . 12
Scott, Andrew (1757–1839) 13
Scott, Benjamin (1788–1830). See under Scott, Thomas (1747–1821).
Scott, Benjamin (1814–1892) 14
Scott, Caroline Lucy, Lady Scott (1784–1857) 14
Scott or Scot, Cuthbert (*d.* 1565) . . . 15
Scott, Daniel, LL.D. (1694–1759) . . . 15
Scott, David (1806–1849) 16
Scott, Elizabeth (1708 ?–1776). See under Scott, Thomas (1705–1775).
Scott or Scot, George (*d.* 1685) . . . 18
Scott, Sir George Gilbert (1811–1878) . . 19
Scott, George Lewis (1708–1780) . . . 23
Scott or Scot, Gregory (*d.* 1576) . . . 23
Scott, Harriet Anne, Lady Scott (1819–1894) 24
Scott, Helenus, M.D. (1760–1821) . . . 24
Scott, Henry, Earl of Deloraine (1676–1730) . 24
Scott, Henry, third Duke of Buccleuch and fifth Duke of Queensberry (1746–1812) . 25
Scott, Henry Young Darracott (1822–1883) . 26
Scott, Hew (1791–1872) 27
Scott, Sir James (*fl.* 1579–1606) . . . 27
Scott, James (known as Fitzroy and as Crofts), Duke of Monmouth and Buccleuch (1649–1685) 28

PAGE

Scott, James, D.D. (1733–1814) . . . 37
Scott, Sir James (1790 ?–1872) . . . 37
Scott, James Robert Hope- (1812–1873). See Hope-Scott.
Scott, Sir James Sibbald David (1814–1885) . 38
Scott, Sir John (*d.* 1485). See under Scott, Sir William (*d.* 1350).
Scott or Scot, John (*fl.* 1530) 38
Scott, Sir John (1484 ?–1533). See under Scott, Sir William (*d.* 1350).
Scott or Scot, John (*fl.* 1550) 39
Scott, Sir John (1570–1616). See under Scott, Sir William (*d.* 1350).
Scott or Scot, Sir John (1585–1670) . . 39
Scott, John (1639–1695) 41
Scott, John (*fl.* 1654–1696) 41
Scott, John (1730–1783) 42
Scott, John, Earl of Clonmell (1739–1798) . 43
Scott, afterwards Scott-Waring, John (1747–1819) 46
Scott, John (1783–1821) 47
Scott, John (1774–1827) 48
Scott, John (1777–1834). See under Scott, Thomas (1747–1821).
Scott, John, first Earl of Eldon (1751–1838) . 49
Scott, John (1798–1846) 56
Scott, John (1794–1871) 57
Scott, Jonathan, LL.D. (1754–1829) . . 58
Scott, Joseph Nicoll, M.D. (1703 ?–1769) . 59
Scott or Scot, Michael (1175 ?–1234 ?) . . 59
Scott, Michael (1789–1835) 62
Scott or Scot, Patrick (*fl.* 1620) . . . 63
Scott or Scot, Reginald or Reynold (1538 ?–1599) 63
Scott, Robert (1777–1841) 65
Scott, Robert (1811–1887) 65
Scott, Robert Bisset (1774–1841) . . . 66
Scott, Robert Eden (1770–1811) . . . 66
Scott, Samuel (1710 ?–1772) 66
Scott, Samuel (1719–1788). See under Scott, John (1730–1783).
Scott, Sarah (*d.* 1795) 67
Scott or Scot, Thomas (1423–1500). See Rotherham.
Scott or Scot, Thomas (1480 ?–1539) . . 67
Scott, Sir Thomas (1535–1594). See under Scott, Sir William (*d.* 1350).
Scott, Thomas (1580 ?–1626) 68
Scott or Scot, Thomas (*d.* 1660) . . . 70
Scott, Thomas (1705–1775) 72

PAGE
Scott, Thomas (1747–1821) 73
Scott, Thomas (1780–1835). See under Scott, Thomas (1747–1821).
Scott, Thomas (1745–1842) 75
Scott, Thomas (1808–1878) 76
Scott, Sir Walter (1490?–1552) 76
Scott, Walter, first Lord Scott of Buccleuch (1565–1611) 77
Scott, Walter (1550?–1629?) 79
Scott, Walter, Earl of Tarras (1644–1693) . 79
Scott, Walter, of Satchells (1614?–1694?) . 80
Scott, Sir Walter (1771–1832) 80
Scott, Walter Francis, fifth Duke of Buccleuch and seventh Duke of Queensberry (1806–1884). See under Scott, Henry, third Duke of Buccleuch and fifth Duke of Queensberry.
Scott, Sir William (*d.* 1350) 105
Scott, Sir William (1459–1524). See under Scott, Sir William (*d.* 1350).
Scott or Scot, Sir William (*d.* 1532) . . 107
Scott, Sir William (*d.* 1656) 108
Scott, Sir William (1674?–1725) . . . 108
Scott, William, Lord Stowell (1745–1836) . 108
Scott, William (1797–1848) 112
Scott, William (1813–1872) 112
Scott, William Bell (1811–1890) . . . 113
Scottow, Joshua (1618–1693) 115
Scotus or Erigena, John (*fl.* 850) . . . 115
Scotus, Marianus (1028–1082?). See Marianus.
Scotus, Macarius (*d.* 1153). See Macarius.
Scotus, Duns (1265?–1308). See Duns, Joannes Scotus.
Scougal, Henry (1650–1678) 120
Scougal or Scougall, John (1645?–1730?) . 121
Scougal or Scougall, Patrick (1607?–1682) . 121
Scouler, John (1804–1871) 122
Scovell, Sir George (1774–1861) . . . 123
Scratchley, Sir Peter Henry (1835–1885) . 123
Scriba, or The Scribe, Robert (*fl.* 1170). See Robert of Bridlington.
Scrimger, Henry (1506–1572). See Scrymgeour.
Scrimgeour, Sir James (1550?–1612). See Scrymgeour.
Scriven, Edward (1775–1841) 125
Scrivener, Frederick Henry Ambrose (1813–1891) 126
Scrivener, Matthew (*fl.* 1660) 126
Scroggs, Sir William (1623?–1683) . . . 127
Scroggs, Sir William (1652?–1695). See under Scroggs, Sir William (1623?–1683).
Scroop, Laurence (1577–1643). See Anderton.
Scrope or Scroope, Adrian (1601–1660) . . 132
Scrope or Scroope, Sir Adrian (*d.* 1667). See under Scrope or Scroope, Adrian.
Scrope or Scroop, Sir Carr (1649–1680) . . 133
Scrope, Sir Geoffrey le (*d.* 1340) . . . 134
Scrope, George Julius Poulett (1797–1876) . 135
Scrope, Sir Henry le (*d.* 1336) 137
Scrope, Henry le, first Baron Scrope of Masham (1315–1391) 138
Scrope, Henry le, third Baron Scrope of Masham (1376?–1415) 139
Scrope, Henry le, ninth Baron Scrope of Bolton (1534–1592) 140
Scrope, John le, fifth Baron Scrope of Bolton (1435–1498) 141
Scrope, John (1662?–1752) 141
Scrope, Richard le, first Baron Scrope of Bolton (1327?–1403) 142
Scrope, Richard le (1350?–1405) 144
Scrope, Thomas (*d.* 1491), also called Bradley 147
PAGE
Scrope, William le, Earl of Wiltshire (1351?–1399) 148
Scrope, William (1772–1852) 150
Scrymgeour or Scrimger, Henry (1506–1572) . 150
Scrymgeour, Sir James (1550?–1612) . . 151
Scrymgeour, James, second Viscount Dudhope (*d.* 1644). See under Scrymgeour, Sir James.
Scrymgeour, John, Viscount Dudhope (*d.* 1643). See under, Scrymgeour, Sir James.
Scrymgeour, John, third Viscount Dudhope and first Earl of Dundee (*d.* 1668). See under Scrymgeour, Sir James.
Scudamore, Sir Charles, M.D. (1779–1849) . 152
Scudamore, Frank Ives (1823–1884) . . 153
Scudamore, John, first Viscount Scudamore (1601–1671) 154
Scudamore, William Edward (1813–1881) . . 157
Scudder, Henry (*d.* 1659?) 158
Scully, Denys (1773–1830) 159
Scully, Vincent (1810–1871). See under Scully, Denys.
Seafield, Earls of. See Ogilvy, James, first Earl (1664–1730); Ogilvy, James, third Earl (1714?–1770).
Seaford, Lords. See Ellis, Charles Rose, first Lord (1771–1845); Ellis, Charles Augustus, Lord Howard de Walden and Seaford (1799–1868).
Seaforth, Earls of. See Mackenzie, Kenneth, fourth Earl (*d.* 1701); Mackenzie, William fifth Earl (*d.* 1740).
Seaforth and Mackenzie, Lord. See Humberston, Francis Mackenzie (1754–1815).
Seagar, John (*d.* 1656). See under Segar or Seager, Francis.
Seager, Charles (1808–1878) 159
Seager, Edward (1812–1883) 160
Seager, Francis (*fl.* 1549–1563). See Segar.
Seagrave, Robert (1693–1760?) 161
Seally, John (1747?–1795) 161
Seaman, Lazarus (*d.* 1675) 162
Seaman, William (1606–1680) 163
Seamus Dall (*fl.* 1712). See Maccuairt, James.
Searchfield, Rowland (1565?–1622) . . . 164
Searle, Thomas (1777–1849) 164
Seaton. See also Seton.
Seaton, Baron. See Colborne, Sir John (1778–1863).
Seaton, Edward Cator (1815–1880) . . . 165
Seaton, John Thomas (*fl.* 1761–1806) . . 166
Seaton, Thomas (1684–1741) 166
Seaton, Sir Thomas (1806–1876) 167
Seaward, John (1786–1858) 168
Seaward, Samuel (1800–1842). See under Seaward, John.
Sebbi, Saebbi, or Sebba (*d.* 695?) . . . 169
Sebert. See also Sigebert.
Sebert, Saberet, or Saba (*d.* 616?) . . . 169
Sebright, Sir John Saunders (1767–1846) . 170
Secker, Thomas (1693–1768) 170
Secker, William (*d.* 1681?) 173
Seckford or Sackford, Thomas (1515?–1588) . 173
Securis, John (*fl.* 1566) 174
Securis or Hatchett, Michael (*fl.* 1545). See under Securis, John.
Sedding, Edmund (1836–1868) 175
Sedding, John Dando (1838–1891) . . . 175
Seddon, Felix John Vaughan (1798–1865) . 176
Seddon, John (1644–1700) 176
Seddon, John (1719–1769) 176

PAGE
Seddon, John (1725–1770) 177
Seddon, Thomas (1753–1796) 178
Seddon, Thomas (1821–1856) 178
Sedgwick, Adam (1785–1873) 179
Sedgwick, Daniel (1814–1879) . . . 182
Sedgwick, James (1775–1851) . . . 182
Sedgwick, John (1601 ?–1643). See under Sedgwick, Obadiah.
Sedgwick, Obadiah (1600 ?–1658) . . . 183
Sedgwick, Thomas, D.D. (*fl.* 1550–1565) . 184
Sedgwick, William (1610 ?–1669 ?) . . 185
Sedley, Catharine, Countess of Dorchester (1657–1717) 185
Sedley, Sir Charles (1639 ?–1701) . . . 187
Sedulius (*d.* 828) 188
Seebohm, Henry (1832–1895) 189
Seed, Jeremiah (1700–1747) 189
Seeley, Sir John Robert (1834–1895) . . 190
Seeley, Leonard Benton (1831–1893). See under Seeley, Robert Benton.
Seeley, Robert Benton (1798–1886) . . 193
Seeman or Zeeman, Enoch (1694–1744) . . 194
Seemann, Berthold Carl (1825–1871) . . 194
Seffrid, Sefrid, Seinfrid, or Safred II (*d.* 1204) 195
Segar or Seager, Francis (*fl.* 1549–1563) . 196
Segar, Simon (*fl.* 1656–1712). See under Segar, Sir William.
Segar, Sir William (*d.* 1633) 197
Segrave, Gilbert de (*d.* 1254) 198
Segrave, Gilbert de (*d.* 1313 ?) . . . 199
Segrave, Gilbert de (*d.* 1316) 199
Segrave, Sir Hugh (*d.* 1385 ?) . . . 199
Segrave, John de (1256 ?–1325) . . . 200
Segrave, Nicholas de, first Baron Segrave (1238 ?–1295) 202
Segrave, Nicholas de, Lord of Stowe (*d.* 1322) . 204
Segrave or Sedgrave, Stephen de (*d.* 1241) . 205
Segrave, Stephen de (*d.* 1333) 206
Seguarde, John (*fl.* 1414) 207
Seguier, John (1785–1856). See under Seguier, William.
Seguier, William (1771–1843) 207
Seguin, Ann Childe (1814–1888). See under Seguin, Arthur Edward Shelden.
Seguin, Arthur Edward Shelden (1809–1852) 208
Seiriol (*fl.* 530) 209
Selborne, Earl of. See Palmer, Roundell (1812–1895).
Selby, Charles (1802 ?–1863) 209
Selby, Prideaux John (1788–1867) . . . 210
Selby, Walford Dakin (1845–1889) . . 211
Selden, John (1584–1654) 212
Selkirk, fifth Earl of. See Douglas, Thomas (1771–1820).
Selkirk, Alexander (1676–1721) . . . 224
Sellar, Alexander Craig (1835–1890). See under Sellar, Patrick.
Sellar, Patrick (1780–1851) 225
Sellar, William Young (1825–1890) . . 226
Seller, Abednego (1646 ?–1705) . . . 226
Seller, John (*fl.* 1700) 227
Sellon, Baker John (1762–1835) . . . 228
Sellon, Priscilla Lydia (1821–1876) . . 228
Sellyng, Richard (*fl.* 1450) 229
Selred or Sælræd (*d.* 746) 229
Selvach (*d.* 729) 229
Selwyn, Sir Charles Jasper (1813–1869) . . 230
Selwyn, George Augustus (1719–1791) . . 231
Selwyn, George Augustus (1809–1878) . . 232
Selwyn, William (1775–1855) 233
Selwyn, William (1806–1875) 233
Sempill. See also Semple.
PAGE
Sempill, Francis (1616 ?–1682) . . . 234
Sempill, Hew, eleventh Lord Sempill (*d.* 1746) 235
Sempill or Semple, Hugh, Hugo Sempilius (1596–1654) 235
Sempill, Sir James (1566–1625) . . . 235
Sempill or Semple, Robert, third Lord Sempill (*d.* 1572) 237
Sempill, Robert (1530 ?–1595) . . . 238
Sempill, Robert (1595 ?–1665 ?). See under Sempill, Sir James.
Sempill or Semple, William (1546–1633) . 239
Semple. See also Sempill.
Semple, David (1808–1878) 240
Semple, George (1700 ?–1782 ?) . . . 240
Semple *alias* Semple-Lisle, James George (*fl.* 1799) 241
Semple, Robert (1766–1816) 241
Sempringham, Gilbert of (1083 ?–1189). See Gilbert.
Senan (488 ?–544 ?) 242
Senatus, called Bravonius (*d.* 1207) . . 243
Senchan (*fl.* 649) 243
Senex, John (*d.* 1740) 244
Sengham, William (*fl.* 1260) 244
Senhouse, Sir Humphrey Fleming (1781–1841) 244
Senhouse, Richard (*d.* 1626) 245
Senhouse or Sever, William (*d.* 1505) . . 245
Senior, Nassau William (1790–1864) . . 245
Senlis or St. Liz, Simon de, Earl of Northampton and Huntingdon (*d.* 1109) . . 248
Senlis, Simon II de, Earl of Northampton (*d.* 1153). See under Senlis or St. Liz, Simon de, Earl of Northampton and Huntingdon.
Seppings, Sir Robert (1767–1840) . . . 249
Seres, William (*d.* 1579 ?) 251
Sergeant. See also Sargent.
Sergeant, John (1622–1707) 251
Sergison, Charles (1654–1732) . . . 254
Serle, Ambrose (1742–1812) 254
Serlo (*fl.* 960 ?). See under Serlo, called Grammaticus.
Serlo of Bayeux (1036 ?–1104). See under Serlo, called Grammaticus.
Serlo, called the Priest (*d.* 1147). See under Serlo, called Grammaticus.
Serlo, called Grammaticus (1109–1207 ?) . 254
Sermon, William (1629 ?–1679) . . . 255
Serres, Dominic (1722–1793) 256
Serres, John Thomas (1759–1825) . . . 256
Serres, Lavinia Janetta Horton de (1797–1871). See under Serres, Mrs. Olivia.
Serres, Mrs. Olivia (1772–1834) . . . 257
Service, John, D.D. (1833–1884) . . . 259
Setchel, Sarah (1803–1894) 259
Seton, Sir Alexander (*fl.* 1311–1340) . . 260
Seton, Sir Alexander, first Earl of Huntly (*d.* 1470) 260
Seton, Alexander (*d.* 1542) 261
Seton, Sir Alexander, first Earl of Dunfermline (1555 ?–1622) 261
Seton, Alexander, sixth Earl of Eglinton (1588–1661). See Montgomerie.
Seton, Alexander, Viscount Kingston (1621 ?–1691) 264
Seton, Sir Alexander, Lord Pitmedden (1639 ?–1719) 264
Seton, Alexander (1814–1852) 265
Seton, Charles, second Earl of Dunfermline (*d.* 1673) 265
Seton, Sir Christopher (1278 ?–1306) . . 266
Seton, George, first Lord Seton (*d.* 1478). . 267

PAGE
Seton, George, fourth Lord Seton (*d.* 1549) . 267
Seton, George, fifth Lord Seton (1530 ?–1585). 268
Seton, George, third Earl of Winton (1584–1650) 270
Seton, George, fifth Earl of Winton (*d.* 1749) . 270
Seton, John, D.D. (1498 ?–1567) . . . 271
Seton, Sir John, Lord Barns (*d.* 1594) . . 272
Seton or Setone, Thomas de (*fl.* 1344–1361) . 272
Seton, Sir William (*d.* 1744). See under Seton, Sir Alexander, Lord Pitmedden.
Settle, Elkanah (1648–1724) 272
Settle, Thomas (*fl.* 1575–1593) . . . 275
Sevenoke, Sir William (1378 ?–1433 ?) . . 276
Sever, Henry (*d.* 1471) 276
Sever, William (*d.* 1505). See Senhouse.
Severn, Ann Mary (1832–1866). See Newton.
Severn, Joseph (1793–1879) 277
Sewall de Bovill (*d.* 1257) 279
Sewall, Samuel (1652–1730) 279
Seward, Anna (1747–1809) 280
Seward, Thomas (1708–1790) 282
Seward, William (1747–1799) 282
Seward, William Wenman (*fl.* 1800) . . 283
Sewel, William (1654–1720) 283
Sewell, Anna (1820–1878). See under Sewell, Mary.
Sewell, George (*d.* 1726) 285
Sewell, Henry (1807–1879) 286
Sewell, Jonathan (1766–1839) . . . 286
Sewell, Mary (1797–1884) 287
Sewell, Richard Clarke (1803–1864) . . 288
Sewell, Sir Thomas (*d.* 1784) 288
Sewell, William (1804–1874) 290
Sexburga, Seaxburg, or Sexburh (*d.* 673) . 291
Sexburga, Saint (*d.* 699 ?) 291
Sexby, Edward (*d.* 1658) 292
Sexred or Sexraed (*d.* 626) 293
Sexten, Richard (*d.* 1568). See Argentine, Richard.
Seyer, Samuel (1757–1831) 294
Seyffarth, Mrs. Louisa (1798–1843). See Sharpe.
Seymour, Mrs. (*fl.* 1717–1723) . . . 294
Seymour, Aaron Crossley Hobart (1789–1870) 295
Seymour, Algernon, seventh Duke (1684–1750). See under Seymour, Charles, sixth Duke of Somerset.
Seymour, Catherine, Countess of Hertford (1538 ?–1568) 296
Seymour, Charles, sixth Duke of Somerset (1662–1748) 297
Seymour, Edward, first Earl of Hertford and Duke of Somerset (1506 ?–1552) . . . 299
Seymour, Edward, Lord Beauchamp (1561–1612). See under Seymour, Edward, Earl of Hertford.
Seymour, Edward, Earl of Hertford (1539 ?–1621) 310
Seymour, Sir Edward (1633–1708) . . . 312
Seymour, Edward Adolphus, eleventh Duke of Somerset (1775–1855) 315
Seymour, Edward Adolphus Seymour, twelfth Duke of Somerset (1804–1885) . . . 315
Seymour, Edward James (1796–1866) . . 316
Seymour, Francis, first Baron Seymour of Trowbridge (1590 ?–1664) 317
Seymour, Francis (Ingram), second Marquis of Hertford (1743–1822) 318
Seymour, Sir Francis (1813–1890) . . . 319
Seymour, Frederick Beauchamp Paget, Lord Alcester (1821–1895) 320
Seymour, Sir George Francis (1787–1870) . 321
Seymour, George Hamilton (1797–1880) . 321
Seymour, Henry (1612–1686) 322
Seymour, Henry (1729–1805) 323
Seymour, Lord Henry (1805–1859) . . 323
Seymour, Lord Hugh (1759–1801) . . . 323
Seymour, James (1702–1752) 324
Seymour, Jane (1509 ?–1537). See Jane.
Seymour, Sir Michael (1768–1834) . . . 324
Seymour, Sir Michael (1802–1887) . . . 326
Seymour, Michael Hobart (1800–1874) . . 327
Seymour, Robert. See Mottley, John (1692–1750).
Seymour, Robert (1800 ?–1836) . . . 328
Seymour, Thomas, Baron Seymour of Sudeley (1508 ?–1549) 330
Seymour, William, first Marquis and second Earl of Hertford and second Duke of Somerset (1588–1660) 333
Seymour, William Digby (1822–1895) . . 335
Seymour-Conway, Francis, first Marquis of Hertford (1719–1794). See Conway.
Seymour-Conway, Francis Charles, third Marquis of Hertford (1777–1842). See under Seymour, Francis (Ingram), second Marquis of Hertford.
Shaa. See Shaw.
Shackleton, Abraham (1697–1771) . . . 336
Shackleton, John (*d.* 1767) 337
Shackleton, Richard (1728–1792). See under Shackleton, Abraham.
Shacklock, Richard (*fl.* 1575) . . . 337
Shadrach, Azariah (1774–1844) . . . 337
Shadwell, Charles (*fl.* 1710–1720). See under Shadwell, Thomas.
Shadwell, Sir Charles Frederick Alexander (1814–1886) 338
Shadwell, Sir John (1671–1747) . . . 338
Shadwell, Sir Lancelot (1779–1850) . . 339
Shadwell, Lawrence (1823–1887). See under Shadwell, Sir Lancelot.
Shadwell, Thomas (1642 ?–1692) . . . 340
Shaftesbury, Earls of. See Cooper, Anthony Ashley, first Earl (1621–1683); Cooper, Anthony Ashley, third Earl (1671–1713); Cooper, Anthony Ashley, seventh Earl (1801–1885).
Shairp, John Campbell (1819–1885) . . 343
Shakerley, Jeremy (*fl.* 1650) 345
Shakespear, John (1774–1858) . . . 345
Shakespear, Sir Richmond Campbell (1812–1861) 346
Shakespeare, William (1564–1616) . . . 348
Biography . . 348 | Bibliography . 388
Portraits and Memorials . . 385 | Shakespeare's Reputation . . 390
Shalders, George (1825 ?–1873) . . . 397
Shank, John (1740–1823). See Schanck.
Shanks, John (*d.* 1636) 397
Shannon, Earl of. See Boyle, Henry (1682–1764).
Shardelowe or Scherdelow, Sir John de (*d.* 1344 ?) 398
Shareshull, William de (*fl.* 1360) . . . 399
Sharington or Sherington, Sir William (1495 ?–1553) 399
Sharman-Crawford, William (1781–1861). See Crawford.
Sharp. See also Sharpe.
Sharp, Abraham (1651–1742) 400
Sharp, Sir Cuthbert (1781–1849) . . . 401
Sharp, Granville (1735–1813) 401
Sharp, Jack (*d.* 1431) 404

PAGE
Sharp, James (1613–1679) 404
Sharp, John (1572 ?–1648 ?) 407
Sharp, John (1645–1714). 408
Sharp or Sharpe, Leonel (1559–1631) . . 411
Sharp, Michael William (*d.* 1840) . . . 412
Sharp, Patrick (*d.* 1615) 412
Sharp, Richard (1759–1835) 413
Sharp, Samuel (1700 ?–1778) 414
Sharp, Samuel (1814–1882) 415
Sharp, Thomas, D.D. (1693–1758) . . . 416
Sharp, Thomas (1770–1841) 416
Sharp, William (1749–1824) 417
Sharp, William (1805–1896) 418
Sharpe. See also Sharp.
Sharpe, Bartholomew (*fl.* 1679–1682) . . 419
Sharpe, Charles Kirkpatrick (1781 ?–1851) . 420
Sharpe, Charlotte (*d.* 1849). See under Sharpe, Louisa, afterwards Mrs. Seyffarth.
Sharpe, Daniel (1806–1856) 421
Sharpe, Edmund (1809–1877) 422
Sharpe, Eliza (1796–1874). See under Sharpe, Louisa, afterwards Mrs. Seyffarth.
Sharpe, Gregory (1713–1771) 423
Sharpe, James (1577 ?–1630) 424
Sharpe, Lewis (*fl.* 1640) 425
Sharpe, Louisa, afterwards Mrs. Seyffarth (1798–1843) 424
Sharpe, Mary Anne (*d.* 1867). See under Sharpe, Louisa, afterwards Mrs. Seyffarth.
Sharpe, Roger (*fl.* 1610). See under Sharpe, Lewis.
Sharpe, Samuel (1799–1881) 425
Sharpeigh, Alexander (*fl.* 1607–1613) . . 427
Sharpey, William (1802–1880) . . . 427
Sharpham, Edward (*fl.* 1607). . . . 429
Sharples or Sharpless, James (1750 ?–1811) . 429
Sharples, James (1825–1893). . . . 430
Sharples, Rolinda (*d.* 1838). See under Sharples or Sharpless, James.
Sharrock, Robert (1630–1684) . . . 430
Shaw, Alexander (1804–1890) . . . 431
Shaw, Sir Charles (1795–1871) . . . 432

PAGE
Shaw, Cuthbert (1739–1771) 433
Shaw, Duncan (1725–1795) 434
Shaw or Shaa, Sir Edmund (*d.* 1487 ?) . . 434
Shaw, Sir Frederick (1799–1876) . . . 435
Shaw, George (1751–1813) 436
Shaw, Henry (1800–1873) 437
Shaw, Sir James (1764–1843) 437
Shaw, John (1559–1625) 438
Shaw or Shawe, John (1608–1672) . . . 438
Shaw, John (1614–1689) 440
Shaw, John (1792–1827) 440
Shaw, John (1776–1832) 440
Shaw, John, (1803–1870). See under Shaw, John (1776–1832).
Shaw, Joseph (1671–1733) 441
Shaw, Lachlan (1692–1777) 441
Shaw, Mary (1814–1876) 441
Shaw, Patrick (1796–1872) 442
Shaw, Peter (1694–1763) 442
Shaw, Ralph or John (*d.* 1484). See under Shaw or Shaa, Sir Edmund.
Shaw, Robert Barkley (1839–1879) . . 443
Shaw, Samuel (1635–1696) 444
Shaw, Stebbing (1762–1802) 445
Shaw, Thomas (1694–1751) 446
Shaw, Thomas Budge (1813–1862) . . . 447
Shaw, William (1550–1602). See Schaw.
Shaw, William (1749–1831) 448
Shaw, William (1797–1853) 448
Shaw, William (1823–1895) 449
Shaw-Kennedy, Sir James (1788–1865). See Kennedy.
Shaw-Lefevre, Charles, Viscount Eversley (1794–1888) 450
Shaw-Lefevre, Sir John George (1797–1879) . 451
Shawe. See Shaw.
Shaxton, Nicholas (1485 ?–1556) . . . 452
Shea, David (1777–1836) 454
Sheaffe, Sir Roger Hale (1763–1851) . . 455
Sheares, Henry (1753–1798). See under Sheares, John.
Sheares, John (1766–1798) 455

END OF THE FIFTY-FIRST VOLUME.

PRINTED BY
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE
LONDON

31409

MILLS COLLEGE LIBRARY
3 3086 00183 8069